THE LIFE AND REIGN OF King HENRY THE EIGHTH.

Written by the Right Honourable

Edward Lord Herbert OF CHERBURY.

LONDON:

Printed by *M. Clark*, for *Robert Littlebury*, *Robert Scott*, in *Little Brittain*, and *George Wells* in *S. Pauls* Church-Yard, MDCLXXXIII.

TO THE

KINGS

Most Excellent

MAJESTY.

Most Excellent and most Gracious Sovereign,

Present here in all humble manner unto your Majesty a Work, the Authority whereof is solely Yours: not yet so much because it took its first beginning from Your Majesties particular, and (I may say) unexpected commands; but that the parts thereof, as fast as I could finish them, were lustrated by Your gracious Eye, and consummated by your judicious Animadversions; besides, the substance thereof, in all home affairs hath been drawn chiefly out of your Majesties Records. So that by more than one Title it craves your Majesties protection. As for the defects, I no way presume to interess Your Majesty in them: let them all fall on my self. Though as I have endeavoured to set down the truth impartially, I hope they will not be so great or many, as to exauctorate the rest. I am not yet ignorant that the King, whose History I write, is subject to more obloquies, than any since the worst Roman

Emperors times. But I ſhall little care for cenſure, as long as the teſtimonies I uſe do aſſure and warrant me; ſince I pretend not to deſcribe him otherwiſe, either good or bad, but as He really was. Only where he holds any doubtful part, I conceive it will be but juſt to give a favourable conſtruction. For if even private men will expect the like in their own caſe, it will be much more due to Princes: both as a reverence belongs to their perſons, and that they above all others muſt be thought to endeavour the common good, who will ſuffer more than any elſe in a general calamity. How far yet I make uſe hereof to aſſert this King, my free Pen doth every where declare; Since I give not this interpretation, where arguments to the contrary convince me. Nevertheleſs, as many things will be required to an intire narration of publick actions, in difficult times; I cannot affirm them, beyond thoſe memorials which have been delivered to poſterity. And if thus they may be obſcure, ſo again where they ſufficiently appear in their cauſes, their nature yet is often found ſo perplext and intricate, as it will not be eaſie for after-times to define their qualities: Few of this ſort being ſo ſincere, as to imply no inconvenience, while the advantage of many is ſeldom obtained without the detriment of ſome. Neither ought this to ſeem ſtrange, if in the preſent conſtitution of the affairs no better expedient could be offered; reaſon of State pretending no farther, then to procure the greater good: So that if ſome mixture of ill be diſcovered therein, it might yet conduce to the general, by the ſame reaſon

that

that certain noxious ingredients, being put into Antidotes, make their operation more powerful. Which yet my Reader I hope will not ſo underſtand, as if I thought any rude hand could temper them; every ill being not proper for compoſition in this kind, but that only which is oppoſite to the malady: nor every one a fit Patient, but thoſe only who are of infirm, and crazy conſtitutions. So that it will be needful that a careful and able perſon both diſpence and exhibit it. I wiſh yet that good Princes may ſeldom uſe this maxim, it being (at beſt) but a dangerous and ſuſpected wiſdom. Since State-Government, where it is well adminiſtred, will rarely need ſuch helps, nor otherwiſe than as extream and laſt remedies. Therefore in my opinion recourſe ſhould not be had to them, but where other means fail; the practice of Vertue and Piety being alone a juſt exerciſe for a healthful and well conſtituted Commonwealth. Neither will there be any danger this way of diſtraction; thoſe cauſes which make men good, uniting them beſt. Only I hold it requiſite, that a due diſpoſition and order be obſerved: no vertue being proper but in its place. Therefore though ſome one or other be ſtill ſo pertinent, as there is no occaſion totally to recede from them: yet experience teacheth, that neither fortitude hath been always ſucceſsful, nor temperance ſafe, nor juſtice it ſelf opportune: the fury and inſolence of outragious people having in ſome inſurrections grown to that exceſs, that it hath been more wiſdom to paſs by a while, than to puniſh them. So that until a due election and choice be had, even vertue it ſelf will

be obnoxious. For which purpose therefore, each of them hath its station or orb assigned. That so whilst some descend, others arising in the Horizon of government, may maintain a perpetual vicissitude and revolution. There being (I dare say) no reason for any to decline to ill arts or vices, if they comply with the right vertue; their harmonick systeme being so admirably fram'd, that some one or other will eternally bear a concordant part. Of all which your Majesty being so great a master and example, that you had rather merit than hear a due commendation: I shall only pray that the Vertues which are eminent in your Person, may be so visible and exalted, in your happy and long Government, that to all Ages you may be renowned and glorious. Thus in all true devotion resteth

Your Majesties most faithful

Subject and Servant,

Edward Herbert.

THE LIFE and REIGN OF King HENRY THE EIGHTH.

TOGETHER WITH

A General HISTORY of thoſe Times.

IT is not eaſie to write that Princes Hiſtory, of whom no one thing may conſtantly be affirmed. Changing of Manners and Condition alters that coherence of parts, which ſhould give an uniform deſcription: nor is it probable that contradictories ſhould agree to the ſame Perſon. So that nothing can ſhake the credit of a Narration more, than if it grow unlike it ſelf; when yet, it may be, not the Author, but Argument cauſed the variation. It is impoſſible to draw his Picture well who hath ſeveral countenances.

I ſhall labour with this difficulty in King *Henry* the Eighth; Not yet ſo much for the general obſervation (among Politicks) that the Government of Princes rarely grows milder towards their latter end; but that this King in particular, (being about his declining age, ſo diverſe in many of his deſires, as that he knew not well how either to command or obey them) interverted all, falling at laſt into ſuch violent courſes, as in common opinion derogated not a little from thoſe virtues which at firſt made him one of the moſt renowned Princes of Chriſtendom.

Concil. Trid. l. 1.

His education was accurate, being deſtined (as a credible Author affirms) to the Archbiſhoprick of *Canterbury*, during the life of his elder Brother Prince *Arthur*; that prudent King his father chuſing this as the moſt cheap and glorious way for beſtowing a younger Son. For as he at once disburdened his Revenues, and the publick, from the charge incident to ſo great a perſon, ſo he left a paſſage open to ambition; eſpecially ever ſince *Eugenius* 4. had declared the place of a Cardinal above all other in the Church. Beſides, he conſidered it would be no little ſecurity to his poſterity, that this Dignity was conferred on one who had intereſt in the conſervation of the Crown. By theſe means not only the more neceſſary parts of Learning were infus'd into him, but even thoſe of ornament; ſo that, beſides his being an able Latiniſt, Philoſopher and Divine, he was (which one might wonder at in a King) a curious Muſician; as two intire Maſſes compos'd by him, and often ſung in his Chappel, did abundantly witneſs. Theſe were qualities which inveſted in an excellent and well form'd Perſonage, made him every way recommendable. To which again, a great courage and active ſpirit being added, he ſeem'd to hold that ſtrong temper of Authority, which made him eſteem'd and redoubted both at home and abroad. Had his Age anſwered his youth, or expectation, none of his Predeceſſors could have exceeded him: but as his exquiſite endowments of nature engaged him often to become a prey of thoſe allurements and temptations, which are ordinarily incident unto them; ſo his courage was obſerved by little and little to receive into it ſome mixture of ſelf-will and cruelty.

Vid. Conſti. *An.* 1440.

I am the more particular in his deſcription, in that Princes actions are not always drawn from reaſon of State, but ſometimes even from inclination and humour. They have many ways to be wiſe, and ſeldom err while they keep their eſtate and reputation. Nothing is ſo eaſie as to reign, if the body of Government be well framed. Let the Counterpoiſes of reward and puniſhment go aright, the Wheels of this great Clock ſeldom fail. This King uſed both well as long as his means and complexion ſuffer'd him; though at laſt, paſſing theſe bounds on either ſide, he cannot be denied to have fallen into divers irregularities.

June 28. 1491. 1509. April 22.

The time of his birth was *June* 28. 1491. and of his coming to the Crown *April* 22. 1509. when though he might be thought apter for delights than buſineſs; yet, as he followed the advice of able Counſellors, fewer errors were committed, then when all things were ſwayed by his own arbitrement; for as they were ſelected (out of thoſe his Father moſt truſted) by the Dutcheſs of *Richmond* his Grandmother, (noted to be a vertuous and prudent Lady) ſo he took their impreſſions eaſily, both out of a diffidence of his own ſtrength in the managing of the weighty affairs of his Kingdom, and a deſire he had to be free to thoſe exerciſes which

which moſt ſorted with his youth and diſpoſition. And certainly it was a happy conjuncture for him, ſince, if the firſt part of wiſdom conſiſt in an ability to give good counſel, the next is to take it; the condition betwixt both being ever more obnoxious to danger. But that their names may be known to poſterity, I ſhall mention them as they are upon Record. 1509.

William Warham Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, and Lord Chancellor of *England*.
Richard Fox, Biſhop of *Wincheſter*, Secretary, and Lord Privy Seal.
Thomas Howard, Earl of *Surrey*, Lord Treaſurer of *England*.
George Talbot, Earl of *Shrewsbury*, Lord Steward of the Kings Houſhold.
Sir *Charles Somerſet* Lord *Herbert* of *Gower*, *Chepſtow*, and *Ragland*, Lord Chamberlain.
Sir *Thomas Lovel*, Maſter of the Wards, and Conſtable of the Tower.
Sir *Henry Wyat*.
Thomas Ruthall, Doctor of Law.
Sir *Edward Poynings*, Knight of the Garter, Comptroller. * April 9. 1532.
Sir *Henry Marney*, * afterwards Lord *Marney*.
Sir *Thomas Darcy*, * afterwards Lord *Darcy*. * 1511.

The frame of this Council was of Scholars chiefly, and Soldiers. Among the former ſort I find the Archbiſhop *Warham* much celebrated by the learned *Eraſmus*; and of the latter kind there will be divers mentioned with honour, in the Hiſtory following. So that their choice proceeded rather from their ſufficiency in the buſineſs they were to diſcharge, and care of that Authority they muſt ſupport, than from any private affection. Inſomuch that notwithſtanding the high reverence they bore to their Princes Perſon, they were obſerved ſo to love the proſperity of his affairs, as that they would not only impartially adviſe, but often modeſtly conteſt with him in any thing for his good. Beſides, among them (though not many) there were divers able to execute and perform, as well as counſel. So that, without divulging any ſecret, or deſcending from the dignity of their place to require advice from their inferiours, they moved in their own Orb. This held up the Majeſty of the Council. Only I find it ſtrange, that among all theſe there was not ſo much as one that I may call ſtiled from the Common Law; which though I cannot commend, (wiſdom evermore beginning at home) yet I doubt not, was ſo tempered, as that, when any difficulty in this kind did ariſe, the Council learned in the Law was ſent for. However, it ſeem'd, they were kept then at a diſtance towards the beginning of his Reign, though towards the middle and latter end I find ſome were (through their great abilities) received into the body of his Council; yet ſo, as the

1509. King was noted not to admit reaſon of Law every where, for reaſon of State. Therefore he uſed to take their advice obliquely, and no otherwiſe than to diſcover how ſafe his own deſigns were, and ſo with leſs danger to vary from them. Which deviations yet he would ſo regulate, as that his actions at home had ſtill, if not their ground, yet at leaſt their pretext from the Common Law. Neither was it hard, the practice thereof having been ſo long intercepted in the Civil Wars of *Lancaſter* and *York*, as there were not a few Overtures for the Regal Authority, both in his Fathers time and his, to appear in, and enter.

The firſt Office performed by theſe Counſellors was mixt betwixt piety to their deceaſed Prince, and duty to their new; it being the beſt continuance of that Regal Authority which ſhould never die, to revive the memory thereof in that way only which is permitted, being Pomp and Ceremony. This appeared not only in a great
May 9. Funeral, but by that Magnificent Structure in *Weſtminſter*, where the Chappel having been finiſhed by *Henry* the ſeventh himſelf, had the Tomb afterwards added and perfected by his Executors 1519. Concerning which, though it be reported that the Chappel coſt only 10000 *l.* (or, as others ſay, 14000 *l.*) and the Tomb 1000 *l.* yet as moneys did run then, it might be thought a ſumptuous Monument.

April 23. *Hall.* While the Obſequies and Rites were preparing (the particulars whereof *Hall* after his manner relates) King *Henry* retired himſelf from *Richmond* Palace (where his father died) privately to the Tower of *London*, both that he might with more leiſure adviſe with his Council concerning the preſent affairs of his Kingdom, as alſo the better to avoid thoſe Salutes and Acclamations of the People, which could not but be unſeaſonable, until the lamentations and ſolemnity of his Fathers funeral were paſt. He thought not fit to mingle the Noiſes. Here then it was in the firſt place reſolved to make good his Authority, as having more undoubted right to the Crown by the union of the White-Roſe and the Red in his perſon, than any King ever delivered unto us by warrantable Hiſtory. For this end he found or took occaſions. In one kind *Henry Stafford* brother to the Duke of *Buckingham* ſerved for an example, who (upon I know not what ſuſpicion of Treaſon) was apprehended preſently, and committed to the Tower, which yet ſeem'd afterwards ſo frivolous, as that, to repair this diſgrace, he was the ſame year made Earl of *Wiltſhire*. In the other kind Doctor *Ruthall* became the object, being (together with one of his Council) made the ſame day Biſhop of *Dureſme*. Thus, though it ſeems he haſted to take upon him thoſe real marks of Sovereignty, yet he ſo temper'd them, as to leave his Subjects in hope of an even hand. Beſides, that he might ſhew himſelf gracious to his Subjects, he not only confirmed the pardon his Father gave a little before his death for all offences, ſave Murder, Felony, and Treaſon (to which general abolitions do not properly reach) but for further performance of his Fathers

thers laſt Will, cauſed a Proclamation to be made, that if any man could prove himſelf to be then wrongfully deprived of his goods by occaſion of a certain Commiſſion for Forfeitures, He ſhould have (upon due complaint) condign ſatisfaction. Whereupon ſo many Petitions were preſently exhibited againſt Sir *Richard Empſon*, Kt. and *Edmund Dudley*, Eſq; (employed, *April* 23. for taking the benefit of Penal Statutes) that it was thought fit to call them before the Council, where *Empſon* ſpake to this effect. 1509. April 25.

Right Honourable and others here preſent,

I Have remarked two cauſes in general, that move Attention. One is the greatneſs, the other is the ſtrangeneſs and novelty of Argument. Both theſe concur ſo manifeſtly in the affairs now queſtioned, that I will not much implore your patience. Though on the other ſide, concerning my violent perſecution, I cannot but think it a favour, that I may ſpeak for my ſelf! But (alas) to whom? That King my Maſter, whom I ſhould appeal to, as my ſupreme Judg and Protector, abandons me to my Enemies, without other cauſe yet, than that I obey'd his Fathers commands, and upheld the Regal Authority. That people, on whoſe equal tryal I ſhall put my life, ſeek my deſtruction, only becauſe I endeavoured to execute thoſe Laws whereof themſelves were Authors! What would have happened to me, if I had diſobeyed my King, or broke my Countreys Laws? Surely, if I have any ways tranſgreſſed, it is in procuring that theſe Penal Statutes might be obſerved, which your ſelves in open Parliament decreed, and to which you then ſubmitted your Perſons, Eſtates, and Poſterity! And if this be a crime, why do not you firſt repeal your proper Acts? Or if (which is truth) they ſtand ſtill in full force and virtue, why do you not vindicate from all imputation both your ſelves and me? For who ſaw ever yet any man condemn'd for doing Juſtice? Eſpecially when by the chief diſpencer thereof (which is the King) the whole frame of the proceeding hath been confirm'd and warranted? Nay, who ever ſaw man on theſe terms not rewarded? And muſt that which is the life and ſtrength of all others actions, be the ſubverſion and overthrow of mine? Have you read or heard in any well govern'd Country, that the infractors of Laws made by Publick Vote and conſent, eſcaped without puniſhment, and they only were puniſh'd who labour'd to ſuſtain them? or when you had read or heard any ſuch thing, could you imagine a more certain ſign of ruin in that common-weal? And will you alone hope to decline this heavy judgment? when contrary to all equity and example, you not only make Preſidents for injuſtice and impunity, but together with defaming would inflict a cruel death on thoſe who would maintain them; as if this might be a fit guerdon for thoſe who (I muſt tell you) every where elſe would have been thought the beſt Patriots? What can we expect then

1509. then, but a fatal Period to us all? But let God turn this away, though I be the Sacrifice. Only, if I muſt die, let me deſire that my Indictment may be entred on no Record, nor divulged to Forein Nations; leſt if they hear, in my condemnation, all that may argue a final diſſolution of Government, they invade and overcome you.

Whereunto was anſwered briefly. That he receiv'd a great deal of liberty to ſpeak ill, as well as to do: That he ſhould find at laſt, he was puniſh'd for paſſing the bounds of his Commiſſion from the late King, and in a Law ſevere enough to the Common and poorer ſort of people, for having yet exacted on them unjuſtly. The chief parts of his Accuſations, (that I can find) were,

Holinſh. 1. That he had committed divers perſons to priſon, without ſuffering them to anſwer till they had compounded for their Fines.

2. For ſearching unduly into mens Eſtates, and bringing them wrongfully to hold under that Tenure they call *in Capite*; without that the parties could be permitted to a Traverſe, till they had payed great Fines and Ranſoms.

3. That Wards, being come to full years, were not allowed to ſue out their Livery, till they had paid an exceſſive Compoſition.

4. That Outlaw'd perſons could not be allow'd to ſue out their Charter of Pardon, till they had paid half the profit of their Lands for two years, upon pretence that it was according to Law.

5. That he uſurped upon the juriſdiction of other Courts, in hearing and determining divers matters properly belonging to them.

6. Laſtly, That whereas a Priſoner being Indicted for Theft, in the City of *Coventry*, to the value of one pound, was by the Jury acquitted, the ſaid *Empſon* conceiving the evidence to be ſufficient, committed the Jury to Priſon till they entred into Bond to appear before the King's Council; where the matter being again conſidered, it was ordered they ſhould pay eight pounds for a Fine (which was thought ſo heinous, as, at a Seſſions held afterwards at *Coventry*, a particular Indictment was fram'd againſt him, and he found guilty.) How many of theſe Allegations were verified, or how far they might be warranted by the laſt King's Commiſſion, * April 23. appears not to me. Howſoever, for the preſent, they were * Committed to the Tower.

This *Empſon*, reported to be a Sieve-maker's Son in *Torceſter*, from this mean beginning, by his wit and induſtry, came to be of Council to King *Henry* VII. and Maſter or Surveyor of his forfeits in divers kinds; in which place he ſerved as an inſtrument for raiſing great ſums to the King: *Dudley* (a Gentleman of Birth, and ſuch parts as that he was choſen Speaker of the Parliament Houſe * 1503. * 19 *Henry* VII.) aſſiſting him. Theſe men (call'd by *Polydore Virgil Judices Fiſcales*) having, it ſeems, exceeded their bounds, were deteſted of all, but eſpecially the poorer ſort, who found it eaſier to hate,

hate then to pay. To ſatisfie their complaints therefore, it was thought fit to permit them to the ordinary ways of Juſtice: the Promoters they uſed being ſo ſeverely puniſh'd in the mean time, betwixt the Pillory and ſhame, that they died all (a few days after) in Priſon, ſave one *Giovanni Baptiſta Grimaldi*, who, foreſeeing the ſtorm, took Sanctuary in *Weſtminſter*. 1509.

All clamors being thus ſilenc'd, the next care was, that the Crown might be put on the Kings Head with that Solemnity, which in former times was uſed. This was not yet ſo ſpeeded, but that the King's Council thought fit firſt to adviſe with him concerning Marriage. About which many Propoſitions being made, the graver ſort told him, that the ſame reaſons which made his wiſe Father chuſe to match with *Spain*, (firſt by marrying his eldeſt Son *Arthur* to *Katharine* Daughter of *Ferdinand* King of *Arragon*, and, after *Arthur*'s death, by treating a match between the ſaid Lady and Him) were in force ſtill. That his pretences being on *France*, no Alliance could be uſeful on that part. Beſides, that betwixt great Eſtates adjacent to one another, ſuch jealouſies uſe to riſe, that they may make Peace ſometimes, but never friendſhip. That Leagues and Confederacies have in them the nature of harmonical accords, which jar in the ſecond but agree in the third interval. Therefore, that he ſhould match with *Spain*, or at leaſt with ſome Prince that might joyn with him, when there ſhould be queſtion of oppoſing *France*; which, ſince the late * union of the Dukedom of *Bretaigne* he was to conſider as a Potent and dangerous Neighbour. As for the houſe of *Burgundy*, and *Low-Countreys* (which was come to the hands of *Maximilian* the Emperor, by his match with *Mary* Daughter and Heir to the laſt Duke called *Carolus Audax*) he needed not fear any thing, unleſs he would wilfully provoke them; the cauſes of love on that part, ſeeming to be perpetual; as being founded upon the mutual neceſſity of thoſe Ports and Havens, which, upon all foul weather, the Shipping muſt reſort to on either ſide; and, lately again confirm'd by a new contract of *Charles* Grandchild and Heir of *Maximilian*, with *Mary* the King's Siſter [which yet held not.] It was then conſidered, whether he might not immediately take the ſaid Lady *Katharine*; and the rather, in that the Treaty had not only been diſpenſed with in the time of *Henry* VII. his Father; but ſome offence lately taken by *Ferdinand*, becauſe it was deferr'd ſo long; (for perfecting whereof therefore he had ſent ample Commiſſion to his Ambaſſador here, as I find by our Records, about this time:) And to conduce hereunto, was alledged (as *Polydore* hath it) the Law, *Deut.* 25. of marrying the Brothers Wife; and, to help this again, the Princeſs *Katharine* proteſted her ſelf to be a Virgin, offering to be tryed by Matrons. It was added alſo, that the Lady was preſent, and that ſaved time and charges; beſides, ſhe had given ſo much proof of virtue and ſweetneſs of condition, as they knew not where

* 1499.

1508. Decemb. 16.

1503.

Polyd. Virg. Hiſtor. Angl.

1509. where to parallel her. Again, when ſhe were to depart the Kingdom, a great Dower muſt follow her, which ſhould be tranſported yearly out of the Kingdom. All which motives were corroborated by the above-mentioned diſpenſation, obtained divers
1503. years before from *Julius* 2. who, as he was a ſtirring and Warlike Prelate, and had his ends upon King *Henry* the ſeventh, in the Wars then begun in *Italy*, made no great difficulty to grant it; and the rather, for that he could not be ignorant, that all the children which ſhould be gotten betwixt them, would be firm to the Papacy; ſince, if ever they renounced the Pope's Authority, they ſhould diſclaim the power by which themſelves were made Legitimate. A Meſſenger therefore having been ſent to *Rome*, *Anno* 1503. (*Ferdinand*'s power and mediation concurring) obtained a Licence from the Pope, many of the Cardinals, in vain, oppoſing it; whereof more amply, when we ſhall have occaſion to ſpeak of the Di-
June 3. vorce. Thus, upon the third of *June*, being about ſix weeks after his Fathers death, he eſpouſed the Lady *Katharine*. Their Coronation yet was deferr'd till the 24. of the ſame month. The magnificences thereof, being by *Hall*, *Hollinſhed*, and others ſet down, are
June 24. by me purpoſely omitted. Not long after, the King who had left off Mourning, was forced to take it again, for his Grand-mother, the Lady *Margaret* Counteſs of *Richmond* and *Derby*, a vertuous Lady, and a great benefactor to both our Univerſities, by whoſe advice (as is ſaid) chiefly the King's Counſellors were choſen: whom ſhe ſo diſpoſed, as that they might deliberate well among themſelves always, before they gave their advice to this young King, as not thinking fit (at that age) he ſhould be diſtracted by difference of opinions. Neither did they vary much, during her life; though, afterward, ſome ſmothered jealouſies brake out into open faction. Inſomuch that *Thomas Howard* Earl of *Surrey*, and *Richard Fox* Biſhop of *Wincheſter*, out of a competition for being
Polydor. moſt eminent in the King's favour, became at laſt not ſufficiently united between themſelves. But, as it is a rare felicity in Princes to make election of able Counſellors, ſo it is no leſs to order them aright. For, as ſecret combination for their own ends uſually brings them too cloſe to one another, ſo ambitious oppoſition keeps them too far off; the true diſtance being that only, which a juſt emulation to do their Maſter ſervice gives. In which poſture yet unleſs they be ſtudiouſly kept, without being ſuffered to decline to either extreme, many inconveniences will follow in the adminiſtration of publick affairs.

Now though theſe two (as *Polydore* relates) had brought all buſineſſes within their verge, (*William Compton* chief Gentleman of the Bed-Chamber, and who was next in favour to them, being more attentive to his profit, than publick affairs:) I doubt not yet, but their fellow Counſellors were oft admitted; though, for not being acquainted perchance with all the premiſes, they were hardly

hardly able to ground a ſolid advice. The Biſhop was an old and confident Counſellor to King *Henry* the ſeventh, and knew all the myſteries of State. The Earl of *Surrey* was (indeed) later in credit, yet a brave and underſtanding Nobleman, though (as *Polydore* obſerves) his Eſtate was much waſted by the Civil Wars (his Father *John*, who was made Duke of *Norfolk* by *Richard* the third, having been killed in *Boſworth* field on his ſide, and the Earl himſelf kept Priſoner in the beginning of *Henry* the ſevenths Reign) Howſoever, his very place of Lord Treaſurer, (which he held ever ſince the 16 of *Henry* the ſeventh) made him much in requeſt; as one who both kept and diſpenſed that Maſs of Wealth left by *Henry* the ſeventh; which (if we may believe Authors) was 1800000 pounds ſterling. A greater ſum (doubtleſs) than any King of this Realm before had in his Coffers: and ſuch as might be thought effectively quadruple to ſo much in this Age. It ſeems yet, ſo great a part of it was, by the Kings order, diſtributed to divers of the Court-Gallants, that the Biſhop, who was Lord Privy Seal, and did remember how hardly it was gotten, repined thereat, and thereupon did ill offices to the Earl, as if (ſaith *Polydore*) he parted with it too eaſily, or, perchance, made advantage to himſelf thereby. But that we may leave theſe things to the credit of *Polydore* (in whom I have obſerved not a little malignity,) I find it reſolved between them, that, in imitation of his Father (who inſtituted firſt a Band of 50 Archers to wait on him) ſome Horſe-Guards ſhould be likewiſe ready always to attend his Perſon. The number propoſed was but 50. But, as every one had an Archer, a Demilance, and a Cuſtrel (as our Hiſtory calls it, but being truly Couſtillier) or a kind of Ambactus or Servant belonging to him, beſides three great Horſes for his own uſe, it grew to a conſiderable number. Of theſe *Henry Bourchier* Earl of *Eſſex* was Captain, and Sir *John Peachy* Lieutenant. But whether this might raiſe ſome jealouſie among the people, (which yet my Authors mention not) or that their expence were greater than that it could continue after the rate it began, (both they and all their Horſes being trapped in Cloth of Gold, Silver, or Goldſmiths work) I find it diſſolv'd at laſt, and came to nothing.

1509. 1485. 1500. 1485.

This year a great Plague begun at *Calais*: which though it conſum'd many Perſons, was not thought ſufficient yet to keep off an Enemy. So that Sir *John Peachy*, with 300 Men, was ſent thither, to defend the place; by whoſe good order the Town was ſecured.

Empſon and *Dudley* being (as is aboveſaid) committed to the Tower; new and ſtrange Crimes were found and objected againſt them, as appears in their Indictments upon Record, wherein they are accus'd of Conſpiracy againſt the King and State; and, firſt, that, during the ſickneſs of the late King, in *March* laſt, they ſummon'd certain of their friends to be in Arms at an hours warning; and, upon the death of the ſaid King, to haſte up to *London*. Out of which and other

1509. circumstances, it was collected by the Jury, that their intent was to seize on the person of the new King, and so to assume the sole Government; or when they could not attain this, to destroy him.

Of which crimes, how improbable soever, *Dudley* in his Tryal at *Guild-Hall* in *London*, July 16. 1509. and *Empson* at *Northampton*, Octob. 1. were found guilty by their Juries, and both condemn'd of Treason, and so remanded to the Tower.

July 16. October 1.

Our King being thus setled in his Throne, took several prospects upon all his Neighbouring Princes.

In *Scotland*, (then) Reign'd *James* the fourth, being of a middle Age; who was his Confederate by Treaty, and Brother-in-law by the Match of *Margaret* (whom *Henry* the seventh gave him *Anno* 1503.) Howbeit, as he held a stricter Correspondence with *France*, than stood with the Interest of our Kingdom, some Jealousies of State arose betwixt *Henry* the seventh and him, which yet were past over a little before our King's coming to the Crown, and the former Treaty confirm'd.

1503.

In *France*, *Loüis* the twelfth, an old and warlike Prince, Reigned; who studiously yet conserv'd the Peace made betwixt *Henry* the seventh and himself 1498. both that he might the better incorporate and settle in the *French* Crown the Dukedom of *Bretaign* claimed by him in *Anne* his wifes right, (being not only a large addition to his Dominions, but of great neerness and consequence to this Island) and that he might be freer to attend his designs in *Italy* (whereof in its due place.) For which reasons also he had concluded (by the means of *James* the fourth) a League with *John* King of *Denmark*, and *Sweden* then powerful by Sea, by which that King was bound to assist him, in case of Invasion.

1498. 1499. April 30. du *Tillet*.

In *Arragon*, *Ferdinand* an Antient and Politick Prince rul'd in his own Right, and in *Castile* by the right of *Isabel* his Wife, Inheritrix thereof, who died 1504. By this Lady he had one Son who deceased 1497. and four Daughters. *Isabel* the eldest being married to * *Alphonso* Prince of *Portugal*, and afterwards to *Manuel* King thereof, * died without Issue, whereby *Jone* the second Daughter became Heir of *Castile* in the right of her Mother; and had by her Husband *Philip* (Son to *Maximilian* the Emperor) *Charles* and *Ferdinand* (Emperors successively) and four Daughters, *Leonora*, *Katharine*, *Mary*, and *Isabel*. This *Philip* shortly after his *coming to the Kingdom of *Castile* in the right of *Jone* his Wife *dying, and she through some Indisposition of mind or body proving unapt for Government, *Ferdinand* reassum'd his power in regard of the Minority of his Grand-child *Charles*. *Mary* third Daughter to *Ferdinand* was Wife to the foresaid *Manuel* King of *Portugal*, in place of her deceased Sister. And for the Match of *Katharine* with *England*, the following History will sufficiently speak it.

* 1490. * 1498. * 1504. * 1506.

In the Empire, *Maximilian* (though chose only King of the *Romans*) appear'd potent; both by the Authority deriv'd thence, and by

by the Match he had made with *Mary* Daughter and Heir of *Carolus Audax* laſt Duke of *Burgundy*; by which, not only his Eſtate there but all the *Low-Countries* deſcended to him. Nevertheleſs, as he conſidered of what importance it was for his deſigns to make a firm Alliance with *England*, He firſt offered a League 1503. to *Henry* the ſeventh, and (for conſolidation thereof) his Daughter *Margaret Dowager* of *Savoy*; and, when that fail'd, did procure a kind of Contract, *Dec.* 16. 1508. betwixt *Charles* (afterwards Emperor, and not above eight years old) his Grand-child, and *Mary* (afterwards Queen of *France*) younger Daughter to *Henry* VII. Neither of which Marriages yet taking effect, the reſult was only a peace and friendſhip, eſtabliſhed upon the firſt Propoſition of Alliance betwixt them; of which alſo *Maximilian* was no leſs glad (as having ſecured the *Low-Countries* thereby) than *Loüis* XII. was for *Bretaigne*. And they had reaſon; the adding of the one to *France*, and the other to the Houſe of *Auſtria*, being not only the greateſt ſtrengthening our moſt ſuſpected Neighbours ever had, but a weakning of us, while we loſt two of our beſt and uſefulleſt Confederates; ſo that the permitting thereof ſo eaſily, may be thought a greater indulgence than could ſtand with reaſon of State, had not a conſumption and wearineſs, through our long Civil and Inteſtine Diſſentions at home, occaſion'd it. For the Inhabitants of both Countries wanted not pretext to diſpute the right of their Princes.

1509. 1503. Dec. 16. 1508.

In *Portugal* Reigned *Manuel*, of whoſe Matches having formerly ſpoken, I ſhall add little more, than that he had already made divers Diſcoveries towards the *Eaſt-Indies*. 1501.

In the *Low-Countries*, *Margaret* Dutcheſs of *Savoy*, being by her Father *Maximilian* appointed Regent thereof, and having alſo the charge of her Nephew *Charles* his Education (who was born at *Gaunt* 1500) recommended to her, many ways approv'd her ſelf a diſcreet Lady; as appears, not only by the bringing up of her Nephew; (to whom in that part of Learning call'd *humaniores Literæ*, ſhe gave *Adrian* of *Utrecht* (afterwards Pope) for Tutor; and for State-buſineſs *Anthoine de Croy*, *Seigneur de Chieures*, an able Perſon, who inſtructed him therein as ſoon as poſſible he was capable of it;) but alſo by the many good offices ſhe did afterwards to our King, and all other Chriſtian Princes. 1508. 1500.

In the Papal See, *Julius* the ſecond, a Warlike Prelate, preſided; who having far more and other deſigns than ſtood with the dignity and function of an Eccleſiaſtical Perſon, adventured to trouble all things. As ſuppoſing himſelf not only priviledged, by his Place, from all attempts of Foreign Princes; but that the power of Peace and War did ſo immediately depend on him, as he ſhould, at leaſt, not want occaſion to exerciſe his charge of Arbiter of their differences. Towards which alſo, becauſe he knew how much our King could contribute, he paſſionately deſir'd a ſtrict League with him, which likewiſe was embrac'd, as will appear hereafter.

1509. As for the Great Turk *Bajazet* the ſecond, though now grown a Formidable Enemy to Chriſtendom, our King look'd on him at a diſtance, and no otherwiſe than as he ſtood in Relation to his Confederates.

Having thus ſurvey'd the preſent Monarchs in particular, he forgat not to take into his ſpecial conſideration the State of *Venice*, which about this time did much inlarge its Territories; ſo that, notwithſtanding the oppoſition not only of the chief Chriſtian Potentates, but even of the *Turks* themſelves, they extended their Dominions every way: Inſomuch, that the Pope, *Maximilian*, *Ferdinand* and *Loüis* the twelfth had, the laſt year, being 1508. entred, 1508. Dec. 9. at *Cambray*, into a League againſt them, the conditions whereof were; That they ſhould not deſiſt until they had recovered all thoſe places which the *Venetians* had taken from them; upon confidence yet, that the firſt Conqueror ſhould reſtore to any of the Confederates that which belong'd to him. And that *Loüis* the twelfth ſhould be general of the Armies; and Perſonally preſent in the Expedition. To which alſo he was the more diſpos'd, becauſe the *Venetians* had gotten from him ſundry places belonging to the Dutchy of *Milan*. Howbeit as theſe affairs did not directly concern our King, ſo he took the more leiſure to attend the event, and to prevail himſelf thereof.

By this time it was thought fit, for many reaſons, but eſpecially for contenting the Commonalty, which ſeemed to be wholly alter'd 15$\frac{2}{10}$. by the rigorous proceedings of *Henry* the ſeventh, to call a Parliament, Regni 1. which began in *January* following. Here then *Empſon* and Jan. 21. *Dudley*, formerly not only expoſed to the revenge of all men, but publickly condemned (as is above related) were attainted of High-Treaſon. And here, I ſhall, in ſequence of ſome before me, touch a little upon the Laws enacted the firſt year of this King, as far as they may concern the more Hiſtorical and Political parts. I find therefore divers of thoſe Statutes, by which King *Henry* the ſeventh took advantage of the People, Repealed, explained, or limited. Among which, the benefit of Forfeitures for Penal Laws was reduced to the Term of three years next preceding. Inſomuch that the principal ſcope of this Parliament ſeemed to have reference to *Empſon* and *Dudley*'s buſineſs, which was ſo repreſented, (by the Lower-Houſe of Parliament chiefly) that the King was willing to reſtrain his own Authority in ſome ſort, that he might enlarge the Peoples confidence and affection towards him. Laſtly in this kind, ſome untrue Inquiſitions found by *Empſon* and *Dudley*, as alſo ſome aſſurances of Lands paſt to them, were annihilated and made void. Beſides which, I find little material, ſave only that a Sumptuary Law againſt exceſs of Apparel was repealed, and a new one, a little more decent, ſubrogated.

As now then our King was in high eſteem with his people for Juſtice, ſo was he no leſs redoubted abroad, for the hopes he gave,

gave, of being an Active and Couragious Prince. All which was the more regarded, in that his Treaſure was ſo great, as he might be thought able, ſuddenly, and without the delays uſual in raiſing of moneys, to execute his Deſigns. 1510.

Therefore divers Ambaſſadors repaired to him from *France*, *Denmark*, *Scotland*, and other places, who were magnificently entertain'd.

The buſineſs of the *French* King (*Loüis* the twelfth) was chiefly to keep a good correſpondence between the two Countries, while himſelf went on with his Wars in *Italy*. In ſequence hereof alſo *Tillet* ſaith there was a Peace made between *England* and *France* this year, *March* 23. And, whereas at the Treaty of Peace in *July* 1498. *Loüis* the twelfth had given caution unto *Henry* the ſeventh to pay that which remained of 745000 Crowns, due according to a Treaty made between *Charles* the Eighth, and the ſaid *Henry*, 13 *Novemb.* 1492. Now the ſaid *Loüis* the twelfth did ſtipulate to pay the remainder of the ſaid ſum.

Tillet. March 23. 1510. 1498. Nov. 13. 1492.

That of *Scotland*, was Congratulation in the name of King *James* the fourth his Brother-in-law and Siſter, with confirmation of the late treaty of Peace, containing alſo ſome Propoſitions tending to the penetrating of our Kings preſent deſigns, that they might frame their Counſels accordingly, which was with ſome relation to *France*.

That of *Denmark* was chiefly to eſtabliſh a better courſe for trade; for which purpoſe a * Statute was repealed at this Parliament, which did inhibit our men other Traffick towards *Denmark* and *Iſeland*, then to a place called *Northbarne*.

*8. *Henry* the ſixth. 1429.

The King finding now all things ſafe both abroad and at home, took thoſe liberties which became his youth; yet were not his exerciſes ſportful alone, but had in them a mixture of Letters and Arms. Therefore though ſome relate that he uſed ſinging, dancing, playing on the Recorder, Flute and Virginals, making Verſes, and the like: yet his more ſerious entertainments were ſtudy of Hiſtory and School-Divinity, (in which he eſpecially delighted,) Juſts, Turneys, Barriers, and that not in an ordinary manner, but with the Two-handed Sword, and Battle-ax. Theſe, again, were ſet forth with coſtly Pageants and Devices, and thoſe ſo frequently, that it took up not only much time, but conſumed a great part of the Treaſure. Of which who deſires to ſee more, may peruſe *Hall* and *Hollinſhed*, who have many particularities worth the looking on, for him that hath ſo much leiſure. Together with theſe yet he uſed ſometimes Tennis and Dice; at which certain Strangers uſed to play with him; till, finding their cheatings, at length he chaſed them away.

Empſon and *Dudley* lying now in Priſon, Condemned and Attainted by Parliament, the importunate clamors of the People prevailing with the King in this years Progreſs, he not only reſtored divers Mulcts, but for further ſatisfaction to the Commonalty (by

1510. (by a ſpecial Writ) commanded to have their heads ſtruck off,
Aug. 18. *Auguſt* 18. doing therein (as was thought by many,) more like a good King than a good Maſter.

Julius the ſecond having recovered what he deſired in *Italy*, by his Wars the laſt year, was contented now to accept the ſubmiſſion of the *Venetians*, with whom (his Confederates being not privy
Feb. 24. thereunto) he made Peace, *Feb.* 24. 1510. Howbeit, being jealous of the greatneſs of the *French* in *Italy*, (with whom he had alſo this Quarrel, that they defended *Alfonſo d' Eſte*, Duke of *Ferrara*, againſt him) he endeavoured all he could to oppoſe them; And to this purpoſe he inclined *Ferdinand* by giving him the Inveſtiture of
Speed. *Naples*; King *Henry* the Eighth he ſolicited by calling to his mind the glory of his Anceſtors, &c. and offering him the honour to be *Caput fœderis Italici*. Our King upon this ſends *Chriſtopher Bambridg*, Archbiſhop of *York*, to reſide at *Rome*, and treat of theſe matters. In the mean while the Pope and the *Venetians* proceed, and attempt *Ferrara*, *Genoüa*, and other places. But, as they proſpered not, he lays hold on his Spiritual Sword, and Excommunicates *Eſte*,
Sept. with all his Adherents. *Loüis* the twelfth on the other ſide calls a
Dupleix. Synod of the *French* Court at *Tours* in *France*; where certain Queſtions touching the Popes late Actions and his Authority were propoſed, and reſolved againſt him, and his Excommunication pronounced void. It was alſo decreed, that an Admonition ſhould be ſent to him, to imbrace Peace and Moderation; which if he refuſed, he ſhould be ſummoned to call a Free and General Council (according to the Decree of the Council of *Baſile.*) *Loüis* having proceeded thus far, communicated the matter to *Maximilian* (whom as yet the Pope had not won from him) and joyning alſo with themſelves the Cardinals *Bernardine*, *Briſonet*, and others, they ſummoned a Council to be had, 1 *Sept.* 1511. at *Piſa*, commanding the Pope to appear there. While theſe things were doing, the *French* under *Chaumont*, came before *Bononia*, where the Pope now lay ſick, and Beſieged it, forcing him to ſuch hard conditions, as upon the coming of relief he would not ſtand to. Howſoever, this Beſieging of the Pope being given out, ſounded ſo ill, that our King preſently made a League with *Ferdinand* for his defence; which was an Engagement for greater Actions hereafter, as we ſhall ſee in its place.

$15\frac{10}{11}$. The firſt day of this year, being 1511. the Queen was brought to bed of a Son, which therefore in the name of a New-years-
Jan. 1. gift was by her preſented to the King. But as the Child lived not fully to the latter end of the next month, ſo the greatneſs of Joy did more than expire in the ſhortneſs. Notwithſtanding which, it is ſaid the youthful Parents were ſoon comforted, reputing with themſelves, that in Children (as in Silver Veſſels) little is uſually loſt, but the faſhion. But it fell not out ſo well, for it pleaſed God, that no Heirs Males ſhould remain betwixt them two.

two. In the mean time *Ferdinand* King of *Arragon* being not ignorant in what eſtate his Daughter was, ſent Ambaſſadors to perform his due Complements on that occaſion, and withal to ſollicite the King for Aſſiſtance againſt the *Moors* in *Africk*. He had already Conquered thoſe in the Province and City of *Granada*; through the ſtreets whereof as he rode triumphantly 1492. aſſured news of thoſe great Riches, diſcovered in the Indies by *Columbus*, was brought him. Which I therefore remember, becauſe (to uſe the *Spaniſh* phraſe) I think it the greateſt *Coyuntura* that ever happned; he having at the ſame time reduced his Dominions in *Spain* to an intireneſs, and received news of that immenſe Treaſure in another World. His demand was preſently granted by our King, and the Lord *Thomas Darcy* ſent with 1500 Archers (the Soldiers then in requeſt) to *Ferdinand*, with whoſe help he intended to revenge the loſs received the * laſt year at *Gelves* in *Barbary*. Howbeit, for that *Julius* the ſecond being much preſſed by the *French* (whoſe affairs proſpered in *Italy*) required the help of *Ferdinand* againſt them; he deſiſted from his Enterpriſe, and reſolved to ſuccour the Pope; whereupon alſo our men, richly rewarded, did return home.

1511. Feb. 1492. June 1. *Aug. 30. 1510.

In like manner *Margaret* Regent of the *Low-Countries* obtained of the King 1500 Archers to aſſiſt her againſt the Duke of *Gueldres*, though Confederate of *Loüis* the twelfth, and *James* the fourth. Theſe therefore under the Command of Sir *Edward Poynings*, Knight of the Garter, lately * made Warden of the Cinque-ports, preſently after their Landing were met by the ſaid Lady Regent, and thereupon united, and recommended with much favour and particularity to the reſt of her Army. The Exploits done by this brave Cavalier, and our *Engliſh*, I have not expreſly ſet down, both for that the Lady Regent joyn'd not any conſiderable Forces with them, for the exploiting great Actions; and becauſe themſelves were not free to attempt any thing by themſelves. Howſoever, I find they were licenſed to return, (not without great teſtimonies of their worth) and that, upon review of the Troops, Sir *Edward Poynings* found that not fully a hundred of his men were wanting.

May. June 9. 1509.

The Kings Authority over the Narrow-Seas (ſtudiouſly conſerved ever by his Anceſtors) was about this time ſomewhat leſſened by the Piracies of *Andrew Breton* (whom our Chronicles call *Barton*) a *Scottiſh* man. This *Breton*, in revenge of his Fathers death, as alſo other Injuries, having in vain ſought redreſs in *Flanders* for a Ship taken from his ſaid Father by ſome *Portugals*, obtained Letters of Merke from *James* the fourth, upon condition yet, he ſhould not exerciſe Piracy. Notwithſtanding which, he ſeized on divers of our leſſer Barks (upon pretence of carrying *Portugals* goods) and pillaged them. For remedy of which inconvenience, the two Sons of *Thomas* Earl of *Surrey* (Lord Treaſurer

1511. rer, and Earl Marſhal of *England*) were imployed. The younger called *Edward*, being Lord Admiral, commanding in one Ship; and *Thomas* the elder Brother, in another. Thereupon (in ſeveral places, though at one time) they inveſted *Bretons* two Ships; *Buch.* which, though the *Scottiſh* Writers make to be far leſs than ours, maintained a cruel Fight: the obſtinate Pirate (though ſo grievouſly hurt that he died on the place) encouraging his men with his whiſtle, even to his laſt breath. But our *Engliſh* purſued their *Aug. 2.* point ſo, that at laſt they forced theſe Ships, and brought them (together with the men that remained) away, and preſented them to the King; who, upon their ſubmiſſion, graciouſly pardoned them; ſo that they would depart out of this Kingdom within 20 days. *James* the fourth hearing of this, ſent to require ſatisfaction, as being againſt the Treaty betwixt them. But it was anſwered, That it did not become a King to impute breach of Treaty to his Confederate and Allie, only for doing Juſtice on a Pirate. The Meſſenger, rather ſilenced with this anſwer than ſatisfied, returns to his King; who, when occaſion was offered, failed not to ſhew how ill he took the death of *Breton*.

The Pope being freed from Siege at *Bononia*, proceeds in his Wars againſt the *French*; goes in Perſon againſt *Mirandola*, and by *Jan. 2.* compoſition takes it; but, not long after, loſes *Bononia* to the *J. de Serr.* *French*, led by *Gaſton de Foix*, his whole Army being routed. Yet *May.* was not this a greater affront to him, than the Council to be held at *Piſa*, a City at that time in the hands of the *Florentines*, whom therefore *Julius* preſently interdicts, and ſhortly after expelling *Soderinus* (Governour thereof by means of *Charles* the eighth of *France*) reſtores the Family of the *Medices*, who were formerly expulſed: the Princes alſo and the Cardinals who ſummoned this Council being Excommunicate, &c. notwithſtanding which they proceed. But being ſlighted by the Citizens of *Piſa*, they tranſlate the Council to *Milan*; but finding no better reſpect there, they remove it to *Lyons* in *France*; where they ſummoned *Julius* to appear, and anſwer, and finally ſuſpended his Authority. Upon this, the Pope thunders againſt *France*, expoſing it, (together with *Navarre*, whoſe King favoured *Loüis*) to the Conqueror; and, to abrogate the Council of *Lyons*, he ſummoned another to be held at the Lateran in *Rome*, *April* 19. 1512. Unto this Council our King ſent his Commiſſioners, being *Sylveſter* Biſhop of *Worceſter*, *John* Biſhop of *Rocheſter*, *Thomas Docwra* Lord Prior of Saint *Johns*, and *Richard* Abbot of *Winchelcombe*, *Feb.* 4. 1512. as appears *Feb. 4.* by our Records. In this Council the ſentence of Excommunica- *1512.* tion was confirmed againſt the Authors of the other Council, and the Acts of it reverſed. Not content herewith, he ſent alſo to *Ferdinand*, and to King *Henry* the Eighth, (who had already privately mediated a League with him) to take open Arms, and fall upon *France*. Not neglecting together to uſe all means for withdrawing

drawing *Maximilian* from the *French* party. For though he had joyn'd with *Loüis* to call the Council at *Piſa*, (firſt rough-hew'd at **Tours*) and did ſtill adhere to him: yet, for that the Pope and *Ferdinand*, whom he would not diſoblige, offer'd him more advantagious conditions, he was gain'd at laſt to the contrary party, and *Loüis* expoſed to the danger. The principal Agent which the Pope uſed to our King was *Chriſtopher Bambridge*, who had reſided a while at *Rome*; and for this ſervice was thought to deſerve the Cardinals Hat, which alſo he obtained in *March*, 1511. In the mean while, the buſineſs being brought to our Council Table, ſome ſpake in this manner.

1511. *1510. Sept. Hiſt. Pont. Ciaconii, &c.

That a fairer opportunity was never offered, whether he deſired to maintain the Authority of the Pope, or to recover his own Right in *France*. That either of theſe were juſt conſiderations, but both together not to be permitted. To further theſe deſigns, he ſhould not only have the Aſſiſtance and Bleſſing of his Holineſs, but of his Father-in-law. Beſides which, it was poſſible *Maximilian* the Emperor might joyn herein, however he and *Loüis* the twelfth had of late concurred in their deſigns. That it was probable, his Subjects in *France* retained ſtill a due memory, not only of their Allegiance, but of the benefit received from the Crown of *England*. Beſides, that in *France* there never wanted diſcontented Perſons, who would joyn with his Forces. And for his Coffers, they were not ſo full in any Kings time; to which again he could not doubt but a large ſupply would be given by Parliament, which never fail'd in Contribution when there was queſtion of War with that Country. As for the Difficulties he ſhould find in the Enterpriſe, they were not conſiderable, *Loüis* the twelfth being not only deeply engaged in a War in *Italy*, but having loſt his beſt men there; ſo that before he could give order for his affairs at home, he might be oppreſſed; or, when he would leave his pretences on *Italy*, to look to his own Country, that would yet free the Pope from the danger he was in, and conſequently give his Majeſty the Honour of performing his intentions.

Some yet, that did more ſeriouſly weigh the buſineſs, opined thus; That the Kings Title indeed in *France*, eſpecially to the Hereditary Provinces, was undoubted; the occaſion fair; and many circumſtances beſides conducing to this great buſineſs: yet that all theſe were not ſufficient for the making of a War againſt ſo Potent a Neighbour; unleſs there were more than poſſibility of effecting our purpoſes. This they might conſider by comparing theſe times with the former. And if, when all *Guyenne*, *Anjou*, *Tourain*, and for a long while *Normandy* was ours; and when, beſides this, the Duke of *Bretaigne* was our friend, and the Houſe of *Burgundy* an aſſured Allie and Confederate to this Kingdom, we yet could not advance our deſign in that Country, what hope is there now to

1511. attain them? Are we ſtronger now than at that time? Or can we promiſe our ſelves better ſucceſs? Let it be granted, that as many Battels as we have fought againſt the *French*, have been almoſt ſo many Victories; What was this Kingdom the better for them? Who can ſay he made a Fortune thereby? Had we ever a more glorious time than that of *Edward* the third; and was yet the Country ever more poor or weary of the Wars? If you will not believe our Hiſtories, look even on our Records, and you will find not only how the Treaſure of our Kingdom was much exhauſted, but even the people themſelves glutted with their proſperity. And ſhall we truſt now to better days? What though with our 12000 or 15000 we have oft defeated their Armies of 50000 or 60000? Stands it with reaſon of War to expect the like ſucceſs ſtill? eſpecially, ſince the uſe of Arms is changed, and for the Bow (proper for men of our ſtrength) the Caleever begins to be generally received. Which, beſides that it is a more coſtly Weapon, requireth a long practice, and may be manag'd by the weaker ſort. Let us therefore (in Gods Name) leave off our Attempts againſt the *Terra firma*. The natural Situation of Iſlands ſeems not to ſort with Conqueſts in that kind. *England* alone is a juſt Empire. Or, when we would inlarge our ſelves, let it be that way we can, and to which it ſeems the Eternal Providence hath deſtin'd us; which is, by Sea. The *Indies* are diſcovered, and vaſt Treaſure brought from thence every day. Let us therefore bend our endeavours thitherwards; and, if the *Spaniard* or *Portugals* ſuffer us not to joyn with them, there will be yet Region enough for all to enjoy. Neither will a Piety, equal to that of ſuccouring *Julius* the ſecond, be wanting; ſince, by converting thoſe Infidels to the Chriſtian Religion, there will be a larger field opened for doing of good, than by eſtabliſhing a doubtful and controverted head of the Church: the Council of *Piſa* having determined both to depoſe him, and ſubſtitute another.

But our young King, out of zeal to do the Pope ſervice, and Ambition to recover that Patrimony whereof our King *Henry* the ſixth was in Poſſeſſion, and which our Civil-Wars only loſt, declin'd this ſober advice, and adhered to the former. And that, eſpecially, for two reaſons, urged by way of ſupplement; whereof, the one was, that there was new hope *Maximilian* the Emperor would be won to his ſide. The other was, that he underſtood from *Rome*, the Pope had an intention to take away the Stile of *CHRISTIANISSIMUS* from the *French*, (which their Hiſtorians confeſs) and transfer it on him; which he thought would be a perpetual glory to the Nation.

Hereupon it was reſolved, together with calling a Parliament, to ſend (by *John Young* Doctor of Law, and Maſter of the Rolls) unto

unto *Loüis* the twelfth a Monitory Embaſſage, requiring him to deſiſt from War againſt the Pope. But *Loüis*, whether out of his own courage, or that he thought the Emperor aſſured to him, or that (indeed) there was no hope of a Peace, (he having been privately advertiſed that our King reſolved War) regarded not his advice. Our King therefore, that he might have more than one Title to invade *France*, ſent to require his Patrimonial Inheritance of *Anjou*, *Guyenne*, &c. and, in caſe of refuſal, to denounce War. This then being proclaimed, Leavies were commanded, and moneys granted by Parliament (which began *Feb.* 4.) were raiſed. While theſe things were doing, I ſhall obſerve my former method, and by the way touch on the Laws then enacted, which may belong to Hiſtory. 1511.

That becauſe Money, Plate, and Jewels, being Tranſported out of the Kingdom, had impoveriſhed it, a double value ſhould be pay'd by the offenders. 15 1/2. Feb. 4. *An. Regni* 3. Parl. 1 *H.* 8.

There was alſo confirmed an Order formerly taken, concerning Eſcheators, Commiſſioners, and finding and returning of Offices; which it ſeems had relation to *Empſon* and *Dudleys* proceedings. Becauſe alſo unlawful Games kept men from ſhooting in the Long-Bow, they were put down, and Archery commanded. For the better underſtanding of which Act, another paſt, whereby the Croſs-Bow alſo was forbidden.

There were likewiſe certain great Priviledges granted to men that went beyond Sea with the King, as alſo Penalties ordain'd for Captains that abridged the number of their Soldiers, or detain'd their Wages; as alſo for Soldiers departing without Licenſe.

At this Parliament alſo the King was pleaſed to reſtore *John Dudley*, Son and Heir of *Edmund Dudley* lately Attainted. On whom, towards the end of his Reign, he conferred the place of Lord Admiral of *England*, as ſhall appear in this Hiſtory.

About this time there was one *Hieronymo Buonviſo* a Luceeſe, who, being a Bankrupt Merchant, through his friends in *Italy*, obtained ſo much favour from the Pope, as to be made a kind of Agent here. This man being acquainted with all the Popes buſineſs, and upon his Letters of Credence, receiving likewiſe the Kings and Councils anſwers to his Negotiations, became ſo expert in all thoſe affairs, that being corrupted by the *French*, (who gave him a Penſion, as I find in our Records) he diſcover'd many things that much concerned either ſide. And from hence it aroſe chiefly, that *Loüis* the twelfth was ſo particularly informed of our deſigns, that he uſed many preventions, as may be obſerved in the following Hiſtory.

The War with *France* being thus determined, it was conſulted in what part we ſhould begin. And though that of *Calais* ſeemed the moſt ready way, yet, becauſe *Ferdinand* promiſed to joyn with

1511/12. the King in this War, (which was call'd *Holy*) it was by his conſent reſolved to Land ſomewhere in the *Spaniſh* Dominions; and that from thence both their Armies (being united) ſhould joyntly invade *Guyenne*. For better underſtanding of which project, I muſt obſerve, that both the Kings (beſides that of vindicating of *Julius* the ſecond) had their ſeveral deſigns, as will appear afterwards. The General named by the King was *Thomas Grey* Marqueſs of *Dorſet*, with whom went, beſides his three Brothers, the Lord *Thomas Howard*, Son and Heir to the Earl of *Surrey*, the Lord *Brooke*, Lord *Willoughby*, and Lord *Ferrars*, and divers Knights and Squires, all of them brave Perſons, and about 10000 Soldiers; among *Curita.* whom I find, in the *Spaniſh* Hiſtory, there were about 5000 Archers, who beſides their Bows and Arrows, carried Halberts, which they pitched on the ground till their Arrows were ſhot, and then took up again to do Execution on the Enemy. An excellent part of Military Diſcipline, and yet not remarked by our *Engliſh* Chroniclers. Theſe men about the third, or as the *Spaniards* have it, the eighth of *June*, (being ſhipp'd in *Spaniſh* Veſſels) June 3. arrived at *Paſſage*, a Port in *Guipuſcoa*, where one *Faderique* Biſhop of *Siguenca*, (an able Perſon) attended them. This Biſhop after he had aſſured them of their welcom, and that the Duke *d' Alva*, General of the *Spaniſh* Forces, with 1000 barded Horſe, 1500 Gennets or Light-Horſe, and 6000 Foot would ſhortly joyn with them, did much cheer our Men after their long Sea-voyage. In the mean while *John d' Albret* (King of *Navarre* in the right of his Wife *Catharine de Foix*) having the *Spaniſh* Army in *Arragon* on the one ſide, and the *Engliſh* on the other of his Kingdom, thought himſelf in ſome ſtraits. And the rather, becauſe the Pope having lately Excommunicated him, for aſſiſting the *French*, and by a Bull dated *March* 1. 1512. expoſed his Kingdom in prey to the Conqueror; He ſuſpected *Ferdinand* had ſome deſign upon him. Neither was he deceived; for, that he might be drawn away from *Loüis*, or at leaſt that a quarrel might be pickt againſt him, *Ferdinand* ſends to require that he would declare himſelf; pretending ſome jealouſie of his proceedings ever ſince *Loüis* the twelfth (who was advertiſed of this *Holy* League, as it was termed) had required his help, or when he would refuſe, threatned him with taking *Bearne* away, as being a *Feud* held of *France*. To comply with *Ferdinand* alſo, the *Engliſh* General ſent to him, not only to remember the ancient League and Friendſhip betwixt the two Nations, when the *Engliſh* were in poſſeſſion of *Guyenne*; but, thereupon (as well as in the name of the Church) to require his help in this Holy War. The King of *Navarre* in this perplexity (for he was urged no leſs to the contrary by the *French*) proteſted that it concerned him to be Neutral, he being as much in danger of loſing *Bearne* on the *French*, as *Navarre* on the *Spaniſh* ſide. Yet, whether to gain time, or indeed really to ſhew his forwardneſs

neſs in this Church affair, he offered (upon ſecurity given, that neither *Ferdinand* nor the *Engliſh* ſhould moleſt him) that for four months ſpace, the States of *Navarre* ſhould (by their Oaths) ſolemnly aſſure him of all amicable uſage in that Country; and before that time he doubted not, but *Bayonne* (which was the key to *Guyenne*) would be taken by *Ferdinand* and the *Engliſh*. But this was not thought ſufficient; therefore it was demanded that the King of *Navarre* would depoſitate ſome Towns as cautionary on that behalf. But as he ſtill excuſed himſelf, the *Engliſh* and *Spaniſh* (who had ſeparately treated before) thought fit now joyntly to ſend their Agents to the King of *Navarre*, ſo that *Antonio de Acuna* Biſhop of *Camora*, and Sir *John Stile* (reſident Ambaſſador for our King in *Spain*) were preſently diſpatch'd to him. Being admitted to audience, their demand was, to have the Fortreſſes of *Eſtella*, *Maya*, and *San Juan*, conſigned for their ſecurity in the Enterprize of *Guyenne*. But the King of *Navarre* proteſting ſtill that it concern'd him to hold Neutrality, was at laſt preſſed to make a final anſwer. Here then he agreed that *Viana*, and ſome other places of leſs ſtrength than thoſe demanded, ſhould remain as pledges of his Fidelity: Yet, before this could be ſetled, the *French* were come to the Confines of both Juriſdictions: where the *Engliſh*, being deſirous to give ſome proof of their Valour, without any order from their General, paſſed over the River of *Vidaſſona*, which divides *Guipuſcoa* from *Guyenne*, to Skirmiſh with the *French*. This grew at laſt ſo hot, that the Marqueſs was conſtrain'd to paſs over the reſt of his Army to diſengage them, which being done, he retir'd again to his Camp near *Fuentarabia*, in good order. Hereupon the Marqueſs of *Dorſet* began to complain, that the delay of *Ferdinand* had given the *French* time to raiſe theſe Forces to oppoſe them; and together demanded briefly his clear reſolution, what he meant to do in the point of invading *Guyenne*: But he was anſwered, that, ſince the King of *Navarre* would not admit a way through his Dominions, he muſt be forc'd; neither did he think that *John* would take it ill to ſuffer a little violence, when it were for nothing elſe, but to ſhew the *French* that he did not voluntarily conſent thereunto. The Marqueſs replyed, that, this being no part of his Commiſſion, he muſt firſt acquaint the King his Maſter with it. But *Ferdinand* finding that both the *French* Army increaſed, and that the ſuffering them to come nearer might fruſtrate his deſigns in *Navarre*, commanded the Duke of *Alva*, without more delay, to inveſt *Pampelona* the Chief Town of *Navarre*, entertaining in the mean while *John*'s Ambaſſadors with hope of an Accommodation, who ſeemed alſo to believe it, until they heard of the Siege. The induſtrious *Ferdinand* that he might draw alſo the Marqueſs *Dorſet* to aſſiſt him, uſed theſe reaſons, That the paſſage to *Bayonne* by the way of *Fuentarabia* was narrow, having the Sea on one ſide, and on the other ſide the huge Mountains of *Navarre*

1512.

1512. *Navarre* and *Bearne*; ſo that, if they ſhould undertake the Siege at *Bayonne* without aſſuring themſelves of the Countries behind them, they might be ſhut up on every ſide, whenſoever *John* ſhould declare himſelf for the *French* party. Therefore that he ſhould proceed according to Military Rules, and prevent this inconvenience by ſeizing firſt on all the Avenues. The Marqueſs of *Dorſet* hereupon calling a Council of War, returned this anſwer, That he deſired to loſe no time, and therefore thought it the beſt courſe for both to divide the Armies: and that *Ferdinand* ſhould enter *Guyenne* by *Navarre*, while he took the way of *Bayonne*. Yet the King who ſtill purſued his Deſign, ſeeming not ſatisfied herewith, deſired rather that both the Armies might paſs joyntly through *Navarre*: the *Spaniſh* marching ſtill firſt, and making way for the *Engliſh* to follow. But the Marqueſs of *Dorſet* anſwer'd again, he might not tranſgreſs his Commiſſion, which permitted him not hoſtilely to enter into *Navarre* upon any terms. Inſomuch that now almoſt ſix Weeks were ſpent in thoſe Treaties.

Ferdinand finding no more to be expected from the *Engliſh*, reſolves alone to invade *Navarre*, promiſing the Marqueſs yet from thence to fall on *Guyenne*; not doubting (on this aſſurance) but the Marqueſs would ſtay, and at leaſt ſerve as a Countenance to his enterpriſe. Hereupon the Duke of *Alva* being Commanded to
* July 22. * proceed, (without hurting any yet but thoſe who reſiſted) ſoon
* July 25. after *took *Pampelona*: which when our Marqueſs heard, he teſtified much diſcontentment; both becauſe he found *Ferdinand* kept not his promiſe, and for that his Victuals were much ſhortned on this occaſion, he having been abundantly ſupplied before from *Navarre*.

In the mean while *Ferdinand*, to prevent that ill Intelligence, which the Marqueſs might give, ſends to *England* a Meſſenger on purpoſe, with an Account of his Actions, and to deſire a more ample Order to the Marqueſs to aſſiſt him; not neglecting, the while, any occaſion either for reducing the beſt part of *Navarre* to obedience,
July 31. or entituling himſelf by publick Declaration to the Right thereof, as our Records tell us: Which in all particulars of this affair, do much confirm the *Spaniſh* Hiſtory.

Being thus advanced, He thought fit again to ſollicite *John*
Auguſt. King of *Navarre* (now retired towards *Bearne*) that he would joyn in this Holy-War. And that he might do ſo the better, He temper'd threats and promiſes in a more effectual manner: The Biſhop of *Camora* and Sir *John Stile* hereupon being diſpatch'd again, requiring his final Anſwer. But the Duke of *Longueville*, being come with puiſſant Forces near to thoſe parts, they made bold to detain the Biſhop, not without terrifying him, with worſe uſage; giving leave yet to Sir *John Stile* to return. Things being brought to theſe extremities, *John* King of *Navarre* thought fit to go to the *French* Court, to excuſe himſelf for ſuffering the *Spaniſh* to become ſo ſoon Maſters of *Navarre*. Neither had he, it ſeems, any way

1512.

way to make this ſo credible, as by permitting the *French* with the ſame facility to ſeize on *Bearne*. Thus was this King, in a ſhort time, diſpoſſeſſed of all his Eſtate, only for not knowing how to behave himſelf, either like a Friend or Enemy.

Now *Loüis* the twelfth, though not ſo much as hoping that the *Engliſh* and *Spaniſh* would ſtand thus divided, yet as he deſir'd rather a War in that Country, than his own, ſo he prepared as if he were at once to ſuſtein both their Forces; commanding the Duke *de Longueville*, to proceed warily. But the difficulty was not great. For though *Salvatierra* was kept by *John*, as long as he Treated with *Ferdinand*; yet now he abandoned it to the *French*, and retir'd himſelf to *Paris*. Betwixt this Town and *Bayonne* then the *French* enquartered their Army, though for having 5000 in that City (daily reinforced by new Levies) it ſeemed not to ſtand in ſo much need of defence. This while the Duke *de Alva* requires an Oath of Obedience from thoſe of *Pampelona*, and in general from the reſt of the chief Inhabitants of *Navarre*. They again offer it, upon the terms agreed on, which was for four months, and till they had given proof of their Neutrality in the buſineſs of *Guyenne*. But the Duke replyed, that King *John* being fled away to the *French*, and therein having declar'd himſelf an Enemy both to him and this Holy-War, he would now accept no Oath, but that of a ſimple Obedience to his King and Maſter: Upon this enſued diſputes and diverſities of Opinions; All which yet were moderated by the *Spaniſh* Army, which did not much inſiſt upon reaſon, having power in their hands.

Navarre being thus in a manner reduced, *Ferdinand* ſends the Mareſchal *Aquilera* to the Marqueſs *Dorſet*, proteſting that his Army ſhould paſs the Mountains at Saint *Juan de Pie del Puerto*. This he did to try whether it would move him yet to joyn Forces. But the Marqueſs, who was informed that the place did lead to *Bearne* (which remain'd only for an intire Conqueſt of the Dominions of *John*) as well as to *Bayonne*, thought fit to attend more certainty, concerning the way of the *Spaniſh* Army. *Ferdinand* on the other ſide, taking this as a delay, would not omit the proſecuting of his intentions, laying (in the mean while) all the fault on the Marqueſs his ſlackneſs. But no man ought to blame any General in this kind, unleſs he knew his Inſtructions. *Ferdinand* therefore was too forward herein. But the Duke *de Alva* who conſidered of what moment diligence is in great Affairs, ſends ſome away preſently to ſeize on Saint *Juan de Pie del Puerto*; which accordingly was performed; though the *French* were now entring that Country. To make this good alſo, the Duke himſelf (by the King his Maſter's Commandment) follows with the Body of his Army. And now *Ferdinand* again ſends to invite the Marqueſs. But as the *Engliſh* could not paſs thither, but by a place call'd *Maya* (a rough and almoſt untrodden paſſage) or another way far about (for either

1512. ther of which, they wanted Horſe to draw their Ordnance) ſo was there a new difficulty interpos'd, for joyning the Armies. Howſoever, it concern'd *Ferdinand* (after many delays) to acquit himſelf ſo far, as to ſeem at leaſt roundly to go on in the invading of *Guyenne*. And his Maſter-piece was, together with performing his own intentions, now to have brought his offer to our King, within the compaſs of probability. He conſidered alſo, that, alone, he was to weak for the *French* Forces, ſo that he had more than one reaſon to ſollicite the *Engliſh* Army.

Being in this Poſture, he begins to think what remain'd to be done: On the one ſide, he had the honour of diverting the *French* from their great deſigns in *Italy*, (for *Loüis* began now to attend his home Affairs) and therein to have free'd the Pope. On the other ſide, having reduc'd all *Navarre*, (only *Eſtella* excepted, which he took afterwards) and paſſed the Mountains, He ſeemed ingaged to ſecure his Conqueſts. Therefore he thought on nothing now but going on; truſting, for the reſt, to the Negotiation of Curita. *Martin de Ampois* whom he had ſent to our King. And this Man (if we may believe the *Spaniſh* Hiſtory) obtained that the Marqueſs *Dorſet* ſhould do whatſoever he was adviſed by *Ferdinand* for the Holy-Cauſe. But, before this Inſtruction could come, the Marqueſs, who ſaw Winter now approaching, and very near 3000 of his Men ſick or dead of diſorder, and drinking thoſe hot Wines, and the reſt ſuffering much for ſcarcity of Victuals, and laſtly being advertiſed that the *French* had fortified *Bayonne*, and planted a great Army before it, thought it too late to begin any great Enterpriſe. Therefore he ſent the Treaſurer of his Army, and Sir *John Stile* to *Ferdinand*, to repreſent thoſe difficulties, and to acquaint him with his determination to be gone. At laſt, though with much ado, *Ferdinand* (according to an Article of the Agreement) provided ſome Ships for the *Engliſh*; but before they could depart, the Marqueſs, between diſcontent and ill diet, ſo diſtempered himſelf, that he fell ſick, the Lord *Howard* being ſubſtituted, in the mean while, for Command of the Army.

Sept. While yet they made ready for their Journey, Letters came from our King by *Windſore* the Herald, commanding the Army to ſtay: promiſing withal to ſend a New ſupply under the Lord *Herbert* his Chamberlain. But the Soldiers ſo mutined, that at laſt the Generals were conſtrained to embarque themſelves and come

Novemb. home (about the end of *November*) to *England*. Whereupon, *Ferdinand* (who deſired now only to maintain what he had gotten) turns himſelf to other Arts; labouring (by *Maximilians* mediation) to withdraw the *French* from aſſiſting *John*. The conditions being that *Charles* Prince of *Caſtile* their Grand-Child ſhould match with *Reynera*, or *Reynee*, ſecond Daughter to *Loüis* the twelfth (which yet was but colourable as appears in their Hiſtories) and, that the *French* ſhould condeſcend hereunto, it was no little motive, that they

they had acquired ſo much in *Bearne*; ſo that keeping their poſſeſſions on either part, much Treaty paſs'd; without any other effect, than that *John* on both ſides was outed: Though, for oſtentation, *Richard de la Pole* (calling himſelf Duke of *Suffolk*) as I find by our Records, was appointed by *Loüis* to attempt the recovery of *Pampelona*, though in vain. And thus ended this Voyage, to the grief of our King, who ſeemed ſo much offended with the ill ſucceſs, that he purpoſed once to puniſh the principal Authors of it. But his General excus'd himſelf by the narrowneſs of his Inſtructions, and partly laid the fault on *Ferdinand*, who being bound by promiſe to furniſh the Army with many neceſſaries, yet failed. Laſtly, they made it appear that *Ferdinand* never intended any thing but the Conqueſt of *Navarre*, (which therefore his Succeſſors hold to this day.)

1512.

October.

Though this Voyage were improſperous, yet I find by *Polydore*, that Sir *Edward Howard*, who Conducted the Marqueſs to *Spain*, having with the Fleet firſt cleared the Seas from Enemies, Landed at a little Bay in *Bretaigne*, and Marched ſeven Miles into the Country, whence (after burning ſome Towns) he brought away rich ſpoils. Not contented herewith yet, he put his men on Shoar at *Conquet*, and divers other places; where the *French* ſtill receiving the worſe, they at laſt deſired a Parley. The ſubſtance whereof was, That the *Engliſh* would leave off this kind of deſultory, and Cruel War, which tended only to the burning of Villages, and ranſacking the poor. But he replied, He was not to take his directions from them. Beſides, that it was the part of brave Gentlemen to defend their Country, and not ſhamefully to ſue for Mercy. After which, and a Banquet in his Ship, they were diſmiſſed, and our Admiral return'd home.

May.

May 23. *Hall.*

June 1.

The *French*, in the mean while, making great preparatives by Sea, Our King thought fit to reinforce his Fleet, adding to Twenty Ships under the Command of his Admiral, Five and Twenty more under the Command of the choiceſt of thoſe Gallants that attended him; placing in the chief Ship call'd the *Regent*, (being of 1000 Tun,) Sir *Thomas Knevet*, Maſter of his Horſe, and Mr. *John Carew*, with 700 men; in the Sovereign Sir *Charles Brandon* and Sir *Henry Guilford* with ſixty of the talleſt Yeomen of the Guard. This brave Fleet chancing to meet thirty nine Sail coming out of *Breſt* in *Bretaign* aſſaulted them; where two of the greateſt Ships on both ſides being grappled, fell on fire by ſome accident, or as *French* will have it, by the deſperate Courage of *Primauguet* (barbarouſly as I conceive it, ſtil'd by our Chronicles Sir *Peers Morgan*) and ſo were conſumed. The Captains of the *Engliſh* Ship (being the *Regent*) and of the *French* (called the *Cordeliere*) together with the Soldiers in them, periſhed all, ſave only a few *French* who ſaved themſelves with Swimming. Howſoever, the reſt of the *French* were ſo terrified herewith, that they made

Aug. 10. *Bellay.*

1512. away presently, some to *Brest*, and some to the Isles adjoyning. To repair this loss, our King built a Ship, the greatest ever known before, though *Buchanan* and *Lesle* say, that *James* the fourth, 1506. King of *Scotland* made one, whom the *English* and *French* King desiring afterwards to imitate, failed so much, that they were not able to make it steer.

The King finding now that businesses were grown to some extremity, betwixt the two Nations, discloses his design of going in Person into *France*, as chusing rather to make War in his Enemies Country, than to attend it at home. This also that he might the better perform, He is advised to discover what correspondence he might expect from his Neighbours and Confederates. Therefore he had sent a good while since, Sir *Robert Wingfield* to Negotiate with *Maximilian*, and draw him to his party; neither found he much difficulty therein: The Emperor being glad that the Warlike disposition of our young King turn'd it self against *France*: So that, with assurance of his affection, he incourag'd him to go on. For *Maximilian* was now fallen off from the *French*, both for that the Pope strongly procur'd it, and because he thought it best to adhere rather to *Ferdinand* and his Grand-Child's interests: For pretext whereof yet alledging only some breach of Article of the Treaty of *Cambray* on *Loüis* his part. The *French*, on the other side, joyning with the Duke of *Ferrara*, prepared to defend themselves, raising for this purpose a puissant Army, under the command of *Gaston de Foix*, Duke of *Nemours*, Governour of April 11. *Milan*, who (in the name of the *Pisan* Council) fought the Battel of *Ravenna*, which being won for his King, he lost for himself, as dying (almost wilfully) against a little Body of the Enemies, when the Victory, for the rest, was gotten, Howbeit, the *French*, under *Monsieur de la Palisse* proceeding took *Ravenna*, and divers other places, which they delivered to a Cardinal *Legate* in the name of the *Pisan* Council, so that they were now (together with this City) Masters of *Milan*, *Genoüa*, *Bononia*, and *Florence*. Nevertheless, the contrary part, led by *Raymond* Sandov. *de Cardona*, (Viceroy of *Naples* under *Ferdinand*) having in the Vida del Carl. V. name of the Holy-League brought huge Forces into those parts, the *French* were forc'd to quit all those places, within the space of two Months, (as *Sandoval* hath it:) *Maximilian Sforza* (Son to *Lodovico*) whom the *French* had divested, being replac'd in *Milan*, to hold it in the name, or at least under the Protection of the *Suisse*; whereupon also the Duke of *Ferrara* (unable any longer to subsist) humbled himself to the Pope, and was pardoned. *Maximilian* yet, not content with these Victories, would have added to them *Vicenza* detain'd by the *Venetians*. But they refusing, the Pope, whether desirous to conserve *Maximilian*'s friendship at what price soever, (since he had now disavowed the *Pisan* Council) or that perchance he thought not himself sufficiently reveng'd on the *Venetians*, joyns in the Enterprise. *Fer-*

Ferdinand in the mean while, (according to his wonted manner) makes a double Treaty. On the one ſide therefore, he not only joyned offices with our King to *Maximilian* for this purpoſe, but incourag'd him to repair the imputation of ſlackneſs laid on the *Engliſh* in their Voyage to *Spain*, deſiring yet that if he ſent any Army again into thoſe parts, it might be under the Command of his General. While, on the other ſide he ſecretly Treated with *Loüis* the twelfth, for the match above-mentioned; promiſing alſo to aſſiſt him in his affairs in *Italy*. That Politick King's intention being, by one means or other, to divert the *French* from aiding King *John* to recover *Navarre*: (who yet I find *dyed of grief not long after.) Laſtly, our King remembring how the *Scots* have uſually holpen the *French*, and being inform'd beſides, that *James* the fourth did reſent ſtill the death of *Breton*, and ſome other Affronts, he ſends *Nicholas Weſt* Dean of *Windſor* and Doctor of Law, to know how he ſtood affected: and the rather, becauſe he was informed King *James* had an Army on foot. To which he anſwered, That he loved and eſteemed alike, both *Henry* the eighth, and *Loüis* the twelfth; and therefore that he thought it his beſt, to be Neutral in any difference betwixt them. *Weſt* replied, that he might do well to ſignifie thus much by Letters. But King *James* ſaid, that the ſending any Declaration of Neutrality under his Hand might argue he inclin'd a little to the *Engliſh* ſide, and conſequently might breed a ſuſpition; eſpecially when *Loüis* the twelfth could not be ignorant of the favourable audience given him, and therewithal diſmiſt him, Upon whoſe return, our King taking this cautelous anſwer into mature conſideration, found it aroſe from a private League betwixt *Loüis* and *James* (which our Records furniſh us) to this effect. 1512. * 1516.

Becauſe the King of *England's* Predeceſſors have often ſought to endamage both Princes and Realms, therefore they Combine to reſiſt the ſame; and one to aid the other perpetually againſt the ſaid King. May 22. I.

If the King of *England* ſhall at any time wage War againſt the King of *Scots*, the King of *France* and his Succeſſors ſhall wage War with all their power againſt the King of *England*, and the *Scotiſh* King promiſeth the like. II.

Neither King ſhall ſuffer his Subjects to ſerve or aid the King of *England* againſt the other. III.

Neither of the two may take Truce with the King of *England* without the other give his conſent, or be comprehended therein if he pleaſe. IV.

If the ſaid *Loüis* deceaſe without Children, and there be ſtrife about the Succeſſion, the King of *Scots* ſhall not intermeddle, but accept him who ſhall be made King, for his friend, and defend him againſt his Adverſaries, if the King of *England* aſſiſt them. And V.

1512. the ſame *Loüis* promiſes to do, if the *Scotiſh* King deceaſe without Iſſue.

This Convention ſhall be confirmed by the Pope, and neither of the Contrahents ſhall procure nor accept any abſolution from the Oath.

Our King underſtanding this, Reſolv'd to ſend his Treaſurer *Thomas* Earl of *Surrey* into *Yorkſhire*, and the Northern parts, to have an Army in readineſs, in Caſe the *Scots* ſhould ſtir in his abſence. Together with all this proviſion, he thought fit to call a Parliament, where, beſides enacting divers good Laws (whereof I ſhall hereafter mention ſome) He obtained two fifteens and four demies. He had alſo a kind of Subſidy, called Head or Poll-money, That is, of every Duke ten Marks; an Earl five pounds, a Lord four pounds, a Knight four Marks, every man valued at eight hundred pound in Goods, four Marks: and ſo after that rate to him who had forty ſhillings in Wages, who paid twelve pence, after which every one who was above fifteen years of Age, paid four pence. Order was alſo given that Bulwarks, Brays, and Walls, ſhould be rais'd in his Caſtles and Strong-holds on the Sea-ſide, whereſoever it was needful.

Regni 4. Novemb. 4.

1513. Feb. 21. *Julius* the ſecond, expecting now the ſucceſs of that War he had kindled againſt the *French*, dies; in whoſe place was choſen Cardinal *Giovanni de Medici*, by the name of *Leo* the tenth. This Pope, purſuing his Predeceſſors deſigns, incourageth our King to War againſt *France*. But He having now accompliſh'd the Age of twenty one years, needed little invitation: and the rather in that he was aſſured by his Ambaſſadors, Sir *Edward Poynings*, Sir *Thomas Bolen*, and Doctor *John Young*, that *Maximilian* would really perform his Treaty with him; only he ſuſpected *Ferdinand*. Therefore (I find by our Records) he ſent into *Spain*, *William Knight* Doctor of Law, commanding him, together with Sir *John Stile*, to uſe all Arguments to perſuade *Ferdinand*, that the return of the *Engliſh* Army was contrary both to his Will and Command; Offering further, that, if he might have aſſiſtance againſt *France* for the Conqueſt of *Guyenne*, 100000 Crowns ſhould be given in hand to *Ferdinand*, and as much more when it was gotten. For this purpoſe alſo promiſing pay for 6000 Men at ſix pence *per diem* for ſix Months. But *Ferdinand* now, to whom nothing was dearer than the Conſervation of his Conqueſt in *Navarre*, cunningly declin'd this Propoſition; as hoping, by a Treaty with *France*, to effect his purpoſes; howbeit he adviſed our King to ſend his Standard Royal with ſome Forces to *Guyenne*; and to try whether the People would follow it; ſince, he ſaid, they were very affectionate unto him. But our King gathering hence, ar well as by ſome private Advertiſements, that *Ferdinand* Treated ſecretly with *France*, reſolved to preſs him to declare himſelf, and therefore by Letters, *June* 17. he requires *Ferdinand* to

Jan.

ſeal

ſeal a Treaty againſt *France*, to which his Ambaſſadors here had conſented. But *Ferdinand* diſavowing his Ambaſſadors proceeding, ſince the Holy League (as he ſaid) became void, upon the return of the Kings Army, diſcovers withal that he had made a Truce with *France* for one whole year, which he adviſed our King alſo to accept. The Treaty into which *Ferdinands* Ambaſſadors entred at this time, was the Treaty here ſet down, which I find among our Records, and have mentioned, as being full of deſign, however eluded. 1513. June 17.

The firſt Article of the Confederation made between the Pope, Emperor, Kings of *England* and *Arragon*, againſt *Loüis* the twelfth, was, to be Friends of the Friends, and Enemies of the Enemies, *&c.* to give mutual aid, at the Charges of the Demandant. I.

To denounce War within 30 days after the date hereof, and within two months to invade him, *viz.* II.

The Pope in *Provence* or *Dauphine.*

The Emperor in ſome other fit place.

The King of *England* in *Aquitaine* (or *Guyenne*) *Picardy* or *Normandy.*

The King of *Arragon* in *Bearne*, *Languedoc*, and *Aquitaine.* Not to deſiſt from Hoſtility, or make any Truce without common conſent.

That the Subject of the Confederates, ſerve not the Enemy under pain of loſing life and goods. III.

That the Emperor (if he have not yet done it) ſhall recall the Authority by him given to the Schiſmatical Cardinals, and their Conventicle, and within a month after the date of this, ſignifying his pleaſure to them, ſhall Void and Nullifie all their proceedings and Acts in the ſame. IV.

The Pope ſhall (at the requeſt of the Confederates) fulminate his Eccleſiaſtical Cenſures againſt all that oppoſe this League. V.

The King of *England* ſhall give the Emperor (towards the great charges he ſhall be at) 100000 Crowns. VI.

Yet the Emperor by this Treaty will not engage his Grand-Child *Charles* (now under his tuition) into this War with *Loüis.* VII.

But this Treaty being refuſed by *Ferdinand*, our King proceeds by the help of his other Confederates, to the War with *France*; the Pope, for the more declaring himſelf, both confirming an Excommunication granted by *Julius* the ſecond againſt *James* King of *Scots* in caſe he ſhould break the Peace and Treaty with the King of *England*, and * granting an Indulgence to all that ſhould aſſiſt King *Henry* and the other Confederates, againſt *Loüis* and the Schiſmaticks of the Council of *Piſa.* * March.

All things here being thus diſpos'd for a War, *Maximilian* with ſome impatience attends the coming of our *Engliſh* Army; as being confident, however the buſineſs ſucceeded between the two Nations

1513. tions, he could make his advantage thereof. That he might do this the better, he thought it not amiſs to interpoſe ſome difficulties. Neither could he be wholly won, till he had obtained of *Henry* 120000 Ducats towards his charge in bringing 3000 Horſe and 8000 Foot which ſhould enter *Burgogne*, as ſoon as the King attempted *Picardy*.

While theſe preparations were in hand, our King, to take off *James*, ſends Doctor *Weſt* again into *Scotland*, where in ſtead of all other Offices, that King exhorted ours to a Peace with *France*, promiſing on thoſe terms his friendſhip. But our King being reſolved to proceed, thought fit in the firſt place to clear the Sea from the *French* Navy. And therefore ſends his Fleet, being compos'd of forty two Sail, beſides leſſer Barks, againſt them. The *French* being inform'd hereof long before, had gotten one *Pregent*, a Knight of *Rhodes*, (called by our Hiſtorians Prior *John*) with four Gallies to paſs the *Streights* and come to *Bretagne* where many good Ships were appointed to joyn with them. And till they came, it was thought better to keep within the Haven of *Breſt*, than to encounter our Navy lying at Anchor in ſight of them. Our men therefore reſolve to attempt them in the middle of their Defences: while they intend this, one of our Ships (under the command of *Arthur Plantagenet*) was caſt away on a blind Rock. This ſtaid our men a while; at laſt they purſe their deſign, and enter the Haven, where the *French* Fleet lay under the covert of many Platforms that were raiſed on the Land. Beſides, they had joyned twenty four Hulks together, with purpoſe to ſet them on fire, and let them go adrift with the Tide, when our *Engliſh* ſhould approach them; or (as our Records have it) to keep the fire from theirs.

April 17. Laſtly, they mored their Ships as near the Caſtle as they could, and ſo attended *Pregents* coming. Being prepared thus, the Lord Admiral Sir *Edward Howard* conſidering the order in which the *French* lay, thought fit to advertiſe his King and Maſter thereof, adviſing him withal to come in Perſon, and have the glory of this Action. But our Kings Council taking this meſſage into conſideration, and conceiving that it was not altogether fear (as was thought) but ſtratagem and cunning, that made the *French* thus attend their advantage, thought the King was not ſo much invited to the Honour, as danger of this Action, and therefore rejected the overture. Thereupon they write ſharply to him again (as our Hiſtorians ſay, though our Records mention not this particular) commanding him to do his duty. Whereof that brave Cavalier was ſo ſenſible, as it cauſed him to hazard his Perſon afterwards ſo raſhly, that it occaſioned his death; the manner whereof was thus, as it is drawn out of our Records: where, by a Letter dated

April 17. from him, *April* 17. it appears, That, after he had come before *Breſt* with his Navy, he ſent out his Boats, to make a ſhew of Landing; whereupon the *French* flocking to the Shoar, to the number of

of above 10000 (the *Engliſh* in all the Boats being not above 1500) he thought fit to Land over againſt *Breſt*, where he burnt the Country in the ſight of the Caſtle; the *French* Ships (the while) lying beneath it, being defended with their Hulks: And that he thought not fit to do any more, till Victuals came, whereof he ſtood then in need, though he ſaid he had them at a great advantage, their Gallies being not yet come. Together with which diſpatch unto the King, he ſent Mr. *Arthur Plantagenet*, much diſcouraged, as he ſaid, by the caſting away of his Ship, and diſabled to ſerve in any other kind, becauſe his Soldiers that remained were beſtowed elſewhere. After which I find by another * Letter of Sir *Edward Echingham* (who was preſent in the Expedition) that, *April* 22. ſix Gallies of the Enemies, (being two more then were expected) and four Foyſts under *Pregent*, put into *Blanc-ſablon-Bay* near *Conquet*, a little below *Breſt*; which being notified to our Admiral, he himſelf, being attended with four choice Captains, reſolved to Board them, *April* 25. Whereupon entring himſelf into one of the two Gallies (which only the *Engliſh* had at that time) and committing the other to *Walter Devereux* Lord *Ferrers*, he advances with two Row-Barges and two Crayers; in the one of which was Sir *Thomas Cheyney* and Sir *John Wallop*, in the other Sir *Henry Sherborne* and Sir *William Sidney*; *Pregent* (this while) lying betwixt two Rocks, that had Bulwarks on them, full of Ordnance. All which yet could not deter our Lord Admiral, who therefore about four in the Afternoon (the ſame day) Boarded the Galley in which *Pregent* was, and entred it with his Sword and Target, one *Carroz* a *Spaniſh* Cavalier and ſeventeen *Engliſh* more attending him, commanding together his Galley to be faſtned or grapled to his Enemies; but whether the *French* hewed aſunder the Cable, or our Mariners let it ſlip for fear of the Ordnance, the *Engliſh* Galley fell off, and this Noble Perſon was left in the hands of his Enemies; Of whom therefore our men could give no other account, but that when he was paſt all hope of recovering his Gallies, he took his Whiſtle from his neck, and flung it into the Sea. The Lord *Ferrers* in the mean time (who was in the other Galley) fail'd not to do his part, until having ſpent all his Shot, and ſeen the Admirals Galley fall of, he retired; which the Row-Barges alſo did, as not knowing but the Admiral was ſafe. The ſad news of whoſe loſs yet being at length made known, it was thought fit to ſend to the *French* Admiral, to know what was become of him. Whereupon Sir *Thomas Cheyney*, Sir *Richard Cornwall*, and Sir *John Wallop* came to know what Priſoners were taken; to whom *Pregent* (or Prior *John*) anſwered, None, but a Mariner, who told him, that a certain Perſon they bore over-board with their Pikes was their Admiral. Laſtly, he added (in the Letter) that the *French* in *Bourdeaux* had made ſix new Gallies, which were ſhortly expected at *Breſt*, and that our Gallies, as he ſaid, could do the *French-men* moſt diſpleaſure.

1513.

May 6.

April 22.

April 25.

Upon

1513. * May 4. Upon news of our Admirals death, his place was * preſently beſtowed on his Brother the Lord *Thomas Howard*; who, wiſely conſidering the advantage of the *French* Gallies in a Calm, and number of their Ships, and the danger of the Winds for us, if they blew South-weſt, deſired of the King ſo many Soldiers as might both Man the Ships, and make good the Landing. But before he came, our Fleet (it ſeems wanting one to Command it) was return'd, and *Pregent* (upon notice thereof) encourag'd to Land in *Suſſex*, from whence yet he was quickly repuls'd, without doing more that year. And now the Lord Admiral having equipped the Navy Royal, ſcoured the Seas, and ſecur'd our Kings intended paſſage. The particularities I ſhall omit, until (in imitation of *Polydore*) I have ſet down the Deſcription of *Thomas Woolſey* (afterwards Cardinal) a man at this time beginning to be in ſpecial favour with the King, the original whereof I muſt deduce from his chief raiſer and founder, *Richard Fox* Biſhop of *Wincheſter*.

This Biſhop, being made Principal Secretary and Privy-Seal, became not only an able but potent Miniſter of State; having yet difference with the Lord Treaſurer *Thomas* Earl of *Surrey*, a Nobleman of great courage and experience in affairs, he ſtood not ſecure. They had often been reconciled by the King; who not only beſt knew, but often ſuffered moſt for their oppoſition. Yet as the wiping out of blots ſometimes makes them greater, ſo ſatisfactions for injuries ſeldom expiate them ſo totally, but that ſome impreſſion remains. Therefore they ſtood ſtill at a diſtance, in which condition yet they wanted not their advantages on either ſide. The Biſhop had abundant matter to ſuggeſt; the huge Treaſure, which *Henry* the ſeventh left, being ſo exhauſted, that it was now almoſt conſumed; while the Lord Treaſurer in the diſpoſing of this young Kings bounty, ſo ordered buſineſſes, as in facilitating diſpatches, he got him many Friends and Followers. The Lord Treaſurer, on the other ſide, ſaid, that nothing being done without the Kings ſpecial order, it was through envy only the Biſhop thus oppos'd him. In theſe terms then they ſtood ſtill, without almoſt concurring in any thing, but in excluding all others from gaining on the Kings diſpoſition; which yet they did not ſo much by mutual conſent, as by diminiſhing in their turns, every body elſe, that was extraordinarily in his good opinion. At laſt the Biſhop thinking how to better his party, brought in this *Thomas Woolſey*, to which purpoſe alſo Sir *Thomas Lovel* Knight, and Maſter of the Wards, aſſiſted him. This man though of mean birth, being obſerved by them to be of a quick and ſtirring wit, and particularly famous for a Diſpatch in *Henry* the ſeventh his time, wherein he uſed extraordinary diligence, was thought a fit inſtrument for their purpoſes. He was already a Chaplain in the Houſhold, and Almoner, and from thence raiſed to the place of a Councellor. Being in this nearneſs he knew as well how to diſcourſe

course with the King in matter of Learning, (the King being much addicted to the reading of *Thomas Aquinas*) as to comply with him in his delights; insomuch, as (saith *Polydore*) he would sing, dance, laugh, jest, and play with those Youths in whose attendance and company the King much delighted. Briefly, (to use *Polydores* words) he made his private House *Voluptatum omnium Sacrarium, quo Regem frequenter ducebat.* He omitted not yet in the midst of all these jollities, to speak seriously, representing so all businesses to the King, as he got much credit with him. And this, again, was confirm'd by those Gallants, who contributed not a little thereunto. Whereupon he began to tell the King, that he should sometimes follow his Studies in School-Divinity, and sometimes take his pleasure, and leave the care of publick affairs to him: promising that what was amiss in his Kingdom should be rectified. Likewise, he omitted not to infuse fears and jealousies of all those whom he conceived the King might affect. Whereby he became so perfect a Courtier, that he had soon attained the height of favour. For as Princes have Arts to govern Kingdoms, Courtiers have those by which they govern their Princes, when through any indisposition they grow unapt for affairs. These Arts being hopes and fears, which as doors and passages to the heart, are so guarded by their vigilancy, that they can both let themselves in, and keep all others out: and therefore may be termed not only the two ends of that Thred upon which Government depends, but through their dextrous handling, may be tyed upon what knot they will. Particularly, he desired to reduce all businesses to himself; for which end he spake in this manner: 1513.

Sir, Your Highness hath now sufficient experience of strange effects which contradictions in Council bring forth; It is unsafe to believe singly either of those on whose advice your Highness most relies, and impossible to believe both. May your Highness therefore chuse some one, who, being dis-interessed, may have no passion or thought but to serve your Highness. All those strong reasons of State which conclude Monarchy the best form of Government, make for a Favourite in the next place. Insomuch, that of supreme Authority, as of those Pyramidal heights on which the Statues of Princes were anciently placed, I dare say, there can be none well raised, that from the lowest foundation is not sharpned by degrees unto its point. But, lest this should be thought looking upwards only, be pleased a while to look down, and consider things the other way, and the Prospective will hold its proportion. For how, *Sir*, should a King conserve his Power, if he divide and let it fall at once on divers inferior persons? Believe me, *Sir*, to diffuse it over-suddenly, is to take away not only from the Dignity, but even intireness of it: it being with Authority, as with a Spring or Fountain, which, that it may keep its Course and Name, must be cherish'd and entertain'd, till it

1513. grow great, by the Contributions and Concurrences of thoſe leſſer Heads that run into it. Kings muſt never deſcend but by ſteps. The more orders are under them, the higher ſtill they ſtand. Neither will your other Counſellors think themſelves much leſſened this way; for when they may uſe the ordinary power and ſway allow'd them over their inferiors, they will not think themſelves much concern'd for the reſt. Beſides, your people will be glad of it, as knowing which way to addreſs their ſuits. To leave them more at large, were to expoſe them to thoſe delays and uncertainties they would never patiently endure. Again, it would be impoſſible any other way to keep ſecrecy in buſineſs, (which yet is the life of Counſel) or almoſt to find out who is the divulger. Moreover, when your Highneſs, in ſome great and perplex'd affairs, hath occaſion to acquaint your Counſellors only with ſome part of your meaning, what inſtrument can be ſo apt as a Favourite? While, if things ſucceed ill, or otherwiſe that your Highneſs would not ſeem to have the advice proceed from you, how eaſily may your Highneſs diſavow all, and lay the fault on him? Thus may your Highneſs find the many uſes you may make of your Favourite. Yet, *Sir*, let me ſay, I ſhould never adviſe your Highneſs to ſee by his Eyes, or hear by his Ears only. This were to keep you in too much darkneſs and ſubjection. To prevent this therefore, be pleas'd to appoint able Perſons, and ſuch as may not know of each other, by whom your Highneſs may be inform'd, not only what is done, but even ſaid vulgarly. Thus ſhall your Highneſs take order not to be deceiv'd. As for the more doubtful and intricate parts of buſineſs, which require particular ſcrutiny and examination; your Highneſs, in my opinion, may do well to have three or four confident Perſons, not yet of the Body of your Council, with whom ſeparately your Highneſs may adviſe, before thoſe difficulties be brought unto them. This will enable your Highneſs to ſpeak thereof when you transfer it to the Body of your Council, and make you diſcern their Opinions. Only, if any thing be determined, let your Favourite ſtill be the chief Actor in the execution. Hereof then your Highneſs may pleaſe to adviſe. Neither will I preſume to nominate my ſelf otherwiſe: Only I will crave leave to ſay thus much, that, when your Highneſs would, out of your own election, think fit to uſe my beſt ſervice herein, I ſhould not doubt but ſo to eſtabliſh and conſerve your Highneſs Authority, as to make you the greateſt and happieſt Prince living. Neither ſhould I fear to fall when any benefit might grow to your Majeſty thereby. The young King being perſuaded thus, without other advice or conſideration adopted *Woolſey*, and thereupon orders him to diſpatch but chiefeſt affairs. This got him not only eſtimation and addreſſes, but Preſents and rich Gifts from the Greateſt Perſons. They again brought him to that inſolency, that he ſeemed not only to forget

get his Birth, (being a Butchers Son) but all his former friends; insomuch as no man (saith *Polydore*) durſt remember him of an ancient acquaintance. A Badg or Livery whereof (he saith) appeared in his outward Garment, he being the first and last (saith the same *Polydore*) among all Priest, Bishops, and Cardinals, that ever wore Silk for his uppermost Vestment. Yet was it not alone; for as divers other Priests imitated him, some envy was raised on the whole Clergy. But this was when Silk was either more rare, or more esteemed: it being in this Age so common, that it is become the wearing of every mean person. The Gallants of the Court finding now the Kings favour manifestly shining on *Woolsey*, applied themselves much to him. And especially *Charles Brandon*, who, for his goodly person, courage, and conformity of disposition, was noted to be most acceptable to the King in all his Exercises and Pastimes. Notwithstanding all which (saith *Polydore*) the King sadly examined businesses himself; and, howsoever the chief trust was committed to *Woolsey*, did not omit yet (as far as his Youth would suffer him) to use his own judgment in his weightiest affairs. 1513.

All preparations for the expedition to *France* being now hastened, amongst which, that of Victualling the Army was (not without a Sarcasm to his Birth) recommended to *Woolsey*, it was yet controverted whether the King should go in Person. They who oppos'd it, urged, first their due affection to, and tenderness over him; saying further, that, if the King should die without issue, (however the Succession were undoubted in his Sister *Margaret*) yet that the people were so affected to the House of *York*, as they might take *Edmund de la Pole* out of the Tower, and set him up. That the War in *France* was not of that consequence (especially since, with the death of *Julius* the second, it seemed the chief causes of dissention ceased) that the King should go in Person, and desert his own Kingdom. On the other side it was alledged, that to commit an Army, wherein the flower of his Nobility and Kingdom, was to any one Subject, was not only unsafe, but to the prejudice of many worthy Competitors for that honour. That it was no new thing (whether they regarded the ancient Kings of *England*, or the modern Emperor, and two *French* Kings successively) to go in Person, with a Royal Army. That the same providence ruled every where. But it was replied, that, till the King had more Issue (and that masculine) it was against all reason of State to hazard the Kingdom to those tumults which might follow; to which opinion, as the best, it is likely the King would have condescended, had not fresh Letters arriv'd from *Maximilian*, in the Popes name exhorting him speedily to come; and promising that he would not only give him meeting, but take pay under him. In the mean while it was thought fit that *Edmund de la Pole* (Son of *John de la Pole*, Duke of *Suffolk*, by *Elizabeth* Sister

1513. April 30. to *Edward* the fourth, who had been made Priſoner by *Henry* the ſeventh, and ſo continued many years) ſhould have his Head ſtruck off; Our King therein but executing what his Father *Henry* at his departure out of the World commanded, (as *Bellay* hath it.) And true it is that he was of a turbulent and audacious ſpirit: but whether any late matter was alledg'd againſt him, doth not ſufficiently appear to me, by any Record. Though ſome correſpondence with his younger Brother *Richard de la Pole* (who I find by the *French* Writers Commanded 6000 *French* at the Siege of *Theroüene*) might perchance accelerate his end.

Hall. The King reſolv'd now to go in Perſon, thought fit yet to ſend his Vantguard before. This was commanded by *George Talbot* Earl of *Shrewsbury*, High Steward of the Kings Houſhold, who was accompanyed with *Thomas Stanley* Earl of *Derby*, *Thomas Dowra* Lord Prior of the Order of St. *Johns*, Sir *Robert Ratcliffe*, Lord *Fitz-water*, the Lord *Haſtings*, the Lord *Cobham*, Sir *Rice ap Thomas* Captain of the Light-Horſe, and many other brave Knights and Eſquires, and the number of above eight thouſand, who came

May. to *Calais* in Mid-*May*. Theſe were followed again with the Middleward of about ſix thouſand more, who being commanded by the Lord *Herbert*, Lord Chamberlain to the King (whom alſo the Earls of *Northumberland*, *Kent*, and *Wiltſhire*, the Lords *Audley* and *De-la-Ware*, the Barons *Carow* and *Curſon*, and divers other worthy Knights and Eſquires, accompanied) arrived at *Calais* fifteen days after. Theſe two Lords attending the Kings further directions,

June 17. ſtay'd there till *June* 17. when they both in good order of Battel Marched towards *Theroüene*, before which Town they arrived

June 22. upon the two and twentieth following, pitching their Tents about a Mile off. This Town was fenced with a large Ditch, ſtrong

Hall. Bulwarks, and quantity of great Ordnance, which Shot freſhly, inſomuch that the Baron of *Carow* Maſter of the Ordnance was the firſt night killed by a Bullet in the Lord *Herbert's* Tent, which came

J. de Serr. ſo near him, that the *French* (though erroneouſly) write he was ſlain there.

The Earl of *Shrewsbury* planted himſelf on the North-weſt, and the Lord *Herbert* on the Eaſt ſide of the Town, whence they made their approaches. In the Town was a Garriſon of about two thouſand Foot, and two hundred and fifty Lances, commanded by *Monſieur Francois de Teligny*, and *Anthoine de Crequy S^r de Pondormy*. To relieve them again, the *French* raiſed a puiſſant Army, to which ten thouſand more under the Duke of *Gueldres*, and ſix thouſand more under *Richard de la Pole*, Brother to *Edmund* lately Beheaded, were added.

Hall. In the mean while our King, having conſtituted Queen *Katharine* Regent, paſſeth the Sea to *Calais* upon the laſt of *June*;

June 30. bringing with him the reſt of the Army, which was tranſported with about 400 Sail: With him came alſo the *Almoner*, and new Favourite,

rite, *Thomas Woolsey*, who, by having lived long in that Town under the Treasurer thereof, was perfectly acquainted with the addresses of it. The King being visited by the Ambassadors of the Emperor, the Regent of *Flanders*, and Duke of *Brunswick*, stayed here till the 21 of *July*, when, hearing that the *French* meant to relieve *Theroüene*, under the Command of *Loüis Duc de Longueville*, and Marquess *de Rotelin*, whom *le Seigneur de la Palisse*, as also the famous *Bayard*, *la Fayette*, *Clermont d' Anjou*; and *Buisse d' Amboïs* accompanied, he hastned his departure. Ais Army consisted of about 9000 good fighting Men, besides those who belong'd to the Carriages, which were some 2000 or 3000 more. Sir *Charles Brandon* (a little before Created Viscount *Lisle*) had the Vantguard, whom the Earl of *Essex* (Lieutenant General of the Spears) accompanied. In the Battel the King came, having the Duke of *Buckingham* on the one Hand with 600 chosen Men, and Sir *Edward Poynings* on the other with as many more; Sir *Henry Guilford* carrying the Standard Royal. The Rereguard being composed in great part of the Retinue of *Richard Fox* Bishop of *Winchester*, and *Woolsey*, to the number of 800 Men, was led by Sir *William Compton*. In the spaces betwixt, the great Ordnance (among which *Bellay* mentions those call'd the 12 Apostles) was drawn, and part of the Carriages dispos'd. After all these yet came Sir *Anthony Oughtred* and *John Nevil* with 400 Spears. This little but flourishing Army was scarce entred into the *French* Confines near *Ardres*, when news was brought that the Enemy appear'd. Hereupon Sir *Rice ap Thomas* (who came from *Theroüene* with 500 Light Horse to meet the King) joyning with the Earl of *Essex* and Sir *Thomas Guilford*, who commanded 200 Archers on Horse-back, drew towards the *French*, but they presently disappeared. As they marched yet, two Pieces of Ordnance miscarried, the one whereof was * lost, the other * recovered in despight of the *French*. Upon the fourth of *August* the King came to *Theroüene*, before which he caused a sumptuous *Pavilion* to be pitched, Sir *Alexander Baynam* Captain of the Pioneers, shortly after caused a Mine to be made under the Walls; but the *French* Countermining, it was well disputed, and divers kill'd on both parts. *Maximilian* being * now come to *Ayre*, it was thought fit an Interview should be made. But the day being very foul, the Ceremony was short.

About two days after, *Lyon* King of Arms in *Scotland*, in his Heraulds Coat, comes to the Camp, and desires leave to deliver a Letter * to the King. *Garter* brings him in. The King having perus'd the Contents (which were, Expostulation for some pretended Injuries, and thereupon denunciation of War unless he returned) makes a sharp Answer by word of mouth, among other things telling him, that he had left an Earl behind him in the North, who could very well defend his Kingdom against the attempts of

1513.

July 21.

May 15.

Hall.

* July 28.
* July 29.
Aug. 4.

* Aug. 9.

Aug. 11.

*Dat. Jul. 9.

1513. of his Master. But *Lyon* refus'd to carry any verbal Message. Whereupon our King thought fit by Letter again to answer to this purpose, That he understood this expostulation to be nothing but the pick of a Quarrel to assist the *French*, and invade him in his absence. That he wished him to call to mind how *John* King of *Navarre*, for ayding the *French* in the same manner, lost his Kingdom; and advised him to take that for a warning. Lastly, he bid him be assured, that what he did to him or his Realm now he was absent, should be remembred, and requited again in like measure. Before yet these Letters could be delivered by *Lyon*, his King and Master *James* the fourth was kill'd, as shall be afterwards related.

Aug. 12.

Aug. 12. Upon the twelfth of *August*, *Maximilian* the Emperor came to the King, in the quality of his Soldier, and therefore not only wore the Cross of Saint *George*, but receiv'd his pay duly, which I find, by some, to have been a hundred Crowns *per diem*. Notwithstanding which, that all due respect might be rendred to his Person, the King gave order to lodg him according to his dignity, in a Tent of Cloth of Gold, for the rest most sumptuously entertaining him the space of two days that he stayed in the Camp. *Theroüene* was not yet so streightly besieged, but that on the one side which was toward the River *Lys*, there was a way open, on which part the *French* intended to relieve it. The King therefore commanded five Bridges to be instantly made over the said River, by which himself with *Maximilian* (who was now * return'd again) and a great part of the Army passed *. This was scarce done, when our Light-Horse brought word, that the *French* were in sight. Our King thereupon marched towards them. The *French* at first came as if they meant to fight; but, after a slight skirmish, fled away in much disorder; which seemed the stranger, in that the fight was between the Horsemen only, and many of the bravest of their Nation were among them: Our men pursued, and took *Loüis Duc de Longueville*; Marquess *de Rotelyn*, *Bayard*, *Fayette*, *Clermont*, and *Brisse d' Aubois*, and brought them away, together with nine Cornets. The *Teigneus de la Palisse*, and *Monsieur d' Imbrecourt* were also taken, but agreeing for their ranson upon the place, were presently let free, or, as others say, escaped. This Battel, happening the 16 of *August*, was call'd by the *French*, *la Journee des Esperons*, because they made little use of any thing but their Spurs; for the good success where therefore both the King, and *Maximilian* the Emperor (wearing still his Badg of the Red-Cross) did upon the place congratulate with each other, and afterwards assisted at a solemn *Te Deum* for this easie Victory. Neither had the *French* better fortune, in setting upon a Convoy going with Provisions for our Army betwixt *Guisnes*, and *Theroüene*, they being repuls'd (as *Bellay* hath it) and *Monsieur de Plessis* slain. While the *French* held battel with our King, as is aforesaid,

* Aug. 15.
* Aug. 16.
Hall.

Aug. 16.

aforesaid part of their Cavalry which had divided it self that it might the better bring in Provision, fell on the Quarter of the Earl of *Shrewsbury*, and Sir *Rice ap Thomas* on the other side of the water; but they were also soon repuls'd, though the Garison, and Towns-men taking this occasion, sallied forth upon the Trenches of the Lord *Herbert* to make a diversion; for that Lord being prepar'd to receive them, they were quickly beaten in again. Few days after the *Seigneur de Pontdormy* despairing to keep the place long *yielded both it, and the Ordnance to the King, upon Condition they might depart with their Arms, Bag and Baggage, and Drums beating in Military Order. Which being done, our King and the Emperor, who as I find it confirm'd in an Ancient Manuscript Diary extant in our Records, still gave our King the Precedence) entred the Town, *August* 24.

This City being gotten, it was now disputed whether our King should hold it: A question which could not but seem strange as well to the Authors of the Counsel as Complices in the hazard, especially since it cost so much, as *Guicciardine* doubts not to call it *Spesa intollerabile & infinita*; Howbeit it was at last resolv'd, that, because it so confin'd on *Maximilian*'s Territories. and that the Garison infested his Subjects by frequent Incursions, at *Maximilian*'s intreaty, the Town should be rased, save only the Church and Religious Houses; so much did our King defer to the Emperor *Maximilian* for being his Soldier, and taking pay under him. Besides, our King considered that to leave any Troops behind would disable his further designs, for which motives therefore he gave the Town to *Maximilian*, who levell'd it, which yet I find was not so done, but that the *French* did shortly after repair and put it into defence. From hence then the King (being persuaded to it by *Maximilian*) resolves to besiege *Tournay*; But, by the way, being diverted by the Princess *Marguarites* persuasions (who desired much to see him at *Lisle*) he passed three days in her Company, and the many fair Ladies that attended her; when remembring himself, that it was time to visit his Army (which lay at some distance from him strongly encamped) he takes leave of the Ladies. Being now out of the Gates a Mile or two, some such mist hapned both to him and all his Train, that they had lost themselves; neither could they resolve which way to turn, until a Victualler coming by chance from his Army, both inform'd him where it lay, and conducted him thither, to the great rejoycing of them all. The 15 of *Septemb.* the Army (which *Maximilian* had now left, upon pretence of I know not what dissatisfaction, which yet was shortly repaired,) set down before *Tournay*, which thereupon was summoned to yield; but the greater part refusing, the King encamping on the North, the Earl of *Shrewsbury* on the South, and the Lord *Herbert* on the West of the Town began their Batteries. When upon the 21. a Messenger from the Earl of *Surrey* brought

1513.

* Aug. 22.
Aug. 23.

Diary M. S.
Aug. 24.

Aug. 27.
Diar. I. T.

Bellay.
Sept. 12.
Diary of *Jo. Taylor. M. S.*
Hall.
Sept. 14.

Sept. 15.

1513.
Sept. 21.
* *J. T. Diar.*
Hall.
Sept. 22.
* Dat.
Sept. 23.
Diar. Jo. Taylor. M. S. Latin.
Sept. 24.
Sept. 25.
J. T. Diar.

brought the Gantlet, or, as *others say, the Coat-Armour of *James* the fourth, as a Token of the Victory obtained at *Flodden*. This, as it rejoyced the King, so it put him in mind of the viciſſitude of all worldly things. Therefore he temper'd his mirth with a ſerious conſideration of the events to which Wars are ſubject. Howſoever, he cauſed *Te Deum* to be ſung publickly the day following, and a Sermon to be preached by the Biſhop of *Rocheſter*, who laid all the fault on that King's breach of word. Which day alſo thoſe of *Tournay* Capitulated and yielded to our King, by the name of *Roy Tres-Chriſtien* (as I find in the Original *contract) upon condition of fidelity, and preſent payment of fifty thouſand Crowns *de Soleil*, and a yearly Penſion of four thouſand pound *Tournois* for the ſpace of ten years. Whereupon the King, as *John Taylor* Doctor of Law, preſent at the Seige, ſaith in his Manuſcript Latin Diary, gave them leave to enjoy their Ancient Cuſtoms and Liberties; upon condition yet they ſhould admit a Gariſon. Neither as it ſeems could they do otherwiſe; the *French* being ſo much diſcouraged by their late misfortune, that they did not attempt the relieving of it. Thus, on the 24 of *September*, our King entred the Town triumphantly. And here, upon conſultation what was next to be done, it was reſolved to ſurceaſe the War for this year, Winter now beginning to enter. It was thought fit alſo, to leave Sir *Edward Poynings* with a ſtrong Gariſon to keep it. Which cannot but ſeem ſtrange, to thoſe who conſider that *Theroüene* was raſed; ſince *Theroüene* was nearer the *Engliſh* Pale, and might be better defended, and would, beſides, have kept the paſſage open to this. But falſe Counſels are like falſe Gems; which how counterfeit ſoever, have (when they are well ſet) one good light to be ſeen by. Therefore *Woolſey*, (who was ſo much Author of this Counſel as he got the Biſhoprick of the place thereby) could gloſe his advice; which telling the King, he might now have confidence in *Maximilian*, as having ſerv'd under him. Beſides, that the raiſing of *Theroüene* at his requeſt, would put a perpetual obligation on him. But as for *Tournay*, that it was fit it ſhould be kept, as a Trophee of his Victories; and the rather, for that *Cæſar* (in his Commentaries) confeſſeth here, more than in any place elſe, to have found a valorous reſiſtance. But how well the Arguments were grounded, the ſequel will ſhew. The firſt uſe our King made of this Town, was to repay the courteſies received of the Princeſs *Marguarite*. Hereupon ſhe, being invited, came thither, as alſo her Nephew *Charles* Prince of *Caſtile*, (afterwards Emperor;) between whom and his Siſter *Mary* there had interceded a kind of contract (as is before related) ever ſince the time of their Father *Henry* the ſeventh; which likewiſe for the preſent ſeemed to be confirmed betwixt them, inſomuch that they came to divers particularities; Among which one was, that the King ſhould bring her with him the next Spring. I find alſo ſome overture of

a

a match between *Charles Brandon*, now Lord *Liſle*, and the ſaid Princeſs *Marguarite*; which, though it took no effect, was not yet without much demonſtration of outward Grace and Favour on her part. In the mean while, that the Ladies and the Emperor who came with them, might be receiv'd according to their quality and worth, the King, taking the ſaid Lord for his aſſociate, did *hold a ſolemn Juſts there, againſt all comers; which he bravely performed. And now having feaſted the Ladies Royally for divers days, he *departed from *Tournay* to *Liſle*, whither he was invited by the Lady *Margaret*; who cauſed there a Juſts to be held in an extraordinary manner; the place being a large Room, raiſed high from the ground, by many ſteps, and paved with black Square Stones like Marble; while the Horſes to prevent ſliding and noiſe, were ſhod with felt or flocks, (the Latin words are *Feltro ſive Tomento.*) After which, the Lords and Ladies danced all night.

1513.

Diar. J. T.

**Octob.* 11.

**Octob.* 13.
Octob. 16.
Jo. T. Diary.

Yet, as I find by Foreign Authors, theſe Jollities were not the only cauſe of his ſtay. For *Ferdinand* (the firſt mover of theſe troubles) hearing that the War againſt *France* was likely to ceaſe for this year, ſends *Pedro de Orrea*, and *Juan de la Nuca*, and *Gabriel de Orti* to *Henry* the Eighth, with Commiſſion to Treat for a League, by which both Kings, with the Emperor, ſhould ſeverally enter *France* the next Spring: And that, for this purpoſe, each of them ſhould, from their Frontiers, begin the War. That *Ferdinand* therefore from *Navarre* ſhould invade *Guyenne* with fifteen thouſand five hundred foot, and one thouſand five hundred Horſe of his own Subjects, and to be paid by him; and ſix thouſand *Germans*, to be paid at the rate of twenty thouſand Crowns the month, by the King of *England*. In conſideration whereof, the War was to be made in the ſaid King of *England*'s name, and for the recovery of his Patrimony in *Guyenne*. On the other ſide, that the King of *England* aſſiſted by *Maximilian*, ſhould, with ſixteen thouſand Foot, and four thouſand Horſe, from his Territories, invade *Normandy* or *Picardy*; and that they ſhhuld not relinquiſh this War without mutual conſent. Laſtly, there was place left for the Pope, the Prince, Arch-Duke, the Duke of *Milan*, the *Suiſſe*, and the *Florentines*, to enter into this League; which was ſigned at *Liſle* on the 17. of *October* by *Richard* Biſhop of *Wincheſter*, and the Marqueſs *Dorſet* on our Kings part; The *Seigneur de Berghes* chief *Camartro* of the Emperor, and *Gerrard de Pleine* Preſident of his Council; and *Pedro de Orrea*, *Don Luis Carroz*, and *Juan de la Nuca* Ambaſſadors of *Ferdinand*. This being done, and the King, for the reſt teſtifying much ſatisfaction, departed thence, and two days after, in good order of Battel, came to *Calais*, having in this Voyage beſtowed honour upon divers perſons of worth. Sir *Thomas Cornwal*, Baron of *Burford*, Sir *Thomas Leighton*, Sir *Tho. Blount*, Sir *Henry Sacheverell*, &c. being made Knights Bannerets;

Surita.

Octob. 17.

Octob. 17.

Diar. M. S.

1513. Bannerets; and Sir *John Maynwaring*, Sir *John South*, Sir *John Digby*, &c. created Knights. And here the King gave order for ſecuring *Tournay*, as well as the reſt of his Poſſeſſions in thoſe parts, which being done, and the wind proving fair, he ſhortly came to
Octob. 24. his Queen at *Richmond*, who had long expected him.

Having now related the King's expedition (which I was unwilling to interrupt by any intervening occaſion) I muſt return to the Narration of that Battel, which was fought betwixt *James* the fourth, and *Thomas* Earl of *Surrey*, commonly call'd *Flodden*-field. This King, retaining in his Mind ſome rancour for divers Cauſes formerly related, thought he could not any time more ſeaſonably revenge himſelf, or for the reſt give a more acceptable teſtimony of his love to *Loüis* the twelfth, then now in the Kings abſence, by invading his Realm. Therefore, having firſt denounced War by his Herald, he ſent *Alexander* Lord *Humes*, his Chamberlain,
Aug. to forage the Borders; which Sir *William Bulmer* hearing, uſed that diligence, that he overtook, and fought with him in his Re-
Aug. 22. treat, ſo that he recovered a rich Booty. The King hereupon in
Hall. Perſon, with an Army of fifty thouſand (ſome write a hundred
Aug. 27. thouſand) Men, enters the Country, and, after a few days Siege, takes *Norham*-Caſtle. *Thomas* Earl of *Surrey* hereupon haſtens his Army, which conſiſted of twenty ſix thouſand, appointing his Son the Lord Admiral to come by Sea, and meet him at or near
Sept. 4. *Alnwick*, in *Northumberland*. This brave Lord failed not his time, bringing with him alſo about one thouſand Men; of whom when the Earl had taken view, and given order in what place every one ſhould fight, he marches towards the King; who had removed his
Buch. Army to an Hill called *Flodden* (or *Fluidon*) on the edg of the Mountain *Cheviot*; where he ſtrongly entrench'd himſelf. The *Scotiſh* Writers here relate, that many of their Country-men (for want of Victuals) ſecretly fled home, leaving the King's Troops but thin. Our Writers, on the other ſide, make the *Scotiſh*-men much ſuperior in number. Howſoever, the Earl of *Surrey* deſired nothing more than to fight, as finding the whole Country thereabouts ſo foraged and ſpoiled that he could not long ſubſiſt. There-
Sept. 4. fore on *Sunday*, Sept. 4. he thought fit to ſend *Rouge-Croix* Herald, with a Trumpet, and Inſtructions to *James* the Fourth, to tell him, that, in regard he had violated his Faith and League, and hoſtilely entred the *Engliſh* ground, that on *Friday* next he would bid him Battel, if the ſaid King would ſtay ſo long in *England*, and accept it. The Lord *Thomas* his Son, alſo requir'd *Rouge-Croix* particularly to certifie the King of his Journey by Sea; and that, becauſe he could meet no *Scotiſh* Ships there, he thought fit to Land, that he might juſtifie *Andrew Breton's* death; and added further, as he looked for no mercy from his Enemies, ſo he would ſpare none, but the King only, if he came in his hands. And to make all this good, that he would be in the Vantguard of the Battel.

tel. Laſtly *Rouge Croix* was charged, if any were remanded, he ſhould (for preventing eſpial) bring him no nearer than two miles unto the Camp. *James* the fourth * received this Meſſage gladly, and, as he was a Prince of great Courage, by his own Herald aſſures the Earl, that he did ſo much deſire to encounter him, that, when he had been at *Edenburgh*, he would have left all buſineſs for that purpoſe: and therefore wiſhed him to reſt aſſured, he would not fail to abide Battel the day named, which was *Friday*. This being done, the Herald delivers a Proteſtation from his King and Maſter, in theſe very words, being in anſwer to the former Expoſtulation of the Earls. 1513. * Sept. 6.

As to the cauſes alledged of our coming into *England*, againſt our Bond and promiſe (as is alledged,) thereto we anſwer; Our Brother was bound as far to us, as we to him; and when we ſware laſt, before his Ambaſſador in preſence of our Council, we expreſſed eſpecially in our Oath, that we would keep to our Brother, if our Brother kept to us, and not elſe. We ſware our Brother brake firſt unto us. And ſince his Breach we have required divers times him to amend. And lately we warned our Brother, as he did not us, ere he brake. And this we take for our Quarrel, and with Gods Grace ſhall defend the ſame, at your affixed time, which with Gods Grace we ſhall abide. Hereupon the Earl, advancing, came within three miles of *Flodden*; but, perceiving that the King ſtill kept upon the Hill, which was unapproachable, He ſent *Rouge Croix* again, with a Letter ſubſcrib'd by himſelf, his Son the Lord Admiral, and divers other principal Noblemen and Knights, where, in reſpectful terms, they provoked him to deſcend from his Fortifications, and fight in a large Plain call'd *Milfield* (which lay between them) upon *Friday* following; alledging, for this purpoſe, the promiſe they received from his Grace heretofore. But no ſatisfactory Anſwer being given to this, and the Heralds being returned on either ſide, the Earl removes with his Army to ſuch a place, that, if the *Scotiſh*-men would not leave the advantage of their Site, he might cut off their Victuals, and conſequently draw them down. *James* the fourth hereupon, firing his Huts, diſlodges covertly, by the benefit of the ſmoak, and keeping ſtill on the high ground, at laſt he commands a ſtay. Preſently after, the Earl alſo, traverſing ſome Bogs, and Mariſhes, 'till he arrived to the bottom of this Bank, found the aſcent not very ſteep, and thereupon incourageth his men to fight. This done, he marcheth up; The Vantguard was led by his two Sons, the Lord *Thomas* and Sir *Edmund*; the Battel by himſelf, and the Rere by Sir *Edward Stanley*. The Lord *Dacres*, with his Horſe, being appointed as a Reſerve on all occaſions. The King obſerving this well, and judging that it was not without much diſadvantage that the *Engliſh* came to fight, exhorts his men to behave themſelves like brave Soldiers, and thereupon joyns Battel. Sir *Edmund Howard* at firſt was in ſome *Hall.* Sept. 7.

1513. diſtreſs, by the ſingular valour of the Earls of *Lenox* and *Arguile*, but the Lord *Dacres* coming to his ſuccour, as alſo one *Heron*, the fight was renewed; the Lord *Thomas Howard* purſued his point better; yet ſo, as he found a brave oppoſition from the Earls of *Crawford* and *Montroſs*. The Kings Battel and the Earls likewiſe maintained together a long and ſharp fight. This while Sir *Edward Stanley*, by force of Archers, conſtrained the *Scotiſh* to deſcend the Hill, inſomuch that, for avoiding his ſtorm of Arrows, they opened their Ranks, and therein ſeemed to give one of the firſt overtures of Victory. The King perceiving the diſorder, redoubled his courage, inſomuch that our Writers confeſs he had almoſt overthrown the Earls Standards. But the Lord *Thomas Howard*, and Sir *Edward Stanley*, who had diſcomfited their oppoſites, coming to ſuccours, and the Lord *Dacres* alſo flying in with his Horſe, the *Scotiſh* were ſo hardly put to it, that, for their laſt defence they caſt themſelves into a Ring; in that order of fight doing all that valiant Men poſſibly could, to defend themſelves. No man yet did in his Perſon more than the King; inſomuch, that preſſing on ſtill, he was at laſt kill'd on the place, as our Writers have it. The *Scotiſh* Writers yet ſay it was one *Elphinſtone*, who wearing the ſame Arms the King did, was taken for him, affirming further that the King fled over the River *Tweed*, and was there (I know not how) ſlaughtered. The fight continuing three hours, made the event doubtful, and the execution great. In concluſion, moſt of the nobler ſort, one Arch-Biſhop, and two Biſhops, beſides four Abbots on the *Scotiſh* ſide were ſlain there, and about ten Thouſand others. On our ſide (ſays *Polydore*) there died about five Thouſand, others ſay fewer; ſo that, as it was a Bloody Victory, it might be thought ſomwhat uncertain, till the next morning, when the Body ſuppoſed for the King's, and ſo acknowledged by divers of both Nations (as our Hiſtorians ſay) was found among the dead Carkaſſes, having received (as our Writers have it) a mortal wound with an Arrow, and another with a Bill. The *Scotiſh* lay the occaſion of their overthrow chiefly on ſome of of their Troops that look'd on, and never ſo much as gave ſtroke. But that we may leave theſe things to their Relations, I find after this Battel, the *Scotiſh* that remain'd, returned home much grieved for the unfortunate ſucceſs of that day, being *Sept.* 9. The Earl took all the Ordnance, and particularly ſeven extraordinary fair Culverins, call'd the ſeven Siſters. And ſo after giving God thanks, diſmiſt the greateſt part of the Army, and retir'd himſelf home, until news of the Kings coming to *Richmond* brought him thither, taking order in the mean time, that the dead Body, being embalmed, ſhould be carryed firſt to *New-Caſtle*, and after to *Shene* in *Surrey*; though, as that King was Excommunicate, it may be doubted, whether it were buried in any Conſecrate place; ſince I find by *Breve* dated *November* 29. 1513. and extant in our Records,

Buch.

Hall.

Sept. 9.

Records, that our King obtained a Breve from the Pope, for transferring the body to Saint *Pauls* in *London*. Upon condition yet, that the Biſhop of *London* ſhould firſt abſolve the ſaid *James*, and our King *Nomine ipſius aliquam convenientem pœnitentiam adimpleret*. 1513. Nov. 29. Records.

Our King now (the Parliament ſtill ſitting) eſtabliſhed an Order, how the Subjects he had in his new Acquiſitions in *France* might recover their debts from thoſe in *England*, as well as the *Engliſh* from them. Moreover it was enacted, that every Perſon that would ſue for the Kings Pardon, upon certain Articles, ſhould have it. Jan. 3. 15$\frac{11}{14}$. Regni 5.

In this Parliament alſo *Margaret*, Daughter of *George* Duke of *Clarence*, late Wife of Sir *Richard de la Pole*, Knight, Petitioned, That whereas, by Act of Parliament, 19 *Henrici* 7. *Edward* Earl of *Warwick* was declared Traytor, and ſo his Lands forfeited; it would pleaſe the King that ſhe might inherit (as being Siſter and next of Blood) his State and Dignity, and ſo be ſtiled Counteſs of *Sarum*; which was granted. M. S.

I find little elſe memorable this year among our Hiſtorians, ſave only a Commotion in *London*; which hapned on this manner. The Villages of *Iſlington*, *Hockſton*, and *Shoreditch* having ſo incloſed their grounds, that they debarr'd the Citizens from their accuſtomed freedom and exerciſes; the Apprentices of *London* threw down the Hedges and Ditches, after this manner. A Turner running in a Fools-coat through the Streets, and crying Shovels and Spades, was preſently followed in ſuch numbers, as all their incloſures were quickly levell'd. For which therefore the Lord Mayor was well check'd, and command given him to prevent further miſchief.

The *French* King, now finding two principal frontier Towns taken, the flower of his Chivalry made Priſoners, while the reſt ran away, his beſt Confederate *James* the Fourth kill'd, and the chief adminiſtration of *Scotiſh* Affairs devolved to the hands of *Margaret* Siſter to King *Henry* the Eighth, (at leaſt untill ſhe married again,) A League, in oppoſition to him, ſworn by three the moſt puiſſant Princes of Chriſtendom; The Pope animating all this againſt him, under the odious name of a Schiſmatick; and laſtly, himſelf far ſtricken in years, begins to think how beſt he might come off. And, to this, he had but a Winters ſpace; for the War was to begin the next Spring. He Negotiates therefore with the Pope firſt. To this end he offers ſatisfaction for his obſtinacy; Next, he ſtipulates to give way to the accompliſhing the Popes deſigns in *Bononia*, and elſewhere; to renounce the Council of *Piſa*, and accept that of *Lateran*, promiſing withal to remand the Cardinal *Bernardino*, (whom as the Pope deſired to have, ſo he graciouſly pardoned.) Laſtly, whereas great inconveniences might follow, not only to his Holineſs, but all Chriſtendom, if by theſe

1514. theſe inteſtine Wars a paſſage were made open for *Selym* the Turk to invade it, (who had lately taken eighteen ſtrong places near *Presburg* in *Hungary*,) He promiſeth his aſſiſtance againſt them. All which being taken by the Pope into ſerious conſideration, makes him Relent; and, in ſequence thereof, not only recommends Peace and Unity to all Chriſtian Princes, and particularly to our Decemb. King, but ſhortly after enters into a League againſt the *Turk*; for this purpoſe uſing thoſe potent Miniſters of his the Church-men, who were in favour with their ſeveral Princes. *Loüis* the Twelfth alſo draws *Maximilian* off, partly by repreſenting the danger above-mentioned in *Hungary*, which (next *Ladiſlaus*) moſt concern'd him, and partly by according the demands he made about divers pretences in *Burgogne*; and laſtly urges ſome diſcontents remaining in *Maximilian*'s mind, ever ſince *Henry* the Eighth and himſelf met laſt, (though in effect they were little more than *Pontilio's*, ordinarily hapning on the Enterview of great Princes.) And for *Ferdinand* he was eaſily taken off, ſo that he might enjoy *Navarre*, and for the reſt keep his Authority in *Italy*. To which * April 1513. therefore *Loüis* the Twelfth condeſcended, Proroguing the *laſt years Truce with him for twelve Months longer. Laſtly, becauſe *Henry* the Eighth was (without all theſe) able alone to find him work, he offers his Friendſhip and Alliance, in matching with his Siſter the Princeſs *Mary*, thought then one of the faireſt Ladies of her time. To ſtrengthen this Propoſition, he advertiſes our King, that *Charles* Prince of *Caſtile* (afterwards *Charles* the Fifth) was treating of a marriage with *Anne* Daughter of *Ladiſlaus* King of *Hungary*; And when it were in earneſt, that he intended to match with his Siſter the Princeſs *Mary*, that yet (being but fourteen years old in *February* next) he was not ripe enough for her; (concealing in the mean time that himſelf was as much too old.) He privately alſo acquainted the King how *Ferdinand* did but deceive him; as one, that would at all times be drawn to his Party, when he might enjoy *Navarre*. Together with which, it is probable he did reveal the aforeſaid ſecret Truce made by the *Spaniſh* Secretary *Quintana* betwixt himſelf and *Ferdinand* for one year more. An Article whereof was, that, during the ſaid Truce, *Loüis* the Twelfth ſhould not moleſt *Milan*. He told him beſides, that *Maximilian*'s deſigns were on the *Venetians*, and not on *France*. And that the Levies in *Flanders* for the Wars propoſed againſt *France* the next year, were and ſhould be retarded by the Princeſs *Marguerite*, purpoſely, becauſe her Father had other deſigns. All which was repreſented to the King by private and confident Meſſengers, who under colour of treating for the delivery of *Loüis duc de Longueville*, and the reſt who were Priſoners of War, negotiated this great Affair. Our King hereupon diſdaining to be twice deceived by his Father-in-law *Ferdinand*, and deteſting withal the ingratitude and levity of *Maximilian*, agreed a League with *Loüis* the Twelfth

twelfth upon the ſeventh of *Auguſt* 1514. for the term of their joynt lives and one year after. The effect was, That all former offences ſhould be remitted and aboliſhed, Traffick reſtored, and all Impoſitions on ſtrangers ſince fifty two years laſt paſt, extinguiſhed. That no Letters of Merk ſhould be granted, but againſt the principal Delinquents, and that only in caſe Juſtice were denied. That no Robbers by Land, or Pirates by Sea ſhould be maintained on either ſide. That Rebels and Fugitives ſhould not be entertain'd, but rendred (within twenty days after Requiſition) to their Sovereigns. That they ſhould be Friends to the Friends, and Enemies to the Enemies of each other. That (for mutual defence of their preſent Eſtates) *Loüis* the Twelfth ſhould furniſh at the requiſition of *Henry* the Eighth, one thouſand two hundred Lances by Land, and five thouſand men at Sea, with convenient Shipping. And *Henry* the Eighth ten thouſand Archers by Land, and five thouſand men at Sea, with Shipping, at the requiſition of *Loüis* the Twelfth. But if either of the two Kings ſhall require aid of the other for recovery of his Pretenſions; then *Loüis* ſhall lend King *Henry* ſix hundred Lances only, and King *Henry* him but five thouſand Archers for Land-ſervice; the Sea-forces retaining the numbers above-mentioned. All this to be at the coſt of the Demandant. Yet, if either of the ſaid Princes ſhall be invaded, only for the cauſe of this Confederacy, then the other ſhall aid him at his own charge. If War be made by common conſent, neither Prince may make Peace ſeverally. That the *Engliſh* Merchants ſhould have their ancient Priviledges at *Bourdeaux* reſtored. That this Treaty ſhould be publiſhed and ratified by the Pope, (by whom it was chiefly procur'd) with a Clauſe of Excommunication on the Infractors. Among the Allies of each Prince, the *Scots* alſo were comprehended herein, upon condition, that after *Septemb.* 15. they ſhould make no incurſion on the *Engliſh* by publick Authority; and if any were otherwiſe made, that ſatisfaction ſhould be ſpeedily given. Beſides this, the *French* Writers confeſs there was a Treaty apart, by which *Loüis* promiſed to pay *Henry* the Eighth a Million of Crowns, the ſaid *Henry* rendring him an Obligation, by which *Charles* Duke of *Orleans* Father of the ſaid *Loüis*, and other Princes of *France* were bound to pay the ſaid ſum. For, whereas *Charles* the Eighth, Predeceſſor to *Loüis* the Twelfth, by a Treaty at *Eſtaples*, 1492. bound himſelf and his Heirs to pay King *Henry* the Seventh and his Heirs the ſum of 745000 Crowns; and, after the death of the ſaid *Charles*, *Loüis* the Twelfth bound himſelf and his Heirs to pay ſo much as remain'd thereof, and this Bond was twice made by the ſaid *Loüis* the Twelfth, firſt to *Henry* the Seventh, 1498. and after to *Henry* the Eighth, 1510. And whereas (beſides this Bond) the aforeſaid *Charles* had bound himſelf to the Lady *Marguarite* Dutcheſs of *Somerſet*, Anno 1444. to pay her a certain ſum of Money, which was

1514. Aug. 7. *Du Tillet.*

Tillet.

Orig. Rec. Novemb. 3. 1492.

July 14. 1498.

July 22. 1510.

March 7. 1444.

1514. was not yet discharged. Therefore, as also for confirming the amity betwixt *Loüis* and *Henry*, the said *Loüis* did now bind himself and Heirs in a Bond of a Million of Crowns to be paid to King *Henry* the Eighth, in his Town of *Calais*, at several times, (*viz.*) *November* 1. next following, five hundred thousand Francks; and *May* 1. next, so much more, and so till the whole were paid. Sept. 14. (Which Obligation I find in an Original thereof, dated *Septemb.* 14. 1514.) All which minuted by *Loüis de Longueville* (called by some *Loüis d' Orleans Duc de Longueville*) during his restraint, was at last thus fully concluded. The Princess *Mary* also was to be consigned to him, with convenient speed; Notwithstanding (saith *Polyd. Virg.* *Polydore*) the King had secretly destin'd her once to another, who though he gave place, when it was so much for her dignity, yet married her not long after. The conditions for the Marriage, betwixt the said *Loüis* the Twelfth, and *Mary* the Kings Sister, were these, as we find them in our Records.

August. That, 1. within ten days following, Matrimony shall be Contracted by both Persons by Proxies *per verba de præsenti*. 2. After the Contract above said, within two Months, the King of *England* shall send and convey her, with Jewels and Houshold-stuff fitting her Estate, to *Abbeville* in *France*; where, within four days following, the said *Loüis* the Twelfth shall solemnly marry her. 3. King *Henry* shall give with the Princess *Mary* four hundred thousand Crowns; of which sum (in regard of the traduction of the Lady, her Apparels, Jewels, *&c.*) *Loüis* will be content to accept the one half, *i. e.* two hundred thousand Crowns, and to pay himself the rest out of the moneys which by the late Treaty he is obliged to pay King *Henry*. 4. *Loüis* shall assign to the Princess *Mary* a Joynture as great as any Queen of *France* (and namely as Queen *Anne* the last Queen) hath had. And this during her life she shall enjoy, wheresoever she reside. 5. If *Loüis* die first, then, the Princess *Mary* during her life, shall enjoy her Dowry and Joynture, and all Jewels which the Queens of *France* have used to enjoy after the death of their Husbands. 6. If *Loüis* survive the said Princess, then he shall have and enjoy her Portion, Joynture, Jewels, and Goods, according to the Custom of *France*.

While these things were in agitation, the King (who called to mind many that had served him with much Fidelity, Courage, and Success in his late occasions and enterprizes) thought he could not do any thing more justly and prudently, than to bestow some condign Recompence upon them; It being such a Mystery of State as not only gives the greatest lustre of Regal Authority, but of that consequence, as being used well, there will be little need of punishment. The reward to these brave Cavaliers he had selected out for this purpose, the King thought good to invest in honour chiefly. Feb. 2. Therefore upon the second of *February*, *Thomas* Earl of *Surrey* was

was by him Created Duke of *Norfolk*; (a Title *before conferr'd on *John* his Father by *Richard* the third, and then again extinguished.) His eldest Son the Lord *Thomas Howard* also being substituted Earl of *Surrey*. Together with which he had an augmentation of Arms for his Atchievment in *Flodden-field*. Sir *Charles Somerset* also, being in *Elizabeth* his wives right, (who was Daughter and Heir to *William Herbert*, Earl of *Huntington*) Lord *Herbert* of *Chepstow*, *Gower*, and *Ragland*, was Created Earl of *Worcester*. Sir *Charles Brandon*, Viscount *Lisle*, was now also Created Duke of *Suffolk*; And Sir *Edward Stanley*, not long after, made Lord *Mounteagle*. Lastly, *Thomas Woolsey* Bishop of *Tournay*, was constituted Bishop of *Lincoln*. 1514. * 1483.

The King, being at some rest now from transmarine Affairs, begins to look towards *Scotland*; upon which he had many advantages. For as the two Princes, left by King *James*, were very young; his Sister Queen *Margaret* (their Mother) in Estate of administring all the Affairs there; the chief and most active part of their Nobility kill'd; there wanted not many occasions to prevail himself of: whereupon also, either by gentle means or otherwise by force, he resolv'd to procure an interest in the Government of that Kingdom. To this it conduced not a little, that those Nobles which remained, betwixt Envy and Ambition, were distracted among themselves. The Queen foreseeing well, that, in this ill condition of Affairs, many inconveniences might follow, in a Country, whereof (by special Clause of a Testament made by the King before the last Expedition,) She was declared Regent, as long as she continued unmarried, sends to the King her Brother, to crave his advice and assistance; beseeching him withal, that he would desist from Hostility. The King most generously answered, that, if the *Scots* would have Peace, he would keep Peace; if they would have War, he would likewise have War. Thus were all things composed for the present, and *James* the Fifth (being not two years old) in Parliament declared King, in *February* $15\frac{1}{14}$. Yet as, not long *after, she took to Husband *Archibald Dowglasse* Earl of *Anguis* (one both for Birth and other perfections the eminentest she could chuse in that Country) some Innovations and troubles ensued. For while *Dowglasse* laboured by his private Power to supply that Authority, which by marrying him, she seemed to have lost; the Kingdom was broken into factions. The favourers of *Dowglasse* alledged, there was no other way to keep Peace, but by submitting all to Queen *Margaret*; for, since the King of *England* did therefore only desist from pursuing his Victory, because the administration of Affairs was in his Sisters hands, it were best to leave them there; to erect any other form of Government, were to draw the *English* in again; And when all their Forces united were not able to resist him absent, what might they expect from him present? Especially, when * Aug. 6.

1514. not only their chief ſtrength was loſt in the late Battel, but *Henry* ſhould find a party which his Siſter, (both in her own name, and in the King her Sons) would make for him. The other Faction (whereof *Alexander Humes* was chief) urged the Ancient Cuſtom of *Scotland*, which in theſe caſes, he ſaid, did always chuſe ſome Protector or Vice-Roy. Neither did it hinder, that they had hitherto deferr'd ſo much to the Virtues of the Queen, that, as long as poſſibly there was pretext for it, by the Kings Teſtament, they had admitted her for Regent: for now, ſince by Marriage of *Dowglaſſe*, ſhe had voluntarily relinquiſhed that Power, that the Country therefore ſhould reſume their wonted Right and Priviledges. For, if in the moſt quiet and ſerene times, Women had been excluded from Government, how much more now? Yet was not this the only reaſon that moved *Humes*. For, while he doubted leaſt the ancient followers of his Houſe ſhould by the Power of *Dowglaſſe* be now drawn from him, he left nothing unattempted that might diminiſh and weaken either him or the Queens Authority. Therefore he recommended every where *John Stuart* Duke of *Albany*, Couſin-German by the Father to *James* the Fourth; who, though then in *France*, was yet of great eſteem at home. This again was ſeconded by the Arts of the *French*, who could by no means ſuffer the good Affection of that Nation to be divided, much leſs drawn from them. Howbeit *Loüis* thought not fit openly to diſcover himſelf, as fearing to offend our King, with whom he was now contracting a ſtreight League and Affinity. Therefore he would not ſuffer the Duke to come into *Scotland*, though not long before * elected Governour, by the Queens conſent as was pretended, which yet may be doubted; (She proteſting * to our King, afterwards, it was extorted from her.) Howſoever after the death of *Loüis*, He was ſent over, (as ſhall be ſhew'd hereafter) well furniſhed both with Men and Money, to take Poſſeſſion of the chief Government of all things, during the Minority of the Prince.

* March 13. *Leſle.*

* March. 1516.

1515.

While buſineſſes were now in preparation for Peace and Alliance betwixt our King and *Loüis* the Twelfth, it was thought fit, for diſcharge of the Kings engagement and honour, to ſend to *Flanders*, to diſcover how in thoſe parts their affection ſtood towards the Match propoſed betwixt Prince *Charles* and the Princeſs *Mary*; and withal to require men for the War intended the next Spring. But, *Charles* having already broken two Articles of the ſaid Treaty of Marriage; one whereof was, that when he came to fourteen years of Age, he ſhould ſend a Proxy into *England* to contract the Princeſs *per verba de præſenti*; the other, that at a day appointed he ſhould come himſelf to *Calais* to eſpouſe her; And our Ambaſſadors, finding for the reſt nothing but delay, and irreſolution; the King would no longer omit to give or-

1508.

der

der that his Sister should neither be slighted, nor his Affairs otherwise suffer detriment. Therefore, after a short protestation, whereby the fault was laid on them; (without yet that any intention was disclosed for disposing the Princess *Mary* in any other place, or of making a League with *Loüis* the Twelfth) the King proceeds more roundly in his business. Before yet this could be effected, *Pregent* with his Gallies coming to *Sussex* by night, and Landing there, after a short stay was driven back, and in the retreat, shot in the face with an Arrow. Sir *John Wallop* hereupon being sent into *Normandy*, burn'd divers Ships, and one and twenty Villages, Landing many times in despight of the *French*, which seemed the more strange, in that his Soldiers exceeded not eight hundred men. The *French* also appearing in some numbers near the *English* Pale, Sir *Thomas Lovell* was sent with certain Troops to *Calais*, for the better strengthening of the place; and the rather becaus *Richard de la Pole* was now gathering Forces for some great design. But before he could do any thing, the Treaty and Peace was made; Among the Articles whereof, though the remanding of *Richard de la Pole* was propos'd, yet *Loüis* would never consent to it, but sending him out of *France* gave him a yearly Pension. *Bell.*

1514.

May.

June.

Loüis de Longueville having now power from his King to Contract Marriage *par parole de present* with our Kings Sister, She also sent * her procuration to the same effect, the Ceremony whereof was solemnly held at the Celestins in *Paris*, *September* 14. News whereof was no sooner brought, but our King, together with the Queen, conducting her to the Sea-side bid her farewel, and recommended her to the Duke of *Norfolks* care. Shortly after which, Landing at *Boulogne*, and being met by some principal persons deputed by the King, She was attended on, and guided towards *Abbeville*; In the way to which, the old King on Horse-back met and saluted her, and afterwards retired himself privately, while She was received into *Abbeville* with much Pomp, where, on Saint *Denis* day, *Octob.* 9. She was in Person married to *Loüis* the Twelfth; who, after bestowing many Jewels on her, and rich Presents to those who came along, dismissed all, save a few Officers and Attendants, amongst whom I find Mrs *Anne Bolen* Daughter to Sir *Thomas Bolen*, as one. Howbeit, occasion was given of bringing over some of our prime Nobility and Cavaliers to *Paris*, not long after.

* Aug. 22. Sept. 14.

Octob. 3.

Octob. 9.

Francois de Valois, Duke of *Angoulesme* and next Heir Male to the Crown (having in *May* before married *Clond* eldest Daughter to *Loüis* the Twelfth by *Anne* who was Inheretrix of *Bretaigne*) desired now, in the Kings declining Age, to give some proof of his valour. Therefore, before the *English* departed from *Abbeville*, he caused a Justs to be proclaimed; which, for being so extraordinary (the persons and manner considered) I thought worth the

May 18. 1514.

1514. *Hall.* relating. The effect thereof was, that, in *November* enſuing, he with nine Aids, would anſwer all Comers, that were Gentlemen of Name and Arms, on Horſe-back and on Foot. The Laws on Horſe-back were, that with ſharp Spears they ſhould run five Courſes at Tilt, and five more at Randon, being well Armed and covered with pieces of Advantage for their beſt defence. After this to fight twelve ſtrokes with ſharp Swords. This being done, he and his Aids offered to fight at Barriers with the ſame Perſons, with a Hand-ſpear and Sword. The conditions were, that if any man were unhors'd, or fell'd fighting on Foot, his Armour and Horſe ſhould be rendred to the Officer of Arms. That for this purpoſe an Arch Triumphant ſhould be ſet forth, at the *Tournelles*, near *Rüe* Saint *Antoine* in *Paris*, on which four Shields ſhould be placed. That he who would touch any of them, muſt firſt enter his Name and Arms. That he who touched the firſt, which was Silver, ſhould run at Tilt, according to the Articles. Who touched the Golden Shield ſhould run at Randon, as above-mentioned. He that touched the black Shield ſhould fight on foot with Hand-Spears and Swords for the one hand; ſix foyns with the Hand-Spear, and then eight ſtrokes to the moſt advantage (if the Spear ſo long held) and after that twelve ſtrokes with the Sword. He that touched the tawny Shield, ſhould caſt a Spear on Foot with a Target on his Arm, and after fight with a two-handed Sword. This Proclamation being made, the Duke of *Suffolk*, and Marqueſs *Dorſet*, and his four Brethren, the Lord *Pinton*, Sir *Edward Nevill*, Sir *Giles Capell*, *Thomas Cheney*, and others, obtained leave of the King to be at the Challenge; which they ſo haſtned, that before the end of *October* they came to S. *Denis*, where they found the Queen; the Solemnities for her Coronation, as alſo for her Reception at *Paris*, being not yet in readineſs. *Francois de Valois*, knowing how good men at Arms the Duke of *Suffolk*, and Marqueſs *Dorſet* were, requeſted them to be two of his Aids, to which they aſſented. But while theſe things were in

Novemb. 5. preparing, *Mary* the *French* Queen was upon the fifth of *November* Crowned in S. *Denis*, the Earl of *Worceſter* and Dr. *Weſt* (who were appointed for this purpoſe by our King) attending her in the ſolemnity thereof, and *Francois de Valois* (afterwards King) holding the Crown (which was very weighty) over her Head.

Novemb. 6. The day following She entred *Paris* with great Pomp, and the

Novemb. 7. morrow after the Juſts began, of which the King and Queen were ſpectators; the King being yet ſo weak that He lay on a Couch. Theſe Juſts continued three days, in which three hundred and five men at Arms were anſwered by the Defendants; Among which, ſome were ſo hurt, that they dyed not long after: At *Randon* and *Tournay*, the Duke of *Suffolk* hurt a Gentleman very dangerouſly, and the Marqueſs *Dorſet* did no leſs to another. Then the Duke overthrew a Man both Horſe and Arms, and ſo did the Marqueſs.

Francis

Francis at last being hurt, desires the Duke and Marques to fight at *Barriers*; who therefore took the first place against all Comers. In the mean while, *Francis* intending an Affront (as was thought) to the Duke, causeth a German (the strongest Person in all the Court) to be Arm'd secretly, and present himself at *Barriers*; they both did well; yet the Duke at last with the butt-end of his Spear struck the German till he stagger'd, and so the Rail was let fall. The Marques *Dorset* also foil'd another Frenchman. Then they took some breath and return'd to fight again; when the Duke so pomell'd the German about the head, that blood gushed from his Nose, which being done, the German was conveyed away secretly. Divers other brave feats were done likewise, which the Reader may find elsewhere. At last our *English*, with singular honour, returned to their King and Master, whom they found much comforted for the birth of another Prince, though not living long after. 1514. *Hall.*

But the contentment of *Lewis* the Twelfth was almost as short; who being Aged, and Infirm, after some eighty days possession, rather than enjoying of his Queen, dyed *January* 1. 1515. leaving behind him no issue Male; though otherwise of that esteem among his Subjects, for his care not to oppress them with impositions longer than his necessities required, that he was call'd *Pere du Peuple*. After him succeeded *Francois de Valois*, above-mentioned, a Prince of great hope. His Age was twenty one or twenty two; wherein as well as in the most part of his manners, there was much conformity betwixt our King and him. Particularly, they might be thought two the goodliest Personages, not of their Quality only, but of their time. This Prince was Sacred (to use the *French* term) at *Reymes* 25 of *January*, 1515. taking on him, together with the name of King of *France*, that of Duke of *Milan*. To which he seemed to have a double Title, both as he was of the House of *Orleans*, to which the claim of the said Dutchy belong'd, as also being comprehended in the Investiture made by the Emperor, according to the Treaty at *Cambray*. And because he succeeded as well to the Right, as to the means of recovering the said Dutchy, he thought on nothing more than how to vindicate the glory his Predecessors had lost in that attempt. His first care was how to assure himself of our King: This he procures, partly by addressing himself to *Woolsey*, who then prevail'd most with the King, and partly by giving great Conditions. And thus the *last Treaty of Peace with *Lewis* the Twelfth, (being to endure but till the first of *January** next,) was (as I find both by ours and the *French* Records) renewed in the same terms, the 5 of *April* following, and Prorogued for term of their joynt lives, and one year after. Only better order was given for depredations than before; It being agreed now, that no Merchant of either Nation should depart out of their Ports, without giving Caution to their several

Novemb. 1514.
Jan. 1.
Jan. 25.
1508.
*Aug. 7. 1514.
*1516. April 5.

1515. several Admirals, that no wrong or moleſtation ſhould be done by Sea.

May 8. *J. du Till.* Upon the 8 of *May*, the *French* King agreed alſo to pay at certain days a Million of Crowns to our King; (for ſo the *French* have it,) which whether it were a new ſtipulation, or that formerly agreed on by *Loüis* the Twelfth, appears not to me; and *Polydore*'s words are obſcure, which import only *pretium pro pace datum.*

May 15. The 15 of *May* following, the *Scotiſh* entred into this Treaty, (for they were comprehended under a condition of keeping the Peace.) Neither did our King eaſily believe that underhand they would have made any other. Notwithſtanding which,

Jan. 2. 15$\frac{15}{16}$. *Tillet.* the *French* and they did, upon the ſecond of *January* following, privately enter into a League offenſive and defenſive againſt *England.*

Together with the propoſing of this Treaty (in which the Duke of *Suffolk*, Sir *Richard Wingfield* Deputy of *Calais*, and Doctor *Weſt*, were employ'd,) our King ſent a Letter to the Queen his Siſter;

Feb. 3. wherein he deſired to know, how ſhe ſtood affected to her return to *England*, deſiring her withal not to Match without his Conſent. She, on the other ſide, who had privately engaged her affection to *Charles* Duke of *Suffolk*, made no great difficultly to diſcover her ſelf to both Kings; intreating *Francis* to meditate this Marriage, and our King to approve it. Unto the former *Francis* eaſily agreed, (though once intending to propoſe a Match betwixt her and the Duke of *Savoy*;) but our King, for the Conſervation of his dignity, held a little off; however he had long ſince deſigned her to *Suffolk*. The Queen alſo, believing that this formality was the greateſt impediment, did not proceed without ſome ſcruple, though proteſting (as appears by an Original) that if the King would have her Married in any place, ſave where her Mind was, ſhe would ſhut her ſelf up in ſome Religious-houſe. Thus, without any great Pomp, being ſecretly Married, the

March. Queen writ Letters of excuſe to the King her Brother, taking the fault (if any were) on her ſelf; and together, for the more clearing the Duke of *Suffolk*, profeſſed that ſhe prefixed the ſpace of four days to him, in which ſhe ſaid, unleſs he could obtain her good-will, he ſhould be out of all hope of enjoying her. Whereby, as alſo through the good office of *Francis*, who (fearing leſt our King by her means ſhould contract ſome greater Alliance) did further this Marriage, our King did by degrees reſtore them to his favour; *Woolſey* alſo not a little contributing thereunto, while he told our King, how much better ſhe was beſtow'd on him, than on ſome Perſon of Quality in *France.*

Thus having prepared all things for their departure, they took their leave of the *French* Court; the Queen carrying with her, of the Jewels, Plate, and Tapiſſeries of *Loüis* the Twelfth, to the value of two hundred thouſand Crowns, as the *French* have it.

it. Among which a great Diamond call'd *le Miroir de Naples* (as I find by our Records) was one; though not without much reluctation of *Francis*, who would fain have redeem'd it at a great price. Order alſo was taken for the payment of her Joynture, being ſixty thouſand Crowns yearly. Whereupon the Queen and Duke with all her train (ſave Mrs. *Anne Bolen*, who ſtayed in the *French* Court) * began their Journey; to the ſatisfaction of *Francis*, as hoping by their means to confirm his ſo much deſired Peace, and Treaty with our King. Thus arriving at *Calais* 25 of *April*, and from thence coming to *Dover*, and after to *Greenwich*; they were publickly married 13 of *May*. Thus our King's two Siſters, after their being joyn'd with great Princes, did not diſdain to accept inferior Perſons for their Huſbands. 1515. April 19. April 25. May 13.

But that I may return to my propoſed Method in this Hiſtory; I ſhall ſet down the Laws enacted in the Parliament (*ſexto* of this King) beginning *February quinto*; where I find one of their chief cares was, to put into better order the former Laws concerning Apparel; which yet was not ſo well digeſted, but that the year following, even the Law it ſelf chang'd faſhion. Howſoever, that of Archery, made before, was not only confirmed, but made perpetual; ſo that, notwithſtanding the uſe of Caleevers or Hand-guns (for Muskets were not yet known) it was thought fit to continue the Bow. Wherein I cannot but commend the conſtancy, if not wiſdom of thoſe times; it being certain, that, when he that carries the Caleever goes unarm'd, the Arrow will have the ſame effect within its diſtance that the Bullet, and can, again, for one Shot return two. Beſides, as they uſed their Halberts, with their Bow, they could fall to execution on the Enemy with great advantage. I cannot deny yet but againſt the Pike they were of leſs force than the Caleevers. Therefore I believe the meaning of theſe times was, to command it as an exerciſe to the common people, and for the reſt reſerve it for thoſe occaſions, where they might be of uſe. Howſoever, Hand-guns and Croſs-bows were forbidden under certain Penalties, to all Men that had leſs than four hundred Marks *per annum*. The wages for Artificers alſo was ſetled, and the price of Water-men. A Penalty alſo was impos'd on thoſe who changed Tillage into Paſture. And very good order taken, concerning deceit in Cloth, as being the only cauſe they had not ſo good vent abroad. The Commiſſion of Sewers extending to the making up of the Sea-walls, &c. in *England*, the Marches of *Calais*, *Guiſnes*, and *Hames*, (begun *ſexto Henrici ſexti*, and continued *quarto Henrici ſeptimi*, for twenty five years,) being now upon exſpiration, was continued alſo for ten years more. It was commanded alſo, that the River of *Canterbury* ſhould be deepned. It was provided alſo, that Wool ſhould not be carryed beyond Sea; which was to the benefit of Clothiers. Feb. 5. 15½. Regni 6.

1515. Clothiers. No ſecond Letters Patents alſo might be taken, without mentioning the firſt. Which was very equal, both for the King and Subject. And becauſe divers now, being weary with ſitting ſo long in Parliament did depart home without Licence, (they only remaining who factiouſly combined themſelves, with intention to gain the Major part of voices, in any thing they deſired to obtain) It was ordered they ſhould loſe their wages, if they went without the leave of the Speaker, and Common houſe, to be entred in the Book of the Clerk of the Parliament.

During the ſtay of the *French-Dowager* and her Husband, a Treaty alſo paſt concerning the reſtitution of *Tournay*, upon a ſum of Money offer'd. Howbeit, as our King demanded in exchange thereof, the County of *Guiſnes*, or *Ardres*; *Francis*, who deſired not any enlarging of the *Engliſh* Pale, fell off, ſo that our King provided for defence. For which purpoſe, as well as diminiſhing his charge in keeping an exceſſive Gariſon, he rais'd a Cittadel there; *Francis* not thinking fit either to interrupt the deſign, or otherwiſe to offend our King; as hoping, by the means of *Woolſey*, (to whom, together with the unuſefulneſs of *Tournay*, he repreſented a Cardinal's Hat) to obtain his deſire. And it was the true bait to take him, he being extreamly ambitious of that dignity; both as he thought it would ſecure his greatneſs, and as it enabled him to ſerve his King and Maſter's turn. Therefore he had many ways attempted it, and particularly by the intervention of Cardinal *Hadrian de Caſtello* an *Italian* (Biſhop of *Bath*, and the Pope's Collector in *England*,) not omitting together to uſe the help of *Sylveſter* (an *Italian* likewiſe) Biſhop of *Worceſter*; and the rather for that they were both at *Rome*, where Cardinal *Bambridge* alſo on our Kings part reſided: But this Cardinal dying *July* 14. 1514. not without ſuſpicion of Poyſon, our King having lately * given *Woolſey* the Biſhoprick of *Lincoln*, he ſurrendred it now, and * took the Arch-Biſhoprick of *York*; and, not ſatisfied herewith, aſpir'd alſo to be ſucceſſor in the Cardinalſhip; wherein becauſe, it ſeems, he conceiv'd that *Adrian* Biſhop of *Bath* had not ſerved him faithfully, he oppos'd him in the Collectorſhip, and put *Polydore Virgil* (his Sub-Collector) in the Tower (from whence he came not * ſuddenly, nor without the Pope's mediation.) He uſed therefore, beſides his ordinary means and friends in *Rome*, the help of *Francis*; who, for the more obliging of him, ſent firſt News, that, in *September* this year, his ſuit was granted, and the Title of *Sanctæ Cæciliæ trans Tiberium* * conferred on him; for the maintaining of the Charges whereof, he had at this time in Farm at very eaſie Rates the Biſhopricks of *Bath*, *Worceſter*, and *Hereford*, in regard the Biſhops of theſe places liv'd beyond Sea; he got alſo ſucceſſively the Biſhopricks of (*a*) *Bath*, (*b*) *Durham*, and (*c*) *Wincheſter*, which he ſo exchang'd, as he held

* March 4. 1514.
* Nov. 6. 1514.
1515.
Sept. 7.
November.
(*a*) 1518.
(*b*) 1522.
(*c*) 1518.

held ever one of them with his Arch-Bishoprick; he held also in *Commendam* the (*d*) Abbey of Saint *Alban's*, and many other Ecclesiastical preferments, and had the disposing of most of the Benefices that fell void. Also shortly after his being constituted Arch-Bishop of *York*, *William Warham* Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury*, resigning to the King voluntarily the place of Lord Chancellor, and retiring himself from Court, by reason of his Age, (or perchance some discontent) to a private life, that Place was conferred on him. Thus were dignities and wealth heaped so fast on *Woolsey*, that, being in his nature insolent, he grew at length intolerable. Neither could those excellent parts, wherewith he was endowed, exempt him; Insomuch, that not only much Arrogance, but extreme Vanity was observed in him, whereas yet nothing commends Church-men so much as a pious Modesty: All degrees of Persons, but especially theirs, being like Coins or Medals; to which, howsoever vertue give the stamp and impression, Humility must give the weight. Yet this Cardinal, contrary to all example, is noted by *Polydore* to have used silk and Gold in his outward Vestments and even Saddles; He caused also the Cardinals Hat to be born by some principal Person before him, on a great height, (*Loco cujusdam Idoli sacri,*) and, when he came to the King's Chappel, would admit no place to rest it on, but the very Altar; He had besides, his Serjeant at Arms and Mace, and two Gentlemen carrying two Pillars of Silver, besides his Cross-bearer; concerning which it is observed, that he did bear the Cross of *York* somewhat to the prejudice of that of *Canterbury*, which perchance might be some cause of discontentment to the Arch-Bishop *Warham*. In conclusion, all his Actions were such as argued a haughtier spirit than could become his Place (as *Polydore* will have it.)

1515.

(*d*) 1521.

Polyd.

The Pope, being intentive now to a War against the Turk *requires aid from the *English* Clergy, desiring our King to give his assistance therein; which they yet (in their *Synod) deprecated, alledging (by Letter to the Pope, dated *Nov.* 25. 1515.) that they were exhausted through their Contribution to the War of *France*, at the instigation of *Julius* the second; remonstrating further, that, by a Decree of the Council of *Constance*, the Pope could impose no Tributes on the Church, but in case of necessity, and by a General Council.

*Aug.
*Nov. 12.

Nov. 25.

The twelfth of this Month the Parliament sate again; wherein, among other Acts, further Order was given, for preventing Tillage to be turned into Pasture. A repeal of Licences also to Strangers for carrying in of *Gascoigne* and *Guyenne* Wines, or *Tholouse* Woad was enacted. Which was much to the encrease of our Shipping. A time was also prefixt, within which all Actions, Suits, Bills, Indictments or Informations popular shall be sued, either for the King or Party; and this setled a great deal of quietness. The

Nov. 12.
Regn. 7.

1515. Act concerning Labourers Wages, made the year preceding, was also repealed, for as much as concern'd certain Labourers in *London*.

Towards the end of this Parliament, Sir *Edward Poynings* desiring to be discharged from his Government in *Tournay*, and the adjoyning places of *Mortaigne* and Saint *Amand*, Sir *William Blunt* Lord *Mountjoy*, was substituted; who appointing Sir *Sampson Norton* to be his Marshal, so offended the People, that they rose in Arms: Neither would they be quieted, till the said Sir *Sampson* was banished for ever. But, if *Poynings* returned to his Counsellor's place, divers others went away from it. For, besides the Arch-Bishop *Warham*, Bishop *Fox*, offended with the Cardinal, retired himself; desiring this only of the King, that he would not suffer the Servant to be greater than his Master. To which the King answered presently, that it should be his Care, that those who were his Subjects should obey and not Command. Then *Thomas* Duke of *Norfolk* craved leave to go to his Country House. For, as the Kings Coffers were much exhausted by his late Wars and Triumphs, so not finding it easie to supply those vast expences, which (in Pageants and Devices) increased daily, he wisely withdrew himself: *Charles* Duke of *Suffolk* also, not long after, following them. For, having borrowed Money of the King for his Journey into *France*, and being unable (through the Cardinal's opposition) to obtain remission thereof, or otherwise to pay it presently, he retir'd into the Country; so that the Cardinal had his free scope and liberty to sway all things, under Colour of doing the King service. For, whatsoever he went about, that was his Pretence; though (for the most part) in labouring to Reform, he did nothing but Innovate. Hence many Clamors arose among the People; who being capable of almost nothing but their own Antient Customs, seldom indure a change, though for their bettering and advantage. Hence was it, that they thought none so true among them, as those, who traduced the present Government; nor so wise, as those who suspected most, though beyond all probability. There was yet occasion enough to fear *Woolsey*; being observed to have that Ascendant over the King's disposition, as he knew not how to be serious, or almost merry, without him. In either of which ways he still introduced something for his own ends; for no man studied them more. One example whereof I will here insert. The Cardinal, having for his first Bishoprick, that of *Tournay*, was not yet without an antient Competitor, one
1513. *Loüis Guillart* a *French-man*, to whom it formerly appertained: This man, grudging to be thus dispossest, obtains from the Pope a Bull, whereby he was restor'd to that place, (as far as words could carry it,) with a Clause of *Usque ad Invocationem Brachii Secularis*, both in the City and without. So that the *French* and *Flemmings* seem'd equally interessed thereby to procure his Conservation.

ſervation. Our King underſtanding hereof, and knowing well the dangerous conſequence, * writes to the Biſhops of *Bath* and *Worceſter*, his Agents then at *Rome*, to proteſt againſt this ſtrange and inordinate Bull, (as he terms it in his Letters;) commanding them withal (not without ſome threats) to labour that it might be recall'd, as tending not only to the raiſing of Sedition in that City, and Quarrels betwixt him and the confining Princes, but to the wrongful diſplacing of the Cardinal, who, being ſubrogated to the other, as well in conformity to the right of his King, as upon the contumacy or negligence of the other (who had not as then done his Homage and Fealty for his Temporalties) could not now be remov'd without much ſcandal. Before this, the Cardinal had deſired *Francis* to beſtow on *Guillart* ſome other Biſhoprick: but *Francis* delaying to give ſatisfaction herein, ſo incenſed the Cardinal, that he became his ſecret Enemy afterward, (as *Polydore* hath it.) Hereupon he intimates to *Maximilian*, that, notwithſtanding the * late League betwixt *England* and *France*, there was probability, the King would not ſuffer *France* to grow greater by the acquiſition of *Milan* * (*Maximilian* therefore ſent, in the name of *Sforza* Duke of *Milan*, one *Anchiſtes Vis-Conte*, a *Milaneſe*, to implore our King's aſſiſtance againſt *Francis*, in men or money. Of which alſo there was ſome hope ſecretly given by *Woolſey*.) However, our King (in ſo great a cauſe) would reſolve nothing, without communicating the buſineſs firſt to the ancienteſt and wiſeſt of his Counſellors. Therefore recalling *Warham*, *Fox*, the Duke of *Norfolk*, *Lovell*, and divers others, he demanded their opinion in full Council; where *Woolſey* ſpeaking firſt, alledged, that *Francis* had already broken the Treaty, by favouring *Richard de la Pole* a Fugitive and Traytor; in aſſiſting thoſe *Scots* which oppos'd his Siſter Queen *Margaret*; And in contriving a ſecret League with that Nation, to the prejudice of that into which they lately entred with *England*. Beſides, that *Francis* with-held ſome Goods and Jewels of Queen *Mary*. That when all this were otherwiſe, yet it ſtood not with reaſon of State to ſuffer *France* to grow any greater. Laſtly, he ſaid all this might be done warily, and without effuſion of *Engliſh* Blood, only when we would but privately aſſiſt *Maximilian*. This was no ſooner uttered, but *Thomas* Biſhop of *Dureſme* riſeth up, and not only confirms the Cardinals Speech, but extols it with ſome palpable flatteries. (Neither muſt it ſeem ſtrange, that the Church-men concurr'd in this Vote; it being likely that (beſides Cardinal *Woolſey*'s particular animoſity againſt *Francis* the Firſt) *Leo* the Tenth had a hand herein, as knowing how much ſafer it was for *Italy*, that a ſingle Duke ſhould govern *Milan*, than ſuch a Potent Prince as *Francis* the Firſt.) All the other at the Table yet were of another opinion. Among whom therefore a reply was made to this effect.

1515.

* 1517. March.

Polyd. Virg.

April 5. 515.

* 1516.

Novemb.

Polyd. Virg.

1515. That to break a Treaty or League (ſolemnly ſworn) did ſeem a ſtrange Counſel in any, but eſpecially in a Divine. That, for their parts, they conceiv'd the violating of publick faith was to call God and man in judgment againſt them. They would not deny yet, but juſt cauſe of diſſolving Leagues might be given. But then that the wronged party ought both to proteſt the fault and denounce War. That, if any other Courſe ſhould be allowed among Princes, and Eſtates, there were no ground for upholding Truth and Juſtice; without which yet the Law of Nations, and even Mankind it ſelf could not ſubſiſt. That therefore it were good to examine the grounds of the proceedings mentioned. In which though it could not be denied but *Richard de la Pole* was admitted ſtill in *France*; yet, whether as Traitor to his Country, or a Perſon that came thither only for ſafety of his life, might be queſtion'd. That if the Spies, they had on *Richard*, ſaid true, his deſign was only to go into *Italy* with *Francis* the Firſt, and then there could be no danger on his part. And for the other point, which was aſſiſting the *Scotiſh* Faction againſt Queen *Margaret*, or contriving a ſecret League which might be a prejudice to the former, much might be ſaid; yet if buſineſſes were well examined, both the Treaties of *Francis* might conſiſt; This latter with *Scotland* being proviſional only, in caſe we ſhould come to a Rupture with *France*. They would not deny yet, but herein an advantage was taken by the *French*, ſomewhat againſt the Laws of Honour. But that we might make a benefit thereof. For, while *Francis* was in *Italy*, and far remote from *Scotland*, it was eaſie for his Majeſty, under colour of reſiſting the new Faction ſet up by the *French* in *Scotland*, to be more than reveng'd. For, whether in his Siſters name or his own, it was not hard to reduce a divided Country to his devotion. And that this might be thought a greater addition to him, than *Milan* to the *French*, when yet they could obtain it; that to take any other courſe, was to ſeek cauſes of quarrel, without colour, either of reaſon or Juſtice; to draw the *French* on himſelf; to interrupt his way to *Scotland*, which now lay open; and laſtly, to make him loſe credit both at home and abroad. The King, who knew the oppoſition among his Counſellors, ſeemed to temper the diverſity of opinions in a middle way; yet ſo, as, in effect, he inclined to the Cardinal. Therefore he ſaid, he would hinder the deſigns of *Francis*, without coming yet to a manifeſt Rupture; whereof alſo occaſion was given. For as *Francis* being * Confederate with *Charles*, (now ſixteen years old, and taking on him the Government of the *Low-Countries*) as alſo with the *Venetians*, had renewed a War in *Italy*, and after a bloody Battel at *Marignan*, had compelled *Maximilian Sforza* to reſign his right to *Milan*, and accept a Penſion in *France*; So our King, who ſuſpected this great addition to *Francis* might be damagable to him, reſolved ſecretly to aſſiſt the Empe-

* April

Sept. 13.

ror,

ror, with whom alſo the Pope and *Ferdinand* joyn'd, for the defence of *Italy*, and oppoſition of the Invaders. Returning for this purpoſe by *Richard Pace* (late ſervant to Cardinal *Bambridge*, and, for the preſent, Secretary of State) not only a huge ſum of Money; but giving him Commiſſion to treat both with the Emperor and *Franciſco Sforza*, Brother to the late Duke of *Milan*, concerning the loan thereof, and a ſtrict League upon certain conditions. Among which it was agreed, That if *Milan* were recovered, ſuch a yearly Tribute or Penſion ſhould be paid our King as this ſupply of Money did deſerve; *Woolſey* not forgetting alſo, (after his uſual manner) to capitulate for an Annual payment of ten thouſand Ducats to himſelf. Hereupon, *Pace*, levying for the Emperors ſervice certain Regiments of *Suiſſe*, (who willingly entred this War, both as they were obliged to the conſervation of *Sforzas* intereſt, and as they deſired to revenge their loſs at *Marignan*,) the Emperor in Perſon marcheth towards *Milan*. Neither did it hinder him, that the Pope was fallen away to *Francis*, and had appointed an Interview at *Bononia*, for the accommodating of their mutual affairs; the Pope promiſing *Parma* and *Piacenza* to *Francis*; and he, on the other ſide, ſtipulating to recover *Urbin* for the Pope, (as indeed followed the next year.) Where alſo an Agreement called the *Concordat* was made, which the French Writers obſerve as derogatory to the Pragmatick Sanction, and the Liberties of the Gallican Church. Being thus upon his way, *Charles* Duke of *Bourbon*, who was appointed by *Francis* to defend his Acquiſitions in *Italy*, ſends to his King for relief, preparing in the mean time to defend himſelf the beſt he could. But *Maximilian* being now in a fair way of obtaining his deſires, retires ſuddenly into *Germany*; neither could he alledg other cauſe of it, than a ſimple diffidence of the *Suiſſe*, (as *Polydore* hath it;) though *Guicciardine* tells another reaſon; which was, that *Maximilian* receiving no ſupply of Money from *England*, and being not provided himſelf to pay them, was forced to deſiſt. This encouraged the *French* and *Venetian* to proceed in their deſigns of beſieging *Breſcia*, which they got; but being repuls'd at *Verona*, *Maximilian* takes heart again, and ſends *Matteo* Cardinal of *Sedun* (or *Sitten*) into *England* to negotiate for a ſupply of Money, and withal to excuſe his late Retreat, both for his diſtruſt of the *Suiſſe*, as alſo becauſe they openly refuſed to fight againſt ſome of their Countrymen, who were under *Bourbon*. Beſides, as he had long entertained our King with a hope that he would reſign the Empire to him, ſo on this occaſion (as I find by an Original from Sir *Robert Wingfield*, dated 17 *May*, 1516.) he renews the propoſitions; offering, beſides to give him the Dutchy of *Milan*; for the more aſſurance whereof, deſiring our King to paſs the Seas to *Calais*, and ſo to take his way through the *Low-Countries*, till he came to the City of *Triers*; where he, together with the Electors would

1515. Novemb. Records. Decemb. 11. 1516. May. Octob. May 17.

1516. would meet, for performance of the aforeſaid Reſignation of the Empire; which alſo being done, he propoſed that an Army from thence ſhould invade *France*, while our King with one thouſand Horſe, and one thouſand Archers ſhould paſs through *Germany* to *Coyre*, and ſo over the Lake of *Como* to the State and City of *Milan*; where having repos'd a while, *Maximilian* promiſed to go along with him to *Rome*, to ſee him receive the Imperial Crown; which being done, he ſaid, our King might chuſe whether he would make an honourable Peace with *France*, or War, for recovering his right; which, he ſaid, the Pope and all Chriſtian Princes could not but like well of. And thus far *Wingfield*; To whoſe relation though our King gave as much credit, as a profeſſion often made by *Maximilian* could merit; Yet as he conſidered withal, that there was much improbability in the offer, and the Action it ſelf in a manner without Precedent; and, howſoever, that he ſhould engage his Kingdom for the Affairs of the Empire, (it being then ſo ſcant of Moneys, as *Maximilian* was nick-named *Pochi-Dinari.*) So by his anſwer in *June* following, he wiſhed *Wingfield* to tell *Maximilian*, that though he thankfully accepted thoſe offers, yet that he deſired they might be kept ſecret until the *French* were driven out of *Italy*. For which purpoſe, (as well as the reaſons before ſet down) I find he promiſed *Maximilian* ſome more Money, excuſing together the former defect of payment, with laying the fault on ſome *Genoïta* Merchants. Beſides, at the Cardinal of *Sedun*'s intreaty in the Emperors name, he entred into a ſtrict League with *Maximilian*; which yet, becauſe it laſted not, I ſhall not particularly mention. For *Maximilian*, conſidering how little truſt he could repoſe in our Cardinal for the obtaining of Money, and (for the reſt) being wearied with the Wars, firſt makes a True with his Adverſaries, and particularly the *Venetians*; after which, for a ſum of Money, being two hundred thouſand Ducats, he reſtores *Verona* unto them, and then makes a Peace. To which purpoſe the death of *Ferdinand* did ſerve; who departing this life in the beginning of *Anno* 1516. did free himſelf rather than the World, from not a few troubles, whereof he was the firſt procurer and Author.

June.

Novemb. 2.

Decemb.

Jan. 23. $15\frac{1}{16}$.

This Prince (leaving to his Succeſſors the ſtile of *Catholico*) was thought the moſt Active and Politick of his time. Inſomuch that he hardly took reſt, or ſuffered it in others. No man knew better how to ſerve his turn on every body, or to make their ends conduce to his. But while he eſcaped not the opinion and the name of falſe, (which yet his Country Writers palliate no otherwiſe than with calling it *Saber-raynar*) he neither complied with his dignity, nor indeed the rules of wiſdom; true reaſon of State conſiſting of ſuch ſolid Maxims, that it hath as little need of deceit as a ſure game at Cheſs of a falſe draught; there is no uſe of it, therefore, among the wiſer ſort; as being only a ſupply of ignorance

Curita.

rance among the ruder and worſe kind of States-men. Beſides, it appears ſo much worſe in publick affairs than private, as it is never almoſt hid or unrevenged. Reputation again is ſtill loſt thereby; which yet how much it concerns Princes, none can better tell, than ſuch as imagin them without it. This is ſtrange of him, that being of vaſt poſſeſſions, enriched much from the *Indies*, proſperous in almoſt all his attempts, of a frugal diſpoſition, and long life, (for he attained ſixty three;) there was hardly yet found in his Coffers enough to diſcharge his Interring, though not very ſumptuous; That I may ſay nothing of his Debts. His Will and Teſtament declared his Daughter *Juana* of *Caſtile* to be his Heir. Only, becauſe of her defect of Wiſdom, and her Sons young Age, He appointed the Cardinal *Ximenes* Archbiſhop of *Toledo* to Govern, till the ſaid *Charles* came to *Caſtilla*. He left alſo to *Fernando*, Brother to *Charles*, great Poſſeſſions and Legacies, as loving him inwardly beſt; both that being born at *Alcala* 1503. he was a Native of *Spain*, (which his Brother was not,) and that he gave much hope of towardlineſs, and beſides bore his Name. Inſomuch that, could he have contriv'd it handſomely, it is thought he would have made him his Heir in *Spain*: ſundry particularities whereof, concurring much with the *Spaniſh* Hiſtory, being advertis'd to our King by Sir *John Stile* his Ambaſſador there; Our King and Queen (as they had before done for *Loüis* the Twelfth) cauſed a ſolemn obſequie for him to be kept in the Cathedral Church of Saint *Pauls* in *London*. But they mourned not long; the birth of our Princeſs *Mary* following ſhortly after, upon the eighteenth of *February* $15\frac{1}{16}$.

Ferdinand thus dead, *Charles*, who thought himſelf as capable of governing *Caſtilla* as he was of the *Low-Countries* (which *Maximilian* the laſt year put into his hands) ſends immediately to *Spain*, to claim the Right and Title; which alſo was acknowledged; yet ſo, as it was thought fit to publiſh it together with his Mothers; ſo that it ran thus, *Donna Juana*, and *Don Carlos*, Queen and King of *Caſtilla*, *Leon*, and *Arragon*, &c. *Navarre* (which was now incorporated to them) being not forgotten; He determined alſo in perſon to go thither. For which purpoſe, as well as the better ſecuring the *Low-Countries* in his abſence, he paſt ſeveral Treaties with *Francis* and our King; The former was concluded at *Noyon* with the Commiſſioners of *Francis*, Aug. 15. where it was agreed, That within ſix Months following, *Henry d' Albret* (*Jehan d' Albret*, and *Catharine* his Wife being newly dead) ſhould be reſtored to the Kingdom of *Navarre*, or at leaſt ſufficient content given him otherwiſe; And if not, that it ſhould be lawful for *Francis* to aſſiſt him. That *Charles* ſhould marry *Loüiſe* Daughter of *Francis*, (then not a year old) who in conſideration thereof ſhould renounce his claim to *Naples*, and accept a Penſion of one hundred thouſand Crowns yearly. That the *Venetians*

1516.

1503.

Sandov.

Feb. 18.

Bellay.

1516. *Sandoval.* *tians* giving the Emperor two hundred thousand Ducats, he should deliver them *Verona*. Besides which, their Orders of Chevalry were sent to each other, and an interview appointed, which yet took no more effect than the Treaty it self. The latter League was formed at *London*, *Octob.* 29. betwixt *Joane* and *Charles* of *Castile*, the Emperor *Maximilian*, and our King, to this effect.

Octob. 29.

That the Confederates should defend one another, and bring Aid by Land at their own Costs, (being requir'd) within a month after complaint, against the enemy.

If the Enemy have Port-Towns, *&c.* then the War shall be also made by Sea, by them both, and the Fleet supplied if it be diminish'd, &c.

That no Peace shall be made with any Prince, or Truce, but by mutual consent.

Place also was left for other Princes whatsoever, to come into this League within eight Months. by the consent of all the Confederates.

That *Leo* the Tenth shall be comprehended in this League, if he will excommunicate the Persons and States that shall molest the Confederates, and that he enter within six Months.

That the *Suisse* shall be admitted, if they will; so that they bind themselves to serve under the Confederates, and not under any other Prince; And, on those Conditions to have Pensions.

I must now return to the business of *Scotland*, (intermitted a while, that I might not break the context of my History,) and therein call to mind, how *John Stuart* Duke of *Albany*, having been recall'd home, was presently upon his arrival (which was *May* 20. 1515.) declared Vice-Roy, till the King came to full Age. Neither did it hinder, that he was born in the time of his Fathers banishment; and for the rest, such a stranger, that he could not speak the Country Language. For as a singular opinion of his worth went before, and, the recommendation of the *French* accompanied him, so was he saluted with that universal applause wherewith new-comers that have given hope of themselves, are usually welcom'd. The businesses of the Country were yet so strange to him, that he was enforced to use the directions of others. In this number, one *John Hepburne* did much appear. His first Advice was, That he should not punish the Delinquents, both as they were many, and well Allied; and as it would gain him strong Enemies. That he had more use of the Peoples Affections, than to alter them at his first Entrance. That therefore his chief Endeavour should be to make good his Authority; neither should he oppress any, but those who were in estate to oppose him; amongst which Three were most considerable. *Archibald Douglasse* was one, who, besides that he had married the Queen, was a Person much in favour with the People. Secondly, *Alexander Humes*, a busie, potent, and able Lord.

May 20. 1515.

Buchan.

Lord. Thirdly, *Andrew Forman*, whoſe Riches were ſuch, as alone would ſuffice for a great Deſign. 1516.

The Vice-Roy, taking this Advice into Conſideration, thought not fit yet to begin with *Douglaſſe*, leſt the Queen, for protecting him, ſhould draw the *Engliſh* into *Scotland*, which he moſt doubted. Beſides, he was ſo gracious with the greateſt part of the Kingdom, that he was to be undermined rather than aſſaulted. And for *Forman*, he thought it was nothing but his Wealth that made him envied. Only *Humes* he thought it not amiſs to queſtion; as having between vehement Suſpitions and ſome Proofs, not a little matter againſt him. *Humes* having ſome notice hereof, changes his party, and now ſtrives to combine with *Douglaſſe* and the Queen. Therefore he laments to them the fortune of the King, who was fallen into the hands of one, who beſides that he was a Stranger to his Country, might be ſuſpected for attempting on his Perſon, as being next Heir to the Crown, after the King and his Brother. That this was the more probable, becauſe his Father *Alexander* (as the *Scotiſh* Writers have it) had taken the like courſe with his eldeſt Brother *James* the Third, whom he would have diſpoſſeſs'd of the Kingdom. That there was no way to avoid theſe Dangers, but to fly with her Son into *England*, (to which alſo our King had perſuaded her privately) and recommend the reſt to his Care. *Buchan.*

This Advice (whether ſpoken by *Humes* to diſcover the Queens Deſigns, and thereupon to make his Advantage with the Vice-Roy, or that he did indeed think this to be the beſt way for the Kings Safety) was brought beforehand to the Vice-Roy, who believing it eaſily, thought fit to ſeize on *Sterling*-Caſtle, in which the young King and his Mother were, and put a Guard on them; yet admits ſome, who were of great Credit, to give by turns their Directions for the young Kings Education, and uſeth briefly ſome ſuch Providences as might argue all was done with a good Intention; among which the taking an Oath of Fidelity to the young King, was moſt remarkable. This while *Humes*, with his Brother *William*, refuſing to obey a Citation to the Parliament, and being thereupon proſcribed, fled to *England*; *Douglaſſe* alſo, taking the Queen with him, followed ſhortly after, ſtaying yet at *Harbottle*-Caſtle in *Northumberland*, by our Kings Command, till further Order was given. It appeared not yet, whether this were an Eſcape in them, or that the Vice-Roy were under-hand conſenting to their Departure, only to be freer for his Deſigns. Howſoever, he ſent inſtantly to our King to clear himſelf from all ſiniſter Practices againſt the Queen. He alſo labours with the Friends of *Douglaſſe* and *Humes* to draw them home, promiſing for this purpoſe all the good Conditions that could be required. *Humes* takes the Invitation, and returns; *Douglaſſe* alſo (conſidering the Queen was with Child, and near her time, and therefore unable to remove any way far) Aug. 10. 1515. July 12. *Buch.*

1516. makes use of this Occasion to settle his Affairs at home. The Queen in the mean while, being *brought to Bed of a Daughter, (whom she called *Margaret*) by easie Journeys comes to the *English* Court in the next Spring, 1516.

* Octob. 7. 1515.

Yet were not Businesses in *Scotland* so quieted; for *Alexander Humes* having submitted himself (as aforesaid) to the Vice-Roy, who gave him to the Custody of his Brother-in-Law, *James Hamilton* Earl of *Arran*, upon pain of Death yet if he suffered him to depart; shortly after, by representing to *Hamilton* some nearness of Blood on his part, which might enable him to be Vice-Roy, perswaded the Earl to escape away together with him; while the Vice-Roy being not grieved (perchance) thus to be quit of those he suspected most, seems now to be at rest. Only he would not omit to take this Advantage against *Hamilton*; therefore he battered and took his Castle; *Humes* in the mean time ravaging the Country about *Dunbar*. The Vice-Roy hearing this, returns to his wonted Invitations of both him and *Hamilton* to come back. *Hamilton* accepts it first, and *Humes* after; but *Humes* being summon'd again to come to the Parliament, thinks fit (for redeeming his former fault, when he last absented himself) to appear. He perswades his Brother *William* also to go with him, though many of their Friends oppos'd it; for as his Brother was equal with him in Power and Authority, so the keeping him back would have conduc'd perchance to the securing of both. But he, confident of good usage, neglects the Advice, and comes with his Brother to Court; where being seiz'd on, they were committed to divers Prisons, for Crimes objected against them; and particularly against *Alexander*, who was thought to have used some Treachery in *Flodden*-Battel, if not to have kill'd the King. All which though he conceived either suggested maliciously against him, or at least by a long Intermission to have been antiquated and forgiven, yet prevailed not; his Head and his Brothers being struck off in *October*, 1516. Shortly after which (as *Lesleus* hath it) the King's younger Brother *Alexander* dying, the Duke of *Albany* obtained in Parliament to be declared next Heir. Which being done, he enters (in *January* following) into a League with *Francis*, and so *returned to that Country; only that he might manifest his Pretences were without any Ambition which might derogate from his Loyalty.

Sept. 24.

Buch.

Octob. *Lesle.*

Novemb.

Jan. $15\frac{16}{17}$.

* June. 1517.

May 3. The Queen of *Scots* coming to *London*, May 3. 1516. was much welcom'd by the King, the Queen, and her Sister Queen *Mary*; who all enjoy'd therein a happiness rare for Princes in that kind, which was to see one another after they had been once dispos'd of abroad: The King, for the more Honour of her coming, commanded a Justs, in which Sir *William Kingston* was, both himself and Horse, overthrown by him.

May 19.

This

This year also those who manag'd any money for the King in the Wars, or otherwise, were by the Cardinal's command call'd in question. Among whom some by Bribery, and some by Cunning escaped; others being condemned in great sums; so that the Cardinal might be said to have in him so much of a good Servant, as he willingly suffered none other to deceive his Master. To accompany this Severity also, he caused Perjury to be rigorously punished; wherein I can never enough commend him: All other Treacheries extending, for the most part, but to the depriving of Life, Possessions, or Good Name; but this such a one, as without much labour may take away all together. Some Courts also were erected in the favour of poor People, against the Oppression of the Great; which at the beginning were much frequented; but at last, the People receiving many delays and dissatisfactions in their Suits, every one left them, and went to the Common Law: as fearing, under this pretence, an Innovation. I must not deny unto the Cardinal, yet, the attribute of Just, in all Affairs of publick Judicature; whereof (if we may believe Authors) he was ever apparently studious. Therefore, where Disorders were committed, he severely punished, unless the Parties found means to make their private Peace. 1516. *Hall.*

I will conclude this year with a Passage out of our Records. *Leo*, continuing still the Council of *Lateran*, among other Reformations, proposed that of the *Calendar*, inviting (for this purpose) our King, to send some of our most Learned Divines and Astronomers thither; but as it appears not what Answer our King return'd to this Breve, dated *July* 10. 1516. so neither should I have inserted any thing hereof, but that it seems they were not sufficiently satisfied concerning the Principles from which the Calculation should be deduced. July 10.

About this time a Riot and Sedition in *England* happened in this manner: Some Citizens and Apprentices of *London* of the poorer sort, being offended that all their chief Customers were won from them by the Diligence and Industry of Strangers, and (for the rest) pretending to have received from them divers Contempts, Affronts, and Injuries, found some Occasions, and took others, to make an Insurrection against them; and the rather, for that the seditious Sermons of one Doctor *Bele*, by the Instigation of *John Lincoln* a Broker, had not a little incited them: who taking Texts (as near as he could find in the Scriptures) to this purpose, traduced the Sense thereof even to encouraging the People to a Commotion. The beginning of this yet was not so witty as the last, neither ended it so well. For two Apprentices playing only at Buckerels in the Street, late on *May*-Eve, contrary to the Lord Mayors Command, (who upon notice taken of the Citizens Intent, was charged by the Kings Council to require, under great Penalties, all Housholders to keep themselves and their Servants within *Hall.* April 30.

1517. within doors from Nine over-night till Seven of the Clock the next Morning) an Alderman came to arreſt one of them; but the ſaid Apprentice, thinking therein that an ancient Cuſtom for taking Liberty at that time more than any other, was infringed, cried *Clubs*. Hereupon, they came forth in ſo great numbers, that the Alderman fled. The Apprentices being encouraged herewith, and for the reſt finding themſelves in a greater Multitude, than to do nothing, brake open ſome Priſons, and took out divers Perſons committed thither for abuſing and hurting of Strangers. Neither could the Mayor or Sheriffs then preſent, hinder this; Nor Sir *Hall.* *Thomas More*, (late Judg of the Sheriffs Court in *London*, but now of the Kings Council) though much reſpected by them, as being a Native of that City. The Priſoners being now ſet looſe, adviſe the Multitude to run to the Houſe of one *Meutas* a *Picard*, much hated by them: Where they kill'd ſome, chaſed the reſt, and rifled his Goods. Hence they went again to other Strangers Houſes, which they ſpoiled in like manner. The Cardinal hearing this, and being not much more in the Peoples Favour than the Strangers, fortifies his Houſe with Men and Ordnance. But the Lieutenant of the Tower proceeding otherwiſe, diſcharged ſome of the great Pieces among them. Howbeit this made them not ſo much deſiſt, as that having reveng'd themſelves as far as the Offence taken ſeemed to require, they thought good about Three in May 1. the Morning to ſcatter and go home. But in their way, they were apprehended by the City-Officers firſt, and afterwards by ſome Followers of the Earls of *Shrewsbury* and *Surrey*, who hearing of this Diſorder, and taking the Inns-of-Court men with them, cleared the Streets of this unruly Company. The beginning of the Riot was hereupon examined, and Doctore *Bele* and *John Lincoln* ſent May 4. to the Tower. About three days after, the Duke of *Norfolk*, the Earl of *Surrey* his Son, and divers others, with about one thouſand and three hundred armed men came into the City, and joyning with the Lord Mayor, proceeded legally againſt the chief Offenders; to the terror of the Citizens, who were the more afraid, in that the Duke of *Norfolk*, upon the killing of a Prieſt of *Hall.* his in *Cheap*, was reported to have ſaid (as our Hiſtorians have it) in ſome paſſion, *I pray God I may once have the Citizens in my danger.* This (though perchance a Calumny forg'd againſt the Duke) wrought ſo, that they thought themſelves over-rigorouſly dealt with, in that Statute *ſecundo Henrici quinti*, Chap. 6. (which makes Breakers of Truce, and Safe-Conducts guilty of High-Treaſon) was extended againſt them. For they thought this offence reacht not ſo far, and therefore that a leſs capital puniſhment might have ſerved. Howſoever much Mercy was ſhewed; For, of two hundred ſeventy eight Perſons which were Priſoners, *Lincoln* only, who was thought the moſt ſeditious, and three or four more were May 7. hang'd, drawn, and quarter'd; the reſt, who were about ten, ſuffered

fered nothing extraordinary in their Death, but that, for the more example, they were hang'd on Gibbets erected in the Streets. All the others were thus pardon'd; the Recorder of *London*, and divers Aldermen coming in Black to Court, and desiring most humbly to be heard, the King, after some admonition and check, as if the better sort had conniv'd at this Riot, refers the rest to the Cardinal, then Lord Chancellor. In conclusion, the King sitting in *Westminster*, and being attended with his principal Nobility and Officers, and the Lord Mayor; all the Prisoners in white Shirts, and Halters about their necks (into which Habit divers also, not yet discovered, put themselves, to be capable of the King's Pardon) did, upon their knees, crave Mercy. Which the King graciously accorded, permitting also the Gibbets, which much scandaliz'd the Citizens, to be taken down.

1517.
May 11.
May 22.

Shortly after, the Sweating Sickness (call'd for the propriety by which it seized on the *English* Nation chiefly, (*Sudor Anglicus*) did much infect the Kingdom, being of that Malignity, as within the space of three hours it kill'd. This caused the King to leave *London*, and adjourning three Terms, 1517. to remove *Trinity*-Term, 1518. to *Oxford*, where yet it continued but one day, and was adjourned again to *Westminster*. Nevertheless divers Knights, Gentlemen, and Officers in the Kings Court died thereof; as the Lord *Clinton*, Lord *Grey* of *Wilton*, and others of Quality, the vulgar sort so commonly perishing, as in some Towns it took away half the People, in others the third part.

July. *Hall.*

Let us look now a while on Foreign Business. *Maximilian* continuing the fore-mentioned Treaties with our King, concerning divers publick Affairs, and particularly, that of Rendring the Empire, was desired by King *Henry*, to give him a Meeting in the *Low Countries*. But *Maximilian* returning Answer, That to excuse that labour, he would come over into *England*, King *Henry* sent the Earl of *Worcester*, and Doctor *Cuthbert Tonstal* to him, *lately then come into *Flanders*. But as *Maximilian* was a Prince of great Dissimulation, they observed in him, that while on the one side he entertain'd our King with the Offer of the Empire, *&c.* on the other he continued his Treaty (begun in *December* last) with the *French*. Besides, his Grand-Child *Charles* refused to confirm the late League with our King. So that our Agents thought fit to represent to his Grace how little was to be expected; because the Emperor varied so much in his Offers; Sometimes saying, he would resign the Empire to *Henry* the Eighth, and himself remain King of the *Romans*, which Honour his Posterity should inherit. Sometimes, that he would resign the Empire to *Charles* of *Castile*, and make *Henry* King of the *Romans*, and his Grand-Child *Ferdinand* King of *Austria*, and himself Marshal of the Empire, that so he may be equal to the Electors. But as Doctor *Tonstal* advertised the King, That the Emperor must be Elect out of the *German* Nation; That

* Jan.
Octob. 29. 1516.

1517. That King *Henry* in accepting the Empire, muſt confeſs *England* to be under the Empire; Laſtly, that he muſt be firſt King of the *Romans*, when yet the Emperor had declared he meant to hold that Title ſtill; So our King rejected theſe Propoſitions, as Vain and Artificial, only to draw Money from him: And our Agents return'd, having only obtain'd at laſt an Oath from *Charles* and Queen *Joan*, his Mother, for performance of the late Treaty at *London*, with ſome ſmall Alterations. *Maximilian* alſo, about the ſame time (*a*) departed out of *Flanders*, (having (*b*) firſt concluded a League at *Cambray* betwixt himſelf, *Francis*, and his Grand-Child *Charles*, by which they confirmed the League at (*c*) *Noyon*, and (*d*) *Bruxells*, reſolv'd on a War againſt the *Turk*, (as it was now projected in the Council of *Lateran*) and appointed an Interview for all three in *April* or *May* following. Place alſo was left for the Pope to enter as Protector thereof, and for King *Henry*.

Octob. 29.

(*a*) May.
(*b*) Mar. 11.

(*c*) Aug.
(*d*) Decemb. 1516.
March 26. 1517.

This being advertis'd to our King, made him think how to defend *Tournay*, and therefore he caus'd a Cittadel to be built there; not neglecting together to prevail himſelf of the Pope's Mediation for a General Peace. Which, as it was willingly embraced, ſo our King was intreated to ſend him two hundred thouſand Ducats (on Security) for that War, which yet it was thought the Pope would employ for ſome Affairs in *Italy*. Who alſo ſent a *Croiſade* and *Indulgences* into *Germany*, *England*, and many other Places: The Conditions of which were, That, whoſoever performed certain Religious Rites, and paid certain Sums of Money, ſhould have their Sins forgiven. Neither was there, in the uſe of theſe *Indulgences*, that Diſtinction of Perſons or Sins made, which from ſo grave a Paſtor might be expected; ſo that (promiſcuouſly) all men, who would come to the Price (as ſome Authors have it) were not only promiſed Everlaſting Bliſs, but made capable of delivering the Souls of others out of Purgatory.

When thoſe *Indulgences* firſt came forth, no Divine Worſhip in the Weſt parts of *Europe*, but what the Church of *Rome* preſcrib'd, was publickly known. For though ſome Oppoſers of the Papal Authority had appear'd long ſince, yet wanting thoſe Supporters who might eſtabliſh and uphold their Doctrine, it quickly fail'd. Some of their Impreſſions yet were deriv'd to Poſterity; though in ſo obſcure and perplex'd a manner, that they ſerved rather to ſhew Errors than rectifie them; forming (for the reſt) no eminent and viſible body, or at leaſt no other than ſuch as quickly diſappear'd. So that all thoſe, who for the preſent diſſented inwardly from any Opinion commonly taught, kept yet the Unity of the Church. Of which kind though (I doubt not) there were many, yet by diſtinguiſhing in private only the good Doctrines from the ill, they both conſerv'd their Conſciences, avoided Schiſm, and maintained towards God and among themſelves an Uniformity; being

being therein not unaptly compared to Sheep and other Creatures, who in Paſtures, where both wholſom and hurtful Herbs grow, chuſe yet only the better ſort. While thus, they might not only reach to Antiquity in all times, but Univerſality in all places; ſince not the Men (who may err) but the Doctrine giveth the true denomination unto the Church. It will be enough therefore, that there was always a Catholick and a viſible Doctrine in the more important parts thereof. And thus were all Controverſies (ſave thoſe which the Subtilties of the School-men brought forth) declined. Neither did men think themſelves bound to ſtudy the Intricacies and Sophiſms of Authors, in matters impertinent to Salvation; but were contented with a Single Faith in God, the Comfort of a good Life, and Hope of a better upon true Repentance; taking the reſt for the moſt part upon the Faith of the Church. By which means as Peace was generally conſerved, ſo it was not doubted by thoſe who ſearch'd into the Primitive times, but that together divers new Doctrines (if not Errors) were crept into the Church-Diſcipline. Among which ſome, yet, might have been more excuſable, had they not been ſo ſeverely commanded, that the common ſort underſtood them for little leſs than neceſſary Articles of Faith. While thus they were held in much Subjection, as being not able ſufficiently to diſtinguiſh the true and eſſential parts from thoſe that were added only for Convenience or Ornament. 1517.

But, as Learning now (by the Benefit of Printing) became publick, ſo almoſt all men, either through Reading or Converſation, were literate. Inſomuch, that they durſt look into the Principles of Religion, and take upon them to diſcuſs the parts thereof. Among theſe, none was more famous than one *Martin Luther*, an Hermit Frier about thirty two years old, living about this time at *Wittenberg* upon the *Elbe*, within the Dominions of *Frederick* Duke of *Saxony*. This man, having obſerved divers things, not mention'd in the Belief, called *Symbolum Apoſtolorum*, to be introduced lately, examines all; beginning firſt with the *Indulgences* that came out this year; though ſo modeſtly, as that he advertis'd only his Superior the Arch-Biſhop of *Mentz* of ſome Abuſe therein, and prayed Reformation; not omitting together, as he was of an acute, but vehement wit, to ſet forth ninety five Concluſions, and preach publickly againſt them; (which yet he ſubmitted to the Pope by Letter dated in *June*, 1518.) *Maximilian* alſo, foreſeeing whither theſe Diviſions might tend, (and the rather becauſe he found them favoured not only by *Frederick* Duke of *Saxony*, but divers other great Perſonages) wrote to the Pope, deſiring him to moderate things ſo, as all cauſe might be taken away, not only of Diſputations, but concerning impertinent Points of Religion. But the Pope, having about thoſe times, (betwixt publick Affairs and private Liberalities) ſo exhauſted the Eccleſiaſtical Revenue,

J. Sleidan l. 1. Comment.

Aug. 18. 1518.

Concil. Trid. lib. 1.

1517. venue, as it was neceſſary to ſupply the wants thereof by extraordinary means, he purſued his Deſign, uſing therein much the help of *Lorenzo Pucci Cardinal Sanctorum* the fourth; who, finding the Schiſm of the Council of *Piſa* ſo far extinguiſh'd, as the *Roman* Church needed not fear to reaſſume her former Authority, confirm'd the Pope therein. So that, though for not above four hundred years, they had taken on them this and divers Authorities, not known before, he perſuaded their Continuance, leſt any thing of that kind ſhould ſeem invalid or uſurped; Eſpecially where the Pretence was, if not the ſame, yet of a like condition. Whereupon looking further into Records, and finding that *Urban* the Second, had not only given *Indulgences* to thoſe who went Perſonally to the War of the Holy-Land; but that his Succeſſors had beſtowed them on ſuch, who being not able to go, would maintain a Soldier there; And laſtly, having diſcovered that they were granted even againſt thoſe that were diſobedient to the *Roman*-Church, and alſo to thoſe who gave Money for building or repairing Churches in *Rome*, &c. He neither queſtion'd their Right, nor *Leo* contradicted it; both as he had many needy Kinſmen and Favourites, and as it maintain'd his Authority. Whereupon a War againſt the *Turks* being projected, He ſent forth theſe *Indulgences*, granting beſides, the Liberty of eating Eggs and Whitemeats on Faſting-days, of chuſing their Confeſſor, and ſome ſuch Habilities. Had this yet been all, leſs Scandal had followed. But without regard to the end for which they were given, He by way of anticipation, beſtowed on ſeveral Perſons the Money to be levied; Aſſigning, among others, to *Magdalen* his Siſter, and Wife to *Franciſco Cibo* (natural Son to Pope *Innocent* the Eighth) all that Quarter from *Saxony* to the Sea-ſide. And the rather, that in Contemplation of this Marriage, himſelf had been made Cardinal at fourteen years old, 1489. and therein given a beginning to the Eccleſiaſtical Greatneſs of the Houſe of *Medici*. Beſides, he was indebted to *Cibo* for his Entertainment at *Genoüa*, at what time he was forced to fly the Perſecution of *Alexander* the Sixth. They again committing this buſineſs to *Arembaldo* a Biſhop, but a Covetous perſon, much Rapine was uſed: The *Indulgences* (as is ſaid) being generally granted to ſuch as gave moſt for them. And as this cauſed much Offence, ſo again the Friers Hermits, by (whom they were ordinarily diſpenſed) were not a little troubled, that the Dominicans had now charge thereof. All which, together with the ſinful and inordinate life of certain Commiſſioners deputed under *Arembaldo*, for thoſe Levies, together with the ſo notorious a Sale of twenty Cardinalſhips (as *Sandoval* himſelf diſſembles it not) *Anno* 1517. being notifi'd, occaſion'd theſe following revolutions, which take up a great part of this Hiſtory. For, as theſe *Indulgences* (upon further examination,) were found to be no elder than is above-mentioned, nor much confirmed but by a Bull of

Sand.

of *Clement* the ſixth, 1350. (who abridged *Jubilees* from every hundred year to the fiftieth,) nor Anciently practis'd at all, but for relaxation of Penances, or Eccleſiaſtical Diſcipline (without that they were ſaid to deliver from any thing towards God) many exceptions were taken againſt them; ſo that, though to the Merits of ſuch Saints as did works of ſupererogation (being a treaſure which might be conſumed) they had added the Merits of Chriſt, by way of ſupply; yet *Luther* and others after him, vexed all this again, with that ſucceſs which ſhall be told hereafter. Neither did there want ſuch as oppoſed them in *England*; amongſt whom one who was zealous of Gods Honour and the publick good, obſerving that not only ſins towards God, were pardoned for Money, but offences towards the Law compounded for at no great Rates (as ſhall be told more particularly in its place, where it will appear to what exceſs this abuſe grew) ſpake after this manner to ſome of the principal Clergy. That puniſhments might have been left to God, but that they ſerve to deter others. But who would be afraid now, when he knows at what rate he may put away his crimes? Of what uſe would our threatnings for ſins be, if they grow ſo contemptible as that a little ſum of Money would diſcharge them? Is not this to make Heaven venal? Doth not this reflect ſo much on Chriſtian faith, that it makes a new price for ſin? Believe me, my Lords, to make our faults cheap, is to multiply them, and to take away not only that reverence is due to virtue, but to diſſolve thoſe bonds which knit and hold together both Civil and Religious Worſhip. For when men ſee what they are to pay for their faults, what will they care for other redemption? I would I could ſay we were not already fallen under ſome diſeſteem, when by our enjoyning of eaſie Faſting, Prayer and ſome little Alms, men find they ſuffer no more than what they would gladly endure to ſin again; for who is the leaner or poorer for our Penances; Let us not then make the Myſteries of Salvation mercenary, or propoſe everlaſting happineſs on thoſe terms, that it may be obtain'd for money, which we find ſo ſeldom got without deceit or miſchief. Let mens ſins rather lye againſt them ſtill, than open ſuch eaſie ways to remit them; And take this advice in good part, ſince it ſo much concerns us all. What effect yet this Advice took will appear hereafter. 1517. 1530.

The diſſentions of *Italy* being for the preſent compos'd, *Francis* firſt thought himſelf at leiſure now, to reſent our Kings aſſiſting of *Maximilian*. But (ſaith *Polydore*) becauſe he conſidered as well, that he ſhould get nothing that way, and that withal he was inform'd this buſineſs coſt our King ſo much, that the loſs thereof might be taken for a reaſonable Revenge; (for I find in our Records that in one year it coſt our King five hundred thouſand or ſix hundred thouſand Ducats,) He diſſembled the matter. Therefore converting Malice into Guile, his only labour was how to cor-

1518. rupt the Cardinal; whom at length, between Bribes and Flatteries, he ſo dextrouſly won, that he durſt commit his deſigns to him. Theſe yet were ſuch, as the Cardinal would not abruptly diſcloſe to the King. Therefore he ſaid not much at a time of them, nor without making the King firſt ſome preſent; which yet (ſaith *Polydore*) was but part of that which *Francis* gave him; ſo that while the King conſidered the workmanſhip or rarity of the Gift, he would Convey his meaning, and give thoſe impreſſions he moſt deſired ſhould remain in the Kings mind. At theſe opportunities, he made no difficulty to ſay, that *Francis* ſought to him by Letters earneſtly (concealing in the mean while his large bribes) and that all this did reflect on his Majeſty, whom that King did addreſs himſelf to, by his mediation. That others perchance would ſuppreſs and hide theſe things, as being enough to breed ſuſpition, but that he would ever proceed clearly and openly with his Majeſty. According to which liberty he would take the boldneſs to adviſe, That, ſince the *French* King did ſue to His Majeſty in ſo ſubmiſs a way, as to begin at his ſervants, he could not but think that he was in earneſt: And for *Maximilian* (as being often diſoblig'd) little help, or indeed truſt could be expected. Our King alſo conſidering that ſo much hereof was true, that if he could not make friendſhip with *Francis*, it were not amiſs yet to avoid War, embraces the motion. Of which *Woolſey* make his advantage, and brings again another Meſſage from *Francis*, to ſuch effect, that our *Polyd. Virg.* King ſaid openly, that he ſaw well now *Woolſey* would govern them both. The *French* King, having obtained this intereſt in the Cardinal, beſides new Gifts, ſends him divers Letters, terming him therein *Dominus* and *Pater*, and his advices Oracles, till at laſt he thought he might open unto him his Deſign of having *Tournay* redelivered for a certain ſum of Money. *Woolſey* promiſeth his aſſiſtance, and hereupon brings the buſineſs to the King, and from thence, by his Command, to the Council: where he openly declares, what vaſt ſums it had coſt the King to win *Theroüene* and *Tournay*; in the former of which yet he had got nothing but the gratifying of an unthankful Perſon, which was *Maximilian*; in the other little elſe but a number of unuſeful and ſuſpected Subjects; who that they might be kept in order and obedience, would coſt more than they were worth. The Charge of the Gariſon alone being above twelve thouſand pound yearly; beſides that of Convoys, and Ammunition. That, after all this expence, yet, we could hold it no longer than it pleaſed either of the two Princes, between whoſe Dominions it ſtood; ſince being ſo remote from the *Engliſh* Pale, it was improbable that from thence we could ſuccour it; ſo that it were better to let it go fairly, as for a ſum of Money, or the like, than to ſtrive to hold it under ſo weak and dangerous a Title, as the ſufferance of his Enemies; One of which, being *Francis*, he thought by the reſtitution thereof might

might be obliged to be his friend, and the affront he might receive through the taking it by force, avoided. Neither could *Maximilian* take it ill in point of Juſtice, if we reſtor'd to *Francis* a Town formerly in his poſſeſſion. This being done, that it were moſt expedient for all Chriſtendom to joyn in League with one another, and againſt the *Turk*, who lately had made himſelf formidable. Theſe reaſons were valid enough, had they not come from ſo falſe a ground as the corruption of the Cardinal; (which *Polydore* continually inculcates:) therefore they were embrac'd by all, but eſpecially the Biſhop of *Durham*, now Lord Privy-Seal; only it was requir'd, how much that money was, and of what kind thoſe conditions were? whereupon it was declar'd, that if it pleas'd the King to hear the Ambaſſadors of *Francis*, he had already demanded leave for them to come over, which alſo he had reaſon to endeavour; for as I find by our Records, He and *Nicolas de Villeroy* the *French* Reſident, had in a manner concluded the buſineſs in private already. This being granted, *Guillaume Gouffier*, *Seignieur de Bonivet*, and Admiral of *France* and *Eſtinne de Pencher* Biſhop of *Paris* *came, with an unruly number for an Ambaſſage, (their Train being twelve hundred) unto *Greenwich*; The *French* yet, betwixt Pride and Diſſimulation, thought fit not to begin at the buſineſs they moſt deſired to effect. Therefore their firſt overture was a propoſition for a League in General betwixt all Chriſtian Princes againſt the *Turk*, projected by the Pope the year before. That the Authors hereof ſhould be both their Majeſties. That the Pope, Emperor, and King of *Spain* ſhould be admitted hereunto, as principal contractors, (if they deſired it,) within a certain time, and their Allies and Confederates as comprehended only. This being taken into conſideration, upon the ſecond of *October*, 1518. a League was concluded; which, for being ſingular in its kind, and an excellent Precedent for Peace to the future Ages, I ſhall more at large recite, both out of our and the *French* Records; and the rather, for that it ſeems to have been the rule by which our King framed his Actions many years after, as will appear in this Hiſtory.

1518.

July 9. Records.

* Sept. 30.

1517. March 16.

Octob. 2.

That perfect friendſhip and amity ſhould continue for ever betwixt them, and their Succeſſors, by Land and Sea; (wherein likewiſe all their Subjects and Allies were to be compriſed.) That they ſhould be the friends of the friends, and the enemies of the enemies of each other; inſomuch, that, if any of the ſaid Confederates, or other being a ſtranger to them, ſhould invade any of the ſaid Confederates preſent Dominions, they ſhould give the ſaid Aſſailant an Admonition to deſiſt and make reparation; which if he did not, within the ſpace of a Month, accept, they ſhould declare themſelves his enemies, and two Months after, both by Sea and Land, make War againſt him, at an equal charge; allowing for this purpoſe free paſſage through each others Dominions, paying only

1518. only for what was taken. That if Civil Wars did ariſe in any of their ſaid Countries, none of the Confederates ſhould meddle; unleſs the ſaid Civil Wars were kindled and maintained by ſome foreign Prince. That no one of the Confederates ſhould ſuffer their Subjects to bear Arms againſt the other, or ſhould levy any Forces of ſtrangers, to be imployed againſt the ſaid Confederates, upon pain of being held a violator of the ſaid League; which notwithſtanding ſhould hold firm among the reſt. That none of the ſaid Confederates ſhould take the Vaſſal or Subject of the other into Protection, without the conſent of the King to whom formerly he owed Obedience: That all Rebels, Traytors, or ſuſpected of High-Treaſon, and Fugitives ſhould not be received, entertain'd or favour'd, in any of the Dominions of the ſaid Confederates: but that, after twenty days warning and requiſition, they ſhould be remanded. That the Pope ſhould have notice of this League; upon condition yet, that if he accepted theſe Articles within four Months after, he ſhould be a principal Contractor in this League, and name his Allies alſo. That all the Princes before-named ſhould, within the ſpace of four Months, be received as principal Contractors, if they deſired it, otherwiſe not, without Declaration and Requeſt to the ſaid two Kings. That any other King, Potentate, or chief Lord, might upon his ſute, be admitted to have the benefit of this Confederation, but not as a principal Contractor. Laſtly, That, howſoever other Princes ſhould obſerve or accept the ſaid Treaty, that yet it ſhould remain inviolable betwixt them two.

Leo the Tenth hereupon, though more deſirous of a General Confederacy againſt the *Turk*, accepted this League; as an Introduction thereunto upon the laſt of *December* following, naming together ſome leſſer Allies whom he deſired might be compris'd. the *Venetians* having been nominated already both by *Henry* and *Francis*: upon mature deliberation alſo, *Charles* King of *Spain* entred into it; and the rather in that *Maximilian* the Emperor, conceiv'd that all Chriſtian Princes might the ſooner be diſpos'd thereby to War againſt the *Turk*. Though as he died ſhortly after, the League ſeem'd reſtrain'd chiefly to *Henry*, *Francis*, and *Charles*, and particularly to the firſt Contractors, though not with ſuch confidence and fervency as it firſt began. To reinforce this Treaty alſo, (which was but an Introduction to another) *Francis* did propoſe a match betwixt the Dauphin his Son, and the Princeſs *Mary*, which accordingly was *concluded two days after, upon theſe conditions.

Decemb. 31.

Jan. 12, 1519.

Octob. 4.

That our King ſhould give with his Daughter 333000 Crowns, and *Francis* as great a Joynture as any King of that Country ever gave. That within four Months the Sponſals ſhould be made by the two Kings in their Childrens name. That if the Dauphin died before this Marriage, the next Son of *Francis* ſhould take the Princeſs

Princeſs on the ſame conditions. And if the Princeſs died firſt, the Kings next Daughter (if he had any) ſhould be given. For further Teſtimony of this deſired Alliance, our King condeſcended alſo to reſtore *Tournay*, *Mortaigne*, and Saint *Amand*, and the Territories adjacent, upon the payment of ſix hundred thouſand Crowns, at certain terms. For which payment, as alſo performing of the Marriage, ſufficient Hoſtages ſhould be delivered by the ſaid *Francis*. That yet out of this ſum the ſaid *Francis* might detain 333000 Crowns, for the aforeſaid Dowry of the ſaid Princeſs *Mary*, in caſe ſhe did not Inherit the Crown of *England*. That the ſaid *French* King ſhould pardon, and take into his favour, all the Inhabitants of the ſaid City of *Tournay*, and places adjacent, reſerving to them all ancient Priviledges; and that King *Henry* ſhould thereupon releaſe the Oath of Obedience they had made him. That, whereas the Citizens of *Tournay* did yet owe to King *Henry* twenty three thouſand Livres, which now the *French* King had ſtipulated to pay, he ſhould ſubſtitute the *French* King to receive it of them again. That King *Henry* might carry from *Tournay* all the Artillery, Munition, and Inſtruments of War, either offenſive, or defenſive, Victuals, *&c.* That in caſe the Marriage intended ſhould take no effect, by the default of *Francis*, that then *Tournay* ſhould be delivered back again to King *Henry* or his Heirs, together with the profits received in the mean while, without any deduction for reparation of the ſaid place. And that the Inhabitants thereof ſhould be diſcharged from all ſuperiority or Oath of Obedience made or acknowledged to the ſaid *French* King: Upon condition that the ſaid King *Henry* ſhould reſtore the ſaid *French* King the ſum of ſix hundred thouſand Crowns, or ſo much as he ſhould receive thereof. But if the Impediment for Marriage ſhould happen on the part of King *Henry*, that then, upon payment of the intire ſum of ſix hundred thouſand Crowns, *Tournay* ſhould remain to the *French* King. And herein our Records and *du Tillet* do ſo concur, as the chief difference ſeems to be only about the ſum of 500000 Crowns, which our Records ſay was the penalty on either ſide, for non-performance of the Marriage. There was alſo at the ſame time a Treaty concerning the Admiralties in both Kingdoms, having relation to one made the year precedent *July* 16. and that of *April* 5. 1515. By which it was agreed, that all Suits, upon occaſion of depredation by Sea, might, from the Ordinary Judg be removed to *London* before the Admiral and Vice-Admiral, or their Deputies, and the Maſter of the Rolls of *England*; And at *Roüen* before the Admiral and Vice-Admiral of *France*, their Lieutenants, and the firſt Preſident of the Parliament in *Normandy*; who, upon Appeal of the parties on either ſide, were bound to give a definitive ſentence within the ſpace of one year; which in caſe of neceſſity might be executed by ſtrong hand, or main force. The ſaid Appeals yet might be brought

1518.

Tillet.

July 16. 1517.

Tillet.

1518. brought before the Kings Council on either ſide, there to be determined definitively within the ſpace of ſix Months, *&c.* All things being thus ſetled for future quietneſs, the Princeſs *Mary* was
Octob. 11. promiſed and *betrothed to the Dauphin in Saint *Pauls* in *London*. And the Earl of *Worceſter*, with *Nicolas Weſt*, now Biſhop of *Ely*, and a Train equal to that of *Bonivet*, were ſent to require perfor-
*Dec. 14. mance from *Francis*, who thereupon *took his Oath, gave eight
Decemb. 19. Hoſtages for payment on the Rendition of *Tournay*, and Contra-
1519. cted the Sponſals in the name of his Son. In ſequence whereof,
Feb. 8. *Feb.* 8. following, the Earl of *Worceſter* delivered *Tournay*, though not unwillingly, ſince it was the Kings pleaſure, yet with ſo much ſcruple (having been by the name of Lord *Herbert* at the taking
Hall. thereof) as he would not ſuffer the *Mareſchal de Chaſtillon* to enter it with Banner diſplayed, but rolled up, it being (as he ſaid) voluntarily yielded, and not gotten by Conqueſt; our Writers add, that by *Francis* four hundred thouſand Crowns were allowed our King, for the building of the Citadel; but becauſe neither the *French* nor our Records (from whom I have taken the effect of theſe Treaties) mention it, I leave it to the diſcretion of the Reader. Only I muſt not forget what I find concerning the Cardinals ſatisfaction in this particular, who had twelve thouſand *Livres Tournois* yearly, for relinquiſhing the Biſhoprick of *Tournay*. As for the other chief Counſellors, *Polydore* ſaith, a certain ſum of Money ſhould be diſtributed among them by the *French* King, *ita ut conſuevi ſſent facere olim ejus Majores*. Thus was *Tournay* reſtor'd again to the *French*, however divers concurrent Articles were not perform'd afterwards, as will appear. And here I muſt obſerve it a little fatal to this Princeſs *Mary* to be a kind of Author of the loſs of all our poſſeſſions in *France*, *Tournay* being reſtored upon pretence of Dowry now, and *Calais* loſt in the time of her Match with *Philip* the Second.

Howbeit, it was agreed betwixt them, that *John* Duke of *Albany* ſhould not be permitted to return to *Scotland* any more; it being not thought fit by our King, that one who was next in Succeſſion to *James* his Nephew, ſhould have charge over him. Moreover, it was agreed that this young King ſhould he comprehended in the League. This particular being reſolved a good while ſince, though not fully ſigned till now, was the cauſe that Queen *Mar-*
May 18. *garet* *returned to *Scotland*; where her Husband met her at *Ber-*
1517. *wick*; yet ſo, as there was not thenceforth that entire love formerly obſerved betwixt them. Our Ambaſſadors being ſtill in *France*, the Biſhop of *Ely* went to ſee the Queen at *Amboiſe*, from whence he certified our King, that he ſaw the Dauphin (now almoſt a year old) and imbraced and kiſſed him. Four days after
Octob. 8. the above-mentioned Treaty, being the eighth of *October*, 1518. another was concluded for an interview betwixt the Kings, accompanied with their Queens, and Madam *Loüiſe* the Mother of *Francis*,

cis and their Houſhold-Officers. The time appointed was the laſt of *July*, 1519. at *Sandinfield* in *Picardy*, or ſome other Neutral place, according as their Deputies on either ſide ſhould adviſe, which upon the firſt of *April* following were to meet together for this purpoſe. 1518.

While affairs paſt thus with *France* and *Scotland*, the Pope ſent *Laurentius Campejus* Cardinal, as Legate hither; to procure a general League among Chriſtian Princes (or at leaſt a quinquennial Truce) for a War againſt the *Turk*. Beſides, he gave him Authority to demand a Tenth from our Clergy, as alſo a Commiſſion (ſpecified in a Bull) wherein Cardinal *Woolſey* and Himſelf had Legatine power to viſit Monaſteries. This Legate (called by *Polydore*, *Inter Juris-conſultos Jure-conſultiſſimus*) coming to *Calais* was deſired by our Cardinal to ſtay there, as our Hiſtorians write, till he had procured from *Rome* that *Woolſey* might be joyn'd in the foreſaid Commiſſion with him; But, as I find in our Records and *Polydore*, until he had obtained from the Pope, that *Hadrian de Caſtello* the Cardinal (now in Priſon for a Conſpiracy againſt the Pope) might be diveſted from the Biſhoprick of *Bath*, and the dignity conferred on him; of which alſo he had the greater hope, that the Pope (as I find by our Records) had condemn'd him for the ſaid Conſpiracy. Beſides, it was the care of our Cardinal, to ſuffer none to have acceſs to our King, whom he had not firſt obliged. Therefore our Cardinal preſented him, together with a promiſe to aſſiſt him for the Biſhoprick of *Saliſbury* when it ſhould fall, ſome red Cloth to apparel his Train, which otherwiſe were but poorly cloath'd. To ſuit this alſo, the night before his coming to *London*, he ſent him twelve Mules, with empty Coffer fairly covered; ſome of which yet were overturned and broken in his paſſage through the City, to the great ſhame of *Campejus*. Who finding at laſt his demand for a tenth rejected by our Clergy, adverties the Pope, and proceeds to the other point of viſiting Monaſteries. But our cunning Cardinal thinking himſelf able enough to diſcharge this Office alone, (while *Campejus* ſtay'd in *England*) diſpatches *John Clarke* Doctor of Law to the Pope, both to give account of this buſineſs, and to obtain the whole power for himſelf. This *Clarke* coming to *Rome* negotiated, by our Kings commandment, ſo well on the Cardinals behalf, that he obtained from the Pope a * Bull, whereby (*Campejus* being now revoked) he was made Legate *a Latere*, and enabled to viſit not only Monaſteries, but all the Clergy of *England*, and diſpence with Church Laws, for one year next enſuing the date thereof. Which though it gave him great power, miniſtred much offence; as abridging the Biſhops power, and ſcandalizing the whole Clergy, who were ſo defam'd by the Cardinals information, that they were termed *Dati in reprobum ſenſum*, and the like, in the original Bull among our Records, which I ſhould have inſerted in *toto contextu*, but that

June 29. *Hall. Antiq. Brit.*

Polyd.

July 28.

July 29.

* Dat. June 10. 1519.

1518. that it is too long and infamous to the Hierarchy, and all Religious perſons. And now (ſaith *Polydore*) the Cardinal his pride did ſo prodigiouſly increaſe, that on ſolemn Feaſt days, he would ſay Maſs after the manner of the Pope himſelf; not only Biſhops and Abbots ſerving him therein, but even Dukes and Earls giving him Water and the Towel. Beſides, not contented with the Croſs of *York* to be carried before him, he added another of his Legacy, which two of the talleſt Prieſts that could be found, carried on great Horſes before him. Inſomuch (as *Polydore* ſaith) it grew to a Jeſt, as if one Croſs did not ſuffice for the expiation of his ſins. All this yet was but a kind of prelude to that which followed. For, erecting a particular Court of Juriſdiction, which he called the Legates Court, and placing in it as Judg one *John Allen* Doctor of Law, thought to be a perjur'd wicked perſon, all manner of Rapines and Extortions were committed there. For making enquiry into the life of every body, no offence eſcaped cenſure and puniſhment, unleſs privately they gave Money; of which they found two commodities: one that it did coſt leſs, the other that it exempted them from ſhame. Thus as the Rules of conſcience are in many caſes of a greater extent, than thoſe of the Law, ſo he found means to ſearch even into their ſecreteſt corners. Beſides, under this colour he arrogated power to call in queſtion the Executors of Wills, and the like. He ſummon'd alſo all Religious perſons of what ſort ſoever before him; who, caſting themſelves at his feet, were grievouſly chidden, and terrified with expulſion, till they had compounded. Beſides, all Spiritual Livings that fell, were conferred on his Creatures. The Archbiſhop of *Canterbury* underſtanding how all orders were thus Ranſack'd by the Cardinal, goes to the King, and acquaints him with it. The King replies, that he ſhould not have heard thereof but by him; adding, that no man is ſo blind any where as in his own Houſe; Therefore, I pray you, ſaid he, Father, go to *Woolſey*, and tell him, if any thing be amiſs, that he amend it. This grave perſon hereupon admoniſhes him, and afterwards particularly told him, that in medling with the laſt Wills and Teſtaments of the dead, he aſſum'd a power not ſo much as claim'd by the Pope himſelf, and for diſpoſing ſome Benefices in the gift of the Nobility, and other great Perſons, he thought he uſurped too much upon them. All the uſe *Woolſey* made thereof, was to hate the Archbiſhop, with whom he was formerly offended; only becauſe (as *Polydore* hath it) he ſtiled himſelf in the ſubſcription of his Letter *Gulielmus Frater Cantuarienſis*. Yet leaſt the Archbiſhop ſhould do him ill Offices, he temper'd his ſpeech for the time. But ſhortly after his Agent *John Allen* being accuſed by one *John London* a Prieſt, it appeared ſufficiently that all the former Allegations againſt *Woolſey* were true; which made our King rebuke the Cardinal ſo ſharply, that after that time, he became, if not better, yet more wary than before;

Polyd. Virg.

before; At this time alſo certain abuſes about Sanctuaries were taken away by the Kings Authority in ſequence of a Bull granted to that purpoſe by *Julius* the ſecond, 1503. *June* 19. to King *Henry* the Seventh. 1519.

Let us turn our eyes on Foreign buſineſſes, now ſomewhat intermitted. *Charles* intending a journey into *Spain*, the *French* King offer'd him the convenience of paſſing through *France*, and Hoſtages for ſecurity, together with the Keys of the Cities he ſhould go through; but *Charles* (as our Ambaſſadors write) refuſed, ſaying, if he Landed any where it ſhould be in *England*. According to which Reſolution, taking Ship, he came to *Spain*, Aug. 25. 1517. as *Sandoval* hath it, (our Records ſay he ſet not to Sea till *Sep.* 8.) where he found things much diſcompoſed, through the ſeverity of the Cardinal *Ximenes*. Beſides, there wanted not ſuſpicion that many would have ſet up his Brother *Ferdinand* againſt him, whom therefore he ſhortly after ſent to *Flanders*. Howſoever *Ximenes* died, not without probability that he was poyſoned, though by ſome is uncertain. *Charles* his firſt Act was calling a Cortes or Parliament in *Caſtilla* and *Leon*, which paſſed not without trouble; there being no little contention whether the People ſhould firſt ſwear Obedience to *Charles*, or he the obſerver of their ancient Laws, Liberties, and Priviledges, which yet at laſt was ſo temper'd, as they came near in time together; though, for conſerving the Royal Dignity, ſome particular perſons were induced to ſwear firſt. He alſo cauſed Juſts and Tourneys to be held according to the manner of that Age. Into which *Sandoval* ſaith, ſixty Cavaliers entred, their Lances pointed with Diamonds, who alſo encountred ſo roughly that moſt of them were overthrown and ſore hurt, and twelve Horſes kill'd; Though yet this was little in regard of a Juſts that *followed, at which ſeven of the Actors were kill'd outright; wherein nevertheleſs *Charles*, though very young, appeared, breaking three Lances in four Careers. After this, eſtabliſhing ſome Laws, and obtaining ſome Money from his people, he went to *Arragon*, where he called a Cortes likewiſe; and ſhortly after, (hearing, that ſince the death of *Horruc Barbaroſſa* (who from a low fortune and birth made himſelf firſt a formidable Pirat, then *King of *Algier*) *Hariadin Barbaroſſa* his Brother, ſucceeded in that Kingdom, and in the exerciſe of Piracy,) ſent *Don Hugo de Moncada* Viceroy of *Sicily* to *Algier*, with as ill ſucceſs as their expeditions thither have commonly proved. Not long after which, news was brought him of the death of *Loüiſe* of *France*, whom by the Treaty of *Noyon* he ſhould have married, and of the ſickneſs of *Maximilian*; who, now growing old and infirm, determined to make one of his Grand-Children Emperor: Aſſembling for this purpoſe a Diet at *Ausburgh*, and propoſing particularly *Ferdinand*; as believing the Electors would ſooner chuſe him, than greaten any other Prince with that Acceſſi-

1517. Auguſt.

Sept. 7. 1517.

1518. Jan.

1518. March 4.

* 1517.

1518. Auguſt.

1519. on. But as he alone could not diſpoſe this buſineſs, ſo both *Francis* and *Charles* were earneſt in it. Our King alſo not omitting to diſcover how *Germany* ſtood affected to him. And the rather, becauſe the Pope, as I find by our Records, did encourage him thereunto. *Maximilian*'s death upon a Dyſſentery, *January* 12. 1519. enſuing this while, *Richard Pace* was * ſent to *Germany* by our King; who, in his * diſpatches certified with what Ambition *Francis* and *Charles* aſpired to this Dignity; ſaying nevertheleſs, that the Electors of *Mentz*, *Colen*, and *Triers* ſtood ſo affected, that if our King had put in ſooner, and before they were engaged, he thought his Majeſty might have carried it, ſince the Popes Nuncio there affirmed ſtill he had Commiſſion from his Holineſs to aſſiſt him; as being deſirous it were beſtowed on any rather than either *Charles* or *Francis*, but eſpecially on *Charles*. Though at laſt, finding that betwixt Money given, and Forces raiſed by *Charles*, he would prevail, his Holineſs thought fit to comply, and give his aſſent: and the rather, for that the Duke of *Saxony*, whom the Electors once nominated, refuſed it. Whereupon, *June* 28. 1519. *Charles* was publickly choſen at *Francfort*; News whereof being brought to *Barcelona*, at firſt rejoyced, but afterwards troubled him; as conſidering what a burden he had undertaken, eſpecially in a time when the *Turk* made his approaches againſt Chriſtendom. Yet were not theſe all his cares; For, as his Clergy in *Spain* was ſo offended at the demand of a tenth of their Revenue towards a War againſt Infidels, that there was *Ceſſatio à Divinis* (as *Sandoval* hath it) for above four Months in all the Kingdom; And as the people again began a dangerous inſurrection for the conſervation of their Liberties, (which endured ſome years following, with more method than in ſuch popular Commotions is ordinarily found) ſo he had much to do at home. Beſides the people in *Auſtria* began another no leſs dangerous in thoſe parts, and of little leſs continuance. Again, *Francis*, who was now in good correſpondence with our King, preſſed the reſtitution of *Navarre*, according to the Treaty of *Noyon*, and rais'd him troubles in *Naples* and *Sicily*. All which important affairs yet were pretermitted only to comply with the Ceremony (for it was no more) of receiving the Imperial Crown, ſo ſecure was he of all things but his Title; only in the midſt of theſe afflictions, the happy news of the diſcovery, and begun Conqueſt of *Mexico*, and *Nueva Eſpanna* arrived; which though worthy a particular Relation, I ſhall not inſert, leſt I ſhould too much increaſe the bulk of this Hiſtory. Though for giving a taſte thereunto, I ſhall not omit to tell my Reader, that *Hernando Cortez*, undertaker thereof, going with about four hundred *Spaniſh* Foot, and fifteen Horſe, and ſeven little Field-Pieces, into many populous, but diverſly affected Kingdoms, did ſo dexterouſly behave himſelf, that playing the part ſometimes of an Ambaſſador, and ſometimes of a Soldier, he prevail'd

* May 20.
* June 20.
June 28.
Sand.

prevail'd himſelf of all. And, in concluſion, notwithſtanding the oppoſition both of his Country-men and Enemies, laid a foundation of a greater Dominion than any man before him did. Before yet I come to the actions of the new Emperor, I ſhall exhibit the deſcription of *Maximilian* I have collected out of ſeveral Authors. 1519.

This *Maximilian*, being King of the *Romans*, and called Emperor, though never Crown'd by that Title, gave much occaſion of diſcourſe concerning the reaſon thereof; ſome ſaying, he declined the charge and hazard of going into *Italy* for receiving the Imperial Crown at the Popes hands; others believing, that according to his often profeſſion, he meant firſt to be Emperor of *Conſtantinople*, which he ſaid was his moſt lawful Title. As for his education, he was a Prince brought up in much ignorance, yet ſtudious to repair that defect by converſation with the more learned ſort. His bounty was obſerved ſuch, that it extended even to the diſabling him in the purſuit of his deſigns; wherein he made a Royal vertue criminal. He had treated with the Princes of his time, with ſo ill ſucceſs, that he knew not in what poſture to keep himſelf; being in the ſame danger for the moſt part, whether his faith were broken or theirs. This made him devout even to ſuperſtition. For his enterpriſes in the War, as they were many, ſo they ended differently, he getting ſometimes more by a bad Peace, than a juſt War. His ſpare time he imployed in Poetry, writing the Hiſtory of his Life in *Dutch* Verſe, which Book by *Pedro Mexia* is called *Teur danct*, and another called *Puerto de la Honra*. One of his chiefeſt happineſſes was, that his Poſterity came to enjoy ſome of the greateſt and beſt parts of *Europe*. He was of the Order of the Garter, and his Obſequy was ſolemnly kept in St. *Pauls*, by our King and the Knights of that Fellowſhip. *Hall.*

I muſt remember now, that at the concluſion of the Treaty with *France*, *October* 8. 1518. it was agreed betwixt both Princes, that there ſhould be an interview in *July*, 1519. which yet took not effect, becauſe of the death of *Maximilian*, and the occaſions enſuing formerly mentioned; therefore it was put off till 1520. both Kings in the mean while agreeing not to cut off their Beards, till they ſaw each other. *Francis* having alſo now a ſecond Son, deſired our King to give him his name; which our King accepted kindly, calling him *Henry*, (afterwards King, and ſecond of that name.) Neither did *Francis* omit any thing, which might argue his reſpect. Therefore he ſolicites our Cardinal (whom he called his Father and Couſin) ſtill with gifts, ſends Preſents to the Princeſs *Mary*, and leaves nothing unattempted which might ſecure him on that ſide, knowing well how puiſſant an Enemy he had provoked. *Charles* on the other ſide, conſidering how much it concerned him to keep the Cardinal at his Devotion, countermines Records. June.

1519. *Francis* in his own way. On which occaſion I ſhall obſerve, that, as ſince the diſcovery of the *Indies*, Coin hath been much more plentiful, ſo greater matters have been done in theſe latter times by Bribes, than by the Sword; Thoſe who have money (that is to ſay, a ſeed which will ſpring any thing in corrupt minds) finding means, either in the Authors or the Actors in buſineſſes, to diſpoſe them to their ends, or at leaſt to make advantage of the intelligence they receive from them. *Francis* ſuſpecting what might follow hereupon, provides betimes to keep the *Scotiſh* his friends; hence although it was his motion formerly to compriſe the young and that Nation in general within his League with *England*, yet now he ſtrives as much to withdraw them: Therefore when our King ſent to require their Oath thereunto, they refuſed; ſo that all that buſineſs ended in a Truce only for one year. And here I muſt not omit to relate the Cardinals extreme Ambition; who having a deſign to make himſelf Pope, did ever comply with thoſe, who he thought might be his beſt aſſiſtants. Therefore now that *Charles* was grown the more Potent, and that beſides it was moſt manifeſt, that to which party ſoever our King inclined, He would turn the Ballance, he hoped by favouring *Charles* to obtain his deſire. Neither wanted he continual Preſents on his part equal to, if not exceeding the others; ſo that now he rejected the aſſiſtance of *Francis*, though offering him the voices of fourteen Cardinals (as I find by our Records) and applies himſelf to *Charles*; Nevertheleſs the deſign for the Interview with *Francis* continued; which being minuted by our Ambaſſador Sir *Thomas Bolen*, was continued by his Succeſſor in *France* Sir *Richard Wingfield*; among whoſe Diſpatches (extant in our Records) I find this paſſage in a Letter to the King, *March* 16. "I have preſented "to the *French* King the Sword, for the nimble handling whereof "he hath nor knoweth no feat, but thought it not maniable: And "call'd the Admiral to him, and cauſed him to feel the weight "thereof, who ſhew'd him that he had ſeen your Grace weild one "more peſant. But for ſuch promiſe as he had made your Highneſs, he might not diſcover it; ſaving that it was by means of a "Gantlet. The *French* King deſires one of thoſe Gantlets, and he "will ſend your Grace ſuch a pair of *Cuiraſſes*, as your Grace hath "not ſeen, the ſecret whereof is for the eaſie bearing of ſuch weight, "as reſts upon the *Cuiraſſes*, which is commonly born by the Shoulders, and in this *Cuiraſſe* the Shoulder bears no burden. All which I have ſet down, to awaken the induſtry of theſe times in ſuch Inventions. I will come now to the order of the Interview, remitted both by our King and *Francis* unto the Cardinal's direction. Who accordingly, upon the 12 of *March*, 1520. declared this order. That, in regard his King was to paſs the Seas, to his Danger and Coſt, and ſhould leave his Kingdom, only to do *Francis* Honour: therefore that the Interview ſhould not be in a Neutral

Leſle.

March 16.

March 12.

tral place, but that King *Henry*, his Queen, and the Queen *Dowager* of *France* ſhould come to *Guiſnes*, and the *French* King, his Queen, and Madam *Loüiſe* his Mother to *Ardres*, before the end of *May* next; and then that, before the 4th of *June* following, King *Henry* ſhould go half a League towards *Ardres*, without paſſing yet the limits of *Guiſnes* or the *Engliſh* Pale, and there, in ſome open place, near the Confines of the *French*, (which ſhould be declar'd by Deputies on either ſide) the ſaid *French* King parting from *Ardres* the ſame day, and hour, and coming to the ſaid place (where no Tent was to be pitched) ſhould meet the ſaid King *Henry* within his own Territories, and there they ſhould ſalute one another, and ſpeak together on Horſe-back, as long as they pleaſed. This being done, that the *French* King ſhould return to *Ardres*, and King *Henry* to *Guiſnes*. The next day, that the ſaid Kings ſhould meet in ſome Neutral place, to be nominated by their Deputies: where, after ſalutations on both ſides, King *Henry* ſhould go to *Ardres* to ſee and Dine with the Queen of *France*, and his Mother, and the *French* King to *Guiſnes*, to ſee and Dine with the Queen of *England*, and *Dowager* of *France*. That the ſaid Interview ſhould be celebrated with *Tourneys* and *Juſts*, and Exerciſes of Arms, as well on Foot, as on Horſe-back, in ſome place choſen by the ſaid Deputies, betwixt *Guiſnes* and *Ardres*; which ſhould be ditched, fortified, and guarded by an equal number of Perſons to be appointed by the ſaid Kings. And that, during the ſaid Exerciſes of Arms, the Queens and their Train might familiarly converſe together, in the evening ſtill returning to their ſeveral Lodgings of *Ardres* and *Guiſnes*. That the honour and precedence, ſhould be given to them ſtill, who came to ſee the other. That the number of the Perſons and Horſes permitted to be at this Interview, ſhould be ſigned in certain Rolls by the ſaid Kings, and ſhould not be increaſed without mutual Conſent. That two Gentlemen with an equal number of followers ſhould watch continually upon the High-ways, as well for ſurety of the ſaid King's Perſons, as for the ſafer conducting the Victuals. And that theſe every night ſhould give account, to their ſeveral Kings and Counſellors, of their charge. That the Soldiers of the Garriſons of *Boulogne* and *Calais* ſhould not come near, without expreſs Licence of both Kings. I find alſo that it was agreed that the number of ſtrokes at *Tourney* ſhould be determined by the Ladies; who therefore were requir'd to come thither from all places, that could furniſh beauty, and worth enough to deſerve ſo much honour. This being Concluded, the Earl of *Worceſter* on our Kings part, and *Monſieur de Chaſtillon* on the part of *Francis*, laid out the ground for theſe Triumphs, betwixt *Guiſnes* and *Ardres*, but within the *Engliſh* Pale. While theſe Magnificencies were preparing, much diſcourſe paſt betwixt both Princes, and the Ambaſſadors reſident in either Court, concerning the Ancient forms uſed at great ſolemnities.

Among

1520.

April.

1520. Among which it appears, in a diſpatch of *Wingfield*'s, that *Francis* told him, how he had heard that our *Edward*, (I think he meant *Edward* the third,) was uſed at ſuch times to have his meat carried up by Cavaliers on Horſe-back; But to let theſe things paſs, and come to our Hiſtory, I find *Francis* purſued ſtill his point, and is ſo confident now of the Cardinals favour, that he durſt make an overture to him, for reſtoring *Calais*, and all the other Towns in the *Engliſh* Pale, for a certain ſum of Money. Neither was it ill entertain'd by the Cardinal; though the difficulty of effecting it did ſomewhat deter him. For as the narrow Seas have been (time out of mind) under the Juriſdiction of the *Engliſh*, and that our Ships, in making and keeping the paſſage over, were a kind of Bridg, ſo it could not but ſeem ſtrange, to every man well-affected to his Country, that any Motion ſhould be made, whereby we might loſe the further end thereof, and therein deprive our ſelves of a Landing place. Therefore the Cardinal did not think fit to propoſe the buſineſs at once, nor without diſcovering firſt, how it would take with the general ſort. For this purpoſe, then, he would caſt out theſe words in his ordinary ſpeech, and at his table; whenſoever there was queſtion of foreign buſineſs. What have we to do with this *Calais*, that lies in the Continent, and coſts us more than it is worth? I would we were honeſtly rid of it.

The time now drew near, when, according to the Agreement, the two Kings were to meet betwixt *Guiſnes* and *Ardres*. This alſo was ſeconded much by the Cardinal, who between Pride and Vanity, deſir'd to ſee theſe two together; whom he was generally thought to govern. He knew alſo his Preſents would not be little; therefore he perſuaded our King to build ſome ſuch Houſe near *Guiſnes*, as might be worthy the reception of two ſo great Princes. To perform this, two thouſand Artificers were appointed. The model whereof is ſtill extant in *Greenwich*, among thoſe many rare Pictures, which the moſt vertuous Prince, King *Charles* my good King and Maſter hath. The Cardinal alſo ſummons the prime Nobility to attend the King this journey, with that ſplendor which might become Perſons of their Dignity. Some of the more thrifty ſort yet, and eſpecially the Duke of *Buckingham*, repin'd hereat, laying the fault of this expence on the Cardinal chiefly, who hearing thereof, for this as well as ſome other cauſes, hereafter mention'd, reſolv'd his ruin.

Charles the Emperor hearing now of theſe preparations for the Interview, though fit perſonally to treat with our King, concerning the breaking it off, as well as all other friendſhip with *Francis*. For thoſe Ambaſſadors whom he had ſent before to the *Engliſh* Court for this purpoſe, had failed, our King alledging to them for all other Reaſons, his promiſe given. Neither could they deny, but the engagement was deep; for a King of Arms had been in the *Engliſh* Court on the part of *Francis*, with a Proclamation, declaring

declaring that, in *June* next, the two Kings, *Henry* and *Francis*, with fourteen Aids, would, in a Camp betwixt *Ardres* and *Guiſnes*, anſwer all Comers that were Gentlemen, at *Tilt*, *Tourney*, and *Barriers*. The like Proclamation was made by *Clarenceaux* in the *French* Court. And yet theſe defiances ſtopt not there, for they were ſent by our King to the *Low-Countries*, *Burgundy*, *Germany*, and by *Francis* into *Spain*, and *Italy*. And now our principal Noblemen had made themſelves ready to attend the King. Among whom, none was ſo gorgeous as the Duke of *Buckingham*; who, finding the King yet not ready to ſet forth, went before to ſee ſome Lands he had in *Kent*. But his Tenants exclaiming there againſt one *Charles Knevet* his Steward or Surveyor, for exacting on them, the Duke diſcharg'd him. This piece of Juſtice yet prov'd afterwards the cauſe of his overthrow, as ſhall be declar'd in its place, ſo fatal was it to that Houſe of the * *Staffords* to ſuffer by their Servants. Our King finding now the time of meeting to grow near, comes to *Canterbury* May 25. intending there to paſs his *Whitſontide*. This while *Charles* the Emperor had ſo layed his Journey from *Spain*, that the day following, himſelf accompanied with divers, not only Lords but fair Ladies, comes unexpectedly to *Dover*. Our Cardinal hearing this, poſted away preſently, to aſſure him of his welcom. Our King alſo the next day after, very early, came to *Dover* Caſtle, where the Emperor was lodg'd, who met him on the ſtairs; where being ſaluted by our King, and afterwards reconducted to his Chamber, *Charles* continues his Deſign to break this Interview, as well as all other correſpondence with *Francis*: For both *Charles* and *Francis* had great Deſigns at that time; *Francis* deſir'd to hold the Territory of *Milan*, and to recover *Naples*, (which the *French* having * once got under *Charles* the Eighth, did again ſo ſuddenly * loſe, that it ſeem'd no place there was ſtrong enough, either to hold them out or keep them in.) Beſides, he purpos'd to re-eſtabliſh *Henry d' Albret* in the Kingdom of *Navarre*, according to the Treaty of *Noyon*. Again, the Duke of *Gueldres* being taken under his Protection, he could do no leſs than defend him againſt *Charles*, who laboured to bring that Province into ſubjection. But eſpecially, the right he conceived to have in the Dutchy of *Burgundy*, he deſired to conſerve, againſt the pretences of *Charles*; who, on the other ſide, endeavour'd to oppoſe him in all theſe places; and was, beſides, offended that *Francis*, declining an Accord made before in * *Paris*, had extorted from him new conditions in the Treaty at * *Noyon*. Therefore, knowing no Prince could ſo much help or hinder him in theſe Affairs, as our King, he offers more advantagious conditions than *Francis* did. And to make this the more acceptable yet, he had largely both preſented the Cardinal, and promis'd (if ever occaſion happen'd) to make him Pope. And that he might the better in gifts exceed his Competitor *Francis*, a great

1520.

V. 1. *Rich.* 3.

May 25.

May 26.

Serres.

* 1494.
* 1495.

* 1515.
* 1516.

1520. great part of the ſpoils of *Mexico* had been brought him. In the firſt part our King excus'd himſelf, as being far ingag'd in honour to meet *Francis*; but for the latter, he bid him be confident, as ſoon as this Interview was paſt. From thence then, our King invited him to *Canterbury*, where he gladly ſaw his Aunt Queen *Katharine*; May 27. the Queen *Dowager* of *France* alſo (once propoſed for his Wife) ſeem'd very conſiderable, as being for her beauty much Celebrated by the *Engliſh* and *French* Writers. And, if we may believe *Polydore*, his paſſion in ſeeing of her was ſuch, as he could not be perſuaded to Dance, and not that *Spaniſh* gravity, which, in his Age, and amongſt ſuch Company, might well have been laid aſide. Therefore, having paſs'd over the *Whitſontide* Holy-days in thoſe ſports, and entertainments, which our King gave him, He * May 29. * departs to *Sandwich*, whence * taking Ship he arriv'd in his Na- * May 30. tive Country of *Flanders*, while our King the ſame day paſt to *Do-* * May 31. *ver*; and thence * with all his Train and Company to *Calais*. The June 4. 4 of *June*, the King, two Queens, and all the reſt, who were aſſign'd in his Roll or Liſt, remov'd to his Princely Lodging near *Guiſnes*, being a ſquare of Timber, whereof every ſide contained three hundred twenty eight foot, with a Savage before it, carrying Bow and Arrows, and the word *Cui adhæreo præeſt*. The parts of which great Building, having been artificially framed in *England*, were now put together, and afterwards taken aſunder, and brought home. This, again, was moſt ſumptuouſly furniſh'd; eſpecially the Chappel; from which a private Gallery reached to the ſtrong Caſtle of *Guiſnes*: The Houſe for *Francis* (near *Ardres*) was a Building rather great than coſtly, as being erected with ſuch materials, as could be gotten in haſte; his firſt intention being to lodg in a Rich Pavilion of Cloth of Gold; until the Wind threw it down. Before yet theſe Kings met together, the Cardinal went to ſee *Francis*, and Treat with him concerning ſome particulars, about the *Marriage* betwixt the *Dauphin* and Princeſs *Ma-* *Tillet.* *ry*. The ſubſtance whereof was, (as I find by the *French* Records,) That after the Million of Crowns (agreed on in *May* 1515.) were ſatisfied, *Francis* ſhould pay at *Calais* one hundred thouſand *Livres Tournois* yearly to our King, until the Marriage were ſolemnized in the face of the Church; and ſo, during the life of the ſaid *Henry*; after which if the *Dauphin* ſhould in Right of his Wife, be King of *England*, to her and her Heirs. But if the Marriage were not accompliſhed, then the ſaid payment ſhould ceaſe. As for the differences betwixt *England* and *Scotland*, That Madame, the Kings Mother, and the Cardinal of *York* ſhould determine them. June 6. All which were concluded the 6. of *June*, 1520.

June 7. The day following the Interview began. The Signal of departing was a Warning-Piece, to be ſhot, when the Kings were ready. This being given, they both iſſued forth royally attended. There was ſome ſtay yet, upon a report, that the numbers exceeded the Liſts

Liſts agreed on. *Francis* ſtopt firſt, and our King afterwards; it being told him by the Lord *Abergavenny*, that the *French* were twice as many. But the Earl of *Shrewsbury* affirming, the *French* were more afraid of the *Engliſh*, than the *Engliſh* of them, they went on: Our King (being thought the goodlieſt Prince of his time) appearing ſomewhat before the reſt. The *French* King beholding the demeanour of the *Engliſh* awhile, rode himſelf alſo before his Train, the Duke of *Bourbon* bearing a naked Sword before him, and his Admiral and Maſter of the Horſe following him. Our King obſerving this, caus'd the Marqueſs *Dorſet*, who bare the Sword of Eſtate, to draw it, and go on likewiſe. At laſt coming near, and the Trumpets ſounding on both ſides, they both alighted in the Valley of *Andren*, and ſaluted each other, paſſing from thence Arm-in-Arm to a Tent of Cloth of Gold erected there; (the firſt Agreement concerning theſe points, being it ſeems ſo much altered.) Where, Complements being paſt on both ſides, they took leave, and return'd to their ſeveral Lodgings. Upon the 9. both Kings came to view the Camp or place of Exerciſe being 300 Yards long, and 106 broad, well Ditch'd and Fenc'd, ſave at the Entries; having on the ſide Scaffolds erected for the Beholders. There were alſo ſet up two Artificial Trees (the one a Hawthorn for *Henry* our King, the other a Frambouſier or Raſpis-Buſh for *Francis*) with the Arms of the two Kings and their ſeveral Aids, on which alſo the Articles of Juſts, Tourney, and Barriers were faſtned. The Aiders on the *Engliſh* ſide were the Duke of *Suffolk*, the Marqueſs *Dorſet*, Sir *William Kingſton*, Sir *Richard Jerningham*, Sir *Giles Capel*, Mr. *Nicolas Carew*, and Mr. *Anthony Knevet*. One the *French* party were *Monſieur le Duc de Vendoſme*, Mr. *de Saint Pol*, Mr. *de Montmorency*, Mr. *de Bryon*, Mr. *de Saint Meſme*, Maſter *de Brucall*, and Maſter *Tabanes*. To encounter theſe again, divers Noble Perſons, and good Cavaliers came from foreign Countries; who, preſenting their Arms to the Heralds, were thereupon admitted to the Exerciſe, being appointed upon *Monday* the 11. when the Queens on both ſides and Ladies coming to the Place, the Kings armed themſelves with their Aids, who did wear ſutable Liveries on either ſide. I will not here particularly ſet down the Courſes of theſe Champions, ſince *Hall*, who ſeems to have been an Eye-Witneſs, relates them at large. And leſs ſhall I recount their Devices, approaching much to the *Rebus* of *Picardy*; according perchance to the manner of that time. Let it ſuffice that, among all, none did better (if ſo well) as the two Kings, and eſpecially ours; who diſabled *Monſieur de Grandeville* at the ſecond Courſe to run any more that day. *Monſieur de Montmorency* held him yet better to it, yet ſo as to get no advantage. This Exerciſe continued four days together: The next day, the *French* King came early to *Guiſnes*, with a ſmall Train; our King alſo (after giving him his *bien-venu*) departing with the like equipage to *Ardres*:

1520.

June 9.

June 11.

E. *Hall.*

June 16.

1520. *Ardres:* ſo that they paſs'd that day with Feaſting and Dancing with the Queens and other Ladies on either ſide. Only I obſerve our Kings manner was more gentile than that of *Francis:* For, coming diſguis'd in Masking-Cloths, he not only prevented Treachery againſt his Perſon, when any were intended, but avoided Conteſtation for Precedence in his return home, that night, when
* June 17. he met *Francis* by the way. On *Sunday* * they repos'd, for the Honour of that Day; and on *Monday* for foul Weather. On *Tueſ-*
June 20. *day* they continued their Courſes with like Honour. On *Wedneſday*, being the twentieth, the *Tourney* began; where with Swords was a rude *Chamaillis*; yet the Kings and their Aids beat the Counter-Party to diſarming. Where our King particularly, got that Honour, that a brave *French* Nobleman with whom he fought, preſented him his Horſe as a gage of his being overcome. The next day, our King in *Tourney* likewiſe broke the Pouldron of Mr. *de Fleuranges*, and made him depart the Camp. But this Sport was ſo rough, that four of the Aids being hurt, others were ſub-
June 22. ſtituted in their places. The 22. the Barriers began; and, after it, the caſting of Hand-Spears or Darts, with the Target, and fighting with the Two-handed Sword. At which Exerciſe likewiſe much Commendation was given to either King. For Celebrating theſe Magnificences alſo, the Cardinal ſolemnly ſung an high Maſs, being attended in the moſt Pontifical manner. At the Cloſe whereof, he diſpenſed the Treaſure of the *Roman* Church (being the Indulgences granted by *Leo* the Tenth) unto the two Kings, who that day din'd together by themſelves, their Queens eating together alſo in another Room: This being done, they both turn'd to Barriers, where our King, with a few Strokes, diſarm'd his Adverſary. The next day our King, with his Siſter Queen *Mary*, went in Masking Apparel to ſee the *French* Queen at *Ardres*, *Francis* likewiſe going to the *Engliſh* Queen. At the return they alighted, and after many Complements, Embraces, and rich
June 24. Preſents to each other, bid adieu the 24 of *June*. *Polydore* obſerves yet, that there was ſome abruptneſs in the Farewel; and ſaith, *Francis* told our King, that our Natiou did not well comply with the *French* in their mutual Viſits. But our King putting this off diſcreetly, their Diſcourſe paſſed no further. And perchance the occaſion of this *Mal-entendu*, was that the *French* gave forth,
E. Hall. *Calais* ſhould be delivered up for Money. The next day the King and all his Train departed to *Calais*, giving Licence unto many there to return unto *England*.

July 10. Upon the tenth of *July*, the Emperor being at *Graveling* (with his Aunt the Lady *Margaret*) our King (at their Requeſt) admits another Interview. To this purpoſe, going towards *Graveling*, the Emperor met him in the way, and conducted him thither, giving for the reſt to the *Engliſh* all that good Entertainment ſo little
July 11. a place could afford. The next day, the Emperor and his Aunt the

the Lady *Margaret* went with our King to *Calais*, where much Maskings, and Magnificencies paſſing, buſineſſes yet were not forgot. For our King (together with *Monſieur de la Roche*, employ'd for *Francis*) read and offer'd to *Charles* (now Emperor) the Tripartite League, ſigned betwixt them formerly; requiring him to enter thereinto by the name of Emperor (as I conceive it.) But the Emperor having formerly ſign'd the League by the name of *Charles*, and beſides deſiring more the accompliſhing of his Deſigns in *Italy*, and elſewhere, than to confirm that Agreement, ſo defer'd or avoided this Propoſition, that I find not what effect it preſently took. But it is probable he was not willing to engage our King any further in the Affairs betwixt himſelf and *Francis*, as thinking that he was alone too ſtrong for his Adverſary. He would alſo have gone out of Town that night, being the third after his coming; but our King uſing a courteous kind of Violence to make him ſtay, the rumour went among the Emperors ſervants, that he was detained; but the next day clear'd this; for the Emperor being conducted by our King ſome part of his way towards *Graveling*, was courteouſly bid farewel, and preſented with a brave Courſer richly trapped. The *French* King hearing of theſe kind Paſſages, and remembring particularly that *Charles*, by his firſt Agreement, had conſtituted our King, Arbiter of all emergent Differences, took this Interview extremely ill; and the rather for that he heard ſome muttering of a Match propoſed by the Lady *Margaret*, betwixt the Emperor and the Princeſs *Mary*, though a Child. Which yet was a miſtake, it being not treated of ſeriouſly (as the *Spaniſh* Writers have it) till near two years after; and not before the *French* had both broken the common League, and given new provocations by their Practices in *Scotland*. Our King having now no more to do at *Calais*, took the firſt fair Wind, and, with all his Train, came ſafely into *England*. 1520.

I ſhall return now to the buſineſs of *Luther*, whom *Leo* cited to *Rome*, 1518. giving * order alſo to Cardinal *Cajetan* his Legate in *Germany*, to oppoſe his Doctrine, not omitting Letters to this purpoſe, both to *Frederick* Duke of *Saxony*, and to the Superiour of the *Auguſtines* in *Germany*. Whereupon *Cajetan*, in divers Conferences at the Diet of *Ausburg*, labours to convert him, but in vain. At laſt *Luther*, being threatned by *Cajetan* in the Popes name, he appeals to him, in the form uſual in theſe Caſes, *tanquam à Pontifice minus edocto ad eundem rectius edocendum*; but deſires withal, he might anſwer for himſelf in *Germany*, and that caution might be given for his Safety; ſince, what was controverted by him, did not appear as yet to be poſitively defin'd any way by the Church. *Leo*, this while, to make good his Authority, *grants new Indulgences, which no man ſhould reject unleſs he would be Excommunicate, &c.* *Luther* finding thus no hope of alteration, and beſides, that he was branded with the name of Heretick, *appeals from

* Aug. 23. 1518.

Sleid. 1518. Octob. 19.

1518. * Nov. 11. *Sleid. C. l. 1.* 1518. * Nov. 28.

1520. from *Leo* to a general Council; yet writes to the Pope, (1519.)
1519. a very ſubmiſs Letter, wherein he proteſts; That he never intended
March 3. to fall away from the Church. That all he ſaid, was chiefly intended againſt thoſe who abuſed the power of *Indulgences*; concerning which therefore he would ſpeak no more, ſo that his Adverſaries were likewiſe ſilenced; briefly, that he would omit nothing which might conſerve Peace in Religion.

Maximilian dying about this time, *Luther* had ſome Reſpite. Mens eyes being turned more on him, who was to ſucceed *Maximilian*, than any other Argument. Beſides, he ſeemed now unwilling any longer to diſpute the Popes Authority, to which his Adverſaries enviouſly reduced all the controverted points. Yet as *Ulricus Zuinglius* appeared about this time at *Zurich*, to conſent with *Luther* in many things, and that a Letter of *Eraſmus* alſo dated, 1519. did much encourage him, ſo he began to recover force. That of *Eraſmus* (extant *lib. 6. Epiſtol.*) telling him he had ſome Favourers in the *Low-Countries*, but many in *England*, and among them divers principal Perſons; that yet he ſhould do well to uſe Modeſty and Diſcretion; Chriſt having thereby both inſtituted his Doctrine, and his Apoſtle *Paul* deſtroyed the *Jewiſh* Law, only by referring the Doctrine and Precepts contained therein unto *Allegory*. That he ſhould do well to ſpeak againſt thoſe rather who abuſed the Papal Authority, than againſt the Pope himſelf. In concluſion, that he ſhould take heed of doing any thing out of Anger, Hate, or Vain-Glory. *Philip Melanchthon* alſo, a Learned, Pious, and Charitable Man, did many ways ſecond *Luther*. Concerning all whom, and many more famous Scholars, who lived at that time, it may be obſerved, that had they agreed among themſelves, and not ambitiouſly affected Singularity in ſome one Point or other, they might have found more Followers of their Doctrine, and conſequently have oblig'd the Pope, either to cut off ſome points as ſuperfluous, or to have recommended them with more Indifferency to the People. Howſoever all theſe Perſons concurring with *Luther* in great part, gave him that courage, that whereas at firſt he diſputed chiefly concerning Purgatory, true Penitence (or Penance) the Office or Duty of Charity, and Indulgences and Pardons, he began now to queſtion the Popes Authority, Images in Churches, the Celibate of Prieſts, and ſome other points tending hereunto. As this yet got him great Fame, ſo it procur'd him many Enemies; before whom that he might give an Account of his Doctrine, he comes to a Conference at *Leipſick*,

Sleid.

1519. 1519. accompanied with *Philip Melanchthon*, where *John Eccius*
July 4. oppos'd him, deſiring to begin his Diſputation at the Popes Authority; but *Luther*, conceiving this was to make him odious, labours to decline the Queſtion; for the reſt, thinking fit only to ſend un-
April 6. to the Pope; to whom, about the beginning of 1520. he writes to this effect. That though he appeal'd from him heretofore to a General

General Council, it was not with an ill mind, as having in his continual Prayers ſolicited the Almighty for him. That he could not deny himſelf to be ſharp and cenſorious enough, when offence was given; yet that he ever thought well of his Holineſs in particular, only it grieved him that he lived in ſo wicked a Court as that of his at *Rome*, which he ſaid was now become another *Babylon* or *Sodom*; that he being amidſt ſuch People as a Lamb amongſt Wolves, it were pity he ſhould any longer reſide there. That it were better for him therefore to leave all, and deſcend to ſome ſimple Parſonage or Living, or otherwiſe to maintain himſelf with what he had gotten already, than to hazard himſelf to ſuch Peſtilences and Infections. That, in this Advice, he did but imitate *Bernard*, who did deplore the eſtate of *Eugenius*, when *Rome* was far purer than at this day. In Concluſion he recommends to him his late Book, Entituled, *De Libertate Chriſtiana*. But, whatſoever *Luther*'s Advice was, I cannot believe him ſo ſimple, as to ſuppoſe his Words had either the power of Spells to call the Pope from his Seat, or that Tenderneſs of Conſcience to live among wicked Perſons, was enough to make him forſake, together with his Charge, all his Dignities and Honours; therefore I believe he meant this, as the Pope himſelf underſtood it, only for a Paſquil or Satyr; which made him alſo aſſemble the Cardinals, and conſult with them herein, who all condemned *Luther*; yet not ſo, but it was wiſh'd by ſome, a Reformation of divers Abuſes had either preceded *Luther*'s Admonition, or at leaſt accompanied it at that time, when in humble and modeſt terms he ſubmitted himſelf to the Church. That their arrogating Supreme Power in Temporal things, had made divers Princes diſaffect their Government, who yet embraced their Doctrine. That, therefore, it was not ſafe to ſuffer them to have an Author for deſerting the Church, who had already ſought occaſions for it in the late Council of *Piſa*, and elſewhere: neither was it a good Argument, to ſay that *Luther* was a dangerous Perſon; ſince, the more hurt he could do, the leſs he was to be forced to extremities; as having betwixt his Wit and Favourers, enough to trouble all things: Briefly, that, to avoid his venomous Doctrine, the beſt way was not to urge him to caſt it forth, but rather (if it could be done handſomly) to quiet him by beſtowing ſome Eccleſiaſtical Preferment. But ſo haughty were the major part of the ſpirits in this Aſſembly, that rejecting this politick Advice, they condemned *Luther*'s Books to the Fire; but *Luther* growing hereupon but more fierce, was at length Excommunicated, and his Books burnt. He on the other ſide, ſtriving to revenge this, at *Wittenberg* in a full Aſſembly of Scholars burns *the Book called *Jus Pontificium*; warning men beſides to take heed of the Papal Government and Doctrines, appealing again to a General Council. *Charles*, underſtanding theſe Paſſages, was much troubled, as foreſeeing the following Diſſenſions. Nevertheleſs,

1520.

Sleid. l. 2.

1512.

June 15.

*Dec. 10.

1521. theleſs, he tempered buſineſſes ſo, as he held the Pope thereby in ſome ſuſpence; Therefore he would not precipitate his Sentence againſt *Luther*, or ſo much as cenſure him, till he were publickly heard. For which purpoſe (after his being Crown'd ſolemnly at *Aix*,) He aſſembled a Diet at **Worms*, whither he called *Luther*, giving him a Safe-Conduct alſo, to go and return. Whereupon *Luther* * came in his Friers Habit, but refuſing to retract his Opinions, he and his Favourers were * proſcribed by Decree or Edict.

* Octob. 23.
* Jan. 6. 15[illegible]1.
* April 16.
* May 8.

Howbeit, as this did rather puniſh than convince him; Our King (being at leiſure now from Wars, and for the reſt delighting much in Learning) thought he could not give better proof either of his Zeal or Education, than to write againſt *Luther*. To this alſo he was exaſperated, for that *Luther* had oftentimes ſpoken contemptuouſly of the Learned *Thomas* of *Aquine*, who yet was ſo much in requeſt with the King, and eſpecially the Cardinal, that (as *Polydore* hath it) he was therefore called *Thomiſticus*. Our King hereupon compiles a Book, wherein he ſtrenuouſly oppoſes *Luther* in the point of Indulgences, Number of Sacraments, the Papal Authority, and other particulars, to be ſeen in that his Work, Entituled, *De Septem Sacramentis*; a principal Copy whereof, richly bound, being ſent to *Leo*, I remember my ſelf to have ſeen in the *Vatican Library*. The manner of delivery whereof (as I find it in our *Record) was thus; Doctor *John Clark*, Dean of *Windſor*, our Kings Ambaſſador, appearing in full Conſiſtory, the Pope, knowing the glorious Preſent he brought, firſt gave him his Foot, and then his Cheeks to kiſs; then receiving the Book, he promiſed to do as much for Approbation thereof to all Chriſtian Princes (which our King much deſired) as ever was done for Saint *Auguſtine*'s or Saint *Hierome*'s Works; aſſuring him withal, that the next Conſiſtory he would beſtow a Publick Title on our King: which having been *heretofore privately debated among the Cardinals, and thoſe of *Protector*, or *Defenſor Romanæ Eccleſiæ*, or *Sedis Apoſtolicæ*, or *Rex Apoſtolicus*, or *Orthodoxus*, produced, they at laſt agreed on *DEEFNSOR FIDEI*. A Tranſcript of which Bull (out of an Original *ſub Plumbo* in our Records) I have here inſerted.

Octob. 10.

* 1515. 1516.

LEO

1521.

LEO Episcopus, Servus Servorum Dei, Charissimo in Christo Filio, Henrico Angliæ Regi, Fidei Defensori, Salutem & Apostolicam Benedictionem. Ex supernæ dispositionis arbitrio, licet imparibus meritis, Universalis Ecclesiæ Regimini præsidentes, ad hoc cordis nostri longe lateque diffundimus cogitatus, ut Fides Catholica, sine qua nemo proficit ad Salutem, continuum suscipiat Incrementum; & ut ea, quæ pro cohibendis conatibus illam deprimere, aut pravis mendacibusque commentis pervertere & denigrare molientium, sanâ Christi fidelium præsertim dignitate Regali fulgentium doctrinâ sunt disposita, continuis proficiant incrementis, partes nostri Ministerii & operam impendimus efficaces. Et sicut alii Romani Pontifices Prædecessores nostri Catholicos Principes, prout rerum & temporum qualitas exigebat, specialibus favoribus prosequi consueverunt, illos præsertim qui, procellosis temporibus, & rabida Schismaticorum & Hæreticorum fervente perfidia, non solùm in Fidei Serenitate & Devotione illibata, sacro-sanctæ Romanæ Ecclesiæ immobiles perstiterunt, verum etiam tanquam ipsius Ecclesiæ legitimi Filii, ac fortissimi Athletæ Schismaticorum & Hæreticorum insanis Furoribus spiritualiter & temporaliter se opposuerunt: Ita etiam nos Majestatem Tuam, propter excelsa & immortalia ejus erga nos & hanc sanctam Sedem, in qua Permissione Divinâ sedemus, opera & gesta condignis & immortalibus Præconiis & Laudibus effere desideramus, ac ea sibi concedere, propter quæ invigilare debeat, à Grege Dominico Lupos arcere, & putrida Membra, quæ Mysticum Christi Corpus inficiunt, ferro & materiali Gladio abscindere & nutantium corda Fidelium in Fidei soliditate confirmare. Sane cum nuper dilectus Filius Johannes Clarke, Majestatis Tuæ apud nos Orator, in Consistorio nostro coram Venerabilibus Fratribus nostris Sanctæ Romanæ Ecclesiæ Cardinalibus, & compluribus aliis Romanæ Curiæ Prælatis, Librum, quem Majestas Tua, Charitate quæ omnia sedulo & nihil perperam agit, Fideique Catholicæ zelo accensa,

1521. accenſa, & Devotionis erga nos & hanc ſanctam Sedem fervore inflammata contra Errores diverſorum Hæreticorum ſæpius ab hac ſancta Sede damnatos, nuperque per Martinum Lutherum ſuſcitatos & innovatos, tanquam nobile, & ſalutare quoddam Antidotum compoſuit, nobis examinandum, & deinde Authoritate noſtra approbandum obtuliſſet, ac luculenta Oratione ſua expoſuiſſet Majeſtatem Tuam paratam ac diſpoſitam eſſe, ut, quemadmodum veris Rationibus & irrefragabilibus ſacræ Scripturæ ac Sanctorum Patrum Authoritatibus, notorios Errores ejuſdem Martini Lutheri confutaverit, ita etiam omnes eos ſequi & defenſare præſumentes totius Regni viribus & armis perſequatur; Noſque ejus Libri admirabilem quandam & cœleſtis Gratiæ rore conſperſam Doctrinam diligenter accurateque introſpexiſſemus; Omnipotenti Deo, à quo omne datum optimum & omne donum perfectum eſt, immenſas gratias egimus, qui optimam & ad omne bonum inclinatam mentem tuam inſpirare, eique tantam gratiam ſuperne infundere dignatus fuit, ut ea ſcriberes, quibus ſanctam ejus fidem contra novum Errorum damnatorum hujuſmodi ſuſcitatorem defenderes, ac reliquos Reges & Principes Chriſtianos tuo exemplo invitares, ut ipſi etiam Orthodoxæ Fidei & Evangelicæ veritati in periculum & diſcrimen adductæ, omni ope ſua adeſſe opportuneque favere vellent. Æquum autem eſſe cenſentes, eos, qui pro Fidei Chriſti hujuſmodi defenſione pios labores ſuſceperunt, omni laude & honore afficere, volenteſque non ſolùm ea quæ Majeſtas Tua contra eundem Martinum Lutherum abſolutiſſima Doctrina nec minori eloquentia ſcripſit, condignis laudibus extollere ac magnificare, authoritateque noſtra approbare & confirmare, ſed etiam Majeſtatem ipſam tuam tali honore ac titulo decorare, ut noſtris ac perpetuis futuris temporibus Chriſti fideles omnes intelligant, quàm gratum acceptumque nobis fuerit Majeſtatis Tuæ Munus, hoc præſertim tempore, nobis oblatum: Nos, qui Petri, quem Chriſtus in Cœlum aſcenſurus vicarium ſuum in Terris reliquit, & cui curam gregis

gis ſui commiſit, veri Succeſſores ſumus, & in hac ſancta ſede, qua omnes dignitates ac tituli emanant, ſedemus, habita ſuper his cum eiſdem fratribus noſtris matura deliberatione, de eorum unanimi conſilio & aſſenſu, Majeſtati tuæ titulum hunc, (*viz.*) Fidei Defenſorem donare decrevimus, prout Te tali titulo per præſentes inſignimus; mandantes omnibus Chriſti fidelibus, ut Majeſtatem tuam hoc titulo nominent, &, cum ad eam ſcribent, poſt dictionem, *Regi*, adjungant, *Fidei Defenſori*. Et profectò, hujus tituli excellentia & dignitate ac ſingularibus meritis tuis diligenter perpenſis & conſideratis, nullum neque dignius neque Majeſtati tuę convenientius nomen excogitare potuiſſemus: quod quoties audies & leges, toties proprię virtutis optimique meriti tui recordaberis; nec hujuſmodi titulo intumeſces vel in ſuperbiam elevaberis; ſed ſolita tua prudentia humilior, & in fide Chriſti, ac devotione hujus ſanctę ſedis à quâ exaltatus fueris, fortior & conſtantior evades, ac in Domino bonorum omnium largitore lętaberis, perpetuum hoc & immortale glorię tuę monumentum poſteris tuis relinquere, illiſque viam oſtendere, ut, ſi tali titulo ipſi quoque inſigniri optabunt, tali etiam opera efficere prędaraque Majeſtatis tuę veſtigia ſequi ſtudeant; quam prout de nobis & dicta ſede optimè merita eſt, unà cum uxore ac filiis ac omnibus qui à te & ab illis naſcentur, noſtra benedictione, in nomine illius à quo illam concedendi poteſtas nobis data eſt, largâ & liberali manu benedicentes, Altiſſimum illum, qui dixit, per me Reges Regnant, & Principes imperant, & in cujus manu corda ſunt Regum, rogamus & obſecramus, ut eam in ſuo ſancto propoſito confirmet, ejuſque devotionem multiplicet, ac prędaris pro ſancta fide geſtis ita illuſtret, ac toti Orbi terrarum conſpicuam reddat, ut judicium quod de ipſa fecimus eam tam inſigni titulo decorantes, à nemine falſum aut vanum judicari poſſit; demùm, Mortalis hujus vitæ finito curriculo, ſempiternę illius glorię conſortem atque participem reddat. 1521.

1521. Dat. Romę apud Sanctum Petrum, Anno incarnationis Dominicę Milleſimo Quingenteſimo Viceſimo Primo. Quinto Id. Octobris, Pontificatus noſtri Anno Nono.

+ *Ego Leo X. Catholicæ Eccleſiæ Epiſcopus ſs.*
Ego P. tt. S. Euſebii Presb. Cardinalis ſs.
Ego A. tt. Sanctæ Mariæ in Tranſtiberim Presb. Cardinalis Bonon. ſs.
Ego Lau^s. Scop^um. quatuor Coronatorum Presb. Cardinalis ma^n. propr^a. ſs.
&c. (24 *alii Cardinales.*

Such was the covetouſneſs of the Richer ſort at this time in *England*, that they converted many large Corn-fields into Paſture; hereof enſued a general decay not only of Houſes, but of perſons, which ſhould do their King and Country ſervice. Beſides, Sheep, Cattel, and Cloths being thus within the hands of a few, the price was much enhanced. To remedy this miſchief, the King cauſed the ancient Statutes, provided on that behalf, to be looked into. And accordingly directed his commiſſion to the Juſtices of Peace, to reſtore all the Tillage ground that had been encloſed any time within fifty years laſt paſt, and to cauſe the Houſes anciently upon them to be re-edified; yet (as *Polydore* hath it) divers by compounding ſecretly with the Cardinal, exempted themſelves.

About this time *Edward Stafford* Duke of *Buckingham*, eminent for his high Blood, and large Revenue, drew on himſelf a dangerous ſuſpicion; which though it was again fomented by the Cardinal, who diſaffected him for ſome ſpeeches he had caſt forth, yet, could not have overthrown him, but that ſome indiſcretion of his own concurred. Beſides, he ſuffered much through the ill offices of *Charles Knevet*, formerly mentioned; who yet durſt not appear, till he ſaw the Duke not only diſcountenanced, but weakned in his Friends and Allies. And of theſe I find two principally. One, *Henry Piercy* Earl of *Northumberland*, whoſe Daughter the Duke had married; the other *Thomas* Earl of *Surrey*, who had married the Dukes Daughter. Againſt *Northumberland*, cauſe was taken for claiming certain Wards; which, after cloſe commitment, yet, he was forced to relinquiſh. Againſt *Surrey* the Cardinal proceeded otherwiſe. For, though he hated him for drawing his Dagger at him on ſome occaſion; yet as the Earl was more wary than to give new offence, he thought fit to ſend him away upon ſome honourable imployment, for which he found this Overture.

Gerald

Gerald Fitz-Gerald, Earl of *Kildare*, made Deputy in *Ireland* to *Henry* Duke of *York*, (now King, who at *four years old was by his Father made Lieutenant of that Country) having done divers good ſervices againſt Rebels, was made *Knight of the Garter, and enjoyed that place till his *death; when his Son *Gerald* being ſubſtitute therein, ſo behaved himſelf, as he likewiſe got much credit: though, as he had the Houſe of *Ormond* his Enemy, and particularly Sir *Pierce Butler* Earl of *Oſſory*, ſecret ill-offices were done him; Nor did it avail, that he had given his Siſter in Marriage to the ſaid *Butler*, and help'd him to recover the Earldom of *Ormond*, detained wrongfully ſince the death of *James*, by a Baſtard of that Family; For it was impoſſible to oblige him; eſpecially, where he found ſo advantageous an occaſion to diſſent. For as he watch'd over the Earl of *Deſmond* his perpetual adverſary, ſince the diviſion of *Lancaſter* and *York*, (in which his Anceſtors were on the ſide of *Lancaſter*, and the *Kildares* and *Deſmonds* on that of *York*,) he diſcovered more favours done the preſent Earl of *Deſmond*, (whom he called a Traytor) than he thought due to him; Inſomuch that he complain'd to the Cardinal, who thereupon ſent for *Kildare*. Though *Polydore* ſaith, he came voluntarily into *England* to match with ſome *Engliſh* Lady, and there behaved himſelf ſo unreſpectfully to the Cardinal, that he was caſt into Priſon. But whatſoever the cauſe was, his charge was beſtowed on the Earl of *Surrey*, who going to *Ireland* in *April*, 1520. reduced the Earl of *Deſmond* and others to obedience.

1521.

Camp. Hiſt. of *Ireland*.
*1495.
*1504.
*1513.

Campion. Hiſt. *Irel.*

1520.

1520. April.

The Duke of *Buckingham* being thus expoſed and unfriended, the Cardinal treats ſecretly with *Knevet*, concerning him; who thereupon diſcovers his late Maſters life; Confeſſing that the Duke, by way of diſcourſe, was accuſtomed to ſay, how he meant ſo to uſe the matter, that, if King *Henry* died without Iſſue, he would attain the Crown, and that he would puniſh the Cardinal. Beſides, that he had ſpoken hereof unto *George Nevil* Lord *Abergavenny*, who married the ſaid Dukes Daughter. By what means yet the Duke intended particularly to effect theſe deſigns, I do not find exactly ſet down by *Charles Knevet*. Neither do the Authors who write hereof, relate his Pedigree. Only our Heralds ſay, he was deſcended from *Anne Plantagenet*, Daughter of *Thomas* of *Woodſtock*, Son to King *Edward* the Third. How far this yet might entitle him to the Crown in caſe King *Henry* ſhould have no Iſſue, I have neither leiſure nor diſpoſition to examin. I ſhall only therefore, for ſatisfaction of the Reader, ſelect ſome principal points out of his Accuſation; leaving the Reader, for the reſt, unto the ſearch of the Record: In which, the points that in my opinion made moſt againſt the Duke, were; Firſt, That at (*a*) ſeveral times he had ſent to one *Hopkins* a Monk in the Priory of *Henton*, to be informed by him, concerning the matters he imagi-

(*a*) 1512. April 24. & July 22. & 1513. April 26. & 1517. July 20.

1521. ned; and that the Monk ſhould return anſwer, The Duke ſhould have all; and therefore ſhould labour to procure the love of the people. 2. That the Duke (*b*) afterwards ſhould go in Perſon to the ſaid *Hopkins*, who confirmed the ſaid Prediction, adding, that he knew it by Revelation. Whereupon the ſaid Duke ſhould give him ſeveral Rewards. 3. That he ſhould (*c*) ſpeak to *Ralph Nevil*, Earl of *Weſtmorland*; (his Son-in-law) that, if ought but good come to the King, the Duke of *Buckingham* ſhould be next in Blood to the Crown, the King having as yet no Iſſue. That, to comply herewith, he did many things which argued Ambition, and deſire to make himſelf popular. That he (*d*) ſaid to one *Gilbert*, his Chancellor, that whatſoever was done by the Kings Father, was done by wrong; murmuring withal againſt the preſent Government. 4. That he (*e*) ſaid to *Charles Knevet*, if he had been committed to the Tower, (whereof he was in danger upon occaſion of one Sir *William Bulmer*) he would have ſo wrought that the principal doers thereof ſhould not have cauſe of great rejoycing. For he would have play'd the part which his Father intended to have put in practice againſt King *Richard* the Third at *Salisbury*, who made earneſt ſuit to come into the preſence of the ſaid King; which ſuit if he might have obtained, he having a Knife ſecretly about him, would have thruſt it into the body of King *Richard*, as he had made ſemblance to kneel down before him. And that, in ſpeaking theſe words, he maliciouſly laid hands on his Dagger; ſwearing, that, if he were ſo evil us'd, he would do his beſt to accompliſh his intended purpoſe. 5. That * being in ſpeech with Sir *George Nevil*, Knight, Lord *Abergavenny*, he ſaid, that if the King died, he would have the Rule of the Realm, in ſpight of whoſoever ſaid the contrary; ſwearing, that if the Lord *Abergavenny* reveal'd this, he would fight with him. This I conceive to be the ſubſtance of the moſt ſpecial Articles in his Accuſation; which the curious Reader yet may do well to conſider more at large, as they are extant on Record. How far yet theſe particulars were proved, and in what ſort, my Authors deliver not. Only I find (out of our Records) that the Duke of *Buckingham* being committed to the Tower, *April* 16. did under his own hand declare to Sir *Thomas Lovel* Conſtable of the Tower, the paſſages betwixt him and *Hopkins*, in this manner: That is to ſay, that the Summer before our King made War in *France*, *Hopkins* ſent for him; but, not being able to go, he commanded one *Delacour*, his Chaplain, to repair thither; howbeit, that *Hopkins* ſaid nought to him; yet that himſelf came the next * Lent; where, in Shrift, the ſaid Monk told him, that our King ſhould win great honour in his Journey to *France*; and that if the King of *Scots* came to *England* then, he ſhould never go home again. And that, when he asked *Hopkins* how he knew this, he ſaid *ex Deo habeo*: And that *Hopkins* demanding afterward, what Children

(*b*) 1515. April 16.

(*c*) $15\frac{18}{19}$. March 20.

(*d*) Feb. 20. $15\frac{14}{15}$.

(*e*) Feb. 20. $15\frac{12}{26}$.

* 1519. Sept. 10.

April 16.

1512.

* 1513.

dren the King had, He told the number; and that *Hopkins* ſhould ſay thereupon, I pray God his Iſſue continue; for that he feared God was not contented, becauſe he made no reſtitution according to his Fathers Will, charging the Duke further to adviſe the King's Council to make reſtitution. Further, that he told his Chancellor thoſe words, and at his return out of *France*, came to *Hopkins* again, and ſaid, he had told him true: Alſo, that (another time) he came to *Hopkins*, together with his Son *Stafford*, and the Earl of *Weſtmorland* and that *Hopkins* asked who he was, and thereupon ſhould ſay, that ſome of his Blood or name ſhould prove Great Men. And that, after this, *Hopkins* ſhould ſend to the Duke, to pray him, according to his promiſe, to help their Houſe (being at *Henton* in *Somerſetſhire*) to make their Conduit; the ten pounds, formerly given by him, being ſpent. And more than this he confeſs'd not. Notwithſtanding which, when the Indictment was openly read, the Duke ſaid it was falſe, untrue, conſpir'd, and forg'd, to bring him to his death; alledging (as he was an eloquent Perſon) many reaſons to falſifie the Indictment; the Kings Attorney on the other ſide, producing the Examinations, Confeſſions, and proofs of witneſſes. The Duke hereupon deſired the witneſſes which were *Knevet*, *Gilbert*, *Delacour*, and *Hopkins* to be brought forth. Theſe confirming their Depoſitions, the Duke was tryed by his Peers, (being a Duke, a Marqueſs, ſeven Earls, and twelve Barons) before the Duke of *Norfolk*, who was for the time made Lord High Steward of *England*. They condemning him, the Duke of *Norfolk* delivered his ſentence, not without Tears. To which he replyed, My Lord of *Norfolk*, you have ſaid as a Traytor ſhould be ſaid unto, but I was never one. But, my Lords, I nothing malign you for what you have done to me; but the Eternal God forgive you my death, and I do. I ſhall never ſue to the King for Life: Howbeit, he is a gracious Prince, and more Grace may come from him than I deſire. And ſo I deſire you, my Lords, and all my fellows, to pray for me. Whereupon he was brought back to the Tower. Where all the favour he received was a Meſſage from the King, declaring his Sentence was mitigated ſo far, that, inſtead of receiving the death of a Traytor, he ſhould have only his Head *cut off. Thus ended the Duke of *Buckingham*, much lamented by the people, (who libel'd the Cardinal for it, calling him *Carnificis filium*,) as being thought rather *Criminal* through folly and raſh words, than any intention declared by overt Act againſt the King's Perſon; and therefore not uncapable of his mercy; which alſo it was thought would not have been denied, had he ſued for it in fitting terms. But ſince at his Arraignment, he did, as it were, diſclaim his life, the King would not obtrude it; and therefore only cauſed a Letter of comfort to be written to the Dutcheſs, and Lord *Stafford*. Yet the *Tragedy* ended not ſo; for though *George* Lord *Abergavenny*, after

1521.

Hall. *Hollinſhead.*

E. Hall.

May 13.

May 17.

1521. ter a few months Impriſonment, was, through the Kings favour, delivered; yet *Hopkins*, after a ſerious repentance that he had been an Author of ſo much miſchief, died of grief. And here I muſt obſerve that together with this Duke, that great place of High-Conſtable of *England* remains extinguiſh'd, unleſs ſome extraordinary occaſion revive it.

I ſhall return here to ſpeak of *Charles* the Fifth, who having, as is ſaid, kept a Diet at *Worms*, did now Levy Forces. And the rather, becauſe he heard War was intended againſt him by *Solyman*; who, being a Martial Prince, and Crowned the very ſame day at *Conſtantinople*, that *Charles* was at *Aix*, ſeemed to have ſomewhat of the ſame Aſcendant; however they differ'd in their Intereſts. Beſides, it was obſerved, that as *Charles* the Fifth was the eleventh Emperor from *Albertus*, in whoſe time the Houſe of the *Ottomans* began; ſo *Sueliman* (or *Solyman*) was the eleventh Prince of his Race. Howſoever, on their occaſion much of their Subjects Blood was ſpilt, and more would have been, had not *Francis* turned the Arms of *Charles* upon himſelf. The Cauſes of diſſention betwixt *Charles* and *Francis*, were; Firſt, That *Claude* Eldeſt Daughter of *Loüis* the Twelfth and *Anne* of *Bretaigne*, having by a ſolemn * Treaty been accorded to *Charles*, *Francis* yet * obtain'd her, and thereby eluded his hopes of *Bretaigne*. Secondly, their mutual Ambition for the Empire. Thirdly, ill-Offices done by their Courtries betwixt them. Fourthly, but chiefly, the incompatibility of their demands for their Ancient Right; whereof I find theſe moſt urged. Homage for *Flanders*, and *Artois*, required by *Francis*, as being held anciently of the Crown of *France*; which *Charles* yet refuſed, ſaying, that, ſince that Eſtate was devolved to an Emperor, it was in a higher dignity, than could be ſubmitted to any Inferior. But to this again *Francis* replied, that it derogated from no body to give what was due. Beſides, that the Title of a King was greater and more Auguſt than that of an Emperor; both as the power is more abſolute in it ſelf, and that it depends not on the Election of others; for which purpoſe a paſſage was alledged out of *Matt. Paris*, when the Empire having been offered to *Robert*, Brother of *Saint Loüis*, the Council of State refus'd it, for this reaſon; ſaying further, it was enough that *Robert* was Brother to ſo great a King. For which Cauſe alſo, the *French* obſerve, that none ever aſpir'd to it of the Line of the *Capets*, but *Francis*. Again, they differ'd about *Milan*, of which *Loüis* the Twelfth having gotten the * Inveſtiture, *Francis* did in purſuit of his Right, expel * *Maximilian Sforza*; whoſe Brother and Succeſſor yet was protected by *Charles*, and reinplaced. Moreover, the Dutchy of *Burgundy* was queſtioned by *Charles*. For though *Loüis* the Eleventh had united it to his Crown, and that, for Title thereunto, it was alledged, that *John* King of *France* had given it to his younger Son *Philip*, to hold to him and his Heirs Males

* 1501. * 1514. May 18. 1519.

* 1500. * 1515.

Males only; and that *Charles* laſt Duke of *Burgundy*, having but one only Daughter, it therefore reverted; yet *Charles* underſtanding the buſineſs otherwiſe, claimed it by a long Succeſſion of his Anceſtors in *Burgundy*. Theſe ſo many pretences on either ſide engaged the two Princes into perpetual Wars, which began this year. For *Francis*, inſiſting ſtill upon the Treaty of *Noyon*, prepared to recover *Navarre*; And to this he thought the Communidadoes or Inſurrections in *Spain* (begun 1519. and continued ſtill) would conduce. For as the people held their *Junto* or Aſſembly for redreſs of their grievances, he conceived ſome might be drawn to his party. But he was deceiv'd; for they mutined not for his ſake, but their own, as appeared; pretending for their chief grievances only, that their King lived in foreign parts, and tranſported their Money for his occaſions there, and beſtowed divers great Places in *Spain* on ſtrangers. So that, though they continued their demands with much inſolency and boldneſs, they perſiſted nevertheleſs in their love to their Prince and Country, without admitting a Treaty with *Francis*. All which yet could not preſerve them. For, though they proceeded with more ſobriety and correſpondence, than hath been obſerved in any popular Inſurrections, (as *Sandoval* relates it at large) they were divided at laſt, and overthrown by the name of Rebels; Their Actions being ſo bad and dangerous, as their intentions could not excuſe them. Howſoever, *Francis* thought fit to make uſe of this occaſion, and therefore, before their Defeat, he Levied Forces; and, not long after, ſent *Andre de Foix*, *Seigneur de Aſperrant*, and Brother of the famous *Lautrech*, to *Navarre*. Where a War began, that, in divers places, laſted 38 years following (as *Sandoval* obſerves it) and coſt the lives of above five hundred thouſand men; the *French* ſpeak of a far greater number. Their firſt Progreſs was happy; for, in leſs than 15 days, they took *Navarre*. But as they would go further to *Catalaunia*, and beſiege *Logronno* (or *Groyne*,) The *Spaniſh* Commanders, attended now with many of the Communidadoes, gave Battel and overthrew them, taking *de Foix* Priſoner: whereupon alſo *Navarre* was regained in leſs time than it was loſt, and *Pampelona* thenceforth better fortified. But not on this part only did the *French* ſhew their *Mal-Talent*, but diſcover'd it on this occaſion alſo towards another Coaſt. The Prince of *Chimay* conteſting in Law with the *Seigneur d' Aymeries* concerning a Caſtle or Town in the Forreſt of *Ardenne*, and County of *Luxemburgh*, call'd *Hierge*, gain'd his cauſe by the judgment of the Peers of the Dutchy of *Boüillon*, who determined buſineſſes in chief; and accordingly enjoyed poſſeſſion thereof, for many years. Howbeit *Aymeries* (being not contented herewith) appealed to the Chancellor of *Brabant*, and prevail'd ſo far; that the Heirs of *Chimay* were ſummon'd to give account of their Title unto the Emperor. But, becauſe the Sovereignty of *Robert de la Mark*, *Duc de*

1521.

1516.

March.

1521. *de Boüillon*, was moſt concern'd herein, they, for their beſt refuge, made complaint to him; he again addreſſeth himſelf to the Emperor, and remonſtrates his right: yet, finding the cauſe of *Aymeries* likely to prevail, ſecretly Treats with *Francis*, for aſſiſtance and protection. Being aſſur'd hereof, he (though a ſmall Prince) ſends a publick Defiance to *Charles*, being then at the Diet in *Worms*. The Emperor, judging quickly from whence this audaciouſneſs proceeded, prepares for War. Neither wanted he a ſeeming occaſion. For though he ever ſuſpected that *Robert de la Mark*, (as one who had ſerv'd heretofore the *French* in *Italy*,) had his chief dependance on *Francis*; yet now being inform'd that *Fleuranges* (Son unto the ſaid *Robert de la Mark*) having rais'd in *France* about three thouſand Foot and four hundred Horſe, (all Voluntiers) had beſieged *Vireton*, a little place in *Luxemburgh*, appertaining to the Emperor; he nothing doubted, but that the *French* had aſſiſted him herein. Howbeit, *Francis*, conſidering it was not convenient to begin a War ſo near home, and beſides, being adviſed by our King to keep the Peace, ſignifies his diſlike to *Fleuranges*, who thereupon *diſmiſs'd his Forces. Notwithſtanding which, *Charles* commands *Henry* Count of *Naſſaw* to go with an Army againſt *Robert de la Mark*, not omitting withal to diſpatch an Ambaſſador to *Francis*, with Inſtructions, to proteſt, that *Francis* had firſt broken the Treaty of 1518. by aiding *Robert de la Mark*. He ſent word to our King alſo of this proceeding. Who taking the matter into conſideration, pronounced ſentence againſt *Francis*, as the firſt Infractor of their Tripartite Leage: which being maturely pondred by *Francis*, (who knew well, how much it concern'd him not to provoke our King, who (by an expreſs Article of the ſaid Treaty) was to fall on the firſt that contraven'd) made him afterwards excuſe the matter, and undertake that *Robert* ſhould deſiſt from Hoſtility. This was not yet ſo accepted by *Charles*, as to delay the ſending of his Army, under *Henry de Naſſaw* (and not *Franciſco Sichino* as *Jovius* hath it) to ſeiſe on the Dominions of *Robert*, who accordingly took divers places. But *Robert* going to the Emperor hereupon, obtain'd a Truce for ſix weeks, *Henry* of *Naſſaw* in the mean time putting Garriſons in the places he had won.

Bellay.
* March 22.

Octob. 2. 1518.

The Emperor yet, and *Francis* Levying great Forces, our King takes notice hereof, and offers *Woolſey*, as his Lieutenant, to Compoſe their differences. Howbeit *Woolſey* was not thought by *Francis* a competent Judg; both as ſome jealouſies had paſt formerly betwixt our King and him (as is above related,) and that he knew *Woolſey* depended wholly upon *Charles* for the Papacy. Therefore he not only declin'd (as much as he could) the Arbitrement of *Woolſey*; but ſhortly after diſpatch'd the Duke of *Albany* into *Scotland*. Howſoever, *Woolſey* came, *Auguſt* 2. 1521. to *Calais*, and treated of an accommodation; not neglecting together

Record. *de Serres.*

Aug. 2.

ther to write to *Charles*, to make no Peace with *Francis* during the Treaty. And I doubt not but our King did gladly arbitrate this buſineſs; both as it argued his Authority, and gave him means to chuſe his friend, when otherwiſe he could not reconcile them. Upon the part of *Francis* came the Chancellor of *France* (*Antoine du Prat*) *John de Selve*, and *Monſieur de Paliſſe Mareſchal* of *France*, with four hundred Horſe. The Emperor not failing on his part likewiſe to ſend Condign Agents, being *Mercurinus Conde de Gattinara* his Chancellor, and *Monſieur de Berghes*, and others. The Pope had likewiſe a particular and conceal'd *Nuntio* there, being *Hieronymo de Ghinnuciis* Biſhop of *Aſcoli*; though, as he pretended to be without Authority, his buſineſs it ſeem'd was for the preſent rather to eſpy and obſerve the proceedings there, than to advance the Peace, as did appear afterwards. Many things were repreſented to the Cardinal on both ſides. The Emperor demanded, among other things, Reſtitution of the Dutchy of *Burgundy* and abolition of the homage he owed to the Crown of *France* for the *Low-Countreys*. *Francis* again not only refuſed this, but requir'd that *Navarre* might be reſtor'd to *Henry* Son of King *John*; and a Penſion of one hundred thouſand Ducats paid him for the Kingdom of *Naples*, according to the former Contract at *Noyon*. But to this again *Charles* his Minority was alledged as an excuſe; though a weak one in Princes; they being not conſidered under the notion of their Age but Dignity. Furthermore, *Charles* grounded his Title to *Naples* by his Mother Queen *Joane*, Daughter and Heir of *Ferdinand*, ſo that to have paid this money would have weakned his Claim; and for *Navarre*, it was too commodious for him to leave it; eſpecially when he thought *Francis* did no leſs in with-holding *Burgundy*. Howſoever, that *Francis* himſelf had firſt broken the ſaid Treaty of *Noyon*, by protecting the Duke of *Gueldres*, an Antient Enemy of the Houſe of *Flanders*. And for the abolition of homage, the *French* Chancellor on the other ſide, particularly ſaid, it was not the work of a Treaty, but a Petition, and therefore not to be handled at this time, when there was queſtion of right only. Beſides this, the Dutchy of *Milan* bred no little altercation among them. In concluſion, their demands were ſo obſtinate, and minds ſo averſe from Peace on either ſide, that the Cardinal could or would do no good. Hereunto, alſo, did concur a cloſe and private convention betwixt *Leo* and *Charles*, mediated by the *Nuntio*; and a confidence that *Charles* had, (by the Cardinal's mean's) that, in caſe of rupture, our King would incline to him, as having more pretence to his antient Dominions of *France* than to any thing in the *Low-Countreys*. Again, *Charles* renew'd his promiſe to give him his beſt aſſiſtance to be elected Pope, when *Leo* ſhould dye; which prevailed more than any other gift. Although (to uſe *Polydore*'s words) ſpeaking of both Princes, at this time, *Uterque ejus favorem certatim largitionibus*

1521.

Dupleix.

1521. *largitionibus quæritabat.* This hope of the Papacy therefore comforted our Cardinal, now it was likely he ſhould loſe one of his cuſtomers.

The King of *Hungary* at this time, finding that *Solyman* (who inherited his Father's malice) did much gain upon Chriſtendom (as having lately gotten *Belgrade* in *Hungary*) and knowing there was no way to defend himſelf, without an Union betwixt Chriſtian Princes, ſends an Ambaſſador, ſo opportunely, as to find our Cardinal at *Calais*, Treating of this Univeral Peace. But ſuch was the animoſity of theſe two great Princes, that the pious conſideration of repelling the *Turk* could not prevail with them. So that the Cardinal, by this time, finding ſmall hope of reconciliation, advertis'd our King thereof, and crav'd his reſolution; unto which he much prepar'd him by giving intelligence of what had paſt. To gain this ſpace alſo, he told the *French*, he would go in Perſon to *Bruges*, and negotiate by word of mouth with the Emperor. Our Cardinal departing hereupon, the Emperor met him by the way,
Aug. (a mile out of Town,) accompanying this Honour with all other demonſtrations of affection to him and our Nation. After thirteen days Treaty, and Agreement what was to be done in caſe of Rupture, (which our Cardinal perceived now would not be avoided,) he returns to *Calais*, where the *French* Ambaſſadors impatiently attended him: he doth not yet diſcover his diſpair of ſucceſs to them, and much leſs diſcloſeth his private Treaty with the Emperor, but mediates ſtill a Peace, yet ſo, as to promiſe leſs hope of it than before, ſince matters were come to ſuch extremities on both ſides.
For not only *le Seigneur de Liques*, a Subject of the Emperors, upon private quarrel with the Cardinal of *Bourbon*, had now ſurpriſed
Sept. *Amand* and *Mortaigne* in *Picardie*, and the *Bourgonians Ardres*, (which they raiſed,) But the *Count de Naſſaw* taken *Mouzon*, and beſieged *Mezietes*; which yet *Anne de Montmorency*, and *Pierce*
Octob. *de Terrail*, commonly call'd *le Chevalier Bayard*, defended, until *Francis* coming with a great Army, the Imperialiſts retired, and *Mouzon* was retaken, while the Emperor, who was at *Valenciennes*, kept himſelf more Covert than was expected; ſince *Francis* proceeded ſtill: Though as he diſcontented *Charles* Duke of *Bourbon*, who in the quality of *Conſtable de France*, thought to have the leading of the Vantguard (rather than the Duke *de Alancon*, Brother in Law to the King) an error was committed which coſt him dear, as ſhall be told in its place. Notwithſtanding which, *Woolſey*, that he might leave nothing unattempted, ſends to the Emperor the Lord of Saint *Johns*, and Sir *Thomas Bolen*, and to the
Bellay. *French* King (lying then with a great Army near *Cambray*) the Earl of *Worceſter*, and Biſhop of *Ely*; By whom he obtained that the Emperor ſhould raiſe the Siege of *Tournay*, before which his Forces now were, and that he ſhould recal his Army in the *Milaneſſe*, and that *Francis* ſhould likewiſe retire his, and the reſt ſhould be referr'd

referr'd to our King. But the taking of *Fuentarabie* by *Bonivet* intervening, *Francis* refuſed to render it, and ſo the Treaty brake off. Whereupon our Cardinal (who now had heard from our King) gives a kind of ſentence, in the buſineſs. The effect hereof was; that the *French* King being guilty of the firſt breach, our King was bound by the common Treaty to aſſiſt the Emperor; to which alſo he was the more diſpoſed becauſe the ſecret practices of the *French* in *Scotland* had diſobliged him: ſome hopes of Accommodation yet were repreſented, in caſe the Emperor and *Francis* might be reconciled; but ſmall appearance hereof being given, the Cardinal concluded a Treaty with the Emperor and Pope againſt the *French*, the Pope entring it on condition that the Emperor ſhould reſtore to him *Parma* and *Piacenza*, and aid him, afterwards, againſt the Duke of *Ferrara*. The effect of the Treaty was this. 1521. Nov. 24. Records.

Becauſe the expedition againſt the *Turk* cannot be undertaken, until the Pride and Injury of the *French* be ſuppreſſed; Therefore between the Pope, Emperor, and King of *England*, by their ſeveral Ambaſſadors, theſe following Articles are concluded. Nov. 24.

This Treaty ſhall not derogate from any former, and it ſhall extend not only to the preſent poſſeſſions of the Contrahents, but their future Acquiſitions. I.

That, when the Emperor ſhall paſs over into *Spain* to provide himſelf of men and money, and quiet his people, (which ſhall be the next Spring,) the King of *England* (upon a month's warning) ſhall give him a Convoy of Ships through the Channel, with at leaſt three thouſand fighting-men, with Artillery, *&c.* together with leave to Land at *Dover*, or *Sandwich*; And after honourable entertainment, ſhall conduct him himſelf to *Falmouth*, or ſome other ſuch place. In regard whereof, if the King of *England* ſhall have occaſion to paſs over to *France*, the Emperor ſhall do the like for him, till the charge be equal on both ſides. II.

The Contrahents ſhall declare themſelves enemies to the *French*, in *March* 1523. and by *May* ſhall be in Arms, (*viz.*) The Pope in *Italy*, with a ſtrong Army; without *Italy*, *Cenſuris Eccleſiaſticis*. Secondly, the Emperor with ten thouſand Horſe, and thirty thouſand Foot, or more, on the Confines of *Spain*; at which time the *Low-Countries* and other Dominions of the Emperor, ſhall declare themſelves Enemies to the *French*, and Commerce ceaſe. Thirdly, the King of *England* ſhall paſs the Sea, with ten thouſand Horſe and thirty thouſand Foot, or more, to invade *France* on the Coaſts next to him. And he hath liberty given to hire Horſe-men out of *Germany*, and Foot (if he will) of the Emperor's Subjects. And, if the King of *England*, upon a Battel to be fought, ſhall ſtand in need of aid, the Emperor's Lieutenant, being informed of it, ſhall (if it be poſſible) help him. III.

1521. IV. That, before the Month of *March* above-ſaid, the King of *England*, and the Emperor, ſhall by Sea infeſt the *French*, each with three thouſand fighting-men, and other Proviſions proportionable; joyning their Forces upon occaſion, and not recalling their Fleets, but by common conſent; which if they chance to be impaired by fight, or foul weather, they are to repair within a month. Neither ſhall one make any appointment, or Treaty, or Truce, with the Common Enemy, but by the conſent of the other.

V. That if, by the end of this preſent *November*, there be no Peace made, between the Pope, Emperor and King of *France*, or that the *French* King ſhall afreſh begin the War: Then the King of *England* ſhall, at the coming of the Emperor into *England*, declare himſelf Enemy to the *French*, and within a month after certifie it to the *French* King. In which caſe the Fleet prepared by the King of *England*, for the Convoy of the Emperor, after his Landing in *Spain*, ſhall, together with the Emperor's Fleet, turn themſelves againſt the *French*, ſo infeſting him by Sea. Alſo by Land each Prince ſhall have Forces againſt all Invaſion both of the *French*, and other Princes; wherein they ſhall aid one another.

VI. To facilitate theſe deſigns, as ſoon as ever the War ſhall be begun againſt the *French*, the Pope ſhall ſend out his Cenſures againſt him, ſubjecting all his Dominions to the Interdict; and calling the Secular Arm againſt him, ſhall warn the Emperor (as the Protector and advocate of the Church,) and alſo the King of *England* to War againſt him, as Enemy of the Church.

VII. That the Emperor and King of *England* take on them the Protection of the Pope, and Family of *Medices*, againſt all whatſoever. And, on the other ſide, that the Pope undertake the Protection of them with their Confederates. So that it be not permitted that one of them ſhall name for his Confederates the Enemy of the other.

VIII. The *Suiſſe* are named Confederates on all ſides, and are to be diſpoſed either to enter this League, or hold themſelves Neutral.

IX. That the Emperor and King of *England* ſhall in their Dominions, as they have begun, proceed againſt thoſe, *qui de fida Catholica male ſentire videntur*, or that ſeek to wrong the Authority of the Apoſtolick See. And that, in the Lands and Poſſeſſions which the Emperor, and King of *England* ſhall gain from the *French*, the Pope ſhall enjoy all Priviledges, Rights, and Authority, due to the See Apoſtolick.

X. That, after the War with the *French*, they ſhall invade the *Turk*.

XI. They ſhall not Treat from this time apart with any Prince in prejudice of this League.

XII. That, notwithſtanding the Emperor hath agreed Marriage with the King of *France* his Daughter; and the Dauphin with the King of *England's*, yet, for the publick good of Chriſtendom, the Emperor may Marry the Princeſs *Mary*; To which end the Pope ſhall diſpence;

dispence; seeing they are Cousin-Germans, their Mothers being two Sisters. 1521.

That this Convention shall be kept most secret, until it be published by common consent. XIII.

That the Contractors are to give their Letters Patents in confirmation of this Treaty, within three Months. XIV.

That this Agreement shall not derogate from any Treaty that hath been between the King of *England* and the Emperor; So they be not contrary to this Treaty. XV.

Thus was War resolv'd against *France*, to begin at the appointed time. In the mean while, fishing in the narrow Seas, and use of *English* Ports was allowed the *French* till *February* following. While these great affairs were in agitation, our Chroniclers observe, that the Great Seal of *England* being with the Cardinal at *Calais*, many *English* repaired to him to receive their Dispatches, and at home the constituting of Sheriffs was suspended, *&c.* which I remember the rather, because it was afterwards urg'd against him. And now all foreign businesses being done, the Cardinal *returns to *England*. Where, to magnifie his Negotiation, he presents our King with the Bull of his Title of *Defensor Fidei*, which the Pope had put into his hands, together with a * continuation of his Legatine power, only to gratifie him for his assistance against *Francis*; the King on the other side *bestowing on him the Abbacy of Saint *Albans*, towards his charges in this journey. The War thus continued, the Emperor took *Tournay*, to the no little scandal of *Francis*, who was yet obliged to continue his payments for it to our King. On the other side, *Francis* prepares an Army for *Italy*; for though the Mareschal *Thomas de Foix* (*Seigneur de Lescun*, and Brother to *Odet de Foix Seigneur de Lautrech*) had now for some time commanded *Milan*; yet as he grew odious, through his manifold oppressions, the people sought occasion to revolt. Which the Imperialists under *Ferdinand d' Avalos* Marquels of *Pescara* understanding, requir'd the Popes assistance; who, in conformity to his League, sent Forces, whereof *Prospero Colonna* was chief. His first action was the besieging of *Parma*, which *Lescun* defended, until his Brother *Lautrech* coming with an Army of twenty thousand *Suisse*, seven or eight thousand *Venetians*, besides *French*, to relieve him, the Army of the League rose, and retired. But *Lautrech* afterwards remaining idle for some few days, sixteen hundred of the *Suisse* being not well pay'd, and for the rest gained by the Cardinal *de Medicis* to the contrary party, forsook him and serv'd *Colonna*, (who thereupon marching to *Milan* (whither *Lautrech* had retired himself) took it easily, the Castle yet holding out;) howbeit *Lautrech* escaping to *Como* with four thousand *Suisse*, and some *Venetians*, and from thence to the Territories of the Republick; whereupon *Pavia* and *Parma* yielded, and *Cremona*, all save the Castle. When the *Venetians*, fearing the

Hall.

* Nov. 27.

* Aug.

* Nov. 13.

Decemb. 19.

Octob.

Nov. 23.

1521. the ſtorm might fall on themſelves, deſired *Lautrech* to depart; who being alſo forſaken of his four thouſand *Suiſſe*, got into the Caſtle of *Cremona*, and ſent his King word of the ill ſucceſs. Which the Pope alſo hearing, and being aſſured together that *Sforza* ſhould *Decemb. 1. be reſtored to *Milan*, was ſo overjoyed, that he *died thereof; (ſo can every Paſſion in his turn kill:) though ſome ſuſpected he might die of poyſon.

I will conclude this year with the invention of Muskets; which *Bellay* ſaith were firſt uſed in this War.

1522. The Cardinal of *York* finding occaſion now fair, ſends Doctor *Richard Pace*, Dean of Saint *Pauls*, to *Rome*, to eſſay if by any means it were poſſible to make him Pope. He writes alſo to *Charles*, remembring him firſt of his promiſe; next it was repreſented how unjuſt it would be in him, openly to have a Pope of his own nominating; there being ſo many buſineſſes of his to be determined in the Conſiſtory; that the particular utility which would redound to him thereby, ought not to be laid in ballance againſt the Univerſal diſhonour that both he and the whole Chriſtian Church would ſuffer in ſuch a factious and ſcandalous Election: eſpecially, when his buſineſs might be done in a more decent and ſafe way. For if the Papacy were conferred on him, his Imperial Majeſty might be confident he ſhould find the ſame faithfulneſs he had experience of in the laſt Treaty. Since therefore this was the beſt expedient for giving himſelf Reputation, and ſecuring his affairs, that he ſhould not fail herein. For as it was the place of *Henry* the Eighth to be Arbiter of Chriſtendom, it would be his to be the chief Inſtrument thereof. For which purpoſe alſo, he ſhould be ready ever to diſpoſe King *Henry* to hold good correſpondence with his Imperial Majeſty. Neither muſt he think that being Pope, he would alter his Language; it being manifeſt, that the keeping up of the Authority of *Charles* in *Italy*, was the only way to conſerve Peace in it, which our King deſired. Some of theſe reaſons alſo *Pace* was deſired to ſcatter amongſt the Cardinals at *Rome*, to whom he was charg'd to repreſent how much occaſion of Calumny, the *Lutherans* and other Enemies of their Religion would find, if an unfitting choice were made at this time. That this muſt follow if any belonging either to *Charles* or *Francis* were elected; beſides that it would make their differences irreconcileable. Or when otherwiſe the Papacy fell into the hands of one who could not uphold and maintain the Authority of the See, as an *Italian* or ſome other not ſtrongly ſupported perſon; that then it muſt become a prey to the ſtrongeſt. That the ſole way to remedy theſe inconveniences was to chuſe him, who had a King able and well affected to maintain Religion and Peace in theſe dangerous times. Our Cardinal alſo did not forget *Francis*; to whom, if not favour, yet at leaſt indifferency was promiſed, in caſe he were Pope; and that this was more than he could hope for any other

other way. But before *Pace* could come to *Rome*, *Adrian* Cardinal of *Tortoſa*, heretofore Tutor to *Charles*, and for the preſent reſiding in *Spain*, (where he had the quality of *Governador de Caſtilla*) was *choſen Pope; though not with ſuch an Univerſal conſent, but that (as I find by our Records) our Cardinal had ſometimes nine, ſometimes twelve, and ſometimes nineteen voices. *Guiccardine* ſeems much to wonder at this election, ſcurrilouſly terming him not only *Pontifice Barbaro*, becauſe he was a *Flemming*, but alledging divers other incapacities in him for that place. But the wiſer ſort did not think ſo; *Charles* having given thoſe teſtimonies of his good affection to the Peace of *Italy* (eſpecially by his generous reſtoring of *Milan* to *Franciſco Sforza*) that they nothing doubted but he would prove their beſt Patron and help for the expulſion of all ſtrangers. Howſoever, that *Adrian*, being of a moderate and calm diſpoſition, would prove no Incendiary. *Pace*, though he heard by the way that *Adrian* was choſen, yet holds on his journey, as having ſecond inſtructions to countenance his imployment, when the firſt ſucceeded not; Therefore, departing from *Rome* to *Venice* about *July* this year, he mediated a Peace betwixt *Charles* and the *Venetians*, (who had hitherto held with the *French*,) remonſtrating to them the many reaſons which they had to joyn with the Emperor and King of *England* againſt *Francis*, who had firſt broken the common Peace made 1518. wherein the ſaid State of *Venice* was compriſed, and thereby bound to fall on the Infractor thereof, *&c.* But the *Venetians*, being engaged to *Francis*, took time only to adviſe thereof.

1521.

* Jan. 9.

July.

Adrian being thus choſen, *Julio Cardinal de Medicis*, who aſpired to the Papacy, was highly diſcontented; inſomuch, that forſaking the Imperial party, he joyned himſelf with three thouſand Foot and two hundred Horſe, to the *French*: *Franciſco Matia* alſo, who (upon *Leo*'s death) had recovered *Urbin*, adhering to them. So that, with the addition of ſixteen thouſand *Suiſſe* newly levyed, and ſome Troops *Lautrech* the *Mareſchal de Foix* brought, the *French* had a conſiderable Army, with which he beſieged *Pavia*. But *Proſpero Colonna* coming with the Imperial Forces to relieve it, *Lautrech* raiſing the Siege offered Battel; which yet the Imperialiſts would not accept. This while *Montmorency* having taken *Novara*, returned; ſo that the *French* now purſuing their point, the Imperialiſts were forced to get themſelves within a ſtrong Retrenchment at *Breſcia*. And here either ſide attended their advantage; the *French* hoping to drive the Imperialiſts away by Famine, and they again, that the *Suiſſe* for want of pay would deſert the *French*. That of the *Suiſſe* ſucceeded firſt; for demanding either to have their pay, or leave to depart, or at leaſt order to fight, the *French*, who wanted money, choſe this latter, as the leſs inconvenience, and ſo gave *on. But being repulſed with great loſs, the next day the *Suiſſe* returned, and the reſt of the Army retired towards

* April 27.

1522. wards *Lodi* and *Cremona*, and laſtly to the *Venetian* Territories; while the Imperialiſts, making uſe of their Victory, got both theſe place, the Caſtle of *Cremona* only excepted, which held out for the ſpace of one whole year, though the Caſtle of *Milan* yielded preſently. *Lautrech* thus finding all things deſperate, retires to *France*, laying the fault upon his not receiving pay for his Soldiers; which yet, the *French* ſay, was not for want of order from the King, but through the covetouſneſs of his Mother *Loüiſe*, or the default of ſome Officers. And now the Imperialiſts, loſing no time, marched to *Genoüa*; in which were two Factions, thoſe of the Family of the *Fieſchi*, *Adorni*, and *Spinola*, being Imperialiſts, and thoſe of the *Fregoſi* and *Doria*, *French*. That of the *Fregoſi* * May 30. govern'd now. Howſoever the Imperialiſts * entred and ſack'd that rich City; which yet they quitted, when they had depoſed the *Fregoſi*, and ſet up the *Adorni*. *Franciſco Sforza* was reſtored alſo to that of *Milan*, the Emperor not reſerving to himſelf ſo much as one place in that Country. And ſo *Colonna* concluded the War for this year of 1522. Nevertheleſs the Treaties with the *Venetians* proceeded, which at laſt took effect, as ſhall be more particularly related.

The proceedings betwixt our King and *Charles* were not kept ſo ſecret, but that they became ſufficiently known to *Francis*, who would not yet inſtantly take notice of them, as being more unprovided than ſuddenly to bring matters to extremity. Therefore he continued a while his ſmooth Letters to the Cardinal. At laſt, betwixt impatience, and the order he hoped to give in *Scotland* and *Ireland* to find our King enough to do, he began to declare himſelf. Therefore, his Subjects having made ſome depredations on the *Engliſh* Merchants, and ſatisfaction thereupon being requir'd, he delay'd if not denied reparation. Theſe particular offences were accompanied with a main breach of Treaty, as our King conceiv'd. For the Duke of *Albany*, who ſhould have continued in *France*, was now after five years abſence, returned to his charge of *Scotland*, as ſhall be told more largely hereafter. Our *Engliſh* foreſeeing thus a ſtorm likely to enſue, retire themſelves betimes from *France*; the Merchants withdrawing their goods from the Port-Towns, and the Scholars their Perſons and Studies from *Paris*. *Anne Bolen* alſo (who is ſaid by the *French* * Writers to have lived in that Court ever ſince ſhe * came over with our Kings Siſter until this time) quitted it now, and returned to *England*; where ſhe did partake afterwards more good and ill fortune than ſhe could reaſonably imagine. Our King alſo wrote to *Francis* ſharply, telling him that howſoever he excuſed himſelf for ſending over the Duke of *Albany*; yet that he knew well, nothing was done therein without his direction; and that it was the manner of his Country, *aliud clàm moliri, aliud ſpecie ſimulationis oſtentare* (as *Polydore* hath it,) reproaching him alſo with breach of his Oath.

* *Tillet, Recueil. Scip. Dupleix. Tom.* 3.
* 1514.

Oath. *Francis* much moved with this rough expoſtulation, objecteth to King *Henry* the ſecret Treaty at *Bruges* with the Emperor 1521. requiring King *Henry* to declare himſelf. Beſides, he cauſed all the *Engliſh* mens Goods that remained to be ſeized on, through his Kingdom, and eſpecially thoſe at *Bourdeaux*; which ſeemed ſo much the unjuſter, in that divers of our Merchants had not only bought Wines there with ready money, but paid Cuſtom for it. Our King hearing this, commands the *French* Ambaſſador to his Houſe, ſeizeth on all other *French* and *Scotiſh* here, and commits the better Perſons for a time, or until they had paid a pecuniary mulct, the poorer ſort being exempt yet upon ten days Impriſonment. The Vice-Admiral Sir *William Fitz-Williams* (being in *January* laſt recalled from his Ambaſſage in *France*, and Sir *Thomas Cheyney* ſent in his place) alſo was commanded to Sea with a ſtrong Fleet, to ſecure our Merchants and take what *French* he could. Moreover, becauſe the *French* denied the reſt of the money due, and detained the *French* Queens Dower, our King cauſed the *French* Hoſtages to be kept under an honourable, yet ſomewhat ſtricter Guard than before, without uſing further Rigour. And, whereas *Francis* had deſired him to declare himſelf, King *Henry* ſent over *Clarenceaux* his Herald, in the end of *March*, with his Declaration; whereby it was ſhewed, that becauſe *Francis* was the Infractor of the Common Peace, the King of *England* muſt take the Emperors part againſt him. Upon this, Ambaſſadors were recalled on both ſides, and War expected. Howbeit, as the Lord *Brooke*, Sir *Edward Poynings*, Sir *John Peachy*, and Sir *Edward Belknap*, all brave Captains died about this time, (not of Poyſon given at **Ardres* (when the Interview was) as ſome would have it; but of a Peſtilential Air, as *Hall* relates;) ſo our King left thoſe whoſe ſervice he now moſt needed.

1522.

March 6.

April.

March.

May.

* 1520.

And becauſe King *Henry* meant to ſet to Sea a Royal Fleet, the Earl of *Surrey* (as being Admiral of *England*) was recalled from his Charge in *Ireland*; where having, among other Services, repreſſed the Irruptions of the *O-Neals* and *O-Carrols*, he ſo govern'd the Land, that he both did his Prince an acceptable Service, and gain'd the love of the civil People of that Country, leaving (after a Parliament he held there from *June* 1521. to the end of *March* 1522.) *Pierce Butler* Lord Deputy, who yet kept not long Poſſeſſion of this Honour, as ſhall be ſhewed in its due place.

January.

The Cardinal, about this time, whether for Oſtentation of his Power, or redeeming the Peoples Favour, cauſed the Preachers at St. *Paul's* Croſs in *London*, to publiſh, that all thoſe who would eat White-meats that Lent enſuing, ſhould without paying any thing, be exempt from Puniſhment and Sin. But the People unwilling to be caught by thoſe baits, ſo contemptuouſly rejected this offer, that the Cardinal might eaſily judg how ungracious he was with them. But as the manner of the moſt ſubtle ſort of Favou-

1522. rites hath been not to ſtudy ſo much good as great Actions, as hoping thereby to amuſe and entertain their Princes; ſo this Cardinal, by the perpetual Variation (he ſeem'd to cauſe) in the Affairs of *Chriſtendom*, held not only the minds of the People in Attention and Suſpence, but made his Counſels more conſiderable to the King, than if he had purſued any one way. The laſt Change whereof he was Author, had its chief Overture at *Bruges*, where, among other things, the Emperor reſolved to repair to *England* to ſpeak with our King more particularly, concerning the general Affairs of *Chriſtendom*, and to treat a Match betwixt himſelf and the Princeſs *Mary*, Daughter to our King. And finally (which our King took for a ſingular honour) to be inſtalled perſonally of the Order of the Garter at *Windſor*, while himſelf ſate there as chief.

* 1513. For after his * retaining *Maximilian* the Emperor in pay, the next great teſtimony of Reſpect this World could give him (he thought) was, that ſo brave and great an Emperor as *Charles*, ſhould in ſo buſie and difficult times undertake a Voyage, to be admitted into

Hall. that moſt Noble Fellowſhip. Into which alſo, *Ferdinand* his Brother, afterwards Emperor, was elected the laſt Saint *Georges* day (viz.) *April* 23. 1522. and had the Order and Habits ſent him to *Norcmberg*, where being the Emperors Lieutenant, he held a Diet that year. And now, for the more magnificent Reception of the Emperor, the Marqueſs *Dorſet* was ſent to *Calais*, and the Cardi-

May 26. nal to *Dover*; whither, upon the 26 of *May*, 1522. (being about the time his Forces entred and ſacked *Genoüa*) the Emperor arri-

* May 28. ved. The Cardinal firſt aſſured him of his welcom; which our

* June 2. King, following * preſently afterwards, confirmed. From hence the King conducted him to * *Greenwich*, where the Queen (his

June 6. Aunt) with much Joy attended him. Hence again the King, ri-

* *J. Speed* in *Edw.* VI. ding in great Pomp through *London*, conducted him to his Lodging in *Blackfriers*, his Train being placed in the * new beautified Pa-

June 8. lace at *Bridewel*. To relate the Juſts and other Solemnities on this occaſion, or to tell how often Dukes, Earls, and Lords gave Water to the Cardinal at an High Maſs in *Paul's*, (where the Princes were on *Whitſunday*) is not my Intention. Only for the rarity I cannot omit that on *June* 19. the Emperor wearing the Robes of the Order, and ſitting in his Stall at *Windſor*, accompanied the other Knights in all his Ceremonies and Rites uſual at that time. Which

June 19. being done, both he and our King received the Sacrament together, and ſwore upon the holy Evangeliſts to obſerve the League concluded betwixt them, which was to this effect, as appears by an Ori-

Record. ginal, ſubſcribed and ſealed by *Charles*.

Treaty of *Windſor*. 1518. Whereas there was lately War begun betwixt us *Charles*, and the King of *France*, and (by virtue of a League concluded between us and King *Henry*, and the ſaid King of *France*) both we and *Francis*, by our Letters, required Aid of the ſaid King *Henry*; one againſt the other; and the ſaid King of *England* in the begin-

ning

ning of this War, to compoſe theſe Differences, ſent to *Calais* the moſt Reverend Father in God *Thomas* Cardinal of *York*, as his Lieutenant; before whom when many Diſputes had been on both ſides, who firſt began the War, and it was found that the fault was in the *French* King, and that he firſt began with us, not in *Luxemburgh* only, by *Robert de la March* ſuborned by him, but by his Captains alſo in *Navarre*, and hired foreign Soldiers which were not his Subjects to break the Publick Peace, contrary to the Treaty of *London*; wherefore, when the moſt Reverend Father aforeſaid could not effect at *Calais* either Peace or Truce under any Honourable Conditions, the ſaid King of *England* underſtanding, as well by the Relation of the ſaid moſt Reverend Father, as by the Letters of *Francis* King of *France*, written to his Orators and Captains (which were ſhewed to the ſaid King of *England*,) that the ſaid *Francis* had broken both the Treaty of *London*, and all other Treaties and Agreements of Affinity concluded betwixt them; Not only by ſending the Duke of *Albany* into *Scotland* (which was againſt his Oath given) but alſo denying the King of *England* his Penſions, and violating his Subjects againſt the League: The ſaid King of *England* hath reſolved hereupon to lend us Aid againſt him, according as he is bound by the Treaty of *London*. And therefore upon Treat of a perpetual and ſtricter Confederacy between us and the ſaid King *Henry*, as alſo of a Marriage with the Princeſs *Mary*, we (being on both ſides free from all Agreement made heretofore in this kind with the *French*) have concluded both League and Alliance in manner following: 1522.

The Treaty of Matrimony.

I. The ſaid Emperor ſhall not Contract any Marriage with any Woman, while the ſaid Princeſs *Mary* is under Age, but ſhall tarry for her, and when ſhe is ripe marry her; As ſoon as ſhe is twelve years old, he ſhall ſend a Proxy to Contract with her a Marriage *per verba de præſenti*, and ſhe ſhall ſend a Proxy to him to the ſame purpoſe.

II. The King of *England* during this time ſhall not give her to any elſe.

III. As ſoon as this League is publiſhed, both Princes ſhall (at common Coſts) ſend Orators to the Pope, and obtain of him a Diſpenſation ſufficient for the performance of the ſaid Marriage in its due time; notwithſtanding that they are in the ſecond degree of Conſanguinity and Affinity; ſo that the Iſſue may be legitimate.

IV. The Princeſs ſhall be tranſported at the King of *England*'s charge, with all Equipage and Furniture fitting her Dignity, within four months next following the Contract *per verba de præſenti* aboveſaid. And ſhe ſhall be tranſported to *Brnges*, if *Charles* be in the *Low-Countries*; If in *Spain*, then to the Town of *Bilboa*; whom within four days next enſuing, *Charles* ſhall marry publickly in the face of the Church; and till that time, ſhe ſhall remain in the hands of the Commiſſioners of King *Henry*, who tranſport her.

1522. V. Her Dowry which King *Henry* ſhall give with her ſhall be 400000 Crowns; the firſt half whereof ſhall be paid on the Day of Marriage, or within eight days after; and the other half within a year following, *Charles* giving Acquittances. Yet if the ſaid Princeſs (for want of Iſſue Male left by King *Henry*) ſhall ſucceed in the Kingdom of *England*, then nothing ſhall be paid for Dowry with her, and whatſoever ſhall have been paid, ſhall be reſtored to the Executors of the King of *England*. It is alſo agreed, that out of the ſecond payment of the latter moiety (as aboveſaid) of the Dowry, the King of *England* may deduct all moneys which are due to him, and formerly borrowed of him by the ſaid now Emperor or his Grandfather *Maximilian*, if they ſhall not be paid before. And the ſaid King of *England* ſhall reſtore to the ſaid Emperor the Deeds of Obligation, and the Pledges for the ſame. But if the King of *England* have a Son, then the whole Dowry (above-aſſign'd) ſhall be paid, and ſhall be increaſed to a Million of Crowns, by the Addition of 600000; which 600000 ſhall be paid (after the 400000 are paid) yearly by 200000 Crowns *per annum*. For her Joynture, the Emperor ſhall aſſign her in Lands and Cities 50000 Crowns of yearly Rent clear; and particularly for a part thereof, ſuch Towns as the late Lady *Margaret* of *England* had for her Joynture in the *Low-Countries*; the reſt in *Spain*, to enjoy as long as ſhe lives. If ſhe die before the Emperor her Husband without Children, then all her Jewels, *&c.* ſhall remain to the Emperor.

VI. The Emperor binds himſelf, his Heirs, and his Dominions, unto the King of *England*, his Heirs and Succeſſors, under the pain of 400000 Crowns, that this Treaty of Marriage ſhall not be hindred on his part. In like manner the King of *England* binds himſelf.

The Treaty of Peace and Confederation.

That this Matrimony may be more firm and certain, a Treaty of League is renewed.

I. That all former Treaties ſhall remain in force.

II. They ſhall be Confederate ſtrictly for the Conſervation of all their Dignities, Titles, Rights, *&c.* howſoever, and by whomſoever impeached; To have the ſame Friends and Enemies, *&c.* And, when one is invaded, the other ſhall aid him *totis viribus*, as he would defend himſelf.

III. And becauſe the King of *England* hath entertained the Emperor, and given him leave to paſs through his Country into *Spain*, to provide the better for Recovery of his Rights againſt *Francis*, and hath tranſported him over into *England* by a Fleet of 3000 men: Therefore, in requital, the Emperor, when King *Henry* ſhall paſs over to *Calais*, or any other Port, in expedition againſt the *French*, will provide and lend him at his own Coſt a Number of Ships or Veſſels to tranſport his Soldiers, Horſe, and Ammunition, till the Charge equal the Coſts which King *Henry* beſtowed on the Emperor in this kind.

To

To recover ſuch Lands as the *French* King detains from both, each Prince, before the end of *May*, 1524. or ſooner, ſhall Levy Armies, thus; (*viz.*) the Emperor in Perſon with ten thouſand Horſe, and thirty thouſand Foot or more, with competent Ammunition, ſhall invade *France* on the Coaſt of *Spain*; and, at the ſame time, all the Dominions of the Emperor ſhall declare and wage War againſt *Francis*. Alſo, the King of *England* by the ſame time (*May*, 1524.) ſhall paſs the Sea in Perſon, and, with ten thouſand Horſe and thirty thouſand Foot, or more, and Ammunition, *&c.* ſhall fall on *France*, on what part he ſhall ſee moſt convenient. And becauſe the King of *England* hath not of his own ſo many Horſe, the Emperor will provide him Horſe (ſo he pay them) and Foot (if he need.) If the King of *England* be coming to a Battel with the Enemy, and ſend to the Emperors Forces, being near at hand, to aſſiſt him, they ſhall come and aid him, unleſs there be a juſt impediment. 1522. IV.

War ſhall be made by Sea, (*viz.*) the Emperor in his Navy ſhall furniſh 3000 fighting men, The King of *England* ſo many likewiſe, to infeſt *Francis* his Dominions ſeverally or joyntly. They ſhall not revoke or diminiſh their Fleet without conſent, but reinforce it, if impaired. V.

Neither ſhall deſiſt from Hoſtility without conſent of the other. VI.

Each ſhall give the other free Paſſage through his Country. VII.

The King of *England* ſhall maintain and keep two thouſand Soldiers in the Borders of *Calais*, and the Emperor as many in *Artois*, which ſhall make Roads into *France*, and repel the Invaſions of the *French*, either ſingly or joyntly. VIII.

Becauſe the *French* uſe much the *German* Soldiers, therefore each Prince, to divert them from the *French*, ſhall entertain as many *German* Foot as he can; and within two Months next following, the Emperor ſhall renew and publiſh the Imperial Edicts, whereby all *Germans* are (under pain of being accounted Rebels, & Confiſcation of their Goods) forbidden to ſerve under the *French*. And the Duke of *Lorain* ſhall be admoniſhed not to ſuffer any *Germans* to paſs through his Country to aid the King of *France*; If he do, then theſe two Princes will account him their Enemy. IX.

If either of the two recover from *France*, Places belonging to the other, he ſhall, upon requiſition, reſtore them within a Month; And, to prevent Ambiguities and Quarrels, each Prince before *May*, 1524. ſhall declare his Pretences. X.

Alſo, if either Prince have an intention to recover any other Rights, againſt other with-holders; As if the King of *England* will ſubject *Scotland* unto the Kingdom of *England*, or reduce *Ireland* to due Obedience; or the Emperor recover *Gueldres* or *Friſe*, or puniſh any Rebel; or if either the *Scots* trouble and invade *England*, or the *Gueldres* the Dominions of *Charles*; each ſhall give Aid to other. XI.

To

1522. XII. To confirm this Treaty; It is agreed, there ſhall be mutual Intelligence between the two Princes, and all things done by Common Conſent; So that neither ſhall Treat with *Francis* or any other Prince, without the Knowledg and Conſent of the other, to the Prejudice of this Treaty. And, if any former Treaty made, be prejudicial to this, they ſhall be counted of leſs value and force than this.

XIII. Both Princes, appearing before the Cardinal of *York* as Judg, in what place he ſhall chuſe, ſhall voluntarily ſubmit to his Juriſdiction as Legate; and confeſſing themſelves to be bound to obſerve this Treaty, ſhall require the ſaid Legate to pronounce the Sentence of Excommunication againſt them, if they violate the Articles thereof.

XIV. If the Princeſs *Mary* die, and ſo this Marriage take no effect, and it happen that the King of *England* have a Son, and the Emperor by ſome other Wife have a Daughter, *vel è converſo*; Then Affinity ſhall be Contracted by means of thoſe two.

XV. This Treaty, till it take its effect, and be put in execution, ſhall be kept ſecret from the *French*.

It was agreed alſo, that this Treaty ſhall be ſignified to the Pope *Adrian* the Sixth, and he be intreated to enter into it, and held as a principal Contrahent, if he accept it within three Months. The *Venetians*, if they will accept this Treaty within three Months, 1518. ſo, as (according as they ought by the Treaty of *London*) they will forſake the *French*, and declare themſelves againſt him, ſhall be comprehended. The *Suiſſe* ſhall have this Treaty ſignified to them, and be practiſed to renounce the *French*, or at leaſt to be Neutral. None ſhall be compriſed in this Treaty, which is Enemy to either of the two principal Contrahents: for the reſt, each may name his Friends.

June 19. The ſame day that this Treaty was ſworn, *Charles* gave his Oath alſo to an Agreement, call'd the Indemnity; which was an Obligation, whereby he bound himſelf to ſave King *Henry* harmleſs for all the Sums of Money and Penſions, which were or ſhould be due to King *Henry* from *Francis*, (upon former Agreements betwixt them,) and now were or ſhould be with-held by the ſaid *Francis*, upon denunciation of War againſt him.

This was ſworn in the Preſence of *Thomas Cardinalis Eborac.* Legate and Chancellor of *England. Mercurinus Comes Gattinaciæ, Baro Ozane & Terrugie. Petrus de Moca Epiſcopus Palent. Johannes Alemand. Thomas* Biſhop of *Dureſme*, Lord Privy-Seal. *Cuthbert Tonſtal*, Doctor of both Laws, elect Biſhop of *London*, Vice-Chancellor of *England.*

Laſtly, *Charles* wanting money for his preſent Occaſions, our King ſupplied him abundantly upon Aſſurance given him of Repayment.

payment. *Charles* having diſpatched his Affairs here, and commanded his Fleet, conſiſting of 180 Sail, to meet him at *Southampton*, is * accompanied by our King to *Wincheſter*. Before yet they departed, it was reſolved betwixt them to make uſe of ſome *Venetian* Galleys (then riding in our Ports) upon pretence of conveying the Emperor to *Spain*. Which proceeding yet, leſt it ſhould be thought abrupt, and prejudicial to our League with that State, was by Inſtructions from hence to *Pace* (his Majeſties Ambaſſador Reſident there) excuſed in great part, by alledging, that if they would make good the Confederacy entered into, 1518. they muſt not take it ill, that their Galleys were employed againſt the *French*, as the firſt Violaters and Diſturbers of the Publick Peace. And when they would not joyn, it was but a juſt Puniſhment for their falling off. Which yet was not to be underſtood in that Rigor, but they ſhould be reſtor'd in due time; as in effect I find they were ſhortly after. This being done, *Charles* having taken * leave of our King, goes to *Southampton*, and attends a Wind and the Convoy of our Admiral, who for better complying with the Common Cauſe, according to the League, 1518. was likewiſe conſtituted his; the Patent whereof for the Rareneſs, as well as Honour of the Perſon, I have cauſed to be ſet down.

1522.

* June 22.

* July 1.

CAROLUS Quintus, Divina favente Clementia, electus Romanorum Imperator, ſemper Auguſtus, ac Germaniæ, Hiſpaniarum, Utriuſque Siciliæ, Jeruſalem, Hungariæ, Dalmatiæ, Croatiæ, &c. Rex; Archidux Auſtriæ, Dux Burgundiæ, Brabantiæ; Comes Habſpurgi, Flandriæ, Tirolis, &c. Cum ita ſit quod Sereniſſimus & potentiſſimus Princeps Henricus Octavus, Angliæ & Franciæ Rex, Frater, Avunculus, & Confœderatus noſter chariſſimus, pro ejus Jure Fœderis quod cum eo nobis intercedebat, nuper Franciſco Francorum Regi, tanquam Fœderum quæ cum nobis ambobus habebat violatori, Bellum juſte indixerit, Cauſamque ſuam cum noſtra, qui ab eodem Rege Gallo invaſi fuimus, conjunxerit, Claſſemque ob id maritimam inter cæteros Belli apparatus inſtruxerit, cui præfecit Illuſtriſſimum Conſanguineum noſtrum chariſſimum Thomam Comitem Surrium, Ordinis ſui Garterii Militem, Admirallum Angliæ, Walliæ, Hiberniæ, Normaniæ, Vaſconiæ, & Aquitaniæ; noſque pariter eundem communem hoſtem

1522. hoſtem Gallum armis etiam maritimis urgere (ut par eſt) decreverimus, juncta ipſa noſtra cum præfati Sereniſſimi Avunculi noſtri Claſſe, reputanteſque tum jam dicti ejus Admiralli inſignem Bello Peritiam, Fortitudinem, atque alias ſingulares Virtutes, cui merito multa majora onera committi poſſent; tum quòd quæ conjunctis viribus armiſque geruntur, multo melius uno duce, uno capite regi quam pluribus: Eapropter non abs re duximus, ſi & noſtræ ipſius Claſſis onus, Bellique maritimi provinciam eidem Angliæ Admirallo deſtinaremus. Itaque in vim præſentium Literarum noſtrarum, prædicto Illuſtriſſimo Thomæ Comiti & Admirallo, ac Claſſis prædicti Regis Avunculi noſtri Capitaneo Generali, eandem damus & concedimus authoritatem, plenamque & omnimodam poteſtatem ſuper Claſſem noſtram maritimam, omneſque ejus Capitaneos, Milites, & Claſſiarios, cujuſcunque tituli ſunt graduſve & conditionis, quam ipſe Admirallus ſuper Regis ſui Claſſem habet, tam in honorandis Militibus, Equeſtrique dignitate quos dignos cenſuerit inſigniendis, è contra vero malefactoribus puniendis, quas eis voluerit legibus ſtatuendis, eorumque Cauſis cognoſcendis, quam in cæteris omnibus & ſingulis faciendis & executioni mandandis, juxta authoritatem eidem à prædicto Rege ſuo conceſſam, ac quemadmodum aliàs ſpectat ad Officium unius maritimæ Claſſis Capitanei ſeu Generalis Præfecti, ipſiuſve prædicti Admiralli ſingulari prudentiæ convenire in omnibus viſum fuerit, atque expedire. Mandantes ob id, atque expreſſè committentes univerſis & ſingulis Capitaneis, Vice-Capitaneis, Locum-tenentibus, Baronibus, Nobilibus, Militibus, Magiſtris, Naviculatoribus, Claſſiariis, cæteriſque Militibus omnibus, tam equitibus quam peditibus, in Claſſe ipſa noſtra exiſtentibus, aut futuris, quod eidem Comiti Admirallo & Capitaneo Generali ac ejus in hac parte ſufficienter Deputato intendentes, auxiliantes, & obedientes ſint in omnibus prout decet, contrafacientibus debitâ pœnâ non carituris. Harum Teſtimonio Literarum manu noſtrâ ſubſcriptarum, noſtrique Sigilli appenſione munitarum. Dat.

in

in Urbe Londinenſi. Die VIII. Menſis Junii, Anno Domini Milleſimo Quingenteſimo Viceſimo Secundo, Regnorum noſtrorum, Romani tertio, Cæterorum verò omnium Septimo. 1522.

Per Imperatorem CHARLES.

J. ALEMAND.

The Earl, having accepted hereof by our King's conſent, did, upon *June* 13. Land his men in *Normandy* near *Cherbourg*, and after having deſtroyed the adjoyning Country, (ſparing only Religious Houſes,) he return'd to *Portland*; whence ſetting Sail again, he Lands, *July* 1. at a place near *Morlais* in *Bretaigne*, and with ſeven thouſand men Marcheth thither; where our Maſter-gunner having diſcharg'd a Piece ſo fortunately, that he broke the wicket, ſome of our men enter'd in the ſmoak and open'd the Gate; whereupon the reſt following, the Town was quickly ſack'd, and burnt, and a rich Booty carried to our Navy. After which the Earl commanded ſixteen or ſeventeen *French* Ships (he found on that Coaſt) to be burnt; And ſo leaving his Vice-Admiral to ſcour the Seas, he made certain Knights for their good ſervice, and return'd to *Southampton*, whence he conducted the Emperor to *Spain*, who taking Ship *July* 6. arrived *July* 16. at *Sant-Ander*. June 13. July 1. July 16.

The *Engliſh* Garriſon, this while, in *Calais* and *Guiſnes*, and the *French* in *Ardres* and *Boulogne* were not idle, but took many occaſions of invading each other Frontiers, among which one, related by *Hall* and *Hollinſhead*, ſeems ſo memorable, that I have thought fit to inſert it. Three hundred *French* Horſe lying in Ambuſcado near *Guiſnes*, and ſending ſome Horſe before to draw out the *Engliſh*; a little band of eight Archers iſſued forth, and maintained a skirmiſh; at laſt twelve Demy-Lances (which *Hall* ſaith were all *Welch-men*,) came to their reſcue; the *French* perceiving this, iſſue forth with all their Horſe; but our Demy-Lances charged them with that Courage, that, killing and hurting divers, they opened their way to the Town.

Theſe ſo many occaſions of making War, enforced the King to make uſe of his Subjects affections; whereof that he might take the better notice, he cauſed a General Muſter or Deſcription to be made (this Summer) of all his Kingdom, commanding (as *Stow* hath it out of a *Warrant directed to a Conſtable of a hundred) that they ſhould certifie the names of all above ſixteen years old; and that they ſhould repair to a certain place aſſigned, with their Arms, and declare what their names are, and to whom they belong, and who is Lord of every Town or Hamlet, and who be Stewards, March 27.

1522. as alſo who be Parſons of the Town, and what their Benefice is worth, and who be owners of every Parcel of Land within the ſaid Precincts, and what is the yearly value of every man's Land; as alſo the Stock on the Lands, and who is owner thereof; alſo, what ſtrangers dwell there, and of what occupation they are; alſo the value and ſubſtance of every perſon being above ſixteen years old, as well ſpiritual as temporal; alſo, what Penſions go thence to Religious or Spiritual men. Which being certified again, the King (as *Polydore* ſaith) rejoyced, as finding his Kingdom ſo wealthy. Howbeit, as he was not ready yet for a Parliament, he * borrowed of the Citizens of *London* twenty thouſand pound, and ſent Privy Seals to divers others rich perſons of the Kingdom; In ſequence whereof, he demanded a Loan (as I take it) of the tenth of the Temporalty, according to the true value of their Eſtates, to be employed in the Wars, and a fourth of the Spiritualty. But as this cauſed much grudging, ſo the *Londoners* (particularly) * alledged ſo many reaſons why they could not, upon Oath, give account of their goods, and wealth, eſpecially as long as ſo much of their Stock was in other mens hands, that the Cardinal at laſt accepted their valuation of themſelves, upon their ſimple honeſties. All which extraordinary ways of furniſhing the preſent neceſſities yet ended in a Parliament the next year, as ſhall be told in its place. The King having thus yet gotten ſome Money, denounced open War to *Francis*, unleſs he made Peace with the Pope and Emperor. In ſequence thereof Commanding the Earl of *Surrey* and not the Duke of *Suffolk*, (as the *French* have it) after his attempts by Sea, to go over to *Calais*, and with convenient Forces to joyn with *Florence d' Egmond*, *Count de Bure*, General of the Emperors Troops. Theſe meeting together betwixt *Ardres* (lately demoliſh'd) and Saint *Omer*, ſpoil'd and burnt all the Villages in their way till they came to *Heſdin*, in which *Odoart Seigneur de Biez*, with a ſtrong Garriſon, Commanded. But Autumn being now far come on, and the weather very unſeaſonable, they could only take the Town; the Caſtle being ſtronger, than that it was thought fit to attempt it. They marched therefore towards *Dourlans*, which they took and burnt, with all the adjoyning Villages. The ſeaſon continuing ſtill very foul, and our men falling generally ſick, the Army diſſolv'd, and the rather for that the two Generals could not agree about their deſigns. Before yet the Earl of *Surrey* departed, he burnt *Marquiſe*, and ſome other places near the *Engliſh* Pale, which being done, he came home, and gave our King an account of his journey. Whereupon alſo Sir *Thomas Bolen*, and *Richard Sampſon* Doctor of Law were ſent to *Charles* in *Spain*, to adviſe what further was to be done.

*May.

Hall.

*Aug. 20.

Aug.

1521. The Duke of *Albany*, whom we left in *France*, was now recall'd by more than one voice. For he was not only ſent for by the

the vote of the Nobility and People of *Scotland*, but Queen *Margaret* herſelf invited him. Beſides it is probable, that *Francis* did not unwillingly connive at his departure, as hoping he would find our King enough to do at home. The cauſe why the State deſired his return, was, that their King was ſo young, and ſome of their affairs were diſcompoſed. But Queen *Margaret* had alſo her reaſon. For, being offended with the Earl of *Anguis* for forſaking her at *Harbottle*, 1516. and ſcandaliz'd much at the love he now bore to a certain *Scotiſh* Lady, ſhe had endeavoured, by the Duke of *Albany*'s means, to procure a Divorce at *Rome*, alledging, among other cauſes, that ſhe heard, her Husband *James* the fourth was living three years after *Floddenfield*, and therefore not dead when ſhe married him, (ſo much did that bruit prevail.) But becauſe our King again oppoſed this, (as I find by our Records, whence I have the whole paſſage) nothing was preſently done, though afterwards, new motives appearing, ſhe was divorced from him, as will appear in its place. The Duke, being now generally *welcom'd, baniſhed the Earl of *Anguis* with his Brother *George* into *France*, and cauſed his Uncle *Gawin* the Learned Biſhop of *Dunkelden* to be cited to *Rome*, for the reſt ſummoning a Parliament to begin 1522. whither our King ſent *Clarenceaux* Herald, to require and command the Duke to avoid the Realm, and if he would not, to defie him. And that he might have juſt cauſe to uſe this Language, he was to alledg unto the Duke, that he had broken an expreſs Article of the Treaty in coming over; Neither could he pretend to have any Commiſſion from *Francis*; who in a Letter to our King, had diſavowed this Action ſo far, as he profeſſed to be neither privy nor conſenting to his journey. Beſides, that there was danger of his aſpiring to the Crown, and that the Divorce he procured for Queen *Margaret*, was not without deſign to obtain her for himſelf. And this is the ſubſtance of that wherewith *Clarenceaux* was to charge him (as I gather out of ſeveral Collections.) Howſoever, our Records tell us, that the Duke of *Albany* replied, That, ſince his recall came from the Nobility and State of the Land, he would retain it againſt all Kings. As for his being ſuſpected of Ambition to the Crown, he anſwered, that he had rather enjoy his means in *France*, than pretend to that regality. And for Queen *Margaret*, he ſaid he had indeed negotiated a divorce in *Rome*, but with no intention to marry her himſelf, when he could; as having a Wife of his own. Letters alſo were ſent by our King to the Parliament, whereby he perſuaded them to reject the Duke. But they anſwer'd that they would defend him againſt all. Laſtly, I find, by an original of Queen *Margaret*, that our King writ to her alſo; For ſhe there expoſtulates ſharply with him, for believing thoſe reports concerning the Duke of *Albany* and her; defending nevertheleſs the ſaid Duke's being in *Scotland*; adding, that, if he had not been an unkind Brother,

1522.

* 1521. Octob. 19.

January. 1522.

1522. she should not have needed to provide for her self, by the Duke of *Albany*'s assistance.

Feb. Our King finding this took no effect, in *February* sent the Lord *Dacres*, Warden of the *West-Marches*, into *Scotland*, with about five hundred men, to Proclaim that the *Scotish* should come in to the King's Peace by the first of *March* following, or to stand to their perils; which the Duke of *Albany* suspecting would prove a War, had provided by this time a great Army in the Borders; unwilling yet to do more than to shew his power to offend. For, besides that many of the better sort judged wisely, that if matters succeeded ill, they might be called in question, when their King came to full Age; they were not ignorant, how puissant an enemy they provoked; especially, at a time, when their Confederates the *French* had so much to do elsewhere. Therefore, although the Lord *Dacres* made some Inroads into *Scotland*, and burnt di-

* July 30. vers Villages, joyning himself with the Earl of *Shrewsbury*, *Constitute Lieutenant General for the North Parts; And that the Duke of *Albany* himself was advanced as far as *Carlile*, yet he retir'd; the intercession of Queen *Margaret* prevailing for a conference to be had betwixt the Duke and the Lord *Dacres*, wherein, all for the present was quieted, whereof the Lord *Dacres* was glad, as being somewhat surprised at that time. This conference yet brought

* Sept. 11. forth a *Truce only, for a few days, upon condition that the *Scotish* should send Ambassadors into *England*, to desire a Peace. But when they required the *French* might be comprehended, King *Henry* would not consent; howbeit, the Truce was Prorogued: whereupon the Governor, as finding the *Scotish* Nobility unwil-

Octob. ling to invade *England* on those terms, in *October* departs to *France*, to crave Aid of *Francis*; the event whereof we shall see the next year.

But while these Christian Princes were in War thus one against the other, the *Turk* who had now long experience what harm the Knights of Saint *John* of *Jerusalem* had done him in the *Archipelago*, thought fit to invade the Isle of *Rhodes*, (their chief strength and fortress at that time.) Hereunto concurr'd a request which *Selim* upon his death-bed made unto his Son *Solyman*, wherein he not only exhorted him to revenge the affront his Grandfather *Mahomet* suffered, when he was repulsed thence, but even as a pious and devout Act recommended this enterprise to him. Such mischiefs hath Religion (which should be a new bond of Peace) authorised unto mankind, in more than one Age or Country. It was not yet without much danger that *Solyman* made this attempt. For as he brought near two hundred thousand men into a little and barren Island, so, if ever his Shipping had through firing or ill weather been cast away or destroyed, he must have perish'd there before the Town could be forc'd. But such was the disunion of the Christian Princes that they lost their fair occasion; Thus, upon Saint

Saint *John Baptiſts* * day (the more to deſpight the Knights) this great Army entred the Iſland, (the *Turk* himſelf following in perſon a month after) and continued the Siege till Chriſtmas, upon which day *Solyman* with great pomp entred *Rhodes*, being yielded upon compoſition by *Phillip de Villiers* a *French* man, Great Maſter of that Religion. Shortly after which, he, together with thoſe Knights that remained, ſailed towards *Rome*, and other parts of *Italy*, where comfortleſs and Errant they continued, till by the interceſſion of *Clement* the ſeventh (ſometimes Knight of that Order) and the favour of *Charles*, they * obtained *Maltha*, where they now reſide. 1522. * June 24. Decemb. 25. * 1525.

In *November* this year, a Diet being held at *Noremberg*, *Adrian* ſends to the Princes of *Germany*, requiring them paſſionately to ſuppreſs *Luther*, according to the decree at *Worms*; confeſſing nevertheleſs many abuſes in Eccleſiaſtical Government, inſomuch, that he doubted not to give *Cheregat* his Nuncio Inſtructions to ſay, *In hac ſancta ſede aliquot jam Annis multa abominanda fuiſſe*, which he therefore promiſed, by degrees, to redreſs. But the meſſage pleaſed neither ſide: the Cardinals at *Rome* diſliking *Adrians* free declaration; and the Princes there, as little approving the ſlow and indirect courſes taken for reforming the many enormities then uſed in the *Roman* Church, as may appear by their *Centum Gravamina*; the particulars whereof I have thought fit to inſert, not with deſire to affront any, but only that, purſuing my intentions, the Reader may find briefly a true Hiſtory of the times. Novemb. 1521.

The ſubſtance of the *Centum Gravamina*, offered to Pope *Adrian* by the *Germans*, was to this effect:

I. That the Church hath both commanded and forbidden divers things the Scripture did not. As certain Obſtacles of Marriage, differences of meat, &c. all yet to be redeemed for money.

II. That people, who otherwiſe might juſtly marry, were yet forbidden it at certain times, when yet both Eccleſiaſticks and Laicks took then their Carnal Liberty. Nevertheleſs that for money this reſtraint might be diſpenced with.

III. That Indulgences (called there *Impoſturæ*) and pardon for ſins, not only paſt but future, did cauſe all Impiety and wickedneſs, while men believed, *Modò tinniat dextra*, they ſhould have perfect freedom from all.

IV. That the money for Indulgences, &c. was not imployed the way it was promiſed, that is to ſay againſt the *Turk*, but towards their friends and kindreds expence and luxury.

V. That yet the Pope, Biſhops, and other principal perſons of the Clergy reſerved ſome caſes to themſelves, which none other can diſpence with, and that this again coſt them much.

VI. That the pardon of ſins for future times, brought in all miſchief, as Perjury, Homicide, Adultery, and the like.

That

1522. VII. That certain Preachers (called *Stationarii*) went up and down the Country, Preaching the Lives of ſome Holy men or Saints, as *Valentine*, *Hubert*, &c. promiſing the ſimple people, that if they vowed themſelves to thoſe Saints, and paid ſuch an yearly Tribute, they ſhould be free from ſuch Diſeaſes, as they named.

VIII. That the *Fratres Mendicantes*, called *Terminarii*, conſumed the Alms that the poor ſhould have.

IX. That, at the inſtance of Eccleſiaſtical Perſons, divers Laicks were cited to *Rome*, to anſwer concerning buſineſſes not belonging to that Court, as namely matters of Inheritance, Gages, and Pawns, *&c.*

X. That even Laicks, upon their Oath that they cannot hope for Juſtice in *Germany* before their ordinary Judg might bring their cauſe to *Rome*, though otherwiſe it were proved that Juſtice were done, and the party perjured.

XI. That certain Judges called *Conſervatores*, which were appointed by the Pope to determine the cauſes of certain Eccleſiaſticks, did under colour thereof trouble all other places of Judicature, and derogate from the Temporal Authority, excommunicating all that would not obey them.

XII. That certain Delegates and Commiſſaries of the Pope were often appointed to determine the ſecular cauſes of any perſon whatſoever, and to denounce Excommunication if they diſobeyed.

XIII. That the Pope, by exempting certain Monaſteries from the juriſdiction of their Biſhops and Ordinaries, went about to draw an immediate dependance upon the Church of *Rome*, to the diminution of the Imperial power.

XIV. That the right of Patronage belonging to divers Laicks and Eccleſiaſtical perſons, was (under colour of prevention) uſurped by the Pope and his Legates, when Benefices were vacant, and that they did confer them uſually upon Courtiers and their Favourites.

XV. That theſe men either dying at *Rome*, or in their way thither, their Offices and Benefices were conferred uſually by the Pope, to the detriment of the true Patrons.

XVI. That divers undue means were practiſed to prove men amply Beneficed to be Courtiers, and dependants on Cardinals.

XVII. That great Benefices or Eccleſiaſtical promotions could not be confer'd on able perſons, unleſs Penſions were firſt given out of them to the Courtiers and Officers of the Pope.

XVIII. That, under pretences of making Benefices litigious, the ſaid Courtiers and Officers drew thence great Penſions; and if the ordinary Statutes of Chancery ſerved not, they formed and reformed them as they pleaſed; alſo the Incumbent dying during this pretended controverſie, the ſaid Pretenders invaded the Benefice, to the wrong of the Patron.

That

That the Collation of Deaneries, and other Eccleſiaſtical promotions was often taken from the right Patrons by the Pope, eſpecially if the former poſſeſſors were Courtiers. 1522. XIX.

That in granting Benefices they uſed many Arts to get money, under the names of Reſervations, Permutations, Surrogations, *&c.* to the damage of the Patron. XX.

That Courtiers often having Benefices in *Germany* confer'd on them, farmed them out to ſtrangers who cannot ſpeak the Language. XXI.

That Archbiſhops and Biſhops were bound by their Chapters to beſtow the beſt vacant Benefices, with Cure or without it, among themſelves only, to the fruſtrating of many able Perſons. XXII.

That the Houſes belonging to ſuch Benefices were ſuffered to fall, and the people untaught, and the Statutes of Founders not obſerved. XXIII.

That divers Abbies, and Religious Houſes, being delivered in *Commendam* to Cardinals, and Biſhops, did not feed now above five or ſix perſons, whereas heretofore they nouriſhed forty or fifty. XXIV.

That, whereas there were divers Collegiate Churches in *Germany*, into which none but Princes, Earls, Barons, or at leaſt Gentlemen ought to be admitted; that now Courtiers, though inferior perſons, were received into them for money. XXV.

That, whereas in the beſtowing of Benefices divers ancient Priviledges and Immunities belonged both to Eccleſiaſtical and Laick perſons, they were now by the policy of the *Roman* See, eluded or infringed. XXVI.

That, whereas Annats were paid to the Pope by Eccleſiaſticks, and whereas the Princes of *Germany* did alſo pay them for divers years, upon condition the money might be imployed in War againſt the *Turk*; Now becauſe they underſtood the money was otherwiſe diſpoſed of, they deſired henceforth to be eaſed of this great burden. XXVII.

That Eccleſiaſticks do not pay their due parts, either for a War againſt the *Turk*, or other publick affairs; whereas having ſo great a portion of Revenue in *Germany*, they ſhould furniſh their reaſonable ſhare; And in this caſe the Church Ornaments and Treaſure are not to be ſpared, leſt they come all together into the hands of the *Turk*. XXVIII. XXIX. XXX.

That, whereas Eccleſiaſtical perſons, being by taking Orders exempt from ſecular Juſtice, do thereupon take more freedom to commit Adultery, Murders, Rapine, and even Coyning monies, to the no little ſcandal of Religion, and derogation of the ſecular Authority; and that their Superiors likewiſe never puniſh them, but being firſt degraded, (to which yet much ceremony and time is required,) and that the ſaid Superiors by their Chapters, are bound not to puniſh them otherwiſe. XXXI.

And

1522.

XXXII. And whereas the leaving theſe crimes unpuniſhed may cauſe ſedition and tumult in the Laity, as finding the Eccleſiaſticks have not parity of puniſhment with them:

XXXIII. Therefore, they deſired that Eccleſiaſticks and Laicks may equally ſuffer for crimes of the ſame nature; And that no Order may priviledg them from the Magiſtrate.

XXXIV. That whereas Banns and Excommunications ought to be uſed only when men are convicted of Hereſie; that yet Laicks incurred this puniſhment for ſmall faults, and ſo were driven to deſperation, and excluded from Divine ſervice.

XXXV. That divers alſo, who were not properly intereſſed in the crime of the Excommunicated perſon, did yet ſuffer as Complices; and all this only that more money might be gotten.

XXXVI. That when the Prieſt or Eccleſiaſtical perſon was killed by chance, the whole Town or Village was interdicted, till compenſation were made, and no regard taken of the occaſion given.

XXXVII. That Holidays were in ſuch number in Harveſt time, that people could not get in their Corn in due ſeaſon; whereas yet, innumerable miſchiefs were then done, rather than Gods ſervice frequented, according to the firſt Inſtitution.

XXXVIII. That the Revenues of the Knights of the *Teutonick* Order, deſtin'd for War againſt the *Turk*, were applied to Cardinals, Archbiſhops, and Biſhops, which were neither *Germans*, nor of the ſaid Order, contrary to the firſt Inſtitution.

XXXIX. That Archbiſhops, Biſhops, and other Prelates obtained from *Rome* Conſervators and Delegates, whence ſo many grievances follow to the Laicks.

XL. That Laicks Goods and Inheritance might come to Eccleſiaſtical hands by purchaſe, or otherwiſe; but that Eccleſiaſtical Goods and Inheritance might never return to the Laicks.

XLI. That when Eccleſiaſtical perſons, having Inheritance deſcending upon them, did die inteſtate, divers Biſhops did claim that Inheritance themſelves, to the prejudice of the next right heirs.

XLII. That, whereas the profits of certain Lands and Poſſeſſions temporal, were ſometimes caſually transferred by Laicks to Eccleſiaſtical perſons, they laboured to retain the ſaid Lands as their own for ever, by ſubmitting them to Eccleſiaſtical Juriſdiction.

XLIII. That Biſhops would not confirm the Foundations of Eccleſiaſtical Benefices, unleſs the Founders gave them the firſt beſtowing thereof.

XLIV. That they were forced to purchaſe the confirmation of them for great ſums of money.

XLV. That, when by a Lay perſon any man were preſented to a Benefice, he could not be inveſted therein, till he had paid as much as a years profit, or two, to the Biſhop and his Officers.

That

That Bishops raise extraordinary Subsidies on the Priests under them, so that they cannot live unless they get money again from the People. Insomuch that they will administer no Sacrament unless some money be given. 1522. XLVI.

That many are made Priests who have not means to maintain the charge, to the derogation of their Dignity, while they exercise some sordid Trades; And that they who can get six voices for a Certificate, obtain Orders, when yet those Attestations were corruptly gotten. XLVII.

That more is exacted from the People for the Consecration of Churches than is needful; And that, though Laicks bestow divers gifts on the Church, as Altar-pieces, *&c.* yet money is required for their Consecration. XLVIII. XLIX.

That if two or more fight in the Church-yard with their fists, to the drawing of never so little Blood, the Town must pay for the new Consecration thereof. L.

That Suffragans used to baptize Bells, under pretence of driving away Devils and Tempests; And, for this purpose, did invite many rich Godfathers, who were to touch the Rope while the Bell was exercised, and its name invoked, (unto which all the people must answer.) And that a Banquet was used to be made hereupon, at the cost of the Laicks, amounting in little Towns to a hundred Florens, whither the Godfathers were to come and bring great Gifts, *&c.* whereas they desired that the said Bells might be baptized, not only by Suffragans, but by any Priest, with Holy-water, Salt and Herbs, without such Costs. LI.

That, if in any Dioceſs a solemnity for a new Saint were frequented, the Bishop used to take to himself a third or fourth part of the offering, which yet ought to have been employed in War against the *Turk*. LII.

That, whereas some Nunneries were governed by Provosts, the Bishops refused to accept the said Provosts till the Nuns had given them money. LIII.

That when any Abbot or Abbess was chosen, they must be consecrated anew by the Suffragans, (though otherwise they were capable of the charge) and feasts made, and great sums paid. That also many Offices were invented in the Court of *Rome*, so that Bishops could not enter their charge without paying great Fees, which again they were forced to get of the people as they could. LIV.

That Ecclesiastical Judges commonly were Persons of an idle life, and intentive wholly to gain. LV.

That though the Plaintiff be Ecclesiastick, and the Defendant Laick, and that by the Law, *Actor Rei Forum sequi debet*, yet the cause was revoked still to the Ecclesiastical Court. LVI.

1532.

LVII. That though Juſtice be neither delayed nor denied in Civil Courts, yet the Eccleſiaſtical perſons drew matters of debt into their Courts, and oppreſſed men by their rigid cenſures.

LVIII. That, whereas Citations and Monitories are granted againſt Laicks, in many caſes, which are known not to belong to Eccleſiaſtical Juriſdiction, yet that the Perſons ſo cited, either can get no remedy herein, or that, before the Civil Magiſtrate can avoke the cauſe, ſo much time and money is ſpent, as is intolerable to the poor ſuitor.

LIX. That Eccleſiaſtical Judges drew many cauſes to their Court, which belonged not to it, as Raviſhments of Virgins, ſome caſes concerning Baſtardy, *&c.* which yet they could not be drawn to remit the ordinary juriſdiction.

LX. That, when a man were wrongfully called before Eccleſiaſtical Judges, and at laſt, after much charges diſmiſſed, yet unleſs his Adverſaries Proctor were ſatisfied to the full, he ran the danger of Excommunication.

LXI. That Laicks, though by long preſcription they paid neither great nor ſmall Tenths, out of certain of their Lands yet received Citations from Eccleſiaſtical Judges, and were conſtrained to pay, under the penalty of Excommunication; not daring to appeal to *Rome*, for fear of more exceſſive charges.

LXII. That all belonging to Eccleſiaſtical perſons laboured alſo to take the advantage of the Eccleſiaſtical Courts, when they had any ſuit againſt Laicks.

LXIII. That, on occaſion of injurious words only, Eccleſiaſtical perſons drew the ſuit to their Courts, and ſuffered not the lawful Judg to determine it.

LXIV. That, in all cauſes where Oaths are interpoſed, Eccleſiaſtical Judges uſed to avoke them, upon pretence that matter of Oaths were not otherwiſe to be decided: which at laſt yet would wholly fruſtrate Secular Courts; there being ſo many caſes wherein Oaths intervene.

LXV. That, when their judgments concern'd their Eccleſiaſtical ſuperiors, they dare not exerciſe them, but only let them run againſt the poorer ſort.

LXVI. That they have invented many Reformations, Ordinances, Laws, and Statutes wholly differing from the uſual and Common Law; which yet tend not ſo much to the good of the People, as their own private gain.

LXVII. That, it being agreed by the Canons of the Fathers, that Spiritual puniſhments ſhould be inflicted for Spiritual and manifeſt ſins, Eccleſiaſtical Judges and Officers yet did extend and aggravate theſe puniſhments ſo far that Laicks were forced to redeem them without money.

LXVIII. That Men and Women being falſly accuſed, yet upon their purgation, they were ſo far from receiving ſatisfaction, that they were forced

forced to pay for Letters of Abſolution; And Oaths; beſides, taken of malicious and wicked Women, upon words ſpoken when they revile each other; which made them often incur perjury, and occaſion much offence. 1522.

That, when buſineſs of Matrimony hath proceeded ſo far, that one of the parties pretended a Contract, which the other denied, and that ſome Gifts as Earneſts of Marriage had paſſed betwixt them, the Eccleſiaſtical Judges yet ſeparating the parties, keep the Gifts for themſelves, as forfeit or eſcheated. LXIX.

That, whereas there are certain cauſes ſo belonging to both juriſdictions, as they are determinable by that Court which firſt queſtions them (as manifeſt Perjuries, Adulteries, *&c.*) yet the Eccleſiaſtical Judges forbad the Civil to meddle herein. LXX.

That, upon pretences of Laicks, that they cannot obtain of the Secular Magiſtrate execution of Juſtice, Citations were uſually granted from the Eccleſiaſtical Court, or Breves to the Secular Judges, warning them in the ſpace of a month to end the ſaid cauſe, or otherwiſe that they would take order; when yet, the cauſe being brought before them, depended often the ſpace of three years, without that they would grant the like power to Secular Judges. LXXI.

That Eccleſiaſtical Judges, under colour of preſcription, arrogated much to themſelves, when as yet no preſcription can avail againſt the Pope and Emperor. LXXII.

That offenders, after private Confeſſion, being required to do publick Penance before all the people, are compelled alſo to pay money to Eccleſiaſtical Officers. LXXIII.

That, inſtead of forbidding Uſury, they permit it for money given them; and that for an Annual Revenue paid, they permit Clerks, Religious and Secular perſons to live publickly with their Harlots and get Children. LXXIV.

That, if one of the married couple take a journey either to the Wars, or to perform a Vow, to a far Country, they permit the party remaining at home, if the other ſtay long away, upon a ſum of money paid, to cohabit with another, not examining ſufficiently whether the abſent party were dead. LXXV.

That Synodal Judges, going to poor Towns and Villages every where, draw Annual Tribute thence, or Excommunicate them, when they cannot pay: And that they draw money weekly in many places, from Bakers, Brokers, Butchers, *&c.* under the ſame penalty. LXXVI.

That they ſend Inhibitory Letters to Laicks, forbidding them to proceed in their ſuit, before the ſecular Judg; whereby they are forced to the Eccleſiaſtical Court, or otherwiſe to appeal to *Rome*. LXXIX.

1522.

LXXX. That many, not being able to endure the charges of Law in these kinds, are forced to make some bad bargain and composition, being not able to stand out.

LXXXI. That whereas Ecclesiastical Judges, by giving Oaths to the Advocates and Proctors attending in their Courts, did make them obnoxious, it was manifest their Clients could have little hope of assistance, when the cause any way concern'd the said Judges or their Superiors. Neither was there any remedy for this, but by their admission of foreign advocates, to whom yet so short a time was allowed for bringing them to the Bar as they could not easily come.

LXXXII. That the poorer sort, being not able to pay their Duties to the Parson, were often denyed the Communion.

LXXXIII. That Labourers in time of Vintage were Excommunicated, unless they took such Seasons as the Ecclesiasticks prescribed, upon pretence that their Tenths might suffer dammage thereby.

LXXXIV. That Synodal Judges, going Progress yearly under pretext of Visitation, and inflicting punishment on offenders, took only occasion to exact money.

LXXXV. That the Canons of Cathedral and Collegiate Churches, who had power to chuse a Prelate or Superior, would not elect him, until he first promised and bound himself not to contradict them in any business, (how foul soever, and dishonest) and that if they offended, he should not punish them.

LXXXVI. That Livings belonging to Bishops, Monasteries, *&c.* were set forth to Vicars, at so dear Rates, that they were forced to get money again from the poor for Confessions, Anniversaries, Obits, *&c.*

LXXXVII. That, though Priests by their foundation ought to sing such a Mass on such a day, yet they will have money therefore. Besides, with one Mass they think to serve divers Benefices.

LXXXVIII. That if any of their Parishoners, for Marriage or other occasion quitted his House or Dwelling, he must pay so much to the Priest for Testimonials, or be Excommunicated.

LXXXIX. That whereas, by the Popes Canons they only are denyed Christian burial, who without taking the Communion, died in any notorious and mortal sin, yet their Ecclesiasticks extended the Law further, and denyed burial to men deceased by chance, as drown'd or kill'd, until such money were paid.

XC. That many Priests, and other Ecclesiastical Persons mix'd themselves with the Multitude, dancing and disguising themselves; wearing Swords, with which they made affrays, and hurt people, and yet constrained them to pay.

XCI. That in most places, Bishops, and their Officials not only tolerated Concubinage, upon paying money, in the more dissolute sort of Monks, but exacted it also in the more continent; saying, it was now at their choice whether they would have Concubines or no.

That

That at the Dedications of Churches permiſſion was given to the Chaplains and Prieſts to ſet up Taverns, Dice, Cards, *&c.* 1522.

That at the point of death, they perſuaded men by flattery and fictions, to give their Goods from their Children unto them. XCII. XCIII.

That Mendicant Friers drew many Cauſes to *Rome* unjuſtly, to the grievance of the Laicks, getting alſo ſo much money, that they had lately bought three Cardinals Hats for their Generals at a huge Rate, and that they much moleſted Nunneries. XCIV.

That the Legates and Orators of Popes made Baſtards and other born *ex damnato coitu* to be Legitimate, to the no little wrong of the right Heirs. And that they made alſo certain Viſcount Palatines as their Subſtitutes, having power alſo to Legitimate and admit Baſtards to Succeſſion; and to make Notaries, when yet ſome of them are ſo ignorant, as they know not what belongs to a Notaries place. Beſides, the ſaid Legates go about to abſolve men from their Oaths, Pacts, and Obligations, with permiſſion to treat *de novo*; than which nothing yet repugned more to equity and juſtice. Beſides, that they endeavoured to take Livings from the true Patrons, and beſtow them as they pleas'd. XCV. XCVI. XCVII.

That, becauſe Religious perſons ſucceeded Secular men in their Inheritance, and not *vice verſa*; there could be no equality, unleſs that before any entred into a Religious Life, they renounced their Succeſſion in Temporal Eſtates. XCVIII.

That the chief part of theſe Grievances having been repreſented in the late Diet at *Worms* to the Emperor by the Lay-States, againſt Archbiſhops, Biſhops, and other Eccleſiaſtical perſons, that yet no remedy enſued. And that therefore all the Secular States of the *Roman* Empire renewed now their Petition to the Pope that his Holineſs would reform theſe abuſes. XCIX.

That there are many Grievances more intolerable than theſe, which the ſaid Secular Eſtates of the *Roman* Empire could ſhew, but (for brevity) did forbear, as hoping that when thoſe were taken away, the reſt would follow. C.

Wherefore, by way of final Petition the ſaid Secular Eſtates of the *Roman* Empire, both of the higher and lower ſort, did beſeech his Holineſs to take away, amend and abrogate the ſaid Grievances; or otherwiſe that themſelves would take ſuch courſe as ſhould be expedient for the remedy thereof.

While, that his Holineſs might take the better notice thereof, they thought fit to digeſt their grievances into theſe Heads, and ſend them to his Holineſs.

Theſe Abuſes and Grievances (which, as much as through the obſcurity of ſome terms uſed there, was poſſible, I have endeavoured faithfully to abbreviate) being publiſhed, *Luther* became more obſtinated, repenting now his ſubmiſſion at *Worms*; Inſomuch that at *Wittenberg*, he doubted not to aboliſh the old Maſs,

1522. Mass, and to frame a new Liturgy, *&c.* Of which more hereafter.

1523. Our King finding now his extraordinary ways for Levying money to fail, or at least having resolved to determine them in a Parliament, summon'd it to be held in the *Black-friers* in *London* upon the fifteenth of *April*, in the fourteenth year of his Reign. And here the Cardinal took order that the Spiritualty should lead. The business of Subsidy, therefore, being brought into the Convocation House, found a fair way for the most part. Yet *Richard Fox* Bishop of *Wincheſter*, and *John Fiſher* Bishop of *Rocheſter*, and one *Philips* opposed it. But the Cardinal, silencing some, and causing others to absent themselves, prevailed at last. Insomuch that one half of the Revenues spiritual for one year, was granted payable in five years following. Hence the Cardinal went to the House of Commons, where in an elegant Oration, breach of Faith was laid to the charge of *Francis* the first, upon the League sworn for the general Peace of Christendom. Besides, default of payment for *Tournay*, and other things were objected; so that the King could do no less in this publick cause, than joyn in War with *Charles* the Emperor against him. And because the charge thereof was cast up to DCCC thousand pounds, it was required, that the aforesaid sum might be raised out of the fifth part of every mans Goods and Lands to be paid in four years.

April 15. Regni 14.

April 29.

This being said, the Cardinal departed. The next day Sir *Thomas More*, (Speaker of the House) inforced this demand, demonstrating how it was not much on this occasion, to pay four shillings in the pound. But the House of Commons answered, that though some were well monied, yet in general the fifth part of mens Goods was not in Plate or Money but in stock or Cattel. And that to pay away all their Coin would alter the whole frame, and intercourse of all things. For, if Tenants came to pay their Land-lords in Corn and Cattel only; and the Land-lord again could not put them off for those things he had need of, there would be a stop in all Traffick and Merchandize, and consequently the shipping of the Kingdom must decay; And the Nation it self for want of money, grow in a sort barbarous and ignoble. To this was answered,

That the Money demanded ought not to be accounted as lost, or taken away, but only to be transfer'd into others hands of their kindred or Nation: herein therefore, that no more was done, than that we see ordinarily in Markets; where, though the Money change Masters, yet every one is accommodated. Howsoever, that no man ought to refuse unto him that fighteth for the honour and safety of his Countrey, so much as will maintain him; since he denies it not even to his labourer. That those who are imploy'd, must have been fed when they staid idle at home, and yet that they ask'd no more now, to give the uttermost proof of well-

well-deſerving Patriots. Howbeit, you may reply, this will exhauſt the Coin from the poorer ſort; but, to avoid this objection, let the richer go themſelves. Let them ſhew, in defending their Country, that they merit the better and greater parts thereof. Our King will not deny them this Honour. Or when they would deſire to be exempt, and lay the burthen and hazard upon others, let them not grudg yet the giving ſo poor a ſtipend, as ſome of their ſervants, at home, would ſcarcely take to ſtand bare-headed to them. Neither are they to value themſelves more than others, becauſe they have larger Poſſeſſions, unleſs they imploy it to the publick good; ſince, in ancient times, and even true Reaſon of State, they deſerved not ſo much, who till'd and manur'd a Country, as they who defend it. Nor is it well ſaid of you, when you object that this will carry the Money out of *England*, and leave it in *France*; for doth it not carry the men too, and ſo in effect prove but the ſame expence? Notwithſtanding, if you be ſo obſtinate, as to believe that making War in a Country brings money to it, do but conceive a while, that the *French* had invaded us. Would the money they brought over, think you, enrich our Country? ſhould any of us be the better for it? Let us therefore lay aſide thoſe poor ſcruples, and do what may be worthy the dignity and honour of our Nation. When you did conceive the worſt that can fall out, you ſhould yet eat your Beef and Mutton here, and wear your Country Cloth; while others, upon a ſhort allowance, fought, only that you might enjoy your families and liberty. But I ſay confidently you need not fear this penury or ſcarceneſs of Money; the intercourſe of things being ſo eſtabliſh'd throughout the whole world, that there is a perpetual derivation of all that can be neceſſary to mankind. Thus your Commodities will ever find out Money; while, not to go far, I ſhall produce our own Merchants only, who, (let me aſſure you,) will be always as glad of your Corn and Cattel, as you can be of any thing they bring you. Let us therefore (in Gods name) do what becomes us, and for the reſt, entertain ſo good an opinion of our Soldiers, as to believe, that inſtead of leaving our Country bare, they will add new Provinces to it, or at leaſt, bring rich ſpoils and Triumphs home. 1523.

At laſt, after ſome debate and contention, it was agreed by the Commons, that every man of Eſtate of twenty pound yearly and upwards, ſhould pay two ſhillings in the pound; and from twenty pound a year downward to forty ſhillings, one ſhilling in the pound; and under forty ſhillings every head of ſixteen years old or more ſhould pay four pence, in two years. The Cardinal hearing no more intended, ſeem'd much troubled, and therefore, coming to the Lower Houſe of Parliament, He told them, that he deſir'd to reaſon with thoſe who oppos'd his demands; but being anſwer'd, that it was the order of that Houſe to hear, and not to reaſon,

1523. reaſon, but among themſelves, the Cardinal departed. Yet by the liberal Motion of ſome of the Lower Houſe, thoſe of five pound Land and upwards, were induced to give one ſhilling more, (being three ſhillings in the pound) for three years to come, which at length being continued to the fourth year, and extended to thoſe who were worth five pound in goods, was all that could be obtained.

The more famous Statutes enacted this Parliament, fourteen, and fifteen *Reg. Henry* the Eighth, were theſe.

That our Merchants might have eight days preference before ſtrangers, for buying of broad white-woollen Cloths, brought to *Blackwel*-Hall in *London*; unleſs in Fairs, Ports, Creeks, *&c.* That ſtrangers uſing a Handy-craft, ſhould take no Apprentices, nor above two Journey-men, unleſs they were the King's Subjects. That they ſhould be under the ſearch and reformation of the Wardens and Fellowſhip of Handy-Crafts, and one ſubſtantial Stranger, to be choſen by the ſaid Wardens. That they ſhould cauſe a Mark to be put on the Wares, and workman-ſhip, to be known thereby. That, if they were falſly and deceitfully made, they ſhould be forfeit. That this Proviſion ſhould extend to ſtrangers, living in other Towns than *London*. That, if ſtrangers were wrong'd, they might ſeek their remedy from the Lord Chancellor and Treaſurer of *England*, or the Juſtices of Aſſize in the Counties where they liv'd. That, during this Parliament, their Apprentices or Journey-men might continue as before, and ſo to endure till the laſt day of the next Parliament. This Act yet was not to extend to ſtrangers of *Oxford*, *Cambridge*, and the Sanctuary of Saint *Martins le Grand* in *London*. That, if the Officers refuſed to put a Mark on the Wares, or workman-ſhip of Joyners, Black-Smiths, *&c.* being ſtrangers; that then it was lawful for the ſtrangers to ſell them without the ſaid Mark. That Lords and others the Kings Subjects of an hundred pounds yearly, might take and retain ſtrangers, being Joyners and Glaſiers, for their private ſervice, this Act notwithſtanding. That *Engliſh* men living under foreign Princes, and being ſworn to them, ſhould pay ſuch Cuſtom to our King, Subſidy and Toll, as other ſtrangers of thoſe parts do. And that the Governor of the Merchant Adventurers, or the King's Ambaſſadors in Foreign Countries, ſhall certifie their names to the Chancery, to the intent that order may be given therein to the Kings Officers in Havens, Ports, and Creeks. Yet if any ſuch *Engliſh* man, did return to inhabit here, that then he ſhould be reſtored to all Liberties of a Subject.

A Colledg of Phyſicians (among whom was that Famous and Learned *Linaker*, chief Phyſician to the King) was erected, and certain Authorities and Priviledges granted to them.

Moreover

Moreover the Statute of *6. Hen.* VIII. 13. for ſhooting in Croſs-Bows, or Hand-Guns was diſpenſed with in men of one hundred pound *per annum*. That Coiners who make Money in any Mint in *England*, ſhould Coin of every hundred pounds of Gold, twenty pound into half Angels or pieces of lx pence, and of every hundred pounds worth of Bullion, Plate or Silver, a certain portion into Groats, Two-pences, Pence, Half-pence, and Farthings (the Farthings to have a Mark different from the Half-pence.) That they who bring leſs than 100 pounds in Bullion or Plate to the Mint, ſhall have the tenth part thereof in Half-pence and Farthings. That this yet ſhall not extend to the Mint-maſters of *York*, *Durham*, or *Canterbury*. Concerning which Law, it is worth the noting, that though it was for the benefit of the Subjects, to have ſo much of the ſmalleſt ſort of Coin, yet by reaſon of their littleneſs, it is all worn out. 1523. Octob. 20.

That they which be in the Kings ſervice in Wars may aliene their Lands, for performance of their wills, without any fine for Alienation. And, if any of them die in the Kings ſervice in War his Feoffees or Executors ſhall have the wardſhip of his Heir and Lands.

I find alſo in this Parliament, an Act for Attainder of the Duke of *Buckingham*. And another for the reſtitution of *Henry* Lord *Stafford*, Son to the ſaid Duke. *M. S.*

Alſo an Act paſs'd that the King ſhall, for his life, have Authority by his Letters Patents at his pleaſure to Reverſe, Repeal, and Annul, all attaindors of High-Treaſon, and to reſtore their Heirs, *&c.* *M. S.*

While theſe affairs at home were in agitation, the Cardinal * ſending *Thomas Anniball* (Doctor of Law) to Pope *Adrian* then in *Spain*, * obtained the continuance of his Legatine Power for five years more, which yet (ſaith *Polydore*) he made ſo venial, as if, to recompence the heavy Loans and payments he had impos'd on the people, he would take order to diſcharge them of thier ſins at an eaſie rate. March 9. March 22. *Polyd. Virg.*

The King having ſent divers times into *Scotland*, to require that his Nephew *James*, might have exerciſe of that Regal Authority which was due unto him, and the Duke of *Albany* diſcharg'd from his place of Vice-Roy, receiv'd ſo uncertain and dilatory Anſwers, that he thought fit to deſiſt a while from his deſigns in *France*, and to purſue this. Therefore he makes a particular diſpatch to Sir *Thomas Bolen*, Treaſurer of his Houſhold, and Mr. *Richard Sampſon* Dean of his Chappel, reſident then in *Spain*, requiring them to excuſe him, if he did not proceed ſo roundly to the execution of the Treaty at *Windſor*, (formerly mention'd) ſince, for defence of his Nephew, he was conſtrain'd to take in hand the buſineſs of *Scotland*; yet that he would, in good time, perform all that could be requir'd on his part. Together with which they

1523. were charged, to intimate ſome jealouſies he had of a near Alliance propos'd betwixt *Charles* and *Francis*; whereof he would gladly be clear'd. Preſently after which, he ſent the Duke of *Surrey* (Lieutenant of the Borders) commanding him to join with
March Marqueſs *Dorſet*, (Warden of the Eaſt and middle Marches) and
April Lord *Dacres* Warden of the Weſt Borders of *Scotland*. Theſe Lords, having gathered together convenient Forces, took *Iedworth*; and, making frequent incurſions, did great harm to that Country; without other intention yet (as the *Scotiſh* have it,) than to reduce that Nation to a better intelligence with *England*. Hereupon, the Duke of *Albany*, who was in *France*, prepares to return to *Scotland*. Our King, advertis'd hereof, ſends out his Navy to intercept him. Sir *William Fitz-Williams* with 36 great Ships, coaſting *France*, and Sir *Anthony Pointz* with a convenient Navy, guarding the Weſtern Seas. While *Fitz-Williams* attended this occaſion, he diſcover'd twelve *French* Ships, in which the Arch-Biſhop of *Glaſco* and divers others of quality were, whom the Duke of *Albany* had ſent before him into *Scotland*. Giving Chaſe to theſe, two of them were caſt away near the Havens of *Diepe* and *Boulogne*. After which, *Fitz-Williams*, leaving part of his Fleet to ſhut up the *French* Ships, (which were fled into thoſe Havens) proceeded himſelf along the *French* Coaſts, Landing in divers places and waſting the Country; till at laſt he came to *Treport*, a Town ſtrongly Situated and Garriſon'd with three thouſand
Aug. 10. Men; which Fortifications our Men (though a far leſs number) gain'd, together with divers pieces of Ordnance, chaſing the *French* that remain'd to the Town; yet finding it was not their buſineſs to lay a Siege at this time, they only burnt the Suburbs, and the Ships they met in the Haven, and ſo return'd. The Duke of *Albany*, knowing how narrowly he was watch'd by the *Engliſh*, had caus'd all proviſion for his return unto *Scotland* to be conceal'd, and made it to be voiced abroad, that he had no purpoſe to ſtir out of *France* this year: which our King underſtanding, call'd home his Fleet. But it was no ſooner in Harbour, than *Albany* haſting together his Men and Ships, ſet ſail at *Breſt*; and, paſſing along the
Septemb. 24. Weſt Coaſt of *England*, Landed in the Iſland of *Arraine* Sept. 24. to the great joy of the *Scots*, and with him came *Richard de la Pole* and three thouſand *French*. When *Albany* came, the minds of the Nobility were divided, ſome favour'd he *Engliſh*, ſome the *French*: It being diſputed much before the coming of the Governor, to whether ſide it were beſt to adhere.
Buch.

The favourers of the *Engliſh* Party (which were many,) alledg'd the Conformity in Perſon, Manners, Language, and Laws betwixt the two Nations; Their living and neighbour-hood within the ſame Iſland; the Power the *Engliſh* had, not only to do more good or hurt, but ſooner than the *French* could prevent them: That the *Engliſh* were Maſters of the Seas, and thereby, able

able to ſtop, and interclude all ſuccour that could come to them from any other place. Laſtly, divers Letters were produc'd, written from our King to the Nobility of *Scotland*, wherein he did offer both to maintain Peace there, and to confirm it, by giving the Princeſs *Mary* his Daughter in marriage unto *James* his Nephew, ſince he had vehement ſuſpicions that *Charles* intended a match elſewhere. 1523.

Thoſe who favoured the *French* (whereof many (ſaith the ſame Author) were gained with large gifts, and Penſions, or were ſuch, as, being of a mean fortune, deſir'd to make their advantage in the publick troubles) replyed hereunto, That credit was not eaſily to be given to the ſpecious pretext of a new Alliance, the former having ſucceeded no better; eſpecially, when all things in *England* were ordered chiefly *Ex Arbitrio Thomæ Woolſei Cardinalis Viri pravi & ambitioſi* (as *Buchanan* hath it.) That, the occaſions of falling out betwixt potent neighbours, being frequent, friends were to be ſought out in any other place. Howſoever, their ancient Ally, (the *French*) was to be acquainted herewith; and no time to be loſt for preparations to defend themſelves. *Buch.* *Buch.*

Theſe, though but cavills of the more tumultuous ſort, being joined to the rancor of others, prevail'd ſo with the heady multitude, that, in the Parliament which the Governor ſummon'd as ſoon as he came to *Scotland*, it was preſently reſolv'd that he ſhould raiſe a puiſſant Army. Theſe being gathered, march to a Wooden Bridge over *Tweed*, near *Mul-Roſſe*, which leads to *England*; here the Duke paſs'd over the greateſt part of his forces, intending the reſt ſhould follow; but becauſe divers muttered againſt the cauſleſneſs and danger of this attempt, he thought it his beſt Courſe, preſently to bring them back again. Paſſing thence, he commanded Siege to be laid to the Caſtle of *Werke*, lately fortified by the Earl of *Surry*. Some *French* here, that ſerved on the *Scottiſh* ſide, found means to enter the baſe Court, in which the Cattel and Corn of the neighbour-hood in dangerous times were uſually kept. But the *Engliſh*, for all other manner of repulſe, ſetting fire only to the hay and ſtraw there, ſmoaked out the *French*: Hereupon a Battery was planted againſt the Walls, and ſufficient breach made; wherewith an aſſault was given by the *French* and others, but being beaten back with the loſs of many, and the Earl of *Surry* being with a great Army not far off, the Duke deſiſted and retir'd, doing no more with his Army for that year: ſhortly after which by the mediation of Queen *Margaret*, a Truce was concluded. And thus our King quitted himſelf of the troubles which *Francis* ſtirr'd againſt him, in *Scotland*. Let us now look on *Ireland*, for there alſo *Francis* had his projects. And *Tillet* ſets down a Treaty between *Francis* and *James* Earl of *Deſmond*, in *June* 1523. But, as it took no effect, by reaſon of *Francis* his buſineſs in other parts, ſo it haſtned the ſecond troubles of the Earl of

October 21.

Nov. 11.

Tillet. June

1523. of *Kildare*, who though he had freed himself of his imprisonment in *England*, by the favour he got upon his match with *Elizabeth Gray*, Sister to the Marquess *Dorset*, and so was remitted home to his former charge, (*Pierce Butler* being upon some Accusations put out) yet, being Kinsman to *Desmond*, he could not so behave himself, but that his ill-willers found Arguments to traduce him; But of this in its place.

Campion. Hist. sil.

Sleid. Com. While these things were doing, the Kingdom of *Denmark* suffer'd a great change. For *Christiern* the second succeeding his Father

1514 *John*, *Anno* 1514, the *Swedes* not long after rebell'd making *Steno Stura* their Head, who yet being slain in Battel, and the *Swedes* overcome, *Christiern* commands his body to be dis-interr'd and

1520. burnt; which, with other cruelties, made the *Swedes* take arms again, under *Gustavus Erixon*, whom they made their King, and separated themselves wholly from the Crown of *Denmark*: *Christiern* having thus lost *Sweden*, and incurr'd the hate of the *Danes* by his Tyrannical Government, fearing conspiracy at home, and war from abroad, left his Kingdom to be invaded and taken by his Uncle *Frederick*, Duke of *Holst*; (whom the *Lubeckers* aided in the enterprize:) and, flying together with *Isabell*, sister to *Charles* the Emperor, and his three Children, (one Son and two daughters) as voluntary Exiles from their own Country, went first to

*Jun 15. *Flanders*, and from *Flanders* with a * small Train came hither. Their misfortune yet did not hinder them to find a reception worthy their degree; our Queen, being Aunt to his, taking particular compassion on them. After all manner of Royal Entertainment therefore, for the space of about three weeks that they stay'd, and divers rich Presents bestowed upon them, they thought fit, upon some hopes given them of recovering their Kingdom, to depart hence again into *Flanders*.

The Duke of *Suffolk*, being attended by the Lord *Montacute*, Lord *Herbert*, Lord *Ferrers*, Lord *Morney*, Lord *Sands*, Lord *Berkley*, Lord *Powys*, and divers other Knights and Gentlemen, and an Army of six hundred Demilances, two hundred Archers on Horseback, three thousand Archers on Foot, and five thousand Bill-men,

Aug. 24. besides two thousand and six hundred Prisoners, came to *Calais*. To these again the Duke added one thousand and seven hundred more, taken out of the Garrisons thereabouts. With this little Army he marched into the Enemies Country, taking all places that

*Sept. 20. resisted him by the way. At * last *Florence d' Egmond Count de Bure* General to the Emperor, joyn'd his Forces; so that in all they made about twenty thousand men; yet as it was now about the latter end of *September*, and the weather prov'd very unseasonable, it was difficult to perform any great action. King *Henry* yet would have them begin with *Boulogne*; but the Imperials said it was impregnable, and that for entring *France*, it were better to coast the River of *Soam*, which they did, their design being to come to a Battel,

Battel, as being advertis'd that the *French* had long ſince attended their Coming. But finding no Forces in the field, they beſieged *Bray* on the River *Soam*, In this Town, *Monſieur Antoine de Crequi*, *Seigneur de Pont-Dormy* commanded, with a ſtrong Garriſon; But a breach being made by our Men, and violently aſſaulted, *Antoine de Crequi*, having ſet fire on the Town, fled over the Bridge, with the men that remain'd, drawing ſome Boards after him? but our men laying on other Planks, and getting over, chaſed him, and Kill'd divers of his Men. When they return'd, they found little ſafe from the fire, but ſome Cellars of Wine, which, in that Cold and wet time, wes a great relief. From hence, paſſing over *Soam*, they marched towards *Roye*, taking by the way ſome leſſer places. This Town being ſummon'd, and promiſing to yield, Sir *Richard Cornwall* with four hundred men was ſent to take poſſeſſion of it. Thence the Army marched towards *Montdidier*, where by the way *Monſieur de Pont-Dormy* meeting with ſome of our horſe ſcatter'd, put them to the worſt. But at laſt, more of our men coming, his horſe was kill'd under him, and he, mounting on another, was conſtraind to flie. *Monſieur de Barnieulles* and *de Canaples* yet ſtood the ſhock, to favour the retreat of the reſt; which part while they performed bravely, our men overthrew and took them priſoners, with ſome others of note. From hence then they went to *Montdidier*, in which *Monſieur de Roche-baron*, with about 1200 men, commanded. But, after ſome four hours battery of our Cannon, they capitulated and yielded. The Duke with his Army had now paſs'd the River of *Oyſe*, and was come within eleven Leagues of *Paris*, without that he met with any notable encounter. The *Pariſians* hereupon were much troubled. Neither could the coming of *Monſieur de Vendoſme*, with ſome Forces, exempt them altogether from fear. But the time of year being far ſpent, and the weather falling out to be ſo extreme cold, that almoſt all the Corn in *France* was frozen and ſpoil'd that year, (as the *French* confeſs,) our men were forc'd to return. Beſides, the Lady Regent in the *Low-Countreys* withdrew pay from her Souldiers, and let all the charge fall upon King *Henry*. It was not therefore miſdoubt of any attempt of the *French*, (whatſoever they brag,) they having no Army in the field, but only the cauſe formerly alledg'd that made them retire. They took yet the Caſtle of *Bouchain* near the Emperor's Territories, before they departed, which yet, together with the other places, was preſently recovered by the *French*. Our King, hearing now the Armies were diſſolv'd, ſeem'd to be much incens'd: his intention being to keep and fortifie the places that were taken. Therefore he had commanded the Lord *Mountjoy* with ſix thouſand men to reinforce the Troops. But, before the Kings pleaſure could be certified to *France*, The Duke (who by reaſon of the foul ways left his great Ordnance in the Town of *Valenciennes*) was come, with the reſt of his

1523.

Octob. 20.

Bellay.

1523. his Army, to *Calais*; were he thought good to ſtay, till the Kings anger were appeas'd, by the repreſenting of thoſe important and neceſſary cauſes, that made him deſiſt from any other enterprize this year, wherewith therefore the King at laſt being intirely ſatisfied, he was received into his former grace and favour.

Francis finding now two of his Armies diſſolved and ruin'd, reſolves in Perſon to bring a third. For as he found his Auxiliaries more than the *French* forces could command, and that, together, they had not their pay in due time, he intended now to remedy theſe faults. But this voyage ſucceeded worſt of all. So little can intervening Accidents, but eſpecially thoſe of war, be prevented by humane wiſedom. Being on his way now as far as *Lyons*, he hears three Armies were preparing againſt him; one on the part of our King, for *Picardy*; another on the Emperors part, for *Burgundy* and *Champaigne*; and a third on the *Spaniſh* ſide for *Fuentarabie*. That on the *Engliſh* ſide yet aſtoniſh'd him moſt, as ſuſpecting he had given our King enough to do in *Scotland* and *Ireland*. Therefore, he ſtayes at *Lyons*, and ſends *Bonivet* before with the greateſt part of his forces, conſiſting of the flower of the Nobility of *France*; In which alſo *Richard de la Pole* (return'd now from *Scotland*) was; and reſerves the reſt for the moſt urgent occaſions. Only he wanted *Charles* Duke of *Bourbon*, whom I find ſo conſiderable a Perſon at this time, both with our King and the Emperor, as I have thought fit to ſpeak of him, with much particularity. The cauſes of his diſcontentment (as the *French* writers have it) were many.

Dupleix. That, being of great Blood and excellent parts, he was excluded from the Kings ſecret Council.

That, having done ill offices to *Francis* in the time of *Louis* the twelfth, *Francis* challeng'd him to a Duell, (which unkindneſs yet, *Francis* coming to the Crown effaced by given him the place of Conſtable.)

That he was denied to have *Renee*, Siſter to Queen *Claude*, when yet ſhe deſir'd to Marry him.

That (as is before mention'd) the King gave the Vantguard from him, being Conſtable, to the Duke of *Alancon*.

That having laid out much Mony for the wars of *Italy* out of his purſe, the King not only refus'd to pay him, but detain'd ſome Penſions and Rents, which were due to him for divers years.

That a Proceſs or Law-ſuit was brought againſt him, about the Dutchy of *Bourbon*, being inheritance devolv'd to him, in right of *Suſan* his wife lately dead.

That *Loüiſe* the Kings Mother, perſecuted him, becauſe he refus'd to marry her, and was Sutor to *Renee*.

That the Chancellor and others oppos'd him, for the ſake of *Loüiſe*, who was in greateſt authority.

Theſe again being induſtriouſly fomented by *Adrian de Croy*, *Seigneur*

Seigneur de Beaurain, on the Emperors part, and *William Knight*, Doctor of the Law, Reſident for our King with Lady *Margaret*, and laſtly by Sir *John Ruſſell*, who in diſguiſed habit often Treated with him, (as I find by our Records) made him finally Revolt. Neither did our King make difficulty to appear herein. *Francis* having not only ſupported *Richard de la Pole*, but Treated with *Deſmond*; ſo that finally, conditions were agreed on with *Bourbon*, to this effect; 1523. *Mary.*

That he ſhould Marry *Leonora*, Siſter to the Emperor, and wife to *Emanuel* King of *Portugall* lately dead.

That he ſhould be King of ſome part of *France*, aſſoon as *Francis* was outed.

That the Emperor ſhould have *Burgundy*, and *Artois*, and our King *Normandy* and *Guyenne*, and the Title of King of *France*; and that, beſides, he ſhould renounce all the claim the *French* pretend to *Italy*.

This yet was not kept ſo cloſe, but ſome notice of it came to *Francis*, who thereupon with a ſingular Franchiſe, did viſit him, at *Molins*, faining then to be ſick, and diſcover'd the intelligence given him; promiſing yet that all ſhould be forgotten upon his confeſſion, and aſſurance to ſerve him faithfully in his wars; giving furthermore his Royal word, that the inheritance now in queſtion ſhould be reſtored, when it were by Law evicted. *Bourbon* thus ſurpris'd, and counterfeiting his weakneſs ſtill, confeſs'd he was indeed ſought to, but would never condeſcend to any diſloyalty. The King hereupon departed well ſatisfied in appearance; but as the Proceſs or Law-ſuit went on, and ſome ſecret Guards were put on him; *Bourbon*, offended, eſcapes in a diſguiſed habit to *Genoüa*: whither the *Seigneur de Beaurain* came from the Emperor to offer him his choice, whether he would command the Imperial Army in *Italy*, or come to *Spain* (where *Charles* had newly extinguiſhed a Rebellion in *Mallorca*, and given order to beſiege *Fuentarabie*.) But *Burbon* choſe to command the Army, both as it was more generous, and as he did thereby comply beſt with both *Princes*; to whom he was oblig'd (as I find by our Records,) to furniſh five hundred men at Arms, and ten thouſand Foot, for performing the Agreement betwixt them. But *Francis* had alſo other ſtrong oppoſitions; for though he labour'd to retain the *Venetians*; yet as that State conſidered *Italy* would be quieter when *Franciſco Sforza* held *Milan*, than if it came under the domination of the *French*, they eaſily abandoned *Francis*. Sept. Decemb.

Whereupon a League was entred into, betwixt the Pope, the Emperor, *Ferdinand*, *Franciſco Sforza*, *Julio de Medicis*, the *Florentines*, thoſe of *Siena*, *Lucca*, and *Genoüa*; and the *Venetians*; place being left alſo for our King; By which it was concluded, among other things, that the *Venetians* ſhould furniſh ſix thouſand Foot, and one thouſand two hundred Horſe, when *Franciſco Sforza* Aug. 3.

1523. *Sforza* in *Milan*, or the Emperor in *Naples*, were invaded.

That the Emperor ſhould do as much for them, in the like caſe.

All parts thus tending to War, *Bonivet* uſing much diligence
Aug. 11. marched ſtrait to *Milan*, where *Colonna* had retir'd himſelf; The Army of the League being not yet joined. But *Galeazzo Viſcount* of *Milan*, meeting and deſiring him to ſtay, till he had raiſed a Tumult in the City (whereof he aſſured him in two or three days,) *Bonivet* loſt his opportunity; *Colonna* uſing that ſpace to put the Town in ſuch defence, as *Bonivet* retir'd. Yet ſo, as he forgot not to relieve the Caſtle of *Cremona*, the Garriſon whereof was reduced only to eight Perſons. Neither did he more of Importance (though *Colonna* now dyed) but attended ſix thouſand *Griſons*, and eight thouſand *Swiſſes*; But as the *Griſons*, finding their paſſage ſeiſed on, returned; So the *Swiſſes*, becauſe they wanted only four hundred Horſe to convoy them, (according to the Agreement made) refuſed to come to the *French*, when the Imperial Army, now united, was approaching. This made the *French* wade through a water, to join with them. But *Bourbon*, and the Imperialiſts paſſing alſo, charg'd the *French* ſo, as *Bonivet* being hurt eſcaped, and the *Court de Saint Pol* and *Bayard* ſuſtain'd the ſhock. When *Bayard* having receiv'd a mortal hurt, (whereof he dyed, leaning on a Tree, with his face turn'd to the Enemy) all the Army was routed, and the Ordnance and Baggage taken. Whereupon alſo *Aleſſandria*, *Rhodes*, and other places were rendred. But at *Fuentarabie*, *Francis* had no better fortune. For *Frauget* Governor thereof, being deſirous to ſave his goods, yielded the place without much conſtraint, towards the end of *Sept.* 1523. for which he was degraded upon a Scaffold at *Lyons* publickly.

Notwithſtanding all theſe oppoſitions, yet *Francis* loſt not his Native courage, but proceeded in his deſign for *Italy*. For as he knew the Army of the League had different deſigns, he hoped ſome occaſion or other would diſunite them; neither did it trouble him that *Sforza* was put in the poſſeſſion of *Milan*: For he knew the Imperialiſts would hold a hand high and hard enough to diſoblige him. Beſides, he found that a deſign the Emperor had on *Burgundy*, failed, for want of money to pay certain *Lanſquenets*, who thereupon were drawn to his ſervice.

Adrian's death this while intervening, through poyſon, (as
Sept. 14. ſome have it,) Cardinal *Woolſey* hearing thereof, by a Letter dated 30. *Septemb.* 1523. advertiſeth the King hereof; adding fur-
Sept. 30. ther, that his not being at *Rome* was the only obſtacle that could hinder him from obtaining that dignity. Yet, that he thought none there preſent would be Elected, by reaſon of the Faction among them. Therefore he humbly intreated his Highneſs, that, ſince heretofore he thought him worthy of that Charge, he would now

now assist him. This Letter also was seconded by another, dated *Octob.* 1. desiring the King to write with his own hand to the Emperor to this purpose. Notwithstanding all which Endeavours, he being, about two months after, inform'd that *Julio de Medici* was made Pope, by the Name of *Clement* the Seventh, thought fit, for Justification of his Merit, to write again to our King, that the business was not yet so clearly carried, but that many of the Cardinals concur'd on him; though, by reason of his Absence, and the dangerous State of *Italy*, (which requir'd present Remedies) they insisted on the other. Whereupon it was thought fit by the King and Cardinal to send to *John Clark* now Bishop of *Bath*, Secretary *Pace*, and *Thomas Annibal* Doctor of Law and Master of the Rolls, then resident at *Rome*, a Dispatch, requiring them to congratulate his Election, and together intreat him, not only to continue the Disaffection he had ever shew'd to the *French*, but to give publick Testimonies thereof, according to the greatness of that power which now was in him. The Cardinal also, by a particular Dispatch, desir'd *Richard Pace* to procure that his Legatine Power might be amplified; protesting that, by reason of the King's Prerogative, and other causes, it was not a thousand Ducats yearly to him, yet if that his Authority and Faculties might be enlarged, that it should be thankfully acknowledged. All which *Clement* condescended unto, and the Legatine Power, which *Adrian* granted only from five years to five years, was now (by a new Example) given him for term of Life, *Jan.* 9. 1524.

1523. Octob. 1. Nov. 19. Decemb. March 22. 1522.

Thus had *Woolsey* (to comfort him for his repulse in *Rome*) a kind of Papal Authority in *England*; whereof, also, he made the uttermost use. Though, while amngst other Visitations, He would needs visit the *Freres Observants*, he found himself resisted, which yet he could not take ill, the Pope having desir'd him particularly to spare them.

Aug. 31.

While these greater Exploits in *France* and *Scotland* pass'd thus, many brave Actions with small numbers were perform'd in the Confines of the *English* and *French* Pale; insomuch that a Company of Adventurers there, nick-named the *Crakers*, grew very famous thereby; till, being at last oppressed by the Count *Dan-martin*, who with 1500 Horse and 800 Foot, assailed them, being only one hundred seventy five Foot and twenty five Horse, they took their end; which hapned not yet till they had fought it out, to the last man. The like Feats also were done between the Borders of *England* and *Scotland* on either side, some of which our Chroniclers particularly relate. But as these Wars in several Countries, drave the King to an excessive Charge, so, in *October* this year, it was required, from all men worth forty pound, that the whole Subsidy, granted in Parliament, and payable in four years, should be anticipated, and brought to the King in one entire payment.

Hall. 1524. Decemb. 1514.

This the Commons imputed to the Cardinal, but he apprehended

1523. hended it not, as thinking his Eccleſiaſtical Dignity would ever prove a ſufficient Protection for him againſt the hate of the People. Therefore, he doubted not to be the Author of many raſh Counſels, upon pretence only of furniſhing the Kings Neceſſities; neither did he believe, that, when he had precipitated the Royal Authority to violent and dangerous courſes, himſelf ſhould fall: as thinking his Place in the Church ſo high, as would give him leave ever to look ſecurely upon any Ruin; ſome Arguments whereof appear'd in his Deſign to build two Colleges, one at *Oxford*, the other at *Ipſwich* (where he was born) at the price of throwing down certain Monaſteries, and appropriating the Revenues thereof to this uſe. The Deſign for the College at *Ipſwich* was to erect only a Grammar-School, to train up the youth till they were ready for the Univerſity; but that in *Oxford* (call'd firſt *Cardinal's*, then *Kings College*, now *Chriſt's-Church*) was nobler; for the Building was intended moſt ample and magnificent, (as the Foundations and firſt Lines demonſtrate) the number of Students, Profeſſors, *&c.* great; as appears by a Catalogue found among our Records, and inſerted here.

Decanus.
Subdecanus.
Sexaginta Canonici primi Ordinis } *Omnes Studiis*
Quadraginta Canonici ſecundi Ordinis } *incubituri.*
Treſdecim Presbyteri Conductitii }
Duodecim Clerici Conductitii } *Omnes Divinorum Celebrationi*
Sexdecim Choriſtæ } *quotidie inſervituri.*

Profeſſores Collegii & Academiæ publici.

Sacræ Theologiæ. — *Medicinæ.*
Juris Canonici. — *Artium Liberalium.*
Juris Civilis. — *Humaniorum Literarum.*

Profeſſores Privati & Domeſtici.

Philoſophiæ. — *Sophiſtriæ.*
Logices. — *Humaniorum Literarum.*
Cenſores Morum & Eruditionis, Quatuor.
Præfecti Ærarii, Tres.
Vacantes colligendis Redditibus, Quatuor.
Miniſtri communes Collegii, Viginti, in re Oeconomica prædictis ſubſervituri.

Summa totius numeri. CLXXXVI.

Aſſignantur item annuatim non mediocres pecuniarum Summæ, Partim in excipiendis convivio extraneis inſumendæ; Partim in Eleemoſynas ſingulis anni quartis erogandæ. Præter ſumptus equitii, ac aliorum, quæ in tanta familia indies occurrunt, & ſunt neceſſaria.

I

I find alſo, that about 1524. he ſought in *Italy* and elſewhere, for able men to be his Readers. Among whom at this time the excellent *John Ludovicus Vives* (a *Spaniard*) was ſent to him to be Profeſſor of Eloquence in *Oxford*. And, for Books, he ſent to have the rarer ſort copied out of the Popes Library. 1523.

Theſe ſo great Preparations made the Cardinal uſe many rigorous means of getting Moneys, as by Viſitation of Religious Houſes, *&c.* and at laſt by the Ruine of divers. To perform this yet, he was to obtain the Conſent of the Pope and his King. The Reaſons repreſented to the Pope, were I ſuppoſe of this nature:

That his Holineſs could not be ignorant what diverſe effects this New Invention of Printing had produced. For as it had brought in and reſtored Books and Learning, ſo together it hath been the Occaſion of thoſe Sects and Schiſms which daily appeared in the World, but chiefly in *Germany*; where men begun now to call in queſtion the preſent Faith and Tenents of the Church, and to examine how far Religion is departed from its Primitive Inſtitution. And, that which particularly was moſt to be lamented, they had exhorted Lay and Ordinary men to read the Scriptures, and to pray in their Vulgar Tongue. That, if this were ſuffered, beſides all other dangers, the Common People at laſt might come to believe that there was not ſo much Uſe of the Clergy. For if men were perſwaded once they could make their own way to God, and that Prayers in their Native and Ordinary Language might pierce Heaven, as well as *Latin*; how much would the Authority of the Maſs fall? how perjudicial might this prove unto all our Eccleſiaſtical Orders?

That there were many things to be looked to in theſe Innovators, but nothing ſo much as this; ſince it was clear, that the keeping of the Myſteries of Religion in the hands of Prieſts, had been a principal means in all Ages, of making the Prieſthood Sacred and Venerable. That theſe Myſteries and Rites thereof, as the greateſt Secret and *Arcanum* of Church-Government, ſhould be preſerved. Nay, that the Clergy ſhould rather fly to Tropes and Allegories, if not to Cabala it ſelf, than permit that all the parts of Religious Worſhip, ſhould be thought ſo obvious, as to fall eaſily within common Underſtandings, without their Explication; ſince it might well be queſtioned whether the Eſſence of Religion (conſiſting in the Doctrine of good Life and Repentance) might be held ſufficient alone to exerciſe even the moſt vulgar Capacities; unleſs frequent Traditions concerning former Times, and ſuch obſcure Paſſages as need Interpretation, did concur. In which State of Things therefore, nothing remain'd ſo much to be done, as to prevent further Apoſtaſie. For this purpoſe, ſince Printing could not be put down, it were beſt to ſet up Learning againſt Learning; and, by introducing able Perſons to diſpute, to ſuſpend the Laity, betwixt Fear and Controverſies. This, at worſt yet, would make

1523. them attentive to their Superiours and Teachers. All which being maturely weighed by his Holineſs, it was not doubted but he would adviſe, and commend to all Chriſtian Princes, the erecting of new Colleges and Seminaries for the advancement of Learning; and here in *England* particularly, where many Favourers of *Luther*'s Sect, but eſpecially of *Zuinglius*, did appear. Yet becauſe his Holineſs, by our Ambaſſadors at *Rome*, had divers times been informed of the great Expences of his King in the Wars he made with *France* and *Scotland*, he did not think it the beſt courſe to deſire any Money out of his Purſe. That therefore he had thought of another Expedient, which he humbly offered to his Holineſs; which was, that in regard the Number of Monaſteries was greater in this Kingdom, than that there could be found Learned men to ſupply them; That it were not amiſs to diminiſh the one a little, to increaſe the other. That as this would take away the Objection of Ignorance, wherewith the new Sectaries in *Germany* had ſo much branded the Clergy, ſo it would furniſh able Perſons to reſiſt their Doctrine, and uphold the Credit and Reputation of the *Roman* Church. Therefore he would be an humble Suppliant to his Holineſs to give him leave to throw down a few ſuperfluous Monaſteries, and to employ the Revenues of them to the Building of two Colleges; one at *Oxford*, the other at *Ipſwich*; and to believe, that all things being rightly conſidered, the fall of thoſe few, might be a means to keep up the reſt, eſpecially ſince in this Kingdom the number of them was thought exceſſive.

To the King: As he needed not to uſe thoſe Motives, ſo he diſcreetly conceal'd ſuch as might diſcover the Secrets of Eccleſiaſtical Government. For certainly, what fault ſoever might be objected to the Cardinal, he ſeem'd ſtill a devout Servant to his Religion, as aſpiring thereby unto the Papacy. Therefore, he ſaid little more unto the King, than that it was fit ſo Learned a Prince ſhould advance Learning, and maintain that Faith, whereof the Pope had made him the Defender. For this purpoſe, he ſhould adviſe him to found more Colleges. Yet becauſe his Wars and other Occaſions had ſo exhauſted his Treaſury, he would ask no more, than that the care thereof ſhould be committed to him; who, if his Highneſs ſo thought fit, would only ſuppreſs ſome little and unneceſſary Monaſteries, and employ the Revenues to this uſe. King *Henry* alſo conſidering, that if, for his urgent occaſions, he were neceſſitated at any time to ſeiſe on the other Religious Houſes, he might this way diſcover how the People would take it, grants his Requeſt. Our King thus concurring with the Pope, who, in favour of the Cardinal gave way to this Suppreſſion, that Overture was firſt made, which being purſued afterwards by the Kings ſole Authority, became the final Ruine of all Monaſteries.

Clement the Seventh hearing of the Preparations of theſe great Princes, had ſent in the beginning of this year an expreſs Legate, which

which was the Arch-Biſhop of *Capua*, with Inſtructions to procure an Union betwixt them againſt the *Turk*. He had already been with *Francis* and the Emperor, without effecting any thing; and was now come to our King; but finding the ſame Difficulties, he was forced to return, without other ſatisfaction, than a particular of the Demands by our King made, and the reaſons of them; which our Cardinal promiſed alſo to certifie unto the Pope. Therefore, in a particular Diſpatch to *Rome*, he wiſhed our Agents there to ſhew an inclination to Peace; reſerving, nevertheleſs, one ear open to the Exploits of *Bourbon*, whoſe Proſperous Succeſs in *France* (he ſaid) might be ſuch as to alter the caſe. Howſoever, that the place of Treaty might be *Calais*, whither himſelf offered to come in perſon. 1524.

This while (in the beginning of this year) the Princes of *Germany* held a Diet at *Noremberg*, whither *Clement* (the new Pope) ſent as Legate Cardinal *Campejus*; much complaining of their *Poſtulata* or *Gravamina* the laſt year, ſince Many points in it ſmelt of Hereſie. About *April* alſo the Emperor from *Spain* ſends to the Princes at the Diet, deſiring them to ſee the Decree made at *Worms* againſt *Luther* (1521.) to be obſerved. (Thus to comply with the Pope it ſeems, whom he deſired to retain on his ſide againſt *Francis*.) The Princes nevertheleſs at the Concluſion of this Diet, made a Decree, that as ſoon as might be, the Pope by the Conſent of the Emperor ſhould call a Council in *Germany*; and, in the mean time, things to be ripened for a Peace in Religion, *&c.* This ſecond urging of a Council (for it was preſſed alſo the laſt year to *Adrian*) provoked much Pope *Clement*; who, knowing our King's Zeal to the *Roman* See, and particular Hate of *Luther*, ſent a Letter to King *Henry*, complaining of this behaviour of the Princes of *Germany*; and to winn our King the more, he ſent him a Roſe of Gold (conſecrated and curiouſly wrought) by *Thomas Annibal*, (who now returned) as alſo a Bull, ſealed with Gold (*Dat. tertio Non. Martii*) for Confirmation of his Title of *Defenſor Fidei*.

In the mean time, by often Diſpatches, the Cardinal, in our King's Name, urged *Bourbon* to undertake his Expedition into *France*; to which purpoſe our King was to allow him an hundred thouſand Crowns a Moneth. *Bourbon*, on the other ſide, required that our King, or his Lieutenant, ſhould at the ſame time enter *Picardy* with an Army; which was promiſed. When (having given Oath to acknowledge *Henry* the Eighth King of *France*) He advanceth towards *Provence*, *June* 24. (on the Emperors part *Monſieur de Beaurain* attended him; and on our Kings, *Richard Pace*) and in the beginning of *July* enters *France*; where, proclaiming Liberty to the Common People who willingly came in, he took divers Towns. Nevertheleſs, his Courſe was ſtaid. For whereas he had a Fleet of the Emperors to ſecond him, coaſting along the

March.

January.

April.

May 8.

1521.

April 18.

May 16.

May 19.

June 24.

July 2.

1524. the Shore, to bring Victuals to the Army: Now the *French* Navy being too ſtrong, kept them off, and ſo intercepted their Proviſion. The Supplies alſo of Money to be ſent him by the Emperor and King of *England* were ſlackned; for each of theſe Princes feared leaſt the other ſhould reap the Fruit of this Expedition; And *Charles de la Noy* the Vice-Roy of *Naples* was thought, beſides, to be willing that *Bourbon* ſhould be repulſed, as one whom he envied for being made Lieutenant in his place. Yet, for all
Aug. 19. this, *Bourbon* lays ſiege to *Marſeilles*, but in vain; for it being ſtoutly defended by *Renzo de Ceri*, and *Philip Chabot*, *Francis* alſo with a great power coming to relieve it, at the ſame time *Bourbon*'s Souldiers mutined for want of Pay; (although Sir *John Ruſſel* had newly brought twenty thouſand pound ſterling from our King;)
Sept. 27. the Siege broke up, and the Duke embarking his Cannon, retired to *Genoüa* with ſome Loſs, the Prince of *Aurange* being taken Priſoner there.

Octob. It was now mid-*October*, and a ſeaſon, in all probability, not to begin any great Enterprize. Nevertheleſs *Francis*, who had
July left *Claude* his Wife in *July* laſt, and left *Loüiſe* his Mother Regent of *France*, during his Abſence, purſued his Deſign to conquer *Milan*; contrary to the Advice of the Pope (who perſwaded Peace) and of his Counſellors; (who at leaſt adviſed him not to go in Perſon.) *Charles de la Noy* hearing this, puts *Antonio de Leyva* in *Pavia*, with twelve thouſand *Spaniards*, and ſix thouſand Lanſquenets; and with the reſt of his Army haſtens to *Milan*. But as he found the Citizens there not much affectioned to him, and ſome of the *French* Vantguard was approached, he left the Town, and together with the Duke of *Bourbon* and *Ferdinand d' Avalos* Marqueſs of *Peſcara*, with their Forces retired to *Lodi*. Whereupon *Michel Antoine* Marqueſs of *Saluzzo*, and *Loüis Seigneur de Trimoüille* enter'd *Milan*. *Francis* being preſently informed hereof, advances an Army; yet ſo as according to an ancient Military Rule, he would not leave ſo ſtrong a place as *Pavia* behind him. But the
Novemb. obſerving hereof coſt him dear. While he laid Siege to *Pavia*, the Imperialiſts were but in an ill eſtate; the Pope at moſt ſtanding as Neuter; the *Florentines* Friends but in appearance only; the *Venetians* excuſing themſelves, as ſuſpecting the Emperor, in that he would not ſign the Inveſtiture of *Milan* to *Franciſco Sforza*; and our King, inſtead of giving more Money, requiring that which was due to him, (being 133000 Crowns yearly, in regard of the Penſion withheld by *Francis*,) which yet, being refuſed by *Charles*, made him averſe. Beſides, he conſidered the Deſigns of the Emperor were only on *Italy*. *Francis* on the other ſide had a flouriſhing Army, conſiſting of about thirty thouſand, whereof yet the moſt part were Mercenaries and Voluntiers; and therefore particularly mentioned by me, as not remembring to have read in any Hiſtory, that ſo many of this kind (being irregular and properly under no Command)

Command) ſhould be admitted to the hazard of diſordering a whole Army. And for the other part, being Mercenaries, he had found them ſlow, wilful, of ſmall truſt, and oftentimes venal; though it cannot be denied, that thoſe whom *Francis* in particular now uſed, have been reputed in all times a valiant conſtant Nation. All which I have the rather obſerved, that the Succeſs which *Francis* had not long after, might ſeem leſs ſtrange unto the Reader. The Nobility that came with him were indeed principal Perſons, *Henry d' Albret* (the Titular King of *Navarre*) the Dukes of *Lorain*, *Longueville*, *Alancon*, and *Albany*, (who, the Spring before had left *Scotland*, upon Promiſe made him by the Nobility, that nothing ſhould be innovated there, till his return) The Counts of St. *Paul*, *Vaudemont*, *L' Aval*, the Marſhal of *Foix*, *Chabanes*, and *Montmorency*, the Admiral *de Bonivet*, (chief Author of this Counſel) *le Seigneur de Fleuranges*, *le Vidame de Chartres*, *Buiſſy d' Ambois*, *Richard de la Pole*, and many other brave Gentlemen. 1524.

The manner which *Francis* uſed in beſieging *Pavia* ſeem'd to take up more time than ſtood with the ſeaſon (being now Winter) and the Advantage he had over the Imperialiſts, who were neither in number nor vertue ſufficient to repel him. This Leiſure the Pope made uſe of to mediate a Peace, by the means of the Biſhop of *Verona*, and (when that could not be done) to keep *Francis* yet in good terms with him, promiſing him therefore Indifferency at leaſt, both as he was *Communis Pater*, and as he conceiv'd him the ſtronger. But, finding that the Treaty of Accord took no effect, was perſwaded by the *French* Ambaſſadors (reſident with him) to make a League with *Francis*. The Perſwaſions the *French* uſed, were Promiſes, and certain Propoſitions of Peace, upon ſuch Conditions as ſhould be very advantageous to both. And thus at laſt the Pope by the ſecret Intervention of *Jo. Matthei* the Biſhop of *Verona*, made Peace with the *French*, encouraging them together (ſaith *Bellay*) to attempt *Naples*, which yet the Pope diſſembled ſtrenuouſly, both with our King's and the Emperor's Agents; though when he could hide it no longer, he pretended he was forced to it by the *French*. Yet it may be the Pope was not a little inclin'd hereunto by a Meſſage which came from *England*; For I find in our Records, that not long after the time that *Francis* paſſed into *Italy*, there came from *France* into *England*, on *Loüiſe* the Regents part, one *John Joachin* a *Genoüeſe*, whoſe coming (as things then ſtood) was much ſuſpected by the Imperialiſts. And the more, becauſe he kept himſelf cloſe, and repaired every day to the Cardinal, and conſulted with him only; but ſo much was diſcovered, as the Popes Agent here, by a Letter, adviſed his Holineſs to make Peace with *Francis* in time; which the Pope did (although to his Loſs, as will appear in its place.) And now *Francis*, not fearing the Imperialiſts, ſends the Duke of *Albany*, with *Renzo de Ceri*, and about twelve thouſand men, againſt thoſe of *Lucca* and *Sieña*, for

Novemb.

Bellay.

Decemb.

Jan. 1525.

Hall.

1524. for the Popes Service; and after to attempt *Naples*, where all the places were unprovided of ſufficient Gariſon. Beſides, he had ſent the Marqueſs *de Saluzzo* with four thouſand men to *Savoña*, from thence to attempt *Genoüa*. Again, three thouſand *Italians* (their Commander *Genevanni de Medicis* being hurt) disbanded, and ſix thouſand *Griſons*, hearing of ſome Troubles in their Countrey returned; ſo that his forces were much weakned. Which *Charles de la Noy* underſtanding, took the leſs care to defend *Naples*; as believing the *French* unable to ſecond the Duke of *Albany*. And therefore, gave order only to the Duke of *Trajetto* to defend the Countrey the beſt he could; while *Bourbon*, pawning his Jewels to the Duke of *Savoy*, went to *Germany*, and raiſed twelve thouſand men.

During theſe Paſſages in *Italy*, the affairs of *Scotland* ſeemed to change form; for the Duke of *Albany* being now ſo far diſtant from them, the prime Nobility of *Scotland* (notwithſtanding the May. Promiſe exacted of them by the ſaid Duke, when he departed, (which was in *May* 1524.) promiſing to return in *September* next) inclin'd to the Queens ſide. So that preſently after they began to conſult of making Peace with *England*; which becauſe they knew King *Henry* would never grant, as long as they acknowledged the Duke of *Albany* Governour (for ſo he had lately intimated,) they agreed to abrogate his Authortiy, and to inveſt the young King in the Exerciſe of his Regal Power. To this purpoſe, the Queen of *Scots* wrote to her Brother King *Henry* to aſſiſt his Nephew herein; who ſent to the Borders his Lieutenant, *Thomas* late Earl * May. of *Surrey*, now (ſince his Fathers * Death much lamented for his *Stow.* great virtue) Duke of *Norfolk*, and Treaſurer of *England*, to *Buch.* procure the Liberty of the young King. Hereupon the Queen, aſſiſted by the Earls of *Arrain*, *Lenox*, and divers of the chief Nobility, brought the young King from *Sterling*, (where the Governour had appointed him to reſide till his Return) to *Edenburgh*, July 29. where he undertook the Adminiſtration of the Kingdom, *July* 29. Aug. 20. whereupon Allegeance was ſworn to him, and the Duke of *Albany* was exauctorate; yet not with ſo General a Vote, but that the two Biſhops of St. *Andrews* and *Aberdeen* diſliked it; alledging both the Nonage of the King, and the promiſe of the Nobility to *Buch.* the Governour of not Innovating till *September*. Upon this they Sept. are both confin'd, but ſhortly reſtor'd to their Liberty. Our King ſoon after ſent Ambaſſadors, *Thomas Magnus* (a Civil Lawyer and a Prieſt) and *Ratcliff* (a Gentleman) to reſide in *Scotland*; commanding from thenceforth all Hoſtility to ceaſe. Whereupon a Truce was taken, during which the *Scottiſh* Ambaſſadors were to be ſent into *England*, for the concluding of a firm Peace. Alſo (for eſtabliſhing the young Kings power) he offered to maintain (a while) a Guard for him of two hundred perſons. But this good correſpondence was a little clouded; for while theſe things were in hand,

hand, the Earl of *Anguis* and his Brother *George Douglaſſe* formerly baniſhed (as we have ſhewed) into *France*, found means to eſcape into *England*. The Earl deſired our Kings aid, for his reſtitution; but the Queen of Scots, who retained her old grudge to him, and (perchance) had newly caſt an eye on *Henry Stuart*, (whom afterwards ſhe married) laboured the contrary; remonſtrating to our King, by divers Letters, that his coming to *Scotland* at this time would trouble the State. For the Earl of *Arrain*, whoſe power and reputation was great, being Enemy to the ſaid *Anguis*, ſhe ſaid would oppoſe him; but our King ſuſpecting by ſome actions that *Arrain* was French, ſuffered about *October* the Earl to enter *Scotland*, to counterpoiſe him; taking of him at his departure a promiſe or obligation, 1. To procure and maintain the young Kings Authority, to the excluſion of the Duke of *Albany*. 2. To ſeek to be reconciled to the Queen with all humility. 3. To make friendſhip with *Arrain*, as long as he maintains the young King, and averts him from *France*; whereupon alſo our King promiſed, that if he did the contrary, he would maintain *Anguis* againſt the ſaid *Arrain*, &c. Thus was *Anguis* reſtored to his Countrey for a while; but the Queen took it ill that he was come, and the Ambaſſadors appointed to be ſent to King *Henry* for peace, where in danger to be ſtaid; yet I find that *December* 19. they came, being *Gilbert Kenneth* Earl of *Caſſilis*, &c. and intreated peace, and the Princeſs *Mary* as Wife for their King. Our King gave hope of both; (for I find that both the Emperor and *Francis* made overtures of matches for King *James* at this time.) Howbeit, when our Commiſſioners in private conference treated of peace, and the Princeſs, it was upon theſe conditions, 1. That they ſhould renounce the League with *France*, and inſtead thereof make the like with *England*. 2. That the young King till he be ripe for marriage ſhall be brought up in *England*. It ſeems yet the Scottiſh Ambaſſadors Commiſſion was not large enough to treat theſe points; ſo, *Decemb.* 30. *Caſſilis* (leaving his fellows here) goes to *Scotland*; and ſhortly after (*March* 19.) returns to King *Henry* with the reſolution of the Nobility, and Letters from Queen *Margaret*, ſhewing, that the Lords of *Scotland* will be content to relinquiſh the *French*, ſo that the match with the Princeſs *Mary* may be made ſure; but they required that the promiſe, whereby ſhe was engaged to the Emperor, be firſt diſcharged. Our King hearing this, ſaid he would confer with the Emperor about it; and ſo nothing being concluded, but a Truce for three years and a half, the Scottiſh Ambaſſadors departed in *April*.

The Emperor hearing of this Treaty, diſpatched hither *Adolpho de Borgona*, *Senior de Beures* Adm. of *Flanders*, with the Preſid. of *Malmes* to require that the Princeſs *Mary* might be delivered to him, promiſing hereupon to declare her Empreſs, and make her Governeſs of the *Low Countreys*; her Dower alſo was required to

1524.
July
Octob. 4.
Decemb. 19.
Decemb. 23.
Hall.
Leſle.
Decemb. 30.
March 19. 1525.
April.
March 1525.

1525. be paid preſently, and that our King in Perſon would the next year invade *France*. But before our King could give a perfect Anſwer to theſe particulars, news was brought of the battel of *Pavia*, and the taking of *Francis* priſoner, the manner whereof was thus.

Pavia was a place eaſie enough to take, had either the *French* preſſed it roundly, or a leſs valiant Captain than *Antonio de Leyva* defended it. Jan. But while *Francis*, as being confident he was Maſter of the field, drew the ſiege out in length, he gave not only time to the Imperialiſts to join an Army, but at laſt failed miſerably in his enterpriſe. The advice he approv'd, after a breach and aſſault made in vain, was to open a way to the Town, on the one ſide of the *Teſin*; for, as that River divided it ſelf into two Channels, whereof one paſſed by the walls, (which had no defence on that part, but the River, being not fordable) his intention was to divert this current, and ſo to leave the walls bare. But one rainy night alone ſo ſwel'd the River, that all the Damms and works which the *French* had raiſed were carried away be the violence of the ſtream. His ableſt Counſellors hereupon wiſh'd him to raiſe ſiege, and give place to the ſeaſon. Beſides, as the Imperialiſts, with a great Army, were now marching towards him, they thought it not fit he ſhould be encloſed betwixt the Town, (wherein was a ſtrong Garriſon,) and the Forces now approaching. It was the even Feb. 24. of Saint *Matthias* in *February* 1525. (being the day of the Emperors Nativity) when the *Marquis de Guaſto* leading the Vantguard, the Marqueſs of *Peſcara* the Battail, and *Charles de la Noy* accompanied with *Bourbon*, the Rereward, came in good order near the *French* Army. Their reſolution was to weary the *French* all night with Alarms and Skirmiſhes, and towards morning to fall on them with the whole Army; ſo that nothing of Importance was intended till full day light; when *Francis*, pointing his Ordnance againſt them, ſo pierced their Squadrons, that they were forced to retire to a more covert place. *Francis*, thinking this was a flight, draws his Army out of his ſtrong intrenchments into an open place, with intention to purſue them. The Commanders of the Imperialiſts having thus obtained what they deſired (for they wanted both money and victuals to ſubſiſt any long time,) encourag'd their ſouldiers to fight, telling them, that though a King was preſent, *Bellay.* there was not therefore more danger, but more honours and riches propoſed to them. That they ſhould but follow their Commanders, who would lead them to an aſſured victory. The Souldiers hereupon (being not Ignorant of the neceſſity they were in,) reſolutely promiſed to go on. The Marqueſs of *Peſcara* having advanc'd a little to diſcover the enemy, return'd; and, with a chearful countenance, turning towards the Spaniards, told them that he muſt not conceal from them the cruel command the *French* King had given, that no *Spaniard* ſhould be received into mercy. This being

being a meer invention of the Marqueſs ſo kindled their courage that they required the Signal, promiſing for the reſt, to ſell their lives as dear as they could. Herewith then a furious battel began; in which yet becauſe the Mercenaries, and eſpecally the *Suiſſe*, did not ſhew their accuſtomed valour, all the charge fell on the few *French* that were preſent. None yet fought more bravely among them, than the King; inſomuch that with his own hand (as his enemies did afterwards confeſs) he kill'd the Marqueſs of *Civita de St. Angelo*; which example ſo encouraged the reſt of his Nobility, as they omitted nothing that could be done in ſo little number. During this brunt, *Antonio de Leyva*, throwing down ſome part of the walls of *Pavia*, iſſued forth with the beſt of his Gariſon, and fell on the backs of the *French* then fighting. This wholly routed the Army, inſomuch that all now began to fly. The King had his Horſe kill'd under him, whoſe fall ſo engag'd his leg, that he could not recover himſelf. In this poſture one *Juan de Urbieta*, a *Guipuſcoan*, ſeized on him. But the King declaring himſelf, and ſaying he yielded to the Emperor, *Urbieta* without offering any violence, received him as his priſoner. The King's leg yet lay under his Horſe; *Urbieta* thinking by this means he was ſure from eſcaping, runs to ſuccour his *Alferes*, who was then in danger of being kill'd, deſiring the King only to take notice that he wanted two teeth before, and that he would remember it as a mark that he took him firſt. With that one *Diego de Avila* came, to whom the King alſo naming himſelf, and ſaying he was already yielded to the Emperor, *Diego* demanded, whether he had given any Gage thereof? The King ſaying, None was required, *Diego* laid hold on his Sword, (which was bloody) and his Gauntlet, and therewithal delivered him from his Horſe, by the help of one *Pita*, who for his pains took his Order of St. *Michael* from him. This ſo much troubled the King, that, not knowing how to help himſelf, he offered a great reward to the Souldier to let it alone, which yet the Souldier denied, ſaying he would carry it to the Emperor. The King being now on foot, divers ſouldiers came in, and as they obſerved ſome contention among thoſe that took him, would without further enquiry who he was, have kill'd him. But one *Monſieur de la Motte* (or *Pomperante*, as the *French* have it, a *French* man,) coming by chance thither, kneel'd to him, and kiſſing his hand with all reverence, made them know how rich a prize they had got amongſt them; The King yet caus'd him to riſe, ſaying only, that he ſhould behave himſelf like that man he had ever eſteemed him. Herewith, a great concourſe flocking in, the King was perſwaded to take off his Helmet, which was no ſooner done, but every one took a part of a great Pennache (or Feather) he wore thereon; others more preſumptuouſly, cut pieces out of a Coat of Arms or *Sobraveſte* he wore over his Harneſs. At all which this magnanimous King ſhewed no other countenance, than that of ſcorn, as

1525.

Sandov.

1525. knowing ſufficiently, that in deſpight of fortune, his valour had made him comply with his dignity. The chance of thoſe who deſerted the King was various; many were killed, others, thinking to paſs the *Teſin*, were drowned, among whom ſix thouſand Mercenaries (the moſt part *Suiſſe*) are accounted. *Henry de Albret*, thinking to ſave himſelf by flight, was taken. And now the bruit being general that the King was made priſoner, divers *French*, who might have eſcaped, out of a ſingular piety to their King, returned, and yielded themſelves, ſaying, they would not return to *France* and leave their King behind them. The firſt of the chief Commanders that came in, was the Marqueſs *de Peſcara*; after him, *Guaſto*, and others; at laſt *Bourbon* being Armed *Cap a Pee*, and with his Sword all bloody in his hand, comes towards the King, *Sandov.* who hereupon demanded his name: Being told, he ſtept (if one may believe the Spaniard my Author) a little behind the Marqueſs *de Peſcara*. He alſo perceiving the King troubled, goes to *Bourbon*, and (after he had told him that the King was there) demanded his Sword; which *Bourbon* without more adoe rendred, and thereupon, running to the King, and lifting up his Beaver, caſt himſelf on his knees, and humbly demanded his Royal hand to kiſs; which yet the King refuſed. Hereupon *Bourbon*, with tears in his eyes, ſaid, Sir, if you would have followed my counſel, you ſhould not have needed to be in this eſtate, nor ſo much blood of the French Nobility ſhed as ſtains the fields of *Italy*. The King hereupon turning his eyes to heaven, now replied only, Patience, ſince Fortune hath fail'd me. Further diſcourſe was hindred by the Marqueſs of *Peſcara*, who, deſiring the King to mount on Horſe-back, conducted him towards *Pavia*. But the King intreating he might not be kept priſoner in a Town before which he had lately ſo puiſſant an Army, they brought him to a Monaſtery adjoyning. *Henry de Albret*, the Comte of St. *Paul*, and divers other priſoners being delivered to ſeveral Cuſtodies. From hence the King was remov'd to a ſtrong Caſtle called *Piciquiton*, and there kept with a great guard of Spaniards under *Hernando de Alancon*, till other order came from *Charles*; to whom, immediately after this Victory, a Meſſenger was ſent, to acquaint him with the ſucceſs. In the mean time *Francis* was uſed with all reſpect. For more oſtentation whereof, *Charles de la Noy* brought (before Supper) the Baſon, the Marqueſs of *Guaſto* the Ewer, and *Bourbon* the Towel; which courteſie he requited, by inviting them to ſit at the Table with him. After which, repuiring ſome Money might be furniſhed to him for play, he paſs'd away the time the moſt chearfully he could.

March 10. *Charles* was at *Madrid* when this great news came to him. The ſence he ſhewed of it, was ſuch as became a wiſe Prince, and one that was not himſelf exempted from a Quartan. He compared the afflictions of Fortune with thoſe of nature, and found the difference ſo little, that he thought himſelf to want even the advantages

tages of Liberty as much as a Priſoner. For, if he conſidered *Francis* as in the cuſtody of his Guards, he lookt upon himſelf as in the cuſtody of his Phyſitians, and confin'd to his Chamber by a ſtronger hand than that which held *Francis*. Moreover, he ſaid, it was not for Chriſtians to rejoice for their Victories againſt each other, but only againſt Infidels. 1525.

Our King was not advertiſed hereof ſooner than the Ninth of *March*. When a Meſſenger from the Princeſs *Margarite*, Governeſs of the *Low-Countreys*, informed him of all the particulars. *Charles de la Noy* not omitting alſo to * write to him thereof (as I find by our Records.) This being brought to council, it was thought fit the King ſhould comply with his Confederate *Charles*, in giving ſome publick demonſtration of joy. Therefore the King going to St. *Pauls*, and cauſing a Maſs to be ſung in a more ſolemn manner than ordinary, ſeem'd to celebrate the Victory, though inwardly not ſo well ſatisfied thereof. For, as he conſidered *Charles* Grown now to more greatneſs than ſtood either with reaſon of State, or due terms of neighbourhood, He deliberated with his Council what was next to be done. Whereupon it was thought fit to ſend immediately Ambaſſadors into *Spain*, with charge to repreſent unto the Emperor, how that this war being made at a Common charge, it was reaſonable the fruit ſhould redound to both. That the part his Highneſs pretended to, was Inheritance in *France*, which he deſired (upon ſome fitting Treaty with *Francis*) might be reſtored. To which his Highneſs doubted not but the Emperor would afford his beſt aſſiſtance; as well becauſe it was juſt in it ſelf, as that it was according to their late Treaty. Or, if this could not be obtained by fair means, to require the Emperor, by vertue of the ſaid Treaty, to proceed in levying Forces to make War in *France*, wherein his Highneſs would likewiſe concur. Neither could his Highneſs doubt that the Emperor would refuſe to embrace this motion, ſince the benefit hereof would finally accrue to him; for as his Highneſs was purpoſed to ratifie and make good the intended Match betwixt the ſaid Emperor and the Princeſs *Mary*, who was heir not only to the Crown of *England*, but to his Titles in *France*, ſo all at laſt would devolve on him; which therefore might be thought ſo beneficial and advantageous, as he ought not to think it much to deliver up *Francis* to his Highneſs hands, upon conſigning of the ſaid Princeſs to his. Eſpecially, ſince by an expreſs Article of the foreſaid Treaty, they were bound mutually to deliver all uſurpers upon each others Right. All which being founded upon a ſolemn agreement, confirmed by Oath, could not ſeem inſolent, what indiſpoſition ſoever might be found in the Emperor to accompliſh it. Notwithſtanding which, if (as it was moſt likely) this propoſition ſhould take no effect, and that the Emperor would derive the total benefit of his prize upon himſelf; that his Highneſs yet might make ſo much uſe thereof, as with

March 9.

Feb. 24.

March 22.

Record.

more

1525. March. more juſtification to take that order which pertain'd to his preſent occaſions, and the peace of Chriſtendom. This advice being approved by all, a Diſpatch was made, and given to *Cuthbert Tonſtal* (Biſhop of *London*, and Lord Privy Seal) and Sir *Richard Wingfield* Knight, ſent then to *Spain*; wherein alſo an Interview betwixt our King and the Emperor was propoſed. In which further it was offered, that the Princeſs *Mary* ſhould be given into the Emperors hands upon fitting conditions. Many other particularities conducing to the ends above-mentioned were ſpecified therein; though for the reſt it ſeem'd not probable to ſome of our Counſellors, that the Emperor would accept them, as being reſolved (what promiſe or advantages ſoever was preſented to him) to ſuffer none elſe to partake of the profit or honour he had acquired in his Victory. This propoſition finding no reception in *Spain*, but what was before imagined, Our King returns to that brave and wiſe reſolution he had formerly taken, to make himſelf Arbiter of Chriſtendom, and to fall on him who interrupted the publick peace. Many reaſons alſo of great moment concurred to this Reſolution: For the Lady *Margarite* (Regent of *Flanders*) who ought by the late League to have raiſed forces againſt the *French*, began already to treat with them concerning an accommodation. Beſides, the *Flemings* being grown ſtrong by Sea, had not only very inſolently treated divers of our Merchants, but, contrary to a Remonſtrance made in that behalf, had inhanſed our Coin, and thereby ſecretly deriv'd great ſums into their Countrey. Again, when demand was made only for re-payment of that Money which was lent the Emperor in his greateſt neceſſity, nothing yet was returned but a dilatory and frivolous excuſe. Neither was our King ignorant of the Treaty which the Emperor had already begun for the ranſoming of *Francis*. Nor of a match purpoſed with *Donna Iſabella* of *Portugal*; which reflected on his Daughters reputation. Laſtly, the Popes Breve, repreſenting the danger of Chriſtendon through the proſperity of the Turk, (who had now taken *Belgrade*, and *Rhodes*, and thereby open'd ſeveral ways to *Italy* and *Germany*) and, together, exhorting all Chriſtian Princes to join againſt the Common Enemy, had ſo prevail'd with our King, that he throught fit to lay aſide all Ambition to recover his inheritance in *France*, and to endeavour an univerſal Peace. In the furtherance of which good deſire, as the remembrance of the kind interview betwixt him and *Francis* did operate not a little, ſo the reputation that *Francis* had goten by his courage ſhewed in this late action, had kindled in the mind of our generous King a compaſſionate zeal for his delivery. Therefore, at the requeſt of the Kings Mother of *France* (who by the mediation of *Giovanni Joakim* had much diſpos'd our King to return to his ancient friendſhip with *Francis*) He ſent to *Cuthbert Tonſtal* Biſhop of *London*, and Sir *Richard Wingfield* Knight, his Ambaſſadors in *Spain*, to entercede for the delivery of *Francis*; who

who had begun the way already in a particular Letter to *Charles*; where, after an excuſe of his not ſooner writing, becauſe they who had charge of him would not permit it, he ſaid that the greateſt Comfort he found in this his miſerable condition, was, that he had fallen into the hands of ſo generous a Prince, who therefore would not force him to any thing, which might be unjuſt to require, or impoſſible to perform. That he hoped therefore ſufficient ſecurity would be accepted for his dilivery, ſince thereby, inſtead of detaining an unuſeful Priſoner, he ſhould make a King his Slave. Howſoever, that it was more profit to have him a faithful friend, than to ſuffer him to die deſperate. None yet was ſo vigilant and intentive either for his delivery, or the General good of the Kingdom, as Madan *Loüiſe* his Mother (Regent of *France*) who, by many forcible and reiterated Ambaſſades and treaties, drew moſt of the Chriſtian Potentates and Republicks to favour the deliverance of her Son. Through her care alſo *Andrea Doria* (General of the *French* King's Galleys) re-conducted the Duke of *Albany*, who, though far ingaged in the Enemies Countrey, did yet, without any conſiderable loſs of his men, return to *Marſeilles*, April 25. 1525. April 25.

The Emperor now finding that all the chief Princes and Eſtates in Chriſtendom would puiſſantly labour for the delivery of *Francis*, ſent *Adrian de Croy Seigneur de Beaurain*, with certain propoſitions dated *March* 25. 1525. unto him. Whereof this is the Sum. *Sandov.*

That an univerſal Peace and League ſhould be concluded betwixt all Chriſtian Princes, and ſecurity on every ſide be given, for the continuance thereof.

That either of them two, with twenty thouſand Foot, and five thouſand Horſe ſhould invade the Turk.

That, for further ſecurity, the *Dauphin* ſhould Marry with the Princeſs *Maria* (Daughter to the King of *Portugal* and the Queen *Leonora*,) and the Dowry ſhould be a mutual diſclaim in each others Inheritance.

That the King of *France* ſhould reſtore and leave the Dutchy of *Burgundy* in that eſtate and manner as it was in the time of *Charles* the laſt Duke thereof; And *Theroüene*, *Heſdin*, and all that was uſurp'd in *Artois* ſhould be re-deliver'd.

That *Charles* Duke of *Bourbon* ſhould re-injoy his former eſtate, and (particularly) have the County of *Provence* confer'd upon him, which thereupon he ſhould hold under the Title of King thereof.

That the King of *England* ſhould have all reſtor'd that appertain'd to him, or otherwiſe was agreed upon.

That all the followers of the Duke of *Bourbon* ſhould be reintegrated in their former poſſeſſions.

That the Prince of *Aurange*, *Don Hugo de Moncada*, the *Seigneur* de *Bonze*, and *d' Antroy*, ſhould be ſet at liberty, and all reſtor'd

1525. ſtor'd to the Prince of *Aurange*, which was taken from him in the Wars of *Bretaigne*.

That Madam *Margarite*, Aunt to the Emperor, and *La Reyna Germana*, ſecond Wife to *Ferdinand* of *Spain*, with divers other Princes and great Perſons (particulary nominated in the ſaid Articles) ſhould be righted in their juſt demands, for reſtitution in all things taken ſince the War.

That all Commerce betwixt the ſubjects ſhould be renewed hereupon.

That the chief Parliaments of *Paris* and elſewhere in *France*, ſhould ratifie the agreement.

That the King himſelf, being at liberty, ſhould with all due ſolemnity, confirm it, as alſo the *Dauphin* as ſoon as he came to the age of fourteen.

When theſe Articles were preſented to *Francis*, ſome of them ſo diſpleas'd him that he is ſaid in a fury to have drawn his dagger, and ſpoken theſe words, It is better for a King of *France* to die after this manner. Inſomuch that *Hernando de Alancon* who was preſent, haſtily took it from him. Yet, to gratifie the Emperor, he gave order that the Prince of *Aurange*, and *Don Hugo de Moncada* ſhould be ſet at liberty. *Moncada* coming to Court, brought two Letters, one from the King, the other from Madam *Loüiſe*, his Mother, by which (as alſo by the intervention of the Arch-Biſhop of *Ambrun*, and *Philip Chabot Seigneur de Brion*, and others who were deputed Ambaſſadors upon this occaſion) theſe conditions following were offered. *Sandov.*

That *Donna Leonora* (Siſter to the Emperor, and Relict to the late King of *Portugal*) ſhould not be given in Marrage to *Bourbon*, (howſoever promiſed him) but to the King of *France*, and the *Infanta Donna Maria*, her daughter, unto the *Dauphin*.

That the Dukedom of *Burgundy* ſhould be held by *Francis*, as the Dowry to the Queen *Leonora*, and ſhould be left to the Heirs-males betwixt them. If no ſuch iſſue yet ſhould happen, that the Dukedom ſhould then deſcend to the ſecond Son of the ſaid Emperor; If the Emperor ſhould have no Sons, but Daughters, that then the ſecond Son of the King of *France* ſhould Marry one of the ſaid Daughters, and have *Burgundy* for her Portion.

That *Francis* would renounce all the Right and intereſt he had in *Milan*, *Genoüa*, and *Naples*, together with all debts and Penſions that could be demanded on that occaſion.

That he would releaſe the ſuperiority and dominion that he pretended over *Flanders*, and *Artois*, and for this purpoſe would obtain the conſent of all the Eſtates of *France*.

That he would reſtore *Heſdin* and *Tournay*.

That, for the Lands he held near the River of *Soam*, he would pay the Emperor a juſt price.

That, when the Emperor ſhould go to his Coronation into *Italy*; or

or otherwiſe that if he or his Brother *Ferdinand* ſhould make War, he would pay half the charges of his Army, and go alone in Perſon. 1525.

That, if the Emperor would paſs into *Italy* by Sea, he would command all his Galleys and other Shipping to attend him at *Barcellona*.

That, if the Emperor would make War againſt the Infidels in *Africa*, or *Greece*, he would pay half the charges of the Army, and attend the Emperor in Perſon.

That all the Emperor had Capitulated with the King of *England*, and all that was due by way of borrowing or Penſion to the ſaid King, ſhould be paid and accompliſhed, in ſuch manner that the Emperor might be altogether diſcharg'd, and free thereof.

That he would reſtore to the Duke of *Bourbon*, all his Eſtate, and pay him his Penſions, and moreover give his Daughter in Marriage to him, together with ſuch a Portion as was fitting her degree and quality, and that when any Army ſhould be rais'd by him for the Emperors ſervice, the ſaid Duke ſhould be General, in caſe the King went not himſelf in Perſon, and that all former diſſervices, and unkindneſſes ſhould be forgotten.

That ſufficient ſecurity by the Parliament of *Paris* ſhould be given of theſe particularities.

Upon mature Deliberation taken concerning theſe propoſitions, The Emperor replyed, that the Dutchy of *Burgundy* was his Inheritance, and therefore not to be diſpos'd of, or alienated according to any mans fancy or arbitrement. Concerning the Marriage propos'd between *Francis* and *Leonora* his Siſter; That he could reſolve nothing without the conſent of *Bourbon*, to whom ſhe was promiſed. That for the buſineſſes of *Italy*, he would innovate nothing, but rather keep all quiet. As for *Naples*, ſince *Francis* had no right thereunto, there was no occaſion to make uſe of his diſclaim. That it would content him much to have *Burgundy* reſtor'd in the ſame manner that his great Grand-Father *Charles* injoyed it. And that he accepted well of his Shipping, when he would think fit to go and receive his Crown in *Italy*. The *French* on the other ſide inſtead of *Burgundy* offered great ſums of Money; but *Charles* inſiſting ſtill upon *Burgundy*, nothing was concluded. So that, leaving *Madrid*, the Emperor went to hold his Cortes (or Parliament) at *Toledo*; where, among other things, it was Petitioned by the Eſtates aſſembled, that the Emperor, being now of age to Marry, ſhould take to Wife *Donna Iſabella Infanta* of *Portugal*, and not the Princeſs *Mary* our Kings Daughter.

While affairs paſſed thus betwixt *Charles* and *Francis*, Our King, who knew he might have uſe of Money on theſe occaſions, and (howſoever) did well underſtand that the maintaining of a ſure Peace at home, was almoſt as coſtly as the making of a War abroad, adviſed with his Council how to provide himſelf. Yet as the Car- March

1525. dinal had undertaken the King ſhould never want, as long as he might manage the publick affairs; So they gladly diſcharged themſelves on him. But Princes ought to take heed, into whoſe hands they commit their extraordinary power, leſt it hazard their ordinary, it being the Clue of that Labyrinth of State, which ought not raſhly to be put into anothers hand. Neither ſhould they inforce any thus violently; when buſineſs may be done in a calm and gentle manner. The Harmony of Government conſiſting in ſuch a delicate proportion, that no one part can ſafely be ſtrained higher, unleſs the reſt may well be tuned and accorded thereunto. This appear'd in the Actions of this year, (being the ſeventeenth of the Reign of our King,) when, Commiſſions being granted April. forth into all the Counties of *England*, for the levying the ſixth part of every Lay-mans goods, and the fourth of the Clergies; The people in general took it ſo ill, that it was like to have grown to a Rebellion; alledging, Firſt, That theſe Commiſſions were againſt the Law. Secondly, their own Poverty, and that the King, ſince the fourteenth of his Reign, had of them twenty fifteens. But as *Hall.* this ſeem'd to be done, without that the King was fully inform'd thereof, ſo when the ſequence appear'd, it was reſolved to diſavow the whole proceeding. Our King therefore, by Letters ſent through all the Counties of *England*, declar'd, he would have nothing of them but by way of benevolence: This got the Cardinal many a Curſe, and the King as many Bleſſings. Notwithſtanding, under this Title of Benevolence, he required great ſums May 8. of all his Subjects, and particularly of the Citizens of *London*. But one of their Lawyers anſwered, that by the Statute, *primo Ric. tertii, Cap. ſecundo*, ſuch Benevolences were forbidden. But it was replied, That Laws made by uſurpers oblige not Legitimate Princes, That *Richard* the Third, was not only a Tyrant, but a Murtherer of his own Nephews, and therein more fit to ſuffer by the Law, than to make any. Therefore his intentions were, only by popular and licentious ways, to obtain the favour of the Commonalty, as having no other means to ſubſiſt. That our King, being the true and undoubted Heir of the Crown, could be tyed hereby no further than it pleas'd himſelf; it being abſurd to think, that a Statute invented by a factious aſſembly, and approv'd no otherwiſe than by a Criminal in the higheſt degree, ſhould bind an abſolute and lawful Monarch; wherefore if they had no better evaſion, it were not fit to mention this. Thereupon the Cardinal purpoſing to examine them one by one, concerning what they would give, he begins with the Lord Mayor: But the Mayor deſiring leave not to declare himſelf fully, till he had ſpoken with the Common-Council of the City, the Cardinal wiſht him and the reſt of the Aldermen to come to him privately, and give what they would. In the Country yet, (where they ſeem'd more obſtinate,) ſome Ring-Leaders of the people (who had taken Arms) upon the

the perſwaſion of the Dukes of *Norfolk* and *Suffolk* ſubmitted themſelves, and were brought to *London*, and there impriſoned. 1525.
The King yet, perſiſting in his intention not to puniſh any on this occaſion, (as being advertis'd that the Common ſort of his ſubjects excuſed themſelves by their want of means, and not of affection, to ſupply his Majeſties occaſions) brought the matter to the Council-Table, where the Cardinal, by way of Apologie, ſaid, that he had done nothing herein, without adviſing firſt with the Judges who affirm'd poſitively, the King might lawfully demand any ſum by Commiſſion, and that the Council of State confirm'd this courſe. But the King ſaying that he was made believe his Subjects were richer than indeed he found them by this Commiſſion, all the fault was laid on the falſe informers, and Pardon given to all thoſe who had denyed the former Benevolence. Hereupon the offenders were brought to the Star-Chamber; where after a ſharp charge laid againſt them by the Kings Council-Learned, the Cardinal ſaid, That, notwithſtanding their grievous offences, the King, in conſideration of their poverty, had granted them his gracious Pardon, upon condition, that they would give in ſureties for their good behaviour henceforth. But they replying, that they had none; The Cardinal firſt, and after him the Duke of *Norfolk* ſaid they would ſtand bound for them, wherewith they were diſcharged.

Hall. *Hall.* *Hall.*

The Cardinal, who by a Concurrence of the Papal and Regal authority, had ſuppreſſed divers Monaſteries, and given that Terror to the reſt, that he drew large ſums from them, would not yet deſiſt ſo, but continued ſtill his purpoſes of converting the profits of all thoſe, which by any colour might be reputed Supernumerary, unto other uſes; among which while he reduced the Monaſtery of *Beggam* in *Suſſex*, a diſguiſed company, in ſtrange viſors, taking the Canons along with them, reimplaced them, and ſo departed; promiſing, at the ringing of their Abbey-Bell, to come at all times to their ſuccours. But theſe Apparitions did not long haunt the houſe; for the King's Council, underſtanding hereof, ſo examined the Canons, that they at laſt confeſſed the Authors, who therefore were ſent for, and grievouſly puniſhed. The Cardinal thus every way eſtabliſhing his authority, was thought by this time, between Viſitations, making of Abbots, Probats of Teſtaments, granting of Faculites, Licences, Diſpenſations, and many other ways, beſides the great Penſions he had from Foreign Princes, to have made his Treaſury equal to the Kings (Notwithſtanding the ſums he often tranſmited to *Rome*;) in which way of inriching himſelf, one *John Allen* Doctor of Law, his Chaplain, accompanyed with a great Train, and riding from one Religious houſe to another, in a kind of perpetual progreſs, or viſitation, did the Cardinal no little ſervice. But as this at laſt became a publick grievance, ſo the King took notice of it, in ſo ſharp a

Hall.

1525. ner, that the Cardinal was enforc'd, not only to excuſe himſelf with much ſubmiſſion, but to promiſe never to do ſo any more; proteſting withal that he had made a Laſt Will or Teſtament, wherein he had left a great part of his Eſtate unto his Highneſs. Upon which ſubmiſſion of the Cardinals (as I take it) the King ſent him this Letter, written all with his own hand, as we find it in our Records.

As touching the matter of *Wilton*, ſeeing it is in no other ſtrain than you write of, and you being alſo ſo ſuddenly (with the falling ſick of your ſervants) afraid, and troubled; I marvel not that it overſlipped you as it did. But it is no great matter, ſtanding the caſe as it doth; for it is yet in my hand, as I perceive by your Letter, and your default was not ſo great, ſeeing the Election was but conditional. Wherefore, my Lord, ſeeing the humbleneſs of your ſubmiſſion, and though the caſe were much more heinous, I can be content for to remit it, being right glad, that, according to mine intent, my monitions and warnings have been benignly and lovingly accepted on your behalf, promiſing you, that the very affection I bear you caus'd me thus to do. As touching the help of Religious Houſes to the building of your College, I would it were more, ſo it be lawfully; for my intent is none, but that it ſhould ſo appear to all the world, and the occaſion of all their mumbling might be ſecluded and put away; for, ſurely, there is great murmuring of it, throughout all the Realm, both good and bad. They ſay not that all that is ill gotten is beſtow'd upon the College, but that the College is the cloak for covering all miſchiefs. This grieveth me, I aſſure you, to hear it ſpoken by him, which I ſo intirely love. Wherefore, me-thought I could do no leſs, than thus friendly to admoniſh you. One thing more I perceive by your one Letter, which a little me-thinketh toucheth Conſcience, and that is, that you have received Money of the Exempts for having of their old Viſitors. Surely, this can hardly be with good Conſcience. For, and they were good, why ſhould you take Money? and if they were ill, it were a ſinful act. Howbeit your Legacy herein might, peradventure, *apud Homines* be a cloak, but not *apud Deum*. Wherefore, you, thus moniſhed by him who ſo intirely loveth you, I doubt not, will deſiſt, not only from this, (if Conſcience will not bear it) but from all other things, which ſhould tangle the ſame; and, in ſo doing, we will ſing, *Te Laudant Angeli atque Archangeli, Te Laudat Omnis Spiritus.* And thus an end I make of this, though rude, yet loving Letter, deſiring you as benevolently to take it, as I do mean it, for I enſure you (and I pray you think it ſo) that there remaineth, at this hour, no ſpark of diſpleaſure towards you in my heart. And thus fare you well, and be no more perplext. Written with the hand of your loving Sovereign and Friend,

HENRY R.

One

One of the liberties which our King took at his ſpare time, was to love. For, as all recommendable parts concur'd in his Perſon, and they, again, were exalted in his high dignity and valour, ſo it muſt ſeem leſs ſtrange, if amid the many fair Ladies, which liv'd in his Court, He both gave and receiv'd temptation. Among whom, becauſe Miſtreſs *Elizabeth Blunt*, Daughter to Sir *John Blunt* Knight, was thought, for her rare Ornaments of nature, and education, to be the Beauty and Miſtreſs-piece of her time, that entire affection paſt betwixt them, as at laſt ſhe bore him a Son. This Child, proving ſo equally like to both his Parents, that he became the beſt Emblem of their mutual affection, was call'd *Henry Fitz-Roy* by the King, and ſo much avow'd by him, that having now attain'd the age of Six years, He was made Knight publickly, and the ſame day created Earl of *Nottingham*, Duke of *Richmond* and *Somerſet*, and Lieutenant General beyond *Trent*, and Warden General of the borders of *Scotland*, and * ſhortly after Admiral of *England*. After which he was firſt bred up together with *Henry* Earl of *Surrey*, in the Caſtle of *Windſor* (which the Earl elegantly decribes in a Sonnet extant in his works) from whence (*November* 1532.) they went both together to Study at *Paris*, which acquaintance and friendſhip was indear'd again by a Match of the ſaid Duke with *Mary* the Earls Siſter; by whom yet he had no iſſue. Howbeit, I find, he was very perſonable and of great expectation, inſomuch that he was thought, not only for hability of body but mind, to be one of the rareſt of his time, for which reaſon alſo he was much cheriſhed by our King, as alſo becauſe he had no iſſue Male by his Queen, nor did, prechance, expect any.

1525.

Hall.

1519.

June 18.

* July 19.

1532. Novemb.

The Cardinal had now Built his fair Palace at *Hampton*-Court. But as he wiſely conſidered, that it would but add unto that envy for which he had already ſuffered ſo much, He gave it the King, who, in exchange, permitted him to live in *Richmond* Houſe.

The Credit that *Luther*, at this time, had gotten among thoſe *Germans*, who were either weary of their obedience to the ſtricter parts of Eccleſiaſtical Government, or deſirous to reform the errours and abuſes of it, (now ſo general, as even Pope *Adrian* himſelf confeſſed that many were crept into *Rome*) had prevailed far. Yet as others examined which way he took to make his Reformation, ſo they thought Religion yet not ſo exactly formed, but that it might be caſt in a better Mold. Therefore not only *Huldricus Zuinglius*, at *Zurich*, began a Reformation ſomewhat varying from that of *Luther*; but one *Muncer* in the confines of *Turingia*, having invented a Doctrine, oppoſite enough to the Church of *Rome*, yet differing from the other Reformers in many things, Publiſhed it with

1525. with much applauſe of the inferior ſort. For, as he fain'd he had power from God to depoſe Princes, and ſubſtitute others, and that, again, He taught, All goods ſhould be Common; and divers other Articles tending to Popularity, He was followed by huge multitudes, To temper yet this licentious Doctrine, He Preached Auſterity of life; counſelling Men to Prayers, Faſtings, and all other devotions, which might argue, His intention was not ſo much to invade other Men's poſſeſſions, as to eſtabliſh a Moderate Equality. Thus did he ſeaſon falſehoods with Truths, and ill with good, while the vulgar ſort, who could not diſtinguiſh betwixt them, admired, and followed all. To remedy theſe ſo dangerous aſſemblies and opinions, the cheif neighbouring Princes raiſed ſome Forces; and prevail'd ſo far, that, at laſt, they diſſipated, and kill'd their whole Army. Neither was it difficult, they, for their beſt defence, ſinging only a Pſalm, (whereby they invoked the Holy Ghoſt) while *Muncer* (who it ſeemes truſted leaſt to his own Doctrine) fled away; yet being purſued and taken, together with his Companion *Phifer*, they ſhortly after loſt their Heads. His Sect yet took not its end ſo; as being
1534. revived again, in part, not many years after, by *John* of *Leyden* and *Knipperdoling*, who, to his other impieties added this, that in a throng of People, being born upon Mens Shoulders, he would breath on them, and bid them receive the Holy Ghoſt.

Such was the generous diſpoſition of our King, that not only for *Francis* then a Priſoner, but the expulſed King of *Denmark*, *Chriſtiern*, he interceded with his beſt Offices. Therefore, this year, he ſent *Henry Standiſh* Biſhop of Saint *Aſaph*, and Sir *Henry Baker* Knight, to perſwade his Subjects to recall him home; whence yet nothing had chaſed him ſo much as the guilt and horror of ſhedding ſo much blood there (ſo great a perſecutor is Cruelty of it ſelf:) But the angry *Danes* obſtinately denyed. The next inſtance then was, that at leaſt his Son (who was Nephew to *Charles*) might ſucceed. But this alſo was refuſed; They alledging they durſt not commit the ſupreme power over themſelves, into the hands of one, who, they thought would imitate and revenge his Father.

The *French* King being weary of his reſtraint in *Italy*, had deſired he might be removed into *Spain*; both as he hoped the Emperor might be perſwaded to come to ſpeech with him there, and as he reputed change of Priſon to be a ſecond Liberty. *Charles de la Noy* alſo concurr'd in this requeſt, as
June 7. fearing he might be taken out of his hand. Having obtained this favour, he found not yet the Emperor ſufficiently diſpoſed to ſee him, though otherwiſe he could not complain of

of being either debar'd the pleaſure of hunting, or any other reaſonable exerciſe. Finding yet ſtill that the Emperor did eſtrange himſelf ſo much, as not to vouchſafe him one viſit, he fell ſick; for he did not think that his misfortunes had made him forfeit his dignity; or that, for being a Priſoner of War, he had extinguiſhed his Title to be a King. *Charles* underſtanding this, whether out of Compaſſion, or fear of loſing *Francis*, reſolves to go to him at the *Alcazar de Madrid*, where, coming to his Chamber he embrac'd *Francis*, who ſaid preſently, *Monſieur, veys aqui vueſtro eſclavo*; The Emperor anſwered again, *No Sino, buen hermano, y amigo libre.* The King replied, *No Sino, vueſtro eſclavo.* The Emperor anſwered again, *No Sino, libre amigo, y buen hermano*; and thereupon wiſht him to have a care of his health, which he much deſired, and that his buſineſſes would ſucceed well. The Emperor not thinking this courteſie ſufficient, returns to ſee him the next day again; which ſo comforted *Francis*, that he amended ſuddenly. Whereupon the Emperor reſolved to return to his buſineſſes at *Toledo.* But Madam *Marguerite* Dutcheſs *de Alancon*, Siſter to *Francis*, hearing of his ſickneſs, made haſte to ſee him. Whom therefore the Emperor courteouſly entertained, and accompanied to her Brother's lodging; where, after many affectionate proteſtations, he left them together, and ſo held on his Journey to *Toledo*, whither *Madam de Alancon*, not many days after, followed him, mediating ſtill the delivery of her Brother, to whom ſhe deſir'd the Emperor to give his Siſter *Leonora*, upon the conditions above-mentioned; and that the King, her Brother, would provide for *Bourbon* a match equal to this; wherein ſhe was thought to have intimated her ſelf, as being newly made Widow by the death of her Husband, the Duke of *Alancon.* As for the Right of *Burgundy*, ſhe deſired it might be determined by way of Juſtice before the 12 Peers of *France*; but the Emperor diſliked this, ſaying, that he was contented that learned perſons in the Law on both ſides ſhould treat hereof, and that the Pope ſhould be Umpire; but Madame alſo did not approve this. The *French* Writers add, that promiſe was made by *Francis* at this time alſo, that the King of *England* ſhould receive intire ſatisfaction. *Madame de Alancon*, finding at laſt how little her intreaties prevail'd, deſired leave to return, and by the way to ſee her Brother, which was granted. Here then was propos'd how he might eſcape; which was at laſt reſolv'd, by changing cloaths with a *Negro*, who carried Wood and Coals to the King's Chamber, and blacking his face with Coleduſt. Which invention as it is like enough to be a Lady's, and ſomewhat better than the lending him her Mask, I have thought fit to give her the honour of. This plot was kept ſecret, only betwixt the King, his Siſter, one *Clement Chappion* his Chamberlain, and another Treaſurer. But *Monſieur de la Roche-pot* ſtriking this *Chappion* on ſome occaſion, he, as being diſcontented and without

1525.

Sept.

De Serr.

Sandov.

1525. out remedy, flies to the Emperor, and diſcovers all. The Emperor yet would not ſuddenly believe it, nor without better inquiry into the buſineſs; as not thinking (if one may believe the *Spaniard* my Author) that the King of *France* would, in ſuch an undecent and unworthy manner, procure his liberty. Therefore, in favour of this conceit of the Emperor's, he ſo repreſents the crime, as if *Francis* ought to believe, that it was more Honorable for him to ſtay in priſon, than eſcape it; howſoever it ſeems his ancient courage was ſo far from being abated, as it increaſed rather by his cloſe keeping. Therefore he ſent *Monſieur de Montmorency* to tell *Charles*, that he was reſolved to endure any thing ſooner than to reſtore *Burgundy*, or yield through conſtraint that which did not become him, ſo that he deſired only to know the place of his Impriſonment, and number of his attendants. The Emperor anſwered, that he was content to appoint him a place, and to nominate thoſe that ſhould guard him; for the reſt, proteſting that it griev'd him much that *Francis* ſhould refuſe to do that for the Ranſom of his perſon, which he was bound to do, for the ſake of Juſtice only. But ample Commiſſion and conſent being come from Madame the Regent and Parliament of *Paris* to tranſact a further agreement, *Francis* demanded that he might have *Donna Leonora*, and, for her Portion, the Counties of *Maſcon* and *Auxere*, promiſing, in conſideration thereof, to reſtore the reſt of *Burgundy*. But to this demand of *Leonora*, *Charles* anſwered again, that being obliged to the Duke of *Bourbon*, he could do nothing therein without acquainting him firſt: yet, to ſatisfie the King, he ſent to *Bourbon*, to let him know how much it concerned him, that *Francis* might have *Leonora*. But *Bourbon* (it is doubtful whether out of his former contumacy and ſtubbornneſs, or out of a violent affection to the Lady) anſwered, that he had loſt great poſſeſſions in *France*, only to have the Honour to match in that nearneſs of blood to the Emperor. This ſeem'd much to trouble *Charles*: at laſt, ſending for *Bourbon*, he offer'd him, in recompence of *Leonora*, the Inveſtiture of *Milan*, which *Bourbon* accepted; the writings or Patent for which my Author ſaith he ſaw in *Simanca*, not expreſſing in the mean while, how this concurr'd with the Inveſtiture, which, a little before, he ſaith, the Emperor gave to *Franciſco Sforza*. To reconcile which difficulty, I ſhall produce (out of a diſpatch extant in our Records) the reaſon, as I conceive it; for though *Charles* had (together with the poſſeſſion) granted *Sforza* the Inveſtiture of *Milan*, yet it was upon condition, that *Sforza* ſhould pay him twelve hundred thouſand Crowns towards his charges, and that the ſaid Inveſtiture ſhould remain in the hands of *la Noy*, till the War of *Italy* were ended. But *Sforza* finding this too hard, joined with the adverſe Party, and gave occaſion to the Emperor to beſtow the Inveſtiture on *Bourbon*. And he had reaſon to be content therewith; For *Donna Leonora*, hearing

Sandov.

of

of this competition about her, decided the controverſie in favour of *Francis*; ſending word to the Emperor, that ſhe had rather be a Queen of *France* than Wife to *Bourbon*. 1525.

This while, the Pope, the *Venetians*, and Princes of *Italy* on the one ſide, Leagued together for the defence of *Italy* againſt the Emperor, inviting alſo our King into the Trtaty; our King on the other, mediated for *Francis*; neither did it diminiſh the ſuſpicion entertained by them that *Charles* pretended to an univerſal Monarchy in Chriſtendom, becauſe, preſently upon the making of *Francis* Priſoner at *Pavia*, he had written to our King, as well as to all other the ſaid principal Perſons, that he ſhould take it well if they did not meddle with the Dominions and Eſtates of *Francis*, ſince, being his priſoner, he could do no leſs than protect him againſt all others. While theſe Treaties proceed, *Henry de Albret*, King of *Navarre*, found a more compendious way to his Liberty, by corrupting his guards. The *Count de Saint Paul* alſo deviſ'd means to eſcape without paying any Ranſom.

Madam *Louiſe* the French Regent continuing her Meſſages and Ambaſſades, ſollicites our Kings aſſiſtance for the redeeming of her Son. To which purpoſe a Treaty was concluded at *Moore*, Auguſt 30. 1525. in this manner, as our Records have it. Aug. 30.

That all injuries, done and received in the late War between *England* and *France*, ſhall be forgotten.

That confederation for mutual aid and intercourſe of Merchandiſe ſhall be eſtabliſhed, together with free paſſage of ſubjects through each others Dominions, ſo that they exceed not a hundred armed men.

That all taxes and impoſitions laid by each of the Kings upon the Subjects or Merchants of the other, within theſe laſt 50 years, ſhall be extinct, and no new ones impoſed.

That one ſhall not protect the diſobedient Subject of the other, nor entertain Rebels, Traytors, or Fugitives; but, within Twenty days after due requiſition made, ſhall deliver them up.

That no letters of Repriſals (or Merk) ſhall be granted on either ſide, but only againſt the principal Delinquents, and that but in caſe of denial of Juſtice.

That, if the ſubjects of the one or the other offend againſt this Treaty, they ſhall be puniſh'd, without that the Treaty ſhall, any way therefore, be infringed.

That, preſently upon the ratification of this Treaty, the priſoners of war on the one and the other ſide ſhall be releaſed, as alſo the French Hoſtages.

That, in this Treaty ſhall be comprehended the friends and Allies of each Prince. That is to ſay, on the King of *France* his part, the Pope, the Kings of *Scotland*, *Hungary*, *Navarre*, and *Portugal*; the State of *Venice*, the Dukes of *Savoy*, *Lorain*, *Gueldres*, *Ferrara*; the *Suiſſe*, the Marqueſs of *Montferrat* and *Saluzzo*. On the King of

1526. *England*'s part, the Pope, the Emperor (*Charles*, the King of *Denmark*, of *Hungary*, of *Portugal*, Queen *Mary* Dowager of *France*, Lady *Margaret* Arch-Dutcheſs of *Auſtria*; *Ferdinand* brother to the Emperor, Arch-Duke of *Auſtria*; the State of *Venice*; the *Biſhop* of *Liege*; the Dukes of *Urbin*, *Cleve*, *Tuilliers*, the houſe of *Medici*, the *Florentines*, the Duke of *Ferrara*, the *Hanſiatick* Towns; Upon condition, that they accept it within Six Months next enſuing. Whoſe violating of the League yet ſhould not be underſtood as a breach betwixt the principal contractors.

That yet this Treaty ſhall not extend to the maintaining of any receiv'd into it, ſo, as it ſhould hinder the principal contractors to recover their Right and Lands whatſoever, with-held by any, ſince the Treaty of 1518.

The King of *England* ſhall do his beſt endeavour, to procure, as ſoon as may be, the Liberty of *Francis*, and to induce the Emperor to accept reaſonable conditions.

That this Treaty ſhall be ſign'd and ſworn to by *Francis*, within three Months, if he get his liberty ſo ſoon; or otherwiſe he ſhall confirm it by his Letters, written with his own hand, and ſent to King *Henry* the Eighth. And that Madam *La Regente* ſhall renounce all exceptions, which in Law (as by *Senatûs-Conſultum Velleianum &c.*) may be taken againſt this Treaty.

That the Cardinal of *Bourbon*, Duke of *Vendoſme*, Duke of *Longueville*, *Comte Saint Paul*, Mr. *de Lautrech*, Mr. *de Montmorency*, Mr. *de Preſſi*, *Comte de Maleure*, and *Comte de Bryan*, as alſo the principal Cities, *Paris*, *Lyons*, *Orleans*, *Toloſa*, *Amiens*, *Roüen* &c. ſhall, under the Obligation and forfeit of all their goods, ſwear hereunto, to obſerve this Treaty, within three Months after the date hereof, (in which alſo their heirs and ſucceſſors ſhall be comprehended) giving, for this purpoſe, a Bond with their Seal annexed, to be ſent to the King of *England*, within three Months. Moreover certain Bonds were given for the debts and moneys hereafter ſpecified: *viz* Two Millions of Crowns, at the payment of fifty thouſand Crowns at a time in *Calais*. The firſt payment to begin within forty days after the Treaty. The ſecond the firſt of *November* next enſuing. The next the firſt of *May* following, and ſo from term to term, and year to year, till the whole be ſatisfied to King *Henry* or his ſucceſſors. After the payment of which, the ſaid King *Henry* ſhall, during his life (and no longer) receive yearly the ſum of 100000 Crowns.

Aug. 30. This Treaty was concluded *Aug.* 30. by the Commiſſioners on both ſides; *viz.* For our King, *William* Arch Biſhop of *Cant.* *Thomas Cardinalis Ebor.* *Thomas* Duke of *Norfolk*, *Henry* Marqueſs of *Exon*, *Charles* Earl of *Worceſter*, *Nicholas* Biſhop of *Ely*, and Sir *Thomas More*. For the Regent of *France*, were *John Brinon Premier Preſident de Roüen*, and *Giovanni Joachim Seigneur de Vaulx*, Mr. *de Hoſtel* to *Loüiſe*. And was * proclaim'd in *September*; and, in *October* *John*

* Sept. 8. Octob.

Taylor

Taylor Doctor of Law, and Sir *William Fitz-William* were ſent into *France*, to take the Regents Oath. By another Treaty this year at *Lyons*, I find the Regent obliged her ſelf to pay all the Arrerages due to *Mary* our Kings ſiſter out of *France*, by reaſon of her marriage with *Louis* the Twelfth, as alſo to ſuffer her to enjoy the profits and rents of all the Lands left her in joynture, according to the Treaty *Octob.* 8. 1514. 1525. Octob. 8. 1514.

Franciſco Sforza being informed now that a ſtrong League was intended by the Pope, *Venetians*, and divers others, againſt the Emperor, was perſwaded to enter into it, upon pretence that by their aſſiſtance he might ſufficiently defend his Countrey. But this was his ruine; for the Marqueſs of *Peſcara* underſtanding hereof, or (as others ſay) ſuppoſing it only, queſtions him: but *Sforza* denying conſtantly that ever he gave his conſent thereto, the Marqueſs demanded the Caſtle of *Milan* and *Cremona* for ſecurity. But *Sforza* utterly refuſing this, the Marqueſs of *Peſcara* took *Milan* and laid ſiege to the Caſtle (which only remained to *Sforza*,) and after *Peſcara*'s death (which hapned by ſickneſs) the Duke of *Bourbon*. The concluſion hereof was, that *Sforza* (by conſtraint) yielded the Caſtle upon conditions, and ſo retired at length to the Army, raiſed by the League againſt *Charles* the year following. July 24. 1526.

The Emperor who had now treated of marriage in many places, *concluded it at laſt with his Niece, *Donna Iſabella* the *Infanta* of *Portugal*, and daughter of *Manuel* and *Maria*, *Infanta* of *Caſtile*, whom yet he married not till *January* 2. 1526. Alledging for his excuſe to our King, that at the requeſt and petition of his Cortes or States aſſembled at *Tooledo*, he had preferred this Lady before our Princeſs *Mary*, which therefore he deſired might be underſtood for no breach of friendſhip. Our King alſo conſidering the tender age of his daughter, not yet fit for marriage, and that it was an incongruity to ally himſelf with a Prince againſt whom he might have ſo ſoon occaſion to draw his Sword, (as may appear by the League above mentioned,) ſeemed very well content to relinquiſh the Match, upon this mutual conſent. After which time the friendſhip betwixt them grew ſo remiſs that at laſt it diſſolved wholly: Inſomuch that the Ambaſſadors of both ſides were recalled home, and *Charles*, who before was accuſtomed to ſign his Letters to King *Henry* always *Tuus Filius & Cognatus*, from henceforth ſubſcribed only *Carlos*. Novemb. *Sandov.*

But I the leſs wonder that the Emperor now began to take State upon him, ſince a richer booty than that of *Francis* fell into his hands, that is to ſay *Peru*, where the Mines of *Potoſi* (and many others which for want of Labourers remain to this day buried and unuſeful) were firſt diſcovered. Which began in this manner. *Sandov.*

Vlaſco Nunnez having firſt *diſcovered, from a high Rock near *Darien*, the *Mar del zur*, * *Hernando de Magellanes* (a *Portuguez*, but ſet forth by *Charles* the fifth) afterwards found out the Straits that *1513. *1520.

1525.

bear his name, and paſſed through them with two Ships to the Iſle of *Zebut*, and others in that Sea; but * dying in the voyage, his companions went on to *Borneo* and the * *Moluccaes*, and many other places, whence one of the Ships * returned to *Spain*, by *Capo de Buena Eſperanca*, and ſo firſt compaſſed the Globe, *Juan Sebaſtian de Cano* a *Biskayan* being Pilot. The other Ship was taken by the *Portuguez*. Yet, as the Continent towards that Sea was unknown ſtill, *Franciſco Picarro* a Spaniard living at *Panama* (being the furtheſt part of Land, where it is narroweſt, betwixt the North Ocean and the *Mar del Zur*) firſt attempted the * diſcovery of that Coaſt, bending at laſt to *Peru*, which afterwards he * Ranſackt; for landing his men at a time when there was diſſenſion betwixt *Guancar* the lawful heir, and *Atabaliva* his younger brother, he made his advantage thereof, to the overthrow of both, and of *Atabaliva* firſt, in this pretext. *Picarro* having his Forces in a readineſs, ſent a Dominican Frier, with a Croſs in one hand, and a Breviary in another, who (as the Spaniſh writers have it) told *Atabaliva* (then in the head of his Army) that God was Three, and yet One, and that he made the World of nothing, and that he ſent his Son down to be born of a Virgin, and to die for our ſins upon a Croſs, like that he bore; and that he roſe the third day, and left Saint *Peter* his Vicar, and the Pope his Succeſſor, who had given the Emperor that Countrey, if he would not believe this; commanding him alſo to make War, and deſtroy him and his Religion. *Atabaliva*, who though full of ſuperſtitious Worſhip, did yet venerate a ſupreme Deity (confeſſed in theſe parts by the name of *Viracocha*, or *Baracocha*, as in *Mexico* by that of *Teuth*, and in *Guatimala* by that of *Cabovil* in *Nueva Eſpanna* by that of *Yocahuvaguamaorocoti*,) and together acknowledged Virtue and Vice, Reward and Puniſhment, after this life, as believing the ſoul Immortal; found this Ambaſſage ſtrange, and ſaid, he believed no Power on earth was ſuperiour to himſelf, yet that he would be glad to hold friendſhip with the Emperor; and for the Pope, he wondred at him, becauſe he gave that which was none of his. As for his Religion, he would not diſpute it, ſince it was ſo ancient, and received in his Countrey. And, for worſhiping of Chriſt that died, he ſaid, he thought he had done better in worſhiping the Sun and Moon that never died, as believing (which I find by the Hiſtory of the *Incas*, written by one of that Blood Royal) that the Sun did go about the World on Gods errand. Laſtly, he demanded, who told him that God had made the World on that faſhion? To which the Dominican anſwering, the Breviry, and together putting it in his hands; *Atabaliva* turning over a few leaves (as if he expected ſome ſuch expreſſion from thence) but finding he underſtood nothing, threw it away, wherewith the Dominican exclaiming that the Goſpel was on the ground, and demanding vengeance, *Picarro* diſcharged ſome great Ordnance, and his ſmall ſhot againſt him, wherewith the terrified *Indians* fled, and

* 1521. April. Nov. 8.
* 1523. Sept. 6.
* 1525.
* 1533.
Sandov.
Hiſtoria de los Incas by *Garcilaſſo de Vega.*

and *Atabaliva* was taken priſoner. *Atabaliva* hereupon offers for his ranſom as much Gold and Silver as would fill a great Sala or Room where they were, which being accorded and almoſt performed in effect, *Picarro* upon falſe pretences moſt cruelly put him to death, though Baptized; For which alſo the Conſpirators and *Picarro* himſelf came at laſt to ill deaths, as the Spaniſh Writers obſerve. Howſoever for the preſent, the *Spaniards* proceeded in their Cruelty to others, of all ſorts, eſpecially of the Blood-Royal, and got infinite Treaſure, their Temples being planked with Gold, and their graves full of Treaſure and Riches, which were buried with them. But I doubt I have inſiſted too long upon theſe Barbariſms. 1525. 1541.

The year of our Lord 1526. was now entred when *Charles* required his Council to adviſe him whether it were beſt to deliver *Francis*; and if ſo, upon what terms? *Charles de la Noy* Vice-Roy of *Naples* did not think fit the Emperor ſhould loſe the benefit of ſuch a prize; Therefore, though he perſwaded the delivery of *Francis*, yet he wiſht that the moſt advantageous conditions that could be made thereof ſhould be taken ſuddenly, and before the League, which was now forming againſt him, could be concluded. That, this being done, the Emperor was more free to provide for the buſineſs of *Germany*, to reſiſt the Turk, and to ſuppreſs *Barbaroſſa* and other Pirates that infeſted his Seas. Others and among them *Guattinara* the Chancellor, ſaid, that there was leſs danger of *Francis* being in priſon than abroad; eſpecially, ſince it did not appear ſufficiently, the new League would be broken off, when *Francis* had his liberty, but rather ſtrengthned and confirmed, as being not directed ſo much for the delivery of *Francis*, as oppoſed to the greatneſs of *Charles*. That many things might be done while *Francis* was unſetled, which would take no effect when he were reſtored to his former eſtate. Therefore, his beſt courſe were to find ſome means to have the children of his Priſoner, and other affairs in *France*, within his power, that ſo nothing might interrupt his Deſigns elſewhere. And that himſelf ſhould undertake his journey to *Italy*, before he let go ſo dangerous an Enemy, who if once looſe, would rather make War for redeeming his loſſes, than improve them by ſtanding to any ſervile conditions. Laſtly, that his imperial Majeſty ought to believe, that if *Francis* being in Priſon would not make reſtitution of *Burgundy*, he would much leſs do it when he were free. *Hernando de Vega* ſaid, that *Francis* was very well in *Madrid*. To which, *Guattinara* replied reſolutely, there might be uſe both of detaining and letting him go; only, ſince he ſaw ſo little hope of performance (what ſecurity ſoever were given) he thought it beſt either to let him go freely, and therein put a perpetual Obligation upon him, or to keep him ſtill where he was. This was a wiſe advice. The Emperor yet choſe rather to adhere to them who counſelled him 1526.

to

1526. to prevail himself of the occasion. Therefore, considering *Francis* offered his two Sons for Hostages, while himself going to *France*, mediated with the Estates for restoring *Burgundy*; and that, without this personal intercession there was little hope of any satisfaction or peace; he thought it best to deliver *Francis*, as that which at least would declare to the Christian World, that he desired the quietness thereof. So that upon the fourteenth
Jan. 14. of *January* a Treaty (called the Concord of *Madrid*) was concluded, the Tenor whereof according to the most substantial Articles is here set down.

Charles the Emperor, and on his part *Charles de la Noy* Vice-Roy of *Naples*, *Hugo de Moncada*, and *Juan Aleman*: And *Francis le Roy Tres-Christien*, and on his part *Francis* Archbishop of *Ambrun*, and *Jean de Selue Premier President du Parliament de Paris*, and *Philip Chabot*, having Commission from *Madam Louise* Regent of *France*, in virtue of the power given her by *Francis*, before his imprisonment (thought therefore Authentick,) did upon the day and year above written Treat, Accord, and conclude these Articles following:

1, That there shall be a good and secure Peace and Confederation established between the two Princes, so that they shall be Friends to the Friends, and Enemies to the Enemies of each other, for the mutual defence of their Estates and Kingdoms,

2. That Traffick and Commerce shall be renewed betwixt their Subjects on either side, upon payment only of their ancient Customs; and that the Sea shall be secured from Pirates.

3. That the Dutchy of *Burgundy*, together with all the rights, members and dependences, shall in the name of him, his Heirs, and Successors, be restored within the space of six weeks after the delivery of *Francis*, notwithstanding any Decrees of Parliaments, pretence of the Salick Law, or other claim whatsoever.

4. Because yet, for better performance of these things which are required, the French King alledgeth it is necessary that he should presently repair home; it is therefore concluded, that upon the tenth of *March* next, the said French King shall be set free in that part of *France* which adjoins to *Fuentarabie*; upon condition nevertheless, that at the same hour and instant, (the number of Attendants on both sides being equal) the Dauphin his eldest Son, and Duke of *Orleans* his second Son, or (instead of the said Duke) *Monsieur de Vendosme*, *John* Duke of *Albany*, *Monsieur de St. Pol*, *Monsieur de Guise*, *Monsieur de Lautrech*, *Monsieur de la Val*, the *Marquis de Saluzzo*, *Monsieur de Rieux*, the great *Seneschal* of *Normandy*, the *Mareschal de Montmorency*, *Monsieur de Brion*, and *Monsieur de Aubigny*, should be delivered to *Charles* as Hostages till all Conditions were performed; which being done, that within the space of four weeks a Ratification by the Parliament of *Paris*, and all the other Parliaments of the said Kingdom shall be delivered

unto

1525.

unto *Charles*; whereupon the ſaid *Charles* doth ſwear and promiſe upon the Faith of a Prince to return the ſaid Hoſtages, upon condition yet that the third Son of *Francis*, being Duke *de Angouleſme*, ſhould at the ſame time be given to *Charles*, to be kept and brought up in his Court, and with him. And the French King doth furthermore promiſe, in caſe theſe things were not performed, (that is to ſay, the reſtitution of *Burgundy*, and the reſt in ſix weeks, and the Ratification in four more enſuing) to return Priſoner to *Charles*. And, for this purpoſe, as he had ſworn already, ſo when he is at liberty, he ſhall renew and confirm the ſaid Oath, before ſuch Commiſſioners as *Charles* ſhall appoint. And that upon his ſaid return to *Charles*, his Hoſtages ſhould be delivered.

5. That *Francis*, for Himſelf, his Heirs, and Succeſſors, ſhall renounce his whole right, claim, and intereſt, in all the Kingdoms, Eſtates, Lands, and Seigneuries, which are now in the poſſeſſion of *Charles*, and eſpecially in the Kingdom of *Naples*, as well for all propriety therein, as any penſion or payment demanded for the ſame. And that the Inveſtiture thereof, given by the Apoſtolick See to his Anceſtors or him, as alſo all Capitulations made to this effect heretofore, ſhall not be available for the ſaid Kingdom of *Naples*, or for the Eſtates of *Milan*, *Genoüa*, *Aſti*, and their dependencies. And that the Grants or Writings to this purpoſe, whether Pontifical or Imperial, or only between him and *Franciſco Sforza*, ſhould be delivered to *Charles*. And that *Francis* ſhall, for Him, his Heirs, and Succeſſors, renounce all his demand or claim to *Flanders*, and to all other places, thereabouts, now in the poſſeſſion of *Charles*, together with all ſuperiority over them. In lieu whereof, the ſaid *Charles* promiſeth to relinquiſh his Title to *Perone*, *Montdidier*, the Counties of *Boulogne*, *Guiſnes*, *Ponthieu*, as alſo all the Cities, Towns, Seigneuries on both ſides of the River of *Soam*, now in the poſſeſſion of *Francis*, reſerving only the Countreys of *Maſconois*, *Auxerrois*, and *Bar ſur la Seine*, which ſhall be diſpoſed of particularly hearafter. And that all other Lands, Towns, and Seigneuries not mentioned in the preſents, ſhall be reſtored to the Eſtate in which they were before the Wars.

6. That, in performance of the League defenſive betwixt both Princes, they ſhall ſuffer no hoſtile Forces to paſs through either of their Countreys, to the hurt or prejudice of the other, and that either Prince being invaded, may have of the other five hundred Horſe, and ten thouſand Foot, with convenient Artillery (or any leſs number) at the charges of the demandant; and, for the offenſive League, that it ſhall extend no further than to their joint Enemies, and by the mutual advice and conſent of both.

7. That a marriage ſhall be had and made betwixt *Francis* and *Leonora*, a diſpenſation for that purpoſe being firſt obtained; and that ſhe ſhall be delivered to *Francis* at the ſame time that the Hoſtages ſhall be reſtored by *Charles*.

8. That

1526. 8. That her Dowry ſhall be two hundred thouſand Crowns *de Soleil*, beſides her Arras (*i. e. a pledge given in* Spain *where marriages are recorded*) which did appertain to her upon her firſt marriage.

9. That, beſides the aforeſaid ſum, the Emperor out of his abundant love to his ſiſter *Leonora*, ſhall beſtow the Counties of *Maſconois*, *Auxerrois*, and the Seigneury of *Bar ſur la Seine* on her, and her heirs males only.

10. That the Queen *Leonora* ſhall renounce all rights of Goods or Heritage that might deſcend to her from the part of her Grandfather *Maximilian*, her father King *Philip*, or Queen *Joan* her mother, ſave only the collateral ſucceſſion, in caſe the ſaid *Charles* or his brother *Ferdinand* ſhould die without iſſue.

11. That the ſaid Queen *Leonora* ſhall receive from *Francis* Jewels to the value of fifty thouſand Crowns, to remain to her, her heirs and ſucceſſors.

12. That if the ſaid *Francis* and *Leonora* ſhall have iſſue male betwixt them, the eldeſt ſon ſhall be Duke of *Alancon*, and have in poſſeſſion the dutchy thereof, conferr'd on him by *Francis*, and on his mothers part the above-mentioned Counties of *Maſconois*, *Auxerrois*, and *Bar ſur la Seine*, and that his other ſons ſhall be provided for according to their degree, reſerving ſtill the right belonging to the Dauphin. And that the daughters ſhall have ſuch portions as the Kings of *France* uſually give.

13. That, in caſe *Francis* die before *Leonora*, ſhe ſhall have for Arras ſixty thouſand *Livres Tournois* of Rent, yearly to continue, during her life only.

14. That, in caſe *Leonora* ſurvive *Francis*, it may be lawful for her to return to *Spain*, *Flanders*, or *Burgundy*, and carry with her all her goods and Jewels; and that before the ſolemnity of the ſaid Marriage, the ſeal of the ſaid King and Dauphin, and of the eſtates and principal places of the ſaid Kingdom of *France*, together with due acknowledgments and obligations ſhall be given, to the intent they may be forc'd to the accompliſhment thereof, both by way of Excommunication, and alſo by Arreſts, and detaining of all perſons of the ſaid Kingdom, of what quality ſoever.

15. That a marriage ſhall be ſolemnized between *Francis* the Dauphin, ſon and heir to *Francis*, and *Donna Maria* daughter to *Leonora* and her firſt husband *Manuel*, in words *de futuro*, when the ſaid Lady ſhall attain to ſeven years of age, and by words *de preſenti* when ſhe ſhall be twelve. And that her brother *Don Juan* King of *Portugal* ſhall give his conſent thereunto, with ſufficient proviſion for her Dowry.

16. That the ſaid Infanta *Maria* ſhall at twelve years of age be conducted to *France*, and conſigned to *Francis*.

17. That *Francis* ſhall uſe his beſt means to diſpoſe *Henry d' Albret*,

1526.

bret, together with his Brothers and Sisters to renounce their Title to *Navarre*, or when they could not procure any such disclaim, not to assist him or them in their pretences. That *Francis* likewise shall use his best means to dispose the Duke of *Gueldres* to leave (after his life) the Dutchy of *Gueldres* and County of *Zutphen* to *Charles*, or when he could not procure this, to assist *Charles* with three hundred Horse and four thousand Foot to recover it.

18. That *Francis* shall not give assistance to Duke *Ulricke* of *Wittenberg*, nor to *Robert de la Mark* or his sons, against the said *Charles*, but rather help him to repress them, nor interpose himself by way of Treaty in favour of any Potentate of *Italy*.

19. That when *Charles* shall pass in person to *Italy*, *Francis* shall lend the said *Charles* his Fleet in the *Mediterranean* Sea, being well equipped, for the space of three Months, and no longer. And, whereas *Francis* promised to assist *Charles*, both with Men and Artillery for his Voyage, he should in lieu thereof, pay in money two hundred thousand Crowns, giving him good security for it; yet, if the Emperor demanded five hundred great Horse, together with sufficient Artillery, *Francis* should furnish them at his own proper costs.

20. That because *Charles*, for the better drawing *Henry* King of *England* to his party against *Francis*, had promised to pay unto the said *Henry* the sum of one hundred thirty three thousand three hundred and five Crowns yearly, in lieu of those Pensions and Rents which the said *Francis* was bound to pay to *Henry*, and during such terms as was agreed betwixt them; (as by a Treaty concluded at *Windsor*, *June* 19. 1522. more at large appeareth,) and because, since that time until a late League betwixt *Francis* and *Henry*, all the said money remains in arrear; And because *Francis* saith, he hath taken order with *Henry* for the payment of the said intire sum; therefore it is agreed, that *Francis* shall save harmless the said *Charles* from all demands on the part of *Henry*; And furthermore, shall give an Authentick Copy of the said late agreement betwixt him and *Henry*, sometime before the end of four Months next ensuing the date hereof; as also of the Acquittances he shall receive from *Henry* upon payment of the said sums, which shall be such, as *Charles*, his Heirs and Successors may remain indemnified and discharged thereof for ever. So that, if *Charles* should be called upon for satisfaction in these particulars, *Francis* shall take the business on himself, and defend it as his own, without that *Charles* shall be any way molested therein.

21. That, because this particular Treaty is made in the way of a General League, intended to be agreed on and concluded hereafter against Turks, Infidels, and Hereticks; therefore,

1526. that ſupplication ſhould be made in both their names unto his Holineſs, that he would write unto all Chriſtian Princes and Eſtates to joyn herein; as alſo to Authorize a Cruzada for the ſaid Enterpriſe; to endure at leaſt for three years next enſuing, not exempting Eccleſiaſtical perſons from it. And, if need be that *Charles* and *Francis* ſhould go in perſon to this Holy War by Sea, that then they ſhall join and unite their forces together with thoſe of the great Maſter of the Knights of Saint *John* of *Jeruſalem*, and the *Genoueſe*; or, if the danger appear not ſo great, as to require their preſence in the ſaid War, that then a General for conducting the ſaid forces ſhall be appointed by *Charles*; or, if otherwiſe it ſhould be thought neceſſary themſelves ſhould go in perſon, that then Ambaſſadors and Commiſſioners ſhould be appointed to reſide in each others Dominions, for the determining of all differences that ſhould ariſe in their abſence.

22. That, becauſe *Charles* Duke of *Bourbon*, together with divers of his Friends, Allies, and Servants, did for a while abſent themſelves from *France*, and the ſervice of *Francis*, and that for this cauſe the Dutchies of *Bourbon*; *Auvergne*, *Chaſteleraut*, the Counties of *Clermont*, *&c.* had been taken away from them, it is agreed, that *Francis* preſently, or at furtheſt in ſix weeks after his delivery, ſhall reſtore unto the ſaid Duke of *Bourbon*, as well as to all the reſt of his Friends, Allies, and Servants, (whether Eccleſiaſtical or Secular) their former poſſeſſions, together with the juſt value of all the Goods that have been taken from them, as alſo the Writings or Deeds by which the ſaid Poſſeſſions were formerly held, and alſo the true profit of the ſaid Lands and Poſſeſſions, during their abſence, and to ſtay all ſuits and proceedings againſt them on this occaſion. Furthermore, that the ſaid Duke ſhall not be conſtrained perſonally to appear in the *French* Court, but that he may adminiſter, and diſpoſe of all his Eſtate and Poſſeſſions, by ſufficient Deputies and Officers appointed thereunto, and receive the Revenues thereof, in ſuch place as himſelf ſhall chuſe, when it were out of *France*, And that the ſaid Officers ſhall not be moleſted in execution of their charge. And, as for the Right the ſaid Duke of *Bourbon* pretends to the County of *Provence*, and the Dependencies thereof, it is agreed that a juſt and equal hearing and deciſion thereof ſhall be permitted and given before competent Judges, whenſoever the ſaid Duke ſhall re-commence his former ſuit therein; and that the ſaid Duke, his Friends, Allies, and Servants, may without prejudice to their Rights or Poſſeſſions ſtay or continue in the ſervice of the Emperor. And that, for performing of all theſe particulars above mentioned, *Francis* ſhall give good and ſufficient warrant and aſſurance, according to form of Law, and the terms uſual in this caſe.

23. That

1526.

23. That, before the fifteenth of *February* next, all Priſoners on both ſides, and particularly *Philibert* Prince of *Aurange* ſhall (without paying any Ranſom) be ſet free, and return to their ſeveral Countreys, unleſs their Sovereigns by mutual conſent do otherwiſe determine.

24. That all Rebels and Fugitives on either ſide ſhall be remanded, (only thoſe in the Dutchy of *Milan*, *Genoüa*, and County of *Aſti* excepted) who ſhall be freely pardoned, and within ſix Months reſtored to their former Eſtates. As for thoſe who are charged with heinous crimes of that nature, as they cannot be returned home, without ſcandal and inconvenience, it is agreed, that upon a Months warning they ſhall depart from thoſe places to which they are retired, upon the penalty of being apprehended, and ſent to their lawful Sovereign or Superior.

25. That all Prelates and Eccleſiaſtical perſons, as alſo all Subjects, of what condition ſoever, ſhall on either ſide return to their former Places, Eſtates, and Poſſeſſions, notwithſtanding any Confiſcation, Gift, or Alienation thereof whatſoever.

26. That, becauſe in the Cortes of *Caſtilla*, the Conſuls and Univerſity of *Burgos* had complained of divers loſſes they had received, contrary to ſome ancient Priviledges, (both before and ſince theſe Wars) which they pretend to hold from the Anceſtors of the moſt Chriſtian King as Duke of *Bretaigne*, it is therefore agreed, that upon verification of the particulars, the ſaid priviledges ſhall be confirmed, and a friendly end made, or otherwiſe Juſtice done on the offenders.

27. That, becauſe the Cloths made in *Catalunna*, *Roſellon*, *Cerdenna*, and other places of the Crown of *Arragon*, are not permitted to be carried through the Territories of *France* into other Countreys without danger of Confiſcation; it is therefore agreed, that paying their ancient Cuſtoms, they ſhall have a free way and paſſage, both by Sea and Land, along all the French Dominions.

28. Becauſe Madam *Margarite*, Aunt to *Charles*, hath much mediated this peace; and becauſe a certain Neutrality, by the conſent of *Charles*, was accorded betwixt her and *Francis*, for the Countreys in her poſſeſſion, during their late Wars, according to which ſhe ought to enjoy the County of *Carlois*, and certain Granaries of Salt, *&c.* notwithſtanding which, they have by force been taken from her; It is agreed therefore, that they, together with the profits in arrear, ſhall be reſtored to her, during her life only. And, that afterwards they ſhall deſcend on *Charles*, and his heirs.

29. That, becauſe the Queen *Donna Germana de Foix*, Widdow

1526. dow of *Arragon*, ſaith, ſhe had received a definitive ſentence in the Parliament of *Paris*, by which the Towns and Lands of *Marceni*, *Turſen*, *Gavierdey*, and *Gavaret* are adjudged to her; It is agreed that *Francis* ſhall ſee the ſaid ſentence executed by ſtrong hand, if need be.

30. *Item*, Becauſe *Philibert de Chaalon*, Prince of *Aurange*, ſince his ſervice of the Emperor, hath had divers places and rights in *Dauphine* and *Bretaigne* taken from him by *Francis*, and ſome moneys detained; It is agreed, that he ſhall be reſtored to his former poſſeſſions, and the ſaid moneys paid, and good and ſpeedy juſtice done him in his other demands.

31. *Item*, Becauſe *Philip de Croy* Marquis of *Areſcon*, pretends to divers Lands, and other Rights in *France*, which ſince theſe Wars have been taken from him; it is agreed he ſhall be reſtored to them, and juſtice done him in his other demands.

32. *Item*, Becauſe the Princeſs of *Chimay* pretends to certain Goods and Inheritance deſcended to her, as in the Right of the *Seigneur de la Brit* her Father, as alſo to ſome Goods of her Mother and Brethren; It is agreed that good and ſpeedy Juſtice be done her.

33. *Item*, That *Henry* Count of *Naſſaw* ſhall have right done him by *Francis* for part of the Dowry of his Wife.

34. *Item*, That *Adolpho* of *Burgundy*, *Seigneur de Beures*, Admiral of *Flanders*, ſhall be reſtored to his right of the Caſtle and Lands of *Crevecœur en Cambreis*, in the manner he held it before the War.

35. *Item*, That *Monſieur Charles de Pompet*, Camarero to the Emperor, ſhall have the money reſtored him, which contrary to the Priviledges of the Univerſity of *Paris*, he was conſtrained to pay for the ranſom of his children, Students there, when the late war began.

36. *Item*, That *Guillaume de Vergi* ſhall have right done him for the Seigneury of *Sau-de ſier en Perchois*.

37. *Item*, That the Seigneurs *de Frenes*, *Conde de Gaures*, *Monſieur Audriano de Croy*, *de Reulx*, *de Meleny*, *Conte de Spinay*, and *Sieur de Reulx*, ſhall have the Goods reſtored which they enjoyed before theſe late Wars.

38. *Item*, That the *Marquis Antonio de Saluzzo* his Mother and Siſters, as alſo *Frederico de Bangy* ſhall have thoſe Goods reſtored, which were taken in theſe late Wars, and Juſtice done them.

39. *Item*, That the *Seigneur de Monago* Biſhop of *Graſo* ſhall be replaced in his Biſhoprick, and Juſtice done to him, and againſt thoſe who killed his brother.

40. *Item*, That the *Seigneur de Luz* ſhall be reſtored to his poſſeſſions which he enjoyed before he entred the Emperors ſervice; and

and good and ſpeedy Juſtice done in certain Lands he pretends deſcended to him from his Anceſtors during thoſe Wars. 1526.

41. *Item.* That the Pope, the King of *England*, *Hungary*, *Poland*, *Denmark*, *Portugal*, and *Scotland*, *Don Ferdinando* brother to *Charles*, (and his Lieutenant-General of the Empire) *Madam Margarite* Aunt to the Emperor, the Electors and other Princes of the Empire, (who are obedient to the Emperor) the Seigneurs of the Ancient Leagues and Cantons of *High-Germany*, may upon notification of their deſire to be admitted into this League, (and not otherwiſe) be received thereinto at any time within the ſpace of ſix months next enſuing.

42. *Item*, That *Francis* being ſet at liberty, ſhall in the firſt Town he ſhall come to within his Kingdom, give Letters Patents for the ratification of this Accord, and ſend them to *Charles*. And that the Dauphin, when he ſhall attain the age of fourteen ſhall likewiſe ratifie them with a ſolemn Oath, in which he ſhall renounce all advantages, which by minority of age he might take hereafter to infringe the ſaid Oath.

43. *Item*, That both *Charles* and *Francis* ſhall ratifie this preſent Capitulation and Agreement, and all that is contained therein, (each for his part) before Ambaſſadors appointed for this purpoſe; and eſpecially *Francis*, when he is free in his Kingdom, ſhall ſwear ſolemnly upon the Evangeliſts in the preſence of the true Croſs, to keep and hold all that is contained in the ſaid Capitulation; and that both of them ſhall ſubmit themſelves herein to the Eccleſiaſtical Juriſdiction and Cenſure, even to the Invocation of the ſecular power to conſtrain them; And that they ſhall appoint their ſeveral Proctors to appear for them in the Court of *Rome*, and before the Pope, where they ſhall voluntarily accept the condition and fulmination of the ſaid Cenſures, in caſe of Contravention; And that neither of them ſhall demand or ſue for abſolution of this Oath or Cenſure, or if they do, that it ſhall not be available without the conſent of the other.

44. *Item*, Becauſe no man may pretend ignorance, it is agreed that this Peace ſhall be publiſhed before the fifteenth of *February* next, both in the Dominions of *Charles* and *Francis*, and eſpecially in the Frontiers, and ſuch other places as have been accuſtomed in the like caſe.

This was Signed: *Francois, Charles de la Noy, Don Hugo de Moncada, Francois Archeveſque de Ambrun, Jean de Selve, Chabot.*

The Treaty betwixt them being concluded in the manner above-mentioned, the Archbiſhop of *Ambrun*, for the laſt Seal and *Sandov.* Jan. 14.

1526. and ſolemnization thereof, ſaid Maſs. This being done, *Francis* coming to the Altar, and putting his right hand upon the Book of the Evangeliſts, (which the ſaid Archbiſhop held) did ſwear by the Sacrament, and the holy Evangeliſts, not to break this Capitulation all the days of his life, nor to give counſel or favour that any other ſhould break it. The like Oath was taken by the Vice-Roy of *Naples*, *Don Hugo de Moncada*, and the Secretary *Aleman* in the Emperors name. (For the Emperor in perſon did not think fit to balance his free Oath, with that of *Francis*, then in reſtraint.) This being performed on both ſides, the Vice-Roy took the Faith and *Pleyto omenaie* (being a kind of homage) of *Francis*, who as a Prince and the moſt Chriſtian King promiſed and gave his fidelity and Royal word to return into *Spain* a Priſoner within the ſpace of ſix Months, in caſe he did not accompliſh all that was there capitulated betwixt them, giving his hands thereupon to be held betwixt thoſe of *Charles de la Noy*. This being ended with much ſeeming content on all parts, the Emperors Commiſſioners went to *Toledo*; where, upon relation to the Emperor of what was done, it was thought fit to ſend the *Seigneur de Praet*, Chevalier of the *Toiſond' Or* who had been in *England*, and was now his Ambaſſador in *France* to meet with the French King at *Bayonne*, and there to require of him, according to the Articles, a new and more ample ratification of his Oath.

Sandov. Some few days after this Treaty (commonly called *Concordia de Madrid*) *Charles de la Noy* having power and Commiſſion from the Queen *Donna Leonora*, privately contracted a marriage with *Francis* in her name, and then having Commiſſion from him again, went to the Queen *Leonora* and contracted a marriage with her in the name of *Francis*. After which time the Emperor treated no more with *Francis* as a Priſoner, but a near Ally; inſomuch that at the next viſit, he offered him the right hand. I obſerve yet the Emperor would not permit *Francis* to enjoy *Leonora* his ſiſter till he had fully accompliſhed the Concord betwixt them. Neither did he, in his laſt words to *Francis*, (being then licenſed to depart) ſeem ſo ſenſible of any thing, as of her honour. At which time alſo (for further obligation of *Francis* unto this agreement) I find by *Sandoval*, he demanded of *Francis* whether he remembred well all that was capitulated betwixt them? *Francis* anſwered, Yes; for further confirmation repeating the moſt particular Articles. *Charles* then demanded, Are you willing to perform them? *Francis* anſwered again, Yes; Adding, he knew no man in his Kingdom would hinder him. And, when you find that I do not keep my word with you, I wiſh and conſent that you hold me for *Laſche & Meſchant*. *Charles* replied, and I wiſh you to ſay the like of me if I do not give you liberty. Whereupon they lovingly bid each other a long farewel. This being done, *Charles* returned.

There

There was much difficulty yet about the exchange betwixt *Francis* and his two Sons, neither could they (almoſt) deviſe how to ſecure it from jealouſie on either ſide. At laſt theſe Articles were agreed. 1526. Feb. 26.

1. That no man at Arms, or other Souldier, might within ten days before or after the exchange and delivery be permitted to come within twenty Leagues of the place; and that thoſe who were come already ſhould retire.

2. That no Gentleman of the *French* Kings houſhold ſhould paſs *Bayonne*, till the King were come to St. *Juan de Luz*.

3. That the number of Foot Garriſons in either Frontier ſhould not exceed a thouſand. And that when Madam *Loüiſe* the Regent had declared whether ſhe would give the two eldeſt ſons of *Francis* in Hoſtage, or the Dauphin only with the twelve others above mentioned, that then it ſhould be adviſed whether the number were to be increaſed.

4. That at the day of the delivery neither man nor woman, neighbour nor ſtranger ſhould be near the place.

5. That ſix days before the delivery, *Charles* ſhould appoint twelve perſons to viſit the Coaſt, on that ſide where the River of *Fuenterabie* joins with *France*: and that four perſons appointed by Madam *Loüiſe* ſhould be ready there to do whatſoever was required for performance of theſe Articles. And that for this purpoſe Madam *Loüiſe* might alſo appoint twelve on the other ſide of the River, whom four on *Charles* his part ſhould likewiſe attend.

6. That neither on one or other ſide of the ſaid River (paſſing near *Fuentarabie*) there ſhould be any Boats or Pinaces, but two (which muſt be of the ſame bigneſs) to paſs *Francis* to the one, and the Hoſtages to the other ſide, and that the twelve Deputies on either part ſhould take order herein.

7. That there ſhould be no Gally, Ship, or Pinace in the Sea within five Leagues of the place appointed for the Delivery.

In ſequence of which Capitulation, it was further agreed, That *Charles de lay Noy*, with twenty five armed men, with Swords and Daggers only, for guarding of the *French* King, and as many with *Monſieur de Lautrech*, in like manner weapon'd, for conducting the two Hoſtages, ſhould come to the ſides of the above-mentioned River; in the middle of which a little Bridge, upon a Bark faſtned with Anchors, ſhould be built, on which yet no body ſhould ſtand; and that two Boats of equal bigneſs, fitted for twenty Oars apiece, ſhould be ready there, of which *Francis* ſhould chuſe one; which being done, twenty Rowers, all *French* and unarmed, ſhould enter his Boat, and bring it to the ſide of *Spain*, at the ſame time, that the other with twenty *Spaniards* unarmed likewiſe. March 15.

1526. likewiſe, ſhould be brought to the *French* Coaſt. That thereupon *Charles de la Noy* conducting the King, and taking ten perſons only with him, ſhould paſs to one ſide of the ſaid Bridge, at the ſame time that *Monſieur de Lautrech* with the Hoſtages, and ten perſons, ſhould likewiſe come to the other. That none of the ſaid perſons yet ſhould put themſelves upon the Bridge, but *Charles de la Noy* with the French King and one other, and *Monſieur de Lautrech* with the two Hoſtages, and Madam *de Briſac* and *Chauvigny*. That thereupon the exchange ſhould be made in one inſtant. Before yet any thing was done the ſame day, that a Boat with four Rowers *Spaniſh* and four *French*, and a Gentleman of either Nation, ſhould viſit the Coaſt on both ſides, and take order that every thing ſhould be prepared. For fear yet leſt ſome ſuppoſititious children ſhould be tendred inſtead of the Dauphin and his Brother, it was agreed further, that the *Seigneur de Praet*, the Emperors Ambaſſadour, ſhould come along with them, while another Frenchman was allowed to attend *Francis* in his paſſage.

Thus upon the eighteenth of *March* 1526. after one whole year and ſome days impriſonment, was *Francis* delivered to his Boat, and by mutual conſent at the ſame time accompanied with twelve *Spaniards* (whereof *Charles de la Noy* and *Hernando de Alarcon* his Guardian were two) to the *French* ſhore, while the Hoſtages, accompanied with the like number, came to the *Spaniſh* coaſt; neither was there any thing more that might be thought remarkable in the performance of all this, but that a ſtay was made while the two children kiſſed their fathers hands, and that his laſt words to *la Noy* confirmed again his promiſe to the Emperor. As ſoon as *Francis* came to his own ground, he got haſtily upon a Turkiſh and ſwift Horſe, and ſuddenly putting Spurs to him (if we may believe *Sandoval*) and caſting one of his Arms over his head, and crying *Je ſuis le Roy, Je ſuis le Roy*, poſted to S. *Juan de Luz*, and the next day to *Bayonne*, where the Lady his mother and many other principal perſons with much anxiety attended him.

I am the more particular in the Relation of theſe paſſages, both as the example is rare, and as it leads to the underſtanding of that which followeth in our Hiſtory; and the rather, for that it was the ſubject that chiefly took up the time and thoughts of our King, whenſoever his proſpect was turn'd on foreign affairs; inſomuch that he might be truly ſaid a principal Actor in them. And now he held it his part to relieve *Francis*. Therefore as he had ſent *Cuthbert Tonſtal* Biſhop of *London*, and Sir *Richard Wingfield*, long ſince into *Spain* to mediate his delivery with the the Emperor, ſo now hearing he was in his way homewards, he diſpatches Sir *Thomas Cheyney* to congratulate his ſafe return, and to take

take his Oath to the Treaty of *Moore* above-mentioned, which *Francis* accepting, ſent a meſſenger immediatly to advertiſe our King of the conditions of his delivery, and to acknowledge that he ow'd him chiefly his liberty, as both *Sandoval* relates it, and our Records, under his own hand, confirm; which fair times produced, afterwards, a more firm correſpondency betwixt them. 1526.

Charles de la Noy & Hernando de Alarcon having in vain ſollicited *Francis*, at *Bayonne*, to accompliſh that part of the late Concord and Agreement he was bound to there, ſeem'd yet to receive ſome ſatisfaction, that they were referr'd untill their coming to *Paris*. (The King pretending he could do nothing, effectually, till he had ſpoken with the principal perſons of the Eſtate and Parliament.) Here again they preſſed *Francis* unto the performance of that he was bound to by ſo many Oaths and promiſes. But *Francis*, for a concluſion, poſitively anſwered, that it was not in his power to diſmember any part from the Kingdom, without conſent both of the ſame part, and the whole Kingdom; And therefore, with many loving words, deſired that his Ranſom might be chang'd to ſome equivalent ſum of Money. But *Charles* would by no means hearken thereunto. Therefore, as he had by Treaty happily detained the Queen *Leonora* from paſſing into *France*, ſo he determined rather (at what price ſoever) to take off the Pope, *Venetians*, and *Franciſco Sforza*, and the *Florentines*, from a League they were entring into with *England* and *Francis* againſt him, than to decline any way the leaſt Article of the late Concord and Agreement. May

This League (called *Clementina & Sanctiſſima*) was begun (as the *French* have it) by the inſtigation of our King, during the Impriſonment of *Francis*, but not perfectly concluded, till about two Months after his delivery. To give this a more auſpicate beginning, the Pope (as the *Spaniſh* Hiſtory hath it) ſent to the *French* King a Relaxation of the Oath he made to obſerve the concord and Treaty of *Madrid*, upon pretext alledged by *Francis*, that thoſe of *Burgundy* would not conſent, by any means, to be alienated from the *French* Crown. *Charles de la Noy & Hernando de Alarcon* finding matters thus diſtemper'd, and unlike to ſort to any good end, deſired leave to return, which *Francis* granted, upon condition that they would go to *Spain* immediatly, and not to *Italy*, whither (in regard of his Government) *la Noy* deſired much to paſs though the *French* Territories. Though others write, and our Records confirm it, that they departed not till the following Treaty was ſworn, at *Cognac*, in their preſence. Which that they might make more ſpecious to the Emperor, they offered him place to enter into it, upon certain conditions. This Treaty, concluded between Pope *Clement* the Seventh, *Francis* the *French* King, *Tillet.* May 22. *Sandov.*

1526. May 22. the *Venetians*, *Franciſco Sforza*, and the *Florentines*, was to this effect.

1. That the contractors of this League and concord ſhall be friends of the friends, and enemies of the enemies of each other. That this Clauſe yet ſhall not extend to the Dominions held by the Pope and *Venetians*, out of *Italy*. And that the ſaid Contractors ſhall, particularly, defend the Perſon and Dignity of the Pope againſt all his adverſaries.

2. That place ſhall be left for the Emperor *Charles* to enter hereinto, if he deſire it, and for *Henry* King of *England*, not only as a Contractor but Protector of this moſt holy League and Concord, as alſo for *Don Hernando*, Arch-Duke of *Auſtria*, and the reſt of the Kings, Princes and Potentates of Chriſtendom, Provided yet, that the ſaid *Charles* ſhall not be admitted hereunto, but upon theſe enſuing conditions. That is to ſay, unleſs he firſt reſtore the two Sons of *Francis*, which he detains as Hoſtages, and take in Lieu of them, ſome reaſonable and fitting Recompence and ſatisfaction. As alſo unleſs he leave the Dutchy of *Milan* freely unto *Franciſco Sforza*, and the reſt of the Eſtates and Dominions in *Italy*, in the form and manner they were before the late War; And unleſs, when he enters *Italy*, to be Crown'd there, he bring with him ſuch Family and Train only, as the Pope and *Venetians* ſhall think fit; which yet is intended ſhall be ſuch, as may take away ſuſpition of violent attempt, and preſerve together the Imperial Dignity; And unleſs within three Months, after the Concluſion of the ſaid Treaty, (the King of *England* entering into it) he pay unto the ſaid King all the Money due to him.

3. That an Army ſhall be raiſed by the ſaid confederates, which ſhall conſiſt of thirty thouſand Foot, two thouſand five hundred Men of Arms, and three thouſand Light Horſe, together with the Artillery and Munition fitting thereunto. Whereof, the Pope ſhould furniſh eight hundred Men at Arms, and ſeven hundred Light Horſe, and eight thouſand Foot: The *French* King forty thouſand Crowns the Month in Money, and five hundred Men at Arms (called *Maiſtres*) comprehending one thouſand Light Horſe: The *Venetians* eight hundred Men at Arms, and one thouſand Light Horſe, and eight thouſand Foot; *Franciſco Sforza*, the Duke of *Milan*, four hundred Men at Arms, three hundred Light Horſe, and four thouſand Foot. That certain *Suiſſe* ſhould be raiſed for the ſaid League, at the charge of the *French* King; who, beſides the above mention'd, ſhall have a powerfull Army to hinder the paſſage of any conſiderable Forces into *Italy*. All which, are to be imployed againſt the Pertubators of the Peace of *Italy*, untill they be reduced to the Eſtate of not being able to keep the Field.

4. That

1526.

4. That, when this Treaty ſhall be ratified by all the confederates, they ſhall joyntly deſire *Charles* the Emperor to reſtore the two Sons of the *French* King, and, in caſe he refuſe, ſhall denounce War to him, till he reſtore them. For the execution whereof (the War of *Italy* being ended) the confederates ſhall furniſh to the ſaid *French* King ten thouſand Foot, one thouſand men at Arms, and a thouſand Light Horſe, or Money for the raiſing and payment of them.

5. That the Confederates ſhall defend each others Eſtate againſt all Invaſion: In which caſe thoſe of *Italy* ſhall furniſh ten thouſand Foot, and two thouſand Horſe to the *French* King, and he as many to them again.

6. That the Confederates ſhall have an Armado of twenty eight Gallies at leaſt, whereof the *French* King ſhall furniſh twelve, the Pope three, and the *Venetians* thirteen, to be imploy'd in this War, unleſs the *French* King have particular uſe of his part.

7. That, for removing all ſuſpition of attempt upon the Dutchy of *Milan*, the *French* King ſhall not only permit the preſent Duke to injoy it, but ſhall defend him againſt all adverſaries, with the proportion of Forces above mentioned, he paying, in conſideration of the claim and expence of the *French* King, ſuch a Penſion (at *Lyons* in *France*) as the Pope and *Venetians* ſhall ordain; which yet ſhall not be leſs than five hundred thouſand Duckets yearly.

8. That, becauſe this peace may be univerſal over *Italy*, all goods taken away in theſe late occaſions, ſhall be reſtor'd, and all men re-inplac'd in their former poſſeſſions.

9. That the *French* King ſhall give ſome Lady of the Blood Royal of *France*, (by the nomination of the Pope) for Wife to the Duke of *Milan*, and ſhall procure the *Suiſſe* to defend his State on all occaſions, as they were formerly accuſtomed. That the *Contado de Aſti*, as being diſtinct from *Milan*, and anciently pertaining to the Houſe of *Orleans*, ſhall be reſtored to the *French* King, or at leaſt the government thereof, to be adminiſtred by the Duke of *Orleans*, ſecond Son to the *French* King, or his Deputy.

10. That *Antonio Adorno* ſhall remain Duke of *Genoüa*, if either he enter into this League, or, otherwiſe, alter the form of the City government, in ſuch ſort as may be thought moſt for the ſecurity and quiet of *Italy*, reſerving yet to the *French* King his Title and right of Superiority, in the manner he held it when he was in poſſeſſion of the ſaid City.

11. That, if the Emperor deny or delay to perform what is required in the ſecond Article, that then preſently after ending the War for the Pacification of *Italy*, the Confederates ſhall invade the Kingdom of *Naples*; and, if the Emperor be expulſed thence, that then it ſhall remain at the diſpoſition of the Pope, as being held in Feud of the Church; and that, in recompence of the pretence which the

1526. *French* King hath to it, the Pope, with consent of all the Cardinals, shall bind himself and successors to pay yearly to the King of *France* a convenient Pension, which shall not be less than sixty five thousand Crowns *de Soleil.*

12. That in Case any of the Confederates should die or fail, yet the League should continue firm among the rest, and that the Successors of the dead may enter into his place.

13. That all the Confederates shall take upon them the defence and protection of the House of *Medicis*, even to the restitution of them to their former greatness and dignity.

14. And because the most serene and powerful King of *England*, Defendor of the Faith, hath alwayes affected Peace, as appears by the good Offices done to the *French* King, and hath alwayes imploy'd his Forces in service of the Cartholick Church, as his Father did before him; And because no Authority, Superior to his, can be interpos'd either for the Conservation of good Men in Peace or repressing of those who are ill: Therefore, it is agreed, that his Majesty shall be Protector of the most Holy League and Concord. For which purpose, the said Confederates do offer to him and his Heirs an Estate in the Kingdom of *Naples*, with the Title of Duke or Prince, not less worth than the yearly Rent of thirty thousand Ducats. And to the Cardinal of *York*, for his great pains and service in this Business, they offer another State in *Italy* worth ten thousand Ducats yearly.

15. That the Confederates shall make no Treaty with others then these who are mentioned in this present Concord: And that, if, before this time, they have made any, it be reputed as of no force and value.

16. That, before the ratification of this Concord, every one, who is contained in it, shall name his Friends, provided, that they be not Subjects, nor vassals, or enemies of the greater part. And so the Pope nominated the King of *England*, and the Marquess of *Mantua*, reserving the naming of the rest within the time appointed. The King of *France* naming the King of *England*, *Scotland*, *Navarre*, *Portugal*, *Polonia*, *Hungaria*, the Dukes of *Savoy*, *Loraine*, and *Gueldres*, and the thirteen *Cantons* of the *Suisse*. The *Venetians* nominated the King of *England*, reserving the naming of the rest within the time appointed.

17. That the *French* King send his Moneys within the space of a Month to *Rome*, or consign them to *Venice* or *Florence*, and give security for payment to the Bankers six dayes before every Month,

18. That all, who enter the League, shall, in the space of one Month, approve and confirm it. And if the Duke of *Milan*, because he is straitly besieged, cannot perform his part, that then the Pope and *Venetians* shall sign it for him.

And

And thus far I have followed the *Spaniſh* Relation. By the *French* I find only ſuch a League was ſign'd at *Coignac* in *France*, the two and twentieth of *May*, 1526. 1526.

Our King finding himſelf thus choſen Protector of the League, adviſes what to do; which being accordingly debated by his Council, it was reſolved, moſt prudently, that he ſhould not be a Party, where he might be a Judge.

The Emperor alſo, inform'd hereof, proteſted againſt *Clement* the Seventh, as an ungrateful perſon; he having been by his favour firſt made Cardinal, and after Pope, in deſpite of Cardinal *Soderino's* Allegation, that he was a Baſtard, and, therefore, uncapable of either of the ſaid dignities: Nither had he other evaſion to clear himſelf, but that he produced witneſſes, how his Father, *Julian de Medicis*, before his death, (which he received by a ſtab as the Prieſt lift up the Hoſt) had at length Married his Mother. Againſt the *French* King he exclaimed, as perjur'd and falſe, and againſt the *Venetians*, as unconſtant. Howſoever, his greateſt care was how to divide them. Therefore, though in *Italy*, upon publiſhing of the League (*July* 8) Solemnly, by the Pope, they levied their appointed numbers, yet *Francis*, being put in hope of the reſtitution of his Children, delay'd ſo much on his part, That, at laſt, the Imperial Army conſtrained *Sforza* to yield *Milan*, reſerving yet the Revenues thereof to his uſe, as hoping thereby to content him. But the deſpited and diſtruſtful Duke, not ſatisfied herewith, fled to the Forces, which the League had then on Foot, in *Italy*, of which the Duke of *Urbin* was made General. This while the Emperor was advertiſed, how, in ſequence of the Pope's Relaxation of *Francis* his Oath, the Parliament of *Paris* and Kings Council had diſannull'd and annihilated the Concord of *Madrid*, as being concluded by a Perſon who was conſtrain'd, and in Priſon. To colour yet this refuſal, *Francis* ſent Ambaſſadors to *Granada*, (where the Emperor was) to tell him again, *Burgundy* could not be Alienated from the *French* Crown; and that, if he would return his Sons at a reaſonable Ranſom, (which I find by the *French* was two Millions of Crowns) he would take his Siſter *Leonora* for his Queen; if not, that he would recover them by force. The ſeveral Ambaſſadors alſo of the Confederates, which were in his Court at that time, (and particularly the *Engliſh*) concurr'd herein; requiring further, that he ſhould recal the *Spaniards* out of *Lombardy*, and reſtore *Franciſco Sforza*; leave his pretence to *Naples*, and not go to *Italy* with an Army; and that he ſhould pay the King of *England*, All the Contractors of the League, in Caſe of refuſal, denouncing War. The Emperor anſwer'd, That the *French* King ſhould do ill, not to keep his Oath and promiſe. Neither could he excuſe himſelf ſufficiently by laying the fault on his Parliament or Kingdom, they being privy and conſenting to it. That he would detain the Hoſtages; July 8. July 24.

and

1526. and, for the Queen *Leonora*, ſhe was not demanded in ſuch terms as it was fit to ſend her. For *Franciſco Sforza*, that he would chaſtiſe him as his Vaſſal. That he would hold his right in *Naples*. That he would go to *Italy*, when and how he liſted. And that, if all made War againſt him, he would, by the help of his good Subjects, defend himſelf againſt them all, and that he would pay the King of *England* with *French* Money.

I muſt return now a while to ſpeak of home buſineſſes, that the Reader may ſee wherefore our active King prevail'd himſelf no more nor otherwiſe of theſe great occaſions. it was only want of Money; The ſcarcity whereof alſo was the excuſe his people made, for not furniſhing thoſe Contributions, he demanded. Hereupon our King inquires into the cauſes. Among which becauſe ſecret tranſportation of Money was thought one of the greateſt, he adviſes concerning the remedy. All his Counſellors yet did not concur in the ſame opinion; for ſome affirm'd, no Merchant would carry away Coin unleſs he found gain by it; And that this, returning home again, inrich'd the Country. Others ſaid, there were ſubtleties yet, which, if order were not taken, would drain away our Moneys inſenſibly; it being manifeſt to all, that would take the pains to conſider it, that, unleſs the Commodities and Coin of our Country kept both Standard and proportion with thoſe, with whom we Trafficked, there would be loſs. That the crafty *Flemings*, therefore, when they deſired to raiſe the price of their Commodities, inhanced likewiſe the value of our Money, eſpecially Gold; leſt our Merchants ſhould be diſcouraged to buy, when they find the price of the Commodity ſo much rais'd. The conſequence whereof was, that our Merchants deſired, by ſtealth, to convey over their Money in *Specie*, as having, thereby, the benefit of the inhancing; whereas, if they received it in the *Low-Countries* by Bill of credit or exchange, they ſhould not only loſe this benefit, but pay ſomewhat to thoſe which furniſh'd them. Again, that when our Merchants had occaſion to return from the *Low-Countries*, they were not ſuffered to carry back their Moneys in *Specie*, but were forc'd to take Letters of Exchange for them in *England*, by which they loſt again. Thus, notwithſtanding all Prohibitions and Searches, great ſums were conveyed over, to the impoveriſhing of the Kingdom. The only remedy whereof therefore was, to cry up our Money at home, to the ſame Rate that it paſſeth at abroad, which will both keep our Money from Tranſporting, and make the Exchange without loſs: Neither was there other means to prevent theſe Inconveniences: which had now extended ſo far, that our Gold was as frequent and currant among our Neighbours, almoſt, as at home; Whereas yet, little, or none of their Gold was to be found in our ordinary payments. Beſides, they made another advantage hereof: For as their Standard was baſer than ours, ſo they Coined our Gold

Gold again, and made no little profit that way. Thus did our neighbours many ways procure the wealth of their Country and damage of ours; and would do more, when timely order were not taken. Which our Hiſtorians have thought worth the ſetting down, and my ſelf have the more inſiſted on, both to ſhew the rate of Gold and Silver in thoſe times, and to help the Reader to underſtand the ſecond enhancing under this King *Anno* 1544. Therefore thus I collect. The Angel-Noble of Gold was hitherto in weight $\frac{1}{8}$ of an ounce, in eſtimation ſix ſhillings eight pence of Silver, which Silver was two ounces. Thus the proportion of Gold to Silver was twelve to one. Again, an ounce of Silver (or half-Angel) paſs'd for three ſhillings four pence; ſo twelve ounces (or a pound) was juſt forty ſhillings, which is two pound, as we commonly count our Money. 1526.

But *Henry* the Eighth now, by Proclamation, advancing the value of both (one tenth part) the Angel was raiſed to ſeven ſhillings four pence (which was the rate at which it paſs'd in the *Low-Countryes*.) And, conſequently, an ounce of Gold eſtimated at forty four ſhillings, and an ounce of Silver three ſhillings eight pence, and a pound weight at forty four ſhillings, the proportion being (*ut ſuprà*) twelve to one. The ſudden benefit of this appear'd ſuch, that, in *November* following, there was another enhancing of one forty fourth part. So that the Angel was ſeven ſhillings ſix pence, the ounce of Gold forty five ſhillings, and the ounce of Silver three ſhillings nine pence. And, by theſe means, much of our Gold (as our Hiſtorians obſerve) was brought back again. But *Anno* 1544. Theſe Metals were again enhanced one fifteenth part. So Gold came (from forty five ſhillings) to forty eight ſhillings an ounce; and Silver (from three Shillings nine pence an ounce) to four ſhillings; and a pound weight of Silver was forty eight ſhillings. Sept. Novemb. 1544.

This while *Solyman* brought two hundred thouſand men into *Hungary*, with which (near *Buda*) he wholly defeated the Army of *Loüis* King thereof, being forty thouſand, and conſtrained him to fly away: till, by the fall of his Horſe, having his Leg ingaged, he was drown'd in leſs than a ſpan-deep of water and mud, ſo that it concern'd all Chriſtian Princes to make Peace, but chiefly the Emperor, whoſe Siſter King *Loüis* had Married; and whoſe Brother *Ferdinand* in the Right of his Wife, *Anne*, Siſter and Heir to the ſaid King of *Hungary* and *Bohemia*, claimed to ſucceed in both Kingdoms. *Francis*, being not Ignorant hereof, thought fit to prevail himſelf of the occaſion. Therefore he ſent in *September* 1526. the Arch-Biſhop of *Bourdeaux* (with whom alſo the *Nuntio* and *Venetian* Ambaſſadours join'd offices) to deſire the Emperor to ſend back his Children, and to accept ſome honeſt Ranſom in Money; promiſing, withal, his love and friendſhip. But *Charles*, now incenſed, told the Arch-Biſhop, that, if he would have Sept.

1526. have his Children, he must according to his Oath and promise, return prisoner himself; (adding, that his Kingdom could not hinder him herein, however he pretended they would not consent to the restitution of *Burgundy*.) Wherein yet, he should but imitate the example of King *John* his predecessor; who, being prisoner in *England*, and permitted to go home upon the like terms, did (when he was not able to pay his Ransom) most faithfully return again, and yield his body unto custody, where he dyed. Then, taking the Ambassador aside, (as *Sandoval* hath it) he bid him tell the *French* King his Master, that he had done *Laschement* and *Meschamment*, in breaking the Concord of *Madrid*, and that, if he denied it, he would make it good in person against him. But *Francis* wanted not courage to reply in the same Language, as will appear afterwards.

Sandov.

In the mean time, as he thought it concern'd him to defend his reputation in any probable way, rather than to confess in himself so notable a falshood; he caused an Apology (penn'd by the Chancellor of *France*) to be published, and sent to all Christian Princes, the effect whereof was:

*1516. That the Emperor had first broke the confederation of * *Noyon*, in denying the Tribute due for the Kingdom of *Naples*, the restitution of *Navarre*, and divers other Rights. Besides, that he had made War in *Milan*, which was his by inheritance, the Concession of Popes, and Donation *in Feud* by *Maximilian* the Emperor. And, which was worst of all, had enticed his Vassal the Duke of *Bourbon*, to rebel against him, and invade *Provence*. That, thereupon, he had, indeed, drawn his Sword, and chased the Imperial Army from before *Marseilles*, and followed it to *Italy*, where he was unfortunately taken Prisoner; yet that he had protested to those who kept him there, that, if the Emperor requir'd unjust, or impossible things, he would not perform them, but rather that he would revenge himself, when he was free. That, as he doubted, least, through his absence, some troubles might arise at home, he had procured his liberty the best way he could. In the whole frame whereof, if any thing were to be disliked, it must be rather imputed to the Emperor, who demanded unreasonable conditions, than to him who found no other means to escape. Notwithstanding, that, at his return, he had for the satisfaction of his Honour, required of his chief Nobility and Counsellors, what he ought to do, both according to Equity, and the maintenance of his Royal Dignity, who upon mature deliberation, answered: That insolent Pactions and Contracts, which comprehend in them notable damage, and detriment to the Contractor, as being impos'd on him from one more powerful, ought to be held as violent, and involuntary, and therefore in themselves void. Besides, that, when he was sacred at *Rheims*, he was then sworn not to Alienate any Patrimony of the Crown, from which Oath therefore, as being formerly

formerly made, and more Obligatory, he could by no means depart; especially, when the Inhabitants of *Burgundy* (which was the Countrey demanded) would not consent thereunto. Wherefore, if the Emperor pressed him to any thing contrary to these Duties and Obligations, he must think it was not without a special Providence from above, that he recovered his Liberty. For how could the Emperor be ignorant, that he was tyed by the greatest Bond of Religion, not to violate the Right of his Crown? Or how could he believe, that the Presidents of the Parliaments of *France* would consent hereunto, when they had taken their Oaths to the contrary? Howsoever, that none could think him false or perjur'd, as long as the Hostages (as the Counter-value of all that was Capitulated) had been deliver'd to the Emperor. Neither was it enough to say, that, in demanding *Burgundy*, the Emperor did but require his own; since that Dutchy was (long since) annexed to *Normandy*, and incorporated into the Crown of *France* by King *John*, and consequently govern'd by the same Laws; Among which the *Salick* being principal, the Emperors Title, as being claimed from a Daughter, was excluded. Furthermore, that this Affair had been Communicated to some out of this Kingdom, who understood well what was to be done in such Cases, and that we had received much Comfort. In conclusion, as there remained nothing else for him to do, so he had offered a condign Ransom in Money, and other good Conditions, which might both Redeem his dear Children, and testifie the desire he had to recover his lately Married Wife, who was also detained from him; yet that he was still refused. All which Premises being duly considered, he appealed to all Christian Princes and Potentates, as his Judges and Protectors, whether the fault was his, and not rather the Emperors, who, by his injurious and impossible demands, had frustrated himself. 1526.

Thus (as many thought) did *Francis* strive to elude his Oath with reason of State; and to cover the breach of his Faith under a pretext of impossibility; without making any good excuse at all (that is extant) for his not returning, (though more easily palliated than the rest;) both as suspition of ill usage might be held a kind of natural defence and evasion in this kind, and as his Kingdom would less consent hereunto, than to any other condition. And certainly, had the Emperor sufficiently considered all these Circumstances, he would have followed their counsel, who advised him, either to detain *Francis* till he had made some advantage thereof, or else have let him go freely. Neither should the *Clementine* League (begun during the Imprisonment

1526. of *Francis*) have deterr'd him; as being not concluded ſo much in favour of *Francis*, as directed againſt him, whoſe greatneſs did then many ways appear. So that to let *Francis* go, was but to fortifie his Adverſaries againſt himſelf. He thought fit yet, to command an Anſwer to this *Apologie*; wherein the Title, by which he claim'd all his doubtful poſſeſſions, (eſpecially that of *Naples* and *Provence*) is ſet down, and the fault laid on *Francis*, with as much bitterneſs as the cauſe requir'd; all which is ſet down by *Sandoval*. *Sandov.*

Francis, finding now there was no other way to recover his Children, but by force, makes all the friends he can: wherefore, about the end of *July*, ſending ſome Ambaſſadors to our King, a League was concluded, the eighth of *Auguſt*, An. 1526. Aug. 8. by which both Kings did oblige themſelves reciprocally, not to Treat or Agree apart, or ſeparately with the ſaid Emperor, concerning the reſtitution of the two Children of *Francis* (when yet they were freely offered) nor they Money due from the Emperor to our King; but jointly and together. And, as for all other buſineſſes, they ſhould paſs without Derogation or Prejudice to their former Treaties, which were underſtood to remain entire. And that neither of the ſaid Kings ſhould, in any kind, aſſiſt the Emperor, when he were Invaded by the other.

The Perſons who chiefly procured this Treaty, were *Giovanni Joachim*, (now ſtyl'd *Monſieur de Vaulx*,) and *Jean Brinon* the *Premier* Preſident of *Roüen*; who, being (as is before ſaid) diſpatched by *Francis*, came to King *Henry*, April 28. and, being admitted, the Preſident, in an Eloquent Oration in Latine, before our King, ſet in his Throne, and attended by the Ambaſſadors of the Pope, the Emperor, *Venice* and *Florence*, (who at this time laboured to draw him into the League of *Italy*,) profeſſed publickly, that it was the King's goodneſs meerly that made him abſtain from *France* at this Seaſon, the occaſion of Invading it being ſo fair, during the Impriſonment of the King his Maſter. This being ended, Sir *Thomas More*, in the ſame Language, wittily anſwered him: Concluding at laſt, that ſince they acknowledg'd this goodneſs in the King, it ſhould be an obligation on him to continue it; wherewith the Ambaſſadors departed, much ſatisfied. Our King alſo, conſidering the difficulties he found to procure Money, divided his time, betwixt buſineſſes at home and his pleaſures, not neglecting yet the publick weal of Chriſtendom; For which purpoſe, he ſent Sir *John Wallop*, not only to the Princes of *Germany*, exhorting them to join againſt the *Turk*, but to *Mary* Queen of *Hungary*, to comfort her for the loſs of her Husband, adding withal ſuch a ſupply of Money as might teſtifie his Zeal to that April 28.

Cauſe

who by kindred and neighbourhood to the danger, were more concern'd therein. 1526.

The Army of the late League having now begun a War, with ſome doubtful ſucceſs, in *Italy*, the Pope, for his juſtification, thought fit to write unto the Emperor, *June* 23. 1526. a kind of Apology for his taking Arms; alledging, that, as he was *Pater communis*, he thought himſelf bound, by all the ways he could, to procure a General good before any Particular, exhorting him for the reſt, to moderate his immenſe Ambition, to give Peace to *Italy*, pardon to *Franciſco Sforza* Duke of *Milan*, and contentment to all the Confederates in their juſt demands. To which *Charles* ſharply anſwered (by Letter Dated the 17 of *September* following) laying the fault of that Diſſention among Chriſtian Princes (which had given occaſion to the *Turk* to conquer ſo much in *Hungary*,) from himſelf, and on the Pope chiefly; telling him, among other things, that, regularly, he ought not to draw his Sword, when even it were againſt the Enemies of our Faith. Then, taxing him, as if he were ungrateful, falſe, and an Incendiary, he declares how much he had done for the Peace of *Italy*, and the Chriſtian World, and among others, for *Franciſco Sforza*, proceeding thence to a bitter expoſtulation with the Pope, as is more at large ſet down by *Sandoval*; by whom alſo I find, that *Charles* ſollicited all the Cardinals, openly, to call a General Council for the good of Chriſtendom, (as of themſelves,) when, otherwiſe, the Pope would not conſent thereto.

June 23.

Sept. 17.

Sandov. & Sleid.

This while *Don Hugo de Moncada*, coming into *Italy* to offer ſome Conditions of Peace unto the Pope, and finding they took no effect, Treated ſecretly with *Pompeo*, Cardinal *de Colonna*, and others of that Family; who ſuddenly, with three thouſand men only, or as others ſay, ſix thouſand, entred *Rome*, ſacking part of it, and cauſing that terror to the Pope that he fled to the Caſtle of Saint *Angelo*. Neither could he free himſelf, till he had agreed with *Moncada* for a Truce of four Months with the Emperor, and the withdrawing his Forces out of *Lombardy*, and a Pardon to all the *Colonneſi*. Whereupon *Moncada* alſo withdrew his Forces out of *Rome*.

Sept. 20.

Sept. 22.

Our King, being not yet inform'd hereof, had ſent to *Charles* to offer his beſt indeavours to the mediating of a Peace betwixt all Parties, proteſting, that if he accepted his good will herein, he would diſclaim all intereſt in the *Clementine* League, although that Ambaſſadors from all the Confederates were, at that inſtant, in his Court, ſufficiently authoriſed to induce him into it. The Emperor hereupon ſends inſtructions to his Ambaſſadors Reſident in *England*, to treat accordingly of an

1526. *Hollinſhead.* Jan. 14. 1527. 1493. 1527. Jan. 21.

end; to which purpoſe alſo he diſpatches *Don Hugo de Mendoza*, who came to our Court, *January* 14. to Treat hereof. Howbeit, as matters were likely to be ſpun out into a greater length than ſtood with his Maſters occaſions, he ſhortly after broke off the Treaty. One Article whereof concerning the Spiceries of the *Eaſt-Indies*, I have thought fit to mention with particularity. For whereas by the deciſion of Pope *Alexander* the Sixth, 1493. the *Eaſt-Indies* were given to the *Portugals*, and the *Weſtern* to the *Spaniards*, ſo that the firſt Bound was a Line drawn from North to South, diſtant from the Iſlands of *Capo Verde* the ſpace of four hundred Miles Weſtward, (all on this ſide being allotted to the *Portugal*, the other ſide being permitted to the *Spaniard*,) this Line yet in favour of the *Portugals* (who by their Riches, Power at Sea, and Conqueſts in *Africa* had made themſelves much redoubted) was afterwards extended to eight hundred eighty Miles Weſtward; whereby betwixt theſe two Neighbour Princes alone, a new World, with the immenſe Wealth belonging to it, was divided; yet with this honour to the *Portugal*, that his diſcoveries and poſſeſſions gave denomination to both, the River *Indus* having occaſioned antiently the calling theſe parts after its name, and the new Conqueſts on the *Spaniſh* part, though hugely diſtant, following the Style. Notwithſtanding which large Empire, able to ſatisfie any exorbitant Ambition, there wanted not emulation betwixt thoſe Princes. Inſomuch, that neither Alliance, Neighbourhood, nor the danger they ſhould incur, if other Princes prevailed themſelves of their diſſentions, could keep them in good terms. Therefore I find, by a Letter from *Edward Lee* our Kings Almoner, and now Ambaſſador in *Spain*, *Dat.* at *Medina del Campo*, the twenty firſt of *January*, 1527. The Emperor laid claim to ſome Spiceries in the Eaſtern parts, which I find, by *Sandoval*, to have been the *Molucca's* lately diſcovered (as we have ſhewed,) by the Companions of *Magellanes*, to the no little prejudice of the *Portugal*, who, to buy out the King of *Spain*, offered two Millions of Ducats; which yet the Emperor accepted not for the preſent, but choſe rather to offer a Treaty concerning them to our King; and, thereby, either to draw a great ſum of Money from him, and, together, to ingage us in a quarrel againſt the *Portugals*, while himſelf continued his Navigation ſecurely to the *Weſt-Indies*; or, at leaſt, to detain him a while, from a League he was now entring into with *Francis*. I do not find yet what anſwer our King return'd thereto. But as no effect followed, I believe the offer, though advantageous, was (out of ill information concerning theſe parts) rejected.

And

And now our King finding no good to be done by Treaty, and underſtanding, beſides, what rough uſage the Pope had received from *Moncada*, reſolves, according to his former League, to join againſt that Prince which appear'd moſt refractory. Therefore, conceiving the fault to be in *Charles*, he enter'd preſently into a ſtrict League with *Francis*, chuſing rather to concur with him particularly, than to embrace the *Clementine Accord*, as containing many Articles in it, that no way concern'd him. Therefore ſending over Sir *William Fitz-Williams*, he propoſes to *Francis* the Princeſs *Mary* in Marriage, ſince *Charles* had denied him *Leonora*.) And, beſides, offers to enter an Offenſive League with him (ſuch as his Confederates in *Italy* had made) for the recovery of his Children, and forcing the Emperor to reaſonable Conditions. *Francis*, gladly accepting this Motion, demands the Princeſs *Maria's* Picture, which, together with our King's, is granted, and the Match Treated, in *France*, by our Agents, the Biſhop of *Bath*, and *Fitz-Williams*. The *French* King, if he Married her, requir'd ſhe ſhould be preſently given up into his Hands: But our King not agreeing thereunto (by reaſon his Daughter was yet but eleven years old,) *March* the ſecond, the Biſhop of *Tarbe*, the Viſcount of *Thurenne*, and *Antoine Veſey*, the Preſident of *Paris*, came into *England*; where, on the laſt of *April* (as I find by the *French*, and our Records) Three Treaties were concluded, in which theſe are the moſt remarkable Articles.

1526.

1526. Decemb. 24.

1527. Jan.

March 2.

March 30.

I.

In the firſt the preceding Treaty betwixt them was confirm'd. Beſides, it was agreed, that the ſaid Kings ſhould ſend their ſeveral Ambaſſadors to the Emperor, with inſtructions conformable to each other, (ſo that their Language might be the ſame,) as well concerning a Ranſom of the *Dauphin*, and the Duke of *Orleans* (then Hoſtages with *Charles*,) as payment of the Debts due from him unto *Henry*, and other ſatisfaction for his Rights.

Aug. 8.

II.

That they ſhould propoſe alſo, in name of the ſaid King, ſuch decent conditions and offers, which ſhould be by them adviſ'd, and purſue them inſtantly with the ſaid *Charles*. And, if either he refus'd, or made no anſwer within 20 days next following, or otherwiſe, detained or excluded the ſaid Ambaſſadors from coming to his preſence; That then, by their Heralds (or Kings of Arms) they ſhould denounce War againſt him, in ſuch form, manner, and order, as ſhould be declared in the ſecond Treaty.

III. Fur-

1527.

III.

Furthermore, it was concluded, that an Alternative marriage (for ſo the *French*, and our Records call it) ſhould be made, betwixt *Mary* Daughter of the ſaid King of *England*, and the ſaid *Francis*, or the Duke of *Orleans* his Son; and that the determination of the Alternative Marriage ſhould be reſerv'd to the enterview of both Kings, in the Town of *Calais*, (at a moderate expence,) which ſhould be declared preſently after the refuſal of *Charles*: In which caſe *Henry* ſhould ſend unto *Francis* ſome faithful Perſon, to adviſe concerning the particularities thereof. Alſo, the Articles of the ſaid Alternative Marriage were remitted until the aforeſaid time. Howſoever, it was preſently agreed, that, if the ſaid Princeſs *Mary* or her Iſſue did not ſucceed to the Crown of *England*, and that the ſaid War were not made againſt *Charles*, that then this Treaty of a more ſtreight Alliance ſhould be void. Notwithſtanding which, if the ſaid Alternative Marriage were broken off by the common conſent of both Kings, they ſhould yet be obliged reciprocally unto the ſaid War. Upon condition ſtill, that *Francis* ſhould re imburſe (at convenient days of payment) unto King *Henry*, the expences he ſhould be at; and, beſides, ſhould furniſh unto the ſaid *Henry*, as long as he lived, yearly, of the Salt of *Brouage*, the value of fifteen thouſand Crowns. But if the ſaid Marriage were hindred on the part of *Henry*, the ſaid *Francis* ſhould not be bound to pay the aforeſaid expences of the War. On the other ſide, that he ſhould pay them double, if the impediment proceeded from him.

2. by the ſecond Treaty it was agreed, that, preſently after the refuſal, delay, or non-admittance, of their Ambaſſadors, the Entercourſe, Commerce, and Traffick between their Subjects and thoſe of the Emperor ſhould be forbidden. Nevertheleſs, that, by their Ambaſſadors, they ſhould offer the reſpite of forty days, to the intent that the goods of their ſaid Subjects, might be reciprocally withdrawn, if the ſaid Emperor accepted it. That, for the making an actual War againſt him in the *Low-Countries*, an Army ſhould be Levyed of thirty Thouſand Foot, and one Thouſand five Hundred Men of Arms, *à la Francoiſe*, a Band of Artillery (ſo termed then) ann neceſſary Ammunition: whereof *Francis* ſhould furniſh the aforeſaid one Thouſand five Hundred Men at Arms, and twenty thouſand Foot; and *Henry* ten Thouſand Archers or Halberdiers, whom five Hundred of the ſaid Men at Arms ſhould accompany and convey, whenſoever, by the command of the ſaid King, or their Generals, they ſhould be

be divided from the Body of the Army. And that Victuals and other Proviſion ſhould be delivered to them, at the ſame price that other Foot-men had it. That, for better keeping of the Narrow Seas, as well as for hindring all intercourſe, and Traffick into the ſaid *Low-Countries*, a Navy ſhould be equipped of fifteen Thouſand Men, beſides Mariners and Seamen. Whereof *Francis* ſhould furniſh ten Thouſand, and *Henry* five Thouſand, each of them at their proper coſt and charges. That at *Calais*, *Abbeville*, or other the moſt commodious Towns, under the Obedience of the ſaid Kings, certain Priviledged Marts or Fairs ſhould be appointed, and that thoſe Merchants which uſually frequented the *Low-Countreys*, ſhould be drawn and invited thither, by all means poſſible. That the number of their ſaid Armies, both by Sea and Land, ſhould be kept intire, and that the Towns, and ſtrong places, which were Conquered, and Priſoners taken, ſhould be equally divided betwixt the ſaid Kings. And that the Spices and other Merchandize of the *Portugal* Ships, paſſing by the Narrow Seas, ſhould not be permitted to be ſold in the *Low-Countreys*; but only in *France* and *England*, while the ſaid War continued, according to the proportion of that uſe and neceſſity, that either of the ſaid Kingdoms ſhould have thereof; Provided yet, that if the King of *Portugal* did declare himſelf in favour of *Charles*, that, in this Caſe, he ſhould be held as their Common Enemy, and his Goods and Subjects adjudg'd as good Prize. And that the like courſe ſhould be held with all others who ſuccour'd the Emperor in his ſaid Wars; which neither of the ſaid Kings ſhould abandon or leave off, or otherwiſe Treat of any Peace, Truce or other Ceſſation of Arms, without mutual conſent. That place ſhould be reſerv'd for the Pope, *Venetians*, and *Franciſco Sforza*, to be compriſed in the ſaid Confederation; upon condition yet, they ſhould continue the War begun by them in *Italy*, as long as the ſaid Kings proceeded in their Wars in the *Low-Countreys*. That the ſaid *Francis* ſhould diſpoſe *Henry de Albret* King of *Navarre*, as alſo the Duke of *Gueldres*, and *Robert de la March*, *Sieur de Sedan*, to make War, on their part, upon the Countreys of *Charles* next adjoining to them. That if *John Sepuſe*, *Vayvod* of *Tranſylvania*, (pretending to the Kingdom of *Hungary* againſt *Ferdinand* King of *Bohemia*, and Brother of the ſaid *Charles*) have not yet Allied himſelf with the *Turk*, and that the ſaid King of *Bohemia* did any way aſſiſt the Emperor againſt the ſaid Kings; that then, by their joint Letters, they ſhould animate and comfort the ſaid *John Sepuſe* to the defence of his cauſe, to the end he might both abſtain from any dependency on the *Turk*, and that he might divert the ſuccour of the ſaid King of *Bohemia*. That alſo, by their joint Letters, they ſhould ſignifie

1527.

1527. signifie to the Princes of *Germany* this Confederation, together with the causes thereof, to the end they might forbear giving assistance to the Emperor, and be excited to bring the said Emperor unto reason, which whensoever the said Emperor would accept, *Francis* should condescend thereunto, by the intervention of *Henry*.

3. By the third Treaty, true, solid, firm, perpetual, and inviolable Peace, Amity, Union, Confederation, League, Intelligence, and Concord between the said Kings, and their Posterity, even to the end of the World, was accorded, by Decree, and Law, obliging them, and all Kings their Successors, no less than the Oaths they take at their Sacrings and Coronations. According whereunto, they did respectively promise and agree, that the said Kings and their Successors, should never be inquieted or molested, by them or any of their Successors, being Kings, in the Lands, Countreys and Seigneuries, which either of them held for the present; which therefore they and their Heirs should quietly possess for ever. In consideration whereof, the said *Francis* did bind himself, and his Successors, Kings of *France*, to pay, every year, at two several terms, after the decease of the said King *Henry*, to all the Kings of *England* his Successors, forty six Thousand Crowns *de Soleil*, and twenty four *Sols Tournois*, without deduction or prejudice of the sum of 1800736. Crowns *de Soleil*, xxxii. *Sols*, due to the said *Henry*, by obligation, and Treaty of the xxx. *August* 1525. or of that which should remain to be paid after his Decease; moreover the said *Francis* bound himself, and his Successors, Kings of *France*, to give of the Salt of *Braüage* yearly, as well to the said *Henry* as to his Successors, to the value of 15000 Crowns, as is above mentioned. Furthermore, it was agreed, that, if any thing were attempted by any Subject or Ally of the said Kings contrary to this third Treaty, that their Peace and Amity should not yet be broken, but that the Offenders and Delinquents only should be punished. And in every one of the said three Treaties, an express Article was inserted, that the precedent Treaty of *August* 30. 1525. should be by them confirm'd, and no ways infring'd, or diminished. Lastly, by Letter or Agreement apart, bearing Date likewise 1527. the said Kings declared, that they would have themselves held, understood, and reputed as one and the same, and that either of them should be still concern'd in the other. These Treaties being concluded and *sworn, (yet so as the Bishop of *Tarbe* made not a few doubts concerning the Princes *Maries* Legitimation, which we shall find afterward occasioned the Divorce,) they were dismist, and Honourably rewarded, and afterwards (as I find) sent by *Francis* to *Spain*.

May 5.

While these things passed, the Pope, assoon as the Imperials had quitted *Rome*, and left him at his liberty, sends to our King a Letter,

Septemb.

Septemb. 24. complaining of the indignities offered to his Perſon by *Moncada*, and the *Colonneſi*, deſiring his Grace to ſet his hand to the revenge of it, and defence of the Apoſtolick See. Moreover he told our Ambaſſadors, (as they write,) that if the King of *England*, by whoſe incouragement (he ſaith,) he enter'd this Labyrinth, will yet effectually aſſiſt him, and the *French* King amend his former ſlackneſs, *&c.* he will do as he did before, notwithſtanding his late agreement with *Moncada*, to which he holds himſelf not bound, becauſe he was forc'd to it. Whereupon our King in *November*, ſent him about thirty thouſand Ducats for a preſent. The Pope being thus heartned, cites the Cardinal *Colonna* to appear at *Rome* upon pain of Deprivation of his Dignity: he, on the other ſide, threatning to call a Council againſt him, and Depoſe him as a *Semoniac*; The Pope, hereupon, gathers an Army, and with about ten Thouſand Men, led by the *Comte de Vaudemont*, Brother to the Duke of *Lorain* (to whom the Pope now pretended to give *Naples* as the right of his Family,) enters the Kingdom of *Naples*, takes divers places belonging to the *Colonneſi*, and approacheth the very Gates of *Naples*. But now new ſuccours coming from *Spain*, the Pope was diſtreſſed and glad to Treat again with *la Noy* the Vice-Roy, and to give the Imperialiſts ſixty Thouſand Ducats, whereupon alſo it was agreed, that the Armies ſhould retire on either ſide, and a Ceſſation of War ſhould be accorded, for eight Months. But the Pope finding this accord alſo too diſadvantageous (as having diſarm'd himſelf thereby, and diſcontented both the *French* and our King,) intends to diſavow it, and to provide himſelf of Money by creating 14 Cardinals, for which he had three Hundred Thouſand Ducats; But *Bourbon* prevented his Attempts. For being actually General of the Imperials (who for want of pay, were to be maintain'd with Pillage,) he takes a pretext to invade *Rome* it ſelf; For (as the intelligence in our Records hath it) coming near that City, *May* 5. he ſent to the Pope for leave to paſs through it, and his Territories into the Realm of *Naples*, and to have Victuals for his Money; But the Pope denying it, *Bourbon* reſolves to Aſſault *Rome*, which *Renzo de Ceri* an old Commander defended. But *Bourbon* having an Army of thirty Thouſand Men, upon *May* 6. 1527. Marches directly to the Walls; where carrying a Ladder before the reſt of the Soldiers with which he meant to Scale the Town, a Shot kill'd him: which kind of death, ſome Writers ſay, he call'd upon himſelf by a kind of Imprecation, when the laſt year, being at *Milan*, he made the Citizens buy their quiet at a great price; wiſhing he might be Shot to death the firſt time he went to the Field, if they ſhould be oppreſſed any more by ſuch payments, which yet he forced them unto ſoon after. *Bourbon* being thus dead, *Philibert de Chaalon*, Prince of *Aurange*, threw a Cloak over his Body,

1527.
Sept. 1526.
Novemb.
Feb.
March 29.
Record.
May 5. *Guicciard. l.* 18.
May 6.
Bellay.

1527. as fearing it might discourage his Soldiers. But they whether out of indignation for this loss, or greedines to Sack the Town, enter'd it with fury; killing in the way divers Bishops, and surprizing some Cardinals that were flying to the Castle Saint *Angelo*; The Pope and *Renzo de Ceri* being already retir'd thither with seventeen Cardinals, and the Ambassadors of *England*, *France*, *Venice*, and *Florence*, and about five Hundred Soldiers. The Prince of *Aurange* (who now took upon him the charge of General) did all that was possible to restrain the Soldiers, from their frequent Murthers and Pillage. Notwithstanding which, their impetuosity was such, that (without making difference, betwixt Holy places and Prophane) they Ransack'd the City for the space of six or seven days, killing above five Thousand Men. Not content with this yet, they laid Siege to the Castle, and brought the Pope to such necessity, that to free himself from further danger, He and thirteen Cardinals, that now remain'd with him, agreed, That four Hundred Thousand Ducats should be paid to the Army within two Months, and the Castle of Saint *Angelo*, together with those of *Ostia*, and *Civita Vecchia*, and other places, should be deliver'd into the hands of the Imperialists. That the Pope with the said Cardinals should remain in the Castle, till part of the Money were paid, and good Hostages given for the rest. Which being done, that he should go to *Cajeta*, or some other place in the Kingdom of *Naples*, there to expect the Emperors pleasure.

Sandov.

May 12.

Grotier. Hist. Rom. dirept. Guicciard. l. 18.

June 5.

Guicciard. l. 18.

Hereupon the Guard and service of the Popes Person was Committed to *Hernando de Alanzon*, and Victuals put into the Castle; (where the Pope remain'd under some restraint, not free from danger, though otherwise reverenced in all appearance, according to his Dignity.) And now the Cardinal *Colonna*, and others that sided with the Emperor began to Treat Concerning a General Council, Conformable to a late Bull of Pope *Julius* the Second, by which it was declared, that a Pope might be deprived from his Place, and another substituted, when there were Cause for it; (And they pretended to prove this Pope a *Simoniac.*)

Sandov.

June. *Sandoval.*

It was now the beginning of *June*, 1527. when the Emperor being at *Valledolid* took notice of this success, divulg'd already over all Christendom. Nevertheless he shew'd not any other sense thereof, than such as might be expected from one to whose ambition and power nothing could seem either great or new. Yet as he knew that all Christian Princes must needs be highly interessed in the Imprisonment of the Head of their Church, so he thought fit to satisfie them herein. Among all which none seem'd so considerable as our King. To whom therefore in a letter dated from *Valledolid*, Aug. 2. 1527. he made a kind of Apology for these proceedings, beginning first with giving

giving an account thereof, then demanding our Kings advice; thereupon declaring alſo the cauſes why his Army could not be withheld from invading of *Rome*. Yet ſo, as he diſclaimed any part, either the counſelling or authoriſing thereof. Notwithſtanding which (as God could draw good out of evil) ſo he hoped a benefit might redound to *Chriſtendom* thereby. Wherefore, that he ſhould intreat him again, as his good Unkle and Brother, that he would ſend his Opinion what further was to be done in this caſe. And particularly, that he would aſſiſt him againſt the Enemies of our Faith; againſt whom, when their inteſtine Wars were compos'd, he reſolved to imploy his Blood and Life. He forgot not alſo, upon the inſtance of ours and the *French* Ambaſſadors for the Popes liberty, to write gently unto his Holineſs, offering his love and friendſhip in caſe he deſired it. But to the chief Officers of his Army, by his Agents *Antonio Veyeley*, and *Franciſco de les Angeles* General of the *Franciſcans*, he ſent Inſtructions, which for ſome ſpace amuſed them. For he commanded to ſet the Pope at liberty, yet ſo, as together they ſhould provide, that from a friend he ſhould not become an enemy. The Prince of *Aurange*, *Hernando de Alanzon*, and ſome other principal Commanders met hereupon; where, after a long conſultation, how to reconcile and interpret this Riddle, they reſolved at laſt, that to deſpoil the Pope firſt of his Money, and then to deliver him, was the beſt way to comply with their Inſtructions. After therefore having extorted great ſums, not only for the Emperors Occaſions, but their own; and forcing him to give Hoſtages for ſecurity, he was diſmiſſed out of the Caſtle of St. *Angelo*, as ſhall be told in its place. Yet ſo, as they ſuffered him not to depart out of their reach; neither indeed did he think fit to do otherwiſe; ſo that although by the former Convention he was to be removed to *Cajeta*, ten Miles diſtant thence; or ſome other place belonging to the Kingdom of *Naples*, (whither not only the burning of his Palace, Library and Records did ſeem to compel him, but the Peſtilence then raging in that City; whereof alſo *Charles de la Noy* Viceroy of *Naples* died; into whoſe charge therefore *Hugo de Moncada*, much againſt the Popes will, ſucceeded;) yet, ſaith *Guiccardine*, with much Diligence, Intreaty, and Art, he procured to ſtay in *Rome*. From whence upon the firſt ſurrender of the Caſtle he complained (as I find by our Records) to our King and Cardinal; proteſting that all the help and ſuccour he could expect in this extremity, was from hence, and therefore implored his aſſiſtance. Which Petition therefore he cauſed to be ſeconded by the thirteen Cardinals then with him, and to be diſpatched hither by *Gregory de Caſalis*, our Kings Agent in *Rome*, and now returning to *England*.

1527.

July 20.
Aug. 2.

Aug. 2. *Sandov.*

Octob.

June 6.

1527. This while the Ambaſſadors of our King in *Spain* mediated potently for delivery of the Hoſtages upon more reaſonable terms than had been hereunto propoſed; and in concluſion ſo prevailed, that (as *Sandoval* hath it) *Charles* proteſted to our Ambaſſadors, that for his ſake only he would relinquiſh his demand for the reſtitution of *Burgundy*, in which the difficulty of the Peace conſiſted. Adding further, that for the ſame reaſon, he would accept, as well for the ranſom of the two Sons of *Francis*, as for the recompence of the great expences he was at for breach of the Concord of *Madrid*, the ſum only which *Francis* had offered voluntarily long before to *Charles de la Noy* (which were 2000000 Crowns;) upon condition yet that *Francis* ſhould obſerve the reſt of the Articles in the ſaid Concord. But all this again was interrupted by the continual intelligence of the Pope's impriſonment, which ſo incenſed our King that he would not ſo much as vouchſafe an anſwer to the above-mentioned Letter of *Charles*, but prepared to joyn in a ſtricter League with *Francis*, as judging that *Charles* would never in ſo inſolent a manner have captivated the Pope, had he not pretended to Univerſal Monarchy.

March 14. This while *Ferdinand* King of *Hungary* and *Bohemia* ſent Ambaſſadors hither to invite our King to joyn againſt the *Turk*. Notwithſtanding which, as *John Sepuſe*, *Vayvod* of *Tranſylvania*, pretending he was choſen King of *Hungary* by the greater part of the Nobility, had lately complained of *Ferdinand*'s Uſurpation to divers Chriſtian Princes, and particularly to our King, ſo no other ſatisfaction was returned, but a Proteſtation made by Sir *Thomas More*, that the fault was not our Kings if more were not done therein; all theſe miſeries which he ſo much lamented, being occaſioned by the Ambition of *Charles* the Emperor, his Brother, who (notwithſtanding his mediation) could not be induced to accept the overtures generally propoſed him for a Peace. And that till this were done, the *Turk* muſt needs prevail. Whereupon the Ambaſſadors were honourably rewarded and diſmiſſed.

Sleid. lib. 6.

Hall.

May 3.

Our King at this time intended to proceed according to his Treaty with *Francis*; but as he now heard that *Rome* was Sack'd, he made, *May* 29. a new Confederacy with him, by which they agreed mutually to deſiſt from their War in the *Low-Countries*, and to tranſport it into *Italy*; according to which, *Francis* obliged himſelf to ſend an Army of 30000 Foot, and 1000 great Horſe, to joyn with the *Venetians*, and others of the *Clementine* League. And that *Henry* ſhould contribute thereunto Monthly 32222 Crowns *de Soleil*, to be deducted out of the Money which the ſaid *Francis* owed him; And that this Contribution ſhould be underſtood to be in lieu of thoſe Forces which by the late Treaty he ſhould have furniſhed for the Wars in the *Low-Countries*. And that therefore all the other Articles of the ſaid Treaty

May 29. *Tillet.*

Treaty ſhould remain in full effect and virtue. It was agreed alſo that *Henry* might ſend a Commiſſary which ſhould viſit the Army in *Italy*, and advertiſe him of all paſſages. For the better accompliſhment of which Treaties, Sir *Thomas Bolen*, Kt. lately * made Viſcount *Rochfort*, and Sir *Anthony Brown*, being joyned in Commiſſion with the Biſhop of *Bath*, (then Reſident at *Paris*,) were commanded to ſee *Francis* ſworn thereunto, which accordingly was performed. Sir *Francis Pointz*, Kt. alſo, upon the tenth of *May*, 1527. was ſent to *Spain*, where Doctor *Edward Lee*, and *Hierome* Biſhop of *Worceſter*, (lately come from *Rome*, and diſpatched to the Emperor,) were Reſident on the part of our King. To accompany him in which Journey and Negotiation, *Clarenceaux* King of Arms was ſent to act his part, when the gentle perſuaſions of our Ambaſſadors could not prevail. The Propoſition on their part to be made, was briefly this. That in regard our King was at half the charge of the War, *Charles* ſhould ſend him half the Prize and Booty taken at *Pavia*, and one of the two Hoſtages; and that if he denied, *Clarenceaux* ſhould denounce him War. To this rough meſſage, *Charles* anſwered with much gravity; That the Propoſition made was of great moment on either part. So that whether he accepted or refuſed it, it was fit he took time to adviſe with himſelf, both that his good will to our King might be conſerv'd, and *Francis* might be uſed according to his demerits, who had ſo perfidiouſly behaved himſelf, that he had broke his promiſe almoſt before he made it. Therefore that he would declare his reſolution by Letters unto *Henry*; and that, till then, he would make them no abſolute Anſwer. All which was done purpoſely by *Charles*, that he might gain time. Our King and *Francis* being advertiſed of this dilatory Reply, and together of the Popes diſtreſs, would no longer intermit to give order for their own, as well as the general Affairs of *Chriſtendom*. Therefore our Cardinal was commanded to *France*, both for concluding the Marriage of our Princeſs *Mary*, either with *Francis* or the Duke of *Orleance* his Son, (as is before mentioned) as alſo for other occaſions, which ſhall be hereafter declared. Though whatſoever they treated concerning her Marriage in ſo many places, and with Perſons of ſo different Ages, her Husband, *Philip* the Second, was now but newly born at *Valledolid*, May 21. 1527.

1527.

* June 18. 1525.

May 10.

The Cardinal having kiſt the Kings hand, and received his Inſtructions, arrived at *Calais* with a Noble Equipage, being near a thouſand Horſe, the eleventh of *July*, 1527. departing thence toward *Boulogne*, (leaving yet the Great Seal behind him in *Calais* with Doctor *Taylor* Maſter of the Rolls;) where he was met by *Monſieur de Byron* with a thouſand Horſe, and after by *John* Cardinal of *Lorain*, and the Chancellor of *Alanzon*,

July 3.

July 11.

July 22.

Stow.

1527. *Alanzon*, who accompanied him in his way to *Monſtreüil*, and afterwards to *Abbeville*. *Francis* in the mean time aſſuring him by
July 23. Letter, that Himſelf and Madame *Loüiſe* his Mother would
July 24. meet him at *Amiens*, aſſoon as he had confiſcated the Lands of *Bourbon*, and extinguiſhed his Title and Dignity. This occaſioned the Cardinals ſtay for ſome days, yet ſo as he wanted not a juſt exerciſe for that power which *Francis* had given him, whereſoever he went to releaſe all thoſe Priſoners he thought capable of Mercy. While he ſtaid thus at *Abbeville*, the Biſhop of *Worceſter*, and *Edward Lee*, our Kings Ambaſſadors in *Spain*, ſent him the Emperors demands, in caſe the reſtitution of *Francis* his Children were propos'd; which, though high, were to be qualified by our King, if his Highneſs ſo thought fitting,
July 29. Hereof therefore, by a Letter dated the twenty ninth of *July*, 1527. he advertiſed our King; adding moreover, that though the Emperor were determined to train the Pope to *Spain*, (to which alſo he heard the Pope was inclin'd) yet that the project was ſo dangerous, as it was not by any means to be ſuffered; ſince, thereby *Charles* might both eſtabliſh the Imperial Authority in *Rome*, and ſeiſe on the Patrimony of the Church, or at leaſt conſtrain him to furniſh what Money he would, and together compel him to make ſo many Cardinals of the *Spaniſh* faction, as when the Pope died, would enable him to Elect what Succeſſor he pleaſed. Neither did he ſee how this could be avoided, unleſs *Andrea Doria* were commanded to uſe the Fleet he had then at Sea, for intercepting of the Pope; who, what ſhew ſoever he made of willingneſs to come
June 6. to the Emperor, complained yet of his Captivity, as by a Let-
1527. ter written by the Popes own hand in Ciphers, to his Highneſs, and conveyed by *Gregory da Caſalis*, might appear; which alſo was confirmed by divers Cardinals then attending him. Beſides, that it were convenient, that the Forces his Highneſs was bound to furniſh for the Wars of *Italy*, ſhould be joyned with *Lautrech*, (who was now deſigned by *Francis* to purſue the War there) and imployed to hinder the Popes paſſage; In which Affair alſo, ſome Princes of *Italy* might be drawn to concur, when his Highneſs would write to them; All which was the rather to be ſpeeded, for that the Biſhop of *Worceſter* had written from *Spain*, that the Emperor went to ſow diviſion betwixt him and *Francis*. This Letter was ſeconded by another of the ſame date, which yet contained only an overture for a meeting betwixt Madame *Loüiſe* and himſelf, on the one part, and the Emperor on the other, at *Perpignan*; wherein all theſe difficulties ſhould be reſolved. More-
July 31. over, by a Letter dated from *Abbeville* the thirty firſt of *July*, he certifies the King, how *Monſieur de Boutlans* had propoſed on the Emperors part, a Match betwixt the Duke of *Richmond*, natural

natural Son to our King, and the Daughter of *Portugal*, with *Milan* for Dowry; which yet (as being colourable only) he thought fit ſhould not be much inſiſted on. Only, becauſe it was neceſſary to keep good correſpondence with the Emperor, he thought it not amiſs to entertain ſpeech thereof. And together, (by a Letter the firſt of *Auguſt*,) to deſire our Ambaſſadors in *Spain*, to quench all Rumors concerning a Divorce bruited now betwixt our King and the Queen; and to aſſure the Emperor, that the firſt original thereof aroſe only from the objection which the Biſhop of *Tarbe* (when he was lately in *England*) made, concerning the Legitimation of the Princeſs *Mary*. At laſt, *Francis*, together with Madame *Loüiſe* his Mother, coming to *Amiens*, the Cardinal with all his Train ſets forth from *Abbeville*; whereof notice being given, *Francis* being Royally attended, meets him a mile and half out of the Town; And after Proteſtations that he owed his Liberty chiefly to our King, conducted him to his Lodging. Shortly after which, the Cardinal obtaining Audience, declared his buſineſs, conſiſting principally in three points.

1527.

Aug. 1.

Aug. 1.

Aug. 4.

Firſt, *To require the Reſolution of* Francis *concerning this Alternative of the Marriage a little before mentioned.*

Secondly, *To adviſe concerning the means of making Peace with the Emperor; upon ſuch terms as the reſtitution of* Francis *his Children might be procured.*

Thirdly, *To determine how the Pope might be delivered out of Captivity*; (for which purpoſe our Hiſtorians ſay, that the Cardinal carried over with him 240000 *l.* of our Kings Treaſure.)

Hollinſhead.

To the firſt, it was anſwered, *That the Duke of* Orleans (*as more ſuiting in years*) *ſhould be recommended to the Princeſs* Mary.

To the ſecond, *That* Francis *for re-obtaining of his Children, would, among other things, renounce his claim in* Milan.

To the third, little more was ſaid, than *That the Pope* (*as ſoon as poſſible*) *ſhould be ſet free, by Mediation, or Force.*

Beſides which points, an interview was propoſed on our Kings part, betwixt him and *Francis*; but *Francis* excuſing himſelf by reaſon of the great Charges he muſt be at till his Children were redeemed, the motion was urged no farther.

After

1527. After this, *Francis* brought our Cardinal to *Compeigne*; from whence he wrote to the King, that howſoever *Francis* did promiſe to renounce *Milan*, yet, that it was beſt not overſtrictly to tie him to it, until his Highneſs diſcovered whether the Emperor would really confer it in Dowry upon the match formerly intimated. The King receiving thus much ſatisfaction by the Cardinals Negotiation, writ a Letter with his own hand, acknowledging therein the good ſervice he had done him and the Kingdom divers ways; and particularly in three Treaties, concluded, *Aug.* 18. 1527. which, by the *French* and our Records, I find thus related.

Aug. 18.

1. The firſt Treaty was concerning the Princeſs *Mary*; who (according to the reference formerly made,) was to marry the Duke of *Orleans*, reſerving notwithſtanding unto a further time, the particularities of her Dote, Dowry, Tranſportation of the ſaid Duke into *England*, the charges of his Family, and the like. Furthermore it was declared, that if the ſaid Marriage, either by death, or conſent of both Kings, or any other accident, took no effect, That yet the other Treaties betwixt the ſaid Kings (being of the thirtieth of *Auguſt*, 1525. and of the laſt of *April*, 1527.) ſhould remain in full force. The interview of the two Kings, which (the laſt of *April*) was agreed to be at *Calais*, was remitted to a further time. The Contribution, to which the ſaid *Henry* obliged himſelf for the War of *Italy*, was expreſſed to be twenty thouſand *Eſcus de Soleil* for *June*, and for *July* thirty thouſand, and for every of the Months of *Auguſt*, *September*, *October*, thirty two thouſand two hundred twenty two Crowns. Upon condition yet, that the ſaid Contribution ſhould be abated proportionably, if the number of Soldiers imployed in the ſaid War were diminiſhed. That, after the ſaid Month of *October*, *Henry* ſhould Contribute no more; and that, if Peace were made ſooner, he ſhould be diſcharged of the ſaid Contribution. And finally, that neither Prince might demand of the other, his Money ſpent in this War, as long as the perpetual Peace was conſerved.

2. By the ſecond Treaty it was agreed, that the ſaid *Henry* ſhould not charge himſelf with the Protection and Aſſurance of the Peace, whenſoever it ſhould be concluded betwixt *Francis* and *Charles*; but in caſe only, that the ſaid Peace could not otherwiſe be made, which therefore ſo hapning, the ſaid *Francis* did agree, that he ſhould take the ſaid Protection and Warranty upon him. On condition yet, that nothing ſhould be attempted by him by reaſon thereof, either againſt him, his Kingdom, or Subjects. Moreover, the ſaid *Henry* conſented, that, for the good of the intended Peace, the Marriage betwixt *Francis* and

Leonora

Leonora Siſter to *Charles*, ſhould be validated and confirmed; upon condition yet, that thereby no prejudice ſhould follow to the Treaties concluded betwixt them. That if any Peace were made with *Charles*, by which *Franciſco Sforza* ſhould enjoy *Milan*, it was declared by the ſaid Kings, that they did not intend to renounce certain Penſions aſſigned to either of them, upon the ſaid Dutchy, by the League of *Italy*, when *Franciſco* ſhould refuſe to pay them. That if War were commenc'd by the ſaid Kings againſt *Charles*, upon his refuſal of the conditions offered to him, then the like Priviledges, Exemptions, and Liberties, that the *Engliſh* Merchants had (a year ſince) in *Flanders*, *Brabant*, *Holland*, and *Zealand*, they ſhould now have in other places under the obedience of *Francis*, as long as the ſaid Wars ſhould laſt; the ſaid places to be nominated and agreed on hereafter. 1527.

By the third Treaty it was concluded, betwixt the ſaid Kings, that no Council-General, ſummoned by the Pope during his Captivity, or by the Emperors authority, ſhould take effect; and, that for this purpoſe they ſhould cauſe their Clergy on either ſide, by publick and ſolemn Proteſtations to renounce and deteſt all ſuch Convocation. That any Commandment, Sentence, Bull, Letter, or Breve proceeding from the ſaid Pope, being in captivity, and tending to the dammage of the ſaid Kings or Subjects, and eſpecially to the prejudice of the Legation of the Cardinal of *York*, ſhould neither be obeyed by them, nor ſuffered to be obeyed; but that they ſhould be declared as of no effect, and the bringers of them puniſhed. That during the ſaid Captivity of the Pope, whatſoever by the Cardinal of *York*, (aſſiſted by the Prelates of *England* aſſembled and called together by the Authority of the ſaid King,) ſhould be determined concerning the Adminiſtration of Eccleſiaſtical Affairs in the ſaid Kingdom of *England*, and other Countries being in the Dominion of the ſaid *Henry*, ſhould (the conſent of the ſaid King being firſt had,) be decreed and obſerved. (To confirm which power, the Pope ſent him a Bull, to be Vicar-General throughout all the Kings Dominions.) It was alſo agreed, that *Francis* and his Clergy ſhould have the like power in *France*, and other his Dominions, during the Captivity of the Pope. And here certainly began the Taſte that our King took of governing (in Chief) the Clergy; of which therefore, as well as the diſſolution of Monaſteries, it ſeems the firſt Arguments and Impreſſions were derived from the Cardinal; Who having now in a Conference with certain Cardinals at *Compeigne*, reſolved that the aforeſaid Order for the Government of the Church was in theſe times requiſite, took on him the charge of our Eccleſiaſtical Affairs (though *Guiccardine* writes that he ſent for a Bull 3. *Tillet.* *Hall.*

1527. to be Legate in *England*, *France*, and *Germany*, and the Imperialists gave out that he attempted to make himself Pope of the *English* and *French* Church, by a Schism from the See of *Rome*.) The passages betwixt the Cardinals above-mentioned being certified to *Rome*, September 16. *Woolsey* prepared to return. Whereupon *Francis* not only richly presented him, but conducted him through the Town, and upon his way about a Mile, being accompanied with the Titular King of *Navarre*, the Popes Legate, and his prime Nobility. The Cardinal now hasting homeward, came to *Calais*, where having established a Mart, he arrived at Court toward the end of *September*, where much demonstration of affection was given him by our King. To correspond with this Ambassade, *Francis* sent *Anne de Montmorency Grand-Maistre*, *John du Bellay* Bishop of *Bayonne*, *John Brinon* the Premier President *de Roüen*, and *le Seigneur de Humieres*, as his Ambassadors to ratifie the said League here. These, with divers other Cavaliers, (being in all about six hundred Horse) were conducted to *London*, October 20. and lodged in the Bishop of *Londons* Pallace. After which, Audience being given them, they were, *November* 10. entertained by our King at *Greenwich* with a Feast, (the most sumptuous, saith *Bellay*, that ever I saw, and then with a Comedy, in which his Daughter the Princess was an Actor. On this day also the King of *England* received at the hands of *Montmorency*, the Order of St. *Michael*; And *Francis*, with no less solemnity, that of the Garter, in *Paris*. For which purpose, our King had sent over *Arthur Plantagenet* Viscount *Lisle*, (natural Son to King *Edward* the Fourth) Sir *Nicholas Carew* Master of his Horse, Sir *Anthony Brown*, all Knights of this Order, and Sir *Thomas Wriotheſley* Garter-Herauld. Both Princes likewise giving their Oath and Seal (which was in Gold) for the Ratification of the late Treaty.

Sept. 16. *Bellay.* Octob. 20. Nov. 10.

Charles, being not ignorant of these Treaties, thinks fit to prevent the execution of them, by a timely consent unto all that could in reason be expected from him. Therefore at *Palentia*, September 15. he offered this Agreement unto the *French*, *English*, and other Ambassadors residing in his Court; which also for the present they seemed to accept. That the Article for the restitution of *Burgundy* should be rased out of the Concord of *Madrid*, reserving still to the Emperor his Right. That *Francis* should pay for the Ransom of his Sons, the two Millions of Crowns which were offered. And that out of them so much should be allowed, as would pay our King. Furthermore, that *Francis* should take upon him to satisfie *Henry*, as well as to keep *Charles* indemnified from the Obligation, by which he tyed himself in *London* by particular Treaty; which was, that he should pay unto *Henry* the antient Pension which *Francis* paid him, together

Sept. 15. *Sand.*

gether with any other ſum that *Francis* ſhould refuſe to pay only becauſe the ſaid *Henry* had declared himſelf his Enemy. That the *French* ſhould oblige themſelves to reſtore *Genoua*, and all the reſt that they had taken in *Lombardy*, before the Hoſtages were rendred. That in the particular of the Duke of *Milan*, *Charles* ſhould nominate and appoint certain Judges, who ſhould determine the cauſe betwixt them. And that if he were not found culpable, then his eſtate ſhould be reſtored to him, and the inveſtiture given him; otherwiſe, that the Emperor ſhould diſpoſe thereof as Lord of the Feud. That, in all the reſt, the Concord of *Madrid* ſhould be obſerved, ſaving in ſome few points of ſmall importance. 1527.

When theſe Articles were approved on both ſides, the Ambaſſadors of *France* ſaid, that they wanted ſufficient Authority from their King to ſign them, which yet they promiſed to ſend for, and procure. And ſo the concluſion of Peace at this time was deferred on their parts. *Charles* not much troubled herewith, returns to his former Arts of dividing our King from *Francis*. Therefore he ſends privately to the Cardinal, (now returned from *France*,) offering him, beſides his ordinary Penſion, large ſums for this purpoſe. Notwithſtanding which (ſaith *Polydore*) becauſe he had denied him the Archbiſhoprick of *Toledo*, to which (if we may believe the ſame Author) he vehemently aſpired, he was found inexorable. *Polydor. Virg.*

This year our King ſent out two fair Ships to diſcover new Regions, then daily found out by the *Portuguez* and *Spaniard*; though, as no ſucceſs followed thereupon, I do not find the deſign purſued. May 20. *Hall.*

This while, *Monſieur de Lautrech* made ready an Army of twenty ſix thouſand Foot, and two thouſand Horſe, for the affairs of *Italy*: and, about *July*, paſſed the *Alps*. Wherewith the *Clementine* League (whoſe Forces were eleven thouſand Foot, and about one thouſand ſix hundred Horſe) being much encouraged, an Anſwer was ſent to the Propoſitions made by the Emperor, to the Ambaſſadors of the League, at *Palentia*. For which purpoſe a Secretary of *Francis* came the twelfth of *December*, 1527. to *Bruges*, (where *Charles* then was,) publiſhing by the way that he brought a final Reſolution of Peace; when yet indeed he brought Order only to defie *Charles*, as will appear afterwards. Yet, to ſhew ſome deſire of Accommodation, the Ambaſſadors of *England* and *France* deſired, two points of the Treaty of *Palentia* ſhould be altered in this manner. The firſt was, that *Franciſco Sforza* ſhould be reſtored to his Eſtate; and, afterwards, juſtice done concerning the complaints made againſt him. The other was, that the Hoſtages ſhould be remanded, before *Francis* ſhould deliver up *Genoua* or *Aſti*, or withdraw his Army out of *Italy*. And to induce *Charles* hereunto, it was of- July. Decemb. 12.

1527. fered by the *French*, to put ſecurity into the hands of our King, for the payment of three hundred thouſand Ducats to *Charles*, in caſe of not rendring the ſaid Towns, and withdrawing his Army. *Charles* replied, that though all this was Innovation upon the Treaty of *Palentia*; yet, to ſhew his deſire of Peace, he would put ſecurity for payment of ſo much money into the hands of our King, in caſe the *French* would agree to perform that which was concluded on their part: But the *French* Ambaſſador ſaying, he had no Order to make any other end, than what was propoſed, this great Affair remained ſuſpended.

Our Ambaſſador perceiving this, proceeds upon his Inſtructions, and makes four demands.

1. The firſt was, That without any delay, *Charles* ſhould pay to the King his Maſter, all that was lent him heretofore.

2. The next was, That he ſhould pay him a penalty of five hundred thouſand Ducats, becauſe he did not marry the Princeſs *Mary*, as was agreed.

3. The third was, That he ſhould ſatisfie for the indemnity he undertook to diſcharge, upon the Declaration that our King made of War againſt *Francis*, (whereof mention is made formerly) which from the time it was due, was four years and four months.

4. Fourthly, That he ſhould deliver the Pope; and make him ſatisfaction for the loſs and dammage he had ſuſtained.

To which *Charles* anſwered, That he marvelled why the King ſhould preſs him ſo much, ſince he never denied the Debt; and that, if they required from him the Money, they ſhould give him the ſecurity he entred into for the payment thereof. But our Ambaſſador ſaying, that they were kept among the Archives and Records of *England*; and that, for the reſt, they were ſufficiently Authorized to give him an Acquittance; *Charles* knew not well how to argue the matter further. As for the penalty of Marriage and Indemnity, he ſaid he would ſend an expreſs Meſſenger into *England*, to acquaint our King with the Reaſons why he did not hold himſelf bound to give any ſuch ſatisfaction. And for the delivering of the Pope, he ſaid, Order was, and ſhould be given. And indeed, I find that about this very time, the Pope recovered his liberty. Which becauſe it was occaſioned by the proceeding of the *French* in *Italy*, let us look back awhile on thoſe affairs.

The Army of the League formerly mentioned, being commanded by *Odet de Foix Seigneur de Lautrech*, (an able General,) great hope was conceived; Both as he was ſupported by our King, and *Francis*, and the *Venetians*, at a common charge, (wherof our

our Kings part, according to the *French* Hiſtory, was 60000 *Angelots* the month,) and as the Imperial Army, which ſackt *Rome*, was much conſumed with the Plague. By Sea alſo, *Andrea Doria* of *Genoüa*, who had the command of the *French* Kings Gallies, a brave Commander, was appointed with a ſtrong Fleet to ſecond him; who, accordingly, ſo ſcour'd all the coaſt of *Genoüa*, that no ſhipping on thoſe quarters durſt appear. This cauſed great ſcarcity of Victuals there; which being advertis'd to *Doria*, and afterwards to *Lautrech*, he ſends *Caſar Fregoſo* with 2000 men thither; who, together with *Doria*, ſo preſt that City on both ſides, that, at laſt, it yielded; Whereupon *Theodoro de Trivulci* was made Governor of it, on the behalf of the *French* King. After this, *Lautrech* took (in the name of *Sforza*, and for his uſe) *Alexandria*, the Country of *Lameline*, the Cities of *Vigueva*, *Biagras*, and *Novarra*, and beſieged *Pavia*, to the great diſpleaſure of *Antonio de Leyva* (then Governor of *Milan*,) who wanting Soldiers for himſelf, would yet ſpare ſome for defence of that Town. This did not hinder *Lautrech* yet to make a breach and enter it, at the ſecond aſſault; where, in revenge of the King his Maſters misfortunes, he permitted his Army to exerciſe all manner of licentious cruelty; And now *Milan* it ſelf (which remained only to make an intire conqueſt of thoſe parts) began to ſhake; neither could it have reſiſted long, but that a Myſtery of State preſerv'd it. For, as *Lautrech*'s chief deſign was on *Naples*, (to which he knew yet *Sforza* and the *Venetians* would not eaſily concur,) ſo he thought fit to leave this ſtrong place intire, as well to keep them in exerciſe, as to draw from them a greater dependence on the King his Maſter. For he underſtood well, that when he had put a Garriſon in it in the name of *Sforza*, that he and the *Venetians* would ſooner have excluded him from his further paſſage to *Naples*, than given him any aſſiſtance; which would have fruſtrated both his chief Deſigns, ſince *Francis* pretended alike Title to *Milan* and *Naples*. Beſides, the more moderate ſort approved this courſe; for when the event of War had been improſperous or doubtful, it left a way open for Peace; while each party having ſomewhat to repaire, better Overtures might be given for a general Accommodation. Laſtly, theſe intentions of *Lautrech* were much facilitated by the intreaty of the Pope, who ſolicited him to expel the Remnant of the Imperial Army from the Patrimony of the Church. *Lautrech* hereupon marcheth forwards; whereof *Antonio de Leyva* being informed, ſallies forth of *Milan*, and with his ſmall Forces takes *Biagras*, and holds it, until *Lautrech* ſending *Pietro de Novarra* back with 6000 men, wan it again, and ſetled *Sforza* in the poſſeſſion thereof. *Lautrech* continuing thus his March, finds the Duke of *Ferrara*, and Marqueſs of *Mantua* ready to joyn with him. The manner of weaker and inferior ſort of Princes being ever to comply with the more puiſſant and

1527.

Bell.

Octob. 18.

Octob. 28.
Bell.

1527. and victorious Army. The ſincerity yet of the Duke of *Ferrara* ſeemed queſtionable; both as he had juſt cauſe to be offended with the Pope, and as he had, a good while ſince, rang'd himſelf with the Imperialiſts; Never the leſs, upon the Treaty of a Match betwixt his eldeſt Son, and *Renee* Daughter of *Lewis* the twelfth, was compos'd, and he received into the Confederacy. But among all, none was ſo much perplext as the Pope; who being not yet delivered from his Guards, knew not whether were better for him, to truſt to the fair words of *Charles* (whoſe Agents now treated with him,) or to the aſſiſtance of the League. Neither could he (when this latter part was reſolv'd,) determine concerning the Seat of War. For as, to keep the Army of *Lautrech* at a diſtance, had been to leave himſelf in reſtraint ſtill; So, to invite him to his Territories, had been to expoſe his Subjects to the Rapines of both Armies. Therefore he varied ſtrangely in his private advices, anſwers, and Negotiations; inſomuch that *Lautrech*, at laſt, was neither ſcandaliz'd with his denials, nor confirm'd with his promiſes. Howſoever, *Lautrech* thought fit to purſue his point; whereof *Charles* being advertiſed, reſolved, by a timely and voluntary diſcharge of the Pope out of Priſon, to prevent compulſion. Therefore he ſends a particular diſpatch to *Don Hugo de Moncada*, to ſet him free upon theſe conditions;

Octob. 31. That the Pope ſhall not oppoſe *Charles* in the affairs of *Milan*
Guicc. l. 28. and *Naples*. That he ſhould grant him a *Croiſade* in *Spain*, and a Tenth of all Eccleſiaſtical Livings in all his Kingdoms. That *Oſtia* and *Civita Vecchia* ſhould remain in the hands of *Charles*, for ſecurity hereof. That he ſhould conſign to him *Civita Caſtellana*, and the Caſtle of *Furli*, giving Hoſtages till it were done. That he ſhould pay preſently to the *Almains* 77000 Ducats, and to the *Spaniard* 35000; and that, 15 days after his departure out of *Rome*, he ſhould pay as much again to the *Almains*, and within three months after give the reſt, being in all about 300000 Ducats; and to deliver Ho-
Octob. 31. ſtages for peformance hereof. Upon which Conditions he was to be ſet at liberty, *Decemb.* 10. But the Pope prevented this, by eſcaping, in the habit of a Merchant, to *Monte Fiaſcone*, and thence to
Decemb. 9. *Orvieto*, the night before they promis'd to deliver him. His Hoſtages yet, the Cardinals of *Ceſis* and *Orſino*, remain'd till the money was paid; for obtaining of which, he was forc'd to have recourſe to un-
Guicc. l. 18. decent ways, making (as *Guiccardine* hath it) divers Cardinals for money, which, otherwiſe, deſerv'd not that honour. He alſo gave the *Spaniards* licence for the alienating of Eccleſiaſtical Goods and Poſſeſſions, (and particularly in the Kingdom of *Naples*, to the value of 600000 Crowns, as our Records ſay;) giving therein a beginning (as ſome obſerve,) to that liberty which was afterwards taken in divers places. But neceſſity is a violent Counſellor. Howſoever, the Pope was glad now, not only to find his perſon free from Guards, but ſafe from attempts. The Cardinal *Colonna* (as a latter Author

Author affirms) having labour'd much with *Hernando de Alanzon* privately to make him away: Thus did the Pope enter, by night, and without other company but that of *Loüis de Gonzaga*, (the complice of his escape) to a Town, unable any way to relieve or protect him. From whence yet, though despoil'd of all his money, he found means, within a few months, to return to his former greatness and Authority. Being now at liberty, he sends word thereof to Cardinal *Woolsey*, acknowledging him a great instrument thereof; And, withal, certifies our King of his Estate, desiring him to continue his protection of the See of *Rome*. Our Cardinal also, (who the last year had caused the Litany to be thus sung, *Sancta Maria Ora pro Clemente Papa, Sancte Petre*, &c. as *Charles* who kept him in prison, had caused to be done in *Spain*, though Ironically, as most men conceived it,) now came, in great triumph, to St. *Pauls* in *London*, and caused *Te Deum* to be sung, and Bonfires to be publickly made. The *French* Ambassador in *Spain* this while understanding well how matters were likely to pass, hastned the delivery of the *Cartelles*, of which the chief cause was ill usage of the Pope. For the performing whereof therefore, with more solemnity and ostentation, all the Ambassadors of *England*, *France*, *Venice*, *Florence*, and the rest, desired leave of the Emperor to depart, saying their Commission was expired. To which *Charles* briefly answered, that he would detain them no longer, than 'till his own were recall'd from their Masters Courts. Hereupon, it was thought fit to proceed unto the Defie; which though the *Spaniards* relate with much particularity and circumstance, I shall yet declare as briefly as I can, according to their History.

1527. *Tarcagnotz.* Decemb. 14. Decemb. 18. 1528. Jan. 10. *Hall.* *Sandov.*

Upon the 22 of *January*, *Anno Domini* 1528. *Charles* being at *Burgos*, *Clarenceaux* and *Guyenne* came to the Court, and demanded Audience, which accordingly was granted them; Hereupon the said Heralds, holding their Coats of Arms in their left hand, after three low obeysances presented themselves before *Charles*, who sate in an high Throne, being attended by his chief Nobles and Counsellors. *Clarenceaux* (whom Sir *Francis Pointz*, being now returned to *England*, had left there for this purpose) begins first, saying;

Jan. 22.

Sire, According to the Laws and Edicts inviolably guarded by the *Roman* Emperors your Predecessors, as well as by all other Kings and Princes, We two in the name of our Kings, do present our selves before your Sacred Majesty, to declare some things, on their part; beseeching your Majesty, that, having respect to the above-mention'd Laws and Edicts, you would, out of your benignity and Clemency, vouchsafe to give us security and good usage in your Dominions, while we attend your Answer, and that you would grant us a safe Conduct, till we come to the Lands and Seigneuries of the Kings our Masters. The Emperor promising to accord this, *Guyenne* reads a *Cartell*, sent from the King his Master, the substance whereof was, That because *Charles* would not condescend to an honest and fitting conclu-

1528. concluſion of Peace, nor pay unto the King of *England* that which he ow'd him, nor put the Pope at liberty, nor leave *Italy* in quietneſs; the King, my Maſter, hath commanded me to tell you, to his great grief and diſpleaſure, as alſo of his good Brother the King of *England*, that he ſhall from henceforth hold you his Enemy, notifying to you, that, from this day forwards, he intends not to keep any contract or agreement that may be for your profit and advantage, but that he will do you, and your Subjects, all the harm he can, by War or otherwiſe, until, upon honeſt and fitting conditions, you reſtore his Sons, put the Pope in liberty, pay the King of *England* that you owe him, and leave in Peace and Repoſe all his Allies and Confederates. Nevertheleſs, he offers XL. days reſpite for the withdrawing your Subjects out of their Dominions, requiring the like for his.

Dated *November* 11. 1527. and Signed,
Guyenne King of Arms.

Charles hereunto replied preſently, that he had underſtood all he had ſaid on the part of the King his Maſter, and that he did marvel much, that he ſhould defie him, ſince, being his Priſoner of War, and having his Faith plighted to him, he was diſabled to proceed in this manner. Beſides, it ſeemed ſtrange to him, that he ſhould defie him now; ſince he had made War with him a long time, and yet never defi'd him. Yet, that he truſted in God, he ſhould be able to defend himſelf. As for that ye ſay of the Pope, none is more ſorry than my ſelf, for what is paſs'd, as being done without my knowledg, or Conſent; But, for that, I muſt advertize you, that I received aſſured News yeſterday, that the Pope is at liberty. As for the Sons of the King your Maſter, he knows well I hold them as Hoſtages, and his Ambaſſadors know as well, that it is not my fault, if they be not delivered. As for that you ſay on the part of the King of *England* my good Uncle and Brother, I believe that he is not well inform'd of all the paſſages in theſe affairs; otherwiſe, that he would not have ſent me this meſſage. But I ſhall advertize him of the whole truth, and do believe, that, when he knows it, he will be the ſame to me that formerly he was. I never denied the Money he lent me; and am ready to pay it, as by right I am bound. Notwithſtanding which, if he will needs make War againſt me, I can do no leſs than defend my ſelf, and pray to God, he give me not more occaſion to make War againſt him, than I have given him againſt me. As for the reſt, I deſire to have your *Cartel* under your hand, that I may anſwer more particularly. Hereupon *Guyenne* took his Coat of Arms and put it on.

Sand. Then *Clarenceaux*, not by writing, but by word of mouth, ſpake to this effect. *Sire*, The King my Supreme Lord and Maſter, conſidering the neceſſity of Peace in the Chriſtian World, as well for reſiſting the *Turk*, (who having taken the Iſle of *Rhodes* and Fortreſs

trefs of *Belgrade*, intends yet further conqueſts) as for repreſſing the Hereſies and Sects that are newly riſen; and finding that your Commanders and Army have lately Sack'd the City of *Rome*, and taken our holy Father priſoner, together with divers Cardinals, who have been alſo put to Ranſom, and that the Churches have been ſacrilegiouſly profan'd, and all manner of Religious Orders put to the ſword; inſomuch that by theſe Cruelties and Miſchiefs, the air and earth have been infected, and the anger of God drawn down upon us, if we procure no reparation for them; And, becauſe the Root and beginning of theſe Wars proceeds from the contention and debates between you and the moſt Chriſtian King; The King my Maſter, for giving an end to theſe differences, hath, by his Ambaſſadors, propos'd to you, ſeveral times, ſuch honeſt Conditions, that you ought not to refuſe, if you deſired peace; and the rather, becauſe your unreaſonable demands, would be an ill precedent for other Kings and Princes, that may be ſubject to the like fortune; And whereas he alſo, as a Prince, being bound many ways to the protection of the holy See, hath deſir'd you to give the Pope intire liberty; And hath, oftentimes, requir'd the Money he lent you in the time of your neceſſity, which yet you have not paid him: 1528.

For theſe cauſes, the King my Maſter hath thought fit to take a final reſolution, to deſire you, without further delay, to condeſcend to equity and reaſon; and to tell you, that, ſince you have refus'd it hitherto, he could do no leſs than conclude a League with the moſt Chriſtian King, and other Confederates, by force of Arms to conſtrain you to that, which by right you ought to do. Wherefore, the ſaid King my Maſter, and the moſt Chriſtian King, require you this once for all, to accept the Conditions they have offered you for Peace; declaring, in caſe of refuſal, they muſt, (though not without great grief and diſpleaſure) hold you for their Enemy, denouncing War unto you thereupon, both by Sea and Land, and Defying you with all their Forces. Yet, if you deſire to recal your Subjects out of all their Dominions, as they on their part, likewiſe require, they offer you forty days reſpite for this purpoſe.

This being ſaid, he put on his Coat of Arms, and afterwards gave his Speech under his hand, Signing it,

Clarenceaux King of Arms.

The anſwer *Charles* made to this, little differing from what he made to *Guyenne*, I ſhall not particularly relate.

Then *Charles*, calling *Guyenne* aſide, deſired him, among other things, to tell the King his Maſter, that he thought he was not well advertis'd of ſomething that he told in *Granada* to his Ambaſſadors, which did concern him much: And that he did hold him to be ſo gentile a Prince, that, had he known it, he would have anſwer'd him before now. Wherefore, that he ſhould do well, to take information thereof from his Ambaſſadors, ſince thereby he ſhould under-

1528. ſtand, that I *Charles* have better kept, what I promiſed at *Madrid*, than he hath done; And I pray you fail not to tell this to the King, which *Guyenne* promiſed; and ſo, doing his obeyſance, departed. After which, the ſaid Kings of Arms were called upon by *Juan Aleman*, principal Secretary to the Emperor, to receive the anſwer he ſent to the *Cartels*. That, made to the *French* King, having little in it more than what is formerly ſet down, I ſhall mention no otherwiſe, ſave only that a day was required for Treaty of repealing the Merchants on either ſide.

Sandov. To *Clarenceaux* he anſwered, by the Pen of his Secretary; That the progreſs of the Turk in *Chriſtendom*, and the Captivity of the Pope, were not occaſion'd by him, and that the King of *England* ought not to complain, that he ever refus'd to condeſcend to honeſt and reaſonable Terms of agreement, ſince for his ſake only, he had releaſed much of that, which *Francis*, of himſelf, had freely offered unto the Vice-roy of *Naples*. And all this before ever *Henry* did intermeddle with the ſaid Peace. Alſo, that, for the ſame reaſon, he had accorded divers other conditions, which no other perſons could have perſuaded him unto. Whereas, on the other ſide, *Francis* had never done any thing to comply with him. As to the ſecond point, which is concerning the liberty of the Pope, he was aſſur'd already from *Italy*, that he was free. So that no more needs to be ſaid thereof. And, for that which paſs'd in *Rome*, as ſoon as ever he was advertiſed thereof, he writ his Juſtification unto our King; Deſiring (withal) his Counſel and aſſiſtance in that which he thought might be moſt for the ſervice of God, and good of *Chriſtendom*, to which yet he never anſwered. Which argued, he did not ſo much deſire the liberty of the Pope (which by his loving advice he might have procur'd) as to pick a quarrel againſt him. And as for the Title which your King pretends of being *Protector of the Pope*, and *Defender of the Faith*, he would not yield to him the honour of that duty, but that he would ſay only, that if both had done what they ought, it would have been better for *Chriſtendom*; Neither ſhould thoſe have been born out and favour'd, who have ſo manifeſtly broken their promiſe, which yet, according both to divine and humane Right, ought to be conſerv'd inviolable, both towards friends and enemies. As for the third point, which ſpeaks of the Debts demanded, it is anſwered, That the delay of payment was caus'd by the Treaty betwixt your King's Ambaſſadors and me, according to which, the ſaid Debt ſhould be aſſign'd on *Francis* to pay; and, ſince that time, the Non-payment was occaſioned by want of ſufficient power in your King's Ambaſſadors to diſcharge me thereof. And as for the obligation of Indemnity, there being in arrear four years and four months at the rate of 133805 Crowns by the year; And for the 500000 Crowns to be paid as a penalty for not having match'd with the Princeſs *Mary*, it is anſwered, that the Ambaſſadors, having not with them the Original obligations and Contracts, by which theſe things ſhould appear, he

he thought himſelf excuſed, till convenient place were appointed, where, at the ſame inſtant that he paid the money, he might receive the Securities he entred into for the ſaid payments. As for the Indemnity, there had ſo many things interven'd ſince, that he thought he could produce five ſufficient reaſons to exempt himſelf, when indifferent Commiſſioners ſhall hear the buſineſs on both ſides. And as for the penalty, which the ſaid Ambaſſadors demanded, there were three evident and peremptory reaſons to clear him from ſatisfying that demand. Firſt, becauſe, by the Law Civil and Canon, all penal ſtipulation, by which the free power of Marrying in any fitting place is prohibited, is, *ipſo facto*, void, and of no effect. Secondly, That, when the Obligation for the ſaid penalty were valid, yet the ſaid King your Maſter cannot prevail himſelf of the Treaty of *Windſor*, (where the ſaid penalty was agreed) unleſs he prove firſt, that he had intirely accompliſh'd all that was to be done on his part; which he thought was more than could be made appear. Thirdly, That, before he Marryed, he requir'd the King your Maſter to ſend his Daughter to this Kingdom, for the better ſatisfaction of his Subjects, who deſired much to ſee him have Children, who might ſucceed him: Whereas your King thought fit rather to give Commiſſion to his Ambaſſadors to conſent to any other Marriage, than to ſend his Daughter hither. Beſides which, it appear'd, by certain Letters that were taken, the King your Maſter treated of a Marriage betwixt his Daughter and the King of *Scotland* his Nephew; which Treaty was begun long before he Marryed with the Empreſs. So that, when the ſtipulation were valid, the King your Maſter ſhould pay the penalty, as being reciprocally agreed: On which yet he would not inſiſt, as being void in Law. Moreover, that, contrary to the ſaid Treaty of *Windſor*, he had ſecretly kept in his Court *John Joakim*, and afterwards publickly receiv'd the Preſident of *Roüen*, as Ambaſſador, who Treated on the part of *Francis*; And, becauſe the Ambaſſador, he had in *England*, had writ the truth of what he ſaw and underſtood, he was ill uſed, and threatned in the ſaid Kingdom, and the diſpatches he wrote, taken, and opened by the Miniſters of your King, contrary to all right both Divine and humane. And, which was worſt of all, ſince the Impriſonment of the ſaid *Francis*, the King your Maſter, being required to ſet down his claims and demands, whereby (according to the ſaid Treaty) each of them might have recovered their right, and a good and durable peace been eſtabliſhed in Chriſtendom, yet the King your Maſter would never accept thereof, as thinking to make his advantage another way; which hath been the cauſe of all the breaches that have follow'd ſince. That yet he had forborn to take notice, or complain of theſe offences, as being deſirous to keep the friendſhip of the King your Maſter, which he eſteemed ſo much, that he accorded, for his ſake, almoſt all that his Ambaſſadors demanded at *Palentia*, concerning the Peace with *Francis*. As for the defiance you have made on

1528.

1528. the part of the King your Maſter, there is ſufficient anſwer thereto given by word of mouth. It being poſſible (as was then ſaid) that there might be more juſt occaſion to make War againſt the King your Maſter, than he hath againſt me; eſpecially, if it be true (which is ſaid in *England*, *France*, and other parts) that your King will be Divorced from the Queen his Wife, and marry with another, (notwithſtanding the diſpenſations granted on that behalf.) Since beſides all other injuries done herein, it will be manifeſt, his intention was to make the Lady (he pretended to give me in Marriage) a Baſtard; which yet as he could not eaſily believe, in a Prince he eſteem'd ſo much, ſo, if any ſuch purpoſe were, he muſt lay the fault thereof upon the ſiniſter and perverſe information of his Cardinal, whoſe unmeaſurable Ambition and Covetouſneſs was ſuch, that becauſe he refus'd to employ his Army in *Italy*, for the making him Pope by ſtrong hand, (which alſo he had procur'd the King his Maſter to write for, and himſelf had intreated by ſome Letters written by his own hand.) And becauſe alſo he would not ſatisfie him in other his inordinate and unreaſonable deſires, he had many times declared, that he would give that diſturbance and impediment to all his buſineſſes, that for this hundred years the like had not been ſeen; ſo that he would make him repent it, when the Kingdom of *England* ſhould be hazarded thereby. And certainly, if the King your Maſter will believe the evil counſel of the Cardinal, it will be the right way to bring that to paſs which he ſaid, and conſequently to be the ruine of your King and Maſters Dominions. All which being conſidered, he proteſted he was not the Author of the evils might follow hereupon. Finally, for the buſineſs of the Merchants, he refer'd him to a further Treaty.

Jan. 27. Theſe Anſwers were read unto the ſaid Kings of Arms by *Juan Aleman Seigneur de Bouclans*, and then given unto them, to be carryed to their ſeveral Kings and Maſters, in *Burgos* 27 *Jan.* 1528. Wherewithal they had their ſafe Conducts to depart.

Thus did *Clarenceaux*, inſtead of ſatisfaction for the Money, and kindneſſes done to *Charles*, return with a Reply full of offence and evaſion, unto his King and Maſter. Of which our King yet made no other account, than ſuch as became one, who, holding himſelf free from all cauſes of ſuſpition and calumny, deſpiſed whatſoever in either kind was objected againſt him; ſince, having inviolably kept his intention and oath of falling on that Prince, which moſt interrupted the publick Peace, he thought it now his part, to joyn againſt *Charles*. For though in the beginning he interceded only for a Peace, betwixt him and *Francis*, (refuſing therefore to be the chief and Protector of the *Clementine* League) yet finding now, that the Generals and Army of *Charles* proceeded to ſuch an enormous outrage, as to take and hold the Pope Priſoner, he thought he could do no leſs, than uſe all means that might conduce to his delivery, and the repreſſing of the exorbitant ambition of *Charles*, who was thought

thought not obſcurely to aſpire to an univerſal Monarchy. As for the little cavils and punctiglios, concerning the receiving of *Giovanni Joakim*, or the giving a civil ear to a propoſition of marriage in *Scotland*, and the like, as they were not, before ſome Contraventions of the part of *Charles*, ſo no effect did follow thereof, in thoſe times when *Charles* moſt ſuſpected them. Though, when our King was inform'd that *Charles* did, after his Treaty at *Windſor*, give and receive overtures of Marriage in more than one place, it could not ſeem ſtrange if he took the ſame liberty. As for the opening of the Letters, our Cardinal by particular diſpatches to Doctor *Sampſon* Reſident in *Spain*, had, a good while ſince, ſo cleared his King from any ſiniſter intention therein, that it ought not to have been further mention'd. For though, indeed, a ſtranger paſſing the Watch about *London*, at an undue time of night, and in a ſuſpected manner, had ſome Letters taken from him, which afterwards were opened by Sir *Thomas More*, and delivered to the Cardinal; yet the ſaid Letters, which (as it appear'd afterwards) came from Mounſieur *de Praet*, (who departed ſecretly out of *England*, without taking leave either of our King or his Council,) and were written in Ciphers, and contained many dangerous falſhoods, were, in due time, poſted to the Empero-, (whereby alſo he might perceive what ill offices his ſaid Ambaſſador did,) and the fault laid on *de Praet*, who choſe rather to uſe his own Authority than to demand a Paſs, in a time when he knew they could not otherwiſe be Convey'd; which likewiſe was the excuſe for intercepting another Meſſenger, who carryed Letters to the Lady *Margaret* in *Flanders*, of the ſame Tenor; which yet ſhe receiv'd preſently after. And for the excuſes not to pay the mony requir'd of him, or the penalty above-mentioned, they were but Arts, by which others might learn to deceive him in the ſame kind, and which therefore might inſtruct *Francis* to do the like.

1518. 1524. 1525. 1525. Records. 1525. April 9.

Our Cardinal being thus incens'd againſt *Charles*, thought fit, as well in deſpite of him, as for the aſſertion of his Kings proceedings, publickly to give account, in the Star-chamber, of the whole State of this buſineſs; adding withal, that our King was reſolv'd to make War againſt *Charles*. In the delivery whereof, though he did exaggerate the actions of *Charles*, even to the making him criminal of whatſoever either by the Law of God, or man he could be guilty; yet our Merchants, who, thereupon, ſhould neither vent their chief Commodities in the *Low-Countreys*, and *Spain*, nor again receive from thence ſupplies of ſome Commodities they ſtood in need of, would no way approve this War; as that, from which they ſaw neither profit or honour likely to enſue; eſpecially, when they heard, the Pope was delivered from his Impriſonment. Nevertheleſs, the Cardinal, purſuing his intentions, (as the Emperor had done firſt in *Spain* to the *Engliſh* and *French*,) ſeiſeth on the goods of the Subjects of *Charles*, and ſhortly after on the perſon of his Ambaſſador *Don Hugo de Mendoza*, upon notice given, that our Ambaſſador

October. Hall.

1528. baſſador was ſtaid in *Spain*. The Conſequence of this, was, that our Merchants preſently found the like meaſure in the *Low-Countries*, to the great prejudice of that Entercourſe and Commerce, which for many Ages had paſs'd betwixt both Nations. Upon news yet, that our Ambaſſadors were well uſed in *Spain*, *Hugo de Mendoza* was not only ſet at liberty, but perſuaded, by ſome, that the Defiance which *Clarenceaux* had made unto *Charles*, was by him haſtened, at the motion only of the *French* Ambaſſador. For which *Hall.* preſumptuous act, he ſhould therefore ſuffer death, aſſoon as he return'd to *Calais*. *Hugo de Mendoza*, glad hereof, ſends a diſpatch, by Poſt, into *Spain*, acquainting *Charles* with all theſe particularities. But as the *Courier* paſt by *Bayonne*, the Governour thereof opened and Copied theſe Letters, which afterwards he ſhew'd *Clarenceaux*, as he return'd homewards. *Clarenceaux*, at firſt, ſeem'd much aſtoniſh'd, but, at laſt, conſidering he had good warrant from the Cardinal, for all his proceedings, he recollects himſelf, and continues his Journey. He did not think fit yet to come to *Calais*, but, taking Ship at *Boulogne*, and landing at *Rye*, he ſecretly poſted to *Hampton* Court, where the King was; uſing ſuch means there, that he obtain'd ſpeedy acceſs to him, ſhewing, among other things, *Hall.* three Letters from the Cardinal, Authorizing this Defiance to *Charles*. He aſſured him alſo of the good uſage he had received there; inſomuch, that (notwithſtanding all theſe Rough paſſages,) he had been rewarded with a Chain of 700 Ducats. Laſtly, he ſhew'd the Copy of thoſe Letters the Governour of *Bayonne* had intercepted: which ſo ſtartled the King, that he proteſted againſt the Cardinal, as one, that not only uſurped too much upon the Regal Authority, but repreſented things much otherwiſe than they were, unto him. The King, hereupon, ſent for the Cardinal, and laies theſe inſolencies and preſumptions to his charge in ſuch a manner, that, howſo- *Hall.* ever the Cardinal excus'd himſelf, the King was obſerv'd to miſtruſt him ever afterwards. The matter hereupon was brought to the body of the Council; where, notwithſtanding the Cardinal alledged that nothing was done, but what was conformable to the Kings intentions, as he conceiv'd them; yet, becauſe in a Matter of this high conſequence, he had proceeded too ſingly, without adviſing with the King and Council, he was reprov'd. In ſequence whereof alſo (notwithſtanding this deſigned War) ſome overtures were made for keeping the Commerce betwixt us, and the *Low-Country* men ſtill open, if it could be fairly done. Therefore the *Dutch-men* were Licenſed to depart home, the *Spaniards* yet being not permitted to go, till it appear'd, how our Merchants were uſed there.

The Lady *Margaret*, Regent of the *Low-Countries*, being inform'd hereof, doth in exchange of this courteſie, diſmiſs our *Engliſh* likewiſe, yet retaineth their goods, until ſhe might hear how the *Spaniards* were uſed in *England*, But together aſſures them, that when ſhe is ſatisfied thereof, all things ſhould be ſafely reſtored.

And

1528.

And now our Merchants (who uſed not the Trade to the many *Northern* and remote Countreys they now frequent) foreſeeing the conſequence of theſe Wars, refus'd to buy the Cloaths that were brought to *Blackwell*-Hall in *London*; whereupon the Cloathiers, Spinners and Carders in many Shires of *England* began to mutine. For appeaſing whereof, the Cardinal commands our Merchants to take off theſe Cloaths, at a reaſonable price, from the poor mens hands, threatning, otherwiſe, that the King himſelf ſhould buy them, and ſell them to Strangers. But the ſullen Merchants, little mov'd herewith, ſaid, they had no reaſon to buy Commodities they knew not how to utter. Therefore, whatſoever was propos'd for Staples at *Calais*, or *Abbeville*, our Merchants did not, or at leaſt would not underſtand it. But this diſcontentment did equally extend to the Inhabitants of the *Low-Countreys*, and eſpecially to *Antwerp*, where the chief Mart was. The Lady *Margaret* conſidering this alſo, and fearing leſt any Inſurrection might follow, ſends over, by the advice of the Emperors Council, the Provoſt of *Caſſelles*, and one other, to join with *Don Hugo de Mendoza*, for the obtaining, if nothing elſe, yet of a Truce and abſtinence from War. Theſe Ambaſſadors having obtained audience of the King, *March* 29. 1528. *Mendoza* ſaid unto him; March 29. *Hall.*

Sire, The Emperor's Majeſty doth acknowledge himſelf ſo much bound to your Grace for the many favours receiv'd from you, ever ſince his Minority, that he will by no means take the Defiance given by your Herald, as a peremptory denunciation of War, till he hath heard further of your pleaſure. Therefore, his Council hath appointed theſe two Noble perſons and my ſelf, to know your determinate Anſwer, and final Reſolution herein. The King, pauſing a while, as one that in his heart loved *Charles*, and yet was bound, by his late Treaty, to oppoſe him, Anſwered; *Of War I am nothing joyful, And of War I am leſs fearful*, I thank God, as having both men and money in readineſs, which I know other Princes lack, for all their high words; And therefore to War I could ſoon agree. Yet, before I make you a determinate Anſwer herein, I ſhall declare ſome part of my mind to you, and tell you accordingly, that, although your Maſter be a great Emperor, and mighty Prince, I cannot, nor may not, ſuffer him to bear down and deſtroy the Realm of *France*, which is our true Inheritance, and for which our Brother and Ally, the *French* King, pays us yearly a great Penſion and Tribute; wherefore we, of Juſtice and equity, muſt maintain that Land, out of which we have ſo fair a Rent, and ſuch a profit. The Provoſt of *Caſſelles* replying hereunto, told the King; That the antient love and friendſhip which hath been betwixt your Realm and the houſe of *Burgundy*, *Flanders*, and the *Low-Countreys*, is now ſo confirm'd and rooted in their hearts, that I aſſure your Grace, that, next their Sovereign Lord, they would ſooneſt live and die with you. In which regard he hoped, that no new Alliance could corrupt and change this ſo long ſetled

1528. ſetled and inveterate Amity. Which yet we ſay not out of Fear, as being well furniſhed for War, but out of that true affection, which we have ever born you. Therefore, though we offer you choice of War, or Peace, yet the Emperor intends no more herein, than to leave you the arbitrement of both. And thus much I will confeſs out of my Inſtructions, that if you chuſe War, we have yet Commiſſion in fitting Terms to ſue for Peace; And if you chuſe Peace, we have likewiſe Commiſſion to thank you for it; and to offer both us and ours at your command. *Hugo de Mendoza*, to ſecond this, ſaid, that, of very right, the Emperor and his Dominions ought to have your love and favour before the *French* King and his Nation. Since the *French* had never apply'd themſelves to you, but in the time of their neceſſity; whereas the love on our part hath been ever inviolable. This was an age, in which much Honour, and ſome Good-nature was to be found. Therefore our King, returning to his former affection to *Charles* (and the rather for that he found ſo much was deferr'd to his mediation, in the affairs of *Francis*, as is above related) and, beſides, having an eye on the buſineſſes of *Scotland* (as will appear hereafter) and, howſoever, being deſirous to conſerve his Stile and Dignity of Arbiter, told them, that, as he well perceiv'd the intent of their coming, ſo he would be well adviſ'd, how to make them a fitting anſwer; ſaying, that, in the mean while, he was content there ſhould be a Truce for a time; wherewith the *Flemiſh* Ambaſſadors returned home, well ſatisfied that they had obtained this reſpite. *Hall.* The King hereupon, adviſeth with his Counſellors; among whom, though thoſe who adhered to *Wooliey*, did perſuade a War, yet the greater part (who did ſecretly diſaffect the Cardinal) told the King, That the Reſultance of War in the *Low-Countreys* could be nothing but a grievance to his Subjects, a decay of Trade, a diminution of his Cuſtoms, and addition to the greatneſs of *Francis*, who would have the advantage of all that was undertaken in this kind. Which being duly conſidered, it was thought fit to make an abſtinence from War for eight months, and until it appear'd upon conſultation betwixt the Emperors Ambaſſadors, and his) how a General peace might be made. Hereupon Letters were ſent, not only to *Spain* and *Flanders*, but to *France*, manifeſting the reaſons, why the King had, for a while, ſuſpended this War. In which Eſtate alſo the buſineſs continued, till anſwer was brought from foreign parts.

The Biſhop of *Bayonne*, reſident here on the part of the *French* K. was no ſooner advertiz'd hereof, but he demanded audience; which being obtained, he ſaith, That, though he doubted not, but his Highneſs did well remember the late League, concluded betwixt him and his Brother the *French* King, which alſo was ratified and confirm'd by the three Eſtates of the Realm of *France*, by vertue whereof you have an Annual Penſion and Tribute to a great value paid to you, in conſideration whereof, you have promis'd to defend the ſaid Realm againſt all perſons; yet, becauſe it is well known to many, that

1528.

that the Emperors Ambaſſadors have laboured the contrary, diſpoſing your Highneſs (all they could) to infringe the ſaid League, I thought it my part to put your Highneſs in mind thereof, aſſuring your Highneſs, for the reſt, that, whenſoever you ſhould begin to make a War upon the Emperor and his Subjects, it would be a perpetual Obligation, not only on him, but on the whole *French* Nation. The King replied hereunto, that, though it were more eaſie to enter into Wars, than to end them with Honour and profit, yet that he would preſerve inviolable the League and Amity betwixt his Brother of *France*, and himſelf. So that the King, your Maſter, needs not doubt, but that I will defend his Country to the uttermoſt of my Power; Though, I muſt tell you, that, when I could procure him a Honourable, and advantagious Peace, I ſhould think I had deſerv'd as well of him this way, as any other. Wherewith the Ambaſſadour departed well contented, yet ſo, as he was in ſome more uncertainty concerning the intended War. Therefore, he ſollicites the Cardinal, as his Maſters beſt friend, to haſten the Forces, which our King had now in readineſs for a War with the *Low-Countries*: But, as the favour of the Cardinal began now ſomewhat to decline, ſo found he not that expedition which he was wont to receive in his addreſſes. Howſoever, the War betwixt the *French* and *Flemings* continued. In which this memorable accident is recorded. That a *French* Ship lying at *Margate*, being ſet on by a *Fleming*, and finding her ſelf too weak, the wind being fair for the River of *Thames*, packs on all her Sails, and makes for *London*. The *Fleming*, as eagerly purſuing her, overtakes and boards her near the Tower-Wharfe; which Sir *Edmund Walſingham*, Lieutenant of the Tower, perceiving, calls his Men together, and ſeiſed on them; where, though the *Fleming* boldly challenged his prize, yet the Kings Council, conſidering, that (in this place) both of them were under the Kings protection, it was thought fit to diſmiſs them freely on either ſide.

Hall.

Hall.

It appears before how *Guyenne*, King of Arms, charg'd himſelf with a Meſſage from *Charles* the Emperor unto the King his Maſter, containing an affront and kind of challenge, which the ſaid *Charles* had formerly declared to the Archbiſhop of *Bourdeaux*. *Guyenne* having now performed his part; *Francis* could no longer forbear to take notice of it. Yet, becauſe it ſeems he did not ſufficiently apprehend the relation which the ſaid Archbiſhop of *Bourdeaux* made thereof, he requires of him more ample and clear information. The Archbiſhop hereupon writes to *Charles*, and craves, that, under his hand, he would ſet down what he told him by word of mouth; for the reſt, making ſome excuſe, that he did not remember it better. *Charles* anſwers him, and repeats the words; Shortly after which, *Francis* diſpatches *Guyenne* with a Cartel; in the delivery whereof I ſhall ſet down the forms were uſed, the example being ſo rare.

Sandov.

Guyenne having obtained a ſafe conduct from *Charles*, who alſo

1528. June 7. June 8. commanded one *Montalvo*, a Gentleman, for his more ſecurity, by the way, to accompany him, comes to *Monzon* in *Arragon*, where *Charles* then was, 7. of *June* 1528. Having gotten audience the next day, *Charles* ſitting in his Throne, and being well attended by his prime Nobility and Prelates, expects him. *Guyenne* coming hereupon to the lower end of a great Hall, puts on his Coat of Arms, and after five low obeyſances made, caſts himſelf on his knees before *Charles*, and ſpeaks thus.

Sire, I beſeech your Majeſty, that, continuing the good uſage I have received hitherto, you will give me leave to perform that, that belongs to my office, and that, this being done, I may have leave ſafely to return. *Charles* anſwered; King of Arms, do thy duty, and my will is, that thou be always well Treated. Then *Guyenne*, riſing up, ſaid;

Sire, The King my Maſter, being advertiſed of the words you commanded me to tell him, and of that which, before and after, you have ſpoken againſt his Honour, deſires ſo much to juſtifie it, before all the world, (as in truth he may,) that he hath commanded me, for anſwer, to preſent you this Writing, ſubſcribed with his own hand, which when your Majeſty ſhall pleaſe to peruſe, you will find, how intirely he ſatisfies all. Moreover, your Majeſty will be pleaſed to give me leave to return to the King my Maſter, for I have no further Commiſſion. This being ſaid, he ſeem'd to offer a paper unto *Charles*. Before yet *Charles* would take it, he ſaid, King of Arms, haſt thou Commiſſion from thy King to read this Writing thou bringeſt? *Guyenne* anſwered, that he had. Then *Charles* ſaid, King of Arms, I have heard that which you have ſaid, and will look on the Writing which you have brought, and will do in ſuch ſort, that my honour ſhall be preſerved. And, for the King your Maſter, he will have enough to do to keep his, it being a thing in a manner impoſſible, As for that which concerns my Juſtice, my Chancellor here ſhall deliver it. Then the Chancellor ſaid, His Majeſty, holding himſelf to the Proteſtations made heretofore on his part, proteſteth here again, that, for any thing that either now, or hereafter, he ſhall ſay, or do, he doth not intend to prejudice or derogate from the Rights that belong unto him by the Capitulation of *Madrid*; and that, notwithſtanding any breach on this particular occaſion, it ſhall remain in full force and effect. And that this Proteſtation ſhall be underſtood, as diſtributed and reparted in all the proceedings, that ſhall hereafter paſs in this matter.

When the Chancellor had ſpoken this, the Emperor ſaid; King of Arms, although, for many reaſons, the King your Maſter be not capable of doing any Act in this kind, either againſt me or any elſe, yet, for the good of *Chriſtendom*, and avoiding of more effuſion of blood, and for giving an end to theſe Wars, and for no other reaſon, I do enable him for this purpoſe; wherewith he took the paper

paper that *Guyenne* held in his hand. Then *Guyenne* ſaid to him; *Sire*, If the Anſwer that your Majeſty ſhall ſend to the King my Maſter be the ſecurity of the Field, or Fighting place, and that you pleaſe to give it me, I have Commiſſion to bring it, and nothing elſe. Therefore, your Majeſty will be pleaſed not to force me to any thing elſe, but the ſaid ſecurity of the Field, in which the King my Maſter will aſſuredly preſent himſelf, with thoſe Arms with which he intends to defend himſelf. And for me, your Majeſty will be pleaſed to let me depart. *Charles* anſwered; Your Maſter ought not to preſcribe me what I am to do; I will do what I have ſaid; for which cauſe, as well as that ſomething may be in this paper, to which I may reply by ſome particular Meſſenger, I charge you to procure him a ſafe conduct, ſince you would not come without mine; which *Guyenne* promiſed; wherewith the Emperor calling *Juan Aleman*, his Secretary, charg'd him to Record all that had been done there. After which *Guyenne* (who ſeem'd to have taken his leave) ſaid, *Sire*, I have another paper to preſent your Majeſty by the hands of Seigneur *Aleman* your Secretary, if your Majeſty be pleaſed to command him to receive it; which *Charles* likewiſe permitted. Whereupon all the principal perſons preſent, and laſtly *Guyenne* alſo, ſubſcribed their names unto the Record. This being done, the Emperor commanded his Secretary *Aleman* to read in an high voice the Cartel delivered by *Guyenne*. 1528.

The Cartel of Francis *the French King, to* Charles *the Emperor.*

WE *Francis* by the grace of God King of *France*, Lord of *Genoüa*, &c. To you *Charles*, by the ſame grace, Choſen Emperor of the *Romans*, King of *Spain*. We let you know that being advertis'd, how, in certain Anſwers given to our Ambaſſadours and Kings of Arms, (which for negotiating a peace we ſent unto you) you, deſiring without reaſon to excuſe your ſelf, have accuſed us, ſaying, that you have our Faith plighted to you, and that hereupon contravening our promiſe, we are departed out of your hands and power. For defending of our honour, which herein is, much againſt truth, impeached, we have thought fit to ſend you this Cartel; by which although we ſay, that no man under reſtraint can plight his Faith, and that, though this excuſe is very ſufficient, yet, as we deſire to give ſatisfaction to every one, and as well to our own honour, which we have kept, and will keep (God willing) to the death; We let you know, that, if either you have already, or ſhall hereafter lay to our charge any thing which may touch our Faith, or Liberty, or that we have done any thing, which a Cavalier that loves his honour ought not do; We ſay unto you, that you have Lyed in your throat; and that as many times as you ſhall ſay it, you Lye; being reſolv'd to defend our honor to the laſt period of our life.

1528.

And ſince, againſt Truth, you have laid this Imputation on us, write not to us any more, but aſſure Us the Field, and we will bring the Arms; Proteſting that, if after this Declaration, you write to any part, or ſpeak any words againſt our honour, the ſhame of delaying the Combat ſhall be yours, ſince, being come to theſe terms, all cauſe of writing ceaſeth.

Dated in our good Town and City of Paris
Mart. 28. 1527. *before Eaſter.*

Martii. 28. $15\frac{27}{28}$.

Underneath which was plac'd the little Seal of *Francis* in Wax.

This being the ſubſtance of *Francis* his Cartel, was communicated beforehand to our King, who adviſed him only (as I find in our Records) not to give the Emperor that harſh word of the Lye. In the Paper delivered to the Secretary *Aleman*, a Relation was made of ſome paſſages between *Francis*, and the *Seigneur de Granvele* Ambaſſador of *Charles*, reſiding in the *French* Court, in which *Francis* pretended to excuſe his breach of promiſe, by the conſtraint and neceſſity he was in, ſaying, among other things, that he yielded not himſelf to the Emperor, and therefore that he could not accuſe him of breach of Faith. It was alſo declared there, how *Francis* cauſed the Cartel above-mentioned to be * read publickly before the Emperor's Ambaſſadour. Moreover, *Francis* laboured to avoid the imputation laid on him by *Charles* for defying him now, when yet he had made ſix or ſeven years War without ſending any ſuch Defyance. To which therefore he anſwered, that the Ambaſſadors of *Charles* had defied him firſt, at *Dijon*, and therefore it would not ſeem ſtrange if he defended himſelf. The reſt was little more than ſome proteſtations againſt the late Impriſonment of the Pope, the detaining of his two Sons for Hoſtages, ſome Complement of *Henry* King of *England*, and ſome excuſes for not having anſwer'd this buſineſs ſooner; among which, the following, being ſomewhat extravagant, ſeems worth the relating: For, whereas *Charles* objected againſt him, that he kept his promiſe in *Madrid* better to *Francis*, than *Francis* had done to him, he ſaid he did not remember to have promiſed any thing there; for, concerning the Concord of *Madrid*, he ſaid, it was ſet down in Writing; howſoever that he held himſelf ſufficiently diſcharged from it, in regard he was not at liberty when he Signed it, nor afterwards ſet free upon his word, (which, in that caſe only, he thought himſelf bound to obſerve:) for the reſt, profeſſing, he could call to mind nothing that might oblige him, but only that he ſaid he would in perſon aſſiſt *Charles* againſt the *Turk*, which he was ready to do likewiſe with all his Forces; aſſuring further, that *Charles* ſhould not ſo ſoon have his foot in the ſtirrup for this purpoſe, but he would be before him in the Saddle. To all which the ſaid Ambaſſadour replied, he had no commiſſion to hear, or Treat of theſe buſineſſes, and therefore deſired leave to depart, and ſafe-conduct,

Record.

Sandov.

* Mart. 28.

conduct, the Emperor his Maſter having repeal'd him. Whereunto *Francis* anſwered, that the Emperor his Maſter had forc'd him to theſe courſes, and that he did eſteem him ſo gentile a Prince, that, when he ſhould underſtand this anſwer I make him, he would anſwer thereunto like a Gentleman, and not like a Lawyer: becauſe, if he did otherwiſe, he would ſend a Reply to his Chancellor, by an Advocate, a perſon of his quality, and an honeſter Man than he. For your particular, I have thought fit to let you know, that I ſhall cauſe you to be accompanied to the Frontiers of my Dominions, to the intent that I may receive my Ambaſſadors at the time that I diſmiſs you. This was Signed by *Robertet*, Secretary to *Francis*. 1528.

Hereupon *Charles* reſolves, by *Burgundy* his King of Arms, to ſend his Reply unto *Francis*, bearing date *June* 28. 1528. June 28.

The Cartel and reply of Charles *the Emperor, to* Francis *the French King.*

CHarles by the divine Clemency Emperor of the *Romans*, King of *Germany* and of *Spain*, &c. I do let know to you *Francis*, by the grace of God King of *France*, that, upon the VIII. of this Month of *June*, I received by *Guyenne*, your King of Arms, your Cartel, dated *Mart.* 28. which from a remoter place than *Paris* might have come hither in a ſhorter time; and conformable to that which on my part was ſaid to your King of Arms, I anſwer to that which you ſay, That in certain anſwers given by me to the Ambaſſadors and Kings of Arms, whom for negotiating a Peace you ſent unto me, in which you alledge, that, for excuſing my ſelf, without cauſe, I have accuſed you, I reply, that I have not ſeen any King of Arms on your part, but him that came to *Burgos*, to denounce War againſt me. And as for my ſelf, having err'd in nothing, there is no need to excuſe my ſelf. But for you, it is your own Faults that accuſe you. And whereas you mention the plighting of your Faith to me, you ſay true, when you underſtand thereby the Capitulation of *Madrid*; where it appears, by certain Writings ſubſcribed with your own hand, that you would return to be my true Priſoner, in caſe you did not accompliſh all, which by the ſaid Capitulation was promiſed. But, that I ſhould ſay, as you mention in your Cartel, that you having plighted your Faith unto me, did contrary to your promiſe, go away, and eſcape my hands, and power, they are words which I never ſaid, becauſe I never pretended to hold your Faith, ſo, as not to go away, but to return in the form that was agreed. And if you made this good, you ſhould neither be wanting to your Children, nor that which you owe unto your honour. And to that you ſay, that, for defence of your honour (which in this caſe ſhould, much againſt truth, be impeach'd) you have thought fit to ſend your Cartel, by which you ſay, that although no man under ward

or

1528. or reſtraint can plight his Faith, and that this excuſe is very ſufficient; Notwithſtanding, as you deſire to give ſatisfaction to every one, and as well unto your own honour, which you ſay you have kept, and will keep (God willing) unto the death, and thereupon do let me know, that, if either I have already, or ſhall hereafter lay to your charge any thing which may touch your Faith, or liberty, or that you have done any thing which a Cavalier that loves his honour ought not to do, you ſay that I have Lyed in my throat, and, as many times as I ſhall ſay it, that I Lye. And that you are reſolv'd to defend your honour to the laſt period of your life.

To this I Anſwer, that, conſidering the form of the Capitulation, your excuſe for being under reſtraint can have no place; but, ſince you make ſo ſmall account of your honour, I do not wonder that you deny your ſelf to be obliged to accompliſh your promiſe; for your words cannot vindicate your honour. Therefore I have ſaid, and will ſay (without Lying,) That you have done *Laſchement* and *Meſchamment*, in not keeping the Faith you gave me, according to the Capitulation of *Madrid*. And, in ſaying this, I do not charge you with things ſecret, or impoſſible to prove, ſince they appear by Writings, ſigned by your hand, which you can neither excuſe, nor deny: And if you will affirm the contrary, (ſince I have releaſed and enabled you only for this Combat) I ſay, that for the good of Chriſtendom, and for avoiding the effuſion of blood, and for putting an end to this War, and to defend my juſt demand, I ſhall, in my perſon maintain againſt yours, that, that which I ſay, is true. But I will not return to you the Language you give me; ſince both your Actions (without that I or any elſe ſpeak of them) make you a Lyar, and that it is more eaſie afar off to talk in this manner, than near at hand. And, as for that which you ſay, that, ſince, againſt Truth, I have laid this imputation on you, that from henceforth I ſhould write no more, but that I ſhould aſſure you the Field, and that you will bring the Arms, I ſay, you muſt have patience a while, till I have laid your Actions open to you, and until I have writ you this Anſwer, by which I ſay, that I accept the appointing of the Field, and that I am content to aſſure it on my part, by all the reaſonable ways that can be deviſed; And, for this effect, and for the better expedition thereof, I do now name the place for the ſaid Combat, to be upon the River, which paſſeth between *Fuentarabie* and *Andaja*, in that part, and after that manner, which by agreement on both ſides, ſhall be thought moſt ſecure and convenient. And, it ſeems that in reaſon you ought not to refuſe this, or ſay it is not ſecure enough, ſince there you were ſet Free, upon giving your Sons for Hoſtages, with your Faith and promiſe to return. And conſidering as well that in the ſame River you did entruſt your perſon, and your Children; You may be confident now to hazard your own only, Since I will as well hazard mine. And means ſhall be found out, that, notwithſtanding the Situation of the

the place, neither of us ſhall have advantage of the other. And for this purpoſe, as well as for the election of Arms, (which I pretend of right to belong to me and not to you) And becauſe in the Concluſion of this buſineſs no trifling or delay may be admitted, we may ſend Gentlemen on both parts to view the ſaid place; with ſufficient power to Treat and agree, as well concerning the ſecurity of the Field, as the choice of Arms, the day of Combat, and the reſt that belongs hereunto. And if, within the ſpace of XL. days after the delivery hereof, you neither anſwer nor advertiſe me of your intention herein, it will ſufficiently appear, that the delay is on your part, which therefore ſhall be imputed, and laid to your charge, together with the default of not having accompliſh'd that which you promiſed in *Madrid*. And whereas you proteſt, that if, after this Declaration, I ſay or write words contrary to your honour, that the ſhame of delay of Combat ſhall be mine, ſince when matters are brought to theſe terms, all Cauſe of writing ceaſeth; your Proteſtations might have been well ſpared; ſince you cannot forbid me to ſay Truth, though it grieve you. And that as well I am aſſur'd that the ſhame of delaying the Combat will not reſt on me, ſince all the World may Witneſs the deſire I have to ſee an end thereof.

At Monzon in Arragon, June 28. 1528. 1528.

This alſo was certified under the hand and Seal of *Burgundy*, King of Arms, who, together carried, in a paper, the fourth Article of the Concord of *Madrid*. And, moreover, in a publick writing, declar'd that his Imperial Majeſty commanded him, with all ſpeed, to enquire an Anſwer thereof. And that he ſhould offer his ſervice for bringing of it, if *Francis* ſo thought fit. Yet if the ſaid King would not ſend it but by another, then that he ſhould aſſure *Francis*, on the part of his Imperial Majeſty, that the ſaid Meſſenger might come ſecurely; And that a ſafe Conduct ſhould be made him if he deſired it; Although his Imperial Majeſty did not think it neceſſary for a King of Arms, as being a priviledg'd perſon. And, beſides this, that he the ſaid *Burgundy* ſhould give to *Robertet*, Secretary to the King of *France*, or any other, whom the ſaid King ſhould appoint, an Anſwer, in writing, to that which *Guyenne* gave in preſence of his Imperial Majeſty, and, by his conſent, to the Secretary *Aleman*. *Sandov.* The Tenor of which writing being long, and containing little in it, but what is formerly ſet down, I ſhall paſs over. And the rather, for that it took no more effect. Nevertheleſs, I muſt not omit to ſay that the excuſe of *Francis* was not generally approved, nor his Cartel thought juſt. For if a Priſoner of War may avoid his promiſe, becauſe he is under conſtraint, it would follow, that few or none would be taken, but rather kill'd upon the place; which would make the War not only more bloody and barbarous, but even deſtroy a principal part of that *Jus Gentium*, which in theſe caſes hath been inviolably obſerv'd in all times. So that if

Francis

1528. *Francis* had excus'd his not returning by being a publick perſon, and had ſaid that his Obligation by Oath, when he was Crown'd, unto his People and Kingdom was a greater tye than that of his particular honour; And, together, had alledged, that he could not obtain their conſent, either to perform his promiſe for reſtitution of *Burgundy*, or otherwiſe to go ſingle out of his Kingdom; It was thought, by ſome, he might have Vindicated himſelf in great part, and, indeed, laid ſome imputation on *Charles*, for demanding things impoſſible to perform. But I come to that which enſued; according to an Act which *Burgundy* gave under his hand and Seal, *Sandov.* as Authentick, for the juſtifying of the Emperor his Maſters reputation.

July 1. This *Burgundy*, coming to *Fuentarabie*, ſends a Trumpet 1. *July* 1528. to Monſieur *de* St. *Bonet* Governour of *Bayonne*, for the ſafe-Conduct which *Guyenne* had promiſed. The Governour excuſed himſelf, as not having Commiſſion; yet as *Burgundy* perſiſted in his demand, the ſaid Covernour, about VIII. days afterwards, ſent him word, that his ſafe-conduct was ready, if he brought ſecurity of the Field to *Francis*; requiring further to know if his Commiſſion extended to any thing elſe. To which *Burgundy* anſwer'd, about VII. days after, that the Emperor his Maſter had commanded him not to declare his Meſſage to any, but *Francis*: and that, therefore, he had diſpatched a *Courrier* to his Imperial Majeſty to know what Anſwer he ſhould make: who hath commanded me, hereupon, to let you know, that I do bring the ſecurity of the Field, and other things that concern the Combat, and Anſwer to the Cartel of the King your Maſter. To which, the next day following, the Governour anſwered again, that, if he brought the ſecurity of the Field, and nothing elſe, he ſhould advertiſe him, and he would preſently ſend a Gentleman to Conduct him to the King his Maſter. To which about IX. days after, *Burgundy* anſwer'd, that he did bring the ſecurity of the Field, and the reſt did concern only the Combat, and the haſtning thereof; which being ſo, he ſaid he ought not to be denyed, or prohibited to do his office, ſince it was a thing never known that any ſhould ſpeak to one, and yet not hear his Anſwer; as if it were enough, for defending of ones honour, to ſend a Cartel, without doing, or ſuffering any thing elſe. For which reaſon, and becauſe the Emperor is deſirous to ſhew that he is in earneſt, he did require him this time for all, that, without more delay, he might receive his ſafe-conduct, as *Guyenne* had in the like Caſe, and that, if he were delay'd, he proteſted that he had done all that was convenient for the diſcharge of the dignity of the Emperor his Maſter, which you know of what importance it is; and ſo expected his ſpeedy Anſwer. No anſwer being return'd hereunto in the ſpace of IX. days more, (notwithſtanding that the Governour had promiſed to ſend a Trumpet with an Anſwer) *Burgundy* thought fit to remember him of that promiſe, and therefore ſends a Trumpet again;

to

to which (as the *Spaniſh* Hiſtory hath it) St. *Bonet* made no other Anſwer, but bid him return no more, and that *Fueſſe conel diablo*; Yet, as *Burgundy* would not depart, ſo at laſt the Governour of *Bayonne* ſent him a Letter Dated *Auguſt* 17. 1528. which declar'd, that the King his Maſter was offended with him, for having deferr'd the giving him ſafe-conduct ſo long, which therefore he promis'd to ſend him when he deſir'd it; which *Burgundy* requiring out of hand, the governour ſent him. Whereupon *Burgundy* (who put on his Coat of Arms aſſoon as he was in the *French* Territories) came to *Bayonne*, where he proteſted to the Governour, that the demanding ſafe-conduct ſhould be no derogation to his priviledge belonging to him as King of Arms; and ſo, continuing his Journey, he came to *Eſtampes*, 2. *September*, where *Guyenne* attended him; ſtaying yet there 7. days, before he was permitted to go to *Paris*, (the King paſſing all that time in Hunting.) Being at length conducted to *Paris*, he would have worn his Coat of Arms, but was not ſuffered, it being told him, it was *Coſa de un San Nicholas de Aldea*, which I interpret, A thing not to be ſhew'd but upon Holy-days, or in a Country-Church.

1528.

August 17.

Septemb. 2.

But *Burgundy* proteſting againſt this uſage, (as being contrary to the priviledges of his place) thoſe who Conducted him went to the King, who, after ſome ſpace, return'd, bringing with them two Notaries, to Record what paſs'd; before whom they ſaid, that, if he deſir'd to enter into *Paris* in his Coat of Arms, he would be in great danger of the People; and therefore, if any inconvenience follow'd, he muſt not lay it to their charge. Notwithſtanding which, ſome perſons being ſent to ſecure him, he put on his Coat of Arms, and, the next day, obtained Audience of the King; Who in a great Sale (or Hall) ſate on his Throne, being attended by many Princes, Prelates, and Gentlemen; Our Ambaſſadors alſo being preſent, to whom (as I find in our Records) He then ſhew'd the Order of the Garter upon his leg, ſaying to them, that, ſeeing he went about an Act, wherein conſiſted the Honour of Knighthood, he thought he could not uſe a better remembrance, than the ſaid Garter. *Burgundy* now beginning to make his obeyſance, the King, without giving him time to ſpeak, ſaid, King of Arms, haſt thou perform'd thy office as thou ought'ſt hitherto? thou knoweſt what thou haſt written in thy Letters; doſt thou bring me the ſecurity of the Field according to that which in my Cartel I writ to the Emperor thy Maſter? he replyed, *Senior ſi*, or Yes, will you be pleaſed that I perform my office, and ſay what the Emperor commandeth me? The King anſwered hereunto, No, unleſs you give firſt a Patent ſign'd with your hand, that may contain the ſecurity of the Field, and nothing elſe. For thou knoweſt well the Contents of thy ſafe-conduct. The Herauld there beginning to ſpeak, and ſaying, *Sire*, The Sacred Majeſty of the Emperor——The King interrupted him, and ſaid, I tell thee, that thou muſt not ſpeak to me of any thing,

1528. becauſe I have nothing to do with thee, but with thy Maſter; yet when thou ſhalt have given his Patent, and that the Field may be well aſſur'd me, then will I give thee licence to ſay what thou wilt, and not otherwiſe. Then he ſaid, *Sire*, It was commanded me, that I ſhould read it, and afterwards give it you, if you be pleas'd to give me leave ſo to do; or that having given it you firſt, I ſhould afterwards do what I am Commanded. Then the King roſe ſuddenly from his Throne, ſpeaking angrily; What? do's thy Maſter think to eſtabliſh new Cuſtoms in my Land? I will none of theſe Hypocriſies. He anſwer'd then, *Sire*, I am aſſur'd that the Emperor will do all that a brave and vertuous Prince ought to do. The King replied hereunto, that he thought ſo well of him, he did believe he would do ſo. Wherewith *Monſieur de Montmorency*, who was the *Grand Maiſtre*, began to ſay ſomewhat to the King, which the ſaid King of Arms underſtood not; but the King paſſionatly replied, No, No, I will not give him leave, unleſs I have the ſurety of the Field; without which (he ſaid) he ſhould return as he came; and ſo bids the King of Arms ſpeak no more unto him. Yet he replied, *Sire*, if you will not ſuffer me, I cannot do my office, nor give you the Cartel of the Emperor, without your leave, which once again I ask; and if you will not give it me, becauſe I may not err in my Relation, I pray you give me by writing, that you deny it, reſerving me yet your ſafe Conduct to return. Then *Francis* ſaid, I will that it be given you, wherewithal the Herauld departed. He then ſolicited *Montmorency*, the *Grand Maiſtre*, to obtain leave for him once more to deliver the Emperors Cartel. Notwithſtanding which, he receiv'd no other Anſwer, but that the King would grant him no audience, ſince his Commiſſion was expir'd. Therefore that he might depart when it pleaſed him. Then *Burgundy* proteſted that the fault was not in him, and much leſs in the Emperor his Maſter, and that the Emperor his Maſter would publiſh this in all places where he thought fit. Then the Secretary offer'd him a Relation of the buſineſs, which yet he would not receive, in regard ſome paſſages were omitted, and particularly the harſh words, which the King gave him Wherewith *Burgundy* return'd, and, at his coming to Court, delivered this Relation to the Emperor under his hand and Seal: Which alſo I have follow'd, not that I would ſhew any partiality to either ſide, but that it is the moſt particular, that I could meet with, among the ſeveral Relations that are extant, and, for the moſt part, agreeing with them.

Charles now conſidering what remain'd to be done for diſcharge of his honour, brought the buſineſs to his Council of State and War; who all agreed, that the Refuſal of *Francis* to hear the Reply to his Cartel had given end to this buſineſs; and, for the reſt, that it was ſufficient to certifie certain principal perſons, both at home, and abroad, of all theſe paſſages.

And this was the end of the Cartels and Pundonnores betwixt theſe

these two great Princes; not for want of Courage, (in which both undoubtedly abounded) but for not being able to agree sufficiently between themselves concerning the Laws of Duel; of which therefore men spake, in that age, diversly, according to their several affections; yet so, as few disinteressed persons denied, but that (notwithstanding the punctualities of *Francis*) *Charles* had behav'd himself like a Gentile Cavalier. 1528.

Whilst our King and the *French*, were in that good intelligence which is above-mentioned, it might seem probable that *Scotland* should be quiet: Their best support ever coming from that Countrey. Yet such was the power of the *Douglasses* at that time, that they seem'd to sway all things. For as they held a strict guard about the King, they made use of his Authority for their own ends. And particularly the Earl of *Anguis* their chief. Nevertheless, as Queen *Margaret* had lately obtained at *Rome* a Divorce from the said Earl, and, thereupon, Marryed *Henry Stuart*, (shortly after created Lord *Messen*,) she drew many of the prime Nobility against him. 1526. Who yet attempting the Kings delivery by force, were defeated near *Lithgow*, and the Earl of *Lenox* slain. July 20. Howbeit the King by night slipping away from *Anguis*, to the Castle of *Sterling*, resolves to summon a Parliament, and exauctorate the *Douglasses*; Sending a Letter also to our King, to this purpose, (as our Records tell us) That the Earl of *Anguis*, being made one of the chief about his Person, had wrought the exclusion of the rest, and got the whole guiding of his person for two years; in which time many evil adventures happened. 1527. Moreover, that he conspired his Slaughter. This being done, he appoints the Parliament to be held *September* 4. Septemb. 4. Where the *Douglasses* being now deprived of their publick offices and places, not only refused to come, but indeavoured by all means to dissolve this meeting. Therefore, hearing the King was departed out of *Edenburgh*, they sent some Troops of Horse to seise on it; which likewise they had perform'd, but that *Robert Maxwel*, by the Kings Command, prevented them. July 25. Hereupon *Anguis* retired to his own Castle, being about XIII. Miles distant. The King understanding hereof, comes to *Edenburgh*; where, by vote of the Parliament, Septemb. 4. the Earl of *Anguis*, *George* his Brother, *Archibald* his Uncle, and *Alexander Dromond*, their dear Friend, were condemned, & their goods confiscate, and Proclamation sent forth, that whosoever receiv'd them in house, or otherwise reliev'd them, should be subject to the same punishment. *Buch.* Shortly after which, *William* (another Brother of the Earl, and Abbot of *Holyrood*) languish'd, and at last dyed of grief. Into whose place succeeded a man, who, to avoid the Crime of being a *Simoniac*, used this Notable trick, as *Buchanan* hath it; For, hearing that the said *William* was at the point of death, he lays a great sum of Money, as a wager, with the King, that he should not have the Donation of the next Abby that fell. *Buch.* The King (though young) understood his meaning; and, as he wanted Money

1528. at that time, was content to win the wager, and loſe the Abby. The *Douglaſſes* deſpairing now of mercy, ſpoil and forrage the Countrey even to the gates of *Edenburgh*, nor was all their prey by Land; for a Ship, laden with precious Merchandize, being driven by a tempeſt on that Coaſt, was rifled by them, and the chief Merchandize taken away; Among which, ſome quantity of Cinnamon, which *Buch.* was left in the bottom of the Ship, being taken, the vulgar ſort, not knowing the uſe thereof, burnt it for fuel in their houſes, as *Buchanan* hath it. The more diſcontented ſort of the Kingdom hearing that the *Douglaſſes* were thus in arms, joyn with them. The King underſtanding this, and together finding that their Numbers and power did daily increaſe, advis'd to raiſe Forces for taking a Caſtle of the *Douglaſſes* (for which purpoſe he got Ordnance and Munition from *Dunbar*,) in which *John* Duke of *Albany*, late Vice-roy, held Garriſon. He could not yet take the Caſtle.

Octob. Our King hearing of theſe Stirs, ſends ſome Ambaſſadors in *October*, 1528. to treat of an accommodation, Neither was *Francis* averſe, as deſiring to diſpoſe our King to a War againſt *Charles*. The difficulties yet, were ſuch, that all that could be obtain'd, was a Truce for five years more, upon Condition, that the *Douglaſſes* ſhould deliver their Caſtles up, the King giving them ſome other Conditions; Which yet being not in all points obſerved, they were forced to forſake their Country, and fly into *England*, where our King entertain'd them with a Penſion, and, at all occaſions, mediated their Reſtitution; which at laſt (but not till the death of *James* the fifth, he effected (as will appear:) Howbeit *Alexander Dromond* was received into favour; though, whether for his own merit, or to divide him from the *Douglaſſes*, is uncertain, for *James Coluit*, one of their friends, and the late Abbot of *Holy-rood*, (notwithſtanding his bought Title) were baniſht from Court.

The buſineſſes of *Ireland* paſſed thus. The Earl of *Kildare* formerly mention'd, being reſtored to his place of Deputy, was yet ſtill proſecuted by the Earl of *Oſſory*, upon pretext of favouring the Earl of *Deſmond*; who, upon the Treaty he made firſt with the *French* King, and afterwards with the Emperor to attempt *Ireland*, was declared Traytor. This prevail'd ſo far, that *Kildare* was ſent for to 1527. the Council-Table, 1527. where the Cardinal, his old Enemy, declaimed againſt him. But he wittily and boldly defended himſelf, as *E. Camp.* our Hiſtory, and eſpecially *Campion* hath it at large. Howbeit he Hiſt. *Icel.* was committed, and more Accuſations produced againſt him; and particularly, that the Invaſion his Brethren had made upon the Earl of *Oſſory*, now the Kings Deputy, proceeded from him; whereof alſo being convict, he was condemned, and reprieved in the Tower. At which, the Cardinal offended, ſends the Lieutenant a Warrant for his Execution. But the Lieutenant, favouring *Kildare*, acquainted our King therewith; who, thereupon, not only reſpited his death, but ſome while after pardoned and ſent him home to his Countrey: checking

checking the Cardinal in the mean time not a little, for his presumption. 1528.

I shall now return to speak of the affairs of Religion in *Germany*, which *Luther* more then any of the other Reformers did govern; which credit also that he might dilate and conserve, he had, a good while since, written to our King, a kind of Apologie for the disrespectful Answer made to his Book; offering, for satisfaction, in some publick writing to acknowledg (together with his own presumption) the Kings singular worth. In this Letter, among other things, he says he understood that the King was not the Author of the Book, which, under his name, came forth against him, but certain Sophisters, who, to insinuate themselves into his favour, had put forth the Work under his name; and then calls the Cardinal, *Angliæ pestem.* He added also, that he was informed, to his great contentment, *ipsum & fastidire genus illud perditorum hominum, & ad Veri cognitionem animum adjicere*; After which, he inserts a brief Remonstrance of his Doctrines, and begs a favourable Answer. Our King having receiv'd this Letter, Answers it sharply, laying Inconstancy and levity to the charge of *Luther*, and defending his own Book, and the Cardinal, whom, he saith, he should love the better henceforth; and then objects to him his late *incestum Matrimonium* with a Nun. This Answer also being sent the Pope, and Printed, *Luther*, who took nothing so ill at this time, as that he should be thought to change any of his Tenets and opinions, lays the fault on *Christiern* King of *Denmark*, who had given him hope, that our King, being treated gently and respectfully, would embrace the Reformed doctrine; But now that he repented himself of this easie Language, though it were not new to him to lose his labour in this kind; for having written submissively and humbly heretofore to the Cardinal *Cajetan*, *George*, Duke of *Saxony*, and *Erasmus*, he had found no success thereof, but that they were so much the fiercer against him. Howsoever, as his Doctrines had made no little progress in *Germany*, and that divers who did not manifestly declare themselves his Followers, did yet concur secretly in many of his opinions, *Charles*, for repressing those Tumults, (which alteration of Religion doth commonly produce) thought fit to call an Assembly of the Princes of the Empire, to be held at *Spire*. For though the Decree made at *Worms* (where *Luther* was condemned) did yet stand in force, the Determinations did not yet appear so conclusive and satisfactory, that either side seem'd quieted therewith.

1525. *Sleid.*

1525.

1521.

The Princes meeting at *Spire* in *June* 1526. the Emperors Letters (dated from *Sevil* 23 of *March*) were read to them. Wherein he declared, that he would shortly go to *Rome*, to be Crowned, and talk with the Pope concerning a Council: In the mean time forbidding them to Innovate ought in Religion, but conform themselves to the Decree of *Worms*. But the Reformed Cities answered, that the Execution of the Decree of *Worms* would hazard a sedition among the people

1526. June.

1528. people, and that, the Pope now gathering forces againſt the Emperor, there was little hope of obtaning from him a General Council. Therefore, they deſir'd the Emperor to permit a National Council of *Germany* for the ſetling of Religion; or, if not, at leaſt to ſuſpend the Decree of *Worms*, till a general Council be call'd. Things thus tending to an open diſſention, the *Turk* invading *Hungary* on the one part, and the *French* and *Italians* Confederating againſt *Charles* on the other, *Ferdinand* (the Emperors Deputy in this Diet) thought fit to condeſcend to a decree to this effect; That there was great need of a Council, either general, or of the *German* Nation; and that it ſhould begin within a year, which the Emperor was to be intreated to grant. As concerning Religion, and the Decree of *Worms*, that, till one of thoſe Councils be call'd, every Prince and State ſo behave themſelves, as they may give a probable account of their Actions, to God and the Emperor. After this, a violent war betwixt the Emperor and *French*, the ſacking of *Rome*, and Captivity of the Pope, (as is before related) diſcompoſing all things, the *Lutherans* (or as they ſtyled themſelves the *Evangelicks*) increaſed in *Germany*, without that *Charles* thought it convenient to indeavour their ſuppreſſion. Till at length, returning to good terms with the Pope, and an overture being made for an Accord with the *French*, he returns to the care of Religion, and, by Letters dated at *Valledolid*, *Auguſt* 1. 1528. appoints a Diet at *Spire*, to Commence in *February* 1529. where though (he ſaid) he could not, for his great occaſions, be preſent, yet he had intreated his Brother *Ferdinand*, *Frederick* the *Palatine*, and ſome others to appear for him. This Diet yet, did not begin till *March* following: to which the diſcreet and peaceable *Melanchon* was, with much honour, brought by the Elector of *Saxony*. Many other Princes and great perſons alſo came thither; among which not a few were unreſolved enough in either belief, till controverſies in Religion were better diſputed, whereof yet they could find no end. For as long as in any Angle of the world there was either a new Opinion, to examine, or Antient error, to reform, they wanted not a juſt exerciſe for their Curioſity. At laſt the former Decree of *Spire* 1526. was examined; In which, becauſe it was then agreed, that, as concerning the Decree of *Worms*, and matter of Religion (in the mean time) till one of theſe Councils were held, every Prince and ſtate ſhould ſo behave themſelves, as they may give a probable reaſon of their Actions, to God and the Emperor; The Emperor now, alledging it was miſunderſtood by divers, and deſiring that this might be interpreted, propos'd the ſetling thereof, in this manner.

Sleid.

1527.

Aug. 1.

March 15. 1529.

That all, who have obeyed the Emperors Edict at *Worms* hitherunto, ſhould continue to obey it, until a Council were called, which was promis'd with all ſpeed poſſible. That they who had ſo far entertain'd any new Doctrin, that they could not without danger leave it, ſhould yet ſtay there, without multiplying Opinions, or printing

New

New and Offenſive Books; (according to the Decree at *Noremberg*, 1524.) That the Antient Tenent about the Euchariſt, and the Maſs, ſhould be held. That they who would go to the Maſs ſhould not be hindered. That Preachers follow that interpretation of the Scriptures which the Church hath received and approved; abſtaining from Controverted points, which ſhould be determined by the Council. In the mean while, that difference of Opinion in matters of Religion ſhould not be a breach of Peace, or occaſion of wrong on either ſide. That no Prince ſhould receive the ſubjects of the other into his protection. That they who did otherwiſe, ſhould be under the *Bann*, (or proſcrib'd.) But the Anabaptiſts were more ſhrewdly dealt withal, it being agreed, that they, who with pertinacy did maintain that Doctrine, ſhould be put to death. 1528.

Many things yet were diſlik'd herein by the Electors of *Saxony* and *Brandenburg*, the Dukes of *Lunenburg*, the Landtgrave of *Heſſen*, and divers others. Therefore they proteſted againſt it; and firſt they ſaid, That the former Diet of *Spire* was more favourable, as permitting every one the exerciſe of his Religion, till a Council in *Germany*, or, otherwiſe, a General Council were call'd; and that there was no reaſon to vary from it, unleſs another more convenient were Accorded. That, in the Aſſembly of *Noremberg*, they had deliver'd many Grievances to the Popes Legat, for which yet no remedy was given, nor, indeed, could be expected, until the ſaid Council were call'd. As for the Maſs, that it was ſufficiently convicted by the Miniſters of their Churches, and the Encharist after the true manner reſtored. Wherefore, that they could by no means admit, that either they or their Subjects ſhould be preſent at the Maſs; ſince, when the uſe thereof might be received in their Churches, yet if two divine ſervices, ſo diſcrepant, ſhould be Celebrated in the ſame place, much ill example and ſcandal muſt follow. And for the point of the Euchariſt, that though there were difference among the Reformed, yet that none ought to be condemned, unheard. As for the Article, which preſcribeth the Goſpel to be interpreted according to the ordinary and received Doctrine of the Church, that it was well ſtated, when the true Church were firſt defin'd, until which, they would labour to interpret one place of Scripture by the other. That the laſt Decree at *Spire* was made for the ſake of Peace and Concord, but not this; and therefore, that they altogether proteſted againſt it. In the mean while (until this General or provincial Council for *Germany* were call'd) they promis'd to do nothing, that might juſtly be reprov'd. As for keeping of Peace, the taking of that which belongs to others, Anabaptiſts, and printing of Books, they ſaid, they knew very well what was to be done. April 19. 1529. 1526. 152½.

This Proteſtation of the Princes being communicated to the chief Towns of *Germany*, (among which *Strasburg*, *Noremberg*, *Ulm*, *Conſtance*, *Roteling*, *Winſeim*, *Memingen*, *Lindaw*, *Kempten*, *Hailbrun*, *Norlingen*, *Sangal*, and divers others are numbred) they all joyn'd

1528. joyn'd ſo together, that, the name of Proteſtants took thence its original; which name therefore (properly taken) ſeems to imply no more, than one reſolv'd to embrace the above-mention'd Tenents, till ſome Lawful Council, either General or Provincial, determined the contrary. *Ferdinand*, finding matters thus not to ſort to that effect he deſir'd, departs out of the Aſſembly betimes, though much entreated by the Elector of *Saxony*, and the reſt, to ſtay, which he refuſing, they appeal'd to the Emperor, and future Council.

1528. Jan. Let us now ſee what was done in *Italy* this while; the Pope, though eſcaped, was not yet ſuddenly provided with Counſel or Money. For as the obligation he had to comply with the League, form'd in his defence, as well as deſire of Revenge, made him Correſpond with *Lautrech*, ſo fear of returning again to Impriſonment, caus'd him to proceed ſo warily, that one might doubt his intentions. Therefore he kept *Lautrech* ſtill in much ſuſpence; ſaying one while he deſired an Univerſal peace, then excuſing himſelf for want of Men, Money, and Authority. Nevertheleſs, if the ſeat of War might be transferred out of the Patrimony of the Church, he ſaid he would adviſe what was to be done. But here alſo, he knew not how to reſolve. For as the War of *Milan* was, in a manner, ended, ſo himſelf had an eye upon the Kingdom of *Naples*; and for *Florence*, it was his Native Country. Beſides he was ſufficiently informed, that *Francis*, when he might have hope to recover his Children by fair means, would not aſſiſt him, All which reaſons made him to temporiſe, even to the giving ſuſpition of deſerting the League, whereof himſelf was Author. Hereupon *Lautrech* ſtaid at *Bononia*, attending both Men to reinforce his Army, and further inſtructions. But as *Charles* and *Francis* came to no agreement, ſo he was commanded to proceed with his Army; in which Sir *Robert Jerningham*, Gentleman of the Bed-Chamber both to King *Henry*, and *Francis*, had the command of 200. Horſe, paid by our King.

Bell. Whereupon the Imperialiſts, knowing how much it concern'd them to defend the Kingdom of *Naples*, retir'd thither, with a ſmall remnant of their Army. Where they had enough to do, both as they were to reſiſt the *French*, and as the People, deſirous of Novelty (after their giddy manner, when either they think themſelves oppreſt, or that, otherwiſe, they hope for a milder Government) were ready to revolt, which alſo appear'd ſo much, that, long before *Lautrech* came to divers Towns, they yielded themſelves, ſending their keys a days Journey before them. The firſt that made head againſt them, was the Prince of *Aurange*. But as his forces were much inferiour to the *French*, he, at laſt, retir'd to *Naples*; where yet he was ſo hated by *Hugo de Moncada*, and the *Spaniards*, that he was in danger of having the Gates ſhut againſt him. *Lautrech* now, purſuing his good fortune, beſieges *Melfi*. But as a number of Labourers and Husbandmen, unapt for War, were ſhut in it, ſo their fears and noiſes, while the Souldiers defended the Walls, made them retire to the

Bell. Feb.

the Caſtle, as thinking they had other enemies within. Whereof the *French* taking advantage, entred, and ſack'd the Town, making the Prince of *Melfi*, his Lady, and Children Priſoners. After which, divers other places yielded to the *French*, till they came to *Naples*, which was *April* 17. or as others ſay, *May* 1. 1528. And now their Army ſeem'd terrible; both as it was reinforc'd by ſome Regiments of *Suiſſe*, and as the Inhabitants of *Naples* favour'd them. While that of the *Spaniards* was no greater, than what the walls of *Naples*, and ſome little places in the Confines thereof did hold. Howbeit, as *Lautrech* conſidered that divers brave Commanders for the Imperialiſts were of this number, he did not think fit to inveſt the Town by Land, till he had block'd it up by Sea. Therefore *Philippino Doria*, Lieutenant to *Andrea Doria*, was commanded, with eight Galleys, to ride before the Haven. This troubled much the beſieged, for all the hope they had either of Victuals or Relief, was on that part. *Hugo de Moncada*, conſidering this, puts forth with a few Galleys in that Port againſt *Doria*, and begins a furious Fight; the ſucceſs whereof was, that he loſt, at once, both victory and life, and about 700 more with him; *Alfonſo de Avalos Marquis vel Vaſto*, *Aſcanio de Colonna*, and ſome others of Note, being taken Priſoners. This as it added great Courage to the *French*, ſo it occaſioned ſome benefits to the Imperialiſts, both as it took away the Competition betwixt *Moncada* and the Prince of *Aurange*, (who now commanded in chief,) and as it opened a way (as ſhall appear afterwards) for gaining *Andrea Doria* unto the Emperors ſervice. 1528. April. 17.

The Siege continued yet four Months; *Lautrech*, as being Maſter of the Field, deſiring rather to take the City by famine, than by the ſword. And now the victuals were almoſt all conſum'd; When the Prince of *Aurange* thought fit to ſend *Hernando de Gonzaga* with about 5000 Foot, and 700 Horſe, with divers Carts, to forrage and get proviſion, but they alſo were defeated, and the Carriages taken from them. Howbet *Naples* held out ſtill.

This while *Antonio de Leyva* recovers *Pavia*, *Novarra*, and *Baigras*, and divers other places, taken by *Lautrech*; and ſo joyn'd with the Duke of *Brunſwick*, who came with 15000 *Germans*, and 500 Horſe, to ſerve the Emperor. Theſe two agreeing together to beſiege *Lodi*, found ſuch gallant reſiſtance, that they were at laſt conſtrained to deſiſt, and the rather, becauſe they heard, the *Count de St. Paul*, with a ſtrong Army of *Suiſſe* and *French*, was on his way to relieve it. Beſides the *Germans*, who came with *Brunſwick*, having not their pay at the time appointed, did for the moſt part return, ſo that the *French*, by joyning with the Duke of *Urbin*, made themſelves quickly maſters of the Field, recovering again all the places *Antonio de Leyva* had taken, and together with them the Fatal *Pavia*. But ſee upon what Engines Fortune now turn'd! *Philippino Doria*, Victorious and Triumphant, being come to *Surrento*, to cure his hurt Souldiers, and repair his Galleys, *Lautrech* ſends *Giovanni Joakim* to

1528. require the Priſoners, as being taken in the name, and for the ſervice of the King his Maſter. *Philippion*, though receiving this Meſſage with great indignation, yet diſſembled it for the preſent, ſaying only, he could determine nothing, without acquainting his Uncle *Andrea Doria*, whoſe Lieutenant he was. But this was only to get time. For he expected a Reward, before he would leave his Priſoners. Which alſo, or at leaſt the hope of it, *Lautrech* ſhould have given, before he demanded them. This error therefore coſt dear. For *Philippino*, who took pay chiefly to give proof of his Vertue, and therefore would ſerve but for a time (now almoſt expired) was not to be treated in this faſhion. As the *French* found ſoon after. For, employing his thoughts at this preſent more how to gain his own liberty, than to leave his Priſoners, He found means to retire himſelf to a place of more ſurety; where, upon private Conference with his Priſoners, he found, that he could make more profit of them from the *Spaniſh*, than the *French* ſide. In concluſion, *Andrea Doria* alſo being ſolicited by the Prince of *Aurange* to change Maſter (aſſoon as his term was out,) he begins to liſten; and the rather for that ſo good conditions were offer'd him from *Charles*; and, particularly, an Eſtate in the Kingdom of *Naples*. He would not yet leave the *French* abruptly, nor before he had gotten ſome pretext for it. Therefore he ſent to the *French* Court, to demand ſatisfaction for the Ranſom of the Prince of *Aurange*, taken before *Marſeilles*, and others during the ſiege of *Pavia*. He alſo requir'd that *Genoüa* might be reſtor'd to its ſuperiority over *Savona*. Which demands being brought to the Chancellor *du Praet*, and diſlik'd, it was thought fit to ſend *Antoine de la Roch-Fouchault*, with Commiſſion to ſeiſe on the Perſon and Galleys of *Doria*. Notice whereof being ſecretly given him, *Doria*, leaving the *French* Galleys to their new Commander, withdrew himſelf with his own, to the Emperor's ſervice; who, for obliging him the more, promiſed to reſtore *Genoüa* his native Country to its former liberty, and to make him General of the Imperial Navy. Thus did the *French* loſe *Doria*, only becauſe they knew not how to uſe him according to his Condition, it behoving them, as he was generous, to have dealt more gently with him; and as Mercenary, more cautiouſly; eſpecially, when he might make ſo much benefit by revolting to the other ſide.

June 10. While this Treaty was on foot, *Piedro Lando*, with thirty *Venetian* Galleys, blocks up *Naples* by Sea: ſo that now it ſeem'd impoſſible for it to hold out: yet the hand of God is above all. For a kind of

Sandov. Peſtilence, (which *Sandoval* calls *Negra* or Black (ſo univerſally ſeized on the *French*, that they diminiſhed daily in great numbers, and among them * Sir *Robert Jerningham*: whoſe company, therefore, was

* April 25. given to Maſter *John Carew*, his Lieutenant, who yet dyed there of

Aug. 15. the ſame diſeaſe. At laſt alſo *Lautrech* himſelf, (a brave Commander, but withal noted to be ſo opinionate, that he would, alone, have the glory, or ſhame of all his actions) dyed of the diſeaſe, and huge numbers of others; which ſo diſheartned the *French*, that the weak remain-

remainders, wanting (beſides their health) Money, Victual, &c. raiſed the Siege, and retir'd homewards. And thus, ſucceſſively, were two great Armies conſum'd with the Plague, without other force; as it uſually happens, when People, not acquainted with the Temper, Wines, and Fruits of a Country, live licentiouſly. They could not yet retire ſo quietly, but that the Imperialiſts follow'd them, and took divers Priſoners, and, among others, the old and weak *Piedro Navarra*. The Marqueſs of *Saluzzo*, who undertook (after *Lautrech*) the government, yet held *Averſa* for ſome while; though, at laſt, he was conſtrained to yield it together with himſelf. In ſequence whereof all other places the *French* held in thoſe parts were ſurrender'd, ſave a few the *Venetians* fortified. *Genoüa* alſo was conſtrained to yield it ſelf, and ſhake off the *French* yoke, by the means of *Andrea Doria*, who hearing that the plague had chaſed almoſt all the Inhabitants thence, enters it by Sea, and forceth *Theodoro de Trevulci* to a Compoſition, by which he was to forſake the Town. The *Genoueſi*, hereupon, were reſtor'd to their former liberty, and *Savona*, not long after, taken by them. The Count St. *Paul*, finding affairs thus to go ill on the *French* ſide, thought to repair them by ſurpriſing *Milan*, upon intelligence with certain Citizens there. But bringing proviſion of Victuals only for twenty four hours, and no Artillery, he gave off his enterpriſe, and retir'd to *Alexandria*, with intention to paſs there the reſt of the Winter, 1528. 1528.

As the Plague deſtroyed the *French* in *Italy*, the ſweating ſickneſs conſum'd very many in *England*; it ſeeming to be but the ſame Contagion of the air, varied according to the Clime. It was firſt known in *England*, 1486. then 1507. then 1517. and now 1528. when it ſo raged, as it kill'd ordinarily in five or ſix hours ſpace, invading even the Kings Court, where not only Sir *Francis Pointz*, Sir *William Compton*, and Mr. *William Cary* (two of the Kings Bed-Chamber,) dyed of it; but the King himſelf was not without danger.

In *Germany* alſo it did much harm, killing many, and, particularly, interrupting a Conference at *Marpurg*, betwixt *Luther* and *Zuinglius*, concerning the Euchariſt. *Sleid. l. 6.*

I ſhall now come to the buſineſs of the Divorce; ſo much vexed by our Writers, that, for ſatisfaction of the Reader, I have extracted a Relation thereof out of thoſe Originals, and Authentick Records, that I ſhall preſume to recommend it, for more than an ordinary piece of Hiſtory.

Our King had now, for many years enjoyed the Vertuous Queen *Katharine*, without that either ſcruple of the Validity of their Match, or outward note of unkindneſs had paſt betwixt them. Nevertheleſs, as, preſently after the Birth of the Princeſs (who alone of all their Children ſurvived) *Luther* and others, controverted the Authority, and extent of the Papal Juriſdiction, ſo in this Kingdom. the Diſpenſation of *Julius* the ſecond for the aforeſaid Marriage being privately queſtion'd, many of our learned Men concluded it void, 15$\frac{2}{16}$.

1528. as being granted in a Caſe prohibited *Jure Divino*, and therefore indiſpenſable. This again, whiſpered in the ears of many, begot ſuch a muttering, as, being brought to the King, made Him think what He was to do. For though He knew that a keeping of the Succeſſion doubtful was one of the ill Arts by which Princes conſerve themſelves, yet, as a deſire to have Poſterity, which might ſucceed Him in the Crown, prevail'd over all other conſiderations, He reſolv'd to clear this point by all fitting degrees; and the rather, in that he knew the ſame objections had been made (though wrongfully) to *Edward* the Fourth, and his Children. And certainly (as it appears to me by many circumſtances,) it was, in the beginning, as much as He could, in favour of the Princeſs his Daughter. So that, although the Biſhop of *Tarbe* (being ſent by *Francis* 1527. to conclude the Alternative formerly ſet down,) did object openly againſt her Legitimation, as being got by the King upon his Brothers Wife, it did not much move him. But, ſeeing it now grown a publick doubt, he thought it more notorious, than could be ſuppreſt. Neither did He believe that *Charles* would be greatly ſcandalized at it; ſince, to
1525. avoid the Treaty of *Windſor*, Himſelf had alledg'd ſome things to
Hall. this purpoſe. All which again (as *Polydore* relates) was ſecretly fomented by *Longland* Biſhop of *Lincoln* (his Majeſties Confeſſor,) at the inſtigation of the Cardinal; who both hated the Emperor, and was averſe from the Queen, by reaſon of her reproving his looſe, and inordinate life. Though (whatever *Polydore* ſaith,) it will appear hereafter, that *Wooljey* indeavour'd not, finally, the Divorce. Howſoever, on ſome or all of theſe cauſes, the King was much perplext, as knowing how deeply this affair concern'd himſelf, his Poſterity, and
1527. Kingdom. And becauſe it was eaſie to collect of what Conſequence any Rumor of this kind might be, He not only ſent to our Ambaſſadors in *Spain*, as is ſaid before, to ſilence the noiſe thereof, but uſed all means poſſible both to appeaſe thoſe violent Jealouſies the Queen had conceiv'd, and to ſatisfie his People, at leaſt until himſelf had looked further into the Buſineſs. In which certainly his Intentions privately were to proceed; For beſides his diſpatching his Secretary *William Knight*, Doctor of Law, to *Rome*, (whom yet he commanded to adviſe with our Cardinal by the way, being then in *France*,) He took information ſometimes about his preſent Condition, and ſometimes (it is probable alſo) about ſuch Ladies as might furniſh him a choice for a Genial, and ſecond bed. In which number the Dutcheſs of *Alanzon*, Siſter to *Francis*, is the firſt I find mentioned, whoſe Picture (as *Hall* ſaith) was ſent over, about this time. Neither did the Cardinal, being certified of theſe paſſages, omit to comply
July 29. at leaſt in appearance with him, and therefore write to the King, that
1527. the beſt way to obtain his deſire, was, to tell the Emperor plainly, that unleſs he ſet the Pope free (at this time in priſon, as is formerly
Auguſt 30. mentioned) he would proceed in the Divorce upon his own, and his Clergies Authority. After which, he ſent for *John Clark*, Biſhop of *Bath*,

Bath, then reſident Ambaſſador in *France*) and commended him to the King, as a Perſon to whom he might diſcover himſelf; and, together, deliver'd his opinion: Firſt, That, becauſe the Party would appeal, the buſineſs could not be determined in *England*, unleſs the Pope would give him abſolute Authority, *in omnibus Caſibus*, (a Minute whereof to be ſent to *Rome*, I have ſeen. (Secondly, That ſhe ſhould be perſuaded, *ad ingreſſum Religionis*. And, laſtly, if neither of thoſe could be effected, it ſhould be thought of, *Quid poſſet clam fieri quoad forum Conſcientiæ?* Concerning which points, the Biſhop of *Bath* at his return ſpeaking, (as I find in an original from the ſaid Biſhop of *Woolſey*) the King replyed, My Lord of *Bath*, the Bull is good, or it is naught; If it be naught, let it be ſo declar'd, and if it be good, it ſhall never be broken by no by-ways for me. Whereupon, the Biſhop repreſented, that the Popes Captivity hindred all ſuits in that Court, and, howſoever, that the Proceſs would be ſo ſlow, as it could not be determined in ſix or ſeven years. Beſides, that there muſt be Three diſtinct Sentences given in it, by three divers Judges, the two laſt to be choſen for the adverſe party. Laſtly, that after all this, the Sentence may be recall'd; *Quia ſententia contra Matrimonium, nunquam tranſit in rem Judicatam*; Adding, in Concluſion, as the knot of the buſineſs, that the party would Appeal. To which the King anſwer'd, he thought She would not appeal from the Arch-Biſhop of *Canterbury*, and the Biſhops of *Rocheſter*, *Ely*, and *London*: as for the tediouſneſs of the ſuit, ſince he had patience eighteen years, that He would ſtay yet four or five more; ſince the opinion of all the Clerks of his Kingdom, beſides Two, were lately declared for him; adding, that he had ſtudied the Matter himſelf, and Written of it, and that he found it was unlawful, *de Jure divino*, and undiſpenſable. Buſineſſes ſtanding thus, and no probability of the Queens fruitfulneſs ſince the Princeſs *Mary*'s Birth, appearing; and the rather, that *Spaniſh* women are obſerved to be ſeldom Mothers of many children; He reſolves to have recourſe to the Pope; Comforting himſelf, for the reſt, that no other difficulty appeared in removing all theſe inconveniences, than the obtaining a Diſpenſation to diſſolve that Marriage, which a Diſpenſation only had at firſt made. He knew the ſame key that lockt, could unlock. Therefore he thought fit to ſend to *Rome*, both to repreſent the dangerous Condition of himſelf, his Iſſue and Kingdom, and to ſolicite the Pope for a Licence to Marry another. And the rather, for that ſo many Circumſtances had made the Bull and Breve, upon which the firſt Marriage was grounded, to be ſuſpected. The proſecuting whereof therefore (in a Diſpatch Dated 25th. of *December*, 1527.) was recommended, by the Cardinal, to Sir *Gregory Caſalis*, an *Italian*; Which alſo he was requir'd to urge ſo far, as to ſay, that our King could impute the puniſhment God had laid on him in taking away his Iſſue Male, upon nothing ſo much, as the unlawfulneſs of this Marriage; which learned Men did alſo generally ſo deteſt, as they held it to be more than the

1528.

Record.

Record.

Decemb. 25. 1527.

1528. the Pope could diſpence with (as I find they declar'd afterwards in a Book, which was ſent thither.) Wherefore, that he ſhould procure a Commiſſion for hearing and determining this Cauſe, to be directed to the Cardinal; or, if that were refuſed, to Biſhop *Staphylæus*, Dean of the *Ruoota*, who had been lately in *England*. And that he ſhould furthermore ſay, that he doubted not, but the Pope would eaſily grant it, though againſt the will of *Charles*; ſince he had granted *Charles* a Diſpenſation and Abſolution from the Oath which he had taken to Marry the Princeſs *Mary*, without ſo much as demanding the conſent of our King. For facilitating of which buſineſs, Letters of Exchange, to the value of ten thouſand Ducats were ſent him; As alſo certain Inſtruments for the Popes ſigning, which were, Firſt, a Commiſſion, in ample form, to hear, and determine the cauſe in *England*. Secondly, a Decretal, wherein the Pope, upon probation of Carnal knowledge between *Arthur* and *Katharine*, ſhould pronounce the Marriage void. Thirdly, a Diſpenſation for the King to Marry another. Fourthly, a Pollicitation, that the Pope will not recall any of theſe Acts. But it was an ill time for Sir *Gregory* to Negotiate with the Pope; he being (as I find by an Original diſpatch of Doctor *Knight*, Dated from *Rome*, *September* 13. 1527.) ſo aw'd by *Hernando de Alanzon*, that he durſt neither give the ſaid *Knight* a publick Audience, nor ſo much as admit a private Meſſage from him, but by the Intervention of the Cardinal *Piſani*. So that, what wiſdom or piety ſoever our King might pretend herein, the *Coijuntura* certainly was no way auſpicious. And the rather, becauſe the Pope, during his Impriſonment in the Caſtle of St. *Angelo*, had been requir'd in the Emperor's name (as I find by a diſpatch of Doctor *Knights* from *Orvieto*) not to grant any Act concerning the Divorce, nor ſo much as ſuffer the cauſe to be heard before any Judge in our Kings Dominions. I find alſo in the ſame Letter that *Lorenzo Pucci*, Cardinal *Sanctorum Quatuor*, being choſen by the Pope for diſpatching our Kings buſineſſes, had told Doctor *Knight*, that the Commiſſion penned here in *England*, for the Popes ſigning, might not paſs, but that he had minuted another, which the Pope (though with ſome reluctation) had granted; earneſtly intreating our King nevertheleſs, not to put it in Execution, till the *Spaniards*, and *Almains* were gone out of *Italy*, and himſelf left in his full liberty. To confirm which grant alſo, the ſame Doctor *Knight*, by a Letter (dated *Jan.* 9. 1528.) did certifie, that the King's Diſpenſation was obtained under lead, as amply as the Minute ſent from *England* did contain; and the Commiſſion for the Lord Legate likewiſe was granted ſufficiently, though not according to the form propos'd; and that it was drawn by the Cardinal *Sanctorum Quatuor*. Moreover, he tells (as in the Popes name) that if *Monſieur de Lautrech* were come, the Pope thinketh he might, by good Colour, ſay to the Emperor, that he was required by the *Engliſh* Ambaſſadors, and *Monſieur de Lautrech* to proceed in the buſineſs. All which particularities

Sep. 13. 1527.

Jan. 1. 1528.

Jan. 9.

larities, I have the rather ſet down, that it might appear, how the difficulties, that the Pope made in this buſineſs, ſeemed to proceed chiefly from humane conſiderations. Which alſo is much confirmed by a diſpatch from *Gregory Caſalis* 13. *Jan.* 1528. where (on the Popes part, and in his name) he ſaith, that if the Kings Conſcience be ſatisfied (which he alone can beſt tell) his Courſe were, *Ut ſtatim Committat cauſam, aliam uxorem ducat, litem ſequatur, mittatur pro Legato*, &c. and, that this was the only way for the King to attain his deſires: though yet he intreated, this advice might be taken, as proceeding from the Cardinal *Sanctorum quatuor*, and *Simonetta*, and not from himſelf. And this, certainly, as it may be thought a politick advice, ſo would it have prov'd ſafer and eaſier for both, than a Commiſſion for two Legates; which as it took up more time on the Kings part, ſo it cauſed a like danger and inconvenience to the Pope. Howſoever, it appear'd afterwards, that the King, either out of tenderneſs of Conſcience, or conſideration of the hazard he ſhould run, if the Pope would not confirm this Act, thought not fit to allow thereof; but choſe rather to demand a larger Commiſſion than that which Doctor *Knight* obtained; the procuring whereof alſo he committed to *Stephen Gardiner*, Doctor of Law, and Secretary to *Woolſey*, and *Edward Fox*, Provoſt of Kings Colledge in *Cambridge*; Not neglecting in the mean time, both to inſtruct the Pope in his cauſe, and do him all the good offices he could with Chriſtian Princes, and States, and particularly the *Venetians*, concerning the reſtitution of *Ravenna* and *Cervia*; though yet it took not ſuch effect as was hoped. Neither did our King forget, by a Letter of Cardinal *Woolſey*'s to the Protonotary *John Caſalis*, to deſire him to acquaint the Pope with ſome domeſtick and private paſſages; which (though out of the reſpect I bear to that vertuous Queens memory) I cannot but mention ſomewhat unwillingly, yet muſt not omit, both for the ſake of that truth that ought to be in Hiſtory, and as it ſeems to contain ſome Motive of the Kings intentions. I ſhall ſet down the words in Latin as they are extant in our Record. *Sunt nonnulla ſecretò Sanctiſſimo Domino Noſtro exponenda, & non credenda literis, quas ob Cauſas, morboſq; nonnullos, quibus, abſque remedio, Regina laborat, & ob animi etiam conceptum ſcrupulum, Regia Majeſtas nec poteſt nec vult, ullo unquam poſthac tempore, ea uti, velut Uxor. admittere, quodcunq; evenerit.*

Gardiner and *Fox*, receiving their inſtructions in *Feb.* 1528. repair'd firſt to *Francis*, from whom they readily obtain'd a promiſe to cooperate puiſſantly with the Pope, for effectuating the Kings deſire, as alſo a perſuaſory and menacing Letter in caſe of refuſal to the Pope; For complying wherewith alſo the Biſhop *Staphylæus* was ſent by him to *Rome* not long after. Our Ambaſſadors having given the King account hereof, proceeded in their Journey to *Italy*, and coming at laſt to *Orvieto*, where the Pope then was, they found him lodged in an old and ruinous Monaſtery, his outward chamber altogether unfurniſh'd, and his Bed-chamber-hangings, together with his

1528.
Jan. 13.
Jan.
Feb.
Feb. 28.

1528. his Bed, valued by them (as the Original Letter hath it) at no more than 20 Nobles. The Pope yet receiv'd them lovingly; though not without the anxiety of one who could neither ſafely grant, nor deny the requeſt of a King, to whom he ſo much owed whatſoever liberty he enjoyed. Their inſtructions for the preſent, were only yet, to thank him for the Commiſſion and Diſpenſation granted in this buſineſs to Doctor *Knight*, and after intruſted to *Gambara* his Agent here (ſucceſſor unto *Melchior Langus*, who was firſt Authorized by the Pope, to give Queen *Katherine* notice of this affair, together with the Popes ſecret intention therein.) They added further, that by *Gambara*, as alſo by Sir *Gregory Caſalis*, our King had gladly underſtood, how all defects, upon due remonſtrance, ſhould be ſupplied and amended. They were charged alſo, from the Cardinal, privately, to proteſt in his name, that he was no Author of this Counſel. After which they were deſired, by him, to proceed to the merit of the Cauſe, and Qualities of the Gentlewoman (being, as I take it, Miſtris *Bolen*.) The perplexed Pope, who knew well how much the *Spaniard* was intereſſed herein, heard them at this time with more fear, than at another time he would have granted their requeſt. Therefore, together with an ambiguous Anſwer, which he gave them by word of mouth, he ſent, in Cipher, a Letter to our King, of ſo much irreſolution, that it needed no other cover. Howſoever, as the Commiſſion of our Ambaſſadors was to ſtay till further order was given, they ſeemed to take all in good part. At laſt our able Negotiators, urging the aforeſaid and many other Motives to the Pope, and he again finding the *French* and Confederate Army puiſſant and victorious in the Kingdom of *Naples* at that time, made no difficulty to grant a full Commiſſion to two Legates, to Hear and Determine the Cauſe in *England*, being (according to the Kings deſire) *Woolſey* and *Campejus* (not long ſince made Biſhop of *Salisbury*.) Beſides, it ſeems he granted this following Pollicitation, or promiſe, Dated at *Viterbo*, *July* 23. 1528. which yet, being no Original-piece, but an antient Copy, extant among Sir *Robert Cottons* Records, I ſhall mention but according to the credit it may deſerve from the equal Reader; only I muſt not omit to ſay, that, as divers Original diſpatches, both before and after, give ſome touches of it, and that the Date for the reſt is added, ſo it may challenge better credit than to be thought a Minute, and much leſs a Counterfeit and ſuppoſed piece, which alſo is the more probable, in that the Pope granted ampler Teſtimonies than this, in favour of the Divorce; Howſoever they were either controll'd again, or detain'd in the hands of his Miniſters, after that ſort, that our King might well take notice; but neither Copy nor advantage of them.

July 23.

The

1528.

The Pollicitation.

Promiſſio Pontificis in Negotio Regis.

CUm nos Clemens, *divina providentia illius nominis Papa ſeptimus modernus, juſtitiam ejus cauſæ perpendentes, quam chariſſimus in Chriſto filius noſter Henricus Octavus Angliæ Rex illuſtris, Fidei Defenſor, & Dominus Hiberniæ, de ejus Matrimonii nullitate, tanquam notorium, publicum, & famoſum, apud nos expoſuit, quod cum chariſſima in Chriſto filia noſtra Catharina, claræ memoriæ Ferdinandi Hiſpaniarum Regis Catholicæ filia, nulliter & de facto contraxiſſe, & conſummaſſe affirmat, leges tam divinas quam humanas in ea parte notorie tranſgrediendo, prout revera ſic tranſgrediebatur, ad dilectos nobis in Chriſto filios, Thomam, & Laurentium miſeratione divina Sanctæ Ceciliæ, & Sanctæ Mariæ in Tranſtiberim reſpective titulorum, noſtri & Apoſtolicæ ſedis in Regno Angliæ prædicto Legates de Latere, Commiſſionem ſub certa tunc expreſſa forma, (quam pro hic inſerta, & expreſſa haberi volumus, & habemus) emiſerimus, ac eoſdem noſtros in ea parte vicegerentes ac competentes Judices deputaverimus, prout ſic etiam tenore præſentium effectualiter & pleniſſime conjunctim & diviſim committimus, & deputamus, quo animi noſtri eidem Henrico Regi in juſtitia illa quam celerrime adminiſtranda propenſionem certius & clarius atteſtemur, ſecurioremque reddamus de judiciorum Labyrintho longo varioque ambitu in cauſis (ut nunc ſunt mores) juſtiſſimis, non una fere ætate explicabili; denique ut proceſſus per eoſdem deputatos noſtros juxta & ſecundum tenorem dictæ commiſſionis habitus & factus, fiendus aut habendus, validus & firmus ac inconcuſſus maneat;* Promittimus, *&, in verbo Romani pontificis, pollicemur, quod ad nullius preces, requiſitionem, ſeu inſtantiam, merove motu, aut aliter ullas unquam literas, brevia, Bullas, aut reſcripta, aliave quæcunque per modum vel juſtitiæ, vel gratiæ, aut aliter quæ materiam emiſſarum antehac in cauſa prædicta commiſſionum commiſſioniſve prædictæ, proceſſuſve per hujuſmodi deputatos noſtros juxta & ſecundum tenorem dictarum commiſſionum commiſſioniſve prædictæ habiti & facti, habendive aut fiendi, inhibitorium, revocatorium, aut quoviſmodo præjudicialem quacunq; ratione contineant, quæve dictarum commiſſionum commiſſioniſve ſeu proceſſus hujuſmodi plenam, perfectam, finalem, & effectualem executionem remorentur, impediant, aut in aliquo contrarientur, illave aut eorum aliqua revocent, aut ciſdem vel eorum aliquibus in toto vel in aliqua parte eorundem prejudicent, concedemus; Sed datas à nobis ciſdem deputatis noſtris commiſſiones & commiſſionem hujuſmodi, proceſſumq; per hujuſmodi deputatos noſtros juxta & ſecundum tenorem dictarum commiſſionum commiſſioniſve prædictæ habitum & factum, habendumq; & fiendum ſua pleniſſima vi, authoritate robore & efficacia realiter & cum effectu conſervabimus, rati habebimus, tuebimur, & defendemus. Deniq; omnes tales literas, brevia, bullas, aut reſcripta, quæ dictarum commiſſionum commiſſioniſve*

1528. *ſioniſve proceſſuſve antedicti executionem, aut ejuſdem virtute decreta, definita, & pronunciata per eoſdem deputatos noſtros confirmare poſſint aut valeant, abſq; mora, recuſatione, aut difficultate quacunq; de tempore in tempus realiter & cum effectu valida & efficacia dabimus & concedemus. Et, inſuper, promittimus, & in verbo Romani Pontificis pollicemur, quod præmiſſa vel eorum aliqua nullatenus infringemus, nec aliquid contra ea vel eorum aliqua directe vel indirecte, tacite vel expreſſe, principaliter vel incidenter, quovis quæſito colore vel ingenio, niſi Vi vel Metu coacti, vel Dolo aut Fraude ad hoc inducti, attentabimus aut faciemus; Sed ea omnia & ſingula firma, valida, inconcuſſa & inviolabilia patiemur, & permittemus. Ac inſuper, ſi (quod abſit) aliquid contra præmiſſa vel eorum aliqua quoviſmodo faciamus aut attentemus, illud pro caſſo, irrito, inani & vacuo omnino haberi volumus & habemus, ac ex nunc prout ex tunc, & ex tunc prout nunc, caſſamus, annullamus, & reprobamus, nulliuſque roboris aut efficaciæ fore vel eſſe debere pronunciamus, decernimus, & declaramus. Datum Viterbio, die xiii Julii Milleſimo Quingenteſimo Vegiſimo Octavo: Pontificatus noſtri Anno Quinto.*

Ita eſt Clemens Papa ſeptimus antedictus.

This while, the Queen who underſtood well what was intended againſt her, laboured with all thoſe paſſions which Jealouſie of the Kings affection, ſenſe of her own honour, and the legitimation of her Daughter could produce; laying, in Concluſion, the whole fault on the Cardinal; who yet was leſs guilty than the Queen thought, or *Polydore* would make him. I will not deny yet, but, out of due regard to his Maſters Intereſts (ſo nearly concern'd in this great affair,) as well as care of giving ſatisfaction to his conſcience, which ſeem'd much troubled, he might comply with the Kings deſires; but to be the ſingle Author of a Counſel, which might turn ſo much to his prejudice, when the K. ſhould dye, is more than may eaſily be believ'd, of ſo cautious a perſon as *Woolſey*. And this innocence, perchance, was the reaſon that he neither ſuſpected himſelf to be ſo much abhorr'd of the Queen, nor to ſtand in that danger of her practices; which yet procur'd at laſt his ruine. The firſt who gave the Cardinal notice of the Queens diſpleaſure (as I find by a Letter of his dated at *Feverſham* 5. *July* 1527. then in his journey towards *France*,) was the Arch-Biſhop of *Canterbury*; the conſequence whereof he ſo much apprehended, that he thought fit to uſe all means for ſatisfying her. Therefore he preſently labour'd with the Arch-biſhop to perſuade the Queen, that whatſoever ſhe heard in this kind, was intended only for clearing the ſurmiſes of the Biſhop of *Tarbe*, formerly mentioned. He writ alſo to our Ambaſſadors in *Spain*, to quench all rumours there, upon the ſame pretext. But the Queen had ſent thoſe Agents abroad, (and, amongſt them, one *Abel*, her Chaplain) who both inform'd her of all that paſſed, and ingaged the Emperor to aſſiſt her to the uttermoſt of his power. Therefore the Pope ſtood more and more ſuſpended;

July 5. 1527.

ded. The pace of *Campejus* (the promiſed Legate) alſo appear'd ſtaggering and ſlow, and all that might fruſtrate the King's intentions, was ſecretly practis'd. Thus while the Cardinal, (who out of the King's deſigns would ever produce and ſubrogate ſome particular end of his own, whereof, either in point of glory or profit, he might make advantage) had ſo diſpoſed this of the Divorce, as thereby to mediate the Popes entire delivery, not only from the Guards, but even fear of the Emperor. Again, as, during the Popes reſtraint, he had (under pretence that it was the beſt expedient for the Kings propos'd Divorce) projected a meeting of Cardinals at *Avignon*, for ſetling the government of the Church, where he himſelf intended to be preſent; So, now, ſince the King liked not that courſe, and that the Pope was free, he perſuaded him to erect ſome Cathedral Churches in *England*, at the price of throwing down more Monaſteries. Whereby it appears, both how buſie this Cardinal was, and how much he ſtudied his own ends. For as he knew this would pleaſe the King (who began to think that Religious perſons might ſerve God as well in defending the Kingdom, as praying for it, ſo he aſſur'd himſelf the Authority thereof would be derived on him chiefly, and the Pope, in the mean time, obnoxious; while he could not but fear how far thoſe Innovations might extend. When this project therefore was mov'd to the Pope, I find by a Letter of the Protonotary *John Caſalis*, *Oct.* 30. 1528. that he anſwer'd, gravely, he liked the deſign well; but that he would proceed deliberatly; becauſe it was *ad perpetuam rei memoriam.* Therefore he deſired the two Legates (for *Campejus* was by this time come) might be joyn'd in determining this buſineſs, and that all the Revenues of the Monaſteries, might be conferred on the new Biſhops; and that the two Legates, having adviſed with the Pope hereof, ſhould afterwards nominate them. So that it ſeem'd the Pope held it fitting to comply, with the King a little at this time, ſince *Gardiner* told him plainly, that he had in his Inſtructions theſe words to tell him, *Neceſſe eſt ſupprimi pro ſereniſſimi Regis Collegio Monaſteria cujuſcunque ordinis*; In concluſion, a Bull was granted for applying the Revenues of ſome ſmall Monaſteries for maintenance of the Kings Colleges in *Cambridge* and *Windſor*-Caſtle: the Copy whereof is extant in Sir *Robert Cottons* Library. It may be doubted yet, whether theſe Apprehenſions, that were now, in more than one kind, given the Pope of our King's declining the abſolute Authority of the Church of *Rome* did diſpoſe the Pope more to oblige or diſoblige him. For, though the Pope had reaſon to fear, leſt he ſhould loſe his antient Juriſdiction in this Kingdom, if he denyed; yet he might doubt as well, that in adhering too much to that ſide, he might offend the Emperor ſo far, as to hazard the loſs of his own. He therefore, at once, treats with the Emperor of a perfect peace and amity, and together of recovering *Cervia* and *Ravenna*, and of effecting certain other deſigns which he had in *Florence*; and grants (as is above-ſaid) in appearance

1528.

Octob. 30.

Novemb. 2.

1527. a large Commiſſion to *Woolſey* and *Campejus*; Yet, in effect, ſo reſtrain'd, as the Emperor might ſee it was not out of his power to check, or revoke it. And this was all that Sir *Gregory Caſalis*, and *Stephen Gardiner*, after much importunity, could obtain. They moved the Pope alſo to Canonize *Henry* VI. (which I find was formerly propos'd to *Alexander* VI. by *Henry* VII.) to which the Pope anſwer'd, that if the Arch-biſhop of *Canterbury*, and Biſhop of *Wincheſter* (who had examined the matter in *partibus*) did ſend the proceſs thither, as their Commiſſion required, the Canonization ſhould follow ſhortly after.

1494. *Anti. Brit.*

Novemb. Buſineſſes ſtanding thus, our King thought fit to ſend Sir *Francis Bryan*, Knight, and *Peter Vannes* (an *Italian*, and his ſecretary, for the Latin Tongue) to *Rome*; their Inſtructions in general (being ſigned with the Kings own hand) were to diſſuade the Pope from entring into any League with the Emperor, whoſe deſign was (he ſaid) to diveſt the Pope of his Means, and Authority, by the forcible bringing in of one *Angelo* a *Cordelier* to be Pope, who ſhould not intermeddle with Secular Juriſdiction, and the Patrimony of the Church; which therefore the Emperor would take to himſelf and uſurp. For preventing whereof, the King wiſhed him to keep a Guard, offering in his own and *Francis* name, to contribute thereunto. They were commanded alſo, to ſearch privately for a certain pretended *Breve*, in *Rome* (ſaid to be a Supplement or Confirmation of the Bull of *Julius* the ſecond, and authorizing the Marriage with Queen *Katharine*) ſince it was not to be found in the Kings Records. Furthermore they were requir'd to diſcover (in the name of a third perſon) whether, if the Queen enter'd a Religious life, the King might have the Popes Diſpenſation to Marry again, and the Children be Legitimate, and what Precedents were for it? Secondly, whether if the King (for the better inducing of the Queen thereunto) would promiſe to enter himſelf into a Religious life, the Pope might not diſpenſe with his Vow, and leave her there? Thirdly, if this may not be done, whether he can diſpenſe with the King to have two Wives, and the Children of both Legitimate? Since great reaſons, and precedents, eſpecially in the old Teſtament, appear for it. All which they were to do with that ſecreſie, and circumſpection, that the cauſe might not be publiſhed, propounding the Kings caſe always therefore as another mans. Laſtly (as in all other Inſtructions) ſome kind of Menaces were to be added. But perſuaſions and terrors wanted not on the other ſide; which did ſo much more prevail with the Pope, as the danger was more immediate & preſſing on the Emperors part, than on our Kings. Therefore our Ambaſſadors were ſo far from obtaining any thing, but what was formerly granted in the Commiſſion to Cardinal *Woolſey*, and *Campejus*, that they found the Pope now more than ever diſpos'd to favour the Emperor. Inſomuch that they obſerved daily new delays, and reſtrictions in him. Some whereof (beſides the evidence in our Records) *Sanders* doth confeſs, while he ſaith, that the Pope, by four ſeveral Meſſengers

Sand. Schiſ. Angl.

to

to *Campejus* (now on his way) gave him in charge; Firſt, that he ſhould make eaſie Journey. Secondly, that, when he came to *England*, he ſhould labour all he could to reconcile the King and Queen. Thirdly, that, if this could not be effected, he ſhould perſuade her to enter a Monaſtery, and take on her a Religious life. Laſtly, that when this could be obtain'd, he ſhould give no Definitive ſentence for the Divorce, without expreſs commandment from him, *& hoc* (ſaith he) *ſummum & maximum ſit tibi Mandatum. Campejus* thus inſtructed, protracts all things; whereat though our King ſeem'd ſcandaliz'd, as ſuſpecting it came from unwillingneſs, yet, being an active Prince, he made uſe of that time, to negotiate in *Spain* for recovering the *Breve*, (of which above,) commanding the Biſhop of *Worceſter*, and Doctor *Edward Lee*, by all means to procure it. At length (and not before the beginning of *October*, 1528. *Campejus* coming through *France*, and being conducted thence into *England*, by *John Clark*, Biſhop of *Bath*, our Kings Ambaſſador there, came to *London*. Where, being, by our Cardinal preſented to the King, he publikly acknowledged in the name of the Pope, Cardinal, Clergy, and People of *Rome*, that our King was *Liberator Urbis*. Shortly after, obtaining Audience of the Queen, he took occaſion both to acquaint her with her danger, and to perſuade her thereupon to renounce the World, and enter into ſome Religious life. For which many pretexts wanted not (as I find in our Records,) ſhe having been obſerved, ſince the Commiſſion obtained, to allow Dancing and paſtimes more than before. And that her countenance not only in Court, but to the People, was more chearful than ordinary; whereas (it was alledged) ſhe might be more ſad and penſive, conſidering the Kings Conſcience was unſatisfied, and that he had refrained her bed, and was not willing the Lady Princeſs, her Daughter, ſhould come in her company. But the offended Queen, replying peremptorily, that ſhe was reſolved both to ſtand to that Marriage the *Roman* Church had once allowed; and, howſoever, not to admit ſuch partial Judges as they were, to give ſentence in her cauſe: *Campejus* writes to *Rome*, both to inform the Pope hereof, and to deſire farther Inſtructions. The anſwer whereunto, the Pope yet ſo long deferr'd; that very near ſix Months paſs'd before the two Cardinals ſate in their Commiſſion.

1528.

Octob.

This while, the Biſhop of *Worceſter*, and Doctor *Lee*, having given the Emperor an Overture of the Divorce, did, (by a Letter dated at *Saragoſa*, *April* 5. 1529.) return our King this Anſwer, on the Emperors part. That he was ſorry to underſtand of the intended Divorce, adjuring our King (for the reſt) by the Sacrament of Marriage, not to diſſolve it. Or, if he would needs proceed therein, that the hearing and determining of the buſineſs yet, might be referr'd to *Rome*, or a General Council, and not be decided in *England*. Adding further, that he would defend the Queens juſt cauſe. Wherewith, the pretended-Original *Breve* was produc'd, and a tranſumpt, or

April 5. 1529.

1528. or Copy thereof (ſigned by three Biſhops) offer'd them, to ſend to *England*; but the *Breve* it ſelf was denyed; for fear (as he ſaid) of miſcarrying. To which our Ambaſſadors anſwered, That our King was a Prince of that piety, that he ought not to be Adjur'd; and for the *Breve*, that it was a Jewel belonging to the King and his Queen only, and not to be detained by any other from them. And, for Appealing to *Rome*, it needed not; ſince Authority of determining that buſineſs, was already given from thence to Cardinal *Woolſey* and *Campejus*. Beſides, that, in cauſes Matrimonial, the preſence of the parties to be examined, being required for the moſt part, the Emperor might eaſily imagine how unfit it was for the King and Queen perſonally to go to *Rome*, eſpecially at that time. After this, the Emperor commanding the *Breve* to be read, the Ambaſſadors required a Notary to be allowed them, for ſetting down the whole paſſage of this buſineſs, together with their Proteſtations. But no Notary but the Emperor's being permitted, the Ambaſſadors were forc'd to accept him, deſiring notwithſtanding their allegations might be ſet down apart. Hereupon the Emperor told the Ambaſſadors, that he would ſend an expreſs Meſſenger to our King, to intreat him to continue his Match, and, in caſe of refuſal, to proteſt againſt the Divorce. Our Ambaſſadors yet perſiſted ſtill in urging the Emperor, for his own ſake, to ſend the *Breve* for *England*; leſt the Judges, wanting ſight thereof, ſhould proceed againſt the Queen, or otherwiſe, that he would ſend the ſaid *Breve* to the Pope. The Emperor replied, that therefore he would not ſend it. For if it miſcarried, the Judges might then proceed as they would; but for ſending it to the Pope he would adviſe. And that, if matters were now as they were heretofore, he would not fear to ſend it to *England*. By

April 20. a Letter alſo, the twentieth of *April*, 1529. they certifie the King, that the Emperor intended to ſend both to *England* and *Rome*, to make his Proteſtations againſt this Divorce; and that he would not ſend the Original *Breve*. Furthermore, that he requir'd our King,

Octob. 2. 1518. according to an Article of a former Treaty, to fall upon *Francis*, as a perturber of the Publick Peace. Laſtly, becauſe the ſaid Ambaſſadors had heard, and conſider'd, at large, the *Breve*, they ſent their objections againſt it. Which, being one of the grounds of the Kings proceeding in this great affair, I have thought fit punctually to ſet down, as they are extant in the Original Letter, written in Cipher, and thus to be read, as I find it diſcipher'd in our Records.

That, where it is pretended, the *Bull* and the *Breve* to be impetrate in one day, either they were impetrate in one ſute, and by one man; and then it is not to be thought, but that this ſute, being of ſo great importance, was committed to ſuch a one, as could perceive, that the *Bull*, not containing ſo large Diſpenſation as the *Breve*, is ſuperfluous, (ſuppoſing the *Breve* to be neceſſary.) If the one were impetrate after the other, and the ſutes made by one man, it is hard to think that one man, being inſtructed in the ſute for both, would put the

Diſpenſation of leſs moment in a *Bull*, and of greater moment in a *Breve*, ſeeing the one might be as facilly impetrate as the other, and that the Diſpenſation in Lead is more durable to remain; and, That the two Kings were bound to impetrate *Bulls*, and not *Breves*, whereof he or they that had ſuch Commiſſion, (as it ſeemeth) could not be ignorant. And if theſe ſutes were made by divers perſons, and by ſeveral Commiſſions, there is no reaſon can be alledged (the impetration being in one day,) why to two ſeveral perſons ſeveral Commiſſions ſhould be given herein, the thing requiring no haſt, the Marriage following five or ſix years after; but more likely it is, if the *Breve* were then obtained indeeed, that it was procured by ſecret practices not known to all parties *quorum intererat ſcire & conſentire*; for, both the parties conſenting, I think there can be no ſufficient cauſe alledged, why, the thing being done by common conſent, the *Breve* rather than the *Bull* ſhould have larger diſpenſation; for what needed two divers ſutes, with divers Commiſſions, if both the parties were agreed upon the ſutes? Eſpecially the impetration of both being in one day. 1528. Aug. 17.

Secondly, ſuppoſing to be true, that Maſter *Abel* ſaith, the Queen to have ſworn, *quod nunquam fuit cognita à Principe Arthuro*; the cauſe of the impetration for ſo much is vain, (*viz. quod Regina cum Arthuro principe matrimonium carnali copula conſummaverit.* If this be true, it appeareth that he that ſued the *Breve* had no commiſſion of the parties, for they would not give him Commiſſion to impetrate diſpenſation for cauſe not true.

Thirdly, ſuppoſing to be true, that Maſter *Abel* ſaith to me, that the Queen never heard of ſuch *Breve*, before the Emperors Orators there preſented it to her; how can it ſtand, that is reported in the Breve, *quod impetratum eſt Breve ad Reginæ inſtantiam?*

Fourthly, if your Highneſs had made inſtance and ſupplication for the ſame *Breve*, it is not to be thought that it ſhould be ſo far out of your Remembrance, the cauſes of impetration being ſuch, as your Highneſs might and could, anon, reduce it to the ſame.

Fifthly, if it were impetrate at the inſtance of your Highneſs, and of the Queens Grace, no cauſe is why it ſhould be ſent into *Spain* to King *Fernando* (as the Emperors folks firſt ſaid, but now ſwerve) and not to your Highneſs, and the Queens grace. If any will ſuppoſe that it was done by your conſent, no reaſon agreeth why you ſhould conſent thereto, and not rather keep it in your own hands, than ſend it to the cuſtody of another. And yet, if you did conſent, it cannot be thought, but that it ſhould remain in your remembrance, as the firmity of your Marriage, and diſcharge of your Conſcience, with other things, touching highly your ſucceſſion, ſtanding therein; And it may be ſuppoſed moreover, that ſome writing of the Depoſite thereof ſhould remain there, which is not found.

Sixthly, conſidering that the King of moſt noble memory, your Father then alive, your Highneſs not being at the date of the *Breve*

paſt

1528. paſt xv, or xvi years of age, [*for ſo the Cipher is; though as King* Henry *was then but* xii, *and ſomething more, I conceive thoſe figures were Ciphers only, ſignifying his true Age: unleſs perchance the Cipherer or Deſcipher did otherwiſe miſtake it;*] It may be well ſuppoſed that your Highneſs was not then much to ſollicite the impetration of ſuch things. And that, if any ſuch *Breve* ſhould have been impetrate, that time, that rather it ſhould have been done at the inſtance of the King your Father, than of your Highneſs. And although then it might have been impetrate in your Highneſs name, yet it could not have been done there without knowledge and conſent of the King your Father, and alſo at his ſetting forth. And, if any his intervention and conſent had been in this matter, he would not have bound King *Fernando*, and likewiſe have been bound himſelf, to get *Bulls* of Diſpenſation. And ſurely it may be thought that, if the King your Father conſented, *Don Fernando* of *Spain* did the ſame, ſo that it cannot be doubted, but that as they ſay here they have two *Bulls* reſerved in their Archives, ſo ſhould alſo this *Breve* have been, which indeed was not there found, as hereafter ſhall be ſhewed, nor any ſuch is found in your Highneſs Archives. Wherefore it may be well reckoned, that there was no ſuch obtained by the conſent of the King your Father.

And ſo, Seventhly, maketh the *Breve* ſuſpect, that the Emperor's folks firſt ſaid, that it was found in *Archivis Regum Hiſpaniarum*, as appeareth in my Lord Cardinals Graces Letters, and now, forgetting themſelves, the Emperors Chancellor and *Perinot* have confeſſed to us, that it was found among the Writings of Doctor *de Puebla*, which was Orator of *Spain*, in *England*, in the Kings days of moſt noble memory your Father. Which contrariety maketh to appear that they do not upright. Of a Nephew of Doctor *Puebla's* being there, I have written in our Common Letters the fifth of *April*, and now do again; by whom peradventure ſome light might be had.

Eighthly, whoſo conſidereth the high renowned wiſdom of the King your ſaid Father, and his great ſage Council, men of ſingular wiſdom and learning for all purpoſes, may well conceive, that, or ever any Diſpenſation for Marriage to be had between your Highneſs and the Queen were ſent for, that her Grace was examined *an eſſet cognita à principe Arthuro an non?* And that *ſi faſſa eſt*, that the two Kings would have provided therefore *Diſpenſationem in Bulla*, as they were bound. And on the other ſide, *ſi negavit ſe fuiſſe cognitam, nihil erat opus Brevi quoad*, &c. And for the ſecond part of the *Breve*, I cannot ſuppoſe that your Highneſs, in that time which the date of the *Breve* pretendeth (your Highneſs being then not much more than xii. or xv. years of age, and the King your Father living,) need any diſpenſation in that party. And if none needed then, why ſhould your Highneſs then make inſtance for any, which is ſuppoſed in the *Breve*?

Ninthly, if this *Breve* were impetrate in the days of Doctor *de Puebla*

Puebla; the being thereof ſo long in his hands, and the manner of keeping of the ſame, giveth new conjecture that it is a thing caſſat; for the thing being of ſo much importance, touching ſo nigh your Highneſs and the Queen, why ſhould he keep it; ſpecially ſo long? for he lived in *England* after the date of the *Breve*, five or ſix years, and dyed there, not long after the King your Father. Who can think that ſuch a King, and ſuch a Council, would have ſuffered the *Breve* to be out of their hands, in his hands, all that time, if the *Breve* had been known to them neceſſary for this Matrimony, and of any value? And, as I ſaid, the manner of keeping thereof ſeemeth to confirm the ſame; which manner of keeping I conjecture of two things; One, that it was not kept in a caſe of Tin, after the manner of *Breves*; for only in a Paper they did exhibit it to us twice. Another, that in the Superſcription it appear'd ſlubbered, by reaſon of often handling, peradventure lying among ſo many his Writings and old Letters; wherefore, although it were then impetrate, yet it ſeemeth that he took it as caſſat, and void, peradventure as ſurreptitiouſly obtained of his own head, without any Commiſſion or conſent of the parties. 1529.

Tenthly, another ſuſpicion is, that, although the Emperors Chancellor and *Perenot* ſay, they have divers Letters and Writings of the ſaid *Puebla*'s, concerning both the Firſt marriage, and Second of the Queens; yet, becauſe they uttered not that they have any thing ſpecially concerning this *Breve*, (which they would not have forgotten to ſay, for ſo much as it maketh for their purpoſe, if there had been any ſuch,) moved upon that ſuſpicion, I demanded of them, and divers times to the ſame, whether they had any ſpecial Letters concerning the *Breve*? They could not, ne did ſay that they had; but the Emperor's Chancellor anſwered, that the *Breve* was enough. Whereupon may be gathered, that his anſwer implyed, that they have none other.

Eleventhly, if any ſuch *Breve* were impetrate at that time, by the knowledge and conſent of both the Kings, likely is, that either of them ſhould have one. Let them then here bring forth the *Breve ex Archivis ſuis*. If they will ſay, this is it; what likelihood is it, that it ſhould be ſent into *England*, to come into *Spain*? for this *Breve*, if it were in Doctor *de-Puebla*'s cuſtody, came out of *England* after his death, with other his Writings; which I think his Nephew there, (if he confeſs that it was found amongſt other his Uncles Writings) will alſo confeſs. I ſay, why was it ſent into *England*? It is not to be doubted, but *Don Fernando* had an Ambaſſador in the Court of *Rome*, which might eaſilier and nearer way have ſent it into *Spain*. Wherefore, if they cannot, out of their Archives, bring forth any ſuch *Breve*, their diligence in cuſtody of ſuch things ſuppoſed, and well deprehended in the Cuſtody of two *Bulls*, (for ſome of the Secretaries ſaid to me that they have two,) they may, of this, gather (themſelves) that there is no ſuch, ne any other-where, of any effect and value.

1529. The Twelfth ſuſpicion againſt the *Breve* is in it ſelf; that, whenſoever it was impetrate, it was not duly impetrate, may be gathered of divers things in the ſame, and about the ſame; the hand of ſome learner, and not of one exercis'd in writing of ſuch things; and ſome defaults in the writing; ſuch, as my Lord of *Worceſter* ſaith, he hath not ſeen committed in any *Breve*. And, as he truſteth to prove, the Date ſhall utterly condemn the *Breve*. And theſe exceptions were, as I find in another Letter, dated from the ſame Ambaſſadors to the Cardinal: Firſt, that there were Raſures in it. Secondly, divers hands. Thirdly, Names falſe-written, as *Artherus pro Arthurus*. Fourthly, the Date falſe; as being *Decem.* 26. 1503. which, according to the date of *Breves*, beginning 25. *Dec.* was almoſt a year before *Julius* II. was Pope. It was obſerved, likewiſe, that the Seal ſwell'd in the middle, and appear'd like ſome old Seal newly clap'd on. And thus much out of theſe diſpatches of thoſe able negotiators the Biſhop of *Worceſter*, and *Edward Lee* the Kings Almoner; who, ſending the tranſumpt of the *Breve* to the King, *April* 23. by a Letter 12 of *June* following, alſo certified our King of the ſending of *Gonzales Fernando*, the Emperors Chaplain to the Earl of *Deſmond* in *Ireland* (which hath relation to that I have formerly ſaid of him) together with the return of a Chaplain of the ſaid Earls in his company; the Emperor ſeeming to take this intended Divorce ſo much to heart, that he thought fit to give our King this Jealouſie. Shortly after which, I find alſo the Biſhop of *Worceſter* repealed.

April 20.

April 23.

June 12.

Auguſt 19. This while, the common People, who with much anxiety attended the ſucceſs of this great affair, ſeem'd, betwixt pity to Queen *Katharine*, and envy to *Anne Bolen*, (now appearing to be in the Kings favour) to caſt out ſome murmuring and ſeditious words; which being brought to the King's ears, he thought fit to proteſt publickly in an Aſſembly of Lords, Judges, *&c.* call'd to his Palace of *Bridewel*, That nothing but deſire of giving ſatisfaction to his Conſcience, and care of eſtabliſhing the Succeſſion to the Crown in a right and undoubted line, had firſt procur'd him to controvert this Marriage; being (for the reſt) as happy in the affection and vertues of his Queen, as any Prince living. To confirm which alſo, he cauſed *Anne Bolen* to depart the Court, in ſuch an abrupt and diſcontented faſhion, that ſhe determined to abſent her ſelf altogether. Neither could ſhe be induced (as *Sanders* hath it) to come to the King any more, till her Father was commanded (not without threats) to bring her thither. Who by repreſenting the common danger to them both, obtained at length (though not without much difficulty) the conſent of his unwilling Daughter to return; Where yet ſhe kept that diſtance, that the King might eaſily perceive how ſenſible ſhe was of her late diſmiſſion.

Novemb. 8. 1528.

May. It was now mid-*May* 1529. when our King, underſtanding how the Pope intended a ſtrict League with the Emperor, and judging wiſely alſo, that *Francis*, upon the reſtoring of his Children, might eaſily be

be drawn from him, did reſolve, without relying any longer on either of their promiſes, to take the beſt courſe he could, for giving a Concluſion to this buſineſs. And the rather, in that matters ſeem'd daily more and more indiſpos'd for that concluſion he deſir'd. For though *Campejus*, according to the order he had from the Pope (as I find by a diſpatch of *John Caſalis*, *Dat. Dec.* 17. 1528.) did both perſuade the Queen to a Divorce, and diſſuade the King from it, as having either way the end he propos'd: yet he fail'd in both. Nor would he (as I find in the ſame diſpatch) let go out of his hand the Decretal *Bull* mentioned before, being the Abſolute deciſion of the Cauſe, (the Diſpenſation being relative to the Queens entring into Religion, or other diſſolution of the Marriage;) in regard (as the Pope pretended) it was got by the importunity of Cardinal *Woolſey* with intention that it ſhould be ſhewed to the King and Cardinal only, as an *arrha* or token of his good will, and afterwards burnt; proteſting nevertheleſs to the ſaid *Caſalis*, that he deſired the Cardinals ſhould proceed according to their Commiſſion, but that the *Bulla Decretalis* ſhould by no means be ſhewed to any of the Kings Counſellors, or other perſon whatſoever, though upon Oath of Secreſie; it being ſufficient that the King and Cardinal had ſeen it already, in *Campejus* hand. How our King yet was ſatisfied with this evaſion of the Popes, appears not to me by any Record, more, than that he ſtill ſolicited the Pope, that it might be exhibited publickly. Howbeit the Pope, who had far other thoughts, told our Agents, that he kept the *Bulla Decretalis* ſecretly, as well from all his Cardinals; as fearing leſt the Emperor ſhould call him to a Council for it. For the more caution, taking order that the Memory of it ſhould be razed out of all his Archives. And, not ſtaying here, (as I find by our Records) He commanded one *Franciſco Campana* (his Servant) into *England*, on pretence to confer with the King and Cardinal, but indeed to charge *Campejus* to burn the Decretal. For colouring of all which, He finally objected to our King, that he had not kept promiſe with him, about the Reſtitution of *Cervia* and *Ravenna*. Our King conceiving hereupon, that all theſe difficulties the Pope made, proceeded from the fear which he had of the Emperor, ſends to Sir *Francis Bryan*, and *Peter Vannes* again, to renew his offer of a Guard of a Thouſand or Two Thouſand Men, to be kept at the coſt of the *French* King and his, whereof the *Comte de Turenne*, and Sir *Gregory Caſalis* ſhould be Captains; and, in the mean while, that a General Peace ſhould be treated of. But whether the Pope, as being late enough offended with the Guard which the Emperor put on him, would not now accept them from any other Prince; or that he thought them too ſlender to defend him; or that it would argue partiality to do any thing on theſe terms; or that otherwiſe he had made his private Peace with the Emperor, (which certainly was the truth;) I do not find the Pope accepted this offer. Howſoever, he ſeemed ſtill to fear the Emperor; Inſomuch that, by a Diſpatch from

1529.

Decemb. 17. 1528.

Decemb. 15. 1528. *Concil. Trid.*

1529. from *Gregory Caſalis*, Dated *January* the third, 1529. I find the Pope
for the better making both his own, and a General Peace, eſpeci-
Jan. 3. ally betwixt *Charles* and *Francis*, (which alſo followed at *Cambray* this year,) declar'd to Cardinal *Woolſey*, he thought it neceſſary to go himſelf in perſon into *Spain*, and that Cardinal *Woolſey* ſhould go along with him; not yet as Pope and Cardinal, but as two Legates, or Ambaſſadors, for concluding a Peace. But this Journey (if at leaſt it were really intended) was interrupted by the ſickneſs of
Feb. 7. the Pope, which was thought ſo deſperate, that our Cardinal *Feb.* 7. wrote to *Stephen Gardiner* (then at *Rome*) that, by all means, he ſhould procure the Papacy for him, being (as affairs then ſtood) the moſt indifferent and equal that could be found in Chriſtendom. To which purpoſe alſo, beſides our Kings Recommendations, the Cardinal had obtained the *French* Kings Letters, written with ſo much earneſtneſs for him, that though the Convaleſcence of the Pope did fruſtrate this deſign, *Stephen Gardiner* yet was wiſhed to keep
Record. the Letter *in omnem eventum*. I find alſo, Order was given, that if
Fox. *Woolſey* could not be choſen, the Cardinals which were for him
Harpsfield. (being a third part of the whole number) ſhould put in a Proteſtation, and departing the Conclave, ſhould in ſome ſecure place proceed to an Election, notwithſtanding any to be made at *Rome*. But, whether the Pope having notice of this untimely ambition of our Cardinal, were now offended with him, or that otherwiſe his ingagement to the *Spaniard* (whereof, in a Diſpatch from the Pope to
July 21. the Emperor *July* 21. 1528. that came to our King's hands, there is
1528. mention,) did hold him off; I find after this time the Pope more averſe than ever. Therefore, notwithſtanding a deſign of his, that Cardinal *Woolſey* and *Campejus*, having finiſhed the buſineſs of the Divorce, ſhould afterwards go to conclude an Univerſal Peace, yet all that paſt in this affair afterwards (on his part) was little more
May 5. than illuſion. Which Sir *Francis Bryan* diſcovering, in a Diſpatch to our King, plainly told him, no good was to be done; which our
April. 21. King alſo believing, had commanded *Gardiner* to threaten the Pope with his ſollicitation of the Princes of *Almaine*. Among whom I find particularly *George* Duke of *Saxony* (the *Lutherans* in vain oppoſing it) to have perſuaded the Divorce. *Gardiner*, hereupon, uſeth more than one menace; though ſo much in vain, that, for a Concluſion, he adviſed our King to proceed upon the Commiſſion given
April 21. to the Legates, the Pope being (as he alledged *April* 21. 1529.) ſo aw'd by the *Ceſareans*, as he had rather ſuffer much in anothers name, than do any thing in his own. To incourage him the more alſo, *Gardiner* calls the *Breve* falſe and counterfeit, as being not to be found in the Regiſters at *Rome*. Moreover, for ſeconding this
May 4. advice, *Gardiner*, by another Letter, *May* 4. ſays there was danger of recalling the Commiſſion given to *Woolſey* and *Compejus*; Which was confirmed by divers other Letters from our Agents.
June 13. Whereof *Gregory Caſalis*, in a Diſpatch of 13 *June* following, gives

a

a reason, in these words of the Pope; who, being at that time more slackly relieved from the Confederates than he thought, and divers of his Subjects (for the rest) in Arms against him, said, *Malle sese in præceps dari, & Cæsari à Stabulo, nedum à Sacris inservire, quam inferiorum hominum, subditorum, Vassalorumq; rebellium injurias sustinere.* The Remedy whereof he expected only from the Emperor. So that not only fear, but even hope making him obnoxious, he did, for more than one reason, encline to the Emperor. Our King also, being well inform'd hereof by certain excusatory Letters from *Rome*, and that a Treaty betwixt the Pope and Emperor (whereof there shall be mention) was already upon Term of Conclusion, and an Interview appointed; gave order first to recal *Gardiner* and *Bryan*; yet so as he neglected not, at the same time, to send *William Bennet*, Doctor of Law, to *Rome*, to hinder the Advocation of the cause; whereof he was so Jealous, that he intercepted not only those Dispatches which were sent to *Rome* from *Campejus*, or any else, but even those intelligences which Queen *Katharine* should give to her Aunt the Lady *Margaret*, Governess of the *Low Countries*. So that now our King, finding his Conscience unsatisfied, his Nobility in suspence, and the people murmuring at these procrastinations in an affair that so much concern'd the Succession, Charged the two Cardinals to proceed; as being satisfied by a particular Discussion of this business before Arch-bishop *Warham*, and divers the learnedst men of both Universities, at *Lambeth*, that his cause was fair. 1529. May 20.

And now, publick notice of a solemn hearing being given, the Court was appointed to sit; the Queen chusing Arch-bishop *Warham*, and *Nicholas West* Bishop of *Ely*, Doctors of the Law, and *John Fisher* Bishop of *Rochester*, and *Henry Standish* Bishop of St. *Asaph*, Doctors of Divinity, her Counsel, *&c.* according to the permission the King gave her in that behalf. The passages whereof, out of an Antient and Authentick Record in Parchment, subscribed by the three Notaries (used in this business and remaining in the Custody of that great Antiquary, Sir *Henry Spelman*, Knight,) I shall set down, with as much particularity, as the context of my History will suffer. Jan. Feb. March.

The place appointed for hearing and determining the Cause, was a great Hall in *Black-Fryers* in *London*, (commonly call'd the *Parliament-Chamber.*) The time, the thirty-first of *May*, 1529. The Judges, the two Cardinals above-mention'd, whose Commissions I have thought fit to set down at large. May 31.

Clemens Episcopus, servus servorum Dei, Dilectis filiis Thomæ Sanctæ Cæciliæ Eboracen. & Laurentio Sanctæ Mariæ in Transtiberim de Campejo nuncupatis presbyteris Cardinalibus, in Regno Angliæ nostris & Apostolicæ sedis Legatis de latere, Salutem, & Apostolicam benedictionem. Sane ad aures nostras ex plurimorum fide-dignorum relatione frequenter perlatum est, de validitate illius matrimonii quod charissimus in Christo filius noster Henricus Angliæ Rex illustris, Fidei defensor & Domi-

1529. *Dominus Hiberniæ, cum chariſſima in Chriſto filia noſtra Catharina Regina, ſedis Apoſtolicæ diſpenſatione prehenſa, contraxiſſe & conſummaſſe dignoſcitur, ſubortam nuper in partibus illis quæſtionem, quæ licèt in publicum Eccleſiæ judicium deducta hactenus non fuerit, cauſa tamen tam magni graviſque momenti exitus,* viz. *quem juſtitia & æquitas dederit, animos iſtic omnium ſic habet ſuſpenſos, ut celerem ac maturam definitionem requirat, non ſine maximo diſcrimine proteland. Cum itaque nos, quos ad juſtitiam in judicio & veritate, omnibus ex æquo ſubminiſtrandum Servum Servorum Deus conſtituit, facti veritatem per nos ipſos inquirere ac Cauſam hanc examinare non valemus, Conſiderantes præterea quod factum, ex quo jus oritur, illic certius quam hic, tum etiam citius expeditiuſq; cognoſci poterit, Cupienteſq; præſertim in Regno illo ſedi Apoſtolicæ ſemper devotiſſimo, omnem diſſentionum materiam extingui, & dulciſſimum illum pacis amoriſq; inteſtinum concentum feliciſſimamq; charitatis Harmoniam multos jam annos conſtantem retineri, ac in poſterum conſervari, dictamq; proinde ſuper præfato matrimonio cauſam in judicio, juſtitia, & veritate decidi, certumq; firmum, validum, & maturum, quod maxime expedit. finem ſortiri; Circumſpectioni veſtræ ad audiendum ea omnia & ſingula quæ dicti matrimonii vires, diſpenſationiſve Apoſtolicæ cujuſcunq; coram vobis producendæ aut exhibendæ validitatem aut invaliditatem contingant, deq; & ſuper omnibus illis ac aliis quibuſcunque materiis, allegationibus & cauſis dictum matrimonium aut diſpenſationem concernent. ſeu tangentibus cognoſcend. necnon in cauſa dicti matrimonii & validitatis diſpenſationis, vocatis partibus, ſummarie & de plano, ſine ſtrepitu & figura judicii procedendum, diſpenſationes quaſcunq; Apoſtolicas, prout illas validas, efficaces, & ſufficientes, invalidaſve, inefficaces, minus ſufficientes, ſurreptitias, aut arreptitias, aut alio quocunque modo enervat. inveneritis, tales illas eſſe, & haberi debere pronunciandum & declarandum, dictumq; matrimonium ſimiliter, ſi ab alterutra parte petatur, prout animo conſcientiæque veſtræ juris ratio perſuaſerit, validum, juſtum, & legitimum, ac firmum eſſe, aut è contra invalidum, injuſtum, & illegitimum, nullumque fuiſſe & eſſe; pro valido juſto, legitimo & firmo, aut è contra, invalido injuſto & illegitimo, nulloque haberi debere, definiendum, ſententiand. & decernendum; ac in eventum improbatæ diſpenſationis & declarationis nullitatis matrimonii, ſummarie & de plano ſine ſtrepitu & figura judicii, ut præfertur, ſententiam divortii judicialiter proferend. denique tam Henrico Regi, quam Catharinæ Reginæ prefatis, ad alia vota commigrand. Licentiam in domino & facultatem tribuendum. Vobis conjunctim, & altero veſtrum nolente aut impedito, diviſim, citra omnem perſonæ aut Juriſdictionis gradum, omni recuſatione & appellatione remotis, vices & omnem authoritatem noſtram committimus & demandamus. Vos etiam conjunctim, & altero veſtrum nolente, aut impedito, diviſim, ut præfertur, ad ea omnia quæ in hac commiſſione continentur duntaxat exequenda, expedienda, ac plenæ finaliq; executioni demandanda, Vices-gerentes noſtros etiam ex certa noſtra ſcientia creamus, & deputamus, ita, ut in præmiſſis, quod nos authoritate & poteſtate noſtra*

noſtra facere poſſemus, id etiam vos facere poſſitis. Vobis quoque tam prolem ex primo matrimonio ſuſceptam, ſi id ita expedire Viſum fuerit, quam ex ſecunda matrimonio ſuſcipiendam, legitimam decernend. pronunciand. & promulgand. legitimitatem etiam utriuſq; prolis, cenſuris & pœnis Eccleſiaſticis quibuſcunque, per modum decreti aut ſanctionis perpetuæ, muniendi & vallandi omnibus validioribus & efficacioribus modis & formis quæ de jure concipi & excogitari poterint, ex certa noſtra ſcientia, authoritate Apoſtolica, tenore præſentium, poteſtatem pariter & authoritatem concedimus, Non-obſtantibus Conciliis generalibus, Apoſtolicis conſtitutionibus, & ordinationibus editis, cæteriſq; contrariis quibuſcunque. Dat. Viterbii, Anno Incarnationis Dominicæ Milleſimo Quigenteſimo Viceſimo Octavo. Sexto Id. Junii, Pontificatus noſtri Anno Quinto. 1529.

After the Commiſſion was read, our Chronicles ſay, the King was Call'd, and appear'd perſonally in Court, at whoſe Feet the Queen proſtrated her ſelf, demanding Juſtice, right, and pity, *&c.* But now to come to the Authentick Record. I find the King and Q. were by Biſhop *Longland*, the Kings Confeſſor, cited to appear upon 18. *June* next enſuing. The King (for obſerving his time,) gave *Richard Sampſon*, Dean of his Chappel, and *John Bell*, Doctor of the Decrees, a Commiſſion Sealed in green Wax, and dated at *Greenwich*, 15. *June*; by which he conſtituted them his Proctors, with Authority to refuſe or accept the Court and Judgment of the two Cardinals, and, if need were, to Appeal; allowing them alſo to ſubſtitute other Proctors; binding himſelf finally *ſub Hypotheca & obligatione Bonorum*, ro ratifie what they ſhould do. But the Queen, uſing a ſhorter way, appear'd in perſon, proteſting yet againſt the Cardinals, as incompetent Judges; requiring further, that this her Proteſtation might be Recorded, and ſo departed preſently out of the Court. This while the Cardinals, who took into their Commiſſion *John Longland*, Biſhop of *Lincoln*; *John Clark*, Biſhop of *Bath* and *Wells*; *John Iſlip*, Abbot of *Weſtminſter*; and Doctor *John Taylor*, Maſter of the Rolls; ſent unto the Queen Letters Monitory; declaring, if ſhe appear'd not, they would notwithſtanding proceed to execute their Commiſſion; for which purpoſe the above-mentioned Biſhop of *Bath* and *Wells*, was employed, but ſhe, refuſing, is pronounced Contumacious.

May 31. *Hall. Holins. Godwin. Stow.*

June 15.

June 18.

June 25.

Certain Articles were then put in by the Legates, againſt our King and Queen *Katherine*, the principal ſubſtance whereof was, that Prince *Arthur* did Marry, and Carnally know Queen *Katherine*, confirming alſo this Marriage by Cohabitation with her till his death. After which, K. *Henry* being his Brother, did Marry the ſaid Lady *Katherine*, *An. Dom.* 1509. *in facie Eccleſiæ*, and had Children by her; which Marriage yet, being as well *Divino* as *Eccleſiaſtico jure* prohibited, and (unleſs it may be otherways made good) to be reputed in it ſelf *nullum omnino & invalidum*, had cauſed huge ſcandal, both in the Clergy and People of *England*, and of many other places, inſo-

1529. inſomuch that it hath come to the Popes ears, who taking notice hereof, gave Commiſſion to thoſe Cardinals to hear and proceed in this buſineſs, according to the importance of it.

June 28. This being done, the Queen is cited a ſecond time to appear, which ſhe refuſing, is pronounc'd again Contumacious. This hindred not the Court yet to proceed, and appoint Doctor *Taylor*, Arch-Deacon of *Buckingham*, to examine the Witneſſes; while themſelves, calling for the Diſpenſations that were alledg'd in favour of

June 5. this Marriage, a certain *Bull* and *Breve* were exhibited, which I have thought fit to ſet down at length as they are extant in the ſame Record.

The *Bull* being *ſub plumbo, more Romanæ Curiæ*, was an original, but the *Breve* was only a Copy ſubſcrib'd and ſign'd with the hand of *Juan Vergara*, a Canon of *Toledo*, and publick Notary, *authoritate Apoſtolica*; and with the Seals of *Balthazar de Caſtiglione*, the Popes Nuncio, and the reverend Father in God *Alfonſus de Fonſeca*, Arch-Biſhop of *Toledo*.

The Bull.

JUlius Epiſcopus ſervus ſervorum Dei dilecto filio Henrico chariſſimi in Chriſto filii Henrici Angliæ Regis illuſtris nato, & dilectæ in Chriſto filiæ Catharinæ chariſſimi in Chriſto filii noſtri Ferdinandi Regis ac chariſſimæ in Chriſto filiæ noſtræ Elizabeth Reginæ Hiſpaniarum & Siciliæ Catholicorum natæ illuſtribus, Salutem & Apoſtolicam benedictionem. Romani Pontificis præcellens authoritas conceſſa ſibi deſuper utitur proteſtate, prout perſonarum negotiorum & temporum qualitate penſata id in domino conſpicit ſalubriter expedire. Oblatæ nobis nuper pro parte veſtra petitionis ſeries continebat, Quod cum alias tu filia Catharina, & tunc in humanis agens quondam Arthurus chariſſimi in Chriſto filii noſtri Henrici Angliæ Regis illuſtriſſimi primogenitus, pro conſervandis pacis & amicitiæ nexibus & fœderibus inter chariſſimum in Chriſto filium noſtrum Ferdinandum, & chariſſimam in Chriſto filiam noſtram Eliz. Hiſpaniarum & Siciliæ Catholicos ac præfatum Angliæ Regis & Reginam, matrimonium per verba legitime de præſenti contraxiſſetis illudq; carnali copula forſan conſummaviſſetis, Dominus Arthurus prole ex hujusmodi matrimonio non ſuſcepta deceſſit, Cum autem ſicut eadem

dem petitio ſubjungebat, ad hoc ut hujuſmodi vinculum pacis & amicitiæ inter præfatos Reges & Reginam diutius permaneat, cupiatis matrimonium inter vos per verba legitime de præſenti contrahere, ſupplicari nobis feciſtis, ut vobis in præmiſſis de opportunæ Diſpenſationis gratia providere de benignitate Apoſtolica dignaremur; Nos igitur, qui inter ſingulos Chriſti fideles, præſertim Catholicos Reges & principes, pacis & concordiæ amœnitatem vigere intenſis deſideriis affectamus, voſq; & quemlibet veſtrum à quibuſcunq; excommunicationis ſuſpenſionis & interdict. aliiſq; Eccleſiaſticis ſententiis, cenſuris & pœnis, à jure vel ab homine, quavis occaſione vel cauſa, latis, ſi quibus quomodolibet innodati exiſtitis, ad effectum præſentium duntaxat conſequendum, harum ſerie abſolventes, & abſolutos fore cenſentes, hujuſmodi ſupplicationibus inclinati, vobiſcum, ut impedimento affinitatis hujuſmodi ex præmiſſis proveniente, ac conſtitutionibus & ordinationibus Apoſtolicis cæteriſq; contrariis nequaquam obſtantibus, Matrimonium per verba legitime de præſenti inter vos contrahere, & in eo, poſtquam contractum fuerit, etiamſi jam forſan hactenus de facto publice vel clandeſtine contraxeritis, ac illud carnali copula conſummaveritis, licite remanere valeatis, authoritate Apoſtolica tenore præſentium de ſpecialis dono gratiæ diſpenſamus, ac vos & quemlibet veſtrum, ſi contraxeritis (ut præfertur) ab exceſſu hujuſmodi ac excommunicationis ſententia quam propterea incurriſtis, eadem authoritate abſolvimus, Prolem ex hujuſmodi matrimonio ſive contracto ſive contrahendo ſuſceptam forſan vel ſuſcipiendam legitimam decernendo. Proviſo quod tu (filia Catharina) propter hoc rapta non fueris; volumus autem quod ſi hujuſmodi matrimonium de facto contraxiſtis, Confeſſor, per vos & quemlibet veſtrum eligend⁹, pœnitentiam ſalutarem propterea vobis injungat, quam adimplere teneamini. Nihil ergo omnino hominum liceat hanc paginam noſtræ abſolutionis diſpenſationis & voluntatis infringere, vel ei auſu temerario contraire, ſi quis autem hoc attentare præſumpſerit,

1529.

1529. rit, Indignationem omnipotentis Dei, ac beatorum Petri & Pauli Apoſtolorum ejus ſe noverit incurſurum. Dat. Romæ apud Sanctum Petrum, anno Incarnationis Dominicæ Milleſimo Quingenteſimo tertio. Septim. Cal. Januarii, Pontificatus noſtri anno primo.

The Breve, together with the aſſeverations of thoſe who ſubſcribed it.

NOs Balthazar de Caſtiglione Mantuan. Apoſtolicæ ſedis Notarius, in Hiſpaniarum Regnis, terriſq; & locis temporali dominio Sereniſſimorum Principum Caroli in Imperatorem electi & Johannæ Regis & Reginæ Catholicorum Subjectis ejuſdem ſedis Nuncius, & Alfonſus de Fonſeca miſeratione dominica Archiepiſcopus Toletan. Hiſpaniarum Primas, ac Regnorum Caſtell. Archicancellarius, Univerſis & ſingulis ad quos præſentes literæ pervenerint, & quos noſſe fuerit opportunum, Salutem in Domino. Noveritis, quod literas quondam Sanctiſſimi in Chriſto patris ſe. re. Julii Papæ ſecundi in forma Brevis ſub annulo Piſcatoris, ſanas & integras, non viciatas, non cancellatas, nec aliqua parte ſui ſuſpectas, ſed omni prorſus vitio & ſuſpicione carentes, pro parte Sa. Cæſ. & Catholicæ Majeſtatis Caroli divina favente Clementia E. Ro. Imperatoris, & in ejus præſentia nobis præſentatas cum ea qua decuit reverentia recepimus. Quarum quidem literarum tenor erat in exteriori ſupraſcriptione talis. Dilecto filio Henrico, chariſſimi in Chriſto filii noſtri Henrici Angliæ Regis Illuſt. nat. Illuſt. & dilect. in Chriſto fil. Cathar. chariſſimi etiam in Chriſto filii noſtri Ferdinandi & char. in Chriſto filiæ noſtræ Elizabeth Reginæ Hiſpaniarum & Siciliæ Catholicorum natæ Illuſt. Interius vero talis.

Julius Papa ſecundus Dilecte fili & dilecta in Chriſto filia, Salutem & Apoſtolicam bendictionem. Romani Pontificis præcellens authoritas conceſſa ſibi deſuper utitur poteſtate, prout (perſonarum negotiorū & temporū qualitate penſata) id in Domino conſpicit ſalubriter expedire. Oblatæ nobis nuper

nuper pro parte veſtra petitionis ſeries continebat, quod cum alias tu filia Catharina, & tunc in humanis agens quondam Arthurus Chariſſimi in Chriſto filii noſtri Henrici Angliæ Regis Illuſtriſ. primogenitus, pro conſervandis pacis & amicitiæ nexibus & fœderibus inter præfatum Angliæ & Chariſſimum in Chriſto filium noſtrum Ferdinandum Regem & Chariſſimam in Chriſto filiam noſtram Elizabeth Reginam Catholicos Hiſpaniarum & Siciliæ, matrimonium per verba legitime de preſenti contraxeritis, illudq; carnali copula conſummaveritis, quia tamen dominus Arthurus, prole ex hujuſmodi matrimonio non ſuſcepta, deceſſit, & hujuſmodi vinculum pacis & connexitatis inter præfatos Reges & Reginam ita firmiter veriſimiliter non perduraret, niſi etiam illud alio affinitatis vinculo confoveretur & confirmaretur: ex his, & certis aliis cauſis, deſideratis matrimonium inter vos per verba legitime de præſenti contrahere: Sed quia deſiderium veſtrum in præmiſſis adimplere non poteſtis, diſpenſatione Apoſtolica deſuper non obtenta, Nobis propterea humiliter ſupplicari feciſtis, ut vobis providere in præmiſſis de diſpenſationis gratia & benignitate Apoſtolica dignaremur. Nos igitur qui inter ſingulos Chriſti fideles, præſertim catholicos Reges & Principes; pacis & concordiæ amœnitatem vigere intenſis deſideriis affectamus, his & aliis cauſis animum noſtrum moventibus, hujuſmodi ſupplicationibus inclinati, vobiſcum, ut aliquo impedimento affinitatis hujuſmodi ex præmiſſis proveniente non obſtant. matrimonium inter vos contrahere, & in eo, poſtquam contractum fuerit, remanere libere & licite valeatis, authoritate Apoſtolica per præſentes diſpenſamus: &, quatenus forſan jam matrimonium inter vos de facto publice vel clandeſtine contraxeritis, ac carnali copula conſummaveritis, vos & quemlibet veſtrum ab exceſſu hujuſmodi excommunicationis ſententia quam propterea Incurri-ſtis, eadem authoritate abſolvimus, ac etiam vobiſcum utin hujuſmodi matrimonio ſic de facto contracto remanere, ſeu illud de novo contrahere inter vos libere & licite valeatis, ſimili- 1529.

1529. similiter diſpenſamus, Prolem ex hujuſmodi matrimonio ſive contracto ſive contrahendo ſuſcipiendam legitimam decernend. volumus autem, ſi hujuſmodi matrimonium de facto contraxiſtis, Confeſſor, per vos & quemlibet veſtrum eligendus, pœnitentiam, quam adimplere teneamini, propterea vobis injungat. Dat. Romæ apud Sanctum Petrum ſub annulo Piſcatoris, die xxvi. Decemb. Milleſimo Quingenteſimo tertio. Pont. noſtri Anno primo.

Decemb. 26. 1503.

Sigiſmundus.

Quibus quidem literis diligenter per nos Balthazarem de Caſtiglione tanquam nuncium Apoſtolicum, & Alfonſum de Fonſeca tanquam loci ordinarium, inſpectis, & perlectis, Quia eas ſanas & integras, ac omni prorſus vitio & ſuſpitione, (ut præmittitur) carentes Invenimus, Ideo, ad requiſitionem expreſſam præfat. Cæſar. & Catholicæ Majeſtatis, tam ſuo quam conjunctorio nomine Sereniſſimæ Dominæ Catharinæ Reginæ Angliæ ſuæ chariſſimæ materteræ & conſanguineæ, aſſerent. ipſius requirent. & prædict. Reginæ intereſſe, ob æternitatis memoriam, & ne vetuſtate prædictum originale depereat, utq; de illius tenore ubi opus fuerit edoceri poſſit, & in locis in quibus, ob bellorum viarumq; diſcrimina, non liceat tuto ipſum originali diſpenſationis tranſmittere aut committere, ejuſdem Majeſtatis requiſitioni, tanquam juſtæ & rationabili, annuentes, eaſdem literas exemplari & tranſumi ac in publicam formam redigi mandavimus; decernentes & volentes ut huic præſenti tranſumpto publico plena fides deinceps adhibeatur, in locis omnibus ubi fuerit oportunum, perinde acſi originales ipſæ literæ exhiberentur. Quibus omnibus uterq; noſtrum authoritatem noſtram interpoſuimus, & decretum. Et, ad ampliorem evidentiam præmiſſorum, preſens inſtrumentum manu noſtra uterq; ſignavimus, Idemq; Sigillorum noſtrorum Juſſimus appenſione communire. Dat. Toleti die duodecima Decemb. Anno à Nativitate domini Milleſimo Quingenteſimo xxviii. Præſentibus ibidem illuſtribus & generoſis viris, Dominis Henrico comite a Naſſau, Marchione de Zenete camerario ſupremo, Don. Johanne Manuele

Manule, Don Laurentio de Gorreudo comite Pontisvallium Militibus velleris aurei, Carolo de Popeto Domino de la Chaulx, Lodovico à Flandria Domino de Prato, & Nicolao Perrenot Domino de Grande villa, omnibus consiliariis prædictæ sacræ Cæs. & Catholicæ Majestatis testibus ad præmissa vocatis specialiter atq; rogatis. Balthazar de Castilione nuncius & Collector Apostolicus. A. Toletan. Et ego Johannes Vergara Canoncius Toletan. in sacra Theologia magister, publicus Apostolica authoritate notarius, Qui præmissis omnibus, una cum prænominatis testibus interfui; hoc publicum instrumentum signavi, & subscripsi, in testimonium veritatis, per eandem Cæs. Catholicam Majestatem rogatus & requisitus. 1529.

Against these Dispensations the following Objections were used. July 9.

I. THat the Peace and Unity betwixt *England* and *Spain* was firm before the granting of the Dispensation, which yet was alledged as a Cause.

II. That the said Dispensation, as being grounded on this pretext, must be held surreptitious, *Henry*, 8. being then not above thirteen and consequently unable for Marriage, which also if the Pope had known before-hand, or that otherwise it had been represented to him, he would not have easily granted any such Dispensation.

III. Because it was pretended that *Henry* 8. had desired the Match only for maintaining Peace betwixt the two Kingdoms; whereas (being then not above thirteen) he must be thought uncapable of such thoughts.

IV. That though this Dispensation might once be thought to have his force and vertue, yet seeing the motive of granting it was grounded upon the above-mentioned Peace, and that one of the said Princes died before the solemnizing of the said Marriage, the cause of the Dispensation must be held void.

V. That, supposing the objection of Affinity were taken away by virtue of the said Dispensation, yet the objection *de publica honestate* was not cleared.

VI. That the *Breve* above-mentioned appears by the Tenor of it to contain many falshoods and suspitions, and particularly that the style, inditing, as also many clauses and circumstances differ from the *Bull*, so that it may be thought forged since the time of the questions moved concerning this Matrimony; as by comparing them together may be manifestly gathered.

This

1529. This alſo was urged by theſe reaſons;

1. That, in the Regiſter Book of the Breves at *Rome*, no ſuch Breve is found, or any Argument that ſuch a Breve was made.

2. That, likewiſe, neither in the *Chartophylacio* or Paper-Chamber of the King, no ſuch Breve is extant, nor otherways, in the private treaties of the Marriage, any mention is made thereof.

3. That, in the date of the ſaid Breve, as it is exemplified, the year of our Lord is diſcrepant from the vulgar account; for whereas the ſtyle of the Court of *Rome* begins always from the Nativity of our Lord, this ſeems to be a year before *Julius* was made Pope.

July 12. All which objections were delivered to the Kings Proctor, that he might anſwer to them.

Whereupon Witneſſes being ſummon'd to appear *July* 12.

Thomas Duke of *Norfolk*,	*Rober* Viſcount *Fitz-water*,
Charles Duke of *Suffolk*,	*John* Biſhop of *Carlile*,
Thomas Marquis *Dorſet*,	Sir *David Owen*,
George Earl of *Shrewsbury*,	Sir *John Huſſey*,
Thomas Viſcount *Rochfort*,	Sir *Richard Weſton*, Knights,

with divers others, preſented themſelves to be examined by the Arch-Deacon of *Buckingham*, above-mentioned.

July 14. In the mean-while, theſe two Articles were added to the former, as ſerving to ſtrengthen the Objections above-mentioned.

1. That the year for Popes Breves begins *December* 26. and the year for Bulls 25th. of *March*.

2. That, in all Marriages contracted within the Kingdom of *England*, the form hath been in words, *De præſenti, ego accipio te, &c.*

Buſineſſes being thus ripe for examination of Witneſſes, the Depoſitions of two ancient Ladies, who excuſ'd themſelves by their infirmity from appearing in perſon, were publickly read.

July 19. 1. The firſt, being *Mary* Counteſs of *Eſſex*, ſaid little, but in general terms.

2. But *Agnes* the old Dutcheſs of *Norfolk*, who was preſented at the Marriage at St. *Pauls* in *London*, declared the age of Prince *Arthur* at the time of his ſaid Marriage, to be about fifteen; and moreover, did poſitively affirm, that ſhe ſaw Prince *Arthur*, and the Lady *Katharine*, alone, in bed together, the next night after their Marriage. Which therefore, as alſo a following Depoſition of the Viſcounteſs *Fitz-water*, may ſerve to anſwer *Saunders* his tale, where he ſaith, a grave Matron was put into the ſame bed with him, to hinder the Prince from knowing her Carnally.

Sand. de Schiſm. Ang.

3. *George* Earl of *Shrewsbury* depoſ'd, the Marriage was celebrated at St. *Pauls*, *Decimo ſeptimo Henrici Septimi*, 1501. adding further, that Prince *Arthur* was born at *Wincheſter*, *ſecundo Henrici ſeptimi*: and that he believ'd the Prince knew his Lady carnally, both as being able ſo to do, as alſo becauſe himſelf knew his Wife being not ſixteen.

4. *William*

4. *William Warham*, Arch-Biſhop of *Canterbury*, being examined, proteſts, not to reveal any Secrets of the Queen, as being her ſworn Counſellor. For the reſt, as he anſwered warily to the queſtions propounded him concerning the validity of the Match, inſomuch that he refer'd himſelf therein to the Judges, who were to determine it; ſo yet he made no difficulty to confeſs that he approv'd it not at firſt; which alſo he declar'd, not only in a Conteſtation which he had with *Richard Fox*, Biſhop of *Wincheſter*, who perſwaded it, but in certain words to King *Henry* the Seventh himſelf, whom he told plainly, that the Marriage ſeem'd to him neither honourable, nor well pleaſing to God. Adding further, that becauſe the ſaid King *Henry* 7. appear'd not much inclin'd to the Marriage, that he the ſaid Deponent intreated him to perſwade his Son Prince *Henry*, to proteſt that he would not take the Lady *Katharine* to Wife, and that he ſhould renew this Proteſtation when he came to the Crown; which alſo he the ſaid deponent believeth was made. Notwithſtanding, that when the Bull of Diſpenſation was granted, that he the ſaid Deponent contradicted it no more; and that the murmuring of the people on that occaſion was quieted, till the Kings Conſcience being troubled, revived it again. 1529.

5. Sir *William Thomas*, Knight, depoſed Prince *Arthur*, and the Lady *Katharine* lived five months, partly about *London*, and partly at *Ludlow*, in houſhold together as man and wife; and that he heard Sr. *William Wodal*, who was at the Princes Chriſtning, ſay, that he was above fifteen, at the time of his Marriage, and the Lady *Katharine* elder.

6. Sir *Anthony Poynes*, Knight, depoſed, that Prince *Arthur* was above fifteen at the time of his Marriage.

7. *Thomas* Marquis *Dorſet* depoſed, he ſaw a Regiſter of the Nativity of the Kings Children; by which he found the Prince *Arthur* born the 20 *September* 1486. and, that at the time of his Marriage (which was upon a Sunday, in *November*, *Decimo Septimo Henrici ſeptimi*,) He was of a good and Sanguine complexion, and able as he ſuppos'd, for that purpoſe. 1501.

8. *Robert* Viſcount *Fitz-water* depos'd, the Prince was then about fifteen, and Queen *Katharine* elder, and that, the next day after being in bed together, (which he remembred, after they entred to have been ſolemnly bleſs'd) he waited at breakfaſt on Prince *Arthur*, where *Maurice* St. *Johns* did carve, and he the Lord *Fitzwater* gave drink: at which time the ſaid *Maurice* demanding of the Prince how he had done that night? the Prince anſwered, I have been in *Spain* this night.

9, 10, 11. *Thomas* Lord *Darcy*, *William* Lord *Montejoy*, and *Henry Guldeford*, Knight of the Garter, ſaid little, but by way of publick report.

12. *Charles* Duke of *Suffolk* depoſed, that he was in the Biſhop of *London*'s Pallace, the morrow next following the day of Marriage, and that he waited there upon the Prince at Breakfaſt, confirming more-

1529. moreover in effect, the words of *Maurice St. John*, before set down. Furthermore, he added that the Shrovetide following the Marriage, (which was in *November* preceding) the said Prince began to decay, and grow feeble in body; which grew, as the said *S. John* related, by reason the said Prince lay with the Lady *Katharine*.

13. *David Owen* deposed, that Prince *Arthur* was born at *Wincheſter, ſecundo Henrici Septimi*; which he knew, becauſe he was at the Chriſtning.

14. *Thomas* Duke of *Norfolk*, Lord Treaſurer of *England*, depoſed, that he being the day of the Marriage in the Biſhop of *London*'s Palace, and the morrow after, at the Prince's Breakfaſt, heard the Prince's words to *Maurice S. John*, when he ſaid he had been that night in the midſt of *Spain*; by which words, as alſo becauſe Prince *Arthur* was a Gentleman of a good Complexion, and nature, and above fifteen, he believes that he carnally knew his Lady; becauſe himſelf alſo at the ſame age did carnally know and uſe; and he believes this the rather, that he heard from Credible perſons, that the ſaid Prince *Arthur* did lie with the ſaid Lady *Katharine* five or ſix nights afterwards.

15. *Anthony Willoughby*, Knight, depoſed, that being, the morrow after the Marriage, in the Princes Privy Chamber, the ſaid Prince ſpake afore divers Witneſſes theſe words, *Willoughby*, give me a cup of Ale, for I have been this night in the midſt of *Spain*; After which he ſaid; Maſters, it is a good paſtime to have a Wife, which words he repeated alſo divers other times. Moreover, he heard ſay they lay at *Ludlow* together the Shrovetide next following.

16. *Nicholas* Biſhop of *Ely* ſaid, he could depoſe nothing concerning the *carnalis copula*, but that he doubted of it, becauſe the Queen often *ſub teſtimonio conſcientiæ ſuæ*, ſaid to this Deponent, that ſhe was never carnally known of Prince *Arthur*, though otherwiſe he muſt confeſs them both to be *legitimæ ætatis* at the time of their Marriage. He doubted further, whether the Cardinals were competent Judges, an appeal being made from them.

17. *Richard Sacheverel*, Knight, depoſed, the people ſaid commonly, that it was unfit one brother ſhould marry the other brothers Wife.

18. *Thomas* Viſcount *Rocheſort*, depoſed, that he heard divers of Prince *Arthur*'s followers confirm the words he uſed, of his having been in *Spain* the night of his Marriage. Moreover, he heard ſay, that King *Henry* viii. was perſwaded by his Confeſſor, about two years ſince, to abſtain from the bed of the Lady *Katharine*, leſt he ſhould offend his Conſcience.

19,20,21,22,23. Sir *Richard Weſton*, and Sir. *John Huſſey*, Knights, depoſ'd the age of King *Henry* the eighth was thirty eight upon the Eve of the Feaſt of S. *peter*, and S. *Paul* laſt; which Viſcount *Rochefort* alſo confirm'd, ſaying the place of his Birth was *Greenwich*, and the year was 1491. and day the twenty eighth of *June*; which

Robert

Robert Viſcount *Fitz-water* confirmed alſo, adding, that King *Henry* the Seventh died two days before the Feaſt of St. *George*, twenty years ſince; With whom *David Owen*, Servant and Counſellor to King *Henry* the Seventh, agreed, ſave only, that he ſaid it was three days before the Feaſt. 1529.

24. *Thomas* Duke of *Norfolk* depoſed, that *Pedro de Ayala* or *Allea*, and Doctor *de Puebla*, Embaſſadors from *Spain*, were much in favour heretofore with *Henry* the Seventh, and that *Henry* the Seventh died before the Marriage betwixt his Son Prince *Henry*, and the Princeſs *Katharine*, and Queen *Iſabel* or *Elizabeth* her Mother died alſo before that time.

25. *William Warham*, Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, and Counſellour to *Henry* the Seventh, and *Henry* the Eighth, for 36 years laſt paſt, depoſed, that he conceived *Henry* the Eighth to be under thirteen, at the time of Diſpenſation granted; becauſe King *Henry* his Father told him that he was *impubes*, after that time. Whereupon this Deponent replied to the King, that any Proteſtation he ſhould then make would be of no force, and therefore he ſhould make it again one or two days after his coming to *annos pubertatis*.

26, 27, *Charles* Duke of *Suffolk*, and *Thomas* Marqueſs *Dorſet*, examined again, ſaid little but what was formerly ſet down.

28. *Pedro Mates, Utriuſq; Juris Doctor*, Native of *Barcelona* in *Spain*, who had lived in the Court of *Rome* thirty years, *in exercitio cauſarum*, depoſed, that the date of years there is computed after three divers manners; So that Judgments, Contracts, and laſt Wills bear date from the Nativity 25. *Decembris*; *Literæ Apoſtolicæ ſub plumbo* xxv. of March; *Literæ Apoſtolicæ per Breve ſub annulo piſcatoris ceræ rubeæ impreſſo ſcribuntur ſimpliciter & abſolute abſque expreſſione ipſius domini aut Nativitatis, aut incarnationis, ſed ſolum Anno M.D.&c.* Yet ſo that he conceived it began always *à Nativitate, ſcilicet xxv. Decembris*, neither doth he know any thing to the contrary, except the Popes Secretary alter the ſtile.

29. *Nicolaus Ruſticus* of *Lucca* in *Italy*, ſaith, that *Annus Domini in Brevibus Apoſtolicis* is computed from the Nativity of our Lord.

30, 31, 32, 33, 34, 35, 36. *Thomas* Viſcount *Rochefort*, *Henry Guilford* Knight, *Thomas* Marqueſs *Dorſet*, *Thomas* Duke of *Norfolk*, *William Falke Notarius publicus*, *John Taverner*, and *John Clamport*, being examined, depoſed, that the forms of Marriages are always *in verbis de præſenti*, in *England*.

37. The Lady *Elizabeth*, Wife to Viſcount *Fitz-water*, depoſed that ſhe ſaw the Lady *Katherine* and Prince *Arthur* in bed together, which was bleſt, and that ſhe left them alone together.

Hereupon the Depoſitions were publiſhed, and the Kings Proctor ſummoned to receive thoſe Acts and Writings he delivered into the Court; but he not appearing, is pronounced Contumacious. July. 17.

The Commiſſioners yet proceeded to require the ſight of the *Archiva* and Record concerning this buſineſs, for which purpoſe

1529. *Thomas Wriotheſly*, and *Tomas Tong*, King of Arms, had been employed; Theſe men certified that Prince *Arthur* died in the Caſtle of *Ludlow* the ſecond of *April*, 1502. and that his Brother *Henry* was born the 28th. of *June* 1491. and that the Marriage betwixt Prince *Arthur* and the Lady *Katharine* was the 14th. of *November*, 1501.

1527. April 5, & 6. This being done, a Depoſition of *Richard Fox*, Biſhop of *Wincheſter*, taken by Doctor *Woolman*, *April* 5, and 6. 1527. was read. The moſt ſubſtantial part whereof was, that he conceived, Doctor *Puebla* did firſt motion this Match, and that more than one Bull was impetrated for diſpenſing therewith, whereof two remained in *England*, one or two were extant in *Spain*, but all of the ſame Tenor, and gotten without asking the conſent of *Henry* the Eighth. Furthermore, that he did not remember that *Henry* the Eighth, when he came to age, did expreſly conſent to, or diſſent from the intended Marriage, yet that he believed that a Proteſtation was made in the name of *Henry* the Eighth to this effect; That notwithſtanding any Contract or Tokens mutually ſent, or cohabitation in the houſe of King *Henry* VII. he would not hold himſelf bound to ratifie this Act done in his non-age; and that this Proteſtation is to be found *inter protocolla Magiſtri Ryden*, then Clerk to the Council, before whom it was made. As for the perſon by whom this Proteſtation was made, *Coram Magiſtro Ryden Notario publico; credit quod vel ipſemet, vel Magiſter Thomas Rutha tunc Secretarius domini Regis, & poſtea Epiſcopus Dunelm. vel Mr. Doctor Weſt tunc conſiliarius ejuſdem domini Regis & nunc Epiſcopus Eliens. fecit eandem proteſtationem nomine domini noſtri Regis Henrici Octavi moderni; præſentibus tunc ibidem Comite de Surrey tunc Theſaurario Angliæ & poſtea Duce Norfolciæ ac domino doctore Peohebla, & coram ſæpe-dicta clariſſima Domina Catharina, ut recolit, ac infra Ædes Epiſcopi Dunelm. vulgariter nuncupat.* Dureſme place. Adding further, that our King was not preſent there, that he remembers. Furthermore, that upon conference had betwixt *Henry* the Seventh and himſelf, he found it was the intention of that King, that his Son *Henry* ſhould marry the ſaid Lady *Katharine*, although he deferred the Solemnization of this intended Matrimony, by reaſon of ſome diſcord which was at that time betwixt him and the King of *Spain*, for the calling back of the Dowry. He added moreover, that King *Henry* intended not (that he knew) to marry the Mother of *Charles* the Fifth, but his Aunt *Margaret*, Dutcheſs of *Savoy*.

This Examination being compleat, and ſet down by *Andrew Smith* Notary, the ſaid Doctor *Woolman* required him to ſubſcribe his hand; which was refuſed by the ſaid Biſhop, both becauſe he was blind of both eyes, as that he was not admitted to take any Counſel or advice about it. But Doctor *Woolman* preſſing him on the Kings part, that he ſhould ſubſcribe his name, he at laſt aſſented, out of the Reverence he bore to the King, and that he never contravened him in any thing. Whereupon he ſubſcribed his name *April* 8. the year above

above mentioned, being 1527. After which also another Instrument of this Tenor was produced. 1529.

Augustus Spinola tt' Sancti Cyriaci in thermis presbiter Cardinalis, Sanctæ Romanæ Ecclesiæ Camerarius, Universis & singulis præsentes literas Inspecturis, Salutem in domino. Rationi convenit & congruit honestati, ut de his quæ à Romanis Pontificibus processerunt, & quæ in eorum archivis & registris scripta, & registrata sunt, cùm ab aliquibus petitur, testimonium veritatis perhibeatur; hinc est, quod nos Universitati vestræ tenore præsentium fidem faciamus & attestamur, in libris & Registris cameræ Apostolicæ, viz. in libro Registri Brevium Anni primi, secundi, & tertii felicis recordationis Julii Papæ secundi, vidimus & legimus quasdam literas Apostolicas, in forma Brevis ejusdem Julii Papæ secundi (ut moris est) Registratas, quarum tenor successive sequitur, & est talis. Charissimo in Christo filio nostro, Angliæ Regi illustri. Charissime in Christo fili noster, Salutem & Apostolicam benedictionem. Accepimus literas tuæ serenitatis, in quibus nobis gratias agis, quod Oratoribus tuis honorifice obviam proditum sit, quod nos eos benigne audierimus, ac liberali responso opportunisque gratiis & favoribus prosecuti fuerimus: facis (fili Charissime) pro solita pietate, ut ea etiam tibi sint grata, quæ à nobis præteriri non solent. Declaravimus nostris bonis in te mentis affectum verbis & rebus quibus potuimus, Declarabimus & quotidie magis, ita exigente tuæ serenitatis in nos & sanctam Apostolicam sedem devotione & observantia singulari. De dispensatione matrimoniali nunquam negavimus, nec ullam suspitionem præbuimus, quo minus eam facere vellemus, ut aliqui minus vere dixerunt. Sed respondimus, nos expectare in illa concedenda tempus magis accommodatum, ut consultius & maturius fieret, cum hujus sanctæ sedis & utriusque partis honore. Eam itaque cum expediverimus, ut deliberavimus, ad tuam serenitatem (magni enim momenti est) per dilectum filium Robertum Shirbonnen. Decanum sancti Pauli Londonienſ. unum ex oratoribus tuis, qui maxima doctrina modestiam, fidem, diligentiamque præ se tulit, mittere cogitamus; duplici ratione; Cum quod per eum secrete & tutissime perferretur, tum ut talem virum tantaque virtute & probitate præditum Serenitati tuæ diutius præservemus, ut ejus fide & opera diutius frui possit. Romæ enim sine vitæ periculo diutius esse not potest, propter aeris intemperiem & æstus Intolerabiles, &c. Dat, Romæ apud sanctum Petrum, VI. Julii, Millesimo Quingentesimo Quarto, Pontif. nostri primo. July 6. 1504.

The rest, having little material, save that mention is made how the Cardinal *Sancti Petri ad vincula*, the Popes Nephew, was made Protector of the *English*, I have purposely omitted, that I may insert another Letter of the Popes of 22 of *February*, 1505. the Tenor whereof is this:

Charissimo in Christo filio nostro Henrico Angliæ Regi illustriſ. Charissime in Christo fili noster, Salutem & Apostolicam benedict. Intelleximus à dilecto filio G. Cardinali Sancti Petri ad vincula tui Regnique tui protectore, nostro secundum carnem nepote, & à venerabili fratre nostro

1529. *Silveſtro Epiſcopo Wigorn. tuæ ſerenitatis apud nos oratore, literas diſpenſationis matrimonialis tantopere ab eis, nomine tuæ ſerenitatis, petitas, ex hiſpaniis ad te miſſas fuiſſe. Fili Chariſſime, nos diſpenſationem illam Inſtantibus Cardinali & Epiſcopo prædictis, tua potiſſimum contemplatione, conceſſimus, ac ſuper ea, ſub Bulla plumbea literas expediri fecimus, ut ad tuam ſerenitatem per Cardinalem & Epiſcopum antedictos ſtatuto tempore mitterentur. Sed cum claræ memoriæ Elizabeth Hiſpaniarum Regina Catholica finem hujus mortalis vitæ ſibi inſtare cerneret, impenſa & maximâ cum inſtantia per oratorem ſuum nobis humiliter ſupplicaſſet, ut pro conſolatione ſua duplum dictarum literarum ei concedere dignaremur, quod hanc conſolationem ſibi dare vellemus ut de hujuſmodi diſpenſatione certior facta æquiori animo ab ipſa vita migraret: Noſque pietatis Chriſtianæ & noſtræ in illam charitatis paternæ eſſe putavimus non defraudare ipſam Reginam jam-jam morituram deſiderio hujus rei, in qua etiam ſubditis & Regnicolis illis bonam ſpem conjunctionis tuæ ſerenitatis poſſet afferre, preſertim quod idem orator rem hanc ſecretam futuram pollicebatur, (quod ob eo non ſervatum moleſtiſſime ferimus) Bullam igitur Originalem apud nos ſervatam ſerenitati tuæ, una cum Enſe, quo te pro tua ſingulari virtute, & in ſanctam ſedem Apoſtolicam pietate donand. merito duximus, per eundem Epiſcopum Wigorn. nobis probatum & charum decrevimus mittere, à quo ſerenitas ipſa tua uberius intelliget cauſas ejuſdem Bullæ hactenus apud nos retentæ, & nonulla alia ſibi per nos commiſſa negotia. Nec miretur majeſtas tua, ſi de hac re nihil cum Ipſis Cardinali & oratore communicavimus, nunquam enim putavimus fore, ut ab oratore dictæ Reginæ deciperemur, & literæ diſpenſationis prædict. ad te ex Hiſpaniis mitterentur, quas ut ſolum Reginæ tam periculoſe ægrotanti pro ſolamine ſuo oſtenderentur duplicari conceſſeramus. Nam, præterquam tuæ ſerenitati de nobis & ſancta Romana Eccleſia benemeritæ gratificari cupimus, ipſis Cardinali & Epiſcopo oratori tuo meritam fidei & diligentiæ laudem in tuis negotiis promovendis dare debemus. Dat. Romæ apud Sanctum Petrum die vigeſima ſecunda Februarii, Anno Milleſimo Quingenteſimo quinto, Pont. noſtri Anno ſecundo.*

1505. Feb. 22.

And that theſe are true Copies, *Auguſtinus Spinola*, at the inſtance of King *Henry* the Eighth, and by the commandment of the Pope, did certifie under the hand and Seal of his Office the twenty ſeventh of *January*, 1529.

In ſequence whereof, the Commiſſioners took oath of the Kings of Arms, that the Copies they delivered were true, appointing further the next Wedneſday, *ad concludendum*. Upon which day (being 21. *July*) the Commiſſioners being ſate, *John Hughes*, Promoter, appeared before them, and ſignified that there is found a certain Proteſtation made by our King, when he came to ripe years, in the preſence of Notaries and Witneſſes, and ſubſcribed with the hand of the ſaid King (at that time Prince of *Wales*) and ſome Counſellors of King *Henry* the Seventh, which he ſaid were much to the purpoſe of the buſineſs then in queſtion. Whereupon the Commiſſioners received

July. 21.

ceived the ſaid Proteſtation *in præſentia dicti Magiſtri Ricardi Sampſon Procuratoris Regis, & in contumaciam Reginæ*; Commanding further, that it ſhould remain *penes acta ſua.* The Tenor of which Proteſtation is thus: 1529.

In Dei nomine Amen. Coram vobis Reverendo in Chriſto Patre & domino domino Ricardo Dei & Apoſtolicæ ſedis gratia Epiſcopo Wintonienſi, Ego Henricus Walliæ Princeps, Dux Cornubiæ, & Comes Ceſtriæ, dico allego & in his ſcriptis propono, Quod licet ego minorem ætatem agens & intra annos pubertatis notorie exiſtens, cum Sereniſſima domina Catharina Hiſpaniarum Regis filia, Matrimonium de facto contraxerim, qui quidem Contractus quamvis obſtante ipſa minore ætate mea de ſe jam Invalidus, Imperfectus, nullius efficaciæ aut vigoris extiterit; Quia tamen annis pubertatis & matura ætate mea jam ſupervenient, contractus ipſe per tacitum conſenſum, mutuam cohabitationem, munerum aut interſignium dationem ſeu receptionem, vel alium quemcunque modum Jure declaratum forſan exiſtimari ſeu videri poterit apparenter validatus aut confirmatus; Ea-propter, Ego Henricus Walliæ Princeps prædictus, jam proximus pubertati exiſtens, & annos pubertatis attingens, Proteſtor, quod non intendo eundem prætenſum contractum per quæcunque per me dicta ſeu dicenda, facta aut faciend. in aliquo approbare, validare, ſeu ratum habere; ſed nunc in præſenti, non vi, dolo, nec prece inductus, ſed ſponte & libere, nullo modo coactus, contra hujuſmodi contractum reclamo, & eidem diſſentio, voloque & omnino intendo ab eodem contractu matrimoniali prætenſo melioribus modo & forma quibus de jure melius validius aut efficacius potero vel poſſim penitus reſilire, & eidem expreſſe diſſentire, prout in præſenti contra eundem reclamo, & eidem diſſentio. Proteſtorque quod per nullum dictum, factum, actum, aut geſtum per me aut nomine meo per alium quemcunque quandocumque aut qualitercumque impoſterum faciendum, agendum, gerendum, aut explicandum, Volo aut intendo in præfatum contractum matrimonialem, aut in dictam dominam Catherinam tanquam ſponſam, aut uxorem meam conſentire. Super quibus vos omnes teſtimonium perhibere volo, requiro, rogo, atque obteſtor. Per me Henricum Walliæ Principem.

Lecta fuit & facta ſupraſcripta proteſtatio, per præfatum Sereniſſimum Principem Dominum Henricum, coram Reverendo in Chriſto patre & domino domino Ricardo permiſſione divina Winton. Epiſcopo, judicialiter pro tribunali ſedent. & me Notarium infra ſcriptum ad tunc præſentem in ejus actorum ſcribam in hac parte aſſumente, & teſtium infraſcriptorum præſentiis; Anno Domini 1505. *Indictione Octava, Pontificatus Sanctiſſimi in Chriſto patris & Domini noſtri Julii divina providentia eo nomine Papæ ſecundi Anno ſecundo, Menſis vero Junii die xxvii. quo die Dominus Sereniſſimus Princeps proximus pubertati, & annos pubertatis attingens erat, ut tunc ibidem aſſerebat, In quadam baſſa camera infra palatium Regium Richemondiæ, in parte occidentali ejuſdem palatii ſituat. Super quibus omnibus & ſingulis præfatus Sereniſſimus Princeps me Notarium præmemoratum Inſtrumentum conficere, & teſtes infra nominatos teſtimonium perhibere requiſivit Inſtanter, & Rogavit.* June 7. 1505.

In

1529. *In quorum omnium & ſingulorum fidem & teſtimonium, præfatus ſereniſſimus Princeps ſupra, & teſtes, ut præmittitur, rogati & requiſiti, ſua nomina propriis manibus infra ſcripſerunt. Ita eſt ut ſupra, quod ego Johannes Read manu & ſigno meo manuali atteſtor.*

Giles Daubney, C. Sommerſet,

Thomas Rowthale, Nicholas Weſt.

Henry Marny.

Among whom *Nicholas Weſt*, above-named, now Biſhop of *Ely*, in preſence of the Commiſſioners, acknowledged and confeſſed that this Proteſtation was ſubſcribed with his own hand. Whereupon the Commiſſioners, in *contumaciam Reginæ*, did, in the preſence of the above-mentioned Proctor, continue and Prorogue the Court, till Friday, next following, warning the ſaid Proctor alſo to be there.

July. 23. Upon which day, being the twenty third of *July*, the Court being ſet, the Promoter above-mentioned ſignified unto the Commiſſioners, that all that was requiſite for the inſtruction and information of their underſtanding and Conſciences, had been judicially propoſed and exhibited to them, and remained in their cuſtody, And that therefore this day was aſſigned, and appointed for concluding the buſineſs. Notwithſtanding becauſe Cardinal *Campejus* alledged and proteſted in *verbo veri Prelati*, that a certain general vacation, which he termed *Ferias generales meſſium & vindemiarum*, was obſerved in the Court of *Rome* every year, before the ſaid Friday; and becauſe he and his Colleague were bound to follow the ſtile of the ſaid Court in the Proceſs of the above-mentioned Cauſe; Therefore the ſaid Judges, in the preſence of the Kings Proctor, and in *contumaciam Reginæ*, did prorogue the concluſion of this buſineſs, until the Firſt of *October* next following, warning the Kings Proctor then to appear, and receive a concluſion of this buſineſs as ſhould be according to Juſtice. All which paſſed in the preſence of *Thomas* Duke of *Norfolk*, the Biſhop of *Ely*, and divers other perſons.

And thus much out of the Record formerly mentioned; which I have with more patticularity ſet down, that it is ſo rare and unuſual a caſe to find a Prince ſubmit himſelf, in his own Kingdom, to the Judgment of two perſons, whereof one was a ſuſpected ſtranger, the other in birth but of the meaneſt of his Subjects; and after all this, to receive no other Fruit hereof, but delay and inſatisfaction; as appears not only by this abrupt Diſmiſſion, but by a ſudden Advocation of the Cauſe, to the Pope, inhibiting further proceedings here (as will appear ſhortly after;) the conſequences whereof extended further yet than our King then thought, or the Pope could eaſily have imagined.

Theſe proceedings were ſubſcribed by the Notaries *William Clayburgh*, Doctor of both Laws, *Protonotarius Apoſtolicus*, *Florianus Montinus*,

Montinus, and *Richard Watkins*, who acknowledged the raſures, interlineations and lines in the Margin, together with the number of the leaves in the Parchment book (being 69.) To which alſo Letters teſtimonial from *Nicholas Wotton*, Doctor of the Laws, and the Biſhop of *Londons* Official, having the Seal of the Office, were annexed. After all which, a Diſpenſation, written by a later hand, and in looſe Paper, was found in the ſaid Book. Though that alone ſhould not have induced me to publiſh it, had I not ſeen it already printed in a Book called *Anti-Sanderus*, and met, in our Archives, ſome diſpatches that make it probable. 1529.

The Tenor of the Bull is this.

CLemens Epiſcopus Servus Servorum Dei, Chariſſimo in Chriſto filio noſtro Henrico Angliæ Regi Illuſtri, Fidei defenſori, Salutem & Apoſtolicam benedictionem. Exponi nobis nuper feciſti, quod alias tu & dilecta in Chriſto filia Catharina, relicta quondam *** fratris tui germani, non ignorantes vos primo affinitatis gradu invicem fore conjunctos, matrimonium per verba alias legitime de præſenti, nulla ſaltem canonica ſeu valida diſpenſatione deſuper obtenta, quamvis de facto contraxiſtis, illudq; Carnali copula conſummaſtis, ac prolem ex hujuſmodi matrimonio ſuſcepiſtis, excommunicationis ſententiam incurrendo: Et cum Majeſtas tua in hujuſmodi matrimonio abſq; peccato remanere nequeat, & ne diutius in hujuſmodi peccato & excommnicationis ſententia remaneat, deſideret ab hujuſmodi excommunicationis ſententia à judice Eccleſiaſtico competente abſolutionis beneficium obtinere, ac matrimonium ipſum nullum & invalidum fuiſſe, Tibiq; licere cum quacunq; alia muliere, alio non obſiſtente canonico, matrimonium contrahere, declari, & in eventum declarationis nullitatis matrimonii hujuſmodi tecum diſpenſari, ut cum quacunque alia muliere, etiam ſi illa talis ſit, quæ alias cum alio matrimonium contraxerit, dummodo illud carnali copula non conſummaverit, etiam ſi tibi alias ſecundo vel remotiori conſanguinitatis, aut primo affinitatis gradu ex quocunque licito ſeu illicito coitu conjuncta, dummodo Relicta dicti fratris tui non fuerit, ac etiam ſi cognitione ſpirituali vel legali tibi conjuncta extiterit, & impedimentum publicæ honeſtatis juſtitiæ ſubſiſtat

1529. ſiſtat, matrimonium licite contrahere, & in eo libere remanere, & ex eo prolem legitimam ſuſcipere poſſis. Quare pro parte tui, aſſerentis ex antiquis Chronicis Regni conſtare, in ipſo Regno quamplura graviſſima bella ſæpe exorta, & Chriſtianam pacem & concordiam violatam fuiſſe, propter impios homines ſua deteſtanda regnandi & dominandi libidine excitatos, confingentes ex juſtis & legitimis quorundam progenitorum & anteceſſorum tuorum Angliæ Regum nuptiis procreatos illegitimos fore propter aliquod conſanguinitatis vel affinitatis confictum impedimentum, & propterea inhabiles eſſe ad Regni ſucceſſionem, inde miſerandam Principum ac Procerum & populorum ſubditorum ſtragem ſecutam fuiſſe; Nobis fuit humiliter ſupplicatum, ut Regni tui tuorumque Subditorum tranquillitati & paci inprimis conſulere & tantis malis obviare, ac alias in præmiſſis, opportuna remedia adhibere de benignitate Apoſtolica dignaremur. Nos qui omnium Regum, præſertim majeſtatis tuæ ob ejus quamplura immenſa in nos & hanc ſanctam ſedem, in qua permiſſione divina ſedemus, collata beneficia, dum ab iniquiſſimis peſtilentiſſimorum hominum conatibus, qui eam, partim viribus & ſcelerata audacia, partim perverſa doctrina labefactare moliebantur, ſtrenuiſſime cum viribus & gladio tum calamo & eruditione tua vindicare indies non ceſſat, petitiones, præſertim ſalutem animarum concernentes, quantum cum Deo poſſumus, ad exauditionis gratiam libenter admittimus, eorumq; honeſtis votis favorabiliter annuimus, ex præmiſſis & nonnullis aliis cauſis nobis notis, hujuſmodi ſupplicationibus inclinati, tecum ut ſi contingat matrimonium cum præfata Catharina alias contractum nullum fuiſſe & eſſe declarari, teq; ab illius vinculo legitime abſolvi, cum quacunque muliere, ipſaque mulier tecum, dummodo à te propter hoc rapta non fuerit, etiamſi mulier ipſa talis ſit, quæ prius cum alio matrimonium contraxerit, dummodo illud carnali copula non fuerit conſummatum, etiamſi illa tibi alias ſecundo aut remotiori Conſanguinitatis, aut primo Affinitatis gradu, etiam ex quocunque licito vel illicito coitu proveniente,

proveniente, invicem conjuncta, dummodo relicta dicti fratris tui non fuerit, ut præfertur, etiamſi cognationis ſpiritualis aut legalis & publicæ honeſtatis juſtitiæ impedimentum ſubſiſtat & tibi conjuncta exiſtat, matrimonium licite contrahere, Et poſtquam contractum fuerit, in eo ſic contracto, etiamſi illud inter te & ipſam mulierem jam de facto publice vel clandeſtine contractum & carnali copula conſummatum fuerit, licite remanere valeatis, authoritate Apoſtolica & ex certa noſtra ſcientia & de Apoſtolicæ poteſtatis plenitudine, tenore præſentium diſpenſamus, prolem inde forſan ſuſceptam & ſuſpiciendam legitimam fore decernentes. Non obſtantibus prohibitionibus Juris Divini, ac conſtitutionibus & ordinationibus aliis quibuſcunque in contrarium editis, quibus, in quantum Apoſtolica authoritas ſe extendit, illis alias in ſuo robore permanſuris, quoad hoc ſpecialiter & expreſſe derogamus. Diſtrictius inhibentes & in virtute ſanctæ obedientiæ expreſſe mandantes, ſub interminatione divini judicii, ac ſub pœna anathematis, aliiſque Eccleſiaſticis ſententiis, cenſuris, & pœnis, quas ex nunc prout ex tunc & è converſo ferimus & promulgamus, in his ſcriptis, ne quiſquam impoſterum ullum impedimentum pro contractus Matrimonialis non conſummati, Conſanguinitatis in ſecundo aut ulteriori gradu, Affinitatis primo ut præfertur, cognationis ſpiritualis aut legalis ſeu juſtitiæ publicæ honeſtatis impedimentis prædictis adverſum liberos tuos quos ex quocunque Matrimonio vigore præſentium contrahendo Dei benignitate ſuſceperis palam vel occulte in judicio vel extra illud allegare, proponere, aut objicere, ſeu verbo vel facto diffamare præſumat, aut quocunque modo attentet. Nulli ergo omnino hominum liceat hanc paginam noſtræ Diſpenſationis, Decreti, Derogationis, Inhibitionis, & Mandati infringere vel ei auſu temerario contraire. Si quis autem hoc attentare præſumpſerit, indignationem omnipotentis Dei, ac beatorum Petri & Pauli Apoſtolorum ejus ſe noverit incurſurum.

1529.

1529. 1527. ſurum. Dat. in Civitate noſtra Urbevetan. Anno Incarnationis Dominicæ Milleſimo quingenteſimo viceſimo ſeptimo. Decimo ſexto Cal. Januarii. Pont. noſtri Anno quinto.

While theſe things paſſed thus in *England*, the Queen found means to inform the Lady *Margaret*, Regent of the *Low-Countries*, of the whole Proceſs, who thereupon ſends word of it to *Charles* and *Ferdinand*, intreating them to aſſiſt their Aunt; which they accorded, diſpatching their Orators to the Pope, whom alſo the Queen conſtituted her Proctors in the Court of *Rome*; giving them Commiſſion to tender to the Pope a Copy of the Bull, Breve, and her Declaration that ſhe was never carnally known by Prince *Arthur*. Shortly after July. which, the ſaid Orators in the Queens name, made a Proteſtation againſt the two Legates now in *England* (every page ſubſcribed with Queen *Katharines* own hand) intreating the Pope to advoke the Cauſe, to annul the proceedings in *England*, to warn the King to deſiſt his Suit, or at leaſt to try it at *Rome*, &c. or, otherwiſe that they would ſeek their Remedies elſewhere. The Pope being thus preſſed at *Rome*, and having now concluded the Treaty with the Emperour at *Barcellona*, *July* the third, 1529. about three Weeks before the July 3. Cauſe was prorogued by *Campejus*, could no longer, either with the Safety of his Perſon or Dignity, favour our King; ſo that what Excuſes ſoever (in the frequent Diſpatches he made about this time) were given to our King, yet were they little more than Complement and Evaſion, till, finally, declaring himſelf more openly for the Emperour, he ſigned an Advocation of the Cauſe to himſelf, inhibiting July 15. further Proceedings under great Penalties. And herein (as our Agents did obſerve) the Popes principal Miniſters did not a little concur; that the benefit of deciding thereof might fall upon them. In vain therefore did our Agents (being Sir *Gregory Caſalis* and Doctor *Bennet*) both by repreſenting the defection of our King from the *Roman* See, and the Ruine of the Cardinal of *York*, labour to ſtay theſe Proceedings. For the Inhibition was brought into *England*, about the Sept. beginning of *September*, the King then being in his Progreſs; and becauſe it was ſent to the Queen to make her benefit of it, the King (by *Stephen Gardiner* now his Secretary) ſends to *Woolſey*, to perſuade the Queen to let this Inhibition (or as he calls it a Citatory Letter) ſleep, it containing matter prejudicial to his Perſon, and not to be publiſhed to his Subjects: And that it will be ſufficient for the Ceſſation of the Proceſs that the Pope by Letter to *Woolſey* (*July* 19.) hath ſignified his Advocation of the Cauſe. Nevertheleſs, if the Queen will July. 19. needs have the Inhibition executed, then that it ſhould be privily executed upon the two Legates, (rather than be divulged in *Flanders*;) which it ſeems was done accordingly. Howbeing, ſhortly after the Advocation was granted, the Pope, conceiving that the Cenſures and Penalties

Penalties mentioned in the Inhibition would not be well taken by our Kind, diſpatched a Breve to him of *Auguſt* 29. which for the better ſatisfaction of the Reader, I have thought fit to tranſcribe out of the Original and inſert here. 1529. Aug. 29.

Angliæ Regi.

CHariſſime in Chriſto Fili noſter, ſalutem,&c. Dudum vertente Cauſa inter Serenitatem Tuam & Chariſſimam in Chriſto Filiam noſtram Catharinam Angliæ Reginam Illuſtriſſimam,de & ſuper fœdere Matrimonii; nos, inſtantibus apud nos Oratoribus tuis, cauſam ipſam, Dilectis filiis Thoma Sanctæ Ceciliæ, & Laurentio Sanctæ Mariæ in Tranſtiberim tt' Presbyteris Cardinalibus noſtris & Apoſtolicæ ſedis Legatis de latere commiſimus, in qua ad nonnullos forſan actus proceſſum eſt; Poſtmodum, Chariſſimo in Chriſto filio noſtro Carolo Hiſpaniarum Rege Catholico in Imperatorem electo,& Regina ipſa ad nos reclamantibus,& aliis etiam legitimis cauſis animum noſtrum moventibus,cauſam ipſam ad nos advocavimus,& eam audiendam, ac nobis & ſacro venerabilium Fratrum noſtrorum S. R. E. Cardinalium Collegio referendam atque decidendam commiſimus; In qua ad Inhibitionem fortaſſe proceſſum eſt. Cum autem nuper acceperimus Inhibitionem ipſam ſub cenſuris & pœnis fuiſſe factam; Nos, quorum intentionis nunquam fuit neq; eſt perſonam tuam de nobis ac de Apoſtolica ſede ſemper optime meritam aliquibus cenſuris & pœnis quomodolibet innodari; Celſitudini tuæ ſignificamus, cenſuras ipſas præter mentem & intentionem noſtram à Judice ſive Commiſſario emanaſſe: Et propterea cenſuras & pœnas prædictas, quoad perſonam tuam,nullas nulliuſque roboris vel momenti fuiſſe & eſſe decernentes. Cauſam verò ipſam uſque ad feſtum nativitatis Domini noſtri Jeſu Chriſti proxime futurum jam ſuſpendimus, prout per præſentes ſuſpenſam eſſe volumus. Fecimuſque in illa, quantum pro noſtra in te charitate, cum Deo facere licuit, ut, quum pro ſtimulo conſcientiæ cauſam te moviſſe

1529. cognoſcimus, illam, quæ tanti eſt, eadem quoque ratione altius cogitando, poſthabitis moleſtiis atq; odiis quæ naſcuntur ex litibus, cum animi tui pace componere poſſis. In quo nos adjutores ſemper habiturus es, Majeſtatem T. hortantes in Domino ut interim Reginam ipſam pro ipſius Conſcientiæ tuæ Securitate maritali affectione tractare non deſinas, quemadmodum Celſitudinem Tuam pro virtute ſua facturam confidimus. Dat. Romæ die 29. Auguſti, 1529. Anno 6.

Before yet theſe Breves were ſent, the Pope, wiſely conſidering that by the diligence of our Agents, not only the firſt Minutes of them were ſent to *England*, but alſo that his Treaty with the Emperour was more notorious than that it could be hidden, thought fit to advertiſe our July 18. Cardinal, That the League betwixt him and the Emperour was made, *pro temporum ratione & rerum Chriſtianarum utilitate*; exhorting him therefore to do him good offices with the King, which alſo he explicated in another diſpatch, *Sep.* 23; wiſhing that Aid might be ſent againſt Sept. 23. the *Turk*. All which being contrary to the Kings preſent deſigns, could not upon what terms ſoever be repreſented, without much offence, and ill conceit of Cardinal *Woolſey*. The King believing that underhand he held Intelligence with the Pope, to the prejudice of his Affairs. Which *Polyd. Virg.* alſo affirmeth; ſaying, that he writ privately to the Pope to ſuſpend the Cauſe, till they could bring the King to ſome better temper. This alſo I believe was confirmed in the Kings mind, by ſome notice he might have of a joynt Diſpatch (a Minute whereof is extant in our Records) from *Woolſey* and *Campejus*, during their Seſſion, whereby they deſired the Pope to avoke the Cauſe, in caſe it grew ſo doubtful that they could not determine it; both as they would be free from the trouble and danger, and as they conceived, he might better help the King *ex plenitudine poteſtatis*; who perchance (as they ſaid) would be content therewith, if the Pope would promiſe to end the matter, ſhortly afterwards to his ſatisfaction. But as this was, in part, done without our Kings knowledge, and that, for the reſt, it left the buſineſs in more perplexity and irreſolution than ever; So the King, who (I find by *Cavendiſh*) had recovered ſomething under the *Cavendiſh* Life of Card. *Woolſey*. Cardinals hand, which he urged againſt him, began to frown; whereof alſo the Courtiers took that notice, as now his Fall was voiced every where. Though yet it was not in that Precipice, but that the King admitted him ſtill to no ſmall degrees of his wonted Acceſs and Favour. Howbeit, as the Cardinal was now in his Decadence, all theſe ſteps did but lead unto his Ruine. To which alſo the ſecret ill Offices of the angry Queen, and deſpighted *Anne Bolen* did contribute; who, though hating one another, did conſpire to his deſtruction. The Cauſes on the Queens part are toucht before, which alſo were not a little

little ſet forwards by the Induſtry of the Emperour. And for thoſe of Miſtris *Anne Bolen*, beſides her unkind Diſmiſſion from the Court, (which ſhe conceived to have been the Cardinal's Advice) another inveterate Grudge made her irreconcileable. The Relation whereof, being taken out of a Manuſcript of one Maſter *George Cavendiſh*, Gentleman-Uſher to the Cardinal, I have thought fit to inſert. 1529. *Cavendiſh* Life of Card. *Woolſey*.

This Gentlewoman being deſcended on the Fathers ſide, from one of the Heirs of the Earls of *Ormond*, and on the Mothers from a Daughter of the Houſe of *Norfolk*, was from her Childhood, of that ſingular Beauty and Towardneſs, that her Parents took all care poſſible for her good Education. Therefore, beſides the ordinary parts of virtuous Inſtructions, wherewith ſhe was liberally brought up, they gave her Teachers in playing on Muſical Inſtruments, ſinging, and dancing; Inſomuch, that when ſhe compoſed her hands to play, and voice to ſing, it was joyned with that ſweetneſs of Countenance, that three Harmonies concurr'd; likewiſe, when ſhe danced, her rare Proportions varied themſelves into all the Graces that belong either to Reſt or Motion. Briefly, it ſeems the moſt attractive Perfections were eminent in her. Yet did not our King love her at firſt, nor before ſhe had lived ſometime in *France*, whither, in the Train of the *French* Queen, and company of a Siſter of the Marqueſs *Dorſet*, ſhe went *Anno Dom.* 1514. After the Death of *Loüis* the Twelfth, ſhe did not yet return with the Dowager, but was received into a place of much Honour with the other Queen, and then with the Dutcheſs of *Alanſon*, Siſter to *Francis*, where ſhe ſtaid, till ſome difference grew betwixt our King and *Francis*; therefore, as ſaith *Du Tillet*, and our Records, about the time when our Students at *Paris* were remanded, ſhe likewiſe left *France*, as is formerly related; her Parents thinking not fit to ſuffer her to ſtay there any longer. All this while therefore no argument of extraordinary Affection towards her was diſcovered in our King. So that though it be probable, that ſhe were at the Interview betwixt the Kings and Queens (near *Guiſnes*) above-mentioned, yet ſhe left not the *French* Court. But, at laſt, being come thither, and, about the twentieth year of her age, received into our Queens Service, however the King might take notice of her, the Lord *Henry Percy* yet (the Earl of *Northumberland*'s eldeſt Son) appeared firſt enamoured of her; Inſomuch, that at all times when he repaired to Court, in the Train of our Cardinal (whom he attended in ordinary) his Addreſſes were continually to her; whereof he made that uſe, as at length he obtained her good will to Marriage. So that, in what kind ſoever the Kings Affection might manifeſt it ſelf, neither was ſhe ſo ſatisfied of it, as to think fit to relinquiſh this advantageous Offer, nor the Lord *Percy* aware that he was oppoſed by ſo puiſſant a Rival. But this Treaty (which proceeded to little leſs than a Contract) coming at laſt to our Kings ears, the danger he found himſelf in of loſing a Beauty he had contemplated ſo long, that it was become his deareſt Object,

1514. 1521. 1520. *Camd. Eliz.*

1529. Object, made him reſolve to acquaint the Cardinal with his Love to her; wiſhing him alſo to diſſuade the Lord *Percy* from it. The forward Cardinal, hereupon both violently dehorts the Lord *Percy* from the Gentlewoman, and uſeth all Arts to inſinuate himſelf into her good Opinion and Favour. But Miſtris *Bolen*, whether ſhe were ignorant, as yet, how much the King loved her, or howſoever had rather be that Lords Wife, than a Kings Miſtris, took very ill of the Cardinal this his unſeaſonable Interruption of her Marriage. The Cardinal alſo fearing the Revenges of that Sex, and, for the reſt, being unwilling to come to ſharper terms with the Lord *Percy* than he had already uſed, deſires the King to write to the Earl of *Northumberland*, to come up; Alledging there was no ſuch way to preſerve the Gentlewoman for himſelf, and together to conceal his Love, as to uſe a cunning Diſſuaſion of the Marriage to the Earl; whereby alſo he might be induced to interpoſe his fatherly Authority for diſſolving of the Match. Hereupon the Earl repairing to Court, the Cardinal firſt, and afterwards the King diſcovered the cauſe of his ſending for, in very kind, but withal in ſuch covert and ambiguous terms, that betwixt unwillingneſs to diſparage the Gentlewoman, and the inforcing divers Reaſons why the Lord *Percy* ſhould not Marry her, the Earl was not without ſome hazard of miſ-applying the Kings Affection to himſelf. Howſoever, he ſo checkt his Son, that fear of diſpleaſing his Father, became at length the predominant Paſſion. So that it neither ſerved him to declare the Merits of the Gentlewoman, nor to tell his Father, that his Promiſe, before Witneſſes, had ingaged him further than that he knew well how to come off: The Apprehenſion of the Kings Diſpleaſure having wrought that impreſſion in the Earl, that he would take no denial or Excuſe on his Sons part, till he had made him renounce all his Pretences to her; which alſo he urged ſo far, as at length his Son conſented to marry the Earl of *Shrewsbury*'s Daughter. But the hatred which Miſtris *Anne Bolen* conceived againſt the Cardinal concluded not ſo; nor indeed could ever end till ſhe had procured his final Ruine. And this is the trueſt Relation of Miſtris *Anne Bolen*, that I have been able to gather out of thoſe Records and Manuſcripts that have come to my hands. So that now I ſhould have proceeded with my Hiſtory, were I not conſtrained (in a ſort) to vindicate both her Honour and her Progenitors from thoſe foul Calumnies which in a Book of *Nicolas Sanders*, an *Engliſh* man, *de Schiſmate Anglicano*, are caſt upon them.

Sand. de Schiſm. Ang.

This Author, though learned, yet more credulous than becomes a man of exact judgment, reports, out of one *William Raſtal*, a Judge, (in his Life of Sir *Thomas More*) that Miſtris *Anne Bolen* was the King's Daughter, by the Wife of Sir *Thomas Bolen*, while, *ſub ſpecie honoris*, he was employed by the King, Embaſſadour in *France*; and that this Gentlewoman coming to the age of fifteen, was deflowred by ſome Domeſticks of her Fathers, and then ſent to *France*; where alſo ſhe behaved her ſelf ſo licentiouſly, that ſhe was vulgarly called

called the Hackney of *England*, till being adopted to that Kings Familiarity, ſhe was termed his Mule. Many other paſſages of this kind are alſo inſerted by *Sanders*. which I forbear, as being ſorry to have occaſion for publiſhing thus much. But how impoſſible theſe things are, the ingenious Reader may eaſily find out, when he compares the times: For if Miſtris *Anne Bolen* went to *France* with *Mary* the *French* Queen, 1514. (as is proved by divers principal Authors, both *Engliſh* and *French*, beſides the Manuſcripts I have ſeen,) and was here vitiated at fifteen years of age, it muſt follow that ſhe was born about or before 1498. at which time our King was neither above ſeven or eight years old at moſt, and therefore unable to get a Child (eſpecially nine months before) nor had that Regal Power in his hands for employment of Embaſſadors till ten or eleven years afterwards. So that Mr. *Sanders* or *Raſtal*'s affirmation herein is but fiction, as the reſt certainly is, ſhe having always lived in good Reputation. As for the Beauty and handſomneſs of Miſtris *Anne Bolen*, which the ſame Author doth traduce, beſides that it contradicts common ſenſe (ſhe having been, by their Allegation, a Minion to two Kings) even that Picture of hers, extant ſtill with the Dutcheſs of *Richmond*, doth ſufficiently convince. And for her Religion there is no probability that it ſhould (at firſt) be other than what was commonly profeſt. Since it appears by original Letters of hers, that ſhe was a ſpecial Favourer of the Clergy of that time, and a preferrer of the worthieſt ſort of them to Eccleſiaſtical Livings, during her chief times of Favour with the King. Though I will not deny but, upon his defection from ſome Articles of the *Roman* Church, ſhe might alſo comply. But I ſhould be glad that Mr. *Sanders* had not divers other things which might require a ſerious Review; though I muſt not deny but, as he hath in ſome things followed Cardinal *Pool*, (a perſon of great Learning, and much reverenced in his time) ſo he hath his Authority. Howbeit as this Cardinal was ſo near in bloud to divers whom the King put to death, he may be thought perchance more partial than to be believed every where: Neither will it ſatisfie all men, that he pretends (in more than one place) to have known even ſo much as the Kings thoughts (by Revelation;) ſo that I ſhall leave theſe things to the liberty of the indifferent Reader, and turn to my Hiſtory. *Lib. de Uni. Eccleſ.*

1529.

Our King, who at the firſt prorogation of the Sentence, by reaſon of the *Feriæ Vindemiarum*, hoped yet, that at leaſt, *Octob.* 1. (when the Court was appointed to ſit again) he might have the cauſe determined, ſeeing now all proceeding in *England* inhibited, the Cauſe avocated to *Rome*, *Campejus* recalled, and finally finding, by many Diſpatches, that the Pope and Emperour had appointed ſhortly to meet at *Bononia*, was much troubled; and the rather, for that the two Cardinals Proceeding hitherunto had been little more than Illuſion; Whereupon alſo he became much incenſed againſt them. Yet containing a while his anger, he neither altered his faſhion to *Woolſey*, nor

1529. nor declared any diſlike of *Campejus*. Inſomuch, that he calmly gave him leave to depart. So that no argument of Suſpicion or Diſlike appeared hitherunto on either ſide. *Campejus* thus diſmiſt and rewarded, was conducted honourably on the Sea-ſide, where he expected only a fair wind. But when he came to take Ship, the Searchers, upon pretence he carried either Money or Letters from *England* to *Rome*, ranſack'd all his Coffers, Bags, and Papers; not without hope, certainly, to recover that Decretal Bull our King ſo much long'd for. I find alſo (by ſome relation) that divers Love-Letters betwixt our King and Miſtris *Bolen*, being conveyed out of the Kings Cabinet, were ſought for, though in vain, they having been formerly ſent to *Rome*. Which uſage ſo offended *Campejus*, that he complained immediately to our King; proteſting he would not proceed in his Journey till he had Reparation for the wrongs done to his Perſon and Dignity; And that the people were ſatisfied concerning certain ſcandalous Rumours, which he heard were ſcattered abroad to the Prejudice of Cardinal *Woolſey* and himſelf. But our King by his Letter, of *October* 22. anſwered, that it muſt not be expected from him, *Præſtare, quicquid vel vulgi temeritas effutire, vel quorundam nimium fortaſſe ſcrupuloſa & anxia ſedulitas deſignare ſoleat.* As for the *Jus Legati* pretended to be violated, our King anſwered, that he conceived it was expired, not only as it was revoked by the Pope's late Inhibition, but particularly, by the interpoſition of his own Regal Authority, which alone his Subjects did acknowledge. Adding moreover, that he wondered ſomewhat, that *Campejus* underſtood our Law ſo little, as not to fear how he uſurped after that time, the name of a Legate in this Kingdom; Since he, having been made Biſhop here of *Salisbury*, was bound by Oath to the Conſervation of the Royal Prerogative. As for the Searchers doings, it was a miſtake; the Commandment having been given long ſince, when there was juſt occaſion for it, and not in Relation to his particular, who therefore he was ſorry to have been ſo roughly uſed; deſiring the Cardinal, for the reſt, to excuſe the ſaid Searchers, ſince they are bound thereto by Oath. So that he ought not to pretend this as a cauſe of his ſtay. As for the other part, which was the Rumour, our King ſaid, it was uncertain from whence it came; Notwithſtanding that it was (though not altogether fixed in his breaſt, yet) ſo generally received and believed in his Kingdom, that it would be hard to remove that Opinion. In which regard alſo, it was in vain for him to ſtay here ſo much as one hour. Howſoever, that he might make this uſe of it, as to know how ill his Subjects took this fruſtration of the Buſineſs. But as his Royal care ſhould be to prevent the Inconveniences might follow hereof, ſo that it belonged to *Campejus* his wiſdom to continue thoſe good intentions he had made ſhew of. For we (ſaith the King) *tunc demum dubitare poterimus, cum ipſe factis palam diverſum oſtenderis.*

Octob. 22.

Campejus being now, more than once licenced, thought it time to be gone; So that, coming at laſt to the Pope, he acquainted him with

with all the Proceedings, not forgetting the Dangers in which Cardinal *Woolsey* was, for his too much Obsequiousness to that See. But the Pope, whether now altogether governed by the Emperor, or that otherwise he secretly hated the Cardinal, for his late unseasonable Ambition to succeed in the Papacy, seem'd to care for nothing so much as the conserving of his late League, Though yet he was not so secure of our King, but that he feared not a little his often threatned Defection. So that he omitted nothing (that might stand with his other interests) for the containing of him in his wonted Devotion. Insomuch that he offered new Projects daily for his Satisfaction. Among which *Gregory Casalis* relates one, which shall be set down in his place. 1529.

Cardinal *Woolsey* being now devested of his late power (wherein he had the glory, in some sort, to have been Superiour to his King) and for the rest being left alone, and exposed not only to a general Hatred, but to the private Machinations of the present and future Queen, became sensible of his ill estate; though yet he did not believe himself so near his Overthrow, as it appeared afterwards. But what could he hope for, when such puissant Enemies did procure his Destruction? Therefore, though he received some Advices from *Rome*, which might argue a Care rather than a power for his Conservation, yet in effect what secret Intelligence soever pass'd betwixt the Pope and him, came to the Emperor first, and after to Queen *Katharine*, who cunningly caus'd it to be whisper'd into the Kings ears, by some more indirect ways, than it could possibly be imagined to proceed from her. Likewise Mistris *Anne Bolen*, having learned from some of the Kings wisest and gravest Counsellours, divers Malversations of the Cardinal, was so far from disguising them, that she even misinterpreted his better actions. *Edmund Campion* adds to these reasons, that Sir *Francis Bryan* being in *Rome* did, by the means of a Familiar of one who kept the Popes Papers, obtain a Letter of the Cardinals, which wrought his Ruine, in this manner; Having first shewed her the Cardinals Hand-Writing, and then corrupted her, this Courtezan so dexterously performed the rest, as upon Pretence of visiting her Servant in his Study, she convey'd away this Letter, and gave it *Bryan*, who fail'd not immediately to send it to our King. Which Relation of *Campion*, though I will not contradict, yet I suppose to be the more improbable, that I find by Original Dispatches, *Bryan* was come from *Rome* before any Argument of the Kings Disfavour to the Cardinal appeared. Howsoever, the way the King took to overthrow him was merely Legal, though approaching to *Summum Jus*, after most mens Opinion. In the carriage whereof yet, that Secresie was used, that the Cardinal did not, or perchance out of greatness of mind, would not take notice of what was intended against him. So that though the Bill or Indictment was put in (at the beginning of *Michaelmas* Term) yet did he ride, that day, to the Chancery with his accustomed Pomp. Of which our King

Camp. de Divortio.

Octob. 9.

1529. being advertiſed, thought fit to forbid him the place; as thinking it undecent, that a man, who was upon terms of Conviction, ſhould adminiſter that high Charge. Therefore the Dukes of *Norfolk* and *Suffolk* were ſent, the eighteenth of *October*, to require the Great Seal of him. But the Cardinal, inſtead of rendring it, diſputed their Authority, alledging the Place of Lord Chancellor was by the Kings Letters Patents, given him during Life. The two Dukes hereupon returned to Court, bringing the next day the Kings Letters to the Cardinal, who having read them, deliver'd immediately the Great Seal; In ſequence thereof, alſo ſubmitting himſelf to the King, who commanded him to leave *York* Place, and ſimply to depart to *Aſher*, a Country Houſe near *Hampton-Court*, belonging to the Biſhop of *Wincheſter*. He charged his Officers alſo to Inventory and bring forth his Goods. Whereupon much brave Furniture made into Hangings, beſides whole Pieces of rich Stuffs were ſet upon divers Tables in his houſe; the variety and number whereof may be imagined, when (as *Cavendiſh* hath it) of fine Holland Cloth alone there were a Thouſand Pieces. Beſides, the walls of his Gallery on the one ſide were hang'd with rich Suits of Cloth of Gold, Cloth of Silver, Cloth of Tiſſue, and Cloth of Bodkin; On the other ſide was placed the moſt glorious Suit of Copes that had been ſeen in *England*. In a Chamber near to the Gallery was a great Cupboard of Plate, of maſſie Gold, and in a Chamber adjoyning vaſt quantity of other Plate. All which the Cardinal commanded Sir *William Gaſcogne* (his Treaſurer) to deliver to the King, when he was requir'd.

Octob. 18.

In the mean while the Bill againſt the Cardinal proceeded, the moſt ſubſtantial parts whereof being extracted out of the Original Record, I have thought fit to preſent to the Reader. The Ground upon which *Chriſtopher Hales*, the Kings Attorney, proſecuted the Cardinal, was a Statute of 16. *Rich.* II. in which is enacted, That, whereas the Commons of the Realm ought of right, and were wont of old time to ſue in the Kings Court to recover their Preſentments to Churches, Prebends, and other Benefices of Holy Church, to which they had right to preſent, & when Judgment ſhall begiven in the ſaid Court upon ſuch a Plea and Preſentment, the Archbiſhops, Biſhops, and other Spiritual Perſons, which have Inſtitutions of ſuch Benefices within their Juriſdictions, be bound, & have made Execution of ſuch Judgments by the Kings Commandments, of all the time aforeſaid, without interruption, and alſo be bound of Right to make Execution of many other the Kings Commandments; Of which Right the Crown of *Engl.* hath been peaceably ſeized, as well now, as in the time of all his Progenitors. And whereas the Biſhop of *Rome* (for ſo he is termed in the Act) had made divers Proceſſes and Cenſures of Excommunication upon certain Biſhops in *England*, becauſe they have made Execution of ſuch Commandments, and alſo becauſe he hath ordain'd and purpos'd to tranſlate ſome Prelates of the Realm, ſome out of the Realm, and ſome from one Biſhoprick to another within

16 *Rich.* II.

within the ſaid Realm, without the Kings aſſent and knowledge, and without the aſſent of the Prelates, which ſo ſhall be tranſlated; which Prelates be much profitable and neceſſary to our Lord the King, and to all his Realm; which Tranſlations if they ſhould be ſuffered, the Statutes of the Realm ſhould be defeated and made void, and his ſaid Liege Sages of his Council, without his aſſent, and againſt his will, carried away and gotten out of his Realm, and the Subſtance and Treaſure of the Realm ſhall be carried away, and ſo the Realm deſtitute as well of Counſel as of Subſtance, to the final Deſtruction of the ſame Realm; and ſo the Crown of *England*, which hath been ſo free at all times, that it hath been in no Earthly Subjection, but immediately ſubject to God in all things touching the Legality of the ſame Crown, and to none other, ſhould be ſubmitted to the Pope; and the Laws and Statutes of the ſaid Realm, by him defeated and avoided at his will, in perpetual deſtruction of the Sovereignty of the King our Lord, his Crown, his Regality, and of all his Realm, *&c.* Therefore the King, by the aſſent of his Lords, and at the requeſt of the Commons, hath ordain'd and eſtabliſh'd, that, if any purchaſe or purſue, or cauſe to be purchaſed or purſued in the Court of *Rome*, or elſewhere, any Tranſlations, Proceſſes, and Sentences of Excommunication, Bulls, Inſtruments, or any other things whatſoever, which touch the King, againſt him, his Crown, and Regality or Realm, and they which bring within the Realm, or them receive, or make thereof Notification, or any other execution whatſoever within the ſame Realm or without; that they, their Notaries, Procurators, Maintainers, Abettors, Fautors, and Counſellors, ſhall be put out of the Kings Protection, and their Lands and Tenements, Goods and Chattels, forfeit to the King, and that they be attached by their bodies if they may be found, and brought before the King and his Council, there to anſwer to the caſes aforeſaid, or that Proceſs be made againſt them by a Writ of *Præmunire facias*, in manner as it is ordain'd in other Statutes of Proviſors, and other, which do ſue in any other Court, in derogation of the Regality of our Lord the King. 1529.

Upon which Statute it was alledged, that *Thomas, Legatus de Latere*, Cardinal, Archbiſhop of *York*, and Primate of *England*, being not ignorant of the Premiſſes, had obtained certain Bulls from *Clement* the Seventh, by which he exerciſed Juriſdiction and Authority Legatine, to the deprivation of the Kings Power eſtabliſhed in his Courts of Juſtice; which ſaid Bulls he cauſed to be publickly read in *Weſtminſter*, (*Aug.* 28. *Anno Reg.* 15.) aſſuming to himſelf thereupon the Dignity and Juriſdiction of *Legatus de Latere*, which he hath exercis'd from the ſaid 28. of *Auguſt* to this day, to the Prejudice of the Right of both Secular and Eccleſiaſtical Perſons, and that by colour thereof, he had given away the Church of *Stoke-Guilford* in the County of *Surrey* (being of right in the Donation of the Prior of Saint *Pancrace*) to one *James Gorton*, who alſo enjoyed it accordingly. All which was to the contempt of the King and his Crown, and 1523. Auguſt 28. *Reg.* 15.

1529. and contrary to the aforeſaid Statutes of 16 *Richard* the Second. Moreover that, by colour of the ſaid Authority, he had cauſed the Laſt Wills and Teſtaments of many (out of his Dioceſs) to be exhibited and proved in his Court, and their Goods and Chattels to be adminiſtred by ſuch as he appointed. Alſo that, under colour of the ſaid Authority, he had made divers Viſitations out of his Dioceſs, and drawn divers Penſions from Abbeys to the Contempt of the King and his Laws.

The Proof of which particulars, though evident and notorious, were not yet urged to his Conviction, till, through the Kings ſpecial
Octob. 28. permiſſion (by Writ of *Octob.* 28.) *John Scuſe* and *Chriſtopher Genney* appear'd in Court as his Attorneys; Where, for all other Anſwers, they proteſted in the ſaid Cardinal's name, that the ſaid Cardinal did not know the impetration of the ſaid Bulls to have been to the Contempt and Prejudice of the King, or that it was againſt any Statute of Proviſors heretofore made. As for the particulars wherewith he was charged by Maſter Attorney, he confeſt them all true in the manner and form alledged: And ſo ſubmitted himſelf to the King. Whereupon the Court gave Sentence that he was out of the Kings Protection, and his Lands, Goods, and Chattels forfeit, and that his Perſon might be ſeiſed on.

Not contented herewith yet, another proof of the ſame kind was by the Kings Attorney produced againſt the Cardinal, namely, that contrary to the right of the true Patron (being the Maſter and Fellows of the Hoſpital of St. *Lazarus* in *Burton-Lazar*) he had, by the ſame Authority, given away the Pariſh-Church of *Galby* in *Leiceſterſhire*, and Dioceſs of *Lincoln* (then vacant by the death of one *Woodroff*) to one *John Allen*, Doctor of both Laws, and plac'd him in it.

And thus fell the Cardinal, together with all his vaſt Poſſeſſions, into the Kings hands. Concerning which the Criticks of the time gave ſundry opinions, the moſt part yet ſuppoſing him capable of the Kings mercy, had he been either leſs rich, or more humble. They thought him indeed condemn'd by Law, but by the rigor of it. All which they conſidered the more, that the Cardinal had ſo long exercis'd his Legatine power, without that the King either ſeem'd to diſlike it, or any other had queſtion'd him for it. Therefore, howſoever he was convicted by form of Juſtice, they yet clear'd him in great part, and not they only, but the King. Inſomuch, that the impreſſion taken of his antient Services, was not defac'd wholly. So that notwithſtanding his beſt Goods were ſeiz'd on, and that the King might have taken therewith his other Poſſeſſions, and (with them) his intire Liberty, yet he both ſent him a Protection, and left him the Biſhopricks of *York* and *Wincheſter*, which he had lately given him after the death of *Richard Fox*, only he confin'd him for the preſent to his houſe at *Aſher*, till his further pleaſure were ſignified. Being upon his way, the King (touched with ſome compaſſion) ſent him by one

Maſter

Maſter *Norreys*, not only a gracious Meſſage, but a Ring, which was a Token betwixt them, when any ſpecial buſineſs was recommended. Upon receiving whereof, the overjoyed Cardinal alighted from his Mule, and the dirt upon his bare knees, acknowledged the comfort he receiv'd. To ſhew his thankfulneſs alſo to Maſter *Norreys*, he preſented him with a Chain of Gold, at which a piece of the Croſs did hang. But it troubled him much that he had nothing to ſend to the King; till at laſt having eſpied in his Train a facetious Natural, in whom he took much delight, he deſir'd Maſter *Norreys* to preſent him to the King. Which Promotion yet this Fellow (for the approving himſelf no Counterfeit,) did ſo ſlight, as the Cardinal was forced to ſend ſix of his talleſt Yeomen to bring him to Court. The Cardinal coming at laſt to *Aſher*, found himſelf ſo deſtitute of all Neceſſaries, as, till one Maſter *Arundel* firſt, and after the Biſhop of *Carliſle* provided him, he wanted even the moſt ordinary parts of Houſholdſtuff. And thus the ill-accommodated Cardinal paſſed ſome weeks in expectation of the Kings further pleaſure, not neglecting, in the mean while, to uſe thoſe Friends he had left in Court, for the reintegrating him into his former Favour; or when that could not be done, for the making his Fall more eaſie. For which purpoſe one Maſter *Thomas Cromwel*, his Servant, (who came afterwards to great Preferment) was employed, but Miſtris *Bolen* ſecretly oppoſed all. So that the Cardinal, being now in a manner hopeleſs of regaining the Kings good opinion, diſmiſſed (not without tears on both ſides) the greateſt part of his numerous Family, without other reward than what Maſter *Cromwel* and ſome of his Chaplains did freely contribute. The King, hearing the Cardinal to be ſomewhat humbled, ſent Sir *John Ruſſel* with a Turquoiſe Ring to him as a Token of his Care and Affection. But it was not Gifts that the Cardinal expected from the King, but Liberty and Reſtitution to his former Greatneſs; which yet was ſo much in vain, as his Offences were daily exagerated. For as the King did not think it enough that he had particularly advantag'd himſelf of the Cardinal's Puniſhment, unleſs he made ſome uſe thereof to the General, ſo he call'd a Council of the Nobles, to ſit in the Star-Chamber, who having ſufficiently condemn'd him, he afterwards permitted him to the Parliament, which began *November* the third, 1529. Wherein the King alſo did wiſely, ſince by intereſſing the Publick in his Condemnation, he both declin'd the Cenſure of thoſe who thought the late Proceedings to have been of the ſevereſt, and indear'd his People by putting the power of puniſhing him into their hands. Therefore they took it as an intire Satisfaction for all they had hitherto ſuffered; and by applauding of the King, made him know how thankfully they took this Favour. And thus did the King return to that former good Opinion he had of his Subjects.

1529.

Novemb. 1.

Octob. 1.

Novemb. 3. *Reg.* 21.

Hereupon certain Articles againſt the Cardinal were preferred in Parliament, The Original whereof found among our Records, I have thought

1529. thought fit to tranſcribe; and the rather for that our vulgar Chronicles miſ-report them.

COnſtrained by neceſſity of our Fidelity and Conſcience, complain and ſhew to your Royal Majeſty, We your Graces humble, true, faithful, and obedient Subjects, That the Lord Cardinal of *York*, lately your Graces Chancellour, preſuming to take upon him the Authority of the Popes Legate *de Latere*, hath by divers and many ſundry ways and faſhions committed notable, high, and grievous Offences, miſuſing, altering, and ſubverting the order of your Graces Laws, and otherwiſe contrary to your high Honour, Prerogative, Crown, Eſtate, and Dignity Royal, to the ineſtimable damage of your Graces Subjects of every degree, and conſequently to the great hindrance, diminution, and decay of the univerſal Wealth of this your Graces Realm, as it is touched ſummarily and particularly in certain Articles here following; which be but a few in compariſon of all his enormities, exceſſes, and tranſgreſſions committed againſt your Graces Laws.

That is to ſay,

I. FIrſt, where your Grace, and your Noble Pregenitors within this your Realm of *England*, being Kings of *England*, have been ſo free, that they have had in all the world no other Sovereign, but immediate ſubject to Almighty God, in all things, touching the Regality of your Crown of *England*, and the ſame Preeminence, Prerogative, Juriſdiction, lawful and peaceable Poſſeſſion, your Grace, and your noble Progenitors have had, uſed, and enjoyed without Interruption, or buſineſs therefore, by the ſpace of two hundred years and more; whereby your Grace may preſcribe againſt the Popes Holineſs, that he ſhould not, nor ought to ſend, or make any Legate to execute any Authority Legatine, contrary to your Graces Prerogative within this your Realm:

Now the Lord Cardinal of *York* being your Subject, and natural liege born, hath of his high, orgullous, and inſatiable mind, for his own ſingular advancement and profit, in derogation, and to the great imblemiſhment and hurt of your ſaid Royal Juriſdiction, and Prerogative, and the large continuance of the Poſſeſſion of the ſame, obtained Authority Legatine, by reaſon whereof he hath not only hurt your ſaid Preſcription, but alſo by the ſaid Authority Legatine hath ſpoiled and taken away from many houſes of Religion in this your Realm, much Subſtance of their Goods; and alſo hath uſurped upon all your Ordinaries within this your Realm much part of their Juriſdiction, in derogation of your Prerogative, and to the great hurt of your ſaid Ordinaries, Prelates, and Religious.

II. Alſo, the ſaid Lord Cardinal, being your Ambaſſador in *France*, made a Treaty with the *French* King for the Pope, your Majeſty not knowing any part thereof not named in the ſame; and binding the ſaid *French* K. to abide his order & award, if any Controverſie or Doubt ſhould ariſe upon the ſame betwixt the ſaid Pope and the *French* K.

III. Alſo

1529.

III. Alſo, the ſaid Lord Cardinal being your Ambaſſador in *France*, ſent a Commiſſion to Sir *Gregory de Caſalis*, under your Great Seal, in your Graces name, to conclude a Treaty of Amity with the Duke of *Ferrara*, without any Command or Warrant of your Highneſs, nor your ſaid Highneſs advertis'd or made privy to the ſame.

IV. Alſo, the ſaid Lord Cardinal, of his preſumptuous mind in divers & many of his Letters, and Inſtructions ſent out of this Realm to outward parties, had joyn'd himſelf with your Grace, as in ſaying and writing in his ſaid Letters and Inſtructions, *The King and I.* And, *I would ye ſhould do thus. The King and I give unto you our hearty thanks.* Whereby it is apparent that he uſed himſelf more like a Fellow to your Highneſs, than like a Subject.

V. Alſo, where it hath ever been accuſtomed within this your Realm, that when Noblemen do ſwear their Houſhold Servants, the firſt part of their Oath hath been, that they ſhould be true Liegemen to the King and his Heirs Kings of *England*; The ſame Lord Cardinal cauſed his Servants to be only ſworn to him, as if there had been no Sovereign above him.

VI. And alſo, whereas your Grace is our Sovereign Lord and Head, in whom ſtandeth all the Surety and Wealth of this Realm, the ſame Lord Cardinal knowing himſelf to have the foul and contagious Diſeaſe of the great Pox, broken out upon him in divers places of his body, came daily to your Grace, rowning in your ear, and blowing upon your moſt Noble Grace with his perillous and infective breath, to the marvellous danger of your Highneſs, if God of his infinite Goodneſs had not better provided for your Highneſs. And when he was once healed of them, he made your Grace to believe that his Diſeaſe was an Impoſtume in his head, and of none other thing.

VII. Alſo, the ſaid Lord Cardinal, by his Authority Legatine, hath given, by prevention, the Benefices of divers perſons, as well Spiritual as Temporal, contrary to your Crown and Dignity, and your Laws and Eſtatutes therefore provided; by reaſon whereof he is in danger to your Grace of Forfeiture of his Lands and Goods, and his Body at your pleaſure.

VIII. Alſo, the ſaid Lord Cardinal, taking upon him otherwiſe than a true Counſellour ought to do, hath uſed to have all Ambaſſadors to come firſt to him alone, and ſo hearing their charges and intents, it is to be thought he hath inſtructed them after his pleaſure and purpoſe, before that they came to your preſence; contrary to your high Commandment by your Graces mouth to him given, and alſo to other perſons ſent to him by your Grace.

IX. Alſo, the ſaid Lord Cardinal hath practiſed ſo, that all manner of Letters ſent from beyond the Sea to your Highneſs have come firſt to his hands, contrary to your high Commandment by your own mouth, and alſo by others ſent to him by your Grace; by reaſon whereof your Highneſs, nor any of your Council had knowledge of no matters, but ſuch as it pleaſed him to ſhew them; whereby your Highneſs, and your

1529. your Council have been compell'd of very force to follow his devices, which oftentimes were ſet forth by him under ſuch crafty and covert means, that your Highneſs and your Council hath oftentimes been abuſed. Inſomuch, that when your Council have found, and put divers Doubts, and things which have afterwards enſued, he to abuſe them, uſed theſe words; *I will lay my head that no ſuch thing ſhall happen.*

X. Alſo, the ſaid Lord Cardinal hath practiſed that no manner of perſon, having charge to make eſpial of things done beyond the Sea, ſhould at their return come firſt to your Grace, nor to any other of your Council, but only to himſelf, and in caſe they did the contrary, he puniſhed them for ſo doing.

XI. Alſo, the ſaid Lord Cardinal hath granted Licence under your Great Seal for carrying out of Grain and other Victual, after the Reſtraint hath been made thereof, for his own lucre, and ſingular advantage of him and his Servants, for to ſend thither as he bare ſecret favour, without your Graces Warrant or Knowledge thereof.

XII. Alſo, the ſaid Lord Cardinal uſed, many years together, not only to write unto all your Ambaſſadors Reſident with other Princes in his own Name all Advertiſements concerning your Graces Affairs, being in their Charge: and in the ſame his Letters wrote many things of his own mind, without your Graces pleaſure being known, concealing divers things which had been neceſſary for them to know: But alſo cauſed them to write their Advertiſements unto him; and of the ſame Letters he uſed to conceal for the compaſſing of his purpoſes, many things both from all your other Counſellors, and from your ſelf alſo.

XIII. Alſo, where good Hoſpitality hath been uſed to be kept in houſes and places of Religion of this Realm, and many poor People thereby relieved, the ſaid Hoſpitality and Relief is now decayed, and not uſed; and it is commonly reported that the occaſion thereof is, becauſe the ſaid Lord Cardinal hath taken ſuch Impoſitions of the Rulers of the ſaid Houſes, as well for his favour in making of Abbots and Priors, as for his Viſitation, by his Authority Legatine: And yet, nevertheleſs, taketh yearly of ſuch Religious Houſes, ſuch yearly and continual Charges, as they be not able to keep Hoſpitality, as they uſed to do, which is a great cauſe that there be ſo many Vagabonds, Beggars, and Thieves.

XIV. Alſo, where the ſaid Lord Cardinal ſaid, before the Suppreſſion of ſuch Houſes as he hath ſuppreſſed, that the Poſſeſſions of them ſhould be ſet to Farm among your Lay-Subjects, after ſuch reaſonable yearly rent, as they ſhould well thereupon live, and keep good Hoſpitality; and now the demain Poſſeſſions of the ſaid Houſes, ſince the Suppreſſion of them hath been ſurvey'd, mete, and meaſured by the Acre, and be now ſet above the value of the old Rent; and alſo ſuch as were Farmers by Covent-Seal, and Copy-holders be put out, and amoved of their Farms, or elſe compel'd to pay new Fines, contrary to all equity and conſcience. XV. Alſo,

XV. Alſo, the ſaid Lord Cardinal, ſitting among the Lords, and other of your moſt Honourable Council, uſed himſelf that if any man would ſhew his mind according to his duty, contrary to the opinion of the ſaid Cardinal, he would ſo take him up with his accuſtomable words, that they were better to hold their peace than to ſpeak, ſo that he would hear no man ſpeak but one or two great Perſonages, ſo that he would have all the words himſelf, and conſumed much time with a fair tale. 1529.

XVI. Alſo, the ſaid Lord Cardinal by his Ambition and Pride, hath hindred and undone many of your poor Subjects for want of Diſpatchment of matters; for he would no man ſhould meddle but himſelf. Inſomuch, that it hath been affirm'd by many wiſe men, that ten of the moſt wiſe, and moſt expert men in *England* were not ſufficient in convenient time to order the matters that he would retain to himſelf: And many times he deferred the ending of matters, becauſe that Sutors ſhould attend and wait upon him, whereof he had no ſmall pleaſure that his Houſe might be repleniſh'd with Sutors.

XVII. Alſo, the ſaid Lord Cardinal, by his Authority Legatine, hath uſed, if any Spiritual man having any Riches or Subſtance, deceaſed, he hath taken their Goods as his own; by reaſon whereof their Wills be not perform'd: And one mean he had, to put them in fear that were made Executors, to refuſe to meddle.

XVIII. Alſo, the ſaid Lord Cardinal conſtrained all Ordinaries in *England* yearly to compound with him, or elſe he will uſurp half or the whole of their Juriſdiction by prevention, not for good order of the Dioceſs, but to extort Treaſure; for there is never a poor Arch-Deacon in *England*, but that he paid yearly to him a Portion of his Living.

XIX. Alſo, the ſaid L. Cardinal hath not only by his untrue ſuggeſtion to the Pope, ſhamefully ſlandered many good Religious Houſes, and good vertuous Men dwelling in them, but alſo ſuppreſſed by reaſon thereof above thirty Houſes of Religion; and where, by Authority of his Bull, he ſhould not ſuppreſs any Houſe that had more Men of Religion in number, above the number of ſix or ſeven, He hath ſuppreſſed divers Houſes that had above the number; And thereupon hath cauſed divers Offices to be found by Verdict, untruly, that the Religious Perſons, ſo ſuppreſſed, had voluntarily forſaken their ſaid Houſes, which was untrue, and ſo hath caus'd open Perjury to be committed, to the high Diſpleaſure of Almighty God.

XX. Alſo, the ſaid Lord Cardinal hath examined divers and many matters in the Chancery, after Judgment thereof given at the Common Law, in Subverſion of your Laws; and made ſome Perſons reſtore again to the other party condemned, that they had in Execution by virtue of the Judgment in the Common Law.

XXI. Alſo, the ſaid Lord Cardinal hath granted many Injunctions by Writ, and the Parties never call'd thereunto, nor Bill put in

1529. againſt them. And, by reaſon thereof, divers of your Subjects have been put from their lawful Poſſeſſion of their Lands and Tenements. And, by ſuch means, he hath brought the more Party of the Sutors of this your Realm before himſelf, whereby he and divers of his Servants have gotten much Riches, and your Subjects ſuffered great Wrongs.

XXII. Alſo, the ſaid Lord Cardinal, to augment his great Riches, hath cauſed divers Pardons granted by the Pope to be ſuſpended, which could not be revived till that the ſaid Lord Cardinal were rewarded, and alſo have a yearly Penſion of the ſaid Pardon.

XXIII. Alſo, the ſaid Lord Cardinal, not regarding your Laws nor Juſtice, of his extort power, hath put out divers and many Farmers of his Lands, and alſo Patents of the Archbiſhoprick of *York*, and Biſhoprick of *Wincheſter*, and of the Abby of St. *Albans*, which had good and ſufficient grant thereof by your Laws.

XXIV. Alſo, the ſame L. Cardinal at many times when any Houſes of Religion have been void, he hath ſent his Officers thither, and with crafty Perſuaſions hath induced them to compromit their Election in him. And that, before ere he named or confirmed any of them, he and his Servants received ſo much great Goods of them, that in manner it hath been to the undoing of the houſe.

XXV. Alſo, by his Authority Legatine, the ſame Lord Cardinal hath viſited the moſt part of the Religious Houſes and Colleges in this your Realm, hath taken of them the twenty-fifth part of their Livelihood, to the great Extortion of your Subjects, and derogation of your Laws and Prerogative; And no Law to bear him ſo to do.

XXVI. Alſo, when Matters have been near at Judgment by Proceſs at your Common Law, the ſame Lord Cardinal hath not only given and ſent Injunctions to the parties, but alſo ſent for your Judges, and expreſly by threats commanding them to defer the Judgment, to the evident Subverſion of your Laws, if the Judges would ſo have ceaſed.

XXVII. Alſo, whereas neither the Biſhoprick of *York*, nor *Wincheſter*, nor the Abby of St. *Albans*, nor the Profit of his Legation, nor the Benefit of the Chancery, nor his great Penſion out of *France*, nor his Wards, and other inordinate taking could not ſuffice him, he hath made his Son *Winter* to ſpend twenty-ſeven hundred pounds by the year, which he taketh to his own uſe, and giveth him not paſt two hundred pounds yearly to live upon.

XXVIII. Alſo, where the ſaid Lord Cardinal did firſt ſue unto your Grace to have your Aſſent to be Legate *de Latere*, he promiſed and ſolemnly proteſted before your Majeſty, and before the Lords both Spiritual and Temporal, that he would nothing do or attempt by virtue of his Legacy, that ſhould be contrary to your gracious Prerogative or Regality, or to the Damage or Prejudice of the Juriſdiction of any Ordinary, and that by his Legacy no man ſhould

ſhould be hurt or offended; And upon that Condition and no other, He was admitted by your Grace to be Legate within this your Realm, which Condition he hath broken, as is well known to all your Subjects. And when that he made this Promiſe, he was buſie in his Sute at *Rome*, to viſit all the Clergy of *England*, both exempt and not exempt. 1529.

XXIX. Alſo, upon the Sute of the ſaid Lord Cardinal at *Rome*, to have his Authority Legatine, He made untrue ſurmiſe to the Popes Holineſs againſt the Clergy of your Realm, which was, that the Regular Perſons of the ſaid Clergy had given themſelves *in reprobum ſenſum*; which words Saint *Paul* writing to the *Romans* applied to abominable Sin; which Slander to your Church of *England* ſhall for ever remain in the Regiſter at *Rome* againſt the Clergy of this your Realm.

XXX. Alſo, the ſaid Lord Cardinal had the more part of the Goods of Dr. *Smith* late Biſhop of *London*, Biſhop *Savage* of *York*, Mr. *Dalby* Archdeacon of *Richmond*, Mr. *Tornyers*, Dr. *Rothal* late Biſhop of *Durham*, and of Dr. *Fox* late Biſhop of *Wincheſter*, contrary to their Wills and your Laws and Juſtice.

XXXI. Alſo, at the *Oyer* and *Terminer* at *York*, Proclamation was made, that every man ſhould put in their Bills for Extortion of Ordinaries, and when divers Bills were put in againſt the Officers of the ſaid L. Cardinal of Extortion, for taking twelve pence of the pound for Probation of Teſtaments, whereof divers Bills were found before Juſtice *Fitz-Herbert*, and other Commiſſioners, The ſame Lord Cardinal removed the ſame Indictments into the Chancery by *Certiorari*, and rebuked the ſame *Fitz-Herbert* for the ſame Cauſe.

XXXII. Alſo, the ſaid Lord Cardinal hath buſied and endeavoured himſelf by crafty and untrue Tales to make Diſſenſion and Debate amongſt your Nobles of your Realm, which is ready to be proved.

XXXIII. Alſo, the ſaid L. Cardinal's Officers have divers times compelled your Subjects to ſerve him with Carts for Carriages. And alſo his Servants have taken both Corn and Cattel, Fiſh, and all other Victuals at your Graces Price or under, as though it had been for your Grace, which is contrary to the Laws.

XXXIV. Alſo, the ſaid Lord Cardinal hath miſuſed himſelf in your moſt Honourable Court, in keeping of as great eſtate there in your Abſence, as your Grace would have done, if you had been there preſent in your own Perſon.

XXXV. Alſo, his Servants, by virtue of your Commiſſion under your Broad Seal by him to them given, have taken Cattel, and all other Victual, at as low price as your Purveyors have done for your Grace by your Prerogative, againſt the Laws of your Realm.

XXXVI. Alſo, where it hath been accuſtomed that your Purveyors for your Honourable Houſhold have had yearly out of your Town and Liberty of St. *Albans* three hundred or four hundred Quarters

1529. ters of Wheat, Truth it is, that ſince the Lord Cardinal had the room of Abbot there, your ſaid Purveyors could not be ſuffered by him and his Officers, to take any Wheat within the ſaid Town or Liberties.

XXXVII. Alſo, he hath divers times given Injunction to your Servants, that have been for cauſes before him in the Star-Chamber, that they nor other for them ſhould make labour, by any manner of way directly or indirectly, to your Grace, to obtain your gracious Favour or Pardon, which was a preſumptuous intent for any Subject.

XXXVIII. Alſo, the ſaid Lord Cardinal did call before him Sir *John Stanley* Knight, which had taken a Farm by Covent-Seal of the Abbot and Covent of *Cheſter*, and afterwards by his power and might, contrary to Right, committed the ſaid Sir *John Stanley* to the Priſon of *Fleet* by the ſpace of one year, until ſuch time as he compelled the ſaid Sir *John* to releaſe his Covent-Seal to one *Leghe* of *Adlington*, which Married one *Lark*'s Daughter, which Woman the ſaid Lord Cardinal kept, and had with her two Children. Whereupon the ſaid Sir *John Stanley*, upon diſpleaſure taken in his heart, made himſelf Monk in *Weſtminſter*, and there died.

XXXIX. Alſo, on a time your Grace being at St. *Albans*, according to the antient Cuſtom uſed within your Verge, your Clerk of the Market doing his Office, did preſent unto your Officers of your moſt Honourable Houſhold the Prices of all manner of Victuals, within the Precinct of the Verge; and it was commanded by your ſaid Officers to ſet up the ſaid Prices both on the Gates of your Honourable Houſhold, and alſo in the Market-place within the Town of St. *Albans*, as of antient Cuſtom it hath been uſed; and the Lord Cardinal, hearing the ſame, preſumptuouſly, and not like a Subject, cauſed the aforeſaid Prices which were Sealed with your Graces Seal, accuſtomably uſed for the ſame, to be taken off, and pulled down in the ſaid Market-place where they were ſet up, and in the ſame place ſet up his own Prices Sealed with his Seal, and would, if it had not been letted, in ſemblable manner uſed your Seal ſtanding upon your Graces Gates; and alſo would of his preſumptuous mind have openly ſet in the Stocks within your ſaid Town your Clerk of your Market. By which Preſumption and Uſurpation your Grace may perceive, that in his heart he hath reputed himſelf to be equal with your Royal Majeſty.

XL. Alſo, the ſaid Lord Cardinal, of his further pompous and preſumptuous mind, hath enterpriſed to joyn and imprint the Cardinals Hat under your Arms in your Coin of Groats, made at your City of *York*, which like deed hath not been ſeen to have been done by any Subject within your Realm before this time.

XLI. Alſo, where one Sir *Edward Jones*, Clerk, Parſon of *Crowley* in the County of *Buckingham*, in the 18. year of your moſt Noble Reign, let his ſaid Parſonage with all Tythes, and other Profits of the ſame to one *William Johnſon* by Indenture for certain years, within which

which years the Dean of the ſaid Lord Cardinal's College in *Oxford*, pretended title to a certain Portion of Tythes within the ſaid Parſonage, ſuppoſing the ſaid Portion to belong to the Parſonage of *Chichley*, which was appropriated to the Priory of *Tykeford*, lately ſuppreſſed, where of truth, the Parſons of *Crowley* have been peaceably poſſeſſed of the ſaid Portion, time out of mind: Whereupon a *Subpœna* was directed to the ſaid *Johnſon* to appear before the ſaid L. Cardinal at *Hampton-Court*; where without any Bill, the ſaid L. Cardinal committed him to the *Fleet*, where he remained by the ſpace of twelve weeks, becauſe he would not depart with the ſaid Portion; And at the laſt, upon a Recognizance made, that he ſhould appear before the ſaid L. Cardinal whereſoever he was commanded, he was delivered out of the *Fleet*. Howbeit, as yet the ſaid Portion is ſo kept from him, that he dare not deal with it. 1529.

XLII. Alſo, where one *Martin Docowra* had a Leaſe of the Mannor of *Balſal* in the County of *Warwick*, for term of certain years, an Injunction came to him out of the Chancery, by Writ, upon pain of a Thouſand pounds, that he ſhould avoid the Poſſeſſion of the ſame Mannor, and ſuffer Sir *Geo. Throgmorton* Knight, to take the Profits of the ſame Mannor, to the time the matter depending in the Chancery between the Lord of St. *Johns* and the ſaid *Docowra* were diſcuſt; And yet the ſaid *Docowra* never made anſwer in the Chancery, ne ever was called into the Chancery for that matter. And now of late he hath received the like Injunction, upon pain of two thouſand pounds, contrary to the courſe of the Common Law.

XLIII. Alſo, whereas in the Parliament-Chamber, and in open Parliament, Communication and Devices were had and moved, wherein mention was, by an Incident, made of matters touching Hereſies, and erroneous Sects. It was ſpoken and reported by one Biſhop there being preſent, and confirmed by a good number of the ſame Biſhops in preſence of all the Lords Spiritual and Temporal then aſſembled, that two of the ſaid Biſhops were minded and deſired to repair unto the Univerſity of *Cambridge*, for Examination, Reformation, and Correction of ſuch Errors as then ſeemed, and were reported to reign amongſt the Students and Scholars of the ſame, as well touching the *Lutheran* Sect and Opinions, as otherwiſe; The Lord Cardinal informed of the good minds and intents of the ſaid two Biſhops in that behalf, expreſly inhibited and commanded them in no wiſe ſo to do. By means whereof the ſame Errours (as they affirmed) crept more abroad and took greater place; Saying furthermore, that it was not in their defaults that the ſaid Hereſies were not puniſhed, but in the ſaid Lord Cardinal; and that it was no reaſon any blame or lack ſhould be arrected unto them for his Offence. Whereby it evidently appeareth, that the ſaid Lord Cardinal, beſides all other his heinous Offences, hath been the impeacher and diſturber of due and direct Correction of Hereſies; being highly to the danger and peril of the whole body and good Chriſtian People of this your Realm.

XLIV. Finally,

1529. XLIV. Finally, Foraſmuch as by the aforeſaid Articles is evidently declared to your moſt Royal Majeſty, that the L. Cardinal by his outragious Pride hath greatly ſhadowed a long ſeaſon your Graces Honour, which is moſt highly to be regarded, and by his inſatiable Avarice and ravenous Appetite to have Riches and Treaſure without meaſure, hath ſo grievouſly oppreſſed your poor Subjects, with ſo manifold crafts of Bribery and Extortion, that the Common-wealth of this your Graces Realm is thereby greatly decayed and impoveriſhed: And alſo by his cruelty, iniquity, affection and partiality hath ſubverted the due courſe and order of your Graces Laws, to the undoing of a great number of your loving People;

Pleaſe it your moſt Royal Majeſty therefore of your excellent Goodneſs towards the weal of this your Realm, and Subjects of the ſame, to ſet ſuch order and direction upon the ſaid L. Cardinal, as may be to the terrible example of others to beware ſo to offend your Grace and your Laws hereafter: And that he be ſo provided for, that he never have any Power, Juriſdiction, or Authority, hereafter to trouble, vex, and impoveriſh the Common-wealth of this your Realm, as he hath done heretofore, to the great hurt and damage of every man almoſt, high and low. Which for your Grace ſo doing, will daily pray, as their duty is, to Almighty God, for the proſperous Eſtate of your moſt Royal Majeſty long to endure in Honour and good Health, to the pleaſure of God, and your Hearts moſt deſire.

Subſcribed the firſt day of *December*, the twenty-firſt year of the Reign of our Sovereign Lord King *Henry* the Eighth.

T. More.	*R. Fitzwater.*	*Will. Sandys.*
T. Norfolk.	*Jo. Oxynford.*	*William Fitz-William.*
Char. Suffolk.	*H. Northumberland.*	*Henry Guldeford.*
Tho. Dorſet.	*T. Darcy.*	*Anthony Fitz-Herbert.*
H. Exeter.	*T. Rochford.*	*John Fitz-James.*
G. Shrewsbury.	*W. Mountjoy.*	

Theſe Articles were preſented to the King by the Lords, and then ſent down to the lower Houſe: Where *Tho. Cromwel* (obtaining the place of a Burgeſs) ſo wittily defended the Cardinal his Maſter, that no Treaſon could be laid to his charge. And upon this honeſt beginning *Cromwel* obtained his firſt Reputation. Yet could not the reſiſting of this brunt, nor even the gracious Meſſages received frequently from the K. chear up our Cardinal. For as he found the Pope had now a long while neglected to give the K. any ſatisfaction (which certainly was the only way to procure the Cardinal's Reſtitution) and that (for the reſt) no evident ſign of the Kings Relenting appear'd, ſo being not able to ſupport any longer his many Afflictions, He fell dangerouſly ſick. The News whereof being brought to the Kings ears, moved ſo much Compaſſion, as not only He, but, by his Intreaty, Miſtris *Anne Bolen* (whom the Cardinal had in vain importuned to intercede

intercede for him) alſo ſent him ſeveral Tokens; whereof one was a Ruby, wherein the King's Image was curiouſly engraven, a Gift heretofore of the Cardinals, together with a gracious Meſſage delivered by Doctor *Butts* his Phyſician; That his Highneſs was not angry with him in his Heart, which he ſhould know ſhortly. Whereupon as the Cardinal recovered his health, ſo the King, for confirming his Promiſes, ſealed his Pardon, *February* 12. and three days after, by Letters Patents, reſtored him to the Archbiſhoprick of *York*. Moreover, he ſent him Money, Plate, Rich Hangings, and Furniture for his Houſe and Chappel, in that quantity, as the Cardinal was for the preſent much recovered: Hoping alſo, that ſince he had reſigned his Houſe called *York*-Houſe (but afterward by the King ſtyled the Mannor of *Weſtminſter*, now *White-Hall*) that his Puniſhment ended there, and himſelf now upon terms of regaining the Kings favour. The Confidence whereof alſo made him to be an humble Suppliant to the King, that, for his Healths ſake, he might have leave to remove to *Richmond*-Houſe, the uſe of which he had received in exchange from the King, for that his ſumptuous Palace which he built and called by the name of *Hampton-Court*.

1529. Feb. 12. 1530. *Holinſhed.* Feb. 1530. 1525.

It is now time to look a while on forein Hiſtory. Our laſt Narration left the Count *de St. Pol* in *Italy*, where he had quarter'd that part of the Souldiers which remain'd of that years Wars, in their Winter Garriſons; But the Spring being come, he took divers places on this ſide the *Teſino*, and at laſt joyned his Forces with the Duke of *Urbin*, General of the *Venetians*, and *Franciſco Sforza*. Yet, whether that he durſt not attempt the City of *Milan*, which *Antonio de Leyva* ſtrongly defended, or that the Count *de St. Pol* affected more the Enterprize of *Genoüa*, their Army marched to *Landriano*, *June* 21. 1529. Of which *Antonio de Leyva* being advertis'd, uſed that diligence, that he ſurpriſed the Count *de St. Pol*, when part of his Army was matched before, and wholly defeated the reſt, taking him Priſoner.

1528. 1529. June.

This while the Emperor equipped a great Fleet for *Italy*, with intention to be Crowned there, having firſt (for the more ample furniſhing of himſelf with Money) pawn'd the *Moluccas* to the King of *Portugal* for 350000 Ducats.

The Pope hearing of theſe great Preparatives at the ſame Seaſon that the Defeat of *St. Pol* (ſucceeding that of *Lautrech* in *Naples*) had wholly diſabled the Army of the Confederates, reſolved to comply with the times. So that, before the News thereof could eaſily be conveyed to the Emperor, He endeavour'd his own Peace, for this purpoſe employing one *Antonio Muſetolor* a *Neapolitan*; who prevailed ſo far, as he concluded a League at *Barcellona*, *June* 29. to this effect.

June 29.

1. That the Peace betwixt them ſhould be perpetual.

2. That the Imperial Army which was in *Naples* ſhould have ſecure Paſſage through the Popes Territories.

3. That

1529. 3. That the Emperor ſhould give *Donna Margarita* (his Natural Daughter) in Marriage to *Aleſſandro de Medicis* Son of *Lorenzo*, and that he ſhould inveſt him in the State of *Florence*, with the Title of Duke.

4. That *Cervia*, *Ravenno*, *Modena*, *Reggio*, ſhould be reſtor'd to the Apoſtolick See by the Emperor's Power.

5. That the Pope ſhould give unto the Emperor a Bull, with the Title of the Kingdom of *Naples*, to be held in Fee from the Pope, upon payment every year of a Horſe or a Hackney white.

6. That the Pope ſhould in all Eccleſiaſtical Affairs, enjoy his accuſtomed Right.

7. That the Pope and Emperor ſhould ſee one another in *Italy*.

8. That the Emperor ſhould aſſiſt the Pope againſt the Duke of *Ferrara*.

9. That Juſtice ſhould be done to *Franciſco Sforza* Duke of *Milan*, and that the Emperor commit his Cauſe to indifferent Judges.

10. That the Emperor and his Brother *Don Fernando* and the Pope joyn together to reduce the *Lutherans*, either by fair or foul means to the *Roman* Catholick Faith.

All which Articles (and perhaps ſome private ones concerning the
July 3. Affairs of *England* now in agitation) were ſworn to on both ſides upon the Great Altar of the Cathedral Church of *Barcellona*.

And thus did the Pope renounce all his former Deſigns, and betake himſelf intirely to the Emperor, at the ſame time when the two Cardinals ſate on their Commiſſion in *England*. So eaſie was it for the Pope to forget both the Injuries receiv'd from the Imperialiſts, and the good turns from all his Confederates, when a readier way
Bellay. was open'd him for regaining his Cities, and revenging himſelf on
Guicciard. the Duke of *Ferrara* and the *Florentines*, who, during his late Captivity, had expulſed the Family of *Medicis* out of the City.

Francis alſo underſtanding that, upon this ſecond Overthrow of his Forces in *Italy*, his Reputation was loſt, and his Confederates diſcouraged, and hearing beſides, the Pope had concluded this League with the Emperor, thought it better to reſerve his Money for Ranſoming his Children, than to caſt it away in the Wars. So that, notwithſtanding his reiterated Proteſtations of Affection to our King, he underhand laboured a Peace with the Emperor. The Overtures whereof alſo were willingly accepted, both as *Charles* doubted a Change of Religion in *Germany*, and as the Turk had made no little Progreſs in *Hungary*. For which cauſes alſo he choſe rather to hearken to thoſe motions were made for delivering of the Children of *Francis* upon reaſonable terms, than to detain them any longer unuſefully. Thus both their minds ſecretly concurring to Peace, the Treaty thereof was permitted to two Ladies, Madam *Loüiſe* Mother of *Francis*, and Regent of *France*, and Madam *Anna-Margarita* Aunt to *Charles*, and Regent of the *Low-Countries*. Of which kind though the Precedents be rare, yet, as Affairs then ſtood, they were thought no ill Mediatreſſes.

treſſes. Both as the ſuppleneſs of their Sex could better decline that rough Diſpute, which (conſidering the late Cartels) could ſcarce be eſchewed betwixt the Servants of either Prince, and as it was a kind of Gallantry, to eſſay, if after ſo many broken or avoided Treaties which Men had made, one concluded by Women would hold; Howſoever for Women to treat of Marriage or Childrens buſineſs, was no ſtrange thing. But the event ſhewed they were able Negotiatreſſes. For though their firſt Meeting (being at *Cambray*) was not without ſome of that Emulation and Puntille which is ordinary in their Sex, yet at laſt they fell to treat in good earneſt. The Propoſition which before all other Madam *Loüiſe* made, was that a Meſſenger might be ſent to ſee the Eſtate of the Children of *Francis*, it being in vain (ſhe ſaid) to treat of their Delivery, when (for any thing ſhe knew) they were not extant at all. This being accorded, the Ladies proceeded to the more ſubſtantial Articles of a Treaty. 1529. July 5. *Sandov.*

Madam *Margarita* ſaid, indeed, ſhe had no other Inſtruction, but to demand the Execution of the Treaty of *Madrid*; but Madam *Loüiſe*, repreſenting ſometimes the unreaſonableneſs, and ſometimes the impoſſibility of performing thoſe Articles, reduced her to more moderate terms. Whereunto alſo our King's Ambaſſadors, *Cuthbert Tonſtal* Biſhop of *Dureſme*, and Sir *Thomas More*, did no little conduce. For as our King knew the weight he could add on either ſide would ſway the Balance, ſo he interpoſed Offices; Hoping to get either *Francis* to procure his Divorce, or *Charles* to ſuffer it. But as thoſe Princes Affairs requir'd a more quick and ſerious Diſpatch, than to attend the Deciſion of ſo great and doubtful a Buſineſs, they cared little to ſatisfie our King, or to comply with Miſtris *Bolen*. Therefore, ſetting apart thoſe Conſiderations, they attended only their own Intereſts; and Madam *Loüiſe* very particularly the News of her Grand-Childrens Safety. For which purpoſe having employed one *Vordin*, he gave this Account as it is extant in the *Spaniſh* Hiſtory. *Sandov.*

That he found the *Dauphin* and Duke of *Orleans* in the Caſtle of *Pedrazu*, under the Guard of the Marqueſs *de Verlanga*, in a dark Chamber, ill furniſht, having forgotten all their *French*, ſo that when *Vordin* ſpake to them, they requir'd an Interpreter, That their beſt entertainment was playing with little Dogs, and making Pictures in Wax. That, when he preſented them new Cloaths, the Marqueſs would not ſuffer them to be put on, whereof *Vordin* gives this ridiculous Reaſon, That the *Spaniards* believed there were Witches in *France*, that could tranſport any one in the Air when their Charms might but touch the Body. But *Vordin* was deceiv'd; The true Reaſon being, That out of a certain Curioſity for Preſervation of thoſe Princes, as well as diſcharge of his own truſt, *Verlanga* would neither ſuffer thoſe, nor any other Cloaths to be worn by the Princes, till others had put them on firſt. But Madam *Loüiſe* was ſo ill ſatisfied with this Relation, that ſhe haſtned the Peace. To which purpoſe, as the

1529. Cardinal *de Salviati* (the Popes Legate) did contribute his endeavours, (but with favour certainly to the Emperor) ſo our Ambaſſadors likewiſe did cooperate, but ſo, as they had principal regard of *Francis*: our King believing that he might be the ſooner induced openly to aſſiſt him, when his Children were free. Thus theſe pompous Ladies (who met at *Cambray*, *July* 5.) mediated a Peace, though not without ſome Difficulty, Madam *Loüiſe* once breaking off the Treaty, ſo that, had not the Emperor, by an Expreſs Courrier, enlarg'd the Inſtructions given to his Aunt, no Peace had followed. At laſt they concluded this Treaty, in which alſo our King was comprehended.

July 5.

The Treaty of Cambray, *Aug.* 5. 1529.

I. THat there ſhall be a good, ſure, and perpetual Peace betwixt the Emperor and King, and that they ſhall be for ever Friends of the Friends, and Enemies of the Enemies of each other.

II. That the Treaty of *Madrid* ſhall remain in its full force and vigour, and ſhall be inviolably kept betwixt them, their Heirs and Succeſſors, without Innovation, except only in the third, fourth, eleventh, and fourteenth Articles, where mention is made of the Counties of *Auxerrois*, *Maſconnois*, *Bar ſur Seine*, the Vicounty of *Auxone*, and the Superiority or Government of St. *Laurence*. And whereas it was agreed by the Treaty of *Madrid*, that the aforeſaid Places ſhould be reſtored to the Emperor, yet, in conſideration of the Peace, he is content to remain only in the Action and Right, in an amiable courſe, or by way of Juſtice to be executed; which he intends alſo ſhall be reſerved to him and his Heirs, Notwithſtanding any Preſcription of time that can be alledg'd to the contrary, it being permitted alſo to the ſaid King, and his Succeſſors to defend themſelves. Notwithſtanding all which, that a certain Rent, which the ſaid King pretends to have for Salt out of certain Salines in thoſe parts, ſhall be extinct for ever.

III. That the ſaid King for the Ranſom of his two Sons, ſhall pay two Millions of Crowns *de Soleil*, the Gold to be of twenty-two Carats and three quarters, whereof one Million and two Hundred thouſand Crowns ſhall be paid in *Specie*, as much as can be gotten, and the reſt in one intire Maſs of Gold, if the Emperor ſhall ſo think good, or if otherwiſe, it ſhall be coin'd, and Eſſay thereof taken. And at the ſame inſtant the *Dauphin* and Duke of *Orleans* ſhall be delivered to the Deputies of the ſaid King. All which is to be done at or before the firſt day of *March* next enſuing, in the manner and form as ſhall be agreed betwixt the ſaid Emperor and King. And as for the other Eight Hundred Thouſand Crowns, the ſaid King ſhall diſcharge the Emperor of a certain Debt he oweth to the King of *England* for Moneys lent him upon Pawns, as may

appear

appear by certain Schedules and Obligations of his Majeſty, which Debt is ſaid to amount to two hundred and ninety thouſand Crowns *de Soleil*, or thereabouts. And concerning the Remainder of the ſaid two Millions, amounting unto five hundred and ten thouſand Crowns *de Soliel*, The ſaid K. ſhall give unto the Emperor, the ſaid Sum, in Rent, for a certain time, upon certain Lands and Signiories in *Brabant*, *Flanders*, *Hainault*, *Artois*, or elſewhere in the *Low-Countries*, where the Emperor or his Commiſſioners ſhall chuſe or appoint, of the yearly value of twenty-five thouſand and five hundred Crowns, till the ſaid Sum of five hundred and ten thouſand Crowns be made up. All this to commence as ſoon as the Children be delivered. At which time alſo the ſaid King ſhall procure that King *Henry* deliver unto the Emperor the Writings, Shedules, and Obligations, together with the Acquittances for the payments of the ſaid Debts. As alſo the ſaid Pawns and Obligation of Indemnity promiſed by the ſaid Emperor to the King of *England*; And that the ſaid two Millions being thus paid, the Emperor ſhall not demand any thing for cauſe of his Impriſonment. 1529.

IV. That *Francis*, in the ſpace of ſix weeks after the Ratification of this Treaty, ſhall revoke and call back all the Forces he hath in *Italy*, whether *French* or Mercenaries, ſo that the Emperor may be aſſured thereof Fifteen days before the Reſtitution of the ſaid Hoſtages.

V. That the ſaid King within Fifteen days after the Receipt of the Ratification of this Treaty, ſhall reſtore unto the Emperor the Caſtle and Bayliage of *Heſdin*, as a Member of his County of *Artois*, together with the Cannon and Munition, according to the Treaty of *Madrid*, except thoſe Moveables that have been reſtored to the Lady *Reux*.

VI. That, becauſe in the Treaty of *Madrid*, the ſaid King hath agreed to leave and quit unto the Emperor all his Rights of Juriſdiction and Superiority, that he and his Predeceſſors Kings of *France* have held, or may claim in the Counties of *Flanders* and *Artois*, as alſo in the City of *Arras*, *Tournay*, *Tournayſis*, St. *Amand*, and *Mortaign*, and as alſo in *Liſle*, *Douay*, and *Orchies*; And, becauſe upon theſe general terms, ſome Difficulties might ariſe; therefore it is declar'd by this preſent Article, that the ſaid King in confirmation of the Treaty of *Madrid*, hath left, given, and tranſported, as alſo the ſaid Lady his Mother, in his Name, and by virtue of the Authority given her, doth leave, give, and tranſport unto the ſaid Emperor, his Heirs and Succeſſors, being Counts and Counteſſes of *Flanders*, the Fee, Homage, Oath of Fidelity, and all other marks of Subjection which either he or his Anceſtors have had, or pretended to have, over the ſaid Counts and Counteſſes of *Flanders*, or any others inhabiting in the ſaid Counties.

VII. That the ſaid King hath renounc'd, and that by the Authority given her, the Dutcheſs of *Angouleſme*, his Mother, doth renounce

1529. all right and claim to *Liſle*, *Douay* and *Orchies*, conſenting further that they ſhall be united unto the County of *Flanders*, in manner as they were before they were tranſported to the King of *France*, by a Treaty at *Paris*, *Aug.* 2. 1498.

VIII. That the ſaid King hath renounc'd, and that, by the Authority given her, the Dutcheſs of *Angouleſme*, his Mother, doth renounce all right and claim which he or his Anceſtors Kings of *France* have had, or may pretend to have in the City of *Tournay*, the Bayliage of *Tournayſis*, the Towns of *Mortaign* and St. *Amand*, with all the Rights. Furthermore, conſenting that they may be united and incorporated unto the ſaid County of *Flanders*.

IX. That the ſaid King hath renounced, and, by the Authority given her, the ſaid Dutcheſs of *Angouleſme*, his Mother, doth renounce all Right or Claim they pretend to have in the City of *Arras*, or upon the Biſhoprick and Cathedral Church thereof, except ſo much of the Revenues of the ſaid Biſhoprick and Church, as is in the Kingdom of *France*.

X. That the ſaid King hath conſented, granted, and, by the Authority given her, the ſaid Dutcheſs of *Angouleſme*, his Mother, doth conſent and grant to the Emperor, his Heirs and Succeſſors, Counts and Counteſſes of *Artois*, that they ſhall remain for ever henceforth quit and diſcharged from the Fee and Homage, Oath of Fidelity, or any other mark of Subjection which he or his Anceſtors, Counts and Counteſſes of *Artois*, have been bound to do or acknowledge to the Kings of *France*, excepting only *Theroüene*, and the Poſſeſſion belonging to the Churches of *Artois*, being in *France*, and ſome ſmall Towns in the *Bolognois*.

XI. That the ſaid King hath given and tranſported, and, by the Authority given her, the ſaid Dutcheſs of *Angouleſme*, his Mother, doth give and tranſport a Service or Tenure of *Artois*, commonly called the antient Compoſition of *Artois*, amounting yearly to Fourteen Thouſand Livres *Tournois*, unto the Emperor, his Heirs and Succeſſors, Counts and Counteſſes of *Artois*.

XII. That the Inhabitants of *Artois* be free from all manner of Impoſition or Tribute heretofore claimed by the Kings of *France*.

XIII. That the Emperor reciprocally ſhall renounce and tranſport, as alſo, by the Authority given her, the ſaid Lady the Arch-Dutcheſs, doth renounce and tranſport, for ever, unto the ſaid King, his Heirs and Succeſſors, all the Right and Title that the ſaid Emperor or his Predeceſſors hold or claim in any of the States, Lands and Signiories of the moſt Chriſtian King; and eſpecially all he may pretend to in *Peronne*, *Montdidier*, and *Roye*, and in the Counties of *Bolognois*, *Guiſnes*, and *Ponthieu*, and in the Towns and Signiories ſituated upon the *Soam*, either upon the one part thereof or the other, together with all the Juriſdictions belonging unto them; Notwithſtanding any Treaty heretofore made to the contrary.

XIV. That, Notwithſtanding the Tranſportation, the Emperor hath

hath made by the Treaty of *Madrid*, of the County of *Huinen Artois* unto the *French* King, it is declared by theſe Preſents, that the Places thereof which are, at this preſent, in the Emperors Poſſeſſion, ſhall remain free and exempt from any Pretence of the *French*, as thoſe above-mentioned. 1529.

XV. That all the aforeſaid Renouncings and Tranſportations made by the King unto the Emperor, ſhall be underſtood as valid; Notwithſtanding any derogation which may riſe from any Union or Incorporation of them unto the Crown of *France*, or any bar of the Law Salick. And that the ſaid King and his Succeſſors ſhall never attempt the contrary hereunto, when yet they might pretend to do it by Right.

XVI. That all Sutes and Proceſſes undecided in the Parliament of *Paris*, or any other Court of Juſtice of the ſaid King, which may have Relation to the Inhabitants of *Flanders* or *Artois* by reaſon of Fees, Lands or Poſſeſſions ſituate in the aforeſaid Counties, ſhall be remitted to the Great Council of the ſaid Emperor, or to other his Courts of Juſtice in the ſaid Counties of *Flanders* and *Artois*, to be there finally determined.

XVII. That if any definitive Sentence have been given, before this laſt War, againſt the Inhabitants of the Counties of *Flanders* and *Artois*, that the power of executing them ſhall be committed to the Officers of the Emperor.

XVIII. That the Parliament of *Paris* ſhall remit unto the Preſident, and others of the Emperors Great Council in *Malines*, the Proceſs or Sute concerning the Right which the Count *de Nevers*, or his Wife or Children pretend to the Inheritance of *John* of *Burgundy*, &c.

XIX. That, notwithſtanding the *Droict d' Aubene*, the Subjects of either Prince may enjoy their Right in as ample form as the Natural Inhabitants of the Country uſe to do. And as for the County of *Carolois*, that the Lady Arch-Dutcheſs may enjoy it during her life, and after her Deceaſe, the Emperor, and then that it ſhall return to the Crown of *France*. And it is further agreed, that ſhe may enjoy certain Rights in *Noyers*, and other places, in the ſame manner as ſhe enjoyed them in the life of King *Philip* of *Caſtile* her Brother.

XX. That, if the King or any in his name do hold any Town, Caſtle, or Fort in the State and Dutchy of *Milan*; it ſhall be reſtor'd to the Emperor and his Commiſſaries, within ſix weeks after the Ratification of this Treaty.

XXI. That the ſaid King ſhall deliver unto the Emperor or his Commiſſaries, within the ſpace of ſix weeks after the Ratification of this Treaty, the *Contado de Aſti*, with all that appertaineth to it, to be enjoyed by the ſaid Emperor, his Heirs and Succeſſors for ever.

XXII. That the ſaid King likewiſe ſhall reſtore unto the Emperor or his Commiſſaries, *Barleta* and all other places that he or any for him holdeth in the Kingdom of *Naples*, as ſoon as is poſſible, and

1529. and before the Reſtitution of *Francis* his Children. And it is further agreed, that the ſaid King, within fifteen days after the Publication of this Treaty, ſhall require the *Venetians* and all other his Confederates to reſtore all the Towns, Caſtles, and Fortreſſes that they hold in the Kingdom of *Naples*, within the ſpace of ſix weeks. And that, in caſe of Contravention (when the term is expired) the ſaid King ſhall declare himſelf expreſly their Enemy, and from that day forwards, ſhall give the Emperor thirty thouſand Crowns *de Soleil* monethly, until the ſaid places be recover'd, and brought to obedience to the Emperor. And, in caſe they be not ſo recovered before the *Dauphin* and Duke of *Orleans* be delivered, the ſaid King ſhall give good Security to the Emperor for continuing the ſaid pay monethly, until they be reduced to the Emperors Obedience. Upon condition yet, that, if the Emperor employ not the Money to the purpoſe aforeſaid, it ſhall be paid back again, and that therefore the King may appoint ſome perſon who may inform him of the time, when the ſaid Places ſhall be taken in. And that the ſaid King neither directly nor indirectly ſhall favour any in the Kingdom of *Naples*, that have rebelled againſt the Emperor ſince the Treaty of *Madrid*.

XXIII. That the King ſhall reſtore alſo unto the Emperor or his Commiſſaries, all that can be recovered, of that which was taken out of the Galleys in *Portofino*.

XXIV. That, for the particular in the Treaty of *Madrid*, concerning the Reſidence that *Mounſieur de Angouleſme* ſhould make with the Emperor, it is remitted to the Kings diſcretion.

XXV. That, for the particular of the League defenſive agreed in the Treaty of *Madrid*, it ſhall be underſtood only in Relation to the patrimonial Poſſeſſions on either ſide, and that the Charges incident thereunto ſhall be at the coſts of the demander, and, for the reſt, that the ſaid King ſhall not meddle in any Practices either in *Italy* or *Germany* to the prejudice of the Emperor.

XXVI. That the Marriage concluded by the Treaty of *Madrid*, between the ſaid King, and the Lady *Leonora* Queen Dowager of *Portugal*, and eldeſt Siſter of the Emperor, ſhall be accompliſhed. And that the ſaid K. as ſoon as can be, after the Ratification of this Treaty, ſhall ſend Ambaſſadors with ſufficient and eſpecial Power and Authority to ratifie and approve all that ſhall be needful concerning the ſaid Marriage. For the Accompliſhment and Conſummation whereof, the ſaid Queen ſhall be conducted into *France*, at the ſame inſtant that the *Dauphin* and Duke of *Orleans* ſhall be delivered. And that the ſaid Matrimony ſhall hold in all things according to the Treaty of *Madrid*, ſaving in that only which concerns the Counties of *Auxerrois*, *Maſconnois*, and the Signiory of *Bar ſur Seine*; with reſervation yet of thoſe Rights which ſhould (as is ſaid before) appertain to the Dutchy of *Burgundy*. And becauſe the term of payment of the Two hundred thouſand Crowns in Lieu of Dowry of the

ſaid

said Queen, and specified in the Treaty of *Madrid*, is expir'd; It is agreed again, that the said Dowry should be paid, the half within six Moneths next ensuing, and the other half within six weeks following, and that upon receipt of the whole Sum or part thereof, the said King shall be bound to give assurance in the manner as is specified in the Treaty of *Madrid*. 1529.

XXVII. That, forasmuch as concerns the Help and Assistance by Land and by Sea promised by the said King for the Passage of the Emperor into *Italy*, the said Emperor releaseth it, upon Condition only, that, within two Months after he be requir'd thereunto (whether it be for his Passage into *Italy*, or for his Return, or for his Service while he is there) he give twelve Galleys, four Ships, and four Galleons sufficiently provided with Artillery, and Sea-men, without any Souldiers yet to be put in them, but such as the Emperor shall appoint; And at the Cost of the said King (except the *Soudateſque*) for the space of five Moneths, after the time that they shall come into the Haven, which his Majesty shall nominate. The said Emperor delivering unto the Captain or General (that should bring the said Armado) Letters Patents signed with his hand, and sealed with his Seal, by which he shall promise and swear, after the said five Moneths to restore immediately to the said King or his Deputies, the said Armado, in the manner that he receiv'd it. And moreover, the said King shall pay really to the said Emperor the two hundred thousand Crowns, that, by the Treaty of *Madrid*, he promised to pay his Majesty, for the aforesaid Voyage; that is to say, One Hundred thousand Crowns within six Months next ensuing, and the other Hundred thousand Crowns within six Moneths after. And, as for the pay of six thousand Foot for six Moneths, which the said King promis'd to furnish, giving therefore the Caution and Security of sufficient Merchants, the Emperor by this Treaty acquits him of it, upon condition, that he pay one hundred thousand Crowns *de Soleil*, the which Sum shall remain and be for the increasing of the Dowry of the Queen Dowager *Leonora*.

XXVIII. That, becaus in the said Treaty of *Madrid* there is no mention of the Profits and Rents of the Inheritances given by the said Emperor and King during the War, whereupon many Questions and Differences may arise: It is determined and concluded by this Treaty, that all such Profits and Rents, Ecclesiastical or Secular, as also all Debts, Moveables, which have or might have been given expresly by Letters Patents of the said Emperor and King, or their Lieutenants in any manner, with title of Confiscation, and which have been delivered, taken, or paid during the War betwixt the two Princes before the Treaty of *Madrid*, shall remain for ever given and acquitted to the Profit of the said Lords, Vassals, Lands Towns, and Persons subject to the said Emperor and King, and of their Allies which in the said Wars shall have taken the part of the one or the other.

XXIX. That

1529. XXIX. That all the Privileges of the Towns, Neighbours, and Inhabitants of the Counties of *Flanders* and *Artois*, and other Places of the *Low-Countries*, which appertain to the Emperor, ſhall, by this preſent Capitulation, be confirm'd, and that the Privileges alſo that the *French* were wont to enjoy in the ſaid Emperors Dominions ſhall remain in their full force, according as hath been accuſtomed on both ſides.

XXX. That all Priſoners of War taken by Sea or Land, as well before as after the Treaty of *Madrid*, of the one part or of the other, Subjects of the ſaid Emperor and moſt Chriſtian King (excepting the *Neapolitan* Subjects of the Emperor that have ſerved againſt him in the ſame Kingdom) And any other that have ſerved, followed, and held the contrary part, of what Nation or Condition ſoever, ſhall be ſet free, and put at Liberty, without paying Ranſom, within two Months after the Ratification of the Treaty, reſerving only thoſe Priſoners, which before the ſaid Treaty ſhould have been put to Ranſom, who ſhall pay their Ranſom notwithſtanding this Article.

XXXI. That if *Robert de la March* or his Children ſhall preſume to make any Enterpriſe upon the Caſtle and Dutchy of *Bouillon*, (conquered by the Emperor, and left by his Majeſty to the Church of *Liege*, to which it antiently appertained) in ſuch caſe the King may give no hope, favour or aſſiſtance, neither directly or indirectly againſt the ſaid Chureh.

XXXII. That the Heirs of *Charles* Duke of *Bourbon*, according to the Treaty of *Madrid*, ſhall enjoy all thoſe Goods and Poſſeſſions that pertain to the ſaid Duke, ſo that, notwithſtanding all Judgments and Sentences given and pronounced againſt the ſaid Duke, during his Life, or after his Death, the Heirs of the ſaid Duke ſhall enjoy their antient Right.

XXXIII. That *Jean* Count of *Pontieure* ſhall be reſtor'd unto all the Goods which his Father enjoy'd at that time that he went out of *France* to ſerve the Emperor, and that alſo the other Friends, Allies and Servants of the ſaid Duke of *Bourbon*, as alſo their Heirs and Succeſſors, ſhall enjoy the benefit of the Treaty of *Madrid* in all that may concern them; Notwithſtanding any Judgments or Sentences given and pronounced to the contrary.

XXXIV. That *Don Lorenzo de Gorrenod* Count *de Pondevaux*, *Mayordomo* of the Emperor, ſhall be put in the real Poſſeſſion of the Towns, Caſtles, Lands and Signiories of *Chalamont* and *Montmarles*, bought heretofore of the Duke of *Bourbon*, upon Condition yet that, if the Sum of Twenty Thouſand Crowns (being the Price for which they were ſold) be paid back again, that they return to the firſt Owners.

XXXV. That the ſaid King, by this preſent Treaty, hath taken away and remov'd, and doth take away and remove the Sequeſtration and all other Impediments on his part concerning the Principality of *Aurange*, and the Superiority of it, to the intent that *Don Philibert de Chaalon*,

Chaalon, Prince of *Aurange*, Vice-roy of *Naples*, may enjoy it, together with his preheminence and ſuperiority, as he enjoy'd it before the ſaid Sequeſtration. 1529.

XXXVI. That the Dutcheſs of *Vendoſme*, Widow, ſhall be reſtor'd into all the Poſſeſſions that ſhe had in the Emperors Dominions, before, or during the Wars; and *Loüis Seigneur de Hanis* ſhall enjoy the like for his part.

XXXVII. That the *Comte* of *Gaure* ſhall be reſtor'd to his own in the like manner.

XXXVIII. That, for the buſineſs of *Philip de Croy*, Marquis of *Areſchot*, and the difference betwixt him and the *Seigneurs* of *Chaſteau-Bryon*, and others, Tutors of the Children of *Monſieur de Leutrech*, that it ſhould be referr'd to a particular Treaty, and Agreement before the Governors of the City, and Dutchy of *Cambray*, which ſaid agreement ſhall ſtand.

XXXIX. That, the Sute depending, in the Parliament of *Paris*, between *Adolphus* of *Burgundy Seigneur de Beures* on the one part, for the Seigneuries of *Creue-cœur* in *Cambreſis*, &c. and the Kings Attorny on the other part, ſhall be referred, in the ſtate it now is, to four Judges, whereof two be named by the Emperor, and two by the King: And that the ſaid Judges ſhall be bound to return and determine the cauſe in the City of *Cambray*, twenty days after the Ratification of this Treaty. And that, if two of the four Judges abſent themſelves, the other two, that is to ſay, one of either part, may proceed to give ſentence.

XL. That in this Peace and Treaty is comprehended, as a principal Contractor, the Pope and the Apoſtolick See, which the ſaid Emperor and King ſhall maintain in his authority and preheminence: and that they ſhall procure that the Towns and places, being of the Patrimony of the Church, ſhall be reſtored. Alſo there are comprehended herein as principal Contractors, the Kings of *Hungary*, *England*, and *Poland*, *Chriſtiern* King of *Denmark*, the Kings of *Portugal* and *Scotland*, and the Lady Arch-Dutcheſs Aunt to the Emperor. Alſo there are comprehended herein as Confederates, the Electors, the Cardinal of *Liege*, &c. Alſo it is agreed, that all the ſaid principal Contractors and Confederates ſhall be advertiſed hereof by the ſaid King and Emperor.

XLI. That the ſaid King ſhall procure the community or Republick of *Florence*, within four Months after the Ratification of this Treaty, to agree with the Emperor, which being done, they alſo ſhall be comprehended herein, and not otherwiſe. And becauſe, ſince the Treaty of *Madrid*, *Charles* Duke of *Gueldres Comte de Zutphen* hath taken part with the Emperor, and agreed with him, hir Majeſty declares him for his Confederate, and all others nominated here: And that thoſe who are not nominated ſhall be excluded out of the ſaid Treaty, unleſs they be comprehended under the general terms of Vaſſals or Subjects of the ſaid Kings.

1529.

XLII. That the ſaid Emperor and King (aſſoon as they well can) for Ratification and Confirmation of this preſent Treaty (in which *de verbo ad verbum* there muſt be inſerted and joyned together the Treaty of *Madrid*) ſhall ſwear ſolemnly upon the Evangeliſts, and the wood of the true Croſs, in the preſence of the Holy Sacrament, and theſe Ambaſſadors that ſhall be appointed thereunto, to hold and keep (every one for his part) all the points and Articles of this Treaty, as alſo all thoſe contain'd in the Treaty of *Madrid*, which are not altred, chang'd, and innovated by theſe preſents; ſubmitting themſelves, for performance hereof, to the Juriſdictions and Eccleſiaſtical cenſures, even to the Invocation of the ſecular power *incluſivè*; Conſtituting their Proctors *in forma cameræ Apoſtolicæ*, to appear in their names, or in either of them, in the Court of *Rome* before the Pope, and the *Auditori della Ruota*, and to receive voluntarily the condemnation and fulmination of the ſaid Cenſures in caſe of Contravention; and, for this purpoſe, to ſubmit themſelves and prorogue their Juriſdiction before ſome Prelate or Eccleſiaſtical Judge. And that neither the ſaid Emperor and King, nor any of them may (without mutual conſent) demand a Relaxation of the ſaid Oath, nor an Abſolution of the ſaid Cenſures. And that, if any did demand and obtain it, it ſhall not avail him, without the conſent of the other.

XLIII. That the ſaid K. ſhall Ratifie and approve both this Treaty and that of *Madrid* in the form there mentioned, ſave where it hath been chang'd, altred, and innovated by theſe preſents, foraſmuch as concerns the Seigneur *Dauphin*, according to the manner declared in the ſaid Treaty of *Madrid*. And that he alſo ſhall cauſe this Treaty to be Ratified and approv'd by all the particular Eſtates of the Provinces and Governments of his Kingdoms: And that he ſhall make them ſwear and promiſe, that the ſaid Treaty ſhall be perpetually kept, and ſhall cauſe them to be Regiſtred and verified in the Parliament of *Paris*, and all other Parliaments of the Kingdom of *France*, in the preſene of the Attorneys General of the ſaid Parliaments, to whom the ſaid K. ſhall give eſpecial and irrevocable power, to appear in his Name, in all the ſaid Parliaments, and there conſent to the aforeſaid Inregiſtring, and ſubmit himſelf voluntarily to the keeping of all that is contain'd in the ſaid Treaty. And that, by virtue of the ſaid voluntary ſubmiſſion, he may be enjoyned or condemned thereunto, by the definitive ſentence of the ſaid Parliaments in good and convenient form. And that this Treaty ſhall be alſo verified and Inregiſt'red in the *Chambre des Comptes* of *Paris*, in the preſence, and with the conſent of the Kings Attorney, for the more effectual execution, and accompliſhment of them, and the validations of the Acquittances, Renuntiations, Submiſſions, and other things contain'd and declar'd in the ſaid Treaty. Which Ratifications, Inregiſtrings, Verifications, and all other things above-mention'd ſhall be done and perfected by the ſaid King, and the diſpatches of them,

them, in due form delivered into the hands of the ſaid Emperor, before his Children be delivered, and within the ſpace of four Months at furtheſt. And if, for the Inregiſtring and verifications above-mention'd, it ſhould be neceſſary that the ſaid King ſhould releaſe, and diſcharge unto his Officers thoſe Oaths that they have taken, not to conſent or ſuffer any alienations of the Crown, the ſaid King ſhall do it; and that alſo the ſaid Emperor ſhall, in his great Council, and his other Councils, and *Chambres des Comptes* in his Dominions of the *Low-Countries*, cauſe to be made ſuch other Inregiſtring, and verifications, releaſing alſo the Oath of his Officers, and cauſing the particular States of his ſaid Dominions to Ratifie and approve this Treaty, within the time above-mentioned. 1529.

XLIV. That this Peace ſhall be publiſh'd through all the Kingdoms and Seigneuries and Dominions of the Emperor and the King, and eſpecially the Frontiers, before the 15th. of *September* next, to the intent that no man may pretend Ignorance; and the ſaid Arch-Dutcheſs on the part of the Emperor, and the Dutcheſs of *Angouleſme* on the part of the *French* King, and the ſaid Arch-Dutcheſs particularly for the Queen *Leonora*, foraſmuch as may duly concern her, and by thoſe Oaths that every one of them hath made, do promiſe that they ſhall duly Ratifie all that is contain'd in this Treaty of Peace. And that they ſhall give Letters Patents thereof, in due and ſufficient form, on either part, within two Months and a half after the concluding this preſent Treaty.

In teſtimony whereof the ſaid Ladies Arch-Dutcheſs and Dutcheſs, and each of them, have ſigned and ſealed theſe preſents. Dated in the City of *Cambray* the 5th. of *Auguſt*, 1529.

Margarite.
Loüiſe.

And this is the moſt ſubſtantial part of the Treaty of *Cambray*, as it is ſet down by *Sandoval*; but *Bellay l.* 3. adds, that, beſides the above-mention'd two Millions of Crowns, *Francis* paid, for the Emperor, to our King, 500000 Crowns as a penalty the Emperor had incurr'd for not marrying the Princeſs *Mary*. Moreover, that he was bound to diſ-ingage, from our King, a rich Jewel in the form of a Flower-de-luce, wherein was a piece of the wood of the true Croſs, being pawn'd heretofore by *Philip*, Father of the Emperor, to *Henry* the Seventh, for fifty thouſand Crowns. The Acquittances, for which payments, together with the Jewel, as the ſame Author confeſſeth to have been ſent to the Emperor, ſo he acknowledgeth, in the manner of it, the great Liberality of our King; who, beſides giving *Francis* four years Term, for payment of 400000 Crowns (which, as he ſaith, was the Money lent by our King to *Charles*) did remit and forgive him abſolutely the 500000 Crowns above-mention'd; and, for the Jewel, preſented it to his Godſon *Henry*, ſecond Son of *Francis* by the conveyance of *Guillaume Seigneur de Langey*, whom *Bell. l.* 3. 1525.

1529.

whom the *French* King ſent for that purpoſe into *England*.

Beſides this Treaty, I find, by our Records, another at the ſame time and place, made betwixt our King, and the Lady *Margarite*, in the name of the Emperor. Our Kings Commiſſioners being *Cuthbert Tonſtal* Biſhop of *London*, Sir *Thomas More*, Chancellor of the Dutchy of *Lancaſter*, and Mr. *John Hacket*, our Kings reſident there. Which yet, becauſe it contains nothing of extraordinary, but only the Continuation of Traffick for Merchants, and the forbidding to print or ſell any *Lutheran* Books on either ſide, I purpoſely omit.

Mart. du Bell. l. 3.

Sandov.

Francis underſtanding this concluſion of Peace at *Cambray*, haſteth thither, that he might both render the Lady *Margaret* a viſit, and promiſe not to fail in the performance of thoſe Articles his Mother had agreed. Which yet the *Spaniſh* Writers ſay He held no longer than until the Ambaſſadors of his Confederates in *Italy* came to him; So that, when, together with his breach of League with them, they repreſented their own miſerable eſtate at that preſent, He excuſed himſelf, through the neceſſity of his condition at that time; aſſuring them nevertheleſs, that, notwithſtanding any Treaty, he would continue his love to and care of them, only when firſt he might have his Children. So that in effect he ſecretly aſſiſted them ſtill; as hoping thereby to defend himſelf againſt the Emperor, when occaſion were. Which alſo he extended ſo far, as, upon preſumption thereof, he broke ſome Articles lately concluded with the *Spaniard*. The News of this Treaty was no ſooner brought to Queen *Leonora*, but ſhe, for the better complying with her Husband, interceded with the Empreſs, upon pretence that *Charles* attempted to draw ſome of the *Suiſſe* (heretofore allied with *Francis*) unto his ſervice, and that the Children of *Francis* might have ſome more liberty, and the *French* detain'd in *Villalpando* a leſs ſtraight Priſon; which alſo was granted her by the Empreſs.

July 28. Auguſt 12. *Sandov.*

For the Emperor taking his opportunity (while the Treaty betwixt the Ladies was in agitation) departed from *Barcelona* the 28th. of *July* 1529. and arriv'd at *Genoüa* the 12th. of *Auguſt* after, with a Royal Train, and about eight thouſand Soldiers. And here (as *Sandoval* obſerves) began the wearing of ſhort hair, (the Emperor cutting off his, as a vow for his paſſage, or, as others have it, for a pain in his Head,) long hair having been accuſtomed for many ages before. The Pope, being inform'd of this Voyage of the Emperors, ſends ſome Cardinals to meet him at *Genoüa*, himſelf in the mean while, preparing to attend him at *Bononia*. While the Emperor having found a reception from the *Genoüeſi*, temper'd betwixt love and fear, did ſo civilly interpret all to be reſpect, that He bid them a kind farewel, and ſo held on his way till he came neer the confines of the Popes poſſeſſions: Where three Cardinals (carrying with them the Book of Ceremonies) met Him; And, after due Congratulations, made it appear that the antient Cuſtom of all thoſe who entred upon the Patrimony of the Church, was, to ſwear firſt not to

to offer any violence to it. The Emperor accepts the Oath, yet ſo as he ſaid he would not prejudice his own Imperial right. And becauſe this was near to *Piacenza*, divers underſtood his words to have relation to that place, which as alſo *Parma*, is ſaid to have belong'd antiently to the Dutchy of *Milan*. The Emperor had now a great Army in *Italy* under the command of *Antonio de Leyva*, which was employ'd chiefly again the *Venetians*, to which it is probable alſo he would have joyned his own Forces, had not News come to him of the great miſchiefs which *Barbaroſſa*, that famous Pirate, did on the Seas, and of the *Turks* entry into *Hungary* with Two Hundred and fifty thouſand men. For as this ſtartled the Emperor from his deſigns in *Italy*, ſo he conſidered as well how uſeful the Pope would be in diſpoſing other Princes to joyn againſt this formidable Army. For which reaſons, as alſo for making his Coronation more glorious, He reſolved to proteſt againſt all other enterpriſes, and apply himſelf wholly to that War. And the rather, becauſe the *Turk* had lately undertaken the protection of *John Sepuſe*, pretender to the Kingdom of *Hungary*, and now laid Siege to *Vienna*, and endanger'd therein the Antient Patrimony of the Houſe of *Auſtria*; Beſides, the Proteſtants in *Germany*, having, about this time, made ſome high demands, He thought it his part to correct or ſuppreſs them. Only he judg'd it neceſſary not to give any publick demonſtration thereof, until the affairs of *Italy* were compos'd. Therefore, he firſt makes a Peace with the *Venetians*, upon Condition they ſhould reſtore the places with-held in *Naples* from him, and give back to the Pope likewiſe the Poſſeſſions of the Church. Moreover, that they ſhould pay him a great ſum of Money towards his charges. Which Articles the *Venetians* (as being in effect abandoned of all their Confederates) gladly accepted, only, when the Duke of *Urban* (their General) might be comprehended therein. Which alſo was accorded. They, together with the Pope, interceded likewiſe for *Franciſco Sforza*, deſiring he might be reſtor'd to his former Eſtate. The Emperor alſo, conſidering that he could make no ſecure Peace in *Italy*, unleſs he remov'd all juſt cauſes of jealouſie, begins to think how he might gratifie *Sforza* herein, upon a Propoſition of a Marriage to be made between him, and *Chriſtierna* younger Daughter of the King of *Denmark*, and *Iſabel*, Siſter to the Emperor; which yet becauſe of her unripeneſs for Marriage (being now but ten years old) took no effect till 1534. So that, when the buſineſs of *Florence* might have been ended, all *Italy* now ſeem'd compos'd to quietneſs. Theſe things thus ſetled, the Emperor entred *Bononia* about the beginning of *Novemb.* with more glory, doubtleſs, in that he was inform'd how the *Turk* had rais'd his Siege from *Vienna*, about twenty days before. From whence after a Moneths ſiege, He was forced to retire by the Valour of an old *German* Garriſon, commanded by *Philip* Count *Palatine*, having done nothing notable, but crowned with his own Hand, at *Buda*, *John Sepuſe* K. of *Hungary*.

1529.

Sept.

1534.

Novemb. 5.

1529. *gary.* His reception alſo was Magnificent, while the youth of that City having apparell'd themſelves in a Livery, attended his Horſe like Lacquais, that they might have the better pretence to be near him. After whom followed his Army, ſome choice perſons whereof carried *Antonio de Leyva* on their ſhoulders; (though whether in regard of his antient infirmity of the Gout, or otherwiſe, for more oſtentation, is not certain.) In which equipage he went to the Church of St. *Petronio*, at the gate whereof the Pope, having rais'd a high Throne upon a Scaffold, and placed himſelf on the top, with his *Tiara* or Triple-Crown on his Head, and, for the reſt, attended with a great train of Cardinals, did in that poſture expect him. The Emperor alighting here from his Horſe aſcended the ſteps, and humbled himſelf to a kiſs of the Popes foot, which the Pope preſently diverted to a Pax or kiſs on the cheek. Which Ceremony as it attracted all mens eyes, ſo was it the more conſiderable unto the ſpectators, for that the conjunction of thoſe two great lights (as they termed it) could not but portend ſome ſtrange effect to Chriſtendom. *Charles* was then about twenty-nine, that is to ſay, in the prime age to temper his countenance betwixt lovelineſs and Majeſty; though nothing yet, in his face, was ſo remarkable as his great nether-lip. Which *Sandoval* will have to be peculiarly deriv'd to that family (even to this day) from the Houſe of *Burgundy*. The Pope though gray, retain'd yet much vigor in his eyes, though obſerved for nothing ſo much as his beard, which not only he, but alſo all the Cardinals, as our Agent *Rich. Crook* hath it, wore at a great length; beſides, he ſaid, many of them had their Robes or Veſtures of a Violet colour, inſtead of Scarlet, appearing, for the reſt, (as the ſame *Crook* relates) in their faſhions ſomewhat Soldier-like. This Interview being paſt, not without a ſerious Proteſtation of the Emperors, that he would ſtrive to reduce the affairs of Religion into better terms, they both lodged in the ſame Houſe, for the more conveniency of that private conference, which often paſt betwixt them: which alſo continued for ſome Moneths before they departed. Wherefore though it were thought that the Emperor would make his advantage, as having the Pope in his power and cuſtody; Yet the Pope and *Venetians* ſo manag'd the buſineſs, as, joyning offices together (as is aboveſaid) they obtain'd that *Franciſco Sforza* ſhould be admitted to the Emperors preſence, and in ſequence thereof not only pardon'd, but reſtor'd to the Dutchy of *Milan*. Which act of the Emperors, as it was magnanimous beyond expectation, ſo was it no leſs opportune; both as it quieted not the *Eſtates* alone, but even minds of the *Italians*; and, as he diſpos'd them thereby to give them their beſt aſſiſtance towards his great affairs in *Germany*. Beſides, he excludes *Francis* from hope of attempting that Dutchy, unleſs he would declare himſelf an open diſturber of the Peace of *Italy*. He did not omit yet, to Capitulate with *Sforza*, that the Marquis *de Guaſto*, and *Antonio de Leyva* ſhould have certain Lands aſſign'd them out of the Dutchy, and that he might

put

put Garriſons in ſome of the moſt important places thereof, till conditions were perform'd. Shortly after which a kind of univerſal League, under pretence of the good of Chriſtendom, was by the Popes means concluded, (place being left for thoſe that would to enter into it) which alſo was publiſh'd the firſt of *Jan.* 1530. in the Church of St. *Petronio.* And thus the Emperor proceeded to his Coronation in *Bononia*, whither the Crown of Iron (which ſhould be receiv'd at *Milan*) being brought, and after put on in the Popes Chappel; The other, of Gold, was ſet on his Head, *Feb.* 24. (which was his Birth-day) by the Pope in the great Church, with many Ceremonies. Among which I find none more notable, than that the Emperor, by antient cuſtom, muſt firſt put on the habit of a Canon of *Sancta Maria dellatorre* in *Rome*, and after that of a Deacon, before they can be compleatly inveſted in this Imperial dignity, the Pope the mean while ſaying Maſs, both in *Latine* and in *Greek*. The Rites whereof appear'd ſo much more new and ſtrange, that ſince the time of *Frederick* 1442. no Emperor had been publickly Crowned. This being done, *Franciſco Sforza* was reſtor'd to an actual poſſeſſion of his Eſtate. The Emperor placing only a Commander in the Fortreſs or Cittadel of *Milan*, and another in *Como*, and cauſing the City of *Monzo* with vaſt poſſeſſions to be given *Antonio de Leyva.* Having thus ſetled *Lombardy*, He commandeth his Army to march againſt the *Florentines*, whom the Pope paſſionately deſir'd to chaſtiſe for the many Injuries his Name and Family had lately received from them.

1529.

Jan. 1. 1530.

Feb. 22. Feb. 24.

1442.

All which ſigns of amity and correſpondence being advertis'd to our King, by *Crook*, and other his Agents in *Italy*, it was eaſie to imagine what hope of favour he might expect from the Pope in his important Buſineſs; yet, leſt he ſhould omit any thing which might ſerve for Juſtification of his Honour and Dignity in a lawful way, He ſent to the moſt famous Univerſities of *Italy*, and elſe-where, to have their opinions concerning the Divorce. Not offering any way to prevail himſelf either of his own power among his Clergy, or of the Counſel the Pope had formerly given him, till he had firſt diſcover'd what the learned'ſt men in Chriſtendom held in that point. He alſo writ Letters with his own hand to the Biſhop of *Worceſter*, and Sir *Gregory Caſalis*, (then with the Pope) to tell them, that he had ſent Sir *Thomas Bolen*, (newly created) Earl of *Wiltſhire* and *Ormond*, with *John Stokeſley*, Elect Biſhop of *London*, and *Edward Lee*, as his Ambaſſadors to the Emperor, and that they ſhould adviſe together what was to be done. Theſe coming to *Bononia*, after ſome paſſages with the Emperor, who told them he could not deſert his Aunts Cauſe, repaired to the Pope; to whom, having propoſed the Kings affair, they received this Anſwer from him; That, though he was urg'd by the Queens Sollicitor to proceed againſt the King, yet He deſired rather that all proceeding ſhould be ſuſpended in the *Roman* Court, upon Condition yet that King *Henry*, on the other ſide,

Decemb. 8. 1529.

Decemb. 8. 1529.

March 26. 1530.

1529. side, would promise, not to Innovate any thing in the mean while in *England*. Whereof information being given our King, He answered, That his Holiness hath fed him hitherto with fair words only, without intent to aid him, as appear'd lately by denying his Ambassadors Audience to justifie his Cause.

Octob. 26. 1529. In the mean while our King attends his Parliament business, where Sir *Thomas More*, who was now returned from the Treaty at *Cambray*, being (in reward of his service) made Lord Chancellor, gave in an eloquent Oration, at the Parliament-Chamber in *Black-Friers*, the first overtures of the Kings intentions in that Parliament. To which, our K. attended with his Nobles, repair'd from his adjoyning Palace of *Bridewel*, *Thomas Audley* being chosen Speaker for the lower House. And as now *Luthers* Doctrine was secretly admitted into many places of this Kingdom, with much approbation, so it gave those impressions, as even the most ignorant began to examine whether the Errors then ordinarily controverted did belong to the Doctrine or to the Government of the Church. And this alone as it was the first step, so was it a great and bold sally towards that Reformation which followed afterwards. Yet as Learning was not then commonly found among those, who in their studies had no other design but truth, and satisfying their Conscience; so few understood the state of the Questions propos'd, save only they, who being of the Party, either for their own private Interest would not retract, or for fear of unsetling the received Grounds of Religion in mens Hearts, thought it dangerous to permit an Innovation; which yet prov'd a pernicious and fatal Solecism. For whereas, in the beginning, a voluntary Mitigation of the Rigour of some of the late Doctrines of the *Roman* Church, and a benign Interpretation of the rest, might have conserved an universal Peace among Christians, they now, by an obstinate and wilful impugning of all those who said it was possible for them to err, did leave the undertaking of this great Work either to discontented Clergy-men, or to the more Laick and improvident sort; Which therefore as it prov'd in some kind, tumultuous and refractory, so certainly the Authors on either side were much to be blamed; When in handling of Controversies, they either out of affectation of glory, or hope of gaining large stipends from their followers (upon pretence of revealing some new or readier way for obtaining Heaven and everlasting Salvation) did teach divers peremptory, and uncharitable Doctrines. Whereas yet, according to the Rules both of Piety and Wisdom, they should have proceeded more moderately; conserving, in the midst of their differences, a brotherly love, and pronouncing the Errors, on what part soever, more worthy pity than hate. Which rule yet was so little observ'd in *England*, that many Reformers books, and persons were publickly burnt, while their Disciples (for Revenge) fell foul upon the persons of their adversaries, setting forth Books to the prejudice of the whole Ecclesiastical Order. Which coming at last to the Kings knowledge

Novemb. 3. Reg. 21.

ledge made Him enquire further into the Abuſes of the Clergy, permitting the Redreſs thereof to the lower Houſe of Parliament; Where Complaint for Exactions for Probats of Teſtaments and Mortuaries, of Pluralities, Nonreſidence, and Prieſts that were Farmers of Lands, *&c.* being made, the Spirituality was much offended, and eſpecially *John Fiſher* Biſhop of *Rocheſter*, who (as our Hiſtory hath it) in a Paſſionate Speech told the Lords, That the Commons would nothing now but down with the Church. Saying further, that all this was for want of Faith; aggravating the danger the Kingdom was in, by the Example of *Bohemia*. The Lower Houſe being inform'd thereof, ſent the King a Complaint by their Speaker; deſiring Reparation. But *Fiſher* excuſing himſelf as he could, Sir *William Fitz-Williams* on the part of the King, mediated the reſt. Notwithſtanding which, the Injury which the Commons thought they had received herein was not ſo digeſted, but that one who had made uſe of the Evangelicks Doctrine ſo far, as to take a reaſonable liberty to judge of the preſent times, and howſoever was offended that the Biſhop Rejected all on want of Faith, ſpoke to this effect. 1529.

If none elſe but the Biſhop of *Rocheſter* or his Adherents, did hold this Language, it would leſs trouble me. But ſince ſo many Religious and different Sects (now conſpicuous in the whole World) do not only vindicate unto themſelves the name of the true Church, but labour betwixt Invitations and Threats for nothing more than to make us Reſign our Faith to a ſimple Obedience; I ſhall crave leave to propoſe, what I think fit (in this caſe) for us Laicks and Secular Perſons to do. Not that I will make my Opinion a Rule to others, when any better Expedient ſhall be offered; but that I would be glad we conſidered hereof, as the greateſt Affair that now or hereafter may concern us.

For if in all humane Actions it be hard to find that *medium* or even temper which may keep us from declining into extreams, it will be much more difficult in Religious Worſhip; both as the path is ſuppoſed narrower, and the Precipices more dangerous on every ſide. And becauſe each man is Created by God a free Citizen of the World, & obliged to nothing ſo much as the inquiry of thoſe means by which he may attain his Everlaſting Happineſs, it will be fit to examine to whoſe tuition and Conduct He Commit himſelf. For, as ſeveral Teachers, not only differing in Language, Habit & Ceremony, (or at leaſt in ſome of theſe) but Peremptory and oppoſite in their Doctrines, preſent themſelves, much circumſpection muſt be uſed. Here then taking his Proſpect, He ſhall find theſe Guides directing Him to ſeveral ways; whereof the firſt yet extends no further than to the Laws and Religions of each mans native Soil or Dioceſs, without paſſing thoſe bounds. The ſecond, Reaching much further, branches it ſelf into that diverſity of Religions & Philoſophies, that not only are, but have been extant in former times, until He be able to determine which is beſt. But in either of theſe, no little difficulties will occur. For, if each man

1529. ought to be ſecure of all that is taught at home, without enquiring further, How can He Anſwer his Conſcience? When looking abroad, the terrors of Everlaſting Damnation ſhall be denounced on Him, by the ſeveral Hierarchies and viſible Churches of the World, if He believe any Doctrine but theirs. And that, amongſt theſe again, ſuch able and underſtanding Perſons may be found, as, in all other affairs, will equal his Teachers. Will it be fit that He believe, God hath inſpir'd His Church and Religion only, and deſerted the reſt; when yet Man-kind is ſo much of one off-ſpring, that it hath not only the ſame *Pater Communis* in God, but is come all from the ſame Carnal Anceſtors? Shall each Man, without more Examination, believe his Prieſts in what Religion ſoever, and, when he hath done, call their Doctrine his Faith? On the other ſide, if he muſt argue Controverſies before He can be ſatisfied, How much leiſure muſt He obtain? How much Wealth and Subſtance muſt He Conſume? How many Languages muſt He learn? And how many Authors muſt He Read? How many Ages muſt he look into? How many Faiths muſt He examine? How many Expoſitions muſt He confer? And how many Contradictions Reconcile? How many Countries muſt He wander into? And how many dangers muſt He run? Briefly, would not our life on theſe terms be a perpetual Peregrination? While each man Poſted into the others Country, to learn the way to Heaven, without yet that He could ſay at laſt, He had known or tried all. What remains then to be done? Muſt He take all that each Prieſt upon pretence of Inſpiration would teach him, becauſe it might be ſo? or may He leave all, becauſe it might be otherwiſe? Certainly, to embrace all Religions, according to their various and Repugnant Rites, Tenents, Traditions, and Faiths, is impoſſible, when yet in one Age it were poſſible (after incredible Pains and Expences) to learn out, and number them. On the other ſide, to reject all Religions indifferently is as impious; there being no Nation, that in ſome kind or other doth not worſhip God. So that there will be a neceſſity to diſtinguiſh. Not yet that any man will be able, upon Compariſon, to diſcern which is the perfecteſt, among the many profeſſed in the whole world; (each of them being of that large extent, that no mans underſtanding will ſerve to comprehend it in its uttermoſt Latitude, and ſignification,) But (at leaſt) that every man might vindicate and ſever, in His particular Religion, the more Eſſential and demonſtrative parts, from the reſt, without being mov'd ſo much at the Threats and Promiſes of any other Religion, that would make Him obnoxious, as to depart from this way: There being no Ordinary method ſo intelligible, ready, and compendious for the conducting each man to his deſired end. Having thus therefore recollected Himſelf, and together implored the aſſiſtance of that Supreme God, whom all Nations acknowledge; He muſt labour, in the next place, to find out, what Inward Means, His Providence hath deliver'd, to diſcern the True, not only from the

1529.

False, but even from the Likely, and Possible; each of them requiring a peculiar scrutiny and consideration. Neither shall he fly thus to Particular Reason, which may soon lead him to Heresie, but, after a due separation of the more Doubtful and Controverted parts, shall hold himself to Common, Authentick, and universal Truths, and consequently inform himself, what, in the several Articles proposed to Him, is so taught, as it is first written in the Heart, and together deliver'd in all the Laws and Religions He can hear of in the whole world; For this certainly can never deceive Him; Since therein he shall find out how far the Impressions of Gods Wisdom and Goodness are extant in all Mankind, and to what degrees His Universal providence hath dilated it self; *While thus ascending to God by the same steps he descends to us, He cannot fail to encounter the Divine Majesty. Neither ought it to trouble Him, if He find these truths variously complicated with Difficulties or Errors; since, without insisting on more points than what are clearly agreed, on every side, it will be His part to reduce them into Method and order; which also is not hard, they being but few, and apt for connexion; So that it will concern our several Teachers to imitate us in this Doctrine, before they come to any particular Direction; lest, otherwise, they do like those who would persuade us to renounce day-light, to study only by their candle. It will be worth the labour, assuredly, to inquire how far these Universal Notions will guide us, before we commit our selves to any of their abstruse and scholastick Mysteries, or Supernatural and private Revelations. Not yet, but that they also may Challenge a just place in our Belief, when they are deliver'd upon warrantable Testimony; but that they cannot be understood as so indifferent and unfallible Principles for the instruction of All Man-kind.* Thus, among many supposed Inferiour and questionable Deities, worshipped in the four Quarters of the World, we shall find one Chief so taught us, as above others to be highly Reverenced.

Among many Rites, Ceremonies, and Volumes, *&c.* deliver'd us as Instruments or parts of His Worship, He shall find Vertue so eminent, as it alone concludes and sums up the rest. Insomuch as there is no Sacrament which is not finally resolv'd into it; Good life, Charity, Faith in, and Love of God, being such necessary and essential parts of Religion, that all the rest are finally clos'd, and determin'd in them.

Among the many Expiations, Lustrations, and Propitiations for our sins, taught in the several quarters of the World, in sundry times, We shall find that none doth avail without hearty sorrow for our sins, and a true Repentance towards God, whom we have offended.

And lastly amidst the divers places and manners of Reward and Punishment, which former Ages have delivered, We shall find Gods Justice and mercy not so limited, but that he can extend either of

1529. them even beyond death, and consequently Recompense or Chastise eternally. These, therefore, as universal and undoubted Truths, should in my opinion be first Receiv'd. They will at least keep us from Impiety and Atheism, and together lay a foundation for Gods Service, and the Hope of a better life. Besides, it will reduce mens minds from uncertain, and controverted Points, to a solid practice of Vertue, or when we fall from it, to an unfeigned Repentance, and purpose through Gods grace to amend our sinful life, without making Pardon so easie, cheap or mercenary, as some of them do. Lastly, it will dispose us to a general Concord and Peace: For when we are agreed concerning these Eternal causes and means of our Salvation, Why should we so much differ for the rest? since as these Principles exclude nothing of Faith, or Tradition that tends to Gods glory, in what Age or manner soever it interven'd; each Nation may be permitted the belief of any pious Miracle that conduceth to Gods Glory; without that, on this occasion, we need to scandalize or offend each other. The common Truths in Religion, formerly mentioned, being firmer bonds of Unity, than that any thing emergent out of Traditions (whether written or unwritten) should dissolve them. Let us, therefore, establish and fix these Catholick or Universal Notions. They will not hinder us to believe whatsoever else is faithfully taught upon the Authority of the Church. So that, whether the Eastern, Western, Northern, or Southern Teachers, *&c.* and particularly whether my Lord of *Rochester*, *Luther*, *Eccius*, *Zuinglius*, *Erasmus*, *Melanthon*, &c. be in the Right, We Laicks may so build upon those Catholick and Infallible grounds of Religion, as whatsoever superstructures of Faith be rais'd, those Foundations yet may support them.

But as few men are of the same mind in all Points of Religion, so, it is probable this Overture was entertain'd diversly: Some wishing a Reformation upon what terms soever; others, if it could be safely done, as thinking there may be diseases in Religion, like that of the *Cancer Occultus*, which Physicians say, it is more safe to let alone, than to Cure. Yet as it was manifest that in Probats of Testaments, Plurality of Benefices, and divers other ways above-mention'd, the Clergy had incroach'd and usurp'd both upon each other, and upon the Laity for many Ages, so they would now omit no longer to give a redress to these grosser faults. Therefore about last Wills and Testaments, which Cardinal *Woolseys* Legatine power had so disordred (as Sir *Henry Guilford* protested openly, that Himself being, with others, Executors of the Will of Sir *William Compton* (who died 1528. of the Sweating Sickness) could not obtain a Probat from the Cardinal, and Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury*, before he had paid 1000 Marks) some profitable orders were made. And the business of Mortuaries (exacted with much extremity even on the poorest) was setled. Moreover Spiritual Persons were abridg'd from taking of Farms, and from Plurality of Livings, unless

unleſs they were qualified either by certain Univerſity Degrees, or by the Nobility, to whom a competent number of Chaplains were aſſign'd. Non-reſidence alſo (then very uſual) was forbidden, but in ſome Caſes, and for the reſt explained, and interpreted. An Act alſo paſs'd for a General Pardon of all offences, Forfeitures, puniſhments, *&c.* except Murders, and Treaſons; which the King granted by way of gratifying His Subjects, for a Releaſe of a great Lone of money from them, *Anno* 15. *H.* VIII. which motioned and aſſented to by the Lords, was, with much ado, Confirmed by the Lower Houſe. After which was enacted a Statute for abridging Plaints in Aſſize, which being Complicate before, were reduced to a more ſingle method. And this was much to the eaſe of the Subjects. It was alſo declared Felony for Servants to imbezel their Maſters goods to the value of forty ſhillings and upwards. And order taken, that, after a Felon was attainted (but not before) the ſtoln goods might be reſtored. Furthermore, it was provided particularly, that no Braſs ſhould be carried beyond Sea. Which ſeems to regard principally making of great Ordnance; (about this time appearing of great uſe.) Artificers ſtrangers alſo were reſtrain'd to certain rules. As that they might not keep above two ſtrangers Servants in their houſe. That they ſhould bear ſuch charges as Natural ſubjects did, paying all Subſidies, *&c.* and take an Oath to be true and obedient to the King and his Laws. That they ſhould have no Conventicles, but meet in the Common Halls of their Craft. That they ſhould not have Journey-men or Prentices ſtrangers above ten at a time. Moreover, authority was given to the Preſident of the Kings Council to aſſociate with the Chancellor, Treaſurer, and Keeper of the Privy Seal, *&c.* both for the puniſhment of Riots, and unlawful aſſemblies, *&c.* and ſetting of prizes of Wines, as alſo all other Acts, limitted and appointed by any Statute to be done by the Chancellor, Treaſurer, and Keeper of the Privy Seal, *&c.* Other Laws alſo were enacted, which for being meerly Legal, and therefore relative chiefly to the Maſters of the Law, or otherwiſe Mechanical, or at leaſt ſo particular, that they belong not properly to Hiſtory, I purpoſely omit. And ſo, a week before *Chriſtmaſs*, the Parliament was prorogued to the year following. 1529. Decemb. 17.

Before yet I come to the year 1530. I muſt not omit to mention *Haradin Barbaroſſa* that famous Pirate, who, from a low and obſcure beginning, had, by his valour and conduct (as we have before touched) obtained the Kingdom of *Argier*. For being not fortunate alone by Sea, when he landed his men, he did, with no leſs ſucceſs, attempt divers ſtrong places; So that he was generally feared; and the rather, that one *Haradin*, call'd *Caca-diablo*, *Sinan* a Jew, and many other notable *Picarons* had ranged themſelves under him; Whereby his Forces were ſo increaſed, that no Navigation was ſecure in the parts adjoyning to him. This year (particularly) He had *Sandov.* 1518.

1529. had taken *Penon de Velez* from the *Spaniard*, and defeated a Fleet of theirs ſhortly after. And now this Deſign was to make himſelf
May 21. Maſter of the Seas from *Gibraltar* to *Sicily*. For preventing where-
Octob. 25. of the Emperor employed divers, but infortunately; Inſomuch that *Andrea Doria* himſelf, though recovering ſome Ships out of the Haven of *Sargel*, where part of *Barbaroſſa*'s Sea-forces (under the command of one *Haly*, a Pirat of *Tunis*) rode at Anchor; yet when he cauſed ſome Soldiers to be landed to attempt the Caſtle, *Haly* gathering a few reſolute men together, charg'd them deſperately, and gave them a repulſe with the loſs of ſo many as made *Doria* deſiſt from his enterprize; Which being advertis'd to the Emperor, made him reſolve to Invade *Barbaroſſa* in his own Country, the ſucceſs whereof ſhall be related hereafter. The context of my Hiſtory requiring me now to ſpeak of the *Florentines*; On whom as the Pope paſſionately deſir'd to be reveng'd, ſo the Emperor, having his pretences alſo, did for complying with him, ſend an Army thither under the Command of *Philibert* Prince of *Aurange*, the Marquis of *Guaſto*, *Juan de Urbino*, and others of note, and about twenty-ſix thouſand men. The Pope yet uſed diſtinction; for if he deſired that the Enemies of his Name and Family with their adherents ſhould be puniſhed, he intreated as well that the City and the Country (whereof he was a Native) ſhould be ſpared. But as the Prince *de Aurange* thought this a ſubtilty fitter for a School-man than a Soldier, he undertook them together. While *Malateſta Baglioni*, a brave Gentleman, aſſociated with *Franciſco Carduci*, and ten others, were choſen
Sept. 16. the chief Directors of the *Florentine* affairs. And by their advice the ſmaller places of *Toſcana* (for avoiding that final deſolation that aſſaults do bring) yielded themſelves betime. Yet ſo as *Juan de Urbino*, a Soldier of note, was kill'd at one of them. And thus ſiege was laid to the fair City; the Suburbs whereof being weak, were thrown down, that they might the better fortifie their Ramparts, and eſpecial care taken to keep a paſſage for Victuals open. Yet as the War was thought to proceed out of unkindneſs rather than hate, ſo divers of the more innocent ſort perſuaded the reſt to impore the
1530. Popes mercy. The reſultance whereof was, that at laſt an Ambaſſade was ſent. But as by the craft of the adverſe party, election was made of mean and deſpicable perſons, the deſign was eluded; the Pope not vouchſafing ſo much as to hear them. This made them reſolve to defend themſelves. Inſomuch that all their fear being now actuated into deſperation, that by continual ſallies (as well by night
Aug. 3. as day) not only wearied the Aſſiegers, and ſlew divers of their
1530. ableſt Commanders, but finally kill'd *Philibert* Prince of *Aurange* himſelf, who being young, valiant, and liberal, was much lamented among the Soldiers. Famine, yet, at laſt preſſing the *Florentines*, a parly was propos'd; but the more daring ſort (chuſing rather to die with their Arms in their hands, than to yield to the Incenced Pope) ſallied forth with that fury and diſorder, that one would

would have thought they pretended not ſo much to Victory, as to ſome other death than Hunger. The more unquiet ſort, being thus at length worn out and ſpent, the reſt, by the means of *Malateſta*, came to a compoſition with the Emperor, (the Pope alſo, out of Compaſſion to his Country, conſenting to it) upon theſe terms; That they ſhould pay 80000 Ducats towards the charge of the Army. That their popular Government ſhould be chang'd to Monarchical, under the rule and Dominion of *Aleſſandro de Medici* (Son of *Lorenzo* late Duke of *Urbin*) and his Heirs; their antient Priviledges being nevertheleſs reſerved. And thus, after above ten Months Siege, the City was rendred to the Emperor; who, for more ample teſtimony of his favour, beſtowed *Margarite* his natural Daughter upon *Aleſſandro de Medici*, together with the title of Duke. I find yet, by a private diſpatch, that he was not very well pleas'd with theſe Articles, as believing he might have made more advantage of his conqueſt; though, for contenting the Pope, He gave way to it, as being now intentive wholly to the Buſineſs of *Germany*. For as the affairs of Religion in thoſe parts, together with the Invaſion of the *Turk*, requir'd his preſence, ſo he departed from *Italy*, about five Months before the rendition of that place: making (in his way) the Marquis of *Mantua* a Duke, and receiving his Brother *Ferdinand* at *Inſpruch*, with much demonſtration of love. Where alſo he advis'd concerning the preſent Eſtate and diſpoſition, not of the Affairs only, but even perſons and Favorites of thoſe with whom he was to Treat. So that, coming at laſt to *Augsburg*, where a general Diet and Aſſembly was appointed, with much ſolemnity (the Electors and others Princes of *Germany* meeting there) he requir'd their Grievances. The account whereof yet I muſt omit awhile, that I may come to the reſtitution of *Francis* his Children.

1529.

Auguſt.

March 22.

The Jewel, Mony, and Acquittances requir'd for diſcharge of his pretious Hoſtages, being now gotten together, *Francis* would no longer delay to perform his agreement. Only as he confeſt himſelf much enabled hereunto by the ſpecial goodneſs and bounty of our K. ſo he fail'd not to take his advice on all occaſions. And thus, the day being come, *Anne de Montmorency*, Grand Maiſtre of *France*, and *Hernando de Velaſco Condeſtable de Caſtilla* were choſen by both Princes for the perſons to whoſe fidelity and care they thought fit to commend this important buſineſs. And becauſe the Cautions and Difficulties were many, they agreed upon certain Articles, the moſt ſubſtantial whereof (beſides thoſe extant in the Treaty of *Cambray*, to which Relation muſt be had) were theſe following.

March 10.

May 26.

I. That a Bridge or *Pontone*, of forty foot long, and fifteen broad, ſhould be erected upon Boats faſtned with Anchors upon the midſt of the River betwixt *Fuentarabie* and *Andaja*; whereupon the Exchange ſhall be made.

II. That no Troops of Horſe ſhould be within ten Leagues of the place for ten days before, and ten days after the delivery, Nor no conſide-

1529. considerable number of Foot, And that no Gentlemen ſhould paſs that way, but thoſe who were appointed.

III. That at the day of delivery, no Company of men or women ſhould be within three Leagues of the Place.

IV. That in *Fuentarabie* there ſhould be none but the ordinary Garriſon, being fifty men, and that the Canon ſhould be diſmounted.

V. That a hundred Horſe, and four hundred Foot, (which afterwards was reduced to a leſs number) ſhould be allowed on either ſide to come to the bank of the River.

VI. That twelve Perſons ſhould be admitted on either ſide to paſs over and ſee theſe Articles obſerv'd; And that two Galleons ſhould coaſt the River, with equal numbers of both Nations, to prevent ſurpriſes.

VII. That the Money ſhould be brought in one Shallop, and the Hoſtages in another, to the two ſides of the Bridge; And that, for Counter-ballancing the mony, ſo much Iron ſhould be put in the other.

VIII. That in the Shallop of the Hoſtages ſhould be twelve *Spaniards*, the *Condeſtable*, and *Seigneur de Praet* being comprehended, and *Mons' de Briſac* a *French-man*, with ſwords and daggers, the Hoſtages having daggers only. And that the like number and Arms ſhould be permitted to *Montmorency* in the other Shallop. And one *Alvaro de Lugo* a *Spaniard*, with two Pages to go along with them in lieu of the Hoſtages, and twelve Oars on either part unarm'd.

IX. That coming both at the ſame time to the two ſides of the Bridge, the *Condeſtable*, and *Montmorency* ſhould land firſt on the ſaid Bridge, and call to them in equal number their Companies. And that the *Spaniards* ſhould paſs into the Shallop where the Mony and Writings and Jewels were, along the one ſide of a Barrier erected, and the *French*, on the other Shallop of the Hoſtages.

X. That Queen *Leonora* ſhould go in a Shallop apart with ſix Ladies attendants, the reſt being eight Cavaliers and ſix Oars of either Nation; but that ſhe ſhould not paſs till the Exchange were made. Notwithſtanding which Agreement, ſo much time was employ'd in counting, weighing, and examining the money, that many weeks preceding were ſpent before they could accord of the payment. The *Spaniard* finding the Gold to want of its purity, and the Deſcheo or loſs being valued at 40000 Crowns. Beſides, as the River on the *Spaniſh* ſhore was ſhallower than on the *French*, there wanted not ſome Jealouſie and wrangling. Howſoever, at length the
July 1. delivery was made. Whereof *Francis* being advertis'd, did poſt from *Bourdeaux* to *Varin*, where with much joy He receiv'd his Children, and Queen *Leonora de Seres*, whom alſo he Married an hour before the day following.

And now *Francis* remembring how much it concern'd him to correſpond

correspond with our King (to whom he owed first his own, and next his Childrens Liberty) sent over to acquaint him therewith.

Our K. also considering that *Francis* being now dis-ingag'd might more freely declare himself, did (by a particular Message) not only make known the little hope he had of the Popes favour in his particular business, but desir'd that Kings assistance, for obtaining the Resolution of the Universities and Learned men in his Kingdom concerning the Lawfulness of his Marriage; for which purpose he induced *Guillaume de Bellay* (sent by *Francis* to him in the beginning of this year) to cooperate with them, as also those of *Italy* and *Germany*, not omitting together to employ at *Paris*, his Kinsman and Beneficiary *Reginald Pole*, with Sir *Francis Bryan*, and *Edward Fox*, Master *William Paget* (after) being sent to *Orleans* and *Tholouse*, and *Francis* together readily promising his assistance. And because our King and many Agents about this time employ'd in *Italy*, as namely Doctor *Richard Croke* (a man excellent in the *Greek* Tongue) at *Padua*; *Hierome de Ghinucci* Bishop of *Worcester*, and *Gregory Casalis* at *Rome*; Doctor *Stokesley* at *Venice*, *Thomas Cranmer* (afterwards Archbishop of *Canterbury*) *Andreas* and *Johannes Casalis*, and *Previdellus*; he had enough to do; while sometimes he laboured to reconcile, and sometimes again to make use of their various Advertisements. *Stokesley* writ in a Letter dated *June* 13.) that he had gotten the Opinions of the University of *Bononia*; and that more would have concur'd, had not the Pope contradicted. *Croke* said, the Pope and Emperor threatned all that subscrib'd in favour of the Kings Cause. He writes also that the Emperor's Ambassador in *Padua*, challeng'd one Frier *Thomas*, for favouring the King's Cause, and told him, If this Conclusion should take effect, many of the greatest Princes of *Christendom* should be disherited, or taken as illegitimate; accounting in those as well the Emperor, as the K. of *Portugal*. Notwithstanding which, he had gotten eighty principal mens hands a good while since, and had obtained thirty more, which yet by their means were burnt. By a Letter also of *Crokes*, *Aug.* 24. It appears, that the Emperor labour'd with the State of *Venice*, to oppose the K. in his demand. Furthermore he protested none would take money (Lawyers only excepted) for delivering their opinions, though he forced sometimes a small Reward on them when they had done. Which particular Dr. *Stokesley* (in a Dispatch, *Sept.* 23. 1530.) did confirm; saying, it was their manner both in *Padua* and *Bononia* to refuse money with these words, *Quod à Spiritu Sancto gratis accepimus, gratis & libenter impertimur.* Moreover *Croke*, by a Letter, *Aug.* 31. 1530. said, *Cæsar minis, precibus, pretio, & sacerdotiis, partim territat nostros, partim confirmat suos:* Certifying our K. further, that *Andreas Casalis* and *Previdellus* did reveal his Highness Secrets to the *Cesarians:* In conclusion I find that many would have given their opinion in favour of the Divorce, if they durst. So that though the Kings Agents did now and then differ in some points, they all yet

Bellay.

June 13.

June 22.

July 4.

August 24.

Sept. 23.

Aug. 31.

1529. agreed that moſt of the Learned men in thoſe parts would have favour'd the King in the point of his Divorce, had not the Pope and Emperor oppugned it. *Croke* adds further, that the Emperor got ſome hands in *Mantua* for Money, but they were of the meaner ſort. Whereas twenty-nine Doctors in that place had freely ſubſcribed on his Highneſs part. Now as *Gregory Caſalis* ſeem'd among all his Highneſs Agents, at this time, the moſt induſtrious, ſo he ſolicited the Pope continually on our Kings behalf, not neglecting alſo the *Ceſarians*, to whom he gave, and from whom he received that Intelligence, as he made advantage of all. By which dangerous and ſuſpected Wiſdom yet he prevail'd ſo far, that at length he had Authority, as it ſeems, to write this following Diſpatch, which I have cauſed faithfully to be tranſcrib'd out of the Original.

SEreniſſime & Potentiſſime Domine Rex, Domine mi ſupreme, humillima Commendatione præmiſſa, Salutem & Felicitatem. Superioribus diebus, Pontifex ſecreto, veluti rem quam magni faceret, mihi propoſuit conditionem hujuſmodi, Concedi poſſe veſtræ Majeſtati, ut duas Uxores habeat; Cui dixi, nolle me Provinciam ſuſcipere ea de re ſcribendi, ob eam Cauſam, quod ignorarem an inde veſtræ Conſcientiæ ſatisfieri poſſet, quam veſtra Majeſtas imprimis exonerare cupit. Cur autem ſic reſpondere rem, illud in cauſa fuit, quod ex certo loco, unde quæ Cæſariani moliantur aucupari ſoleo, exploratum certumque habebam, Cæſarianos illud ipſum quærere & procurare. Quem vero ad finem id quærant, pro certo exprimere non auſim. Id certe totum veſtræ prudentiæ conſiderandum relinquo. Et quamvis dixerim Pontifici, nihil me de eo ſcripturum, nolui tamen Majeſtati veſtræ hoc reticere; quæ ſciat omni me induſtria laboraſſe, in iis quæ nobis mandat, exequendis. Et cum Anconitano qui me familiariter uti ſolet, omnia ſum conatus. De omnibus autem me [ad] communes Literas rejicio. Optime valeat veſtra Majeſtas. Romæ die xviij Septembris, MDXXX.

C. V. Majeſtatis
Humiliſſimus Servus,
Gregorius Caſalis.

How this Letter was believed or accepted yet, doth not appear to me; So that although *Melanchon* is ſaid to have concur'd in ſome ſuch Opinion, no effect followed thereof. For I find, that at this very time, King *Henry*, jealous of the Queens, or (as our Hiſtorians ſay) of *Woolſey*'s procuring Bulls againſt him, ſet forth this Proclamation, *September* 19.

THE King's Highneſs ſtreightly Chargeth and Commandeth, that no manner of Perſon of what Eſtate, Degree, or Condition ſoever, he or they be of, do purchaſe or attempt to purchaſe from the Court of *Rome* or elſewhere, nor uſe and put in Execution, divulge or publiſh any thing heretofore within this year paſſed, purchaſed, or to be purchaſed hereafter, containing matter prejudicial to the high

high Authority, Juriſdiction and Prerogative Royal of this his ſaid Realm, or to the let, hindrance, or impeachment of his Graces noble and virtuous intended purpoſes in the Premiſſes; upon pain of incurring his Highneſs Indignation, and Impriſonment, and farther Puniſhment of their Bodies, for their ſo doing, at his Graces pleaſure, to the dreadful Example of all other. 1530.

Thus did the King begin to ſhake off the *Romiſh* Yoke; to which he was much animated by the Concurrence of his Subjects in Parliament, both Spiritual and Temporal, who (as it appears by our Records) in *July* this year under their Hands and Seals ſent a Declaration to the Pope. The Tenor whereof is this; July 3.

SAnctiſſimo in Chriſto Patri & Domino Domino Clementi, divina Providentia, ejus nominis Papæ ſeptimo; Oſculatis Pedibus omni cum humilitate, fœlicitatem precamur & optamus perpetuam, in Domino noſtro Jeſu Chriſto. Beatiſſime Pater, tametſi Cauſa Matrimonii, Invictiſſimi & Sereniſſimi Principis Domini noſtri, Angliæ Franciæque Regis, Fidei Defenſoris, & Domini Hiberniæ, multis ipſa per ſe Argumentis Veſtræ Sanctitatis opem imploret atque efflagitet, ut illud quam celerrime finem accipiat, quem Nos, ſummo cum deſiderio jam diu deſideravimus, & longa ſed hactenus vana ſpe à Veſtra Sanctitate expectavimus: Non potuimus tamen committere, ut Rebus noſtris Regnique ſtatu, ex hac litis Protelatione in tantum diſcrimen adducto, omnino ſileremus, ſed quod Regia Majeſtas noſtrum Caput, atque adeo Anima omnium noſtrum, & in cujus verbis nos, tanquam Membra conformia, juſta compagine Capiti cohærentia, multa ſolicitudine Veſtram Sanctitatem precati, & fruſtra tamen precati ſumus, id nos Literis noſtris doloris gravitate adducti ſeorſim & ſeparatim flagitaremus. Sufficere ſane alioqui debuiſſet, Cauſæ ipſius juſtitia, eruditiſſimorum virorum calculis paſſim probata, celeberrimarum Academiarum ſuffragiis judicata, ab Anglis, à Gallis, ab Italis, prout quiſque apud eos cæteros eruditione antecellit, pronunciata & definita, ut Sanctitas Veſtra, etiam nemine petente & reclamantibus quibuſcunque, ſuo Ore ſuaque

1529. Authoritate aliorum Sententias confirmaret; præsertim cum Causæ definitio eum Regem, illud Regnum respiciat, quod de Sede illa Apostolica tam multis nominibus bene meritum sit: Precibus autem nihil opus fuisset, nisi quatenus homines doloribus indulgent, & preces non necessarias interdum effundere solent. Cæterum quum apud Sanctitatem Vestram nec ipsius Causæ Justitia nec Beneficiorum acceptorum recordatio, nec optimi Principis tam assiduæ & diligentes Preces quicquam profecerint, ut obtineatur à vobis quod paternæ pietatis officium exigebat; adauctus supra modum in nobis miseriarum ac calamitatum recordatione doloris cumulus singula etiam Reipublicæ nostræ membra vocalia facit, & Verbis & Literis conquestionem edere compellit. Nam quæ tandem infelicitas, ut quod duæ Academiæ nostræ, quod Academia Parisiensis, quod multæ aliæ Academiæ in Gallia, quod passim doctissimi, eruditissimi & integerrimi viri domi forisque verum affirmant, & pro vero defendere tam Verbis quam Calamo se paratos ostendunt, id pro vero non obtineat à Sede Apostolica ille Princeps, cujus Ope atque Præsidio sua stat Sedi Apostolicæ Authoritas, à tam multis ac Populis etiam potentissimis tam valide impetita, quibus partim Ferro, partim Calamo, partim voce atque authoritate sæpius in ea Causa restitit; & tamen solus illius authoritatis beneficio non fruitur, qui curavit ut esset qua alii fruerentur. His quid responderi posset non videmus, & malorum interim pelagus Reipublicę nostræ imminere cernimus, ac certum quoddam diluvium comminari, aut quod diluvio par est, multa cæde ac sanguine restinctam olim Successionis controversiam denuo reducere. Habemus enim summis virtutibus Principem, certissimo titulo Regem, indubitatam Regno tranquillitatem daturum, si Sobolem ex corpore Masculum nobis reliquerit; cujus in vero Matrimonio sola spes esse potest: Matrimonio autem vero tantum illud nunc obstat, ut quod de priore Matrimonio tot docti viri pronunciant, id utiq; Vestra Sanctitas sua Authoritate declaret. Hoc autem si non vult, & qui Pater esse debeat, nos tanquam Orphanos relinquere decrevit, & pro abjectis habere,

habere, ita certe interpretabimur, Noſtri nobis curam eſſe relictam, ut aliunde nobis remedia conquiramus. Sed ad hoc ne adigamur, Sanctitatem Veſtram oramus ut Regi noſtro in tam ſanctis deſideriis adeſſe, & ſine mora aut dilatione favere velit, vehementer obſecramus, ut judicio ſuo comprobet quod viri doctiſſimi affirmant, per illam quam nobis ex Paſtorali Officio debet Pietatem ex mutuo Cordis Affectu obteſtamur, ne claudantur paterna viſcera, tam obſequentibus, tam benevolis, tam morigeris Filiis. Cauſa Regiæ Majeſtatis noſtra cujuſque propria eſt, à Capite in Membra derivata, dolor ad omnes, atque injuria ex æquo pertinet, omnes in ejus Majeſtate compatimur, quibus facile Sanctitas Veſtra mederi poſſet, nec poſſet modo, ſed ex paterna pietate deberet. Quod ſi vel id non fecerit, vel facere quidem diſtulerit Sanctitas Veſtra, hactenus ſane conditio noſtra erit miſerior, quod tam diu ſine fructu fruſtra laboratum ſit, ſed non omni prorſus remedio deſtituta. Sunt quidem Remedia extrema ſemper duriora, ſed Morbum omnino utcunque levare curat ægrotus, & in malorum commutatione nonnihil eſt ſpei; ut, ſi minus ſuccedat quod bonum eſt, ſequatur ſaltem quod eſt minus malum, & id temporis etiam curſu facile tolerandum. Iſta autem ut ſecum conſideret Sanctitas Veſtra, iterum atque iterum rogamus, in Domino Jeſu Chriſto, cujus Vices in Terris ſe gerere profitetur, idque ut nunc factis conetur oſtendere; Ut veritatem, doctiſſimorum hominum vigiliis ac laboribus inventam, probatam & confirmatam, ad Dei Laudem & Gloriam ſua Sententia & Pronunciatione velit illuſtrare. Interim vero Deum Opt. Max. quem ipſam eſſe veritatem certiſſimo Teſtimonio cognoſcimus, comprecabimur, ut Veſtræ Sanctitatis Conſilia ita informare atque dirigere dignetur, ut quod ſanctum, juſtum ac verum eſt, à Veſtræ Sanctitatis Authoritate obtinentes, ab omni alia aſſequendæ Veritatis moleſtia liberemur. 1529.

1. Archi-

1529.

1. Archiepiſcopi.
T. Cardinalis Ebor.
Willielmus Can.

2. Duces.
Tho. Norfolk.
Char. Suffolk.

3. Marchiones.
T. Dorſet.
H. Exeter.

4. Comites.
Willielmus Arundel.
Jo. Oxenford.
H. Northumberland.
Rauf. Weſtmerland.
Geo. Shrewsbury.
Henr. Eſſex.
Edw. Derby.
H. Worceſter.
Tho. Rutland.
Hen. Cumberland.
Robert Suſſex.
Geo. Huntington.
G. of Kildare.

5. Epiſcopi.
Robert. Ciceſtrenſ.
Joh. Carliolenſ.
Joh. Lincoln.
Rich. Menevenſis.

6. Barones.
Henr. Montague.
G. Rochford.
Willielm. Weſton.
E. Abergavenny.
J. Audley.
Hen. Scroope.
Tho. Dacres.
Tho. La-Ware.
Willielm. Dacre.
Tho. Barkley.
Hen. Morley.
Geo. Cobham.
Rich. Latimer.
Edw. Stourton.
Jo. Fitzwarren.
Jo. Semers.
Jo. Lumley.
Willielm. Mountjoy
Chriſ. Coniers.
Hen. Daubeny.
T. Darcy.
T. Montegle.
Willielm. Sandys.
Jo. Huſey.
Andr. Windſor.

7. Abbates.
Jo. of Weſtminſter.
Jo. of Bury St. Edmund.
Rich. Glaſton.
Will. Glouceſter.
Tho. of Abendon.
Hugh of Reading.
Edw. of York.
Jo. of Peterburgh.
Jo. of Ramſey.
Jo. of Croyland.
Ro. of Thorney.
Ro. of Selby.
William Abbot of *Bardney.*
Will. Ab. of St. *Benet de Hulmo.*
Tho. Ab. of St. *John* by *Colcheſter.*
Jo. Ab. of *Hyde.*
Clem. Ab. of *Eveſham.*
Ric. Ab. of *Malmsbury.*
Ric. Ab. of *Winchelcomb.*
Rob. Ab. S. *Crucis de Waltham.*
Jo. Ab. of *Circeſter.*
Hen. Abbot of *Teuxbury.*

8. Milites & Doctores in Parlamento.
William Fitz-William.
Hen. Guildford.
Steph. Gardiner.
Jo. Gage.
William Kingſton.
Bryan Tuke.
Rich. Sacheverell.
Rich. Sampſon.
Edw. Lee.
Rich. Woolman.
Jo. Bettat.

To which *Clement* returned this Reply.

Vene-

1529.

Venerabilibus Fratribus Archiepiſcopis & Epiſcopis, ac dilectis Filiis Abbatibus, Nobilibuſque Viris, Ducibus, Marchionibus, Comitibus, Baronibus, Militibus ac Doctoribus Parliamenti Regni Angliæ.

Clemens *Papa.* VII.

VEnerabiles Fratres & dilecti Filii, Salutem & Apoſtolicam Benedictionem. Multa ſunt in veſtris Literis die xiij. Julii datis ac nobis ſuperioribus diebus redditis, quæ gravius accepiſſemus, niſi ea affectui, ſtudioq; veſtro erga Chariſſimum in Chriſto Filium noſtrum, Regem veſtrum condonanda arbitraremur. Itaq; ſedato animo ad eas Literas reſpondebimus, tantum ut doceamus quam immerito de nobis conqueſti ſitis, neq; oportuiſſe tantum à vobis tribui privato erga Regem ſive officio ſive amori veſtro, ut nos duobus, ingrati adverſus Serenitatem ſuam animi ac denegatæ Juſtitiæ, graviſſimis nominibus incuſaretis. Nos quidem agnoſcimus Regem veſtrum ea omnia quæ in veſtris Literis enumeratis, ac multa etiam plura promeritum, manebitq; perpetuo non modo apud nos ſed ad poſteros noſtros memoria ejus in Sedem Apoſtolicam meritorum. Fatemurq; nos non modo Pontificiæ perſonæ quam gerimus, ſed privato noſtro nomine tantum Serenitati ſuæ debere, ut nunquam beneficiis parem gratiam relaturi videamur. Sed quod attinet ad Controverſiam quæ de Matrimonio eſt inter Serenitatem ſuam & Catharinam Reginam, tantum abeſt, ut denegando Juſtitiam, Regis ſpem fruſtrari voluerimus, ut ultro ab altera parte, tanquam plus æquo in partes Majeſtatis ſuæ propenſi, reprehendamur. Sed, ut paulo altius perpetuum animi noſtri erga Regem veſtrum Tenorem repetamus: Cum primum, tribus ferme abhinc annis, Regii Oratores ad nos hanc Cauſam detuliſſent; animi noſtri propenſionem potius quam Juris rigorem ſecuti, commiſimus illam dilectis Filiis noſtris Thomæ tt' Sanctæ Ceciliæ Eboracenſi in Regno Angliæ Legato, & Laurentio tt' Sanctæ

1529. tt' Sanctæ Mariæ in Tranſtiberim Campegio à noſtro Latere miſſo, Presbyteris Cardinalibus, in Regno atq; adeo domi ipſius Regis audiendam & terminandam; ſatisfecimuſq; tum, quantum in nobis fuit, Serenitatis ſuæ voluntati. Verum cum Regina ſuſpectum illud in partibus Judicium habere cepiſſet, & à gravaminibus ſibi, ut dicebat, per eoſdem Legatos illatis ad Sedem Apoſtolicam appellaſſet, Procuratoribus etiam ad dictam appellationem proſequendam conſtitutis, ne tum quidem deſiderari paſſi ſumus noſtram erga ipſum Regem benevolentiam. Nam tametſi cauſæ hujuſmodi appellationis Commiſſio negari non poterat, tamen Concordia potius quam via Juris terminari hanc controverſiam cupientes, omnes moras in Commiſſione dictæ cauſæ appellationis concedenda interpoſuimus, eo prætextu, quod eſſet de majoribus cauſis, meritoq; ad Conſiſtorium rejicienda. Habita vero deinde ſuper hoc cum venerabilibus fratribus noſtris S. R. E. Cardinalibus aliquoties conſultatione, fuit aliquamdiu dilatum negotium; Sed tandem unanimi omnium Cardinalium voto concluſum eſt, Commiſſionem cauſæ Appellationis hujuſmodi per nos negari non poſſe. Itaq; commiſſa eſt audienda & ſubinde in dicto Conſiſtorio nobis referenda & terminanda. Nam cum omnibus in rebus conſiderate procedere debemus, tum in hac potiſſimum quæ Regias & illuſtres perſonas tangit, & in quam totius Chriſtianitatis oculos conjectos eſſe videmus. Poſt quæ deinde nullus Regius legitimus Procurator comparuit, qui aut ſcripto aut verbo de Juribus Regis doceret; ideoq; factum, ut lis adhuc decidi non potuerit. Quippe cum ex actis & productis, non ex amore & benevolentia decidenda ſit. Quamobrem nulla cauſa eſt, cur nobis aſcribatis litis quam dicitis protelationem; de qua miramur vos queri, cum illam Oratores ipſius Regis alibi & præſertim Bononiæ à nobis petierint & impetrarint, invitiſſimis quidem & reclamantibus Reginæ Procuratoribus. Cum itaq; nunquam per nos ſteterit, quin hæc lis, omnibus rebus mature diſcuſſis, terminaretur, non videmus quibus rationibus nitatur querimonia veſtra; niſi forte id dicitis, tot eſſe Regis erga nos & Sedem Apoſto-

Apoſtolicam beneficia, ut quoquo modo in ejus voluntatem Cauſam diffiniri oportuerit; id enim oſtenditis ſatis aperte, cum dicitis, in Cauſa ab eruditiſſimis viris Anglis, Gallis, Italis, ac tot Academiarum ſuffragiis probata, & nemine petente ac reclamantibus quibuſcunq; Sententiam à nobis ferri debuiſſe. Qua in re non parum prudentiam & modeſtiam veſtram requirimus. Nam non videmus, quibus rationibus freti poſtuletis, ut in Cauſa maximi momenti Sententiam feramus, nemine petente ac cæteris reclamantibus, cum adverſa pars continue opponat totius Chriſtianitatis Scandalum, tot annorum matrimonium ad ſupplicationem Clariſſimorum Regum Henrici Patris ac Ferdinandi Catholici, ex Diſpenſatione hujus Sanctæ Sedis conſtitutum; præterea Filiam extantem & plures Reginæ partus; & adverſus opiniones Doctorum, quas pro vobis allegatis, multorum & ipſi graviſſimorumque virorum judicium, & pro ſe facientia Divini Juris mandata adducant, Argumentis hauſtis non modo ex Latinis, ſed etiam & uberrimis in hac re Hebræorum fontibus: Nobis tamen in neutram adhuc partem inclinantibus, ſed æquas aures præbentibus, cum Cauſam hanc graviſſimam & ad totam Rempublicam Chriſtianam & poſteritatem omnem pertinere exiſtimemus. Nam ex iis quas pro vobis facere Doctorum hominum atque Univerſitatum Opiniones ſcribitis, pauca admodum venerunt in manus noſtras, nobis non legitime, nec Regis nomine, ab Oratoribus præſentata, illæq; nudæ tantum illorum hominum opiniones, nullis adſcriptis rationibus cur ita ſentiant, nullaque ſacrorum Canonum & Scripturæ, quæ tantum ſpectare debemus, Authoritate ſubnixæ. Poſtulare autem, ut, in Regis gratiam, quicquam temere atq; inconſiderate ſtatuamus, nec æquum nec veſtra Sapientia dignum eſt. Nam, tametſi multum Serenitati ſuæ debemus, tamen in judicando pluris facere cogimur Eum, per quem Reges regnant & Principes imperant; & veri Patris officium eſt proſpicere, ne nimia facilitate plus æquo indulgeamus Filiis noſtris: irretiremus enim non noſtram ſolum ſed Serenitatis 1530.

1530. ſuæ Conſcientiam immatura Sententia; quæ, non recte prolata, pernicioſo univerſæ Chriſtianitati noceret exemplo. Nam, quod Regno veſtro Diluvium impendere dicitis, id multo magis timendum eſſe arbitraremur, ſi Sententiam, quæ recta juſtitiæ via ac ratione ferenda eſt, præcipitaremus, ac, nimio erga Regem veſtrum amore provecti, à Juſtitia atque Officio noſtro diſcederemus; Maſculam autem prolem non vos magis optatis quam nos Serenitati ſuæ; atq; utinam tanto Regi ſimiles Filios, ac non Regni tantum, ſed & Virtutum Hæredes haberet Chriſtiana Reſpublica! Sed pro Deo non ſumus, ut liberos dare poſſimus. Quod autem dicitis, nolle nos, Authoritate noſtra, ſecundum veritatem depriori Matrimonio declarare, quod tot docti viri pro ipſo Rege pronuncient; vellemus nos quidem omnibus in rebus Serenitati ſuæ gratificari; poſſe autem ita debemus, ut non deſtruamus; deſtrueremus enim, ſi quid contra Juris ordinem ſtatueremus, etſi oculis noſtris exploratiſſima res eſſet. Cæterum, quod eſt in extremo Literarum veſtrarum, Niſi Petitionibus veſtris ſatisfecerimus, vos exiſtimaturos veſtri vobis curam eſſe relictam, atque aliunde remedia conquiſituros, nec veſtra prudentia nec religione dignum Conſilium, ab eoque ut abſtineatis, Paterna Charitate vos monemus: Nec tamen ulla Medici culpa eſſet, ſi ægrotus, curationis impatiens, quicquam in ſe ſtatuerit, quod adverſaretur ſaluti. Nos quidem, quæ recte ac ſine pernicie dari poſſunt remedia non denegamus; Quis enim infirmatur, & ego non infirmor? Quis ſcandalizatur, & ego non uror? Os meum patet ad vos, Filii dilectiſſimi, & vos ut filios chariſſimos monemus. Sed nec Regem ipſum, cujus cauſam agitis, probaturum fuiſſe credimus, ut ita ſcriberetis: Cognitam enim habemus ac perſpectam ejus probitatem, ut ne ultro quidem oblatum, quod æquum non eſſet, accepturum fuiſſe putemus; & tametſi veſtrum omnium interceſſionem magni facimus, tamen noſter erga Serenitatem ſuam amor non patitur ſe cujuſquam cohortatione precibuſque excitari; nec meminimus fruſtra unquam Serenitatem ſuam à nobis petiiſſe, quod cum noſtro, & hujus ſanctæ Sedis honore concedere poſſemus; paremq; oſtendemus

perpetuo voluntatem. Denique, quod ad hanc Cauſam attinet, Nos quidem nullam ejus expeditioni moram interponemus, quin, cum inſtructa, & partes auditæ fuerint, terminetur; nobis ſummopere cupientibus veſtrum Regem & ipſam Reginam, noſque ipſos moleſtiſſimo hoc negotio liberari. Hoc tantum à Serenitate ſua & Devotionibus veſtris requirimus, ne plus, ob ſumma ejuſdem Regis beneficia, à nobis exigatis, quam quod ſine offenſa Dei perſolvere poſſumus: cum in cæteris omnia à nobis expectare poſſitis, quæ habita Officii ac Perſonæ quam gerimus & Juſtitiæ ratione expectari debent. Datum Romæ apud Sanctum Petrum, ſub annulo Piſcatoris, die xxvij. Septembris MDXXX. Pont' noſtri Anno Septimo. 1530

Evangeliſta.

And now Cardinal *Woolſey* it ſeems had tried his uttermoſt Skill for recovering of the Kings Favour; Whereof alſo ſome hope was given him in his being permitted to remove to *Richmond*. But as his Enemies ſuſpected he would make uſe of this nearneſs, to obtain Acceſs to the K. ſo they labour'd inſtantly to ſend him to the North. Wherein they prevail'd at length, obtaining further, that the Revenues of the Biſhoprick of *Wincheſter*, and Abbey of St. *Albans*, as alſo ſome other Places of his forfeited by the *Præmunire*, might be applied in part to the Kings Servants; a Penſion only out of *Wincheſter*, being reſerved to the Cardinal. The Revenues alſo of his two Colleges were torn and divided which grieved him more than any other Affliction: Inſomuch, that he wrote to the King, humbly, as on his knees, with weeping eyes, that the College of *Oxford* might ſtand, and importun'd *Cromwel* to this purpoſe, ſince they are in a manner, ſaith he, *Opera manum tuarum*. But *Cromwel* returned him no comfort herein, ſaying, the King was determined to diſſolve them, though whether he meant to reſtore them again, and found them in his own Name, he knew not; but wiſhes him to be content, *&c.* Howſoever, in the Traffick of theſe and other Lands, as well as Negotiating his Maſters buſineſs, *Cromwel* ſhewed that Dexterity, which at laſt won him much Credit, both with the King and his principal Counſellors. And now the Cardinal being commanded to

1530. March. *York*, had no Excuſe for retarding his Journey, but want of Means, which alſo he ſignified to the King; Who thereupon ſent him a Thouſand Pounds, with which and a Train, reduced now to about one hundred and ſixty Perſons, he ſet forth, giving by the way much Alms, and not a few other Arguments of Devotion, which alſo made him gracious with the People, who reſorted from all Places adjoyning, to him. And thus with ſlow and unwilling removes, he came to Sept. *Cawood* Caſtle near *York*, about the end of *September*, 1530. where he prepared according to the antient Cuſtom, to be inſtalled with much Ceremony about a Moneth after; All acceſs to the Choire, being till then forbidden. But whether the Solemnity of this Action was thought by our King to be unreaſonable, and misbecoming one in Diſgrace; or that otherwiſe the Cardinal had caſt forth ſome diſcontented words, which were related again to the King; here certainly began his final Ruine. Which, as his Enemies (at this Diſtance) did with more Boldneſs and Advantage procure, ſo had he leſs means to repair himſelf. Inſomuch, that without being able to diſcover or prevent their Machinations, he was forc'd to ſuffer all that could be either truly or (almoſt) falſly ſurmiſed againſt him. Neither had he other hope, but that the Puniſhments he had already endured, might be accepted as an intire Satisfaction for all his Offences. And now his Stallation grew neer, when the E. of *Northumberland*, Warden of the Marches, with one Sir *Walter Welſh*, Gentle- Novemb. 4. man of the Kings Privy Chamber, came by the Kings Command to *Hall.* *Cawood* to arreſt the Cardinal, wherein he uſed that Diligence and Secreſie, that he had plac'd his Guards in the Hall, before any eſcaped to advertiſe the Cardinal thereof. Neither did he, at the Earls coming up Stairs, receive him in other terms than thoſe of a Gueſt, till entring into a private Chamber together, the Earl in a low and troubled voice Arreſted him of High Treaſon. The diſmayed and penſive Cardinal ſtayed awhile before he anſwered, but at laſt recovering his Spirits, demanded the ſight of the Earls Commiſſion, proteſting that, otherwiſe, he would not obey; urging further *Hall.* that he was a Member of the College of Cardinals at *Rome*, and ſo exempt from all Princes Juriſdiction. But while the Earl replied, that he might not ſhew his Commiſſion, Sir *Walter Welſh*, who had now arreſted Doctor *Auguſtine* the Cardinals Phyſician, comes in, and confirms what the Earl had ſaid. The Cardinal believing (by this time) that they were in good earneſt, yields to Sir *Walter Welſh*, as the Kings Servant, and not to the Earl; to whom he ſaid he would not ſubmit himſelf, before he was better ſatisfied of his Authority. Which whether he did out of Stubbornneſs to the Earl, who had been heretofore educated in his Houſe, or out of deſpight to Miſtris *Anne Bolen*, who (he might conceive) had put this Affront upon him, in finding means to employ her antient Sutor to take Revenge in both their names, doth not appear to me by my Author. Howſoever, he proteſted he was no way faulty in his Allegiance. Doctor

Augu-

Auguſtine (whoſe Offence yet doth not appear to me) was diſpatch'd to *London*, in the poſture of a Traitor, his Legs tied to his Horſe. But the Cardinal had ſome Reſpite; though yet commanded to prepare for his Journey; which he began at length in that deliberate manner, that if he removed ſlowly before from the King, he moved now more ſlowly to him. Inſomuch that, had not the Earl of *Shrewsbury*, to whom (being the Steward of the Kings Houſhold) the Earl of *Northumberland* was commanded to deliver him, till the Kings further Pleaſure were known, told him, that the King commanded he ſhould be uſed kindly, as one whom he highly favoured; It is probable, that the afflicted Cardinal would have fallen under the burthen of his own Griefs. Furthermore, the Earl aſſured him on the Kings part, that, though his Highneſs could do no leſs than put him to his Trial, yet that it was more for the ſatisfying of ſome Perſons, than out of miſtruſt of his Traiterous doings. And thus at *Sheffield* Caſtle, he had ſtaid a Fortnight, when a Wind-Colick, which ended in a Dyſentery, took him. In which ſtate, Sir *William Kingſton*, Captain of the Kings Guard, and Conſtable of the Tower, attended with twenty-four Yeomen of the Guard (all of them formerly Servants to the Cardinal) did find him. So that, notwithſtanding the many Incouragements of the Earl, ſeconded by Sir *William Kingſton* (who on his Knees ſaluted him) the Cardinal remained ſtill ſick and comfortleſs. Neither did it avail him, that Sir *William Kingſton* (on the Kings part) gave him many gracious words, adding furthermore, that he ſhould make no more haſt than ſtood with his Health and Convenience. For the Cardinal became ſtill more and more dejected. Notwithſtanding, as he conſider'd that Delay would but argue Guiltineſs, ſo he proceeded in his Journey the beſt he could, till he came to *Leiceſter* Abbey, where a Fever complicate with his former Diſeaſe, ſeiſing on him, he languiſh'd, not without manifeſt ſigns of his End. Being thus upon his Bed, Sir *William Kingſton* came again to comfort him, but the Cardinal, finding now that Death would diſcharge him of all Trials, but that before God, ſpake to this effect:

1530.

Novemb. 8. *Hall.*

Nov. 27.

Had I ſerv'd God as diligently as I have done the King, he would not have given me over in my Gray Hairs; but this is my juſt Reward. Notwithſtanding, I pray ye commend me moſt humbly to the King, deſiring him to call to remembrance all matters that have paſt betwixt us, and ſpecially about Queen *Katharine*, and then ſhall His Grace know whether I have offended him. He is a Prince of a Royal Courage; but rather than he will want or miſs any part of his Will or Pleaſure, he will endamage the Loſs of one half of his Realm. For, I aſſure you, I have often kneeled before him, ſometimes the ſpace of three hours, to perſuade him from his Will and Appetite, but could never diſſuade him from it. Therefore Maſter *Kingſton*, I warn you, if ever you be of his Council (as for your Wiſdom you are meet) that ye be well aſſured and adviſed what you

Cavend.

1530. you put in his Head, for you ſhall never put it out again. After which words (as *Cavendiſh* hath them) he began an Exhortation to take heed of the *Lutherans*, by the Example of thoſe of *Bohemia*, leſt they ſhould likewiſe ſubvert the Secular Power. But as in the proſecuting of this diſcourſe his Speech fail'd him, ſo did his Breath preſently after, inſomuch that he died, and was buried there in the Abby Church, *Nov.* 30. before day. And not, where he had begun a Monument for himſelf, long ſince, (wherein as appears by our Records, he had not omitted his own Image) which one *Benedetto*, a Statuary of *Flo-*
1524. *rence*, took in hand 1524. and continued till 1529. receiving for ſo much as was already done 4250 Ducats. The deſign whereof was ſo glorious, that it exceeded far that of *Henry* the Seventh. Nevertheleſs, I find the Cardinal, when this was finiſhed, did purpoſe to make a Tomb for *Henry* the Eighth, but dying in this manner, King *Henry* made uſe of ſo much as he found fit, and call'd it his. Thus did the Tomb of the Cardinal partake the ſame Fortune with his College, as being aſſumed by the King; both which yet remain ſtill unperfect. The News of the Cardinal's Death being brought to our King, did ſo much afflict him, that he wiſhed it had coſt him Twenty Thouſand pounds upon condition he had lived. Howbeit he omitted not to enquire of about one Thouſand and five Hundred Pounds, which the Cardinal had lately got, without that the King could imagine how. So that, till it appeared he borrowed it of divers Perſons, he might perchance ſuſpect it to be the Remainder of ſome of his ancient Acquiſitions.

And thus concluded that great Cardinal. A man in whom Ability of parts, and Induſtry were equally eminent, though, for being employed wholly in ambitious ways, they became dangerous Inſtruments of Power in active and mutable times. By theſe Arts yet he found means to govern not only the chief Affairs of this Kingdom, but of *Europe*; there being no Potentate, which, in his turn, did not ſeek to him; and as this procur'd him divers Penſions, ſo, when he acquainted the King therewith, his manner was, ſo cunningly to diſoblige that Prince who did ſee him laſt, as he made way thereby oftentimes to receive as much on the other ſide. But not of Secular Princes alone, but even of the Pope and Clergy of *Rome* he was no little courted; of which therefore he made eſpecial uſe, while he drew them to ſecond him on moſt occaſions. His Birth being otherwiſe ſo obſcure and mean, as no man had ever ſtood ſo ſingle: for which reaſon alſo, his chief endeavour was not to diſpleaſe any great perſon, which yet could not ſecure him againſt the divers Pretenders of that time. For as all things paſſed through his hands, ſo they who failed in their Suits generally hated him, All which, though it did but exaſperate his ill Nature, yet this good Reſultance followed, that it made him take the more care to be Juſt; whereof alſo he obtain'd the Reputation in his publick Hearing of Cauſes. For as he loved no body, ſo his Reaſon carried him. And thus he

was

was an uſeful Miniſter of his King, in all points, where there was no queſtion of diſſerving the *Roman* Church; of which (at what price ſoever) I find he was a zealous Servant; as hoping thereby to aſpire to the Papacy, whereof (as the factious times then were) he ſeem'd more capable than any, had he not ſo immoderately affected it. Whereby alſo it was not hard to judge of his Inclinations? that Prince, who was ableſt to help him to this Dignity, being ever prefer'd by him, which therefore was the ordinary Bait by which the Emperor and *French* K. one after the other, did catch him. And, upon theſe terms, he doubted not to convey vaſt Treaſures out of this Kingdom, eſpecially unto *Rome*, where he had not a few Cardinals at his Devotion. By whoſe help, though he could not obtain that Supreme Dignity he ſo paſſionately deſired, yet he prevail'd himſelf ſo much of their favour, as he got a kind of abſolute Power in Spiritual matters at home. Wherewith again he ſo ſerv'd the Kings turn, as it made him think the leſs of uſing his own Authority. One Error ſeem'd common to both, which was that ſuch a Multiplicity of Offices and Places were inveſted in him. For as it drew much Envy upon the Cardinal in particular, ſo it derogated no little from the Regal Authority, while one man alone ſeemed to exhauſt all. Since it becometh Princes to do like good Husbandmen when they ſow their Grounds, which is, to ſcatter and not to throw all in one place. He was no great Diſſembler, for ſo qualified a Perſon; as ordering his buſineſſes for the moſt part ſo cautiouſly, as he got more by keeping his word than by breaking it. As for his Learning, (which was far from exact) it conſiſted chiefly in the Subtilties of the *Thomiſts*, wherewith the K. and himſelf did more often weary than ſatisfie each other. His Style in Miſſives was rather copious than eloquent, yet ever tending to the Point. Briefly, if it be true (as *Polydore* obſerves) that no man ever did riſe with fewer Virtues, it is as true, that few that ever fell from ſo high a place had leſſer Crimes objected againſt him. Though yet *Polydore* (for being at his firſt coming into *Engl.* committed to Priſon by him, as we have ſaid) may be ſuſpected as a partial Author. So that in all probability he might have ſubſiſted longer, when either his Pride and immenſe Wealth had not made him obnoxious, and ſuſpected to the K. or that other than Women had oppos'd him: Who as they are vigilant and cloſe Enemies, ſo for the moſt part, they carry their buſineſſes in that manner, they leave fewer Advantages againſt themſelves, than men do. In concluſion, as I cannot aſſent to thoſe who thought him happy for enjoying the untimely Compaſſion of the People a little before his End, ſo I cannot but account it a principal Felicity, that during his Favour with the King, all things ſucceeded better than afterwards, though yet it may be doubted whether the Impreſſions he gave, did not occaſion divers Irregularities which were obſerv'd to follow. 1530.

I will return now a while to the Buſineſs of the Emperor at *Augsburg*, where (by his Command) the General Diet was appointed

1530. pointed the eighth of *April*, 1530. Cardinal *Campejus* being employed for these Businesses on the Popes behalf. The Emperor coming thither in the beginning of *June*, The first point resolved, was,
April 8. that until Controversies in Religion were setled, all the Preachers
Slied. l. 7. on both sides (some moderate Persons to be nominated by the Emperor only excepted) should be silenc'd: Which being done, the Emperor declares, that the Causes of calling together the Assembly were, First, the Invasion of the *Turk*. Secondly, the Affairs of Religion; demanding their Advice and Help in both; Which that they might perform with less Confusion, he commanded their several Propositions to be put in Writing and read. Whereupon, the Reformed Princes made instance, that Matters of Religion might be first compos'd, promising afterwards to proceed unto the rest. Not long after which, *Campejus* in a Latine Oration, exhorted them to obey the Emperor herein; adding further in the Popes name, that such Order should be taken as Unity in Religion might be conserv'd, to the end that all might go against the *Turk*. Which also was spoken in sequence of the Emperors Treaty with the Pope at *Bononia*, where he endeavoured nothing more, than to reconcile the Differences then in agitation in *Germany*. Hereupon, the Duke of *Saxony*, (with whom *Melanthon* was,) the Marques of *Brandenburgh*, the Dukes of *Lunenburgh*, the Lantgrave and others, desired the Emperor to receive in Writing the Confession of their Faith, (called from this Diet, *Confessio Augustana*) which the Emperor at last granted; admitting afterwards the Confession of *Strasburg*, *Constance*, *Lyndaw*, *Memingen*, and some other great Towns, who following *Zuinglius* rather than *Luther*, differ'd in some points. Whereupon, Advice being taken with *Campejus*, what was to be done, it was determined, that some able persons of the *Romanists* should, by way of Confutation, return a written Answer hereunto, accompanied with a strict Command of the Emperors to obey it. But this again, was mitigated, and the Reasons, at last, examined on both sides. The Resultance whereof (among the more sober) was, that since they agreed on so many points, their chief Labours should be not to make any Schism for the rest; since it could not be denied, but some things required Reformation. But the more heady sort, on either side, would not acquiesce so, requiring an absolute Assent to their several Opinions; insomuch that they kindled in their Disputations against each other. The Duke of *Saxony* (particularly) demanding, that the Answer to their Confession might be given to them in Writing, which yet was not suddenly approv'd by the Emperor; though at last finding no other way to avoid Tumult, he granted their Request, on this Condition, that they should not Print or Publish the said Answer. Wherewith some were so discontented, that they returned home, as thinking it not enough to enjoy their particular Conscience, unless they disputed it abroad, and instructed others. At last,
Aug. 6. in *August*, 1530. seven Persons were appointed on each side, to deter-

determine controverſies, of which two ſhould be Perſons of quality, two Lawyers, and three Divines. Whereupon the *Romaniſts* took the Biſhop of *Augsburgh*, and *Henry* Duke of *Brunſwick*, two Lawyers, and *Winpinus*, *Eccius*, and *Cochlæus*, Divines. The other ſide chooſing *George* Duke of *Brandenburgh*, *John Frederick* of *Saxony*, two Lawyers, and *Melanthon*, *Brentius*, and *Schnepfius*, Divines. But theſe not agreeing ſufficiently (though coming ſomewhat nearer than they are at this preſent) *Melanthon* with two Lawyers, and *Eccius* with two others were permitted to decide the buſineſs. But becauſe the Proteſtants thought they had yielded already, to as much as was poſſible for them with ſafety of Conſcience, the buſineſs was remitted again to a greater number. To which courſe yet the Proteſtants would not condeſcend, but deſired a Courſe ſhould be taken for Preſerving of Peace till a General Council were call'd. The Emperor finding things thus protracted, labours to divide the Chiefs, betwixt threats and promiſes, as each was moſt obnoxious; writing notwithſtanding to the Pope (as I find by the *Spaniſh* Hiſtory) that there was no way for ending of differences but by a Council, which therefore he deſir'd might be granted, for thoſe reaſons which *Don Pedro de Cueva* ſhould tell him. He omitted not alſo to write to the College of Cardinals for this purpoſe: adding further, for a motive, that divers Princes (in which our K. alſo concurr'd) agreed in the ſame requeſt; as judging it neceſſary, not only for the cauſe above-mentioned, but even for the Popes proper conſervation. He required alſo the diſpatches uſual for making his Brother *Ferdinand* K. of the *Romans*. Laſtly, he deſir'd permiſſion to ſell the Ornaments and Goods of the Churches in *Italy* and *Germany*, or at leaſt to have the fourth part of the Eccleſiaſtical Revenues, it being, as he ſaid, for the defence of the Common Faith. Which coming, at laſt, to the Princes notice, was ſo ſuſpected, that they oppos'd it. So that, though otherwiſe they were averſe enough from the *Roman* Church, yet, whether out of the danger they foreſaw of putting ſo much money into the Emperors hands, or that otherwiſe they would make themſelves neceſſary, they vehemently impugn'd it. *Eraſmus* underſtanding now what was doing, writes to *Campejus* a Monitory Letter, concluding, that as affairs then ſtood, it was better ſuffer, than to make War againſt the *Lutherans*; ſuppoſing perchance, no Peace ſo devoid of Religion, as a Civil War. The Emperor finding matters thus diſcompos'd, calls the Princes together, promiſing that a Council ſhould be call'd, as ſoon as the place might be agreed; upon Condition they would keep Peace in the mean while, and the Religion antiently profeſſed. But the Proteſtants, affirming that theirs was the antient Religion, thank'd the Emperor for the reſt, deſiring only the Council might be Pious and free. The Emperor not ſatisfied thus, would needs diſpute himſelf awhile (which the *Spaniſh* ſay he did with that eagerneſs that he drew his Dagger;) but neither this prevail'd. So that, for a Concluſion, inſtead of making an amiable

1530.

Aug. 18.

Septemb. 7.

Sandov.

1530. accord, he publiſhed a rigorous Decree; Commanding the practice of the Antient Religion, and Ceremonies, and that the Proteſtants every where ſhould permit the Romaniſts the uſe thereof, denouncing ſevere puniſhments to thoſe which obey'd not; Howbeit, he promiſed, within ſix Months to obtain from the Pope ſufficient Authority for calling a Council the year following. In the mean time, that Peace ſhould be kept with all thoſe who ſubſcrib'd to this Decree; who alſo, and no other, might be admitted to ſit as Judges in the Imperial Chamber. The Proteſtants now conſidering, that it was impoſſible to come to an exact deciſion of the points controverted, and being offended withal that the Emperor denied them a Copy of this Decree, took their leaves ſomewhat abruptly, and returned; Whereupon the Emperor (intending chiefly the ſafeguard of *Germany* againſt the *Turks*) commanded the other Princes attendance. From whom He demanded money, towards the War; which as few denied (to their powers) ſo the Agents for the Duke of *Saxony*, and other Proteſtants offer'd freely to Contribute their parts, when they might but enjoy Peace, and the exerciſe of their Religion till the above-mention'd Council was call'd. But the Emperor, not thus contented, inſiſted ſtill on his Decree; and the rather that the prime Doctors of the Reformed (which were many) could not agree among themſelves, concerning the Lords Supper, and ſome other Articles. The conſequence whereof being not difficult to foreſee, the Duke of *Saxony* employ'd *Martin Bucer* to reconcile them; who alſo had brought them near to a head. Neither was there other impediment, but that ſingularity they affected in their ſeveral opinions. Which yet proved to the detriment of Religion. For had they all, who agreed on a Reformation, agreed ſufficiently among themſelves, it is probable their doctrine would have been more generally imbrac'd. But as the *Romaniſts* took this occaſion to brand the Reformed, ſo they again regarding more their Reputation (ingaged to their Auditors in the Pulpit, or publick writing) than an Unity and Peace of Religion, did by degrees rather violently confirm their own aſſertions, than any way retract them. So that *Germany* now labour'd under the terrors, and difficulties which their ſeveral teachers impoſed on them. In which ſtate of things yet the Reformed Princes and Cities, for preventing further inconveniences, agreed together to meet by themſelves, or Deputies, at *Smalcald*, about the end of *Decemb.* (at the ſame time that the Emperor having concluded the
Nov. 19. Diet at *Augsburgh* (19. *Novemb.*) had appointed all the Electors to
Decemb. 22. meet at *Collen* (*Decemb.* 29.) concerning the chooſing a K. of the *Ro-*
Decemb. 24. *mans*. And here a defenſive League being made by the Proteſtants, they thought fit to ſignifie it to the Emperor; and together to declare certain objections againſt the Pretended Election. Notwithſtanding which, the Emperor proceeds to make his Brother *Ferdinand* K. of the *Romans*, *Jan.* 5. 1531. which alſo being advertis'd to
Jan. 5. 1531. the Confederate Proteſtants, *John Frederick* Duke of *Saxony* manifeſted

feſted the Election imperfect and defective. Not without the advice certainly of *Francis*; who as he had his deſigns that way, ſo he endeavoured nothing more than to draw a Party to him; giving order, in the mean while, to unite and incorporate *Bretaigne* to *France*, upon condition that the Eldeſt Son ſhould always quarter the Arms thereof with thoſe of *Dauphine*. And in theſe terms ſtood the affairs of *Germany* in the end of 1530. which I have deliver'd with the more particularity, for that the firſt manifeſt ſeparation from the *Roman* Church began here, there being little elſe material in regard of *England* that I can find, ſave that our K. (as appears by a Diſpatch of the fifteenth of *July* 1530.) having certified *George* Duke of *Saxony*, of his intentions concerning his Divorce, was much comforted and applauded by him. I ſhall conclude this year with two great Inundations; one of *Tiber* in *Rome*, and the other of the Sea in the *Low-Countries*; which were very damageable; ſhortly after which followed the death of the two great Ladies who made the Treaty of *Cambray*. Madam *Margarite*, Aunt to the Emperor, departed firſt, who having been propos'd in Marriage to our *Henry* VII. (when ſhe was then about twenty-ſeven years of age) and afterwards thought of it a little with *Charles Brandon*, died in the 52 year of her age, with the reputation of governing the *Low-Countries* with much diſcretion for the ſpace of 23 years. The News whereof being brought the Emperour, made him neglect all his other buſineſſes, to come to the burial; which being perform'd with much ſolemnity, he ſubſtituted his Siſter *Donna Maria*, (Widow of the late unfortunate K. of *Hungary*) in her place. Madam *Loüiſe*, Mother of *Francis*, died ſhortly after, (for whom our King kept a ſolemn Obſequie) a Lady from whom *France* receiv'd many good, and not a few ill Offices. For if ſhe govern'd wiſely, during the Kings Captivity, and again procur'd both his and her Grand-childrens delivery; She was thought alſo out of ſome particular deſpight to *Bourbon* to have given Him the firſt cauſes of Diſcontentment: And to have Occaſion'd in part the loſs of the Dutchy of *Milan*.

1531. July 15. Octob. 8. Novemb. Nov. 30. 1530. *Sandov.* 1503. 1513. Sept. 22. 1531.

Our King during theſe great affairs of Chriſtendom, reſolving his Parliament ſhould continue, caus'd it to ſit again, *Jan.* 6. 1531. Where theſe Laws were enacted.

1531. Jan. 6.

That, becauſe much Wooll was imploy'd to uſes not ſo beneficial to the Kingdom, and ſometimes tranſported by ſtrangers, It was Decreed that none ſhould buy Wooll in ſome principal Shires (to the number of twenty-eight) but thoſe who would make Cloth or Yarn thereof, and that ſtrangers ſhould not buy any till the Purification of our Lady. But this being a Law that might likewiſe have its inconveniency, was continued only for ten years, as it had been in ſome former Kings times.

Jan. 6.

Alſo a Law was made againſt exactions on Apprentices by Maſters, Wardens, *&c.* And this was beneficial for poor men, who were not able to put their Children to learn Occupations without

1530. paying extraordinary ſums. A remedy alſo was taken for repairing of decayed Bridges, and High-ways, and the manner of raiſing the money (which before was uncertain) ſet down. The carrying over of Horſes, Mares, Geldings, alſo was forbidden upon a penalty to all places but *Calais*. Moreover, Deniſons, Notwithſtanding their Priviledges, were order'd to pay ſuch Cuſtoms as they paid before. For which purpoſe the Officers and Miniſters of Cities and Boroughs, *&c.* where ſuch Cuſtoms, *&c.* were due, were commanded to ſet up a Table in ſome open place, containing the particulars of them. Which Act yet was not extended to the Merchants of the *Stilliart* (called then *Theutonici.*) Together with which, it was provided, that the Tables touching Scavage to be ſet up at *London*, ſhould be firſt viewed and examined by the Chancellor, and Treaſurer in *Engl.* the Preſident of the Kings Counſel, the Lord Privy Seal, and Lord Steward, and the two chief Juſtices; or by four of them at leaſt, and by them ſubſcribed. And this was for preventing of the ſecret exactions of Tolls by Mayors, Sheriffs, *&c.* upon Wares to be ſold within their Precincts. A Law was made alſo againſt *Egyptians*, who under pretence of telling Fortunes, got money, and credit among the more Ignorant ſort. And whereas ſome penal Statutes were made heretofore againſt Strangers who were Handicrafts-men; It was declared, That the ſaid Strangers, being Bakers, Brewers, Chirurgeons, and Scriveners were exempted, and not taken to be Handicrafts-men. And, becauſe the abuſe of taking Sanctuary, and flying to Hallowed places was great about this time, Inſomuch that many Criminals, finding Refuge and Protection in them, did there adjure the Realm, and ſo went into Foreign parts, by which means they diſcover'd the ſecrets of the State, to the great prejudice thereof. And whereas alſo, when they were to be tried before the Judges in the Circuits, they would plead they were taken out of ſome Sanctuary or Hallowed place, and Juſtice thereby delaid; Divers good orders were taken to remedy theſe Inconveniencies. Which yet I mention not at large; becauſe they, together with the uſe of Sanctuaries, were at length wholly antiquated, and aboliſh'd. And now the buſineſs of *Præmunire*, into which the whole Clergy was ſaid to fall by ſupporting the power Legantine of the Cardinal, having fully been debated by the Kings Council learned, and reſolved againſt them; (Whereupon alſo they were brought to the Kings Bench:) It was agreed in their Convocation-Houſe, to deliver a Petition to the King. Here then the firſt queſtion was, in what form to make it; the Title of *Eccleſiæ & Cleri Anglicani Protector & Supremum Caput*, was by ſome inſerted in the Proem; But this again being demurr'd on, ſome of the Kings Council, together with *Cromwel*, came in and perſuaded them to approve it; But they being ſilent, the Arch-Biſhop of *Canterbury* ſaid, *Qui tacet Conſentire videtur*; Whereto one anſwered, *Itaque tacemus Omnes.* But at laſt this Clauſe being added, *quantum per Chriſti legem licet*, nine Biſhops, (whereof *John Fiſher* Biſhop

Biſhop of *Rocheſter* was one, and fifty-two Abbots and Priors conſenting thereunto, as alſo the major part of the Lower Houſe, and particularly *Stephen Gardiner*. Being thus agreed on the Proem, they Petition'd the King, that He would accept the ſum of one hundred thouſand pounds of the Province of *Canterbury* (eighteen thouſand eight hundred forty pounds, being afterwards given by the Province of *York*) in lieu of all puniſhments: They promiſing, for the future, to make no Conſtitution, nor execute any, without the Kings leave. All which the King graciouſly accepting, granted them a Pardon for all offences againſt the Statutes of Proviſors, Proviſions and *Præmunire*, and all other Penalties, and Forfeitures, except Treaſon, Murder, and Robbery. But when this Act having paſs'd the Lords, came to the Lower Houſe, the Commons, not knowing how far this might concern them, made ſome difficulty till themſelves were included, which being related to the King, he gave them a check, ſaying, that was not the way to exempt themſelves. Whereupon the Lower Houſe, becoming ſenſible of the Kings diſpleaſure, and their own danger, humbled themſelves in that ſort, that the King granted them a Pardon likewiſe. 1531.

I Shall begin the Foreign buſineſs of this year, 1531. with the Coronation of *Ferdinand* King of the *Romans* at *Aix*, *January* the 11th. on whom it was thought, the Emperor his Brother did confer this Dignity, that he might the better eaſe himſelf from the troubles of *Germany*, which now appear'd in ſo many kinds, and places, that his Council in *Spain* writ a Letter, Exhorting him to leave thoſe parts, and return. To which alſo conduced that *Ferdinand* had receiv'd the year before, the Crown of *Bohemia*, ſo that he was now enabled to ſuſtain the dignity of that Charge; to the which I find alſo the Duke of *Bavaria* aſpired. Howbeit as this was done by the Emperors ſole Authority (and without thoſe formalities antiently uſed) it was not every where allow'd for authentical. So that it was thought fit an Imperial Mandate ſhould be ſent forth every where in *Germany* to obey *Ferdinand*. Together with which the Duke of *Saxony*, and the Proteſtants were requir'd to aſſiſt in a War againſt the *Turks*. For which alſo all Military preparations were made. But whther the Proteſtants doubted leſt this ſhould be intended againſt them, or that otherwiſe they thought all hope of reconciling differences in Religion to be vain, they prepared to defend themſelves. They would indeed have been glad to ſee ſome general and moderate Reformation. But as thoſe they call'd the moſt erroneous points of the *Roman* Clergies faith, proved to be their moſt profitable and commodious Doctrines, the Romaniſts fighting for them, *tanquam pro aris & focis*, all accord was judged deſperate: Notwithſtanding which, neither would they have broken thoſe neceſſary Bonds of Charity, (which Religion ſhould ſtrengthen) or lived under other name than that of Catholick, when the *Romaniſts* would

Jan. 2.

June 28. *Sandov.*

1531. would have allow'd the antient Creed to be the Rule of Faith. But when they found that, for reducing divers things to their Primitive inſtitution, they were call'd Innovators, and that the *Roman* Church would remit nothing of its Rigor, under pretence that it was Inſpir'd from above; they not only caſt off all hope of Accommodation, but adviſ'd how to obtain a benign Cenſure of their Actions abroad. Therefore, they ſent ſeveral Letters, to our K. and *Francis*, Dated Feb. 16. 16th. *February*, 1531. from *Smalcald*, Reciting what had formerly *Sleid.* paſs'd at *Worms*, and *Augsburg*, betwixt the Emperor and them; ſaying farther, that the Emperor propos'd to them certain Articles (call'd the *Interim*) which they ſhould hold till a General Council were ſummon'd, but that they were ſuch, as they could not with any ſafety of Conſcience admit; concluding with a requeſt, that their good offices with the Emperor might be interpos'd for the Convocation of a pious and free Council, out of all the parts of the Chriſtian World; which alſo the Emperor had promis'd. But before the ſeveral anſwers of theſe Princes were return'd, the Emperor, doubting the conſequences of this Aſſembly, requires again their Aſſiſtance againſt the *Turk*. To which the Princes replied, that before themſelves had ſecurity given for Peace, it was unſeaſonable to grant help againſt others. Which being privately advertis'd to the *French* K. he left awhile his *Amourettes*, to which he was now much addicted, and ſtudied nothing more than how to make ſome advantage of the diviſion. For the preſent yet he return'd this anſwer only to the April 21. Princes, *Dated* 21. *April*, 1531. That he deſir'd Peace and a General Council, and was glad to underſtand they inclin'd that way; only that they muſt take care of chooſing a ſecure and Indifferent place, for the Convocation thereof. And for how much he eſteem'd them, he ſaid they might gather by this, that during his War with the Emperor, all free acceſs, and intercourſe was permitted them. Our King May 3. alſo by his Letters, of *May* the third, writ, that he was glad to underſtand their Deſign was to conſerve the Antient Religion, and to cure only the diſeaſes crept into it. Therefore, that they ſhould eſpecially take heed of thoſe who deſir'd to Innovate, bringing in parity of degrees and perſons, and making the Magiſtrate contemptible. Of whom he could not but take notice, ſome of them having come out of *Garmany* to his Realm; Concluding, that he deſir'd a Council, and that he would mediate with the Emperor for them. The Princes thus animated, proteſt againſt the Coronation of *Ferdinand*, as being done in an undue manner, preparing withal to defend themſelves. Which being related to the *Suiſſe*, made them de- June. ſire to enter into the Confederacy. But the D. of *Saxony* refuſed; alledging, that ſince they differ'd about the Lords Supper, they could not ſafely accept their help and friendſhip, leſt ill ſhould happen to them, as to thoſe (*ut ſcriptura teſtatur*) *qui muniendi ſui cauſa cujuſq; modi preſidiis uſi ſunt*. For, as the Scriptures began then commonly to be read, ſo out of the literal ſenſe thereof, the manner of thoſe times

times was, Promiſcuouſly to draw arguments, for whatſoever in matter of State or otherwiſe was to be done. Inſomuch, that the text which came neareſt the point in queſtion, was taken as a deciſion of the buſineſs; to the no little detriment of their affairs: the Scriptures not pretending yet to give regular inſtructions in thoſe points. But this is ſo much leſs ſtrange, that the year preceding, the Scriptures (heretofore not permitted to the view of the People) were now tranſlated in divers Languages, and into *Engliſh*, by *Tindal*, *Joy*, and others, though, as not being warranted by the Kings Authority they were publickly burnt, and a new and better tranſlation promiſed to be ſet forth, and allowed to the People. It being not thought fit by our K. that under what pretence or difficulty ſoever, his Subjects ſhould be defrauded of that, wherein was to be found the Word of God, and means of their Salvation. Howbeit not a few Inconveniences were obſerv'd to follow. For as the People did not ſufficiently ſeparate the more clear and neceſſary parts thereof from the obſcure and acceſſory; And as again taking the ſeveral Authors to be equally inſpir'd, they did equally apply themſelves to all; they fell into many dangerous opinions: little caring how they liv'd, ſo they underſtood well, bringing Religion thus into much irreſolution and Controverſie. While few men agreeing on the ſame Interpretation of the harder places, vexed each others Conſcience, Appropriating to themſelves the gift of the Spirit. Whereof the *Roman* Church, (much perplext at firſt with theſe defections) did at laſt prevail it ſelf; as aſſuming alone the power of that deciſion; which yet was uſed more in favour of themſelves, than ſuch an Analogy, as ought to be found in ſo perfect a Book. So that few were ſatisfied therewith, but ſuch as, renouncing their own Judgment, and ſubmitting to theirs, yielded themſelves wholly to an Implicite Faith; In which, though they found an apparent Eaſe, yet as, for juſtifying of themſelves, the Authority of their belief, was deriv'd more immediately from the Church, than the Scripture, not a few difficulties were introduced, concerning both: while the more ſpeculative ſort could not imagine, how to hold that as an Infallible Rule, which needed humane help to vindicate and ſupport it; Nevertheleſs, as by frequent reading of the Scripture at this time, it generally appear'd what the *Roman* Church had added or alter'd in Religion, ſo many recover'd a juſt liberty, endeavouring together a Reformation of the Doctrine and Manners of the Clergy, which yet, through the obſtinacy of ſome, ſucceeded worſe, than ſo pious Intentions deſerv'd.

1531.

1530.

May 3. 1530.

The former proceedings of King *Henry*, being advertis'd to the Pope, made him fear a total defection in our K. Inſomuch, that at *Rome* they ſtudied nothing more than how to retain Him in his antient devotion; ſome arguments whereof have been formerly mention'd. To the furthering of which intention alſo it did not a little conduce, that he had taken ſome diſtaſt againſt the Emperor; who, being deſir'd to appoint certain Judges to determine all differences betwixt

1531. betwixt him and the D. of *Ferrara*, concerning *Modena* and *Reggio*, chose such as sentenc'd on the Dukes behalf; which so incens'd the Pope, that he fell off from the Emperor (as will appear hereafter.) For which reason also it is probable, that our K. might have closed with him, and received some satisfaction in the affair of the Divorce, had not his Parliament, at this time, as is above-said, concurr'd to the setting up of the Regal Authority in Ecclesiastical affairs. To whom therefore he thought fit to communicate what his Agents, in *Italy* and other places, had done, concerning that so much-controverted point of the lawfulness of his Marriage. Whereupon, the Parliament yet sitting, the Lord Chancellor, accompanied with Doctor *Stokesley* Bishop of *London*, and divers other Lords Spiritual and Temporal, came into the Lower-House 30th. *March* 1531, and told them; That they could not be Ignorant, how the King, having Married his Brothers Wife, was troubled in Conscience, and therefore had sent to the most learned Universities in Christendom, to be resolv'd in that point; and namely had imploy'd the Bishop of *London* there present, for this purpose. Not, yet, but that his own Universities of *Oxford* and *Cambridge* could have sufficiently decided the point, but that he might the more amply satisfie himself and the world. Whereupon Sir *Bryan Tuke* was commanded to take out, and read the Determinations of the Universities of *Paris*, *Orleans*, *Angiers*, *Bourges* in *Berry*, and *Tholouse* in *France*, and of *Bononia* and *Padua*, in *Italy*, who all agreed, in declaring the Marriage unlawful. After which, above a Hundred Books of several Doctors, (whereof Doctor *Cranmers* was one) confirming the same opinion, were exhibited. The perusing of which yet (the day being far spent) was referr'd to a further time. As also the Resolution of our two Universities (brought after the rest to our King,) which because *Sanders* calls in a sort surreptitious, I shall relate out of some Original pieces which I have seen. To the University of *Oxford*, the Bishop of *Lincoln* was imploy'd, where, neither easily, nor by general Vote, there past this Decree 4. *April*, 1530.

Jan. 6. 15$\frac{30}{31}$.

March 30.

Hall.

April 4. 1530.

NOs Johannes Cotisford hujus almæ Universitatis Oxoniæ Commissarius, authoritate & consensu hujus totius venerabilis Convocationis, declaramus, decernimus, & definimus, majorem partem omnium Doctorum, Magistrorum, tam Regentium quam non Regentium, singularum facultatum hujus almæ Universitatis Oxon. concessisse & consensum pariter & assensum suum præbuisse, quod Determinatio Definitio & Responsio ad Quæstionem nobis ex parte Serenissimi Domini Regis nuper propositam, per illos Triginta tres Doctores & Baccalaureos, ad id per facultatem Theologiæ nuper electos, sive per majorem partem eorum facienda, habeatur, censeatur, & reputetur pro Definitione Determinatione & Responsione totius hujus Universitatis; Et quod liceat Dominis Commissario & Procuratoribus Sigillum commune Universitatis literis super præfata determinatione per eosdem concipiendis, apponere.

Which

Which Copy though blurr'd (upon what occaſion I know not, for it is not probable it ſhould be intended to the King in that manner) was diſpatcht the day following, as the act of the Univerſity, by the Biſhop of *Lincoln*. As for the Univerſity of *Cambridge*, I find *Stephen Gardiner*, and *Edward Fox* were employ'd; Where, Notwithſtanding the Kings Letters, and the diligence us'd on their part, not a few difficulties did occur. Inſomuch that it was firſt denied, then the voices on both ſides were brought even, and at laſt, (ſome abſenting themſelves) it was agreed, that the Queſtion ſhould be diſputed by twenty-eight Delegates, and that two parts of three ſhould determine it; which accordingly was done in favour of the King, by the Vice-Chancellor, and the two Proctors, ten Doctors, and fifteen others, whoſe names are extant in the ſame Record. Which averſneſs, more than in Foreign Univerſities, whether it ſhould be attributed to the power of the Pope in *England*, or to their particular ſcrupuloſity of Conſcience, is more than I will determine; Though, on this occaſion, I can do no leſs, than repeat ſome Arguments drawn (in favour of the Divorce) out of our Records. Firſt the place in *Leviticus*, Chap. xviii. verſ. xvi. Thou ſhalt not uncover the nakedneſs of thy Brothers Wife. Secondly, St. *Baſil*'s opinion, tending this way, Where he ſaith, that he ſhall be excommunicated that Marrieth his Wifes Siſter. Thirdly, becauſe two Epiſtles, tranſcrib'd out of the Popes Regiſters, and ſent into *England*, by Doctor *Stokeſley* (whereof one was of *Gregory*, the other of *Innocent* the third) do profeſs, that the Pope cannot diſpence againſt the Law of God, the particular caſe being then a Marriage. Fourthly, that granting the Pope can diſpenſe, *ex urgentiſſima cauſa*, with that which is *ex jure divino*, (which yet Divines for the moſt part deny) there was no occaſion here, ſince the Peace betwixt *England* and *Spain*, (which was taken as the ground of the *Breve*) ſtood firm and intire. Laſtly, that the *Jews* themſelves (for our Agents conſulted with them alſo) did not hold the Law of Marrying the Brothers Wife, *Deut.* 25. as neceſſary in this time, but did often *pati diſcalceationem*. All which being maturely conſidered by the Lower Houſe, made them deteſt the Marriage, as our Hiſtorians have it. Whereupon the King thought fit alſo to prorogue the Parliament, to the intent that every man repairing home, might ſatisfie his Neighbour of theſe paſſages; Not omitting, together, to cauſe theſe Foreign determinations, to be printed and publiſhed this year, as the Book yet extant in Print ſhews. Notwithſtanding which, ſo far was the King from remitting any thing of his gentle behaviour to the Queen, that, had he not forborn to come to her Bed, neither could his outward favour towards her, or her faſhions towards him have argued any diminution of love; all thoſe wonted Ceremonies, by which they ſuſtain'd the dignity of their place, and civilities which might imply a mutual reſpect, continuing firmly on either ſide. Which our Hiſtorians amplifie

1531.

Baſil. Epiſt. 197.

Hall.

1531. plifie ſo far, that they ſay he ſore lamented his chance, and made no manner of mirth or paſtime as he was wont to do; without yet that they can be thought to ſpeak improbably, when we conſider both how dear this liberty coſt him, and how much it endanger'd the ſucceſſion. However, that he might both prevail himſelf of the occaſion, and alſo ſatisfie the doubts he had rais'd not in his own alone, but Subjects breaſts; He ſent to Queen *Katharine* ſome Lords of his Council, wiſhing them to acquaint her with theſe Determinations (which alſo I find had been ſhewed the Pope,) and together to demand of her, for quieting the Kings Conſcience, and ending this buſineſs, whether ſhe would rather refer her ſelf to the Judgment of four Spiritual, and four Temporal Lords in this Kingdom, or ſtand to her Appeal. To which the ſad Queen anſwered, That her Father, before he conſented to her ſecond Marriage, had taken the advice of Doctors, and Clerks, whoſe opinion ſhe believ'd rather than any others; And that, the Pope having confirmed it, ſhe wondred that any ſhould queſtion it. And, whereas for quieting the Kings Conſcience, you would have me put the buſineſs to eight Lords; That which I ſay, is, I pray God ſend his Grace a quiet Conſcience. As for Anſwer to your meſſage; I pray you tell the King, I am his lawful Wife, and ſo will abide, till the Court of *Rome* determine to the Contrary. But our King, who alledg'd his Proceedings were according to the Law of God (which therefore he ſaid ſhould be more inſiſted on, than any other authority) ſent other Meſſengers, exhorting her ſtill to conform her ſelf; among whom one ſpake to this effect: Madam, you cannot be ignorant how much you have provoked the Kings diſpleaſure againſt you, ſince his Grace having uſed all fit means to clear his own, and Subjects inſatisfactions, concerning the Lawfulneſs of his Marriage, you yet continue refractory in that violent manner, as you not only refuſe the General Determinations of Univerſities, and Learned Men; but contrary to the Laws of the Land, and the Royal dignity, have cited his Highneſs to appear in the Court of *Rome*; neither have thoſe many Admonitions you have received concerning the danger, and conſequences hereof, been able to divert you from your purpoſes, or reduce you to reaſon and your duty. Of which therefore his Highneſs is ſo ſenſible, that he hath forborn of late to ſee your Grace, or receive your Tokens, giving you liberty further, to repair either to his Mannor of *Oking*, or *Eſtamſteed*, or the Monaſtery of *Biſham*; for, ſince you were known by his Brother Prince *Arthur*, you cannot be his lawful Wife. To which the vertuous and ſorrowful Queen replyed little more than this: That to what place ſoever ſhe remov'd, nothing could remove her from being the Kings Wife. And here the King bid her a final farewell: for, from this time, being *July* the fourteenth, I find not the King ever ſaw her more.

May 31. *Hall.*

July 14.

Our King being now inform'd that *Italian*, and other Foreign Mer-

Merchants brought Commodities hither, which they ſold well, and then return'd the money by Exchange to their own Country, to the exhauſting of the wealth of this Realm, and the diminution of his Cuſtoms, Cauſed a Proclamation to be ſet forth, that according to a branch of a Statute, *Ric.* 3. no Money they took here for ſelling their Ware ſhould be exchanged to other Countreys, but employed in the Commodities of this Realm, which (our Hiſtorians ſay) as long as it was obſerved, proved to the great benefit both of the King and Subject. And now, the Money for the *Præmunire* being call'd on, the Clergy, for their eaſe, would have drawn the Prieſts of *London* to contribution, which they took ſo ill, that, in outragious manner, breaking into the Chapter-houſe of St. *Pauls*, they did beat the Biſhops Servants; till the Biſhop, for avoiding more miſchief, gave them his bleſſing, and leave to depart for the preſent; though ſhortly after they were puniſh'd for their misbehaviour. 1531. Septemb. 1. *Hall.*

This while, the Emperor (intentive wholly to the affairs of *Germany*) did more calmly ſuffer our Kings intended Divorce; and the rather, for that it is probable the Determinations of the Univerſities above-mentioned had given him, if not ſatisfaction, yet colour enough to neglect a while the Proſecuting this buſineſs. Eſpecially, ſince at this time he might have ſo much uſe of our Kings aſſiſtance, againſt the *Turk*; Of which alſo hope was given him. On the other ſide *Francis* did by all means advance, and ſet it forward; both in regard himſelf (as their Hiſtorians have it) was much addicted to love-making at this time; and as that he doubted not, hereby, to keep our King at a variance with the Emperor. Againſt whom the offences and quarrels he had taken being not extinguiſhed, he both fortified himſelf by all means, and labour'd publickly to traduce even his moſt Impartial and generous Actions. Therefore he was ſo far from admitting the Reſtitution of *Milan* to *Franciſco Sforza* to be an Act of Piety, that he took it, if not as an affront to him, yet at leaſt as a Politick Introduction of one to that Dignity, who he knew could not be diſpoſſeſt thereof again, without offending all *Italy*. So likewiſe the parting with the *Contado* of *Aſti* (antiently belonging to the houſe of *Orleans*) to the Duke of *Savoy*, was thought to be no more than an intereſſing him in that quarrel. Furthermore, his retaining an Army in *Italy*, at the Coſt of the Confederates, (but under the Command of *Antonio de Leyva*) was underſtood, not for conſerving the Peace of *Italy*, but defending of *Genoüa* againſt him. All which was ſo ill taken, that *Francis* did not only by the entremiſe of *Guillaume de Bellay*, Treat of entring a private League with the Princes of *Germany*, for defence of the Rights of the Empire, (violated as he conceiv'd by the undue Election of *Ferdinand*) but prepar'd to ſend them ſuccours when occaſion were. Nor did his rancour againſt the Emperor ſtay here; but (if we may believe ſome even of his own Nation) extended it ſelf ſo far, as ſecretly, at this

1531. time, to incourage the *Turk* to invade the Patrimony of the Houſe of *Auſtria*; to the no little ſcandal, both of his own Honour, and the Chriſtian Religion. The Emperor, not ignorant of all theſe machinations, ſend *Seigneur de Balanzon* to *Francis*, to borrow Money, and to invite him to furniſh Land, and Sea-forces for a War againſt the *Turk*; alledging Treaties, Promiſes, and many Arguments to this purpoſe. To which *Francis* anſwered. That the Emperor had gotten, lately enough, from him, two Millions of God, which ought to ſuffice. For the reſt, that he was neither Merchant nor Banquer to furniſh money, but a Chriſtian Prince, that would have his part of the Honour and danger in all brave Actions. Therefore that he would ſpare no forces out of his Kingdom, nor permit them go to any place where himſelf did not lead them. Beſides, as this Summer was far ſpent, he could not ſend his Cavalry to *Auſtria* without much incommodity, (the diſtance between both Countreys being ſo great.) Therefore, that the Emperor ſhould defend *Germany*, while himſelf with an Army of fifty thouſand Men, would untertake to defend *Italy*, which the *Turk* alſo menac'd. And for the next year, he would be ready, with the help of his good Brother, the K. of *England*, to go to any place where it ſhould be needful. As for his Shipping, he could leaſt of all ſpare it; having occaſion to defend the Maritime parts of *France* againſt Pirats. Which being related again to the Emperor (then at *Ratisbonne*,) he thought fit to publiſh it, thereby to make *Francis* more odious, though effectively he took his offer to defend *Italy*, to be litte more than irriſion. Buſineſſes ſtanding thus, *Monſieur de Bellay* Ambaſſador from the French K. to the Princes, (having firſt conferr'd with *Monſieur de Valley* Ambaſſador from *Francis* to the Emperor) abſolutely concludes that Accord the Princes had formerly propos'd to his Maſter: giving by this means a perpetual cauſe of Jealouſie, and Offence to the Emperor. Yet as *Francis* thought himſelf not ſtrong enough alone, ſo he implored our Kings aſſiſtance; which our King alſo promiſed, by *Monſieur Gillex de Pommeraye*, (*French* Ambaſſador in *England*,) ſending with him (at his return) fifty thouſand Crowns to be employed for the defence and conſervation of the right and priviledges of the Empire. An Enterview alſo was projected betwixt them for the year following, wherein both Kings ſhould Treat of the General affairs, and particularly what they were to do, in caſe the *Turk* ſhould again invade *Chriſtendom*.

Bellay. l. 4.

July. 1532.

Bellay. 1532.

While affairs abroad paſſed thus, our Nation enjoyed much ſecurity, and quietneſs; ſo that, if contention about Religion had not hapned, they might have thought themſelves happy; which though it had its beginning from the divers explications of the holy Scripture, yet many good men laboured to reconcile them; Affirming, that, whatſoever was neceſſary to the attaining of everlaſting happineſs, was ſo plainly, and ſo perſpicuouſly ſet down there, as it needed no Interpreter. And that, if any thing beſides were taught, it was, if not erroneous,

erroneous, yet neceſſary to Salvation. Howbeit, they would not deny, but divers points might be aded, for the Ampliation, Conveniency, and Ornament of Religion, when they were deliver'd upon theſe terms, and not under thoſe Condemnations and Penalties wherewith the more neceſſary parts were injoyn'd. Whereupon alſo they concluded, that, if divers paſſages in the holy Scriptures might ſeem obſcure, it was Gods will to have it ſo, who thought not fit to reveal them, otherways; as reſerving a full knowledge to a ſecond and better life. Yet, becauſe divers, not content with this or any Moderate Reformation, did (through the violence of their ſpirits) run into thoſe extremities, as they labour'd to draw all the Doctrine of the *Roman* Church into a perverſe ſenſe; much occaſion of controverſie was given; While they who indeavour'd a Peace ſo little prevail'd, as, (for the moſt part) like thoſe who part affraies, they bore blows on either ſide. In which doubtful times King *Henry* put in execution all former Laws againſt Heretical Perſons, and Books; whereby one *Thomas Bilney*, Batchelour of both Laws, declaring himſelf with great vehemency in divers Articles againſt the *Roman* Church, was (*a*) condemn'd to be burnt, and ſhortly after, for the ſame cauſe, (*b*) *Bayfield* a Prieſt, and *Baynham* a Lawyer. The whole narration whereof being extant in Maſter *Fox*, I ſhall mention no otherwiſe.

1531. *Fox.*

(*a*) Aug. 19.
(*b*) Nov. 27.
(*c*) April 30. 1532.

The next Year *January* 15th. the Parliament ſate again till *May* 14th. Where the Commons perſiſting in their Grievances againſt the Clergy, which they compriſed in a Book, and delivered by their Speaker; The King anſwer'd, He would take advice, and hear the parties accuſed ſpeak, and then proceed to a Reformation; which followed in part, as appears in ſome Statutes of this Parliament. For, Whereas it was uſual in former times that Clerks who committed petty Treaſon, Murder, or Felony, were (through a certain priviledge of the Church) Deliver'd to their Ordinaries, Who alſo thereupon, for lucre or other undue motives, did ſuffer them to make their Purgation by ſuch as nothing knew of their miſdeeds, to the great ſcandal of Juſtice; It was now enacted, that none ſhould have the benefit of this recourſe to the Ordinary, but thoſe who were within holy Orders, and yet to find ſufficient Sureties for their good abearing. This Act yet not to extend to thoſe, who being attainted of Felony, or Murder, are after admitted to their Clergy, and ſo deliver'd to the Ordinary. It was provided alſo that Ordinaries, having ſuch perſons in their Cuſtody, might degrade them, and ſend them to the Kings Bench to be detain'd.

1532. Jan. 15. Reg. 23. *Hall.* March 18.

It was enacted alſo, how perjuries, and untrue Verdicts ſhould be puniſhed. And this was to the ſingular benefit of the Subject; there being no miſchiefs ſo eaſie to be done, ſo irreparable in their Conſequence, or unlimited in their extent, as thoſe of this kind.

And, whereas the Commiſſion of Sewers, being about Sea-walls, Gutters, Banks, *&c.* and Dams, Weres, *&c.* in freſh Rivers, was not

1532. not particularly enough ſet down heretofore; It was now declared and interpreted. And this was much for the benefit of the Sea-Coaſts, and making great Rivers Navigable.

Whereas alſo Statutes of the Staple were heretofore uſed only betwixt Merchant, and Merchant, for ſuch Merchandiſe of the Staple, as paſſed betwixt them; the uſe thereof was now permitted to others of the Kings Subjects upon certain Conditions. And this not only enlarged Contracts, but ſtrengthned much the ſinews of them.

Whereas heretofore the Kings Subjects were ordinarily called by Citations to appear, in the Arches, Audience, and other high Courts of the Arch-Biſhops of this Realm, to anſwer to many ſurmiſed cauſes; and that they who refuſed, were Excommunicated or ſuſpended from divine Service; It was now enacted, that none ſhould be ſo Cited but in certain caſes declared in the ſaid Statute.

Feofments of Lands alſo to the uſe of a Church (as being little different from *Mort-main*) were made void.

Whereas divers, having the benefit of their Clergy, were afterwards committed to their Ordinaries, and did there break Priſon, it was now Declared Felony.

Divers other good Statutes paſſed alſo this Seſſion; which yet, for being meerly Legal, or limited to certain places, are not here recited.

This Year alſo an Act paſſed, concerning *Annates*, or the firſt fruits of Biſhopricks, paid uſually to the See of *Rome*, for the obtaining of Palls, Bulls, *&c.* The Preamble and conſideration whereof was (as I find in the Records.) 1. That great ſums of money already paſſed out of the Kingdom that way, (being no leſs than one hundred and ſixty thouſand pounds *Sterling*, ſince the ſecond year of *Henry* the Seventh.) Secondly, that more was like to be ſhortly tranſported, by reaſon many of the Biſhops are Aged. Thirdly, That the firſt uſe and grant of them was for maintaining Arms againſt Infidels. So that it was enacted, that they ſhould henceforth ceaſe, and no more money be paid to *Rome* to that intent, except as is hereafter ſpecified, (*viz.*) Leſt the Court of *Rome* ſhould think themſelves irremunerated for their pain, in making and ſealing Bulls in Lead, *&c.* it was ordain'd, that there may be allow'd for the ſaid Bulls five pounds in the hundred, according to the rate of the Biſhopricks clear value above all charges. And if any man, being choſen to a Biſhoprick, and preſented by the King to the Pope, ſhall hereupon find any let or hindrance, by reſtraint of his Bulls, upon convenient ſuit for the ſame; then he may be named and preſented by the Kings Highneſs to the Arch-Biſhop of the Province; who ſhall Conſecrate him; or, the ſaid Arch-Biſhop delaying under pretence of want of Pall, Bull, *&c.* the perſon ſo named, ſhall be Conſecrate, and inveſted by any two Biſhops of the Land, whom the K. ſhall appoint thereto; and ſhall be held and reputed thereafter as a Compleat Biſhop. But of this Act we ſhall ſpeak again when we come to the 25th. year of the

Records.

the King. For though it paſt the Parliament now, and the King gave his aſſent thereto; yet power was reſerv'd for him to annul or confirm the ſame any time within two years next following. 1532.

Moreover, in this Statute, the King and his Parliament Declare, that they do not intend to uſe any extremity or violence, before gentle and courteous ways have been attempted. But if it ſhall pleaſe the King to propoſe an amicable Compoſition to the Pope, and his Holineſs ſhall be content either to aboliſh or moderate thoſe *Annates*; then the Compoſition, ſo made, to ſtand firm. But if, upon the ſaid amicable Propoſitions, the Realm cannot be diſburdned, and that, for the continuance of the ſame, the Pope ſhall unjuſtly vex, and diſquiet the King or his Subjects by any Excommunication, *&c.* Be it enacted by the Authority aforeſaid, that the Kings Highneſs his Heirs and Succeſſors Kings of *England*, and all his Spiritual and Lay Subjects of the ſame, without any ſcruple of Conſcience, ſhall and may lawfully, to the honour of Almighty God, the increaſe and continuance of vertue, and good example within this Realm, (the ſaid Cenſures, Excommunications, Interdictions, Compulſories, or any of them notwithſtanding) miniſter, or cauſe to be miniſtred throughout this ſaid Realm, and all other the Dominions and Territories belonging or appertaining thereunto, all and all manner of Sacraments, Sacramentals, Ceremonies, or other Divine Service of holy Church, or any other thing or things, neceſſary for the health of the Soul of Man-kind, as they heretofore at any time or times have been vertuouſly uſed or accuſtomed to do within the ſame. And that no manner of ſuch Cenſures, Excommunications, Interdictions, or any other Proceſs or Compulſories ſhall by any of the Prelates, or other ſpiritual Fathers of this Region, ne by any of their Miniſters or Subſtitutes, be at any time or times hereafter publiſhed, executed, or divulged in any manner of ways.

This Act being paſs'd, our King made uſe thereof to terrifie the Pope, which alſo took effect; as I find by our Ambaſſadors Letters Dated from *Rome*, *April* 29th. 1532. though together (as they were inſtructed from hence,) his Holineſs was told by them, that our King had reſerved the whole buſineſs to his own power and Direction; which however it appeas'd the Pope awhile, yet as matters paſt afterwards, the Statute had his final confirmation, *Anno* 25. *Henry* 8. April 29.

I Shall begin this years Hiſtory with the affairs of Queen *Katharine*; who, by her Proctor at *Rome*, aſſiſted with the advice and power of the Imperialiſts, Negotiated puiſſantly with the Pope; So that, notwithſtanding our Kings Indignation for her proſecuting him in this manner, ſhe urged ſtill the Appeal, beſeeching the Pope to Cite the King, by himſelf or Proctor to appear. But the Pope thought fit rather gently thus to exhort our King to take again his Wife *Katharine*.

CLE-

1532.

Clemens. Pap. VII.

CHariſſime in Chriſto fili noſter, ſalutem & Apoſtolicam benedictionem. Quod pro noſtra in te benevolentia, tuoq; honore & ſalute falſum eſſe cupimus, Relatum nobis eſt, & à multis confirmatum, Serenitatem tuam, quæ non ſolum antea, verum etiam poſt motam litem inter te & chariſſimam in Chriſto filiam noſtram Catharinam Angliæ Reginam Illuſtrem, ſuper validitate matrimonii inter vos Contracti, eam apud ſe, ut decebat, in ſua Regia curia tenuerat, atque ut Reginam & uxorem habuerat, & tractaverat, à certo citra tempore eam non ſolum à ſe & ſua curia, ſed etiam à Civitate ſeu loco ſuæ reſidentiæ ſeparaſſe, alioq; miſiſſe, loco autem ejus quandam Annam in ſuum contubernium, & Cohabitationem publice recepiſſe, eique maritalem affectum uxori tuæ debitum exhibere; Quæ res, fili Chariſſime, ſi modo vera eſt, tuq; parumper animum ab humanis affectibus collegeris, non dubitamus, quin, etiam tacentibus nobis, perſpecturus ſis, quam multis modis indigna te fuerit, vel ob contemptum litis-pendentiæ & Judicii noſtri, vel ob ſcandalum Eccleſiæ, vel ob communis pacis perturbationem; Quæ omnia ita à recto & religioſo Principe, qualem te ſemper habuimus, aliena ſunt, ut, tanquam tuæ naturæ & Conſuetudini repugnantia, etſi nobis indies magis confirmantur, difficilius tamen credamus. Quid enim minus tibi, & tuæ probitati convenit, quam hinc apud nos, per Oratores & literas, ſuper cauſa iſtuc remittenda, inſtare, inde te ipſum Tuo facto cauſa decidere? Quid ſimile tui, armis & ſcriptis olim Eccleſiam & ſanctam fidem defendiſſe, Nunc tali facto Eccleſiam videri Contemnere? Jam vero communis ſalus & tranquillitas à nullo unquam noſtri temporis Rege acrius quam à te cuſtodita eſt, qui bellum pro Eccleſia olim ſuſceptum, & glorioſe confectum, pro communi quiete depoſueris; ſemperque Arbiter quidam pacis & communis concordiæ inter Chriſtianos Principes Conciliandæ exiſtimatus; Quo magis

magis hæc nova de te audientes, admiramus ſimul ac dolemus, unum hoc tuum factum, ſi modo verum eſt, ab omni vitæ tuæ gloria & conſuetudine diſcrepare. Quamobrem cum nec rem tantam non explorare certius, nec neglectam omittere debeamus, Hanc ad te, quaſi amantis & ſolliciti Patris vocem procurrere voluimus, antequam Judicis ullas partes tecum ſumamus. Faciunt enim tuæ Celſitudinis dignitas, vetera tua in nos merita, noſtraq; ex his erga te benevolentia, ut tecum omni reſpectu & lenitate agere velimus, ſumpta parentis perſona, & Judicis tantiſper depoſita, donec ex tuis literis conſilium progrediendi capiamus. Cupimus quidem, fili, ut diximus, hęc penitus falſa eſſe, aut non tam aſpera quam nobis referuntur, Teq; ipſum deinceps, pro tua ſingulari ſapientia, providere, ne cuiquam de Serenitate tua omni virtute conſpicui in hoc tantum obloquendi detur occaſio. Si quis enim vel ex Catholicis dolens, vel ex Hæreticis gaudens audiat, te Reginam, quam in uxorem accepiſti, Regumq; filiam, Cęſariſq; & Regis Romanorum materteram, viginti amplius annis tecum commoratam, prolemq; ex te ſuſceptam habentem, nunc à tuo thoro & contubernio procul amoviſſe, aliam quoq; publice apud te habere, non modo ſine ulla licentia noſtra verum etiam contra noſtram prohibitionem; Is profecto neceſſe eſt, ut ſententiam quodammodo de optimo Principe ferat, tanquam Eccleſiam & publicam tranquillitatem parvi faciente, quod nos ſcimus ab intentione & voluntate tua longiſſime abeſſe; in tantum, ut ſi quis alius hoc idem in tuo regno audeat, quod à tua Serenitate factum dicitur, nullo modo te probaturum, ſed etiam ſevere vindicaturum pro certo habeamus. Quamobrem, fili, etiamſi tu rectiſſime ſentias, ut nos quidem conſtanter credimus, tamen cauſam præbere rumoribus & ſcandalis non debes; hoc præſertim tempore tam calamitoſo, plenoq; Hæreſum, & aliarum perturbationum; ne tuum factum latius pateat ad exemplum. Sunt enim facta regum, præſertim illuſtrium, ſicut tua Serenitas eſt, propoſita quaſi in ſpecula, hominibus cæteris ad imitandum. Nec præterea negligenda tibi eſt 1532

1532. communis ſalus,& totius Chriſtianitatis tranquillitas,quod ſemper fuit optimorum Regum. Nec, fili, debes Sereniſſimos Cæſarem & Romanorum Regem, dictæ Catharinæ nepotes, nulla te proſecutos contumelia, hac tam gravi injuria, indeciſa lite, afficere, & exinde pacem perturbare univerſalem, qua ſola adverſus imminentem nobis Turcam tuti ſumus; ne ſcandali in Eccleſia, periculi in tota Chriſtiana republica cauſam prębeas, propterea q; Rex cœleſtis à te irritatus, tantam ſuam erga Te benignitatem aliqua ſeveritatis amaritudine permiſceat. Te igitur, fili, per eam, qua ſemper te ſumus proſecuti benevolentiam, ſemperque, ſi per te liceat, proſequemur, omni ſtudio & amore hortamur, & paterna charitate monemus, ut, ſi hæc vera ſint, quæ tuam veterem pietatem & gloriam denigrant, tute ea corrigere velis, ipſam Catharinam Reginam ad te humaniter revocando, atq; in eo Reginæ honore,& uxoris quo decet affectu, apud te habendo: Ipſam vero Annam à publico tuo convictu & cohabitatione, propter ſcandalum, removendo, donec noſtra ſententia inter vos ſubſequatur. Quod nos quidem, etſi eſt à te debitum, tibi; eſt maxime futurum honorificum, beneficii loco recepiſſe à tua Serenitate videbimur. Nam quod te in priſtina tua voluntate erga nos, Obſervantiaq; erga hanc ſanctam ſedem, cum qua mutuis officiis & beneficiis ſemper certaſti, conſervare maxime cupimus; Summo ſane cum dolore, ad ea deſcenderemus Juris remedia,quorum neceſſitatem non noſtra privata contumelia, quam tibi libenter condonaremus, ſed Dei omnipotentis honor, publicæque utilitatis, & tuę animę ſalutis ratio ad poſtremum nobis, quanquam invitis, imponeret, Sicut Etiam Nuntius apud te noſter hęc Tuę Serenitati uberius explicabit. Datum apud Sanctum Petrum ſub annulo Paſcatoris, die xxv^to^ Januarii 1332. Pont' noſtri Anno Nono.

Jan. 25.

Bloſius.

But

But the Pope had no good Anſwer thereunto; For as the People for the moſt part exclaim'd againſt the Match (as our Hiſtorians relate) ſo the King would have found perchance ſome Difficulty to appeaſe their Scruples, when otherwiſe he could have ſatisfied his own. The Queen wanted not yet thoſe who defended her Cauſe publickly, both in Books and Sermons (of whom the chief were *Thomas Abel* her Chaplain, and *John Fiſher* Biſhop of *Rocheſter*) and privately in diſcourſe, (eſpecially Women) though not ſufficiently either to clear all Objections, or to remove the King from his Affection to Mrs. *Anne Bolen*. Among which I muſt not forget one *Temſe*, of the Lower Houſe of Parliament; who motion'd that they all ſhould Petition the King to take his Queen again; which being advertis'd to our King, He ſent for *Thomas Audley*, the Speaker of the Houſe, and told him to this effect. That he marvelled any among them ſhould meddle in buſineſſes which could not properly be determined there. As for this particular, that it concern'd his Soul ſo much, that he many times wiſht the Marriage had been good, But ſince the Doctors of the Univerſities had generally declar'd it unlawful, he could do no leſs than abſtain from her Company. Which therefore he wiſh'd them to take as the true reaſon, without imputing it to any wanton Appetite: ſince, being in the one and fortieth year of his Age, it might be juſtly preſumed ſuch Motions were not ſo quick in him. All which, that they might the better underſtand, he had inform'd himſelf in all parts of Chriſtendom, concerning ſtrange Marriages; and that, ſaving in *Spain* and *Portugal*, he could never find that any man had ſo much as Married two Siſters, if the firſt were carnally known. But for the Brother to Marry the Brothers Wife was ſo abhorred among all Nations, that he never heard any Chriſtian ſo did but himſelf; and therefore wiſhed them to believe that his Conſcience was troubled. Shortly after which, the King ſent for the Speaker again, and told him that he had found that the Clergy of his Realm were but his half Subjects or ſcarce ſo much. Every Biſhop or Abbot, at the entring of his Dignity, taking an Oath to the Pope derogatory to that of their Fidelity to the King, which Contradiction he deſired his Parliament to take away: Whereupon theſe two Oaths by the King's Command being read and conſidered, the Parliament ſo handled the Buſineſs, as it occaſion'd the final Renouncing of the Popes Authority about two years after.

1532.

April 30. *Hall. Fox.*

May 11. *Hall.*

While theſe things thus paſs, King *Henry* commands his Agents at *Rome*, (the Biſhop of *Worceſter* and Sir *Gregory Caſalis*) to preſent unto the Pope the Opinion of divers famous Lawyers, in favour of his Cauſe; procuring alſo Learned men from all parts of *Italy*, to come to *Rome*, to offer Diſputation for the ſame. To ſecond this again, K. *Henry* in *January*, 1532. ſends *William Benet*, Doctor of Law, to *Rome*, with Inſtructions to this purpoſe. But becauſe it was found, that, by the continual Interceſſion of the Queen and Emperor, the Pope intended ſhortly to Cite the King to appear at *Rome*, either

Jan.

1532. in Perſon or by Proxy; He diſpatches thither about *February*, *Edw. Karne*, Doctor of Law, to be his Excuſator, and to remonſtrate, that his Grace is not bound by Law ſo to appear. But the Pope making difficulty to admit this Excuſator, it was diſputed in the Conſiſtory, whether he ought to be heard or no? but much time being ſpent herein, the Queens Agents require the Pope to proceed in the principal Cauſe. In the mean while our King, by Sir *Francis Bryan*, importunes *Francis* to intercede for him with the Pope; who, thereupon by Letter, dated *March* 16. informs his Holineſs, that the Requeſt of the King of *England* is juſt, and he ought to relieve him. Or elſe they two, (being *une meſme choſe*, and who have ſo well deſerv'd of him) ſhall be forc'd to ſeek ſuch other Remedies, as ſhall not pleaſe him, *&c.* To enforce this moſt earneſt Letter, *Francis* ſends *Gabriel de Grammont*, Biſhop of *Tarbe* (lately made Cardinal) to the Pope, who yet, being continually urged by the Imperialiſts to proceed againſt the King, and hearing (beſides) firſt the Prohibition of *Annates* above-mentioned, and afterwards that a certain Prieſt was committed for maintaining the Papal Authority, and that another Prieſt (being put in Priſon by the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury* for favouring *Luther*) after he had appeal'd to the King *tanquam Dominum Supremum*, was ſet at Liberty, proceeds to Citation; And calling a Conſiſtory (*July* 8.) commits the hearing of the Cauſe to *Paulus de Capiſucci* Dean of the *Ruota*, and appoints the Month of *October*, 1532. for the Kings Appearance, proteſting *alioqui procedetur*, &c. In the mean time, he writes to our King, certifying him what was done, (yet omitting the Clauſe of *alioqui procedetur*) intreating him further to ſend a Proctor; making alſo this Overture to our Agents, That he will be content that all the Proceſs ſhall be in *England*, except only the final Deciſion, which (becauſe there is Queſtion of the Papal Authority and the Law Divine) he will reſerve to himſelf. The term prefixed for our Kings Appearance being expir'd; *Capiſucci* Cites our King again, or his Proctors, or finally his Orators. To all which *Edward Karne* anſwered publickly, *November* 14. 1532. That the Proceeding was undue, both as the Queſtion concerning his Excuſation was not decided, and that he could not get a Copy of the Citation; and finally as it was not congruous to the *Breve* ſent to the King concerning this buſineſs. Beſides, that the Emperor was ſo powerful in *Rome*, that he could not expect Juſtice, Wherefore, unleſs they deſiſted, he declared, that he muſt Appeal from thence to the able men in ſome indifferent Univerſities. And that, if this were refuſed, he proteſted then a Nullity in all that they did, But the Pope, as little regarding this, goes to *Bononia* ſhortly after, to meet the Empeeor, according to an Agreement made a good while ſince betwixt them; promiſing our Agents yet, that notwithſtanding the Queens Proctors Sollicitation, nothing of moment ſhould be done in this Cauſe, till the Emperor were departed.

Feb. March. April. March 16. April. June. July 8. July. Novemb. 4. Nov. 14.

The

The *Turk* now threatning *Germany*, the Elector of *Mentz*, and *Lodovicus* Prince *Palatine* interposed Offices for Reconciling the Emperor and the Protestants: The Treaty whereof began in *April*, and so continued until *July*. When News of the coming of the *Turk* being brought, both parties condescended to this Capitulation concluded at *Noremberg*. 1532. April 4. July 23.

That no man should be troubled for cause of Religion, till the Council be held, (which the Emperor will labour to procure to be summon'd within six Moneths, and held within a year following) or some other way of determination of controverted-points be found. *Sleid.*

Whereupon also the Protestants (being seven Princes, and twenty-three Cities) offer'd him aid against the *Turk*, Who, this year, 1532. upon colour of putting *Johannes Sepusius* in possession of that Crown, invaded *Hungary*, which also he prosecuted in that peremptory manner, as without admitting any reasons from the Emperor, or indeed allowing him any other Title than the King of *Spain*, (for he said there was no Emperor but himself) he brought in an Army of three hundred thousand men into *Hungary*. And because his equipage was singular, I presume the Reader will take well the Description of it, For his own Person he was cloath'd only in a rich Robe of Crimson broidered with Gold; but his Cimitary and Dagger, as also the Saddle and Bit of the Horse, on which he rid, was set with Stones of inestimable value. Then followed his Visier-Bassas, and *Abraym* his Favorite, and Houshold Retinue; being about twelve thousand men. Before him went four thousand Horse with the Standard Imperial, and four thousand Janizaries of his Guard, four hundred Slaves on Horseback in a rich Livery, and fifty Chariots carrying his most pretious Treasure, and some of the Choicest beauties of the Seraglio, and especially the admired *Espanziel* a *Macedonian*, and four thousand Horse to Guard them, besides two hundred brave Horse richly furnished, which were led by the hand. His Pages were a hundred on Horseback, whereof one more gorgeous than the rest, and his Lacquies one thousand, Richly apparelled likewise in a Livery, all of these (last mentioned) wearing great Plumes. After which followed his Dogs and Hawks in no small porportion.

With this Train *Solyman* marches to *Belgrade*, then turning to the left hand of the *Danubius* he besieges *Giuntz*: whence being Repulsed, he send out his Captains to forage the Country; Who after committing all sorts of cruelty, were at the last defeated and slain: And now *Solyman* finding great Forces raised against him, and prepared to give him Battel, retir'd, with as little success as he had three years since, at *Vienna*; This Army of the Christians consisting, as I find, of ninety thousand Foot, and thirty thousand Horse, was rais'd by the Emperor, who yet did not think fit to conduct them, in person, as coming from *Lintz*, in *Austria* to *Vienna*, No sooner than that *Solyman* was departed from *Hungary*; Whence he sent to *Rome* a Dispatch Octob. 16. 1529.

1532. a Diſpatch of the 4th. of *October*, deſiring the Pope to meet him at *Genoüa*. About which time he received news from *Andrea Doria*, whom the laſt Summer he had commanded to ſcour the *Mediterranean* Sea, and to land where he thought fit. Whereupon *Doria* with a great Fleet, and ten thouſand Souldiers, ſetting forth from *Meſſina* in *Sicily*, *Auguſt* 18. paſſing by *Cephalony* and *Zante*, came to *Morea*, and Landed at *Coron*, (antiently called *Corone*, not *Chæronea*, in *Bœotia*, *Plutarch*'s Country, as *Sandoval* miſtakes it) and battering it both by Sea and Land, took it by Compoſition, *Sept.* 21. where leaving for Garriſon fifteen hundred *Spaniards*, He return'd with great Spoils and honour to *Genoüa*.

Octob. 4.

Auguſt 18.

Libro. xx. p. 178.

Sept. 21.

This while our King finding he could obtain no ſatisfaction from the Pope, haſtens the League with *Francis*, formerly projected, to a concluſion; and the rather, that he heard this meeting betwixt the Pope and the Emperor would ſhortly follow. In emulation whereof therefore an Interview betwixt him and *Francis* was concluded, in that form which Cardinal *Woolſey* heretofore had ſet down upon the like meeting projected, *Anno* 1527.

Bellay. 1527.

The Articles of Treaty formerly concluded betwixt *Thomas* Earl of *Wiltſhire*, and *Ormond* Lord Privy Seal, together with *Edward Fox*, the Kings Almoner, on the one part, and *Gilles de la Pomeraye* on the other part, were theſe.

Tillet.

July 23. I. That all former Treaties ſhall remain in force, ſo that, if any Conditions in this Treaty be not performed, the former Treaties yet, eſpecially that of perpetual Peace, ſhall ſtand firm.

II. That if the Emperor *Charles* any way ſhall Invade each of them directly or indirectly, in the Lands they now hold, they ſhall be bound to ſend mutual Aid, (*viz.*) The King of *France* to the King of *England* (within three moneths warning) to the place appointed five hundred men at Arms, (armed *à la Francoiſe*,) or any other leſs number, which the King of *England* ſhall pay according to the rate they uſe to have of the *French* King. The King of *England* to the King of *France* ſuch a number of Archers on foot as he ſhall require, ſo it exceed not five thouſand; to receive pay of the *French* King according to the rate of *England*. And if either the Horſemen or Archers paſs the Sea, theſe into *France*, or thoſe into *England*, then, beſides this pay, there is ſuch proviſion to be made for Victual, by the Prince under whom they ſerve, that the Souldiers may well live and maintain themſelves by their pay. And if the ſaid Emperor ſhall attempt any thing by Sea, the Prince invaded giving two moneths notice to the other, ſhall receive for Aid a Navy, (in which ſhall be fifteen thouſand Souldiers,) well armed and equipped, which Navy both Kings ſhall be bound to maintain for ſix Moneths together, or longer if need be, at their own coſts, to defend and ſecure againſt the ſaid Emperor the Sea and ſhores on both ſides, from the Iſle of *Uſhant* to the place call'd the *Downs*, between *Sandwich* and *Dover*.

III. If the Emperor or his Governors ſhall detain the Goods, or Ships, or Perſons of the *Engliſh* Merchants in his Dominions, the King of *France* ſhall ſummon him to make reſtitution, which if he denies, he ſhall lay hold on and arreſt the Emperor's Subjects, and Goods in his Kingdom, *&c.* nor ſhall releaſe them till ſatisfaction be given. And in like manner is the King of *England* bound to the King of *France*. 1532.

(But, if for any probable cauſe, and particularly for any contained in the Articles of the former Treaty between him and the Kings of *England* and *France*, or for Juſtice denied, after he hath requir'd it, the Emperor ſhall Arreſt any of the Subjects of the two Kings, or their Goods, then the other is not bound to ſee him indemnified, according to the former Article. Provided, Firſt, that the Emperor made it appear, that it is for a juſt cauſe. Secondly, That he arreſt no more than may countervail his pretended loſs. Thirdly, Provided alſo that the Number of Ships arreſted by the Emperor, be not above five or ſix, and that for ſome particular intereſt or deed betwixt them and him.) This third Article ſhall not be extended to the Merchants of Higher *Germany*, and the Subjects of *Charles Jure Imperii*.

Neither of the two Kings may make a new League, Friendſhip, or Affinity with any Prince or Eſtate, to the prejudice of the other. If he do, it ſhall be counted void, and of no effect: This Treaty, being Minuted 23 *June* 1532. was to be Signed five Moneths after.

And now the time of the Interview approaching, our King paſs'd the Seas to *Calais*, 11. of *Octob.* 1532. with a Royal train, and Miſtris *Anne Bolen*, (lately * Created Marchioneſs of *Pembroke*. And going thence to *Bologne*, the young Princes, the Children of *Francis*, meeting him, were recommended to Him by the K. their Father. Who, after many complements, conducted him to the Abbey; where they both lodg'd in the ſame houſe. Many courteſies were exchang'd, and many deſigns projected betwixt thoſe Princes concerning Religion, and other affairs of Chriſtendom, for the ſpace of four days that they ſtay'd together; which being paſt, *Francis* return'd with our King to *Calais*, in this order, that, while *Francis* was on *French* ground he gave place, but when he came to the *Engliſh* pale, he receiv'd it. Being now come near *Calais*, the Duke of *Richmon*, a goodly young Gentleman, bravely attended, met them. All the Souldiers of the Town alſo, and Servants to the Nobility, richly apparel'd, made a Guard for their entrance into the Streets. The Lodging which *Francis* was brought to, was moſt richly furniſh'd with Cloth of Gold and Tiſſue, Imbroidered in ſome places with Pearl and precious Stone. And their ſeveral ſervices brought in a hundred and ſeventy Diſhes all of Maſſive Gold. The Marchioneſs alſo made them a curious and rich Maſque, in which both Kings danc'd. After which *Anne de Montmorencie*, a Noble man of a moſt Antient and generous Family, Grand-Maiſter, and Mareſchal of *France*, and *Philip Chabot Seigneur de Bryon*, and Admiral of *France*, were accepted

Octob. 11.
* Sept. 1.
Octob. 20.
Octob. 25. *Hall.*
Octob. 27.
Octob. 28.

1532. cepted into the Order of the Garter. *Francis* himſelf (who was alſo of this Order) ſitting in his Stall at their Election. And this was in lieu of the taking of the Dukes of *Norfolk* & *Suffolk* into the Order of St. *Michael* by *Francis* at *Boulogne*. And, here, the two Kings adviſed what in their particular ſhould be done againſt the *Turk*; For, though News was already brought of his Retreat, yet becauſe that he had left behind him a great part of his Forces, & that it was thought he intended to return, It was agreed betwixt theſe Princes, the next year to bring an Army into the Field, of ſeventy thouſand Foot, and ten thouſand Horſe, and not to part without mutual conſent. That they ſhould ſend to the Princes in *Italy* or *Germany* to require paſſage and Victual at a reaſonable price, *&c.* This being ſettled, our King complained of the ill uſage the Pope gave him in the affairs of his Divorce, in regard he was Cited to appear at the Court of *Rome* by himſelf or Proctor; Whereas it was uſual in theſe caſes to ſend Judges to the place; It being not reaſonable that either a Proctor ſhould be truſted with the ſecrets of his Conſcience, or that himſelf ſhould abandon his Realm to go in Perſon to ſo remote a place. Whereupon they began mutual complaints againſt the Pope for the *Annats* and exactions taken upon the Subjects in either Country, which they promis'd to remedy, by ſummoning him to a Council, and in the mean while to ſend their Ambaſſadors to require reparation, proteſting, that otherwiſe (by calling Provincial Councils in their ſeveral Kingdoms) they would give that order which was fitting: And, for this purpoſe that the Cardinals of *Tournon* and *Grandmont*, ſhould be employed; who alſo were Authoris'd to tell the Pope, that, whereas an Interview had been propos'd betwixt him and the *French* K. at *Avignon* or *Nizza*, that it might be, that the King of *Engl.* his good Brother, could be perſuaded eaſily to go along with him, for ending all controverſies, if his Holineſs were diſpos'd thereunto. In the mean while, the Biſhop of *Auxerre* the *French* Ambaſſador at *Rome*, ſhould certifie the Pope, that the ſaid Cardinals would be preſent at the Interview betwixt the Pope and Emperor, to the end they might mediate with the Pope, for giving K. *Henry* Judges in his own Kingdom, to decide the point of the Divorce. After which, coming to ſpeak, (as I find by our Records) concerning his intended Match with the new Marchioneſs, *Francis* incourag'd him to proceed; promiſing, if the Cauſe were queſtion'd, to aſſiſt him to the uttermoſt, whatſoever ſhould come of it. In which Diſcourſes purpoſing *fier la Partie* for the chief affairs of *Europe*, they paſſed four days at *Calais*. After which time the K. conducting him to the *French* ground, bid him farewell 30 *Octob.* 1532. and ſo return'd to *Calais*. Yet as the weather was then tempeſtuous, he paſſed not the Seas before the 14th. of *Novemb.* on which day ſome write, He privatly Married the Marchioneſs, though others place it on the 25 of *Jan.* following, *Rowland Lee* afterwards Biſhop of *Coventry* and *Lichfield*, and Preſident of *Wales*, (under whom it began firſt to be govern'd

Octob. 25. *Bell.*

Octob. 30.

Nov. 14. *Holingſ. Stow.*

govern'd by the Laws of *England*) celebrating the Marriage in the presence of Arch-bishop *Cranmer*, the Duke of *Norfolk*, and her Father, Mother, and Brothers, *&c.* which yet was not published till the *Easter* following. Not long after which (or as some have it in the beginning of the next Spring) the King sent *George Bolen*, Lord *Rochfort*, to *Francis* to acquaint him with the Marriage, and to desire him (if occasion were) not to fail his promise. Furthermore he requir'd his advice, how it were best to publish it, since it could not be long conceal'd. He also acquainted him how the *Scots* under the Earl of *Murray* had done some hostile Acts in his Kingdom; wishing him therefore not to take it ill if he Reveng'd himself on the *Scots*; intreating him further, that if the Interview betwixt the Pope and him (then secretly projected) must needs follow (which yet he wished were protracted) that he would remember his Cause, then depending in *Rome*, as he was often desir'd. 1532. *Belley.*

The Emperor who was well inform'd of this Interview, hastned his with the Pope. And because the Pope could not be persuaded to come to *Genoüa* by Sea, the meeting was agreed at *Bononia*, 20th. *December*, 1532. where also the two Cardinals above-mentioned, were on the part of *Francis*. And now they treated of the general affairs, but not with that intireness and satisfaction which formerly past; for the Pope retained still some grudge concerning the business of *Ferrara* above-mentioned. Therefore, when the Emperor (according to his promise given to the *German* Princes) prest him to call a Council, he deferr'd it; and, when he wish'd him to renounce all Friendship with our King and *Francis*, he excus'd himself, saying, they were Christian Princes. Again, when he required that *Catharina de Medicis*, the Popes Niece (between whom and the Duke of *Orleans*, second Son to *Francis*, a Treaty past) should be disposed of to *Francisco Sforza*; he replied she was already promised. Only, it seems, he accorded all that could be requir'd concerning our King. Insomuch, that unless he would contribute puissantly for and against the *Turk* (for which purpose the Pope promis'd his Letters) the Emperor was then assur'd that all that could be done in favour of Queen *Katharine* should be immediately dispatched. Which also the Emperor (now more than ever offended at our King's League with *Francis*) took so well, that in Contemplation thereof, he not only withdrew his Forces out of *Lombardy*, but gave Peace to *Italy*, as by a League then concluded betwixt them more fully appear'd. Some Cardinals being made at this Interview, the Ambassadors of *France* demanded a Cardinals Hat for *Hierom*, Bishop of *Worcester*; which the Emperor oppos'd, saying he would have taken it less ill, that the *French* King should have sued for four Hats for his own Subjects, than one for any appertaining to our King, especially for him who had been a diligent Agent in the Divorce. Many designs here likewise were projected, and among them one by the Bishop of *Como*, who for deciding all Controversies, Decemb. 20.

1532. *Bellay.* said it was neceſſary that the Pope, the Emperor and *French* King ſhould meet together, which, yet, was not finally approv'd unleſs our King made the fourth. But this alſo in regard of the little ſecurity thoſe Princes could mutually give or receive, being judg'd improbable, was rejected. Shortly after which, the Pope and Emperor took leave of each other. During this Interview I find in our Records a *Portuguez*, in the name of *David* King of the *Ethiopians* (vulgarly called *Prete Jan*) preſented himſelf Ambaſſador to his Holineſs; for authorizing of which Charge he brought with him not only Letters of Credence (tranſlated out of the *Chaldee* to the *Italian* and *Portugal* Tongues) wherein the ſaid King declared himſelf to be deſcended from Queen *Candace* mentioned in the *Acts* of the Apoſtles, but a Crucifix of Gold; the further effect of his Employment being to require ſome excellent Artificers, and 2000 Arquebuſiers, whom he would uſe in a War againſt the *Turk* in *Egypt*, when his Holineſs would compoſe the differences in the Weſtern Parts, and joyn all Chriſtian Princes for recovery of the *Holy-Land*; pretending thereupon in the Name of that King to render Obedience to his Holineſs as the true Succeſſor of St. *Peter*. But this (as *Auguſtino de Auguſtini* an *Italian* there preſent, and ſometimes Servant to Cardinal *Wooſey*, hath it in his Letter to *Cromwel*) made the reſt ſuſpected; And the rather that other circumſtances made it probable, that this Ambaſſador was ſuborn'd partly by the *Portugal* to countenance his Monopoly of Spices towards thoſe parts (much grudg'd at by his Neighbour Princes) and partly by the Pope to advance his Authority and Reputation. But to return to our Hiſtory.

Feb. 28. 1533. Jan. 31. 1533. Feb. 2. 1533.

Our King having notice of the foreſaid Interview, and finding that the Emperor, who ſeem'd a while to deſiſt from the eager proſecution of his Aunts Cauſe, was now more vehement than ever; ſends Inſtructions to his Agents at *Rome*, to proteſt in his Name, that he was not bound either in his own Perſon, or by his Proctor to appear there, urging, for this purpoſe, the Determination of ſome Univerſities, and particularly of *Orleans* and *Paris*. Notwithſtanding which, he permitted Doctor *Bennet* to make (as of himſelf) divers motions to the Pope, the principal whereof in our Records I find theſe. First, That ſeeing by the opinions of Lawyers, and the Council of *Nice*, the matter ought to be decided *in partibus*; and that by the Laws of *England* the Determination (it concerning the Succeſſion) cannot elſewhere be made; it would pleaſe his Holineſs that the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury* taking to him two eminent Biſhops or Abbots, or the whole Clergy of his Province, ſhould decide the ſame. But this being diſlik'd by the Pope, *Bennet* ſecondly propos'd, Whether he would refer the Determination to Sir *Thomas More*, or the Biſhop of *London*, to be nommate by the King, and let the Queen or Emperor name another, and the *French* King the third, and let the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury* be the fourth. But this alſo

also being rejected, *Benet* came, it seems, to the last degree of the Instructions, which was, That if the Cause might be heard in *England*, and that the Queen refused the sentence, she should have the benefit of her appeal before three Judges, one of *England*, one of *France*, and the third from the Pope, who also should discuss the matter in some indifferent place. But the Pope allowed not this, saying, since he saw the King would needs Conserve his Authority, he would likewise Conserve his, and proceed *via ordinaria*. Before yet I conclude this year, I shall relate some particular home-businesses. Among which, I find that our King having gotten *York*-house (now *White-Hall*) upon the Cardinals Conviction in a *Præmunire*, did newly enlarge and beautifie it, buying also the Hospital and Fields of St. *James*, and building the Palace there. For which purpose he Compounded with the Sisters of the House for a Pension during their lives. Not long after which, he suppress'd the Priory called *Christ-Church* in *London*, distributing the Canons being *Franciscans*, into other Houses of that kind, and bestowing the Church-Plate, and Lands, on Sir *Thomas Audeley*, newly made Lord Keeper of the Great Seal. For Sir *Thomas More*, Lord Chancellor of *England*, after divers sutes to be discharg'd of his place, which he had held two years and a half) did at length by the Kings good leave resign it. The example whereof being rare, will give me occasion to speak more particularly of him. Sir *Thomas More*, a Person of sharp wit, and endewed besides with excellent parts of learning (as his works may testifie) was yet (out of I know not what natural facetiousness) given so much to Jesting, that it detracted no little from the gravity and importance of his place, which though generally noted and disliked, I do not think was enough to make him give it over in that merriment we shall find anon, or retire to a private life. Neither can I believe him so much addicted to his private opinions, as to detest all other Governments but his own *Utopia*, so that it is probable some vehement desire to follow his Book, or secret offence taken against some Person, or matter (among which perchance the Kings new intended Marriage, or the like might be accounted) occasion'd this strange counsel, Though, yet, I find no reason pretended for it, but infirmity and want of health. Our King hereupon taking the Seal, and giving it, together with the Order of Knight-hood, to *Thomas Audeley* Speaker of the Lower-House, Sir *Thomas More* without acquainting any body with what he had done, repairs to his Family at *Chelsey*, where after a Mass Celebrated, the next day, in the Church, he comes to his Ladies Pew, with his Hat in his hand (an office formerly done by one of his Gentlemen) and says, Madam, my Lord is gone. But she thinking this at first to be but one of his Jests, was little mov'd, till he told her sadly, he had given up the Great Seal; whereupon she speaking some passionate words, he call'd his Daughters then present to see if they could not spie some fault about their Mothers dressing, but they

1532.

June 4.

May 16.

June 4.

Life of Sir *Thomas More*, by *T. M.*

1532. after ſearch, ſaying they could find none, he replied, do you not perceive that your Mothers Noſe ſtandeth ſomewhat awry, of which Jeer the provoked Lady was ſo ſenſible, that ſhe went from him in a rage. Shortly after, he acquainted his Servants with what he had done, diſmiſſing them alſo to the attendance of ſome other great Perſonages, to whom he had recommended them. For his Fool he beſtowed him on the Lord Mayor during his office, and afterwards on his Succeſſors in that Charge. And now coming to himſelf, he began to conſider how much he had left, and finding that it was not above one hundred pounds yearly in Lands, beſides ſome money, he adviſed with his Daughters how to live together. But the grieved Gentlewomen (who knew not what to Reply, or indeed how to take theſe Jeſts) remaining aſtoniſh'd, he ſays, We will begin with the ſlender diet of the Students of the Law, and if that will not hold out, we will take ſuch Commons as they have at *Oxford*; Which, yet, if our Purſe will not ſtretch to maintain, for our laſt refuge we will go a Begging, and at every mans door, ſing together a *Salve Regina* to get Alms. But theſe Jeſts were thought to have in them more levity, than to be taken every where for current; he might have quitted his dignity, without uſing ſuch Sarcaſms, and betaken himſelf to a more retired and quiet life, without making them or himſelf contemptible. And certainly whatſoever he intended hereby, his Family ſo little underſtood his meaning, that they needed ſome more ſerious Inſtructions. So that I cannot perſuade my ſelf for all this talk, that ſo excellent a Perſon would omit at fit times, to give his Family that ſober account of his relinquiſhing this place, which I find he did to the Archbiſhop *Warham*, *Eraſmus*, and other.

1532/33. THis year of 1533. *February* 4. the Parliament ſate again.

Feb. 4. *Reg.* 24. The chief Laws enacted were; That all Victuals ſhould be ſold by the larger kind of weight call'd *Avoirdupois*. That the price of a pound of Beef or Pork ſhould be a half-peny at moſt, and of Mutton or Veal three farthings, and leſs, where it was uſually ſold for leſs. Which I therefore remember that we may compare the Rate of thoſe times with theſe. This Law yet was finally Repeal'd in regard unſeaſonable years did not permit a Certain rule in theſe things, and ſome of the Lords of the Council appointed to ſet the prices; whereof in its due place.

That they who kill'd any perſon attempting to Rob by or near the High-way, or that broke Houſes, ſhould be acquitted without forfeiting either Goods or Lands.

That no Appeals ſhould be made out of this Realm for theſe reaſons (*viz.*) That whereas the Kingdom of *England* was a juſt Empire furniſh'd with ſuch able Perſons both Spiritual and Temporal, as could decide all Controverſies ariſing in it; And whereas *Edw.* I. *Edw.* III. *Rich.* II. *Hen.* IV. and other Kings of this Realm, have made

made ſundry Ordinances, Laws, and Statutes, for the Conſervation of the Prerogative, Liberties, and Preeminences of the ſaid Imperial Crown, and of the Juriſdictions Spiritual and Temporal of the ſame, to keep it from the annoyance of the See of *Rome*, as alſo from the Authority of other Foreign Potentates attempting the diminution or violation thereof; And becauſe notwithſtanding the ſaid Acts, divers Appeals have been ſued to the See of *Rome* in cauſes Teſtamentary, Cauſes of Matrimony, and Divorces, Right of Tythes, Oblations and Obventions, to the great vexation and Charge of the Kings Highneſs, and his Subjects, and the delay of Juſtice; And, forasmuch, as the diſtance of the way to *Rome* is ſuch, as the neceſſary proofs and true knowledge of the Cauſe, cannot be brought thither, and repreſented ſo well, as in this Kingdom; And that therefore many Perſons be without Remedy: It is therefore enacted, That all cauſes Teſtamentary, cauſes of Matrimony, and Divorces, Tythes, Oblations, and Obventions, either Commenc'd or depending formerly, or which hereafter ſhall Commence in any of the Kings Dominions, ſhall be heard, diſcuſſed, and definitively determin'd, within the Kings Juriſdiction, and Authority in the Courts Spiritual and Temporal of the ſame, any foreign Inhibition or reſtraints to the Contrary Notwithſtanding. So that, although any Excommunication or Interdiction on this occaſion ſhould follow from that See, the Prelates and Clergy of this Realm ſhould adminiſter Sacraments, and ſay Divine Service, and do all other their duties, as formerly hath been uſed, upon penalty of one years Impriſonment, and Fine at the Kings pleaſure; And they who procur'd the ſaid ſentences, ſhould fall into a *Præmunire*. As for the Orders to be obſerv'd henceforth, It was enacted, That in ſutes Commenc'd before the Archdeacon or his Officials, Appeal might be made to the Biſhop of the ſaid See. And from thence within 15 days to the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, or Archbiſhop of *York*, reſpectively in their Provinces, and ſo likewiſe to the Archbiſhops in the Kings other Dominions. Or if ſute be Commenc'd before the Archdeacon of any Archbiſhop or his Commiſſaries, then Appeal may be made within 15 days to the Court of Arches, and ſo to the Archbiſhops without further Appeal. In all which Caſes, the Prerogative of the Archbiſhop and Church of *Canterbury* was reſerved. That if any ſute aroſe betwixt the King and his Subjects, Appeal might be made within 15 days to the Prelates of the Upper Houſe in the Convocation then ſitting, or next called by the Kings Writ, there to be finally determined. And that they who ſhall take out any Appeal contrary to the effect of this Act, or refuſe to obey it, They, their Adherents, and Counſellors, ſhall incur the penalty of the Statute of xvi. *Rich. Secundi*. And thus the Spiritually finding the Power Inveſted formerly in the Pope, to be deriv'd now in great part on them, did more eaſily ſuffer the diminution of the Papal Authority. 1536.

All former Statutes alſo made againſt the exceſs of Apparel were repealed,

1532. repealed, and new Orders given, which yet ſtood not long; There being no meaſure it ſeems for things that depended ſo much upon fancy and opinion. It is now time that we return to our Hiſtory.

Among the many things concluded at the late Interview at *Bononia*, we may remember one was that the Pope ſhould write to our King to
June 4. ſend Aid againſt the *Turk*, who having fail'd (accidentally) in his
Records. intentions, He ſaid this Summer would puiſſantly Invade Chriſtendom. But our King anſwer'd by his Ambaſſadors; That the Emperors Ambition was the Cauſe thereof, and the raſhneſs of the Pope, who at the Emperors requeſt had lately Excommunicated *John Sepuſe Vayvode* of *Tranſilvania* and Elect King of *Hungary*, and ſo forced him to ſeek foreign Aid; which ought to put his Holineſs in mind, that he be wary how he proceeded with potent Princes. Yet if the Pope in his own particular were afraid of the *Turk*, that he ſhould come to *Avignon*, and that he and *Francis* would undertake his Protection, ſince the Emperor was reſolv'd to conſent to the *German* Princes, about ſome Innovation in Religion; only to diminiſh his Holineſs power. How the Pope yet reliſh'd this motion, appears not; But certainly I find that as long as he was ſo aw'd in *Italy*, neither did *Francis* think it ſafe to Treat, or our King to repoſe intire Confidence in him; though now the *Ceſarean* Forces being withdrawn, a private Treaty betwixt the Pope and *Francis* took effect, Inſomuch that *Francis* now began ſecretly to fall off from our King. For as the Pope together with giving *Catharina de Medices* (Daughter to *Lorenzo*, late Duke of *Urbin*) in Marriage to the Duke of *Orleans*, had promis'd his aſſiſtance to him for recovering his Claims in *Italy*, which he paſſionately deſir'd, ſo he was diſpoſed now, though not altogether to forſake our K. yet at leaſt to decline the Conventions betwixt them, at their late Interview. And to induce the Pope to draw *Francis* on his ſide, it may be thought no ſmall motive, that he had upon his own Authority, not only levied ſome Tenths upon the Clergy in *France*, but prepared Forces to aſſiſt the Proteſtant Princes; which ſo ſcandaliz'd his Holineſs, as he thought it ſafer to permit a War of Dominion (though in *Italy*) than of Religion in *Germany* aſſiſted by the *French*. And certainly, as the times then ſtood, the Pope had reaſon to fear a defection in more than one Prince. The Pope alſo wanted not his deſigns upon *Modena* and *Rheggio*, wherein he hoped *Francis* would ſecond him againſt the Emperor,
1531. whom he hated ſtill for approving the late Sentence in favour of the
March. Duke of *Ferrara*. Which places now he intended to give his Niece, together with the Dutchy of *Urbin*, when it could be gotten. For
Sleid. performance of all which, the *French* Writers ſay a Treaty was concluded. Our K. being well inform'd of all, and particularly knowing that *Francis*, notwithſtanding both their late private Treaty at the Interview, and divers Reiterated profeſſions of friendſhip, had upon the Popes Breve and requeſt executed ſome Perſons in *France*, who it ſeem'd oppos'd the Papal Authority, and recall'd from Baniſhment

niſhment one *Bede* a bitter Enemy to the Kings Divorce, thought it now his beſt expedient to ſtand to the deciſion of his own Clergy: Whereunto it conduc'd much, that *Warham*, Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, being lately dead, *Thomas Cranmer* (an able Perſon) much favour'd by the Nobility, as our Hiſtorians ſay, and lately imployed in the Kings buſineſs in *Italy*, and at this preſent in *Germany*, was, though abſent, choſen to this Place. Neither indeed could the Kings Clandeſtine Marriage be much longer hidden, the new Queen being quick with Child: So that he reſolv'd ſhortly, both to publiſh his Marriage, and to require his Clergy to proceed to a Sentence concerning the Divorce. His Parliament, in the mean time, ſo favouring his intentions, that they made the aforeſaid Act againſt Appeals to *Rome*, to the no little diſpleaſure of Queen *Katherine*, who found thereby how dangerous it would be (in point of our Law) to inſiſt on hers. Howſoever, I find, ſhe had many openly favour'd her cauſe, without that our King thought fit to puniſh them.

1533.

Aug. 23. 1532.

Queen *Katherine* was now at *Ampthil* in *Bedfordſhire*; And becauſe it concern'd the King to acquaint Her with the Cauſes of this ſecond Marriage, he ſent again ſome grave Perſons to prepare her thereunto, wiſhing her together to ſubmit. But ſhe perſiſting ſtill, *Cranmer* Archbiſhop of *Canterbury* cited her to appear at *Dunſtable*, being ſix miles off. Where for deciding this buſineſs, he appointed a Court to be held; And with him came the Biſhop of *London*, *Winchester*, (being *Stephen Gardiner*) *Bath*, *Lincoln*, and many great Clerks. Their firſt proceeding (as *Sanders* hath it) was a Citation to our K. to put away his Wife *Katherine*, proteſting otherwiſe that they would Cenſure him. But the Records which I have ſeen, mention only that *Cranmer* demanded and obtained leave of the King to determine the matter, ſince it caus'd much doubt among the Common People, and fears of great Inconveniencies in matter of Succeſſion. The Court being now held, and the Queen ſummon'd 15 days together, without yet that ſhe appear'd, The Archbiſhop having firſt pronounc'd her Contumacious, proceeds to Sentence, which alſo he caus'd to be publickly Read in the Chappel of our Lady in the Priory of *Dunſtable*, before two Notaries; and then ſent to the K. deſiring further to know his Mind concerning his ſecond Marriage, aſſoon as he had adviſed with his Council.

May.

Sand. Schiſ. Angl. April. 11.

May 10.

May 23.

The Tenor of the Sentence was this.

IN Dei nomine Amen. Nos Thomas permiſſione divina Cantuarien. Archiepiſcopus, totius Angliæ Primas, & Apoſtolicæ ſedis Legatus, in quadam Cauſa inquiſitionis de & ſuper viribus Matrimonii inter illuſtriſſimum & potentiſſimum Principem & Dominum noſtrum Henricum Octavum, Dei gratia Angliæ & Franciæ Regem, Fidei

1533. Fidei Defensorem, & Dominum Hiberniæ, ac Serenissimam Dominam Catharinam, nobilis memoriæ Ferdinandi Hispaniarum Regis filiam contracti & consummati, quæ coram nobis in Judicio ex officio nostro mero aliquamdiu vertebatur, & adhuc vertitur & pendet indecisa, rite & legitime procedentes. Visis primitus per nos & diligenter inspectis Articulis sive capitulis in dominica Causa objectis & ministratis, una cum responsis eis ex parte dicti illustrissimi & potentissimi Principis Henrici Octavi, factis & redditis, visisq; & similiter per nos inspectis plurimorum Nobilium & aliorum testium fide dignorum dictis & depositionibus in eadem causa habitis & factis; Visisq; præterea & simili modo per nos inspectis quamplurimum & fere totius Christiani Orbis principalium Academiarum censuris seu conclusionibus Magistralibus etiam tam Theologorum quam Juris peritorum Responsis & Opinionibus, utriusq; deniq; Provinciæ Anglicanæ Conciliorum Provincialium assertionibus & affirmationibus, aliisq; salutaribus monitis & doctrinis super dicto Matrimonio desuper respective habitis & factis. Visisque ulterius & pari modo per nos inspectis, tractatibus seu fœderibus pacis & amicitiæ inter perennis famæ Henricum Septimum nuper Regem Angliæ & dictum nobilis memoriæ Ferdinandum nuper Regem Hispaniæ, desuper initis & factis visis quoque peramplius & diligenter per nos inspectis omnibus & singulis actis, actitatis, literis, processibus, instrumentis, scripturis, munimentis, rebusq; aliis Universis in dicta causa quomodolibet gestis & factis, ac hic omnibus & singulis ita per nos visis & inspectis atq; à nobis cum diligentia & maturitate ponderatis & recensitis: Servatisq; ulterius per nos in hac parte de Jure servandis, Nec non partibus prædictis (viz.) præfato illustrissimo & potentissimo Principe Henrico Octavo per ejus Procuratorem idoneum coram nobis in dicta causa legitime comparente, dicta vero Serenissima Domina Catharina per contumaciam absente (cujus absentia divina repleatur præsentia) de Concilio Juris peritorum & Theologorum cum quibus in hac parte communicavimus ad

senten-

sententiam nostram definitivam, sive finale decretum nostrum in dicta Causa ferendam sive ferendum sic duximus procedendum & procedimus in hunc modum. Quia per acta, inacti tata, deducta, proposita, exhibita, allegata, probata pariter & confessata, articulataq; Capitulata partis, Responsa testium, depositiones, & dicta, instrumenta, munimenta, literas, scripturas, censuras, conclusiones Magistrales, Opiniones, consilia, assertiones, affirmationes, tractatus & fœdera Pacis, processus, res alias & cætera præmissa coram nobis in dicta Causa respective habita, gesta, facta, exhibita & producta. Necnon ex eisdem & diversis aliis ex causis ac considerationibus, argumentisque & probationum generibus variis & multiplicibus, validis quidem & efficacibus quibus animum nostrum in hac parte ad plenum informavimus plene & evidenter invenimus & comperimus dictum matrimonium inter præfatos illustrissimum Principem & Dominum nostrum Henricum Octavum, ac Serenissimam Dominam Catharinam, ut præmittitur contractum & consummatum, nullum omnino & invalidum fuisse & esse, ac divino Jure prohibente, contractum & consummatum extitisse. Idcirco nos Thomas Archiepiscopus Primas & Legatus antedictus, Christi nomine primitus invocato, ac solum Deum pre oculis nostris habentes, pro nullitate & invaliditate dicti matrimonii pronunciamus, decernimus, & declaramus, ipsumque prætensum matrimonium fuisse & esse nullum & invalidum, ac divino jure prohibente contractum & consummatum, nulliusque valoris aut momenti esse, sed viribus & firmitate juris caruisse & carere, præfatisq; illustrissimo & potentissimo Principi Henrico Octavo ac Serenissimæ Dominæ Catharinæ non licere, in eodem prætenso matrimonio remanere etiam pronunciamus, decernimus, & declaramus, ipsosq; illustrissimum & potentissimum Principem Henricum Octavum, & Serenissimam Dominam Catharinam quatenus de facto & non de Jure dictum prætensum matrimonium ad invicem contraxerunt & consummarunt ab invicem separamus & Divortiamus, atque sic separatos & divortiatos, necnon ab omni vinculo matrimoniali 1533.

1533. trimoniali reſpectu dicti prætenſi matrimonii, liberos & immunes fuiſſe et eſſe pronunciamus, decernimus, et declaramus, per hanc noſtram Sententiam deffinitivam, ſive hoc noſtrum finale Decretum, quam ſive quod ferimus et promulgamus in his ſcriptis.

Maii 23. 1533.

The King hereupon (according to the Decree of the laſt Parliament) commands ſtrictly *Katharine* ſhould no more be call'd Queen, but Princeſs Dowager, and Widow of Prince *Arthur*; and diſpatches Meſſengers both to *Rome*, and to the Emperor (then in *Spain*) to declare and juſtifie the proceedings, not omitting together to ſatisfie *France* thereof, as ſhall be told in his place. The Oration made to the Emperor (whether by Doctor *Hawkins* then reſident in his Court, or Sir *Thomas Wyat* as *Fox* hath it) did in effect remonſtrate, that ſince his Highneſs did ſtill eſteem him to be his friend, Confederate and Ally, he thought good to acquaint him with his Actions, and among them, his Divorce, and therein particularly the Juſtice of the Cauſe, and order of the Proceſs, In which nothing being omitted, which might ſatisfie himſelf or others, He hath found, at laſt, that the Marriage with Queen *Katharine* was indiſpenſable, as being againſt the Law of God, Nature, and Man; yet that herein he uſed not his own judgment alone, or his Subjects (though enough to quiet his Conſcience) but requir'd it of forein parts and Univerſities, and among them thoſe of *Bononia* (though depending of the Popes) and *Padua* (though menac'd by the *Venetians*) and hath found them, and many other, ſo conſentaneous to his Divines, that (ſome few partial places and perſons only excepted) they all determined in favour of his Highneſs Cauſe; The further Confirmation whereof, by publick diſputation and proof, He ſhould willingly offer his Majeſty, were it not too great an Injury to that which is paſſed in this Realm, to diſpute it in any other Country; eſpecially when it is contrary to the Laws of the Land: ſo that he truſted his prudence would take it as a thing done, and juſtly done, and not to marvel if the King his Maſter, for the weal of his Soul aſwell as benefit and Peace of his Realm, had taken a courſe which otherwiſe he would ſo little have thought of, as he wiſheth no ſuch Occaſion had ever been given him; wherein, he hopes it will appear, how much Reſpect is given both to the Pope and your Self, ſince otherwiſe his Highneſs ſhould not have ſent ſo many Ambaſſages to you both, or ſpent ſo many years in clearing theſe points, without receiving yet any fruit but delay and inſatisfaction. Inſomuch, that he perceived, after the cauſe had depended almoſt ſeven years ſpace, he was in a Labyrinth, out of which he ſaw no likelihood to get, had he not ſtept right forth at once to the Mazes end. Yet if this were all, he could better

Fox. July 6.

better ſuffer it: for ſince at laſt the neceſſity of clearing his Conſcience, and ſatisfying his People, had made him give a period to his ſuits, the Pope not content with his former Vexations, Cited him to appear at *Rome*, and publiſh'd divers ſlanderous Breves againſt him, Requiring the Cauſe to be determined before him; though a General Council hath long ſince determined that all matters ſhould be ended, where they begun. So that if the Arch-Biſhop of *Canterbury* as Metropolitan of the Realm had at length given Sentence on the Kings part, He thought the queſtion ſhould not be ſo much, whether it were done according to the common faſhion, as whether in it ſelf it were right, whereof therefore He would Treat with the Pope apart, deſiring his Majeſty howſoever to take well this Declaration, ſince his Highneſs reputing him ſtill his friend, thought this accompt due to him, as hoping further, he would not be leſs friendly hereafter, than he had been heretofore. To which the Emperor anſwered little more that I can find, than that He well knew how matters paſſed, and that he would adviſe with his Council, what further was to be done; giving by this ſhort and ſharp Reply juſt ſuſpition of preparing War againſt *England*, as he had more than once threatned. For which purpoſe, as 1529. he had practis'd with the Earl of *Deſmond* in *Ireland*, ſo now he Treated ſecretly with *James* King of *Scotland*, to whom alſo he ſent his Order. Our King not ignorant hereof, takes occaſion (upon expiration of the late five years Truce) to give ear unto the complaint of the Earl of *Anguis*, (then at *Barwick*) and to permit Sir *Arthur Darcy* to enter the Country and forrage it. Which he did in *April* 1533. burning divers Towns, and carrying away much booty. Pretending for cauſe thereof, the Reſtitution of the *Douglaſſes*. But while *James* a Valiant Prince (as his many Expeditions in Perſon againſt the Out-Laws did declare) prepared to be Reveng'd, the *French* King taking notice of this difference compos'd it, though not without ſome difficulty. Notwithſtanding which, the Treaty with the Emperor continued. For whereas the young King being not long ſince deſirous to Match in *France*, found ſome interruption, He hark'ned now to an offer from the Emperor. And his faithful Servants thought it time, as having run no ſmall hazard in his Night-walks. And now three *Maries*, all of the Emperors Family, were mention'd to him; His Siſter *Mary* Dowager of *Hungary*, *Mary* of *Portugal* his Neice by his Siſter *Leonora*, and *Mary* our Princeſs. Neither will the Reader think it ſo ſtrange, that the Emperor preſum'd here ſo far with our Kings Daughter, when he ſhall conſider (as I find in our Records and *Bellays* Hiſtory) that he offer'd her afterwards to the *Daulphin*; as intending, together with troubling this Kingdom, to make this Princeſs a reward of their ambition who aſſiſted him. The Anſwer which *James* return'd was, That he ſhould moſt deſire the Match with *England*, if conveniently it could be effected, ſaying yet that after Her he would gladlieſt have a Daughter of his Siſter of *Denmark*. But *Charles* ſay-

1533.

Conſtantinople.

April.

1535.

1533. ing, She was already promis'd, the buſineſs of Marriage ended ſo, for the preſent, the Treaty of Friendſhip nevertheleſs being in ſome kind entertain'd. Whereof our King being advertiſed, labour'd to break it, propoſing to his Nephew a Match with *Iſabel*, Siſter to *Henry* K. of *Navarre*. For which purpoſe he alſo ſent *Henry Knevet* to *Margaret* Queen of *Navarre*, who gladly entertain'd the motion.

This while, the Duke of *Albany* was ſent by *Francis* unto the Pope, to Treat in appearance of a War againſt the Duke, but really to conclude the deſigned Marriage with *Catharina de Medices*, to whom the ſaid Duke was near allied. Which Match though the Emperor had heretofore oppos'd; yet now conſidering how expedient it was for his Affairs to divide *Francis* from our K. he reſolv'd privately to give aſſent to it, as judging fewer Inconveniences would follow that way, than if both Kings joyn'd againſt him. Before yet he would declare himſelf, he told the Pope he ſhould require theſe Conditions from *Francis*. 1. To Innovate nothing in *Italy*. 2. To confirm again
Bellay. the Treaty of *Madrid* and *Cambray*. 3. To obtain ſome aſſurance from him, that he ſhould conſent to the calling of a General Council. 4. That he would labour effectually with the King of *England* not to proceed any further in his Divorce. To all which the Pope gave no other anſwer, but that he would mediate therein, being not able (as he alledg'd) to diſpoſe otherwiſe of ſo puiſſant a Prince.

And now becauſe the Reader may expect an account why this Ge-
1532. neral Council, promis'd within a years ſpace to the *Germans*, formerly by the Emperor, ſollicited by our King and *Francis*, ſubmitted unto by the Proteſtant Princes, took yet no effect at the time appointed; I thought fit to deliver the chief paſſages thereof: ſince I dare ſay no Age ever produc'd a juſter occaſion for the calling of it. Which therefore alſo I ſhall relate with more particularity, that none was more forward herein than our King, only when it might be held in ſome free place and manner; as knowing well that nothing either formerly had, or could now more authoriſe any ſolemn error, than a factious and partial Aſſembly, under what general or ſpecious Title ſoever. Nevertheleſs, as it concern'd the Emperor in point of Honour and advantage, chiefly to procure this work, our
Bell. l. 4. King and *Francis* were content awhile to look on. And three motives I find were preſented by the Emperor to the Pope. 1. The ſetling of the buſineſs of Religion. 2. Reſiſtance againſt the *Turk*. 3. Accommodation of Differences betwixt Chriſtian Princes. The Pope having received theſe, replied only, That he would commit the buſineſs to ſome principal Perſons of his Council, who making this following Remonſtrance, the Pope thought fit to ſend it to the Emperor; which finally was that concerning Religion, they thought it a dangerous point to admit Proteſtants or Hereticks to diſpute any of the Opinions, which Holy Councils have formerly determin'd. Since thereupon alſo they might take Occaſion to call in queſtion the

the Articles of Christian Faith. On the other side, when they were forbidden to defend their Doctrines, they might think themselves worse us'd than the *Arrians* and other Heretiques heretofore, and pretend they were condemn'd unheard, and so return home more obstinate than ever. Secondly, If they have contradicted the Determinations of former Councils, What hope is there that they should stand to this? And what a scandal would it prove to be disobeyed? Besides, how unseasonable and hard would it be for the Pope to compel them to a strict observation of the Decrees establish'd there, when the Emperor and other Christian Princes, had so much to do both one against another, and against the *Turk*? Thirdly, That there was small likelihood of convincing the Protestants as long as they wholly adhered to the Letter of the Holy Scripture, without admitting the Interpretation of Fathers or Councils, who by Divine Inspiration may be thought to have clear'd many doubtful Places: So that if once they call'd in question the authority of the Church, there could be no ground for deciding Controversies. Fourthly, That it is probable, their demand of a Council was not so much with the intention to Obey it, as to avoid the punishment due from the Magistrate; since their request was to have liberty of Religion till a Council had determined the Controversies, which could not be suddenly done. Fifthly, That the Protestants might find some excuse to depart before any determination, as they did from the Diet at *Augsburgh*. Besides, if there were difference of Opinions, and some should condescend to an alteration in part, it might cause a Schism, and consequently a setting up of Council against Council, or of Pope against Pope, as hath formerly hap'ned. And again, that whether the Pope were declared above a Council, or a Council above the Pope, Inconveniencies would follow. Finally, That whether the Authority of convoking this Council were permitted to them, or to the Emperor, it might take up more time and years, than the Emperor could spare to attend it. 2. As for the second motive of calling this Council, being the Invasion of the *Turk*, It was answer'd, That the Hostile preparatives being ready, and the Assembly of a Council in all likelihood so slow, it was more fit to think of taking Arms, than of entring into School disputations, especially since under this colour, the Protestants might evade, alledging they were not oblig'd to contribute any thing till the business of Religion were setled, Moreover, that this would but occasion the *Turks* coming, as knowing it would tend wholly to his damage and hurt, and consequently, would but hasten him the more to prevent it. Furthermore, that if the Council gave no content to the Protestants, it might cause them to seek Protection from the *Turk*, as the *Vayvod* of *Transilvania* had lately done, and under pretence of Evangelical liberty seize on the Goods of the Church. These Motives from the Emperor, together with this Politick answer of the Pope, being brought to *Francis* by the *Seigneur de Praet* and his Reply requir'd thereunto, *Francis* after delibe-

1533.

1530.

1533. deliberation ſaid, that notwithſtanding there were Inconveniences in calling a Council, there were far greater if they omitted it. It being certain there was never any other Lawful and ordinary way for deciſion of Controverſies in Religion. Inſomuch, that all future Ages would condemn not only his Holineſs, but all the Chriſtian Princes of the time when they did not procure it. Wherefore his Opinion was, that they ſhould aſſemble a Council without yet neglecting the other point propos'd. And for this end, that all Chriſtian Princes by their Letters, and Ambaſſadors ſhould adviſe together before the Council were call'd, and each of them ſet down what they in their particular thought fit to be done. Whereupon, alſo, they ſhould ſend to *Rome* joyntly to demand a free and ſecure place of meeting, where the points projected might be reſolved. In diſcuſſion whereof, therefore, ſuch intire and honeſt liberty ſhould be permitted to all and every one, as they might frankly diſcover themſelves. Only, that they ſhould not interpoſe any thing concerning their private differences and quarrels. For the better performing whereof, it ſhould be agreed that no deciſion of former Councils ſhould be urged to the hindrance of an Ingenuous and free communication concerning theſe points; when yet it ſhould be alledged that the queſtioning of former Acts would but open the way to fruſtrate this. Since it would give occaſion unto many to withdraw themſelves, who otherwiſe would be preſent at the Council. For preventing whereof, therefore, it were expedient that each of them ſhould ſend their Ambaſſadors or Deputies with unlimited Commiſſion to Treat concerning the points in controverſie. Which alſo ſhould be laid down in writing, to the intent that by common Vote and conſent they might afterwards be determined. With this caution, yet, that in the mean while all particular Enmities ſhould be laid aſide or quenched. And that till this were done, and the ſeveral Superiors of the ſaid Ambaſſadors or Deputies acquainted with the proceedings (ſo that abſolute power thereupon might be given them to conclude) it was unſeaſonable to call a Council. But if they choſe this way) it would follow that either the inferiour Number would ſubmit to the greater, and conſequently conform themſelves to one common way in Religion, or at leaſt they would remain without excuſe, or cauſe of exception, when on ſo good and indifferent Terms the determination of a free Council had been offer'd them. All which he ſignified by his Ambaſſadors.

Feb. It was now toward the end of *February* 1533. when the Emperor received this Anſwer, who as He was diſaffected to *Francis*, did eaſily miſ-interpret his meaning, taking all his advice in a counter ſenſe. Firſt, becauſe he thought it unreaſonable that the Ambaſſadors of Chriſtian Princes and Proteſtants ſhould project the points and Articles to be Treated of in the ſaid Council, ſince it could be thought no leſs than an Artifice and Invention to reſtrain and diminiſh the Authority of the ſaid Council, which together with all that could be

be Treated therein, ought intirely to depend on the inſpiration of the Holy Ghoſt, and not upon the Opinions of Men. Secondly, Becauſe *Francis*, had made no particular Anſwer concerning Contribution for reſiſting of the *Turk*, as if He thought the danger of his Neighbours in this kind did not concern him. 1533.

Which Remonſtrance being brought (in form of a Reply or Complaint of the Emperor) to *Francis*; He anſwer'd; That he could not but marvel how the Emperor ſhould ſo much miſtake him, ſince together with an ample Declaration of his Opinion concerning the Affair of Religion, He had declar'd likewiſe that the Ambaſſadors and Deputies ſhould not neglect the other point, whoſe Reſolutions alſo concerning reſiſtance of the *Turk*, he thought not only more effectual and proper than thoſe of a Council, but of a quicker diſpatch. And for the other point concerning the reſtraint or diminution of the Council, it was ſiniſterly and malignly interpreted. For when they ſhould ſend Ambaſſadors from all parts with ſo pure and ſincere affection, and zeal for the good of the Church, and defence of Chriſtendom, he could do no leſs than believe that the Holy Ghoſt will aſſiſt and direct their Aſſembly. And howſoever that any thing Concluded in this kind ſhould be eſteemed no more than as a beginning or preamble to the Council. Nevertheleſs for the giving more intire ſatisfaction to the Emperor, he thought fit to declare, that if the Emperor did not approve the ſaid Aſſembly of Ambaſſadors, He for his part would mention it no further; Only when the Emperor would but pleaſe to take notice that himſelf made the firſt Overture thereof, as by the Articles brought by *Du Praet* might appear. For the reſt, He wiſh'd it might be a true Univerſal Council, and not a National or Provincial, as it muſt be term'd, when all Chriſtian Nations did not aſſiſt therein. And as for War againſt the *Turk*, though He had already paid 1200000. Crowns, and muſt pay 800000. more, Yet if the *Turk* in Perſon ſhould aſſail Chriſtendom, He would not only hazard his own blood and his Subjects to oppoſe him, but hope the Emperor would do the like. But neither was the Emperor ſatisfied herewith. For as He thought *Francis* would make uſe of this Aſſembly for Contriving ſome Deſign or Enterprize againſt him; ſo he ſecretly declin'd it. *Francis* likewiſe as he was wholly won to the Pope, and intentive to the buſineſs of *Italy*, laboured not much to advance a buſineſs, ſo ſuſpected and dangerous to the *Roman* See. So that the diffidence and Jealouſie betwixt theſe Princes broke off the Council at this time, when it ſeem'd ſo neceſſary for the Peace and welfare of Chriſtendom. Howbeit the Emperor (who departed from *Genoüa April* 8. and was now in *Spain*) leſt He ſhould be thought not to comply with his promiſe, obtained from the Pope, that theſe following Conditions ſhould be offer'd to *John Frederic* Elector of *Saxony* in the room of his Father, lately deceaſed. That it ſhould be free and open to all as in times paſt: That aſſurance ſhould be given on both ſides to ſtand

Bellay.

April 8.

Aug. 1532.

Sleid. l. 8.

1533. ſtand to whatſoever ſhould be decreed there. That they who could not be preſent, ſhould ſent their Deputies. That in the mean while, nothing ſhould be Innovated. That the Place ſhould be *Piacenza*, *Bononia*, or *Mantua*, at their choice. That if any Princes neither came themſelves, nor ſent, they ſhould yet be concluded by the Decrees of the Council, and if they diſobeyed, that the Emperor and other Princes ſhould ſee Juſtice done. That if theſe Conditions were accepted, the Council ſhould be ſummon'd within ſix Moneths following the date hereof (being towards the end of *March*, or beginning of *April*, 1533.) and held within a year after. For more authoriſing of which Propoſitions, the Emperor commanded his Ambaſſadors to ſecond the Legate. The Duke of *Saxony* hereupon, after deliberation with the other Proteſtant Princes and States at *Smalcald*, returned this Anſwer; That the Council could not be free as long as the Pope who was a Party ſhould ſit as Judge. That the cauſe of Religion, as being grounded on the Scriptures, ſhould be determined by them, and not by School-Opinions. That the Place ought to be (as the Emperor had promis'd) in *Germany*, if it ſhould be free and open unto all. Our Hiſtorians ſay, alſo, that the Pope ſent (in *May*) to our King to be preſent at the Council, or at leaſt to ſend thither. But when the Meſſenger (being requir'd to it) ſhew'd a Commiſſion, which had neither place nor time expreſt, he was diſmiſt.

June 30.

Hall.

While theſe things paſt, our King by a Diſpatch to *Francis* requires him to ſend hither ſome truſty Perſon to whom he might with all confidence communicate ſuch things as could not fitly be committed to paper, intreating alſo that the ſaid Perſon might be inſtructed in all the Paſſages of Affairs (whereſoever) ſince the Interview. For though the King by Meſſage, ſent formerly by the Lord *Rochfort* had acquainted *Francis* that He was privatly Married, yet as He had many particularities to ſpeak of, and might beſides have uſe of the Aſſiſtance which *Francis* had offer'd, ſo He deſir'd one on that part to whom He might freely open Himſelf. Hereupon *Francis* ſends *Guillaume du Bellay Seigneur de Langey* with theſe Inſtructions. That he ſhould perſuade our King to be at the Interview betwixt the Pope and him, as being better able than any elſe to juſtifie and defend His proper Cauſe, aſſuring him, that he ſhould be as ſafe, both in his paſſage to, and ſtay there, as in his own Kingdom. Nevertheleſs if he thought not fit to come, that at leaſt he ſhould ſend one in whom he might repoſe intire confidence. He was charged alſo to inform our King how *Francis* had made thoſe Ordinances concerning Horſe and Foot, and Sea-buſineſſes, which were agreed betwixt them. Laſtly, he was commanded to deſire our Kings Advice concerning the Affairs of the Proteſtant Princes of *Germany*, who inſtantly crav'd their joint aſſiſtance.

March.
Bell. l. 4.

When *Monſieur de Langey* was come, and had expos'd theſe particularities, Our King anſwer'd: That ſince the Biſhop of *Rome* (for ſo

ſo he now term'd the Pope) after many diſſimulations, and delays, would not decide the buſineſs of the Divorce; He had for diſcharge of his Conſcience, Referr'd it to the Arch-Biſhop of *Canterbury*, as being not able to ſupport any longer the continual vexations wherewith his mind was afflicted. And that the ſaid Arch-Biſhop and divers Biſhops and principal Perſons of the Clergy having ſentenced a nullity in his former Marriage, and declared the Diſpenſation for it void, as given in a Caſe which being *ex Jure Divino*, could not be diſpenced with; He had thereupon privately Married the Marchioneſs, without yet that he had intention to diſcloſe it before *May* next. About which time he hoped alſo that the Interview betwixt his Maſter and the ſaid Biſhop would be, and that the ſaid Biſhop therefore would do him Juſtice. If not, that he would publiſh his Marriage, and withdraw himſelf totally from the Yoke and Dominion of the Biſhops Church. Concerning the Tyranny and Uſurpation whereof, he had compos'd a large and ample Treatiſe; The Title whereof was, *De Poteſtate Chriſtianorum Regum in ſuis Eccleſiis, contra Pontificis Tyrannidem & horribilem Impietatem*, as *Bentherus* hath it; though (for my part) having ſeen no ſuch Book, I conceive it was that *De vera differentia Regiæ Poteſtatis & Eccleſiaſticæ, & quæ ſit ipſa virtus & veritas utriuſq;* made about this time, which nevertheleſs he ſaid he would not publiſh, until he ſaw what Right the Biſhop would do him; deſiring the ſaid K. in the mean time, not to abandon him, ſince the Biſhop had vaunted, he would ſet all Chriſtendom againſt him, which the Emperor alſo, in his diſcourſe with the Pope had averted, diſcovering how by the means of *Scotland* he would Revenge his Aunts quarrel. Some Intelligence whereof was brought our K. by the ſaid *Seigneur de Langey*, who croſſing the Seas from *Boulogne* to *Dover* was aſſaulted by ſome *Scotchmen* of War, who hovering in our Seas to eſpy their advantage, ſet upon the Gallion that *Langey* went in, ſo that had he not made uſe both of Sails and Oars, he had been overtaken or ſunk; their number being ſuperiour, and Ordnance playing continually on him. They overtook yet a Ship of his conſort, which having Sails only, and not Oars, could not eſcape them. *Monſieur de Langey* being now diſmiſs'd, acquainted *Francis* with our Kings reſolution. Whereupon alſo, he haſtned his Interview with the Pope, which after variety of Places propos'd, was finally reſolv'd at *Marſeilles*, the Emperors Ambaſſadors at *Rome* in vain oppoſing it. 1533.

Beuth. hiſt. lib. 4.

And now the News of the Arch-Biſhop of *Canterburies* Sentence, and open Marriage of Miſtris *Anne Bolen*, being come to the Popes ears, and together with it an information concerning the Book our King had compos'd againſt the Popes Authority (which alſo more than any thing elſe offended him,) the whole College of Cardinals, eſpecially ſuch as were for the Emperor, became humble ſuppliants to the Pope, that he would proceed rigorouſly againſt our King; which alſo the Pope accorded, though not in that peremptory

June.

1533. and publick manner as was afterwards done; For I find that this Sentence was not definitive in the principal cauſe (as the Imperials deſir'd, and *Sanders* miſtakes it,) but only declarative in the point of Attemptats (as they call it,) in that King *Henry* (the cauſe yet depending) had Divorced Himſelf without the leave and Authority of the Pope. Therefore it was declar'd that all his Actions herein were ſubject to a Nullity, and Himſelf to Excommunication, unleſs He reſtored things *in integrum*, for which time was allowed him, till the end of *September* following. Theſe Proceedings being reſerved, and the Cenſures thus ſuſpended, argued that the Pope was willing before he went any further to ſee the ſucceſs of his Interview with *Francis*, which was accelerated by this means. For as the Pope knew well that the Emperor was already ſufficiently incens'd againſt the K. ſo it was eaſie for him to collect, that if he could gain *Francis*, nothing afterwards could hinder him to fulminate. And he had reaſon to chuſe this way of Treaty; for I find all his Interviews ſucceeded well with him. Nevertheleſs, the Emperor as he knew not how far this new Treaty might extend, labours by his Ambaſſadors to retard it. But they failing, he took another courſe; for being advertis'd that the Pope intended to make uſe of ſome of his Gallies for this Journey, he ſends a Command that they ſhould be employed againſt the *Turk*. But neither could this keep back the Pope, who rather than not go, reſolv'd to commit himſelf to the *French* Gallies, and ſo to paſs to *Marſeilles*. Things being thus advanc'd, our King (in conformity to the Propoſition of *Francis*) ſends the Duke of *Norfolk*, lately made Marſhal of *England*, the Lord *Rochefort*, Sir *William Paulet*, Sir *Anthony Brown*, and Sir *Francis Bryan*, followed with ſome hundred and ſixty Horſe, to repair to *Francis*, and afterwards attend the Interview.

Concil. Trid. Records. July 11.

May 18. 1532.

This while, our King being confident, that either by the Popes good permiſſion, or his proper Authority, he ſhould be able to Juſtifie a cauſe which ſo many Univerſities had ſentenc'd on his ſide, proceeds to the Coronation of his new Queen, which alſo was perform'd with much ſolemnity. And the rather that the murmur of thoſe who objected againſt the irregularity and deviation of our Kings proceeding herein, might be hidden and recover'd in the Pomp. Shortly after which, our Hiſtorians ſay, *Mary* the Dowager of *France* dyed, and was buried at St. *Edmundsbury*.

June 1.

June 23.

July. The Duke of *Norfolk* being now come to *Francis* (who was upon his Journey to *Marſeilles*) acquaints him with part of his Inſtructions, which were to diſuade him from the Interview and Marriage propos'd, or, at leaſt, to ſuſpend it till the Pope hath given our K. ſatisfaction; offering alſo aid for a War in *Piedmont*, if he would ſuffer no more monies to go out of his Realm to *Rome*, and inſtead of the Pope to erect a Patriarch, which it ſeems was one of the private Articles treated betwixt them, at the interview; but hearing, at the ſame time, of the Declaration paſt at *Rome* againſt our King, he thought

Records.

thought it too late to expect any favour from the Pope, and there- 1533.
fore demanded leave to return. Notwithstanding which *Francis* desir'd his stay, promising all the best offices and assistance to our K. he could require, assoon as he should come to *Marseilles*; protesting furthermore, that what Offence soever was done to our K. he would take as to himself. But the Duke being informed again, by our diligent Agents, what had past at *Rome*, would omit no longer to advertise the K. Therefore, he posted away the Lord *Rochfort* to acquaint his Highness with what was done, and to know his Gracious pleasure: whereupon, the K. upon advice with his Council, thought Aug. 8.
fit to Revoke together with the said Duke, the Duke of *Richmond* then living in the *French* Court, Commanding also his Ambassadors with the Pope to return. Nevertheless as *Francis* insisted with our King to send some other, if for no other end, yet at least to witness the earnestness and sollicitation wherewith he would pursue the Kings affair with the Pope; So our King thought fit to send *Stephen Gardiner* not long before made Bishop of *Winchester*, and Sir *Francis* Decemb. 5.
Bryan, together with Sir *John Wallop* to attend him at the Interview. 1531.
And here it is probable, that *Francis* had many Designs, whereof also he resolv'd to prevail himself according to the Occasion. For if he Treated with the Pope, he no less entertain'd his former Correspondence with the Princes of *Germany*, who sent to him (then being at *Tholouse*) a Secretary of the Dukes of *Bavaria* to tell him how, upon the Consignation of 100000 Crowns, which the said King by Treaty was oblig'd to pay in aid, and for the Restitution of the Duke of *Wittenberg*, whose Possessions were with-held by *Ferdinand*, they now all agreed that it should be put into the hands of the said Duke, desiring nevertheless that it might be done with all secresie. To which *Francis* Answered: that the Interview being past, he would send some one to acquaint him with his Intentions.

This while the Duke of *Albany* being departed with the Gallies of *France*, to conduct the Pope to *Marseilles*, news was brought to *Francis* of the death of one *Merveilles* employed by *Francis* to *Francisco Sforza* (then in possession of the Dutchy of *Milan*, by the Emperors favour, though not as yet of the Daughter of *Denmark*, formerly destin'd unto him;) The occasion whereof also I have thought worthy my Relation. This *Merveilles* being a *Milanese*, had served long in the *French* Court, and was now by the good leave of *Francisco Sforza* Received as a secret Agent or Ambassador for *Francis*; The terms on which *Sforza* stood with the Emperor, not admitting a more ouvert access. The Servants of this *Merveilles* having a quarrel with one *Castiglione* concerning some words he had *Bellay.*
spoken against their Master, did at last kill him in the Streets; which July 3.
was Reveng'd by the Magistrate on *Marveilles* himself, whose goods he seised on, and afterwards by order of the Duke privately cut off his Head. Which being advertis'd to *Francis*, he fell into an extream July 6.
passion, Saying, he was his Ambassador, and that herein the Law of

1533. Nations was violated. The resentment whereof also, as he thought common to all Princes, so he acquainted the Pope, Emperor, and other Potentates of *Europe* therewith in high terms, not forgetting also to give our King a particular account thereof, together with his Intentions; protesting to them all, he would have Reparation. But when the Emperor had received his Letter, he return'd no other Answer, but that *Merveilles* had deserv'd death, and was justly punished, he being no Ambassador, but a Subject of the Duke of *Milan*'s. Whereupon the *French* Ambassador hoping to satisfie the Emperor, shewed him private Dispatches, by which it appear'd, that the Duke acknowledg'd him under that Title. Notwithstanding which, the Emperor made small account of them, as supposing the quality of an Ambassador not wronged, as long as the Person in question (besides that he was no Subject of the *French* King) did not openly sustain the dignity of his Place; Whereupon also this Act was so far from being chastised by him, that it did but hasten the Marriage of *Sforza* with *Christine* the King of *Denmark*'s second Daughter, whom the Emperor immediatly sent for, and gave much about the time that the Duke of *Orleans* Married *Catharina de Medices*. Notwithstanding which, *Sforza* sent his Chancellor to *Francis*, alledging by way of excuse, that *Merveilles* was no more but a private Person, though authoris'd sometimes to Treat; neither was he ever acknowledg'd publickly by any other title than his Vassal and Subject; so that not to have done Right to another Subject kill'd by his procurement, had been to the derogation of Justice and his own Authority. Besides, he said *Merveilles* was such an outragious and mischievous Person, that he had been told divers times on the Dukes part, that he did not like of his abode there. As for the secret manner of his being put to death, he said, it was to avoid ignominy, in case *Francis* for delivering some of his Messages (when there was occasion,) should repute him his Ambassador. But the excuse, (as it implied some contradiction,) did but exasperate *Francis*, Who told the Chancellor, that if intire satisfaction were not given, he would in some fitting time and place procure it.

Septemb. 6. Sept. 10. About this time, the Queen being brought to bed of the Princess *Elizabeth*, (who happily succeeded to this Crown,) the Christening following shortly after, with much solemnity, where the Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury* was God-father, and the Dutchess of *Norfolk*, and Marchioness of *Dorset* God-mothers. Howbeit the Divorced *Katharine*, and her Daughter were not only much grieved, but divers that favour'd her Cause, writ, and spoke against the late Marriage; a Nun of *Kent* also, pretending to Prophecy thereon, of whom and her feigned Miracles (about this time discovered) we shall make mention hereafter.

Novemb.

Octob. 6. It was now in *Octob.* 1533. when the Pope conducted by the Duke of *Albany* came by Sea to *Marseilles*, where *Montmorency* received him. His publick entrance into the Town (being the next day

day after his arrival) was in a rich Chair, carried on the ſhoulders of two men, Himſelf wearing his Pontifical Ornaments, (the *Tiara* or Triple Crown only excepted,) before him a white Hackney was led, on which the Sacrament was carried. After him followed all the Cardinals, and his Niece *Catharina de Medices* (the Dutcheſs of *Urbin*) with a great Train of Cavaliers and Ladies. *Francis* at the ſame time, that he might ſeem to give the Pope entire poſſeſſion of the Town, going out thereof, but the next day returning thither, and after many complements to the Pope, coming to buſineſs, the intended Marriage was concluded, the Pope himſelf Marrying the young couple. Her Portion in money was but little, being only 100000 Crowns, but in expectation and Titles great; Since a pretence to *Urbin* in the Right of her Father *Lorenzo de Medici*, to whom *Leo* the tenth gave the Inveſture to the diſ-inheriſon of *Franciſco Maria Conte di Feltri*, (who at this preſent was in poſſeſſion thereof) as alſo the Donation of *Rheggio*, *Modena*, *Rubieira*, *Piſa*, *Ligorno*, *Parma* and *Piacenza* by the Pope, or ſomething equivalent to them, did make her thought a Match worthy of the Son of *Francis*, eſpecially, when ſo potent a Prince ſhould undertake her Cauſe, not without hope of uniting theſe places to the Rights he claimed in *Italy*. After which, the Pope was often ſollicited by *Francis* in the behalf of our K. that, at leaſt, the time of declaring the Cenſures againſt him, might be prorogued. But the Pope anſwering only, that though the term prefixt for fulmination were now paſt, yet he would omit further proceſs till he came to *Rome*: Our Agents not content herewith, proceed in their Inſtructions, and *Edmund Bonner* (as I find by an Original of his to our King) getting audience of the Pope, *Nov.* 7. in reſpectful terms, and under proteſtation that his Majeſty intended no contempt of the See Apoſtolick or Holy-Church, intimated to him King *Henry*'s Appeal to the next General Council lawfully aſſembled, exhibiting alſo the Authentick Inſtruments thereof (made before the Biſhop of *Wincheſter*;) at which the Pope being much incens'd, ſaid, he would refer it to the Conſiſtory. Which being held *Nov.* 10. he Anſwered *Bonner*, That, concerning the Kings Appeal, he rejected it, as being unlawful, and againſt a conſtitution of Pope *Pius*. Secondly, for the Council, he would procure it, as belonging to his Authority, and not to K. *Henry*'s. Thirdly, for the Original Inſtruments (which *Bonner* required back) he denied them, and ſo diſmiſt him; deſiring *Francis*, only, that he would perſuade our K. to conform himſelf to his antient Devotion and Obedience to the Roman Church. Shortly after which, being the 12th. of *Nov.* 1533. the Pope return'd. I find moreover that the Arch-Biſhop of *Canterbury* at this time ſuſpecting the Pope would proceed againſt him, by the advice of our K. made his Appeal alſo to the Council. Which he deſir'd our Agents to intimate to the Pope. The ſucceſs whereof yet doth not appear in our Records. Here alſo, at the requiſition of *Francis*, he

1533.

1556.

Nov. 13.

Novemb. 7.

Nov. 10.

Nov. 12.

1533. he made four *French* Cardinals, which added to ſix more, who held that Dignity, made the Emperor ſee that the Pope intended to ſtrengthen the *French* party in *Rome*. Beſides, as the Pope did fear leſt *Francis* ſhould uſurp upon the Eccleſiaſtical Juriſdiction in his Kingdom, he gave him the Nomination of the Heads and Chiefs, not in Monaſteries alone, but in all Elective Benefices in his Kingdom: which was politickly done; for he prevented thereby, that power, which *Francis* might have aſſumed, eſpecially when he had ſtood to the Conventions he made with our King at their laſt Interview. By which means alſo, he diſpoſed *Francis* to oppoſe the Emperor about calling a Council, ſhewing together how inconvenient it would be to the *Roman* Church, as Affairs then ſtood.

Francis not forgetting, this while, to ſend to *Germany*, both in favour of the Duke of *Wittenberg*, and to comfort the Proteſtant Princes in their perſeverance, promiſed to do all that he could for them in a Defenſive way: He omitted not, alſo, to ſend *Jehan du Bellay* Biſhop of *Paris* to our K. both to acquaint him with all the paſſages at *Marſeilles*, and to Induce him to ſend Ambaſſadors to *Rome*, to treat with the Pope concerning the ſuſpending of this Fulmination, Which he ſaid highly concern'd him. But our K. who was in ſome part acknowledged already *ſupremum Caput Eccleſiæ* in his Dominions, replying he would adviſe with his Council hereof, one who much favour'd the Papal Authority, ſpake in this manner.

Sir, Your Highneſs is come to a point which needs a ſtrong and firm reſolution, it being not only the moſt important in it ſelf, that can be preſented, but of that conſequence as will comprehend your Kingdom and Poſterity. It is, whether, in this buſineſs of your Divorce, and ſecond Marriage, as well as in all other Eccleſiaſtical affairs in your Dominions, you would make uſe of your own, or of the Papal Authority? For my part, as an *Engliſh* man, and your Highneſs Subject, I muſt wiſh all Power in your Highneſs: But when I conſider the antient practice of this Kingdom, I cannot but think any Innovation dangerous: For if in every Temporal eſtate it be neceſſary, not only to keep order, but to come to ſome Supream Authority, whence all Inferiour Magiſtracy ſhould be deriv'd; It ſeems much more neceſſary in Religion; both as the body thereof ſeems more ſuſceptible of a Head, than any elſe, and as that Head again muſt direct ſo many others. We ſhould above all things therefore labour to keep an unity in the parts thereof, as being that ſacred bond which knits and holds together not his own alone, but all other Government. But how much, Sir, ſhould we recede from the Dignity thereof, if we (at once) retrenched this his chief and moſt eminent part? And who ever liked that body long, whoſe Head was taken away? Certainly, Sir, an Authority Received for many Ages, ought not raſhly to be rejected; for is not the Pope *Communis Pater* in the Chriſtian World, and Arbiter of their differences?

1533.

rences? Doth he not ſupport the Majeſty of Religion, and vindicate it from neglect? Doth not the holding of his Authority from God, keep men in awe, not of Temporal alone, but Eternal puniſhments, and therein extend his power beyond death it ſelf? And will it be ſecure to lay aſide theſe potent means of reducing people to their Duty, and truſt only to the Sword of Juſtice, and Secular Arm? Beſides, who ſhall mitigate the rigour of Laws in thoſe caſes, which may admit exception, if the Pope be taken away? who ſhall preſume to give Orders, or Adminiſter Sacraments, or grant Pardons, Diſpenſations, Indulgences, and other Myſteries of the Church? Who ſhall be Depoſitary of the Oaths, and Leagues of Princes, or Fulminate againſt the perjur'd Infractors of them? for my part, (as Affairs now ſtand) I find not, how either a General Peace among Princes, or any equal moderation in humane affairs can be well conſerv'd without him. For as his Court is a kind of Chancery, to all other Courts of Juſtice in the Chriſtian world; ſo if you take it away, you ſubvert that equity and Conſcience which ſhould be the rule and Interpreter of all Laws and Conſtitutions whatſoever. I will conclude, that I wiſh your Highneſs, as my King and Sovereign, all true greatneſs and happineſs, but think it not fit (in this caſe) that your Subjects ſhould either examine by what right Eccleſiaſtical Government is Innovated, or inquire how far they are bound thereby; Since, beſides that it might cauſe diviſion, and hazard the overthrow both of the one and the other Authority; it would give that offence and ſcandal abroad, as Foreign Princes would both reprove and diſallow all our proceedings in this kind, and together upon any occaſion, be diſpos'd eaſily to joyn againſt us.

To which was replied by one in this manner.

SIR, If he who propos'd this queſtion, had reſolv'd it as well, I ſhould not have needed to return an Anſwer. But ſince from Principles we admit as true, he draweth Conſequences which follow not, I ſhall according to common reaſon, crave leave to examine his Arguments, without inſiſting upon any thing urg'd out of either Teſtament, or controverted by the Theologians of this time. Nothing is more certain, than that there is a neceſſity of eſtabliſhing ſome Supream power in Spiritual as well as Temporal affairs; Only the queſtion will be, whether they be better united in one Perſon, or divided into two? I am for one, eſpecially while the Precincts of both be of the ſame extent, and the Magiſtrate no way obnoxious: For can we ſuppoſe a Government without Religion, or a Religion without a Government? will the bare precepts of Theology contain people in their Duties, unleſs the Secular Arm concur? or the inflicting puniſhment with a high Hand ſuffice to teach a good life, or bring men to everlaſting happineſs? Beſides, can a Kingdom be ſafe, if the Secular Magiſtrate command one thing, and the Spiritual another?

1533. another? Must not the Subject on these terms be suspended betwixt his Obediences, or distracted into some Schism or Rebellion? which Inconveniences as they cannot be denied, so neither do examples want thereof, both antiently betwixt Emperors and Popes, and of latter times as well in this Kingdom as divers others, Where not only scandal and dissention, but even Ruins and Desolation followed on this occasion. It being manifest thus, how fitly both Powers are conjoyned, The next question will be, Who is most proper to exercise them in this Kingdom? But it is clear that Popes are not. For Besides that they want Title, Succession, Election, Possession, or whatsoever else may establish Government for the Temporal part, they cannot so much as aptly administer the Spiritual, while the distance betwixt us and them is so great, that they neither can take timely notice of the proceedings and deviations of the Clergy, or give that order and redress which is fitting; So that although by a frequent admitting of Appeals to *Rome*, they strive to take away this Difficulty, it is rather increased. The Causes brought thither being sometimes undecided for a long space, sometimes wholly frustrated, while people had rather let fall their Sutes, than be at the cost of bringing their Witnesses with them to so remote a place, as neither their health or means can reach unto. Of which, as also many other Inconveniencies in this kind, the *Germans* in their *Centum Gravamina* have not long since complained, without that the whole Court at *Rome* could devise a due Remedy, as long as the determination of Ecclesiastical Affairs was so commonly avoked thither. Whereby it follows, that the Pope as being neither Secular Magistrate in this Kingdom, nor within a just distance to exercise the Spiritual, cannot lawfully pretend to an absolute power in either Jurisdiction. It remains, that Princes of this Kingdom successively assume it, both as their Person and office hath in it a mixture of the Temporal and Spiritual Power, and as the Precincts they claim in Ecclesiastical affairs, are no longer than their swords can reach to, and secure, nor their Interests other, than to conserve at home, a perpetual Peace of Religion; which also will be with so much advantage to their Subjects, as while the same Authority animates and gives life unto all, none of the members can easily prevaricate, or fall away. If any yet will deny this Maxim, he may be convinc'd by examples of Popes themselves, who practise this mixed power not only in their Territories about *Rome*, the *Patrimonio della Chiesa*, but in their more remote Dominions with that singular benefit to their Vassals, that they, more than any other in *Italy*, are exempt from being drawn into contrary parts. So that if it be clear as well by reason as by Precedents, that both powers may subsist together, and be exercised by one and the same Person, I think none will deny, but that it will be so much the more equal, to place them in a Temporal than a Spiritual Monarch, as it imports more to give good Laws, and exhibite Justice, than to dispute Controversies (where the grounds

grounds of Religion are already ſetled,) and to reſiſt Foreign Invaſions, than to declame againſt Vice, and the Non-payment of Church-duties: out of which therefore may be concluded, That there is no more neceſſity of a Pope over us, or (if you will) over all Churches in the World (when they could be converted to Chriſtianiſm) than to aſſign one Univerſal Monarch over it. There being in the frame of Government as well as all other bodies, a certain Symmetry and Proportion, beyond which it cannot conveniently be dilated. Theſe things thus appearing, it may be conſidered now, whether the Pope have not yet another Incapacity, for ſwaying all the Eccleſiaſtical Affairs of this Kingdom, in his being ſo obnoxious to other Princes. But this alſo is evident, ſince the *French* and *Spaniard* ſo conſtraining him on either ſide, that he muſt ſubmit to the ſtronger, or ſuffer ſuch Impriſonment and outrages as he hath lately done, it will be dangerous to Conſtitute him our Supream Judge, in theſe Affairs of Religion, which regard matter of State. For ſuppoſe he would be Impartial between ſuch Princes as may preſs him equally; Shall we preſume he will be ſo to us, who ſtand not in the ſame Relation of nearneſs and Intereſt unto him? Nevertheleſs, I ſhall eaſily grant that he may wiſh us well, or beſtow his Bleſſing on us: But where his Perſon or Eſtate will be concern'd, I do believe it would be ſo unſafe for him to do us Right, that it would be an unmannerly thing to ask it. But may he not in ſome caſes yet be retain'd as Judge in Eccleſiaſtical affairs, and Arbiter of the differences of Chriſtendom? for my part, I ſhall accord it; as long as He complies with his place of *Communis Pater*. But if through Interdictions, Cenſures, Excommunications, Fulminations, and the like, he proſcribe, and exterminate thoſe, who otherwiſe might give him a due reſpect, doth he not relinquiſh his Name? eſpecially while without regard to the quietneſs of mens Conſciences, the Peace of Chriſtendom, or the Unity of Religion, (which might eaſily follow, when the unneceſſary points were laid aſide) He, (for the conſervation of his Authority in this Kingdom only) procures Foreign Princes to Invade it. Whereupon therefore, he ſo little exerciſeth his Paſtoral Charge (inſtituted at firſt for the ſafeguard and eaſe of the Secular Magiſtracy) as he now diſturbeth all, whereas he ought ſo much rather to uſe a diſcreet Moderation, as he ſees that Princes can both Reign without him, and contain their Subjects (whether Spiritual or Temporal) in their accuſtomed Obedience and Devotion, out of which therefore he may collect, that until theſe Eccleſiaſtical affairs be permitted to Princes, which cannot aptly be determined without them, there will be ſmall hope of an accommodation. And for theſe reaſons alſo, We can as little admit him, Arbiter of the Temporal Cauſes betwixt us, and any other Chriſtian Prince, though otherwiſe the Function be ſo neceſſary, as (it ſeems) there is no ſo good means for avoiding the many Wars, and deciding the Controverſies betwixt them. But it is alledged ſtill, That in deſerting the

1533.

1533. Popes Authority ſome diminution of Religion may follow; Alas, if Religion ſtood not on firmer Principles than theſe, it were worſe grounded than any other knowledge; For were not the Laws of Piety and goodneſs ſo written (at firſt) in the heart, as Man-kind had no other direction for attaining his everlaſting happineſs, for about two thouſand years, and until the Decalogue was given? And is that again any thing elſe but an Explication of theſe Laws? Beſides, is there not a Doctrine of Faith deliver'd us in ſome part of our Belief or Creed (and I ſay in ſome, for the beginning thereof, as well as certain Articles towards the end, are general Notions both written in our hearts, and received in all Religions.) And have we not through the Reverend Authority of the Church for many Ages, declaring and confirming this Faith, accepted thereof, and the ten Commandments, and therein ſubmitted our ſelves to all that is required in either Teſtaments, and will they yet exact new Beliefs, and obtrude new Articles? When the Laws of God, only written in Mens hearts, and the Decalogue, for ſo many Ages were thought to ſuffice for Salvation? Let them ſay what they will; I find no reaſon to believe, that the Divine Wiſdom impoſeth more, or proceedeth by other Rules than thoſe that were delivered to our Forefathers; or that ſome ſuch obliquation of Religion hath hap'ned as the courſe of his Providence ſhould be varied too. And therefore, though I ſhall be content, that the Illuſtration or Explication of ſome points, may be worth the Churches labour, I can never agree that the Principles and Foundation of this Structure, ſhould be ſtirr'd, or exhibited on other terms. Neither indeed ſhould the *Roman* Church, in true wiſdom procure it, the Majeſty of Religion being no ways ſo well conſerv'd, as by aſſerting ſuch a Perfection, Antiquity, Univerſality, and Viſibility in the more neceſſary parts thereof, as may argue the care which God hath over Man-kind in all Ages, without omitting, together, to repreſent the Doctrines of Faith, and of Gods mercy, in middle times after ſuch manner, as may be for our Inſtruction. And thus their Auditors, being informed, not only what parts of Religion have been received in all Ages and Countries, but what his particular Providence hath added in ſequent times, may Glorifie him for both. Nevertheleſs, if Popes ſhall be ſo far from theſe charitable and temperate ways, as they will ſtill intermix and trouble all things; if they ſhall confound and join together the certain, and the uncertain, and compel men equally to the belief of all they teach, ought not Princes in this caſe to prevent diſtractions? ought they not to extinguiſh Uſurpations in Religion, and together, vindicate her from Error and Neglects? While in giving a due Luſtre and Protection with the Temporal Sword, they make her become more Reverend and Awful. Which Duty alſo is ſo much more requiſite in them, as it is not in the power of any elſe to perform it. Neither ſhould we fear, leſt our Princes ſhould grow too abſolute thereby; When it is the moſt aſſured way for conſerving,

ſerving, not the outward only, but inward Peace in this Kingdom. 1533.
Not that this Authority may be at length devolv'd to ſuch as would abuſe it; there being a poſſibility of bad Popes, as well as bad Princes. And that *Incommodum non ſolvit Argumentum.* And thus, Sir, may all Innovation be taken away in Religion, and all defects reſtored by your Highneſs in your Dominions, without either ſuffering Sophiſtry or Pedantiſm to be taught in ſtead of true Doctrine, or that the Hierarchy of your Kingdom ſhould be deveſted from their antient Dignities and Rights. Since as your Highneſs pretends not to Create new Articles of Faith, they may continue ſtill to expound the old, in their ſeveral kinds, and give light to the hard places in the Scripture, Read Divine Service, Adminiſter Sacraments, and the like, and together, exhort men to Piety, Charity, good life, Repentance, and what-ever elſe may conduce to everlaſting happineſs; Whereof alſo when the Pope would take ſuch notice, as to confirm and approve our proceedings, we might (if your Highneſs ſo pleas'd) return that reſpect to him, as, upon his publick Declaration, that he doth not only Ratifie our Confeſſion of Faith, but relinquiſh all his pretences, which may Derogate from your Regal Authority, and behave himſelf (for the reſt) *tanquam Communis Pater*, ſuch points might be referr'd to him, as your Clergy could not conveniently determine, and his Dignity together, be ſo far forth acknowledg'd, as he might ſtill retain a Primacy, according to his antient Patriarchal Right, without intermedling yet with that Supremacy, which your Convocation-houſe hath already Decreed for your Highneſs. And now to come to the preſent queſtion concerning the Divorce; I muſt ſay, I cannot find what the Pope ſhould take ill. For is any thing done by our Archbiſhop, but what, not only the Pope, himſelf, but the moſt famous Univerſities of Chriſtendom have declared lawful? So that, if after ſix years ſuſpenſion of the Cauſe, we have determined the buſineſs, as himſelf confeſſed he would have done, but for fear of the Emperor; What offence can he take? will he complain, he is not able to do us Juſtice, and yet be ſcandalized if it be done by others? or ſhall the executing of what he thought reaſonable, be judg'd a fault, when the not ...ng thereof muſt (in all equity) have made us the greater *Criminals*? Let us therefore, ſend to deſire his conſent. It hath bee... ...ay intimated unto us, that it was not ſo good to ask a Licence, as a Pardon, we will hope then from him a Confirmation of the Archbiſhop's Sentence. And thus both the one and the other Authority may be conſerv'd, without that we ſhould need to fear any Foreign Invaſion, as long as the general Vote of our Kingdom ſhall eſtabliſh what (in a ſort) it hath agreed unto.

And to this opinion our King inclined, and ſo much the rather, *Hall.*
that about this time the Popes Sentence againſt him, was openly ſet up at *Dunkirk* in *Flanders*; So that to prevent further Inconveniences, the K. (as our Records ſhew) adviſed with his Council *De-* Records.

1533. *cember* 2. Firſt, to inform his Subjects of his Appeal to the Council General, and the Juſtice thereof. Secondly, of the unlawfulneſs of the Dowagers Appeal to *Rome*, and the late Statute againſt it, which ſaid Statute was (for that purpoſe,) to be ſet upon every Church door in *England*, as alſo his Majeſties ſaid Provocation, or Appeal, whereof Trans-ſumpts alſo were to be ſent into *Flanders*. Thirdly, to command it to be taught, that the General Council is above the Pope, and that he hath no more Authority in *England* by Gods Law than any other foreign Biſhop. Laſtly, to ſend into *Germany*, to Confederate with the K. of *Poland*, *John King* of *Hungary*; the Dukes of *Saxony*, of *Baviere*, the Lantgrave of *Heſs*, &c. as likewiſe the *Hanſe-Teutonick* Towns, being *Lubeck*, *Dantſick*, *Noremberg*, &c. Theſe things being reſolv'd on; for a final Anſwer, he deſir'd the Biſhop of *Paris*, to certifie *Francis*, That if the Pope would ſuperſede from Executing his Sentence, until he had Indifferent Judges ſent, who might hear the buſineſs, he would alſo ſuperſede from the execution of what he was deliberated to do in withdrawing his Obedience from the *Roman* See. But the Biſhop, who thought this alone not enough to reduce things into good terms, made an offer to Negotiate the buſineſs at *Rome*. Which our K. gladly accepted, aſſuring him withal, that aſſoon as he had obtained what was demanded, he would ſend ſufficient power and authority to confirm as much as was accorded on his part, as having intire confidence in his diſcretion and ſufficiency, ever ſince his two years imployment as Ambaſſador in this Kingdom. Whereupon the Biſhop, though in *Chriſtmas*-Holidays, and an extream Winter, poſted to *Rome*. Where he came before any thing was done, more than what formerly paſt; And here obtaining a publick Audience in the Conſiſtory, he Eloquently declared our Kings Meſſage, repreſenting both what he had obtained of our K. and ſhewing withal how advantageous it would be to the whole Church. Which ſo prevail'd, that they prefixt a day for receiving from our K. a Confirmation thereof. Inſomuch, that a Courrier was diſpatched to our K. *Henry*, deſiring his Anſwer within the time limited. But the term being expired, and no Anſwer brought, the Pope reſolved to proceed to Fulmination of the Sentence; which being advertis'd to *Bellay*, he repair'd to the Pope and Cardinals (then ſitting in full Conſiſtory) deſiring them to ſtay awhile, it being probable that the Courrier, either through croſs winds, or other accidents in long Journeys, might be detain'd; concluding his Speech, that if the K. of *England* had ſix years together been patient, they might attend ſix days; which ſpace only, he deſir'd them to give him, for the receiving of our Kings Anſwer; this propoſition being put to the queſtion, the plurality of Voices carried it againſt our K. and the rather, that in this mean time, News came to *Rome* that the K. had Printed and publiſhed the Book written againſt the Popes Authority, (which yet was untrue, for it came not forth till afterward, though it was not

Belley 4.

Decemb.

March 19. Records.

not yet kept ſo cloſe, but a Copy was now come to the Popes hands,) and that there was a Comedy repreſented at Court, to the no little defamation of certain Cardinals. By reaſon whereof the Sentence was ſo precipitated, that, what according to their uſual forms could not be done in leſs than three Conſiſtories, was now diſpatch'd in one. And ſo by a final Determination (the Copy whereof is in *Fox*) the Marriage with Q. *Katherine* was pronounced good, and K. *Henry* commanded to accept her for his Wife, and in caſe of refuſal Cenſures were fulminated againſt him. But two days of the ſix were not paſt, when the Courrier arriv'd with ample Commiſſion and Authority from our K. to conclude and confirm all that the Biſhop had agreed in his Name. Which was this, (as the Writer of the *Concilio Tridentino* hath it) That K. *Henry* was content to accept the Judgment of that Court, upon condition that the ſuſpected and Imperial Cardinals ſhould not Intervene, and that indifferent Perſons ſhould be ſent to *Cambray* to be informed of the merits of the Cauſe; Giving Authority further for his Proctors to appear in that Court. At which, the more wiſe and temperate Cardinals were ſo aſtoniſh'd, that they became humble ſuppliants to the Pope, that he would adviſe how all things might be repair'd; Whereupon the buſineſs was again diſcuſs'd. But all Remedies being judged either late, or impoſſible, the Sentence ſtood, and the Emperor was made the Executor of it. The Biſhop now returning toward *France*, met (as I find by our Records) *Edward Karne* and *William Revet*, who were imploy'd by our K. for ſolliciting this important buſineſs. But as they underſtood by the Biſhop, that the firſt Marriage was pronounced good, and the iſſue by it Legitimate, ſo they judg'd it loſt labour to proceed, and advertis'd all to our K. who became ſo ſenſible of the Indignity wherewith he was us'd in this important Affair, that he ſeparated himſelf from the Obedience of the *Roman* Church, but not from the Religion thereof (ſome few Articles only excepted) as ſhall appear hereafter. And thus (according to the Relation of *Martin du Bellay*) did our K. fall off. Who therefore in this preſent condition found nothing ſo fitting to be done, as to cheriſh the good affection of his Subjects, who in a Parliamentary way he found did many ways advance, and ſecond his Deſigns. I ſhall for a concluſion, add only the Cenſure of *Thuanus*, concerning our K. in this buſineſs, *Certe in reliqua vita ita ſe geſſit ille Rex, ut eum, ſi æquiores & prudentiores Pontifices nactus fuiſſet, ſponte ſe ſubjecturum ipſorum poteſtati fuiſſe appareret.*

1533.

Concil. Trid. March 23. *Pag.* 132.

Concil. Trid. L. 1.

April 7.

The Emperor (now in *Spain*,) being much troubled at the Interview at *Marſeilles*, yet conniv'd at it, as hoping at leaſt, the Pope would diſſuade *Francis* from favouring our K. or aſſiſting the Proteſtant Princes. Therefore he did not much indeavour to hinder it; For as he knew the Pope was paſſionately affected to the advancement of his Kindred, ſo he judged it loſt labour to oppoſe him therein; ſince by ingraffing his Family now in *France*, as well as by his

1533/4. Sandov.

his former Alliance with *Spain*, he might hold himſelf ſecure on either hand. Neither did he think that Terrors could prevail, at a time, when the Pope muſt know, there would be uſe of all the Imperial Forces, againſt the *Turk*, who beſides that he threatned a general Invaſion, had now particularly beſieged *Corron*, taken a year ſince by *Andrea Doria*, which a *Spaniſh* Garriſon held till they were forc'd to leave it again to the *Turk* about *April* 1534.

April 1. 1534.

I will come now to the buſineſs of our Parliament, holden this year from *Jan.* 15. till 30. of *March* next, wherein theſe Statutes were Enacted:

Jan. 15. Reg. 25.

That the Prices of Victuals ſhould not be inhanſed without juſt ground and reaſon. If they were, then upon complaint thereof, the Lord Chancellor (and others, who had Authority given them herein) ſhould tax the ſaid Victuals how they ſhould be ſold, either by the Owners or by Victuallers. Alſo that no Corn or Cattel be carried beyond Sea without the Kings Licence, unleſs either to *Calais*, *Guiſnes*, *Hammes*, and their Marches, or for Victualling of Ships, *&c.*

That no Man Indicted of Murder, Burglary, or other Felony, and upon his Arraignment ſtanding mute, to prevent the Proceſs of the Law againſt himſelf, ſhall have benefit of his Clergy; But Law ſhall proceed againſt him for the crime whereof he is Indicted, as if he had pleaded to the ſame, and thereupon had been found guilty.

Buggery was made Felony.

Elizabeth Barton (call'd the *Holy-Maid* of *Kent*) and Complices were attainted of High-Treaſon, for conſpiring to ſlander the Divorce between the King and Queen *Katherine*, and the late Marriage between him and Queen *Anne*.

Becauſe by the greedineſs of ſome, who have gotten into their hands much Cattel, and many Farms, which they have turned from Tillage to Paſture (eſpecially for Sheep) old Rents are raiſed, prices of things Inhanſed, and ſo, much Poverty and Theft enſued; It was Enacted, that no Man ſhould have in his own or Farmed Lands above 2000 Sheep (yet that every Temporal Perſon may keep upon his Inheritance as many as he will.) Secondly, that no Man ſhall take and hold above two Farms at once, and thoſe to be in the ſame Pariſh; upon certain penalties there ſet down.

The Statute of *Henry* the 4th. concerning Hereticks was Repeal'd. And it was Enacted, that Sheriffs in their Turns, and Stewards in their Leets may make Inquiry and Preſentment of Hereticks; Who being by two Lawful Witneſſes accuſed, may be Cited and Arreſted by an Ordinary, and being convict in open Court, ſhall abjure their Hereſies, and refuſing ſo to do, or relapſing, ſhall be burnt.

Alſo the Statute of *Richard* the Third permitting free importation of all kinds of Books, was Repealed. And (for the benefit of our Book-binders) it was Enacted, that no Book-ſeller ſhould buy any Books

Books bound beyond Sea; nor any (though unbound) of any ſtranger, but by engroſs. And if the prices of Books chance to be raiſed above reaſon, the Lord Chancellor, Lord Treaſurer, the chief Juſtice of either Bench, or any two of them ſhall moderate the ſame, upon a certain Penalty. 15 3/4.

Whereas the Clergy have truly acknowledged that the Convocation is always aſſembled by the Kings Authority, and have promis'd his Majeſty, that they will not henceforth make or allege any new Conſtitutions, without his Highneſs Aſſent and Licence; And whereas divers Conſtitutions and Canons Provincial and Synodal heretofore Enacted, are thought to be prejudicial to the Kings Prerogative, and contrary to the Statutes of the Realm, and enormous to the People; and the ſaid Clergy therefore hath humbly beſought his Majeſty that the ſaid Conſtitutions and Canons may be committed to the Examination of thirty-two men to be named by his Majeſty, *viz.* ſixteen of both Houſes of Parliament, and ſixteen of the Clergy, who may annul or confirm the ſame, as they find cauſe; It is enacted that all Convocations ſhall be henceforth called by the Kings Writ, and that in them nothing ſhall be promulged or executed without his Highneſs Licence, under pain of Impriſonment of the Authors, and mulct at the Kings will. And that his Highneſs ſhall at his pleaſure (ſeeing the time of this Parliament is too ſhort) appoint thirty-two men, as aforeſaid, to ſurvey the ſaid Canons and Conſtitutions, for the Confirmation or Abolition of the ſame.

And as concerning Appeals, they ſhall be made (according to the Statutes made the laſt year) from Inferior Courts, to the Archbiſhops, and for lack of Juſtice there, to the Kings Majeſty in his Court of Chancery.

As concerning *Annates* uſed to be paid to *Rome* by Archbiſhops and Biſhops, and Bulls and Palls to be had from thence, ſince there hath been heretofore an Act paſſed, and the Biſhop of *Rome*, otherwiſe called Pope, being informed thereof, hath as yet devis'd no way with the Kings Highneſs for redreſs of the ſame; his Highneſs hath now Confirm'd and Ratified the ſame Act, and every Article thereof, and the Parliament doth Enact the ſame, with this Addition, that from henceforth no Biſhop ſhall be commended, preſented or nominated by the Biſhop of *Rome*, nor ſhall ſend thither to procure any Bulls or Palls, *&c.* but that at every vacation of a Biſhoprick, the King ſhall ſend to the Chapter of the Cathedral a Licence (as of old hath been accuſtomed) to proceed to Election, which Election being deferr'd above twelve days next enſuing ſhall belong to the King, but being made within the time limited, ſhall be held firm and good, and the Perſon ſo elected, after certification of his Election to the Kings Highneſs, and Oath of Fealty taken to him, ſhall be ſtyled Biſhop Elect; and ſo by his Majeſty, be commended to the Archbiſhop of the Province, to be Inveſted and Conſecrate. And if the perſons to whom this Election, or Conſecration belongeth, neglect

or

1533. or refuſe to perform the ſame, or admit, or execute any Cenſures, Interdictions, *&c.* to the contrary, they ſhall incur the penalty of the Law of *Præmunire*.

Whereas the People of this Land hath been much impoveriſhed by the uſurped Exactions of the Biſhop of *Rome*, under the titles of *Peter*-pence, Procuration, Expedition of Bulls, Delegacies, Diſpenſations, *&c.* It is enacted that ſuch Impoſitions be no more paid; And that neither the Kings Highneſs, nor any Subject of his, ſhall ſue for any Diſpenſation, Faculty, Delegacy, *&c.* to the See of *Rome*, but that any ſuch Diſpenſation, *&c.* for Cauſes not being contrary to the Law of God, which were wont to be had from *Rome*, may be now granted by the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, as well to the Kings Highneſs, as to his Subjects: but in thoſe things which were not wont to be ganted by the See of *Rome*, the ſaid Arch-Biſhop ſhall not meddle, without the Kings Licence. Provided, that all Diſpenſations, *&c.* whoſe Expedition at *Rome* came to four pounds and upwards, ſhall be confirmed by the Kings Seal, and enrolled in Chancery, thoſe below four pounds paſſing under the Archbiſhops Seal only. That the Fees for theſe Diſpenſations ſhall be limitted by the ſaid Archbiſhop, and the Lord Chancellor, and a part of the ſame (be they great or ſmall) ſhall always come to the Kings hands. As for all Monaſteries, Colleges, Hoſpitals, heretofore exempt, the King only, and not the Archbiſhop ſhould have Authority to viſit them.

Laſtly, upon the ſute of Parliament to the King for the eſtabliſhing of the Succeſſion to the Crown (the uncertainty whereof hath cauſed heretofore great diviſion and bloodſhed in this Realm) It was enacted, that the Kings Marriage with the Lady *Katherine*, Wife and carnally known to his Brother Prince *Arthur* (as was lawfully proved before *Thomas* Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*) as contrary to Gods Law, ſhall be held void: and ſhe ſtyled no more Queen, but Dowager to Prince *Arthur*, and the Matrimony with Queen *Anne* ſhall be taken for firm and good; and the Iſſue thence procreate be accompted lawful; the Inheritance of the Crown to belong to the ſame in manner following, *(viz.)* Firſt to the eldeſt Son begotten by the King on Queen *Anne*, and to the Heirs of the ſaid Son lawfully begotten; and for default of ſuch Heir, then to the ſecond Son, *&c.* and if Queen *Anne* Deceaſe without Iſſue Male, then the Crown to deſcend to the Son and Heir of the Kings Body lawfully begotten, and the Heirs of the ſaid Son lawfully begotten, and for a default of ſuch Iſſue, to the ſecond Son in like manner, *&c.* And for default of Sons, that then the Crown ſhall belong to the Iſſue Female of the King by Queen *Anne*; and firſt to the firſt begotten the Princeſs *Elizabeth*, and to the Heirs of her body lawfully begotten. And for default of ſuch Iſſue, then to the ſecond Daughter in like ſort, *&c.* And for default of all ſuch Iſſue, to the Right Heirs of the Kings Highneſs. It was Ordained that this Act ſhall be proclaim'd

claim'd before *May* next throughout the Kingdom. And all perſons of age ſhall ſwear to accept and maintain the ſame. They who refuſe the Oath ſtanding guilty of Miſpriſion of High Treaſon; And they who ſpeak or write againſt the Marriage or Succeſſion here eſtabliſhed, to be adjudged Traitors. 1534

Beſides all this, the preſent Statute expreſſed certain Degrees of prohibited Marriage; (amongſt which, that between the Brother and the Brothers Wife, was one) which being againſt Gods Laws, could not be Diſpenced with by Man, and therefore no ſuch Marriages ſhall hereafter be made; and thoſe that are made already ſhall be by the Ordinary diſſolved, and thoſe that are already ſo diſſolved, ſhall be eſteemed juſtly and Lawfully diſſolved, and the Iſſue thence proceeding Illegitimate.

The Parliament riſing, Commiſſioners were ſent abroad to require the Oath of Succeſſion, which nevertheleſs *John Fiſher*, Biſhop of *Rocheſter*, and Sir *Thomas More*, late Chancellor, denyed, yet ſo as they both profeſſed a readineſs to ſwear to the Succeſſion, but not to the whole Act, (it conteining divers other things. Firſt, the indiſpenſability of the firſt Marriage, as being againſt the Law of God. Secondly, of the Legal proceeding in the Divorce by *Cranmer*. Thirdly, ſome touches againſt the Popes Authority, *&c.*) But which of theſe in particular offended them, they would not diſcover; Therefore though Arch-Biſhop *Cranmer* told *Cromwel* it were not amiſs to accept the Oath as they offer'd it, both for ſatisfaction of the people, and the Dowager with her Daughter, and the Emperor, (who much relied on theſe Mens Authority,) they yet refuſing, were ſent to the Tower, where they continued till they were brought forth to their Tryal and Death, as will appear hereafter. March 30. April 17.

The Pope having proceeded in thoſe Rigorous terms with our King (as is formerly mention'd) and for more Authoriſing his Sentence, made the Emperor Executor thereof, hoped now to have his Revenge, but he was deceiv'd. For though the Emperor did gladly accept this Overture, for his Aunt Queen *Katharine*'s ſake, and the hope he had to diſpoſe of the Princeſs *Mary*, as Inheritrix of the Crown, yet as he had deeper deſigns, in aſpiring to the Conqueſt of *Italy*, and indeed to an Univerſal Monarchy, He was no leſs glad of the occaſion to take off our King from the Pope; Howſoever each ſide prepared for War. The Emperor's intention was, to give the Princeſs *Mary* to ſome one, who upon her Title might pretend to the Crown, whom therefore he promis'd to ſecond. Our King and *Francis* not ignorant of the Emperor's deſigns, agreed on the other ſide, partly to joyn with Duke of *Gueldres* for invading the adjoyning territories to *France*, and partly to renew the antient Claim to *Navarre*, and aſſail the Emperor in thoſe quarters. Yet neither did that of the Emperor take effect, becauſe there was no means to recover the Perſon of the Princeſs *Mary*. Nor this of our Kings, becauſe *Francis* employing his thoughts wholly on the Affairs of

1534. May 11.

Italy, did not think fit to comply openly with one againſt whom the Pope had Fulminated. Howbeit, our King for defence of his Authority and ſecond Marriage, neglected not to obtain from the Parliament a confirmation thereof, and of the Succeſſion in that Line (as is mention'd before;) ſending alſo to Queen *Katharine* at *Bugden* near *Huntingdon*, in ſequence thereof, *Edward Lee*, Arch-Biſhop of *York*, and *Cuthbert Tonſtall*, Biſhop of *Dureſme*, to ſignifie unto her, that he took it ill that ſhe ſtill claimed the title of Queen, *&c.* the paſſages of which Negotiation I have thought fit to tranſcribe out of the Original Record, as containing many material points concerning the whole frame of the buſineſs.

Their Letter to the King, was this.

PLeaſe it your Highneſs to underſtand, that this day we repaired to the Princeſs Dowager, and there I the Arch-Biſhop of *York*, for an Introduction to declare to her the effect of our Commiſſion, ſaid to her. Firſt, that your Highneſs had often ſent to her, divers of your Council, and amongſt them me, one, to declare unto her the invalidity of the Marriage, between your Highneſs and her. Secondly, that Carnal knowledge, which is the great key of the matter, is ſufficiently proved in the Law, as alſo ſome that were of the Council do avow. Thirdly, that upon proof ſo ſufficiently made of Carnal knowledge, Divorce was made between your Highneſs and her. Fourthly, that upon Divorce made by Lawful ſentence, ſhe was admoniſhed to leave the name of a Queen, and not to account or call her ſelf hereafter your Highneſs Wife. Fifthly, how that after your Highneſs was diſcharged of the Marriage made with her, you contracted new Marriage with your deareſt Wife Queen *Anne*. Sixthly, that for ſo much as (thanked be God) fair Iſſue is already ſprung of this Marriage, and more likely to follow, by Gods Grace, that the whole Body of your Realm gathered together in Parliament, hath for the ſtabliſhment of this Iſſue, by your deareſt Wife Queen *Anne*, and the Succeſſion coming of this Marriage, made Acts and Ordinances againſt all them that would in word or in deed withſtand them, and that for theſe purpoſes, we were ſent to her Grace, to the intent ſhe might underſtand the true purpoſe of theſe Acts, with the pains; leſt by Ignorance ſhe ſhould fall in any of them, and ſo I declar'd the Act. Which thing being thus declared to her, ſhe being therewith in great Choler and Agony, and always interrupting our words to the aforeſaid points, made theſe Anſwers following. To the firſt, that ſhe took the Matrimony between your Highneſs and her for good, and ſo always would account her ſelf to be your Highneſs Lawful Wife, in which opinion ſhe ſaid ſhe would continually (till Death) perſiſt. To the ſecond, ſhe utterly denied that ever Carnal knowledge was had between her and Prince *Arthur*, and that ſhe would never confeſs the contrary, and with lowd voice when

when mention was made of that point, ſhe ſaid, they Lyed falſly that ſo ſay'd. To the third, ſhe anſwered, that ſhe is not bound to ſtand to that Divorce made by my Lord of *Canterbury*, whom ſhe called a Shadow, and that although he had given ſentence againſt her, yet the Pope had given ſentence with her, whom ſhe took for Chriſts Vicar, and therefore would always obey him, as his faithful Daughter. To the fourth, ſhe anſwer'd, that ſhe would never leave the name of a Queen, and ſhe would always take her ſelf for your Highneſs Wife. To the fifth, ſhe ſaid that this Marriage, made after her Appeal, which ſhe made by your Highneſs leave and conſent, is of no value. To the ſixth, ſhe anſwer'd, that ſhe is not bound to the Acts of the Parliament, for ſo much as ſhe is your Highneſs Wife, and not ſubject to your Highneſs, and alſo becauſe theſe Acts were made by your Highneſs Subjects in your favour, your Highneſs being party in this matter; with divers other unſeeming words. Unto which her Anſwer I the Biſhop of *Dureſme* replying, foraſmuch as ſhe had ſaid in her communication that both I and the reſidue of her Counſel had always ſhewed unto her, that her matter is juſt and good; I ſaid that all the queſtion whereupon we were conſulted at ſuch time as the Legates were here, depended only upon the validity of the *Bull* and *Breve*, albeit I ſaid, that ſith that time divers other queſtions had riſen and been debated by many Univerſities, the chief of Chriſtendom, of which one was *Bononia*, the Popes own Town; and by them concluded, that after the deceaſe of the Brother, who had had carnal knowledge with his Wife, the Brother living might not Marry the ſaid Wife by any Diſpenſation of the Pope, becauſe it was forbidden by the Law of God. And foraſmuch as the Pope (albeit the ſaid concluſions, have been by Learned Men ſent from your Highneſs, declared unto him) never made anſwer to maintain Lawfully his power to the contrary, but rather in confirmation of the opinions of the ſaid Univerſities, ſaid at *Marſeilles*, that if your Grace would ſend a *Proxie* thither, he would give the ſentence for your Highneſs againſt her, becauſe that he knew that your Cauſe was good and juſt, which his ſaying was according alſo to an Epiſtle Decretal ſent hither by the Legat *Campejus*, whereof the effect was, that if Marriage and carnal knowledge were had betwixt Prince *Arthur* and her, the Legates ſhould pronounce for the Divorce, according whereunto proofs were brought in before the Legats, and alſo ſince, before the Convocations of this Realm, and the Biſhop of *Canterbury*, and by them allowed, and approved as ſufficient and Lawful: whereby it doth plainly appear, that the Sentence given by the Pope to the contrary was not vailable, becauſe it pronounced the Diſpenſation, (which he had no power to grant, ſeeing it was againſt the Law of God) to be good; therefore I had now changed my former opinion, and exhorted her to do the ſemblable, and forbear to uſurp any more the Name of a Queen; ſpecially, for that the Sentence ſhe ſticketh ſo greatly unto,

1534. May 20.

1534. was given after your Graces Appeal to the Council General, and intimate to the Pope, ſo that it could not be vailable. And that if ſhe ſhould ſo do, ſhe might thereby attain much quietneſs for her ſelf, and her friends, and that ſhe being conformable ſo to do, I doubted not but your Highneſs would ſuffer her to have about her ſuch Perſons as ſhould be to her pleaſure, and intreat her as your Graces moſt deareſt Siſter, with all liberty and pleaſure, with divers other things which by her much enterlacing, I was forced to anſwer unto. The ſpecialties whereof, and of her obſtinacy, that ſhe will in no wiſe, ne for any peril of her life or goods relinquiſh the name of a Queen, we do remit for tediouſneſs unto the wiſdoms and diſcretions of my Lord of *Cheſter*, Mr. *Almoner*, and Mr. *Redell*, who like as they have very ſubſtantially, wiſely, and effectually, ordered themſelves in the Execution of the premiſſes, ſo we doubt not, but that they will ſincerely report the circumſtances of the ſame unto your Highneſs, whom we beſeech Almighty God long to preſerve in much honour, to his pleaſure, and your hearts deſire. At *Huntingdon* the 21. day of *May*.

By your Highneſs moſt humble Subjects
Servants and Chaplains,
Edouard Ebor.
Cuthbert Dureſme.

Decemb. 18. 1533. *Hall.* Notwithſtanding which anſwers of the Princeſs Dowager, ſuch was the gentleneſs of our King, as betwixt the memory of his former love and pity on her preſent condition, contenting himſelf to have diſſolv'd her Family, and remov'd from her all ſuch as would not ſerve her as Princeſs only; he paſs'd them over with much calmneſs. Howbeit he reſolved to puniſh rigorouſly her adherents, and particularly *Elizabeth Barton* (called the Holy Maid of *Kent*) who had almoſt ſtirred up more than one Tragedy; for being ſuborned long ſince by Monks, to uſe ſome ſtrange geſticulations, and to exhibit divers feigned Miracles, accompanied with ſome Wiſardly Unſoothſayings, ſhe drew much credit and concourſe to her, inſomuch that no mean Perſons, and among others *Warham*, late Arch-Biſhop of *Canterbury*, and *Fiſher* Biſhop of *Rocheſter*, and Sir *Thomas More*, gave ſome belief to her; ſo that notwithſtanding the danger that was to give ear to a Prediction of hers, that *Henry* VIII. ſhould not *live one Month* after this Marriage with Miſtris *Bolen*, ſhe was cryed up with many voyces, *Silveſter Darius*, and *Antonio Pollioni*, the Popes Agents here, giving credit and countenance thereunto. But the Plot being at laſt diſcovered, ſhe was attainted of Treaſon in the Parliament, and executed with her chief Complices ſhortly after. At which time alſo ſhe confeſſed their names who had inſtigated her to theſe practices, and whom ſhe had acquainted with her Reve-

Hall. Moriſin Apomaxis. Novemb. 1533. Ja. 15 15$\frac{11}{34}$. April 21.

Revelations. Among whom were *More* and *Fiſher*; whom yet the King Pardoned upon their ſeveral ſubmiſſions, not ſuffering the Bills to paſs, which were put into the Parliament againſt them. 1534.

After many bickerings betwixt the *Engliſh* and *Scotch*, a Truce firſt, and afterwards a Peace was concluded betwixt our King and King *James*. On the King of *Scots* part, *March* 23. came to *London*, *William Stuart* Biſhop of *Aberdeen*, *Robert Reid* Abbat of *Kinlos*, and *Adam Otterburne*, a Lawyer. To treat with theſe on our Kings behalf, were appointed *T. Audley*, Chancellor, *Cromwell*, Secretary, and *Edward Fox* Almoner. *Mor. Mar.* 5 *Fiſher*, *Feb.* 27. 15[3]1. 1533. Sept. 1534. March 23. April 12.

The Treaty was for perpetual Peace, which was concluded *May* 20. during their joynt lives, and a year after, and ſworn by King *Henry*, *Aug.* 2. and by King *James*, *July* 9. It was alſo agreed, that King *Henry* ſhall deliver to the King of *Scots* the Fortreſs of *Edrington*, lately taken by the *Engliſh*, and the King of *Scots* ſhall not impute breach of Peace to King *Henry*, if he entertain *Archibald* Earl of *Anguis* his Brother, or his Uncle, and if the ſaid *Douglaſſes* ſhould chance to Invade *Scotland*, Redreſs ſhould be made according to the Laws of the Marches, and the Peace remain between the two Kings. Which that it might continue during their lives, as was then agreed, Queen *Margaret* by Letters ſollicited Queen *Anne* and *Cromwel* the Secretary. While this Peace was treated, I find by our Records the Lord *William Howard*, Brother to the Duke of *Norfolk*, was ſent into *Scotland*, to carry King *James* the Order of St. *George*, whereunto he was alſo accepted at *Windſor* the next year, *July* 28. he had Inſtructions alſo to acquaint him, with an Interview intended betwixt our King and *Francis*, whereat he was intreated to be preſent, and for this purpoſe to paſs through his Kingdom, that they both together might go to *Calais*; Which favour was acknowledg'd by *James*. But as the Interview in *France* was diſappointed, ſo our King who deſired much to confer with his Nephew, invited him to *York*. Whereupon King *James* propos'd the buſineſs to his Council, who judging *New-Caſtle* to be the fitter place, made an excuſe for the preſent, promiſing yet the year following to meet, if he ſo thought good. Nevertheleſs, as our King well knew upon what ground this meeting was deferr'd, the Lord *William Howard*, and *William Barlow*, Elect Biſhop of St. *Aſaph*, were ſent to make certain Overtures and Propoſitions to that King, whereof in its due place. May 20. July 4.

This year *Charles* the Emperor being in *Spain*, intentive chiefly to the proceedings of the *Turk*, and his Brother *Ferdinand* in *Germany*, deſirous to govern without home-oppoſition, ſuch a Peace was accorded with the Duke of *Wittenberg*, and ſuch favourable uſage given the Proteſtant Princes, that the Pope complained openly of *Ferdinands* Partiality to them. But *Ferdinand* excuſed all with Reaſon of State. Which alſo the Pope accepted the rather, in that the *Anabaptiſts* (who taught a Doctrin more contrary to Monarchy than the *Lutherans*) did then prevail in many places, and particularly June 29. *Slied. l.* 9.

1534. ticularly held *Munſter* in *Weſtphalia*. So that becauſe the Duke of *Wittenberg*, promiſed to contribute ſome Forces to the beſieging of that place, he ſaid he had concluded an advantageous Peace. For as no man knew how far the Innovations of theſe times might reach, it was thonght to be of much importance, that they had drawn one ſide to oppoſe the other. In *France* alſo about this time, the Doctrin of the Evangelicks began to take Root, though ſo covertly, that few durſt openly avow it; yet as they found favour and Protection from *Margaret* Queen of *Navarre*, and *Anne* Dutcheſs *d' Eſtampes*, So the King himſelf, whether for deciding the Cauſe, or love of theſe two Ladies (whereof one was his Siſter, and the other his Favourite) refuſed not to confer privatly with divers of the reformed, and to give ſome ſuch tacit Aſſent to their Doctrins, as thereupon growing audacious, they adventured to ſet up Papers in the Court, and publiſh Libels againſt the Church of *Rome* in ſuch manner, as *Francis* being incenſed thereat, cauſed the Authors to be ſought out, and burnt. Not yet but that he could have been content to have had ſome points reformed, and the Papal Authority diminiſhed a little, but that he feared it might cauſe a diviſion in his Realm, as he ſaw it had done in the Empire. Therefore, following a violent courſe, and improper to convince thoſe who are well perſuaded of their Religion, he condemned the Profeſſors thereof to the fire. While yet on the other ſide (as the *French* Hiſtorians confeſs) He entred into a League with the *Turk*, to the no little ſcandal of his own, and all the Chriſtian Religion. But as this was not without ſome great Deſign, ſo he inſtituted certain Legionary Souldiers, or Regiments of Foot throughout *France*, to the number of 42000 Men, each of the Legions being compos'd of two thouſand Harquebuſiers, and 4000 Pikes, and Halberdiers, who were Commanded by twelve Captains (having 500 a piece) under ſix Colonels; While to draw the people voluntarily to ſupport this Charge, the King exempted the Gentry from the ſervice they owed the Crown, by reaſon of their Tenures and Fees, and the Roturier or Peſant from all Impoſitions, ſaving twenty Solz apiece. Many good Ordinances alſo were made for the entertaining and ordering this Militia. Neither did the King miſdoubt that the putting of Arms into ſo many of his Subjects hands would redound to his prejudice, or the people fear that their liberty ſhould be oppreſt thereby. So that it gave not only ſecurity at home, but reputation abroad; All which was done, while the Emperor prepared for a Voyage to *Tunis*, the Relation whereof alſo, I ſhall ſet down in its due place.

Flor. Ramund. l. 7.

Sleid. Com. l. 7.

Novemb.

Dupleix. De Serr.

De Serr.

Sept. 26. This year (*Sept.* 26.) Pope *Clement* the VII. took his end. For as he had been troubled long, with a weakneſs in his Stomach, which his Phyſitian *Curtio* adviſ'd him to Remedy by change of Dyet, ſo being not able in an infirm State to ſuffer ſuch an alteration, he ſunk under his Diſeaſe and died. This Pope was one, who having prov'd the variety of good and ill Fortune, more than any other of his

his ſort, had learn'd at laſt to make uſe of all; He was happy in his Interviews, as returning ever with ſome advantage, without that the committing himſelf to the power of thoſe puiſſant Princes whom he met, did diminiſh his Authority, in a time when they wanted neither will nor occaſion to bring it lower. He was a paſſionate lover of the advancement of his Family, for which purpoſe alſo he ſometimes chang'd the whole face of the Affairs of *Europe*. His Riches were rather in Jewels than money, as being more proper to diſpoſe unto them he affected. He was provident enough in conducting all Affairs where Arms did not Intervene, but withal ſo timerous, that it was reproached to him. The Hiſtorians of thoſe times beſides Note him to have been of little Faith. Both which properties ſeem the more credible, that he ſo often varied in his Treaties with our King. Inſomuch that he may be thought for more than one Reaſon to have wilfully loſt him. Into this Place ſucceeded *Aleſſandro* of the houſe of the *Farneſi*, as being by a full Conclave immediately Choſen; neither did his Age, being 67. exempt him, while every one thus might hope in his turn to ſucceed. Which opinion alſo he ſo cunningly entertain'd, as he was thought to have uſed ſome Art to make himſelf thought ſtill more fickly than he was. 1534. Octob. 12.

Our King who ſtill ſuſpected that the Pope and Emperor had their Deſigns upon him, did now labour every where to hinder them, and ſtrengthen himſelf. For which purpoſe alſo this occaſion was given; *Frederick* King of *Denmark* dying about this time, and leaving the Crown in competition between his Son *Chriſtian* (yet a Child) and *Frederic* Count *Palatine*, who had Married *Dorothie*, elder Daughter to *Chriſtiern* II. and the Emperors Siſter, the *Lubeckers* and *Hamburghers* offer'd our King for the ſum of 100000 Crowns to make a King in that Country which ſhould be at his devotion, and thereby exclude the Intereſt which the Emperor or his Niece had to that Crown. Concerning which our King taking advice with his Council, It was thought fit to propoſe the buſineſs to *Francis*, both that our King might experiment his affection, (which he had lately found cold) and eaſe himſelf of the charge, half whereof therefore he deſir'd *Francis* to ſupport. But what anſwer *Francis* return'd, appears not; only I find by a *Dutch* Hiſtory, as well as by our Records, that a great ſum of money, was lent by our King, whereupon alſo they proceeded in their War, which yet at laſt being compos'd, our King demanded Repayment. *Bewther.* 1535. May 25.

The Lord *Dacres* of the North (*July* 9. as our Hiſtorians have it) was Arraigned at *Weſtminſter* of High Treaſon, but as the principal Witneſſes produced againſt him by his accuſers (Sir *Ralph Fenwick* and one *Muſgrave*) were ſome mean and provoked *Scottiſh* men, ſo his Peers acquitted him, as believing they not only ſpoke maliciouſly, but might be eaſily ſuborned againſt him, as one who (having been Warden of the Marches) by frequent Inroads had done much harm in that Country. And thus eſcaped that Lord to his no little honour, July 9.

1534. honour, and his Judges, as giving example thereby how Perſons of great quality, brought to their Tryal, are not ſo neceſſarily condemn'd, but that they ſometimes may eſcape, when they obtain an equal Hearing. The 11. of *Auguſt*, this year, our King, as he was watchful over the voice and affection of his people, ſo for the finding out how they would take his Deſign of putting down Religious Houſes, began with the remove of ſome. And therefore ſuppreſſed at *Greenwich*, *Canterbury*, *Richmond*, and other places the *Obſervant* Fryars, noted to be the moſt clamorous againſt Him, and for them ſubſtituted the *Auguſtines*, placing the Obſervants again in the Room of the Gray-Fryars, as ſome have it, though others mention not this latter Exchange; Which paſſages, though of no great moment, in regard of that which followed, our King was glad to find no worſe interpreted, ſince they ſerved to eſtabliſh his Authority.

Holinſhead. Speed.

Regn. 26. Novemb. 3. I ſhall come now to the Laws Enacted in the Parliament, held *Novemb.* 3. this year, which were important, and ſuch as teſtified the great reſpect and awe born by our Nation unto their King.

The firſt was to this effect: That albeit the King was Supream Head of the Church in *England*, and ſo recogniſed by the Clergy of this Realm in their Convocation, yet for more corroboration thereof, as alſo for extirpating all errours, hereſies, and abuſes of the ſame; It was Enacted that the King his Heirs and Succeſſors, Kings of *England*, ſhould be accepted and reputed the Supream Head on Earth of the Church of *England* (called *Eccleſia Anglicana*) And have and injoy united and annexed to the Imperial Crown of this Realm, as well the Title and Stile thereof, as all Honours, Dignities, Preeminences, Jurisdictions, Priviledges, Authorities, Immunities, Profits, and Commodities to the ſaid dignity of Supream Head of the ſame Church belonging or appertaining. And that our ſaid Sovereign Lord his Heirs and Succeſſors, Kings of this Realm, ſhall have full power and Authority from time to time, to viſit and repreſs, redreſs, reform, order, correct, reſtrain and amend, all ſuch errours, hereſies, abuſes, offences, contempts, and enormities, whatſoever they be which by any manner of Spiritual Authority or Juriſdiction ought or may lawfully be reformed, repreſſed, ordered, redreſſed, corrected, reſtrained, or amended moſt to the pleaſure of Almighty God, the increaſe of Vertue in Chriſts Religion, and for the conſervation of the Peace, Unity, and Tranquility of this Realm, any uſage, cuſtom, foreign Laws, foreign Authority, preſcription, or any thing or things to the contrary hereof notwithſtanding. Which Act, though much for the manutention of the Regal Authority, ſeem'd yet not to be ſuddenly approved by our King, nor before he had conſulted with his Council (who ſhewed him precedents of Kings of *England*, that had uſed this power) and with his Biſhops, who having diſcuſſed the Point in their Convocations, Declared, That the Pope had no Juriſdiction warranted to him by Gods Word in this Kingdom.

June 1. Records.

Which

Which alſo was ſeconded by the Univerſities, and by the ſubſcriptions of the ſeveral Colleges, and Religious Houſes ſo far as they bound their Succeſſors thereunto. The particulars whereof are to be ſeen in our Records. Howſoever, the Buſineſs was both publickly controverted in foreign Countries, and defended here by many at this preſent, while they produced Arguments for rejecting the Popes Authority, and together maintained it neceſſary, that ſuch a power ſhould be extant in the Realm for ſupporting and ſtrengthning of the Religion profeſſed in it, and excluding the Impertinent and ill-grounded Reformations of many Sectaries of thoſe times. The Arguments of all which, may be ſeen in the Kings Book *De vera differentia Regiæ, & Eccleſiaſticæ Poteſtatis* (which we have formerly mentioned) as being Printed, and publiſhed on this Occaſion; Whence alſo the learned Biſhop *Andrews* in his *Tortura Torti*, ſeems to have drawn divers Aſſertions of the Regal Authority, to which therefore the curious Reader may have further recourſe. 1535.

It was alſo declared Treaſon to attempt, imagine or ſpeak evil againſt the King, Queen, or his Heirs, or to attempt to deprive them of their Dignity or Titles.

Alſo, that no Traitor ſhall have benefit of Sanctuary. And though he be out of the Realm, yet upon Commiſſion given by the King for his Tryal, if he be found guilty by the Jury, the Law ſhall proceed againſt him, as effectually, as if he were preſent.

An Act alſo made the laſt Parliament for an Oath to be taken by all the Kings Subjects for the ſurety of the Succeſſion by Queen *Anne* was now confirmed, and the Oath preſcribed, for the more validadating whereof alſo, it was declared that all former Oaths concerning Succeſſion taken by the Kings Subjects, ſhould be reputed thenceforth vain and annihilated.

That towards the Augmentation, maintenance and defence of the Kings Royal Eſtate and Dignity of Supream Head, the Firſtfruits of all Benefices, Dignities, Offices, *&c.* Spiritual, ſhall be paid to his Highneſs. As alſo a yearly Revenue, being the Tenth part of all ſuch Livings (the Prior and the Brethren of St. *Johns* of *Jeruſalem* not excepted.)

Whereas alſo it was doubted, leſt in theſe troubleſome times ſome Commotion might follow in this Kingdom, and that particularly *Wales*, as being a ſtrong and faſt Countrey, might be a refuge for ill affected perſons, and the rather that there were ſo many Lordſhips Marches in thoſe parts (the ſeveral Lords whereof having ampler power than they now enjoy, did protect Offenders flying from one place to the other) Divers Laws were enacted againſt Perjuries, Murders, Felonies in *Wales*: Paſſage over *Severn* alſo at unlawful times was prohibited, and Clerks convict in *Wales*, not to be releaſed till they found Sureties for their good abearing. Notwithſtanding which, the year following upon mature deliberation, *Wales* was united and incorporated totally unto the Crown of *England*, it being

1535. ing thought better to adopt that People into the ſame form of Government with the *Engliſh*, than by keeping them under more ſevere and ſtrict Laws than others in the Iſland were ſubject unto, to hazard the alienating of their affections.

An Act alſo was made, declaring by whom; and in what manner Biſhops Suffragans ſhould be nominated and appointed, and what their Authority and Priviledges ſhould be.

And thus after a free and General pardon from the King, enacted, the Parliament was prorogued. The Act of Supremacy being thus paſſed, the King proceeded more confidently to aboliſh by Proclamation, the Popes Authority out of his Kingdom, and eſtabliſh his own, the Doctrine whereof he commanded not only to be often Preached in the moſt frequent Auditories, but taught even to little Children, injoyning further that the Popes name ſhould be razed out of all books, his Reſolution being after this time to treat with him

June 25. 1535. no otherwiſe than as an ordinary Biſhop. In ſequence whereof alſo, he not only proceeded with an high hand againſt all the oppoſers of his Supremacy, (as ſhall be related in its due place) but accepted a voluntary Oath or promiſe, under their hands and Seals, from his Biſhops, declaring their acknowledgment of the ſame, together with Renunciation of the Popes pretended Authority, and any Oath or promiſe made to him heretofore. The form of this Oath or promiſe

Feb. 10. 1535. given by *Stephen Gardiner* Biſhop of *Wincheſter*, *Feb.* the 10th. 1535. may be ſeen in *Fox*, to which we remit the Reader.

1535. IN the beginning of this year *Philip Chabot Seigneur de Bryon*, Admiral of *France*, being ſent to our King, acquainted him how the Count of *Naſſaw* had been on the Emperors part with the King his Maſter, and among other Overtures of agreement, propoſed to him two Marriages; to which yet he would return no anſwer without our Kings advice. One, was betwixt the *Dauphin* and the Princeſs

Mar. Bell. l. 4. *Mary* our Kings Daughter (which alſo *Bellay* mentions, adding that notwithſtanding the inſtances which *Francis* made, the Emperor would not declare his further intentions herein;) the other was betwixt the Emperors Son and the *French* Kings youngeſt Daughter. To which points, as alſo ſome others here following, our King com-

Records. manded his Agents in *France* to return this anſwer. That he marvel'd much at the Emperors malice, in medling with things which belong'd not to him; and therefore deſired *Francis* to ſurceaſe this Treaty, ſince he knew well enough how to keep his Daughter out of the Emperors reach. Secondly, he commanded them to tell *Francis* that the Emperors intention (notwithſtanding all his promiſes) was to divide him firſt from his League with *England*, and afterwards diſappoint him; for though he had underſtood by the ſaid *Bryon*, that the Emperor upon ſome conditions had offer'd to *Francis* (for one of his Sons) a Penſion of a hundred thouſand Crowns, payable yearly out of the Dutchy of *Milan*, and *Milan* it ſelf after the death of

of *Sforza*, he desired him to give no credit to such improbabilities. 1535.
And, here, I must observe that *Bellay* who speaks of the Pension, saith nothing of the Dutchy it self, so that it may be that *Bryon* stretched this point. And whereas the said *Bryon* had told him these things should be Treated of by the two Sisters, Queen *Leonora*, Wife to *Francis*, and *Mary*, the Widow of *Hungary*, (now Regent of the *Low-Countrys*, who, I find by the *Spanish* History did afterwards meet at *Cambray*) He thought he disparag'd this Business, to commit it to Women. After these points, and some others (which as they followed not, I spare to rehearse) he commanded them to intreat *Francis* to procure a Revocation of the Censures of *Clement* late Pope against him. And to tell him, that he would send Commissioners shortly to treat of a Match betwixt the Duke of *Angoulesme* (his third Son) and the Princess *Elizabeth* our Kings Daughter, which should be more advantageous than the Emperors Offer. Whereupon, this year in *May*, our King who knew there was no so May.
good way, to prevent the danger on the part of *Scotland*, as by taking off the *French*, and besides would have been glad that the Popes Censures were retracted, sent the Duke of *Norfolk*, the Bishop of *Ely*, Sir *William Fitz-William*, and Doctor *Fox*, to Treat with the *French* Kings Commissioners, being *Philip Chabot* Admiral, and *Guillaume de Poyet*, afterwards Chancellor of *France*, to this effect, as I find by their Instructions.

To require *Francis* together with his Children, as also his Spiritual and Temporal Nobility, to enter into bond to revoke the Censures given at *Rome*, (which I conceive had his Original from some proposition which *Francis* made of Reconcilement with the Pope.) That he, his Nobility and Universities should declare the late Marriage to be good, and bind themselves to maintain the same, which if granted, then to proceed to the Treaty of Marriage, upon certain conditions, whereof these are the Principal.

That all former Treaties shall stand in force. That when the Parties came to sufficient years they should ratifie the Marriage. That *Monsieur de Angoulesme* should be presently sent to our King to be brought up in *England*. That if he succeeded to the Crown, the Dutchy of *Angoulesme* should be free from homage to the *French* Kings. That he should not change the Laws of the Realm, and that sufficient security and caution should be given for this purpose. But some of these being thought to be high demands, our King sent June.
shortly after *George Bolen* Lord *Rochford* with power to modifie and allay some points, yet so as He insisted still, *Francis* should bind himself and his three Sons to revoke the Censures; and to declare, that it was enough if the Duke of *Angoulesme* came hither when the Espousals were to be made. At last by third Instructions our King June 6.
said, he was content to accept the single Bond of *Francis* for Revocation of the Censures, and that he was pleas'd that the Duke of *Angoulesme* came six Moneths only before the compleat Marriage.

1535. To the first of which points the *French* Commissioners agreed, but the latter they refus'd, affirming that it was sufficient, if the young Duke came to consummate the Marriage. This while Sir *John Wallop* (Ambassador in *France*) being commanded to propose the same Conditions to *Francis*, was so sharply answer'd, that our Commissioners resented it. Nevertheless as some Articles were agreed on the part of the *French* Commissioners: so they again demanded what help our King would give to the King their Master towards the recovery of his Mothers Land in *Savoy*. Whereupon, as also about the Pension usually paid to our King, some wrangling words were interchang'd, while we demanding that which was in Arrear, they desired to be exonerated of the whole; And thus the Treaty remained imperfect; yet so as I find by a Letter of Sir *Gregory Casalis*, how *Francis* had propos'd this Renuntiation with much earnestness, and not a few threats unto the new Pope. Though as *Paulus* III. was by nature slow (as *Casalis* observes) and that the Emperor, be-
May 14. sides, had his designs in *Scotland* and *Ireland* at that time against our King, so no effect followed. For which yet none suffer'd so much as the Pope himself, It being certain our King hitherto passionately, desir'd to be, if not reintegrated, yet at least in good terms with the *Roman* Church, as far as with his dignity he might.

This while, *Haradin Barbarossa* King of *Argier*, that famous Pirate (who for commanding in an unbounded and higher Element than the Earth, gloried in some sort to be superiour to the Princes
Sandov. thereof) obtained the Kingdom of *Tunis*, so true is the antient
1533. Verse, *Ille Crucem pretium Sceleris tulit, hic Diadema.* This man
1534. being sent for, by *Solyman*, and constituted Admiral in the Spring, 1534. with 100 sail of all sorts; 8800 Souldiers, and 800000 Ducats, began his expedition for Christendom the same day that *Soly-*
Sandov. *man* undertook his for *Persia*. His principal design was upon *Genoüa*, as being incited thereunto by *Francis*, as the *Spanish* History hath it;
Aug. 1. In his way to which, he burnt or took many Ships in *Sicily* or *Italy*,
1534. sacking divers Towns, and making many Captives; yet as he knew
Aug. 7. all this would not be such a prize for *Solyman* as the beautiful *Julia Gonzaga*, He commanded two thousand *Turks* to Land by night, and seise on her person, being then in *Fundi* in the Kingdom of *Naples*, but she half naked escaped them. Some difficulties yet appearing about the design of *Genoüa*, *Barbarossa* makes for *Tunis*, which at
Auguſt 22. last between Stratagem and force he took 22 *Auguſt* 1534. and made
1534. himself King thereof, *Muley Hazem* the true Prince flying for his more security unto the Mountains. Which being advertis'd to the Emperor, he thought fit to prevail himself of the occasion. As hoping that *Solymans* being in *Persia*, and the troubles, and confusions, which are incident to unsetled and usurped Governments,
Sandov. would make his design easie. And as he was one who knew the
Nov. 14. use of Spies in any great enterprise, he decended so low, as to give
1534. particular Instructions to one *Luys Presendes* a *Genoueſe*, well acquainted

ted with *Africa*, which are at large ſet down by *Sandoval*. The effect of which were, That he ſhould have certain moneys given him, wherewith he ſhould buy a Ship and Commodities to Traffick with *Tunis*, and by thoſe means inſinuate himſelf into the acquaintance of the principal Perſons both in the Town, and about *Barbaroſſa*, and thereupon either to make a Party with the diſcontented Citizens, with whom the Emperor might joyn, or elſe to penetrate the deſigns of *Barbaroſſa*; For which purpoſe alſo he had liberty, and Letters of Credence to make himſelf Ambaſſador and Negotiate with *Barbaroſſa*, when he thought it expedient for the Emperors Service to proceed that way; Giving him Authority further, to promiſe aſſiſtance to *Barbaroſſa* for the Conqueſt of *Africa*, when he might be drawn to depend on the Emperor. But whether through want of dexterity to uſe ſuch different inſtructions, or that otherwiſe another who was privy to his imployment did diſcover him (which ſome affirm) he was ſeiz'd on by *Barbaroſſa* and put to death. Which being related unto the Emperor did but haſten his Expedition, wherein he reſolved to go in Perſon. 1535. *Sandov.* *Sandov.*

This while, *Francis*, who was intentive to the Actions of the Emperor, both as himſelf had his deſigns in *Italy*, at that time, and that he had entred into a ſecret League with the *Turk*, thought fit to acquaint *Barbaroſſa* therewith, by the means of one *Monſieur de Forreſt* a French man, who from thence was commanded to go to *Conſtantinople*, and procure ſuccours for him; the ſucceſs whereof we ſhall tell hereafter; And now the Emperor being aſſiſted by the Pope, and *John* King of *Portugal*, and attended by *Don Luys*, Son to the ſaid *John*, *Andrea Doria*, and the prime Nobility of *Spain*, ſet Sail from *Barcelona*, *May* 31. and coming to *Calari* in *Sardinia*, departed thence 13 of *June*, 1535. with twenty-five thouſand Foot, and about two thouſand Horſe, beſides the Nobility and Adventurers, and ten thouſand Sea-men. All which being carried in two hundred and fifty, or three hundred Sail, came before *Goleta*, a Fort of ſixty paces one way, and ſixty-five the other, ſituate on a ſtrait at the Mouth of the Lake or Bay within which *Tunis* ſtands. Which place, though defended bravely, was at laſt taken, together with a great part of the Fleet of *Barbaroſſa*. After which, the Emperor leaving the Lake on the left hand, Marched to *Tunis* (where *Barbaroſſa* was) being a City of about ten thouſand Houſes, and three Leagues South from *Goleta*. But certain Slaves whom the Moors intended to burn with their Priſon, eſcaping out of it, and taking Arms at the ſame time that the Forces which *Barbaroſſa* ſent to defend the Paſſage were routed by the Imperialiſts, *Barbaroſſa* with about ſeven thouſand men, and much riches, fled out of the Town, quitting his Reign ſo, after that he had enjoyed it not a full year, ſome of the Towns-men hereupon coming to the Emperor, and acquainting him herewith, *Muley Hazem* interceded with the Emperor, that two hours ſpace might be given before he permitted the 1534. July 14. July 20. July 22.

1535. the Army to enter, alleging for this purpoſe alſo ſome probable inducements; When yet the crafty Moor, intended nothing thereby, but the gaining ſo much time for the Towns-men to hide their moſt pretious riches, from the rapine of the Souldiers: To which purpoſe alſo, he gave them private warning. The Emperor, at laſt, entring, and together giving Liberty to many Slaves, reſtored it to *Muley Hazem* upon theſe Conditions. That he ſhould ſuffer him
Aug. 6. to retain *Goleta*, *Bona*, *Vizerta*, and ſome other places belonging to the Kingdom of *Tunis*, That certain Churches for Chriſtians ſhould be allowed. That he ſhall no more make Chriſtian Slaves, or protect Pirats, from whom that King drew a great Revenue, being a fifth of all they took. And now *Charles* finding no more to be done in thoſe parts, the year being far ſpent, and his men ſick of Calentures, and being not ignorant beſides, of the deſigns of *Francis* in *Italy*, came to *Trapaca* in *Sicily* the twentieth of *Auguſt*, 1535. from whence he went ſhortly to *Naples*.

Aug. 28. During this Expedition *Francis* fell ſick, the ſuppoſed cauſe whereof (as I find by our Records) was, a grief he took, that a Servant of *Monſieur de Forreſt*, returning with a diſpatch concerning his Negotiation with the *Turk* was intercepted by the Duke of *Urbin*, and all the Treaty by this means, diſcovered to the Emperor; yet,
Novemb. at length taking Heart, and recovering, he ſent our King word thereof, who thereupon commanded a ſolemn Proceſſion to be made in *London*.

While the Emperor was at *Tunis*, *Francis* having provided a great Army under the Command of *Philip Chabot*, Admiral of *France*, ſent to his Uncle *Charles* Duke of *Savoy*, for paſſage through his Country, giving out that he deſired it only, to revenge the death of his Ambaſſador *Merveilles* upon *Franciſco Sforza*. But the Duke conſcious that he had lent Money heretofore to *Bourbon*, and bought lately the *Contado* of *Aſti* (belonging to the Houſe of *Orleans*) of the Emperor, and beſides, had accepted the Emperors Order, when he refuſed the *French*, wanted not occaſion to ſuſpect the entrance of ſo potent an Army into his Country. Therefore he denied Paſſage. Whereupon *Francis* incenſed, ſends to require of the Duke the Inheritance, falling to him by *Loüiſe* of *Savoy* his Mother. Demanding alſo reſtitution of a great part of *Piedmont*, and the Marquiſate of
Dupleix. *Saluzzo* as belonging antiently to the Counties of *Provence* and *Dauphine*, and Seignory of *Arles*. The Duke (as being allied to *Charles*, by his Wife *Beatrix*, Siſter to *Iſabella* the Empreſs) ſends to him for Aid, being now in *Sicily*, and to induce him hereunto, he
G. Bellay. offer'd to give him all the Lands, he held on this ſide the Mountains in exchange for ſo much in *Italy*. This being reported to *Francis*, inraged him ſo much the more againſt the Duke; ſo that he commanded his Army to enter *Savoy*; whereof in his place.

Charles ſeeing theſe preparations of *Francis*, and being unable for the preſent to reſiſt them (his Army being return'd ſick and much weakned

weakned from *Tunis*) for gaining of time, thought fit to renew the Propoſitions of Allyance and Accord, formerly mention'd to *Francis*. Not omitting the while to Levy Forces in *Germany*. Neither did he think to find any ſo ſtrong oppoſition in *Francis*, as long as he hoped that he had given our King enough to do in the parts of *Scotland* and *Ireland*. But as that of *Scotland* by our Kings induſtry took no effect, ſo that of *Ireland* was prevented, as by this narration drawn chiefly out of our Records may appear. 1535.

The Earl of *Kildare* being (as is aboveſaid) now reſtored again to his Liberty and Pardoned, return'd into *Ireland*, conducted by Sir *William Skeffington*, Maſter of the Kings Ordnance, who was alſo made Deputy there about 1530. and *Oſſory* diſplac'd. But ſome ſtirs ariſing, which *Skeffington* was not able to quiet, the King thought fit to reinplace *Kildare*, as a man much eſteemed by his Countrymen. Thus was he made Deputy in *Ireland* again, about 1532. where he pacified the Countrey, and *May* 19. 1533. under the Title of Deputy to *Henry* Duke of *Richmond* and *Somerſet*, Lieutenant of *Ireland*, held a Parliament at *Dublin*. But the old grudges between his Family and *Oſſory*'s, beginning to break out anew, and himſelf being accuſed to have invited *O Neale* and others to ſpoil the Countreys of *Oſſory*, not without ſuſpition of further deſign, he was ſent for by our King, with command to ſubſtitute at his departure ſome able Man, who might govern during his abſence. This charge was committed to *Thomas* his eldeſt Son. Who ſhortly after (hearing that his Father was convict, and to be put to death in *England*) roſe up in Arms, and combining with *O Neale*, *O Carol*, &c. of the Iriſh Nobility, committing divers outrages, and particularly *July* 26. 1534. murder'd Doctor *John Allen* Archbiſhop of *Dublin*, heretofore *Woolſey*'s Chaplain and Commiſſary, and forced the Citizens of *Dublin* to take Truce with him till *Michaelmas*, and in the mean time to admit ſome Bands of his men into the City, to lay ſiege to the Caſtle, (which was defended againſt Him) while himſelf with the reſt of the Army depopulated the Country of *Oſſory*. The news whereof being brought into *England*, the old Earl then in Priſon, died as is thought of grief, and the King appointed Sir *William Skeffington* by the name of Lord Deputy of *Ireland*, under the Lieutenant thereof the Duke of *Richmond*, with a well-provided Army to ſuppreſs the Rebel. For though ſome of the Iriſh Nobility ſtood firm to our King, and particularly the Earl of *Oſſory*, and his Son *James* Lord *Butler*, whom *Fitz-gerald* had in vain ſollicited; yet they were not able to make head againſt him. And here it is remarkable how politickly that Family ſtrove to preſerve it ſelf. For though three of five Brothers of the late Earl of *Kildare* were againſt our King, two others offer'd their Service to him. Who yet (as it was danger either to receive or refuſe them) were but coldly welcom'd. *Michaelmas* now approaching, (when the Truce with *Kildare* expir'd) *Francis Herbert* having been ſent from *Dublin* at the beginning of theſe

1530. *Campion.*

Iriſh Stat. xxv *H.* VIII.

June 11. 1534.

Auguſt. *Holingſ.*

Sept. 24. *Holinſhead.* Records.

1535. theſe Stirs, to give notice thereof to King *Henry*, returned with a comfortable promiſe of Succours, and a command to defend themſelves; Whereupon the Citizens ſuddenly laying hold on the Rebels, who beſieged the Caſtle, ſhut their gates, and ſtood upon their guard. Which *Fitz-gerald* underſtanding, comes with an Army of 15000. and aſſailed the City, which yet was ſtoutly maintained by the Townſmen, and particularly by *Francis Herbert*, who behaved himſelf ſo well, that as I find by ſeveral Original Diſpatches of *Finglas*, Chief Juſtice of *Ireland*, Dated in *November* 1534. the City by his Politick and manful defence was preſerved; Inſomuch, that if he had tarried three days longer, it was ſaid, both it and the Caſtle had been loſt. I find alſo by their Original Diſpatches, dated in the ſame Moneth, that he ſhot and kill'd twenty-four of the Rebels with his own hand, whereof twenty in one day. For which ſervice alſo, he was afterward made Knight, and one of the Kings Council in *Ireland*. Notwithſtanding which, as he was ſingle, and the City much preſſed by *Kildare*, who had intercepted all Victuals, Water and Fewel, ſo at laſt they were inforced to Treat upon certain Conditions, which were, That the Citizens ſhould ſet at liberty ſuch of his men, as they had taken, and labour to procure his Pardon of the King, within ſixteen weeks; And he on the other ſide ſhould deſiſt from Hoſtility, during the ſaid ſpace, and redeliver their Children. Being thus departed from *Dublin*; two days after, Sir *William Skeffington* arriving on the Coaſt of *Ireland* with his Army, a falſe Report came, that the City was yielded, whereupon a Council of War being aſſembled, the reſolution was, that *John Salisbury* and Sir *William Brereton* (two of the Captains newly come over) ſhould be ſent to *Dublin* with ſome Forces, being about five hundred men, to relieve it (if it were poſſible,) and that the Lord Deputy ſhould ſet Sail for *Waterford*, where, about the ſame time, Sir *John Saintlo*, and Sir *Rice Manſel*, landed with five hundred Souldiers; who, joyning with the Earl of *Oſſorey*, ſpoiled the Countery of *Kildare*; While *Brereton* and *Salisbury* coming during the aforeſaid Truce, enter'd the Town without any difficulty, where alſo they reſolved to proceed hoſtilly againſt *Kildare*, as having during this reſpite, deſtroyed ſome part of the Countrey adjoyning, contrary to his Promiſe. While Affairs paſſed thus, the Generals on either ſide made uſe of the time. For as *Kildare* ſent to the Emperor for obtaining ſupplies, (in which buſineſs a Servant of the Earl of *Deſmond*, in whom the Emperor had a ſpecial confidence, was employ'd) ſo the Lord Deputy (being now come to *Dublin*) Treated with the Nobility, to diſcover their Affection, as not knowing otherwiſe, how to form a Party amongſt them, on which he might rely. For which purpoſe alſo he thought it not amiſs to conclude a Truce with *Kildare*, until the fifth of *January*. *Kildare* in the mean time incouraging his Souldiers with hope of Succours from *Spain*. The aſſurance whereof being brought him by the

Records.

Octob. 14.

Octob. 16.

Octob.

Decemb. 14.

the Earl of *Desmond*'s Servant, He forgot not to write unto the Pope, complaining of our Kings defection from the Roman Catholick faith, and together desiring that he might hold the Kingdom of *Ireland* from that See upon payment of a yearly Tribute. In these uncertainties, Sir *John Allen* Knight, formerly Secretary to the Arch-Bishop of *Dublin*, now Master of the Rolls there, a dexterous Person, gave the King this advice; That he should quickly publish, whether he would pardon *Kildare*, and so save charges, or otherwise prosecute War against him; since he said, that until this were declared, the Gentry of *Ireland* durst not oppose *Kildare*, as fearing that when he were restored, he would Revenge himself on all those who oppos'd him. In the mean while, the Earl of *Desmond* dying, leaves his Estate Litigious betwixt his Brother and Grand-child. The Truce now expiring, our Army (which took some few places at their last landing, and made some light skirmishes,) lay idle for the most part. Insomuch that having gotten *Kildare* Castle, they suffer'd it to be lost again. At last, being commanded to proceed, the Lord Deputy in *March* following took *Maynoth* or *Mynwoh* Castle, strongly fortified and defended by a hundred of the choicest Servants and Souldiers of *Kildare*. Which place our Records say was gotten by Battery and Assault, so that *Holinshead* seems to be mistaken when he writes, it was betrayed by one *Parese*, Foster-Brother to *Fitz-gerald*, the Garrison being by him made drunk the night preceding, and that for this Treachery, instead of Reward, the Deputy commanded him to be hanged. And further our Records tell us, that one of the said Garrison deposed, that not only the Emperor had promis'd to send thither 10000 Men, but that the King of *Scots* had assured them of Aid; Arms in the mean time being brought in a great quantity from *Flanders*, and other places. Some defeats also were given to those Troops of the Rebels which appear'd. Nevertheless as they daily increased; and *Skeffington* was old, weak and slow in all his Enterprises, the Lord *Leonard Gray*, Brother to the Marquis *Dorset*, though allyed to *Kildare*, was (under the Duke of *Richmont*, who died shortly after) Authorized to execute the Place of Deputy Lieutenant of *Ireland*, to the no little grief and discontentment of *Skeffington*. Whereof *Kildare* being advertis'd, and for the rest finding himself reduced to some necessity, by the delay of the Emperor, and uncertainty he found in some of his Complices, thought fit to yield himself to the Kings Mercy; yet so as the Lord *Gray* together with the other Commanders promis'd to intercede effectually with the King in his behalf. Which I find they perform'd, and particularly the Lord *Gray*, whose Sister the old Earl had Married. And thus *Kildare* was brought by the Lord *Gray* to *London*, and his five Uncles not long after; where, upon examination, the business being found to merit punishment, they were at last Executed. Notwithstanding the earnest mediation of the Lord *Gray* and others. And now these troubles of *Ireland* being ended, our

1535.

Decemb. 26.

Nov. 30.

1535. March 23.

June 2.

August.

1537. Feb. 3.

1535. King commanded the Deputy to make Peace with *O-Neale* for a year or two, and together to ſummon a Parliament, both for giving order to thoſe grievances whereof the *Iriſh* complained, and for ſettling the buſineſs of Supremacy and Succeſſion, in that form it was eſtabliſh'd in *England*. Whereupon it was aſſembled, *May* 1. 1536. And in it the Acts of Succeſſion, of Supremacy, of Firſt Fruits, againſt Appeals to *Rome*, &c. as alſo an Act for the Attainder of the late Earl of *Kildare* and his Complices, were paſſed. And becauſe the K. had ſpent in this War forty thouſand pounds, he demanded together with a preſent ſatisfaction for his charges, a yearly Revenue for the future, which the Lords Spiritual & Temporal accorded in great part, the Clergy particularly giving him a twentieth part of their yearly Rents, firſt for ten years following, and at laſt for ever. And thus the Parliament was prorogued till the year following.

May 1. 1536. *Regn.* 28. *Iriſh Stat.*

Nov. 3. 1534. *Fox.*

The Supremacy being (as is aboveſaid) Inveſted in the King, by the Apprbation of his Parliament. The Univerſities and Biſhops of this Kingdom did not a little ſecond him; (and particularly *Stephen Gardiner*, whoſe Latin Sermon, *De vera Obedientia*, to this purpoſe, with the Preface of Doctor *Bonner* (Arch-Deacon of *Leiceſter*, and about theſe times Ambaſſador with the King of *Denmark*) being yet extant in Print, and by *John Fox* digeſted to a ſum) I ſhall not mention otherwiſe; my intention being not (in a Hiſtory) to diſcuſs Theological matters, as holding it ſufficient to have pointed at the places where they are controverted, as far as the notice of them is come to me. Notwithſtanding, as our King deſir'd to give and receive all ſatisfaction herein, ſo knowing that the eſteem of *Reginald Poole* was great in foreign Countries, and eſpecially in *Italy*, where he now lived at *Padua*; He ſent unto him, deſiring his Opinion of his late Actions freely, and in few words; Whereupon *Poole* writes, and diſpatches to him, his book *Pro Unitate Eccleſiæ*, inveighing therein againſt the Kings Supremacy, as alſo againſt his new Marriage, and Divorce of Queen *Katharine*; exciting the Emperor to Revenge the injury offer'd her, concluding with an advice to *Henry* to reconcile himſelf to the Catholick Church, and the Pope as head thereof. Our King having peruſed this, and knowing it could not long lie hid in *Italy*, (though *Poole* had promis'd not to publiſh it,) ſends for him by Poſt to come into *England*, to explain ſome paſſages thereof. But *Poole* knowing that it was declared Treaſon there, to deny the King the Title of Supream Head, which he had principally intended in his Book, refuſed, deſiring the King nevertheleſs, as being now freed from her, who had been the occaſion of all this, to take hold of the preſent time, and to reintegrate himſelf with the Pope, and accept the Council now ſummon'd, whereby, he might have the honour of being the cauſe of a Reformation of the Church in Doctrine and Manners, and that otherwiſe he would be in great danger. He wrote alſo to *Cuthbert Tonſtall* Biſhop of *Dureſme* to incline the King hereunto. But this Biſhop (as appears

May 23. 1536.

June 14. 1536.

July 15.

Records.

appears in our Records) reproving him for the bitterneſs of his Book, and counſelling him to burn the Original, denies that King *Henry* hath ſeparated himſelf from the *Roman* Church, but only freed himſelf from the unjuſt uſurpations of the Biſhops of that See. (And to this purpoſe, another large Letter joyntly written after, from the Biſhops of *Dureſme* and *London* may be ſeen in *Fox*.) But *Poole* being at this time, invited to *Rome* by the Pope, and utterly refuſing to burn a Catholick Book (as he ſaid) like an Heretick, our King haſtned the publiſhing at home of a Declaration, call'd the Biſhops Book, ſigned by the Arch-Biſhop of *Canterbury* and *York*, and nine-teen other Biſhops, wherein is alledged out of Antient Hiſtories and Councils, how many hundred years had paſt, before the Pope took on him this ſuperiority over other Biſhops, and that it was contrary to the Oath given, when any of them enters the Papacy; Which is, that they ſhall obſerve and keep inviolably the firſt eight Councils, that decree a limited power to all Biſhops, and particularly the firſt Council of *Conſtantinople*, which both excludes foreign Juriſdiction every where, and allows Biſhops within their ſeveral Dioceſſes, an abſolute power to determine Controverſies ariſing within their Precincts; And together ſhews how the Papal Authority was firſt derived from the Emperors of thoſe times, and not from Chriſt, whoſe Kingdom they ſaid was Spiritual and not Carnal; ſetting forth this Doctrine further by Arguments drawn from Holy Scriptures and ſome Fathers. But to return to 1535. Neither the Example of others which ſubſcribed, nor the Terror of the Statute could hinder divers Religious Perſons to continue in their former Opinions. Inſomuch, that they openly ſpake againſt the Kings Supremacy. Which being made known, cauſed him to adviſe with his Council concerning their puniſhment, ſome indeed thought that Impriſonment, Baniſhment, or the like, was chaſtiſement enough for thoſe, who confeſſing the Kings Supream Authority in all Temporal matters, did out of ſcrupuloſity, rather than malice, impugn the reſt. But when it was objected again, both that the Number was too great for either of thoſe puniſhments, and that the Law having made the Offence to be Death, it was not ſafe to go leſs, eſpecially when ſome exemplary Juſtice might contain the reſt in obedience. Our King, who needed now no motive to ſecurity, reſolved to proceed Legally againſt them. Therefore ſome Priors, and other Eccleſiaſtical Perſons, that were criminal in this kind, being found guilty of the Statute, and this year condemned as Traitors, were executed, being the firſt that ſuffered in this kind. This piece of Juſtice was not yet grown ſo familiar to our King, but that it troubled him much, for he would have been glad not to be compell'd to ſuch violent courſes; Therefore he not only mourned inwardly, but cauſed his Head to be poll'd, and his Beard formerly ſhaven, to be cut round, though others facetiouſly interpret it to be nothing elſe, than the putting upon a new Dignity, a new countenance; But if

1535.

1537.

July 26. 1536.

May 4.

Sanders Schiſm. Angl.

1535. July 22. 1534. May 25. June 18. Apr. 1534. Nov. 1534. May 7. May 21. June 22.

if he proceeded thus rigorously against the Opposers of his Supremacy, he did no less punish the many pretended Reformers or Contradictors of the *Roman* Catholick Religion. Therefore, as the last year he had condemned *John Frith* a Sacramentary to the fire, so he now caused divers *Hollanders* in *London*, who had devised some different Opinions by themselves, concerning certain Articles of Christian Religion, to be burnt in *Smithfield*. Shortly after which again, some others were executed for denying the Supremacy. So that on both sides it grew a bloody time. Only, as our King found the terrors already given, did not suffice to keep the rest in awe, he resolved to make some great Examples.

Therefore, he laid Hand on *John Fisher* Bishop of *Rochester*, who having been imprisoned now a years space, for refusing to swear to the Act of Succession, and attainted therefore by Parliament, was now urged with the Supremacy; Which he disallowing (as having not given his voluntary Oath or promise thereunto the last year, together with other Bishops) incurr'd the danger of the Law. Which also was taken the worse, that in the Convocation, 1530. he had yielded the Title of *Supremum Caput Ecclesiæ Anglicanæ quantum per Christi Legem licet*. Yet as the Pope for more confirming him in his Opinion, had declared him Cardinal of St. *Vitale* during his said restraint (though he professed that if the Hat lay at his Feet, he would not stoop to take it up.) So our King understanding thereof was much more incensed, both as the Pope had conferr'd his most eminent honours on a Man kept by him in Prison, and guilty of the highest punishment his Laws could inflict, and as he knew of what consequence it would be, if his Subjects were thus incourag'd to contemn his Authority: Therefore he resolved now to defer his Justice no longer. Whereupon, the said Bishop as publickly convicted and condemned for divers points (the particulars whereof, yet I have not seen, but only that on the seventh of *May* last in the Tower of *London* before divers Persons, He had falsly, Maliciously and Traiterously said, that the King is not Supream Head of the Church of *England*,) was by the Kings command openly beheaded the 22th. of *June*, 1535. Thus did the Popes favour but precipitate the Bishops Ruine; against whom notwithstanding, I find, the King did but unwillingly proceed, as having held him ever in singular esteem, for his Learning and good parts. All which cannot make me believe yet, that he was Author of King *Henry*'s Book against *Luther* (as *Sanders* and *Bellarmine* will have it) or Sir *Thomas More* (as others say) though I doubt not but they might both revise it by the Kings favour, and where it was needful also interpose their Judgement. This while, the Pope, who suspected not perchance that the Bishops end was so near, had for more Testimony of his favour to him, as disaffection to our King, sent him the Cardinals Hat, but unseasonably, his head being off. Nevertheless, as he had first desired *Francis* to mediate for him, he omitted not afterwards publickly to justifie

juſtifie his Actions, calling him by the name of *Sanctiſſimus Epiſcopus*, and *omnium Cardinalium Cardinalis*, and declaring, (in a Breve ſubſcribed by *Bloſius* (as I find it briefly mentioned in our Records, extracted by *Sanders*, and extant in the *Bullarium.*) of which hereafter) both that he was Innocent, and our King an Heretick, *&c.* But this again was defended in an Apology written here in Elegant Latine, whether by *Stephen Gardiner* (who as I find in our Records wrote a Juſtification of the King herein) or ſome other; Which I ſhould have inſerted but for the length, and as ſome would judge it for the vehemency. Though, as the King retained ſtill all the chief Articles of the *Roman* Church, it cannot be wondred if the Author thereof did the more bitterly inveigh againſt one that had given his Sovereign that odious Title. 1535.

Our King being thus many ways exaſperated againſt the Pope, neglected no means of extirpating his chief Agents and Favorours, and, with them, all his Authority in this Country; Therefore he proceeded againſt Sir *Thomas More*, committed at the ſame time, and for the ſame cauſe, with *Fiſher*. For though (as *Sanders* ſaith) he would by the Biſhop of *Rocheſter's* exemplary death have brought *More* to a conformity, yet finding that it was impoſſible, he commanded his Counſel in the Law to examine him concerning the Supremacy (now enacted) more particularly. But Sir *Thomas More*, (as his Indictment hath it) *malitioſe ſilebat*, ſaying yet afterwards, I will not meddle with ſuch matters. He was accuſed alſo for holding ſecret intelligence by Letter with the Biſhop of *Rocheſter*, during their Impriſonment; which appear'd both by the confeſſion of the ſaid Biſhop, and in that they held the ſame language. It being obſerv'd that both of them ſaid, in their Examinations, the Act about Supremacy was like a two-edg'd ſword, for if one anſwer one way, it will confound his Soul, and if the other way, it will confound his Body. Yet *Richard Rich* the Kings Sollicitor (made afterwards Lord *Rich*) comes to him again, and having firſt proteſted that he had no Commiſſion to talk with him of that matter, (as believing perchance his former Anſwer, or ſilence had ſufficiently convinc'd him,) did, as is in the Record, demand then, if it were enacted by Parliament, that *Richard Rich* ſhould be King, and that it ſhould be Treaſon for any to deny it, what offence it were to contravene this Act? Sir *Thomas More* anſwer'd, that he ſhould offend if he ſaid no, becauſe he was bound by the Act; but that this was *Caſus levis*; Whereupon, Sir *Thomas More* ſaid he would propoſe a higher Caſe, ſuppoſe by Parliament it were enacted *quod Deus non ſit Deus*, and that it were Treaſon to contravene, whether it were an offence to ſay according to the ſaid Act; *Richard Rich* replied yea; but ſaid withall, I will propoſe a middle Caſe, becauſe yours is too high. The King you know is conſtitute Supream Head of the Church on Earth, why ſhould not you Maſter *More* accept him ſo, as you would me if I were made King by the ſuppoſition aforeſaid. Sir *Thomas More*

! May 7.
June 28.

June 12.

June 12.

1535. *More* Anſwer'd, the caſe was not the ſame, becauſe (ſaid he) a Parliament can make a King and Depoſe him, and that every Parliament-man may give his conſent thereunto, but that a Subject cannot be bound ſo in the caſe of Supremacy, *Quia Conſenſum ab eo ad Parlamentum præbere non poteſt* (for ſo it is in my Copy if it be not miſtaken) *Et quanquam Rex ſic acceptus ſit in Anglia, plurimæ tamen partes exteræ idem non affirmant.* All which being produced together, and added to his refuſal of the Oath of Succeſſion, for which 1534. in the Parliament of *November*, 1534. he was attainted of miſpriſion of Treaſon, as I find by the Parliament Rolls, was thought ſufficient to condemn him. *Reg.* 26. So that notwithſtanding many ſubtil defences made by him, while he contended to have given no offence but in ſilence, (unleſs it were in comparing the Statute to a two-edged ſword, which yet he ſaid, he alleged no otherwiſe, than to ſhew how dangerous it was to anſwer,) and notwithſtanding alſo his denying utterly the paſſage between the Sollicitor and himſelf in that ſence (perchance he meant the Latine) which is above related, the Jury in his Tryal, *July* 1. before the Lord Chancellor, the Duke of *Norfolk*, &c. declared him guilty of imagining to deprive the King of his Title and Dignity, which by a Statute, *Regni* 26. was made high Treaſon. This great Perſon hereupon going ſhortly after, to the place of Execution, met among many Friends one only Enemy, who openly revil'd him, for a Sentence heretofore given in Chancery, to which, yet, he made no anſwer, but that if it were to do, he would do ſo again. And, now, being reſolv'd to die, he returned to his wonted facetiouſneſs. Therefore, being to go up the Scaffold, he ſaid to one; Friend help me up, and when I go down again, let me ſhift for my ſelf as I can. Being now mounted, the Executioner (as the cuſtom is) asked him forgiveneſs, which he granted, but told him withal, he ſhould never have honeſty by cutting off his Head, his Neck was ſo ſhort. Then laying down his head on the block, he bid the Executioner ſtay till he had laid aſide his Beard, for (ſaid he) it never committed Treaſon. After which, coming to ſome private Devotions, he received his death. Thus ended Sir *Thomas More*, with ſo little conſternation, as even terrors of death could not take off the pleaſure he had in his conceited and merry Language, which many attributed to his Innocence. For certainly though he fell into the danger of the Law, they thought his intentions were rather to elude it with ambiguous anſwers, and an affected ſilence, than to declare himſelf any way. Beſide, by an Original of his, (about this time, written to *Cromwel*) it appears that heretofore upon peruſing the Kings Book againſt *Luther*, he diſſuaded him to exalt ſo much the Papal Authority, leſt it diminiſhed his own. Profeſſing nevertheleſs both out of the reaſons urged in that book, as well as his private ſtudy of that queſtion afterwards, he could not deny the Pope a Primacy, however yet he could not hold it ſuch, as that the Authority derived to him thereby, was to be preferr'd above a General Council. This

Life of Sir *Tho. More*, by *T. M.*

July 1.

July 6.

1534. March 5.

This while (as I find in our Records,) our King upon the death of *Clement* VII. hoping better of *Paulus* III. gave Sir *Gregory de Caſalis* new Inſtructions to adviſe him, to regard the King of *England*, and to conſult with ſome Learned men, in his cauſe, (not imitating *Clement*, who knowing the truth conceal'd it) and theſe learned men to be choſen out of *France*. To this, alſo, the Pope ſeem'd to give ſome ear, until News came to *Rome*, firſt, of the Execution of divers Monks in *England* for denying the Supremacy, and then of the death of *More* and *Rocheſter*. Whereupon, the Pope reſolving to proceed againſt our King, begins to Minute terrible Bulls. whereof, I find, there were five ſeveral forms. But this which I find in the *Bullarium*, and extracted by *Sanders* (dated *Aug.* 30.) was that which was approved and made uſe of, being to this effect. Firſt, objecting to him, aſwell the Divorce of *Katharine*, as the Marrying *Anne*, and making Laws againſt the Popes Authority, and puniſhing thoſe who contradicted (as lately the Biſhop of *Rocheſter*.) He warns the King, to reform theſe faults; or upon refuſal Cites him, and all that favour him, to appear at *Rome* within ninety days to anſwer, which if they neglected, he Excommunicates them all, and deprives the King of his Realm, ſubjects the whole Kingdom to the Interdict; declares the Iſſue by *Anne*, illegitimate, forbids Allegeance to his Subjects, Commerce with other States; diſſolves all Leagues of Princes with him; Commands the Clergy to depart out of *England*, the Nobility to take Arms againſt him, *&c.* Having reſolv'd this Cenſure, yet I find, it was not openly denounced, till he ſaw all hope paſt of reclaiming King *Henry*, or at leaſt that the Emperor was at leiſure to execute it, of which hereafter. Our King hearing of this, entertains friendſhip with the Proteſtant Princes of *Germany*, and the rather that intelligence was brought, how the Pope had declared he would give away his Kingdom to ſome *Roman* Catholick Prince of that Country, as being (it ſeems) unwilling to greaten *France* or *Spain* therewith, leſt afterwards himſelf ſhould not be ſo able to ſway the ballance. Which I mention not, yet, as if it were probable to be effected, or that our King fear'd any ſuch attempt, as long as he ſtood upon good terms with his Subjects, but that by ſtrengthning himſelf in *Germany*, he might the better chaſtiſe that Perſon, who upon the Popes Incouragement durſt undertake the Enterpriſe. I do find alſo, that the *French* King, did concur in this Treaty with the Proteſtants, both, as upon the death of Pope *Clement*, the chief ſupport of the great Deſign in *Italy* did fall, and as He began to give ſome ear to the Evangelicks in *Germany*, as appears by his ſending for *Melanthon*, and other paſſages in *Sleidan*, which I ſhall hereafter ſet down. Howſoever, our King as he found that with no little aſperity he maintained his Authority at home, ſo he thought his care ſhould be the greater to juſtifie it abroad. Inſomuch that he ſent unto all places, (where he held correſpondence) to give, together with an account of his Actions, the reaſon why he had

1535.

June 1.

Aug. 30. *Sanders.*

1535. had taken on him the Supremacy. Therefore, Doctor *William Barlow* the Kings Chaplain, and Elect Brother of St. *Aſaph*, being joyn'd in Commiſſion with *Thomas Holcroft* to *James*, labour'd to give him all manner of Impreſſions, which might bring him to a conformity; Which *Buchanan* alſo mentions, ſaying that *James* was intreated to Read over their Arguments, and conſider them. Notwithſtanding which, as they were referr'd by him to his Clergy, ſo (as, the ſame Author hath it) they together with ſome learned Men, whom our King offered to ſend, for further Declaration of this point, were for the preſent rejected. Which again, being advertis'd to our King, He thought fit ſuddenly to employ the Lord *William Howard*, Brother to the Duke of *Norfolk*, and the ſaid Biſhop, to *James*, to make him divers advantageous Propoſitions, and withal to draw him to an Interview. Whereunto, therefore, being preſſed by them, and the rather that it was in ſequence of a former Propoſition; *James*, who had no diſpoſition thereunto, ſent (as our Ambaſſadors write) to procure by a private Meſſenger, a Breve from the Pope, inhabiting this Journey, ſo that until the receipt thereof he was forc'd to make other excuſes; by which, yet, I find he denied not a meeting with our King, but deſir'd him only, it might be in *France*, and the *French* King preſent, as hoping, thereby (it ſeems) to be leſs conſtrain'd, then if he came ſingle into our Kings Dominions; All which, as it did but increaſe our Kings Jealouſie of his Nephews intentions (for he expected War from many hands, as the Pope had threatned) ſo he endeavoured but ſo much more to draw him on his ſide, as knowing of what conſequence it was, to keep his Kingdom ſafe on that part; and therefore, labour'd ſtill, not only to induce him to abrogate the Papal Juriſdiction in his Dominions, but made ſome other Overtures; both of Creating him for the preſent, Duke of *York* (as *Buchanan* hath it) and for leaving him Succeſſor in this Kingdom, in caſe he conform'd himſelf for the reſt. But his Clergy (however Queen *Margaret* had given hope thereof) being utterly averſe, diſſuaded him; yet ſome operation I find it ſeemed to have. For by an Original Diſpatch in *May* following, 1536. *James* certified our King, that he had ſent to *Rome* to get impetrations for reformation of ſome enormities, and eſpecially, anent the ordering of great and many poſſeſſions, and Temporal Lands given to the Kirk by our noble Predeceſſors. To which as our King not only gave credit, but a ſafe conduct to the Meſſenger, as was deſired, ſo He ſeem'd to receive ſome ſatisfaction, and together hoped, he would not, at leaſt ſo ſoon, be drawn to aſſiſt his enemies, and therefore, forbore a while to ſolicite this point, purſuing, nevertheleſs, the propoſed Interview, but more ſlackly than before, but *James* had other deſigns, as ſhall be told the year following.

Buch.

May 2. 1536.

Our King finding thus, that buſineſſes were ſafe on this part, proceeded more confidently in his Intentions of ſuppreſſing, together with

with the Popes Authority; all thoſe who chiefly ſupported it. And becauſe he thought Monaſteries, did furniſh more able Men to conteſt with him in this point, than any part elſe, he adviſed how to proceed with them. Whereupon, one ſaid thus: 1535.

SIR,

IF in all Affairs, betwixt your Highneſs, and any elſe, at home, or abroad, it be the part of a Counſellor to give a free and impartial advice. I ſhall, under favour, crave the ſame liberty in thoſe things that intervene betwixt God and your Highneſs, both becauſe the Duty we owe unto that Supream Majeſty is tranſcendent, and that general and publick Errors committed againſt him, are of a more pernicious conſequence than any elſe. In confidence of Pardon, therefore, I ſhall preſume to opine concerning the buſineſs of Monaſteries now in queſtion. *SIR*, if it were firſt propos'd now, whether it were fit to erect them, I muſt confeſs I ſhould give my Aſſent, not yet that I ſhould allow any exceſſive number, or perchance approve all the rules obſerved in them. But wholly to exclude ſo pious a retrait for men unapt for Secular buſineſs, or otherwiſe retir'd from the World, were, in my conceit, to leave thoſe unprovided for, who of all other were moſt proper in a devout life to ſerve and glorifie their Creator. There is in my opinion, therefore, a due place left for Monaſteries; yet, when they grow to that multitude, that either the juſt proportion they ſhould bear in a State, is exceeded, or that, in effect, they ſhould become a Receptacle only for lazy and idle perſons, I ſhould wiſh to apply ſome convenient remedy. But Sir, who ſhall give it? for if we refer all unto the Pope, how could we ever hope of a moderation, eſpecially while they are but Retraits for ſo many Servants entertain'd for him at other mens coſts. And if your Highneſs (eſpecially ſince you have taken upon you the Supremacy) ſhould ſuppreſs them, what a ſcandal would follow? for who would think Sir, at home or abroad, that your Highneſs exercis'd your new charge therein, as you ought, or complied with your place? Again Sir, What a wrong would it be to the Founders of them, who had as much right to give ſome of their Lands to that uſe, as their Heirs have to enjoy the reſt? Would they not ſay this were to trench on the publick right, and to fruſtrate whatſoever either Divine or Humane Laws have eſtabliſh'd? Therefore, Sir, be pleas'd not to think ſo much of their overthrow, as Reformation; or if there be occaſion to ſuppreſs ſome, as being ſupernumerary, yet ſince they are Houſes dedicated to God, be pleas'd, by all means, to convert the profit ariſing thence, to ſome other pious uſe, and howſoever, to reſerve a ſufficient number in every Shire for either Sex; and ſo ſhall your Highneſs both excuſe all Obloquy, and together manifeſt the care you have to keep up thoſe antient Monuments of Devotion.

To which another, who better underſtood the Kings mind, anſwered thus:

1535.

SIR,

IF it be true, that they ſpeak enviouſly (that I may ſay nothing elſe) who would reduce all Reaſon of State to the ſober Principles and Doctrines of Faith, it is no leſs certain, that they ſpeak prophanely who wholly exclude them. In State, there is uſe of all: Only as it is a Symmetrical Body, nothing in it muſt paſs proportion. Inſomuch, as neither the Secular Magiſtrate or Clergy, on the one ſide, nor the Souldier, Merchant, Artificer and Husbandman on the other, ſhall exceed a juſt quantity. The due compoſition of it being ſuch, as there may be thoſe who may labour and fight, as well as pray for it. Elſe, who would not change our Generals and Captains to Biſhops and Deans, and our Shipping and Forts, to Chappels and Religious houſes? But what a proportion, Sir, doth the Clergy now hold, when the fourth part of the Revenues of the Kingdom is imployed that way. For Sir, when the Tenth we pay them in one kind, and the Lands they hold in another, are eſtimated, they amount to this rate or more, as I am inform'd. I ſhall not yet be haſty to ſuppreſs them. I confeſs all true which was now ſaid, And do not only admit the piety of their Inſtitution, but the uſe that may be made of ſome few, as two or three in every Shire. Neither, ſhall I ever conſent that more ſhould be ſuppreſt than were needful, and yet the money imploy'd for your Highneſs moſt urgent occaſions only. The Supernumerary part of them, and your Forreſts being by me held like Jewels of your State, which though they yield not ready coin, may ever be converted to it. I ſhould for this reaſon (when there were no other) conſerve them as much as were poſſible. But Sir, when I conſider again, how the Pope or Biſhop of *Rome* (as your Highneſs commands him to be call'd) hath threatned to joyn all Chriſtian Princes againſt your Highneſs, and that in theſe Monaſteries, he nouriſhes a Seminary of factious Perſons that oppoſe your Supremacy; and what Inſtruments they may be of ſtirring Sedition in your Highneſs Kingdom, at the ſame time that ſome foreign Power ſhould invade it, I cannot but wiſh ſome good order were given. I ſhould think fit therefore they were inſtantly Viſited, and thoſe who were unable to keep the Vows they made at their entrance, to be permitted to go to ſome more Active life, and the vices of the reſt, not only chaſtiſed, but care taken to puniſh thoſe who henceforth ſpeak or behave themſelves licentiouſly. And, ſo far forth, certainly your Highneſs will but make lawful uſe of your Supremacy. As for the ſuppreſſion of any, not I, but ſome violent and inexcuſable neceſſity muſt be the Counſellor. If your Highneſs have any other way to defend your ſelf againſt the threatned Invaſions, I ſhall never adviſe you to this; And yet that, no further than to bring your Eſtate to a juſt temper.

Our King conſidering the reaſons on both ſides, ſaid, he would cauſe the Monaſteries to be ſeverely viſited, and the enormous Crimes of

of them, (having been formerly rather ſubject to Pecuniary Mulcts, than corrected as they ought) to be exemplarily puniſhed, and a reformation given to all abuſes. Proteſting nevertheleſs, that he would ſuppreſs none, without the conſent of his Parliament, among whom, he did politickly foreſee, that ſome for Conſcience ſake, (the *Roman* Religion being now much cried down) and others for avoiding the charges of War (then menaced) would ſooner lay the burden on thoſe Monaſteries, than take it on themſelves; whereof in its due place. And now *Cromwel* the Secretary, a man ſo diſaffected to thoſe houſes, as he was thought a favourer of the Reformers, being made General Viſitor, imployed *Richar Layton*, *Thomas Leigh*, *Willium Detre*, Doctors of the Law, Doctor *John London*, Dean of *Wallingford*, with others, giving them Inſtructions in 86 Articles, for Viſiting Monaſteries every where; by which, they were to enquire into the Government, Behaviour, and Education of the perſons of both Sexes. To find out all their offences, and to this purpoſe give them incouragements to accuſe both their Governors and each other. To command them to exhibit their Mortmains, Evidences, and conveyances of their Lands; To produce their Plate and Money, and give an Inventory thereof. Together with which the King gave forth Injunctions to be obſerved, ſome tending to the eſtabliſhing of his Supremacy, ſome touching the good Government of the houſes; As that no Brother go out of the Precinct; That there be but one entrance; That no Woman frequent the Monks, nor any man the Nuns, *&c.* And ſome for Education, as, That a Divinity Lecture, be every day read and frequented. That the Abbot daily expound ſome part of the Rule of their Order, Shewing yet that theſe Ceremonies, are but Introductions to Religion, which conſiſteth not in Apparel, ſhaven Heads, *&c.* but in purity of mind. That none ſhall profeſs or wear the habit till twenty-four years of age. That no feigned Relicks nor Miracles be ſhewed. No offerings to Images, *&c.*

1535.

Records.

Upon theſe and other Injunctions, joyned to the Inquiſition aforeſaid, the Commiſſioners found means to make divers Monaſteries obnoxious, for upon the Petition of divers Monks who were weary of their Habit, ſome alledging for their excuſe, that they were profeſſed before they came to the years of diſcretion; others, that the late Injunctions were too ſtrict to be obſerved; the King ſeizing on the Houſe, commanded that they who were profeſſed under twenty-four, ſhould be ſet at liberty, as being thought too young to make a Vow as they ought, or indeed to keep it. That they who were above twenty-four, when they made their Vow, might have leave to depart if they would. At which time, the men, if in Orders, ſhould have a Prieſts Habit given them, and forty ſhillings in money; the Nuns ſhould have only a Gown, ſuch as ſecular Women ware, and liberty to go whither they would. The condition yet of ſome being better, who for ſurrendring their Houſes to

1535. the King (to which by threats and fair words they were induced) got ſmall Penſions during their lives. Others, by paying great ſums to the King and *Cromwel*, redeemed their Monaſteries from the preſent calamity; Yet ſo, as even from theſe alſo, divers Jewels and Church-Ornaments were taken away to the Kings uſe. Which being done, *Legh* and the reſt at their return, gave that accompt of their imployment, and particularly of their feigned Miracles and Relicks, as well as ſinful and ſluggiſh life of the Religious Orders, as not only *Cromwel* with much violence ſaid, their houſes ſhould be thrown down to the foundation, but the whole body of the Kingdom when it was publiſhed to them (which I find induſtriouſly procur'd) became ſo ſcandaliz'd thereat, as they reſolv'd if the King ever put it into their hands, to give remedy thereunto: yet were not all alike Criminal; For ſome Societies behav'd themſelves ſo well, as their life being not only exempt from notorious faults, but their ſpare times beſtowed in writing Books, Painting, Carving, Graving, and the like exerciſes, their Viſitors became Interceſſors for them. But of thoſe as I find not many mention'd, ſo they were involv'd at laſt in the common Fate, it being thought dangerous to uſe diſtinction, both leſt the fault of manners (which might be corrected) ſhould be taken by the people as the ſole cauſe of their diſſolution; and as it was pretended that the Revenues ſhould be imploy'd to ſome better uſes. Not long after which again, the King cauſed all Colleges, Chantries, and Hoſpitals to be Viſited, not omitting to take a particular ſurvey of all the Revenues and Dignities Eccleſiaſtical within his Kingdom, which was return'd to him in a Book, to be kept in the Exchequer.

Our King having thus omitted nothing which might prevent or fruſtrate their deſigns who were moſt able to offend him, thought it his part now, to aſſure thoſe who he thought might be of moſt uſe. Therefore he ſends *Fox*, Biſhop of *Hereford*, to the Proteſtant Princes in *Germany*, aſſembled at *Smalcald*, to exhort them to an unity in Doctrine, wherein he offered his beſt aſſiſtance by conference with their Divines, as being the only ground of eſtabliſhing either Peace at home, or correſpondence abroad; That unleſs this were done, it would be a great prejudice to them in the Council now propos'd, which yet he took to be pretended only as an Invention and Artifice of the Popes to entertain time, and in the mean while to ſow diviſion among them, as he doth now incite Chriſtian Princes againſt *England* for rejecting his Tyranny. Therefore, they were not to expect a free Council how much ſoever promiſed, yet if they deſired a Council, they ſhould attend till all Chriſtian Princes were at Peace with each other; and that it ought to be held in an indifferent place, it being impoſſible otherwiſe, but that it ſhould be partial and factious. That this being done, as he had expelled the Popes Authority out of his Dominions, ſo he would joyn with them to reſtore Gods true Worſhip. And ſo the Biſhop concluded, deſiring

Decemb. 4.

Decemb. 6. *Slied. l. 6.*

firing only ſome might be appointed to whom he might ſpeak of theſe buſineſſes privately. To which after due thanks, they anſwer'd, that really there was no difference among them, there being none who would not ſtand to the *Auguſtan* Confeſſion: That they took well his Highneſs Admonition about the Council General, now promis'd at *Mantua*. But that, (as they had anſwered *Vergerius* the Popes Legate) they did not think either that the place was fit, or that the Pope had the ſole right of calling or ordering of it, which belonged as well to the Emperor and other Princes. For the reſt, they ſaid, they would appoint ſome who might communicate privately with the Biſhop, as was required, of which we ſhall ſpeak more hereafter. 1535. Decemb. 21.

In the mean while *Ferdinand*, who more deſired to hear of Peace in the Empire, than School-Arguments, how well ſoever diſputed, confirmed the Treaty made 1532. Of which the Duke of *Saxony* (who came from him to *Smalcald*) advertis'd the Proteſtants, who (*Decemb.* 24.) Decreed, That the League betwixt them, made 1530. for mutual defence in the cauſe of Religion, now ſhortly expiring, ſhould continue ten years longer, and that they would take into their Confederation, all who received the *Auguſtan* Confeſſion. To this Diet *Guillaume de Bellay Seigneur de Langey* (imploy'd from *Francis*) came likewiſe. But his advices, though for the moſt part conformable to our Kings, were not ſo acceptable. For as *Francis* by Confederating himſelf with the *Turk* (that formidable Enemy of *Germany*) had diſoblig'd the whole Nation on the one ſide, ſo by burning divers Evangelicks in *France*, he had on the other ſide much incenſed them all againſt him; which diſpleaſure, being fomented many ways by *Ferdinand*, had intercluded almoſt all correſpondence betwixt them, till by *Monſieur de Langeys* induſtry it was revived. Who to appeaſe them alledged not only ſome Excuſatory Letters formerly ſent, but ſaid his Maſter could not make any Alliance, nor lend any aid to any Prince againſt them. Nor would burn any for holding the Tenents of the *Auguſtan* Confeſſion, unleſs they were both Authors of diſſenſion in his Kingdom, and deſpighted the Antient Ceremonies of the Church. After which in private Conference with their Divines, he declared that the King his Maſter was not averſe to moſt of their Tenents ſet down in *Melanchons Loci Communes*; and particularly that he did not hold the Popes Supremacy to be founded *Jure Divino*, but *humano*; though *Henry* VIII. (he ſaid) denied it either way. That Purgatory, being the ground of the Maſs, and all their gainful doctrine, He had required by what place in the Scripture they proved it: To which all the anſwer they made, after divers Months ſpace, was, that they would not give their Adverſaries Weapons which might afterwards be returned or retorted on themſelves. As for Monaſteries, he ſaid, that he thought it might be obtained of the Pope, that none who were not of ſome ripe age, ſhould Vow themſelves to that

Sleid. l. 9.

Sleid.

1535. that life. Or if they did, they might leave it and marry if they would. But by no means, that his Maſter would have them thrown down, or the Revenues taken away, but rather imployed towards the bringing up of Youth in Learning and Piety. And for marriage of Prieſts, he thought this the beſt expedient, that men already married, might (notwithſtanding their Wives) be admitted to execute the Prieſthood; But for others, they ſhould not marry, or if they would, they ſhould relinquiſh the Prieſthood. As for Communion under both kinds, that the King had heretofore ſpoken with *Clement* VII. at *Marſeilles*, and that he thought it might be obtain'd of this Pope, that free uſe of both might be granted according to the Conſcience of him that took it, alledging for this purpoſe from the King his Maſter, how he had heard from antient men, that about 120 years ago, it was the manner to communicate in both kinds, in the Chappels or Oratories, but not in the body or middle of the Church. Nevertheleſs, that the Kings of *France* received it ever in both kinds. Which when his ſaid Maſter urged, the Prieſts did anſwer him, that Kings were anointed, and therefore might communicate in both kinds as well as they. For the Scriptures ſpake of the Royal Prieſthood, but it was not lawful for others to do ſo. That in the common and ordinary Prayers, the K. did acknowledge that many things might be cut off, many things ſhould be wholly taken away. And that the care hereof was heretofore committed by *Clement* to the Cardinal *de la Cruz*, though not with any good ſucceſs. In concluſion, he exhorted them to ſend ſome of their chief Divines to confer with thoſe he had in *Paris*; And that he would make ſuch a choice, as if ſome that were appointed, were vehement, and eager, he would alſo joyn others that were mild and temperate perſons to treat with them, to the intent that all parts being diſcuſſed the truth might appear. In the mean while he exhorted them by no means to give ear, or agree to any Council, until they knew his mind and the Kings of *Englands*, who both were reſolv'd to do nothing but by a mutual conſent. As for thoſe who had power to call it, that his Predeceſſor *Loüis* was of opinion, that it belong'd to the Emperors and Kings, and that the King of *Navarre* was of the ſame mind, but that Pope *Julius* Proſcribing or Excommunicating them both, *Ferdinand* of *Spain* took that occaſion to conquer *Navarre*. Nevertheleſs that the King his Maſter confeſt no Council was Authentical, unleſs it were both aſſembled in ſo ſafe a place, and held in ſo free a manner as no man might ſuffer for ſpeaking his Conſcience. After all which, the ſaid *Monſieur de Langey* did ſollicite them much, to enter into a ſtrict League with the King his Maſter. But they, whether out of favour for *Ferdinand* and the Emperor, with whom they had lately made their Peace, or, that otherwiſe they were not ſufficiently ſatisfied of the *French* Kings proceedings, formerly mention'd, refuſed this. So that *Monſieur de Langey*, (though profeſſing on the preſent Popes part, that if matters were orderly carried,

ried, he would be content to comply in many things for a common good and peace) return'd without effecting any thing. And thus out of I know not what miſtaking or obſtinacy, this great overture for bringing all the differences in Religion, to a moderate and uniform accord, was interrupted and broken off; It being probable that *Francis* would have ſubſcribed to the Tenents of Religion, which himſelf propos'd, when he had found them conformable for the reſt. But as *Monſieur de Langey* told them, they might afterwards repent their neglect of ſo great an offer, ſo it prov'd true, as by the ſequence will appear. For *Francis* who would have been glad, both that the Power which the Pope uſurped over Kings were ſomething diminiſhed, and the aboveſaid Articles in Religion eſtabliſhed, finding there was now no probability of an Union, thought it ſafer to rule by his antient Maximes, than to run the trouble and hazard of a Reformation. Yet I find by an Original from *Chriſtopher Mount* a *German*, and Agent of our Kings, then in *France*, that *Monſieur de Langey* did once receive from the Proteſtants certain Articles concerning Pacification in Religion, woich he delivered the King his Maſter, which thereupon being peruſed, mitigated and changed by the *Sorbon* or *Pariſian* Divines, were again returned to the Proteſtants, who likewiſe adviſing of them, ſaid they would tolerate this change, *Modo ſpes Concordiæ hinc acceſſura ſit.* But this was before *Langey*'s Oration above-mention'd, and perchance before they knew or had taken particular notice of the *French* Kings Actions formerly delivered. I find alſo by the ſame Original, that *Mount* was commanded by our King to haſten to *Germany*, and to dehort *Melanchthon* from going to *France*, whether he was invited by that King, and to perſuade him hither. For as about this time the *German* Proteſtants deſired both friendſhip and accommodation in Religion with King *Henry* and *Francis*, into whoſe hands they put the Arbitrement of their differences, ſo both Princes ſought to make uſe of *Melanchthon*; eſpecially our King; having, as I find in the Inſtructions to *Mount*, a great opinion of his Vertue, Learning, Temperance and Gravity, and therefore deſired his preſence here, both for framing an accord with the *Germans*, and (when that ſucceeded not) for appeaſing the Differences of Religion in his Kingdom, it being thought a fit work for that pious and modeſt man, however he be branded by ſome, *tanquam De omni Religione ſecurus.* But if *Mount's* Relation of his Conference with *Monſieur de Langey* may be intirely believed, or (if you will) *Monſieur de Langey* himſelf; One of the points the ſaid Proteſtants would have agreed to, was, *Se ferre Poſſe primatum Epiſcopi Romani, ad ſervandum Doctrinæ Conſenſum in Eccleſia, modo ſecundum Dei verbum omnia judicet. Langey* himſelf confeſſing *Impoſſibile eſſe probari Primatum Epiſcopi Romani ex Dei verbo*, And that this point was ſo far acknowledged by *Clement* VII. that he ſaid he was content, *Ut Primatus hic poſitius jure deferatur*; and that the more learn'd Cardinals in *Rome* were of this Opinion.

1535.

Sept. 7.

1535. Opinion. But theſe things I leave to the credit of *Mount*, the diſcreet and diligent *Sleiden* not mentioning any ſuch moderation on either ſide, and *Mount* himſelf giving indeed no other Authority for this, but *Monſieur de Langey*'s word by way of diſcourſe, who yet when he was demanded for a ſight of the Articles and Cenſure above related, excuſed himſelf.

This year ſome Letters from *Sevil* in *Spain*, extant among our Records, advertis'd our King, that a million of Gold was brought the Emperor from *Peru*, yet that it was thought to be gotten rather out of the ſpoils of the Country than otherwiſe. No rich Mines being then found. Nevertheleſs, that the Inhabitants of *Andaluzia* flock'd thither in ſo great numbers, that the Country was almoſt left empty. Which Intelligence, though of great conſideration, was yet paſs'd over; the King being intentive wholly to the ſetling of Religion, and the right of Succeſſion, which I find he did with all induſtry procure.

It appears by our Hiſtories that this year great Braſs Ordnance, as Canon and Culverins were firſt caſt in *England*, by one *John Owen*, they having been formerly made only in other Countreys, and far from the perfection of which they are at this preſent, as may be ſeen in *Tartaglia*, and ſome other Antient Authors.

Queen *Katharine*, or (as the King commanded her to be call'd) the Princeſs Dowager, finding now no aſſiſtance but ſpiritual from the Pope, nor reparation procur'd by the Emperor but incertain and ſlow, and for the reſt grieving at the proſperity and fruitfulneſs of Queen *Anne* (now with Child again, whereof yet ſhe aborted) fell into her laſt ſickneſs at *Kimbolton* in *Huntingdonſhire*, in the fiftieth year of her age, and the three and thirtieth ſince her coming into *England*; during which time, though comforted by the King and *Euſtachio Chapuys*, Doctor of both Laws, and Ambaſſador reſident from *Charles*, ſhe fell ſo deſperately ill, as finding death now coming; She cauſed a Maid attending on her, to write to the King to this effect:

Jan. 29. 1536.

My moſt Dear Lord, King and Husband,

Polydor. Virg. *THe hour of my death now approaching, I cannot chuſe, out aut of love I bear you, adviſe you of your Souls health, which you ought to prefer before all conſiderations of the world or fleſh whatſoever. For which yet you have caſt me into many calamities, and your ſelf into many troubles. But I forgive you all; and pray God to do ſo likewiſe. For the reſt I commend unto you* Mary *our Daughter, beſeeching you to be a good Father to her, as I have heretofore deſired. I muſt intreat you alſo, to reſpect my Maids, and give them in Marriage, which is not much, they being but three; and to all my other Servants, a years pay beſides their due, leſt otherwiſe they ſhould be unprovided for: Laſtly, I make this Vow, that mine eyes deſire you above all things.*

Farewell.

Beſide

Beſides which Letter ſhe dictated another to *Euſtachius*, deſiring him to procure that the Emperor might put our King in mind of her requeſt, when otherwiſe he forgot it. 1535.

The King having received her Letter, became ſo compaſſionate, that he wept; But her death being related ſhortly after: he cauſed her Goods (which I find eſtimated to 5000 Marks) to be imploy'd toward the Funeral chiefly, and after to thoſe that deſerved recompence; and her body to be buried with due ſolemnity in the Monaſtery at *Peterborough*, which for the honour of her memory, King *Henry* reſerv'd (when all the reſt fell) and erected it to a Biſhops See. *Holinſhead.* The News whereof, not long after, being brought to the Emperor, troubled him much, as holding his Aunt in ſingular eſteem. But as he conſidered, that in her death all cauſes of Hoſtility were ceaſed, and that beſides, it concern'd him more to defend himſelf againſt the *Turk*, than to purſue the Execution of the Popes Ban (though once undertaken by him) he endeavour'd nothing more than to cloſe handſomly with our King. Nevertheleſs, as he was diſcreet and magnanimous, he would not fully diſcover himſelf till he had ſounded firſt our Kings diſpoſition. After which (as I find mention'd in the Inſtruction of our King to Doctor *Richard Pace*) *Charles* (by his Reſident Ambaſſador here) propos'd a Renovation of the antient Amity, upon theſe Conditions. Firſt, that our King would be reconciled to the Pope, wherein he offered his mediation. Secondly, that our King would aid him againſt the *Turk*. Thirdly, That (according to the Treaty 1518.) he would help him againſt the *French*, who now threatned *Milan*. To which our King anſwered; That the firſt breach of amity proceeded from the Emperor, which if he will acknowledge, and excuſe, King *Henry* is contented to renew it, ſimply and abſolutely; as for the Conditions propoſed: Firſt, touching the Biſhop of *Rome*, the proceedings againſt him have been ſo juſt, and ſo ratified by the Parliament of *England*, that it cannot be revok'd. Therefore, though the Biſhop himſelf hath made means to him for Reconciliation, yet it hath been refuſed. Secondly, for aid againſt the *Turk*, when Chriſtian Princes ſhall be at Peace, then King *Henry* will do therein as to a Chriſtian Prince belongeth. Thirdly, for aid againſt *France*, he cannot reſolve on that, till the Amity be renewed with the Emperor, that ſo being indifferent friend to both, he may freely travail, either to keep Peace between them, or aid the injur'd party. And theſe anſwers of the Kings, *Pace* was to ſignifie to the Emperor then at *Rome*, and to urge him to renew the Amity without any ſuch Conditions; But, as the Emperor hearkned not thereunto, ſo King *Henry*, thinking of nothing leſs than embracing his friendſhip on thoſe terms, imployed his care chiefly how to defend his Kingdom againſt the threatned Invaſions. And therefore as he had often experimented the Love and Obedience of his Subjects, ſo in his important occaſions at this time, he reſolved to make uſe of them, commanding thereupon, the

1535. Jan. 8.

Records.

April.

1535. Feb. 4. *Reg.* 27. Parliament, which had been Prorogued, to ſit the fourth of *February*. In which many Acts paſs'd, the moſt material whereof I have ſet down briefly, not always according to the order obſerved in the Statute-book, but rather according to the matters handled, remitting the Reader for the reſt to the Statutes themſelves. My intention being not to make an abſtract of them otherwiſe than may ſerve for the illuſtration of the times, and my Hiſtory.

Whereas the trial and puniſhment of Pirats was heretofore according to the forms of the Civil Law, It was now ordered, That it ſhould be determined by the Kings Commiſſion, in like form as offences done upon Land, no benefit of Clergy yet being permitted to thoſe who were convicted: Nevertheleſs, diſtinction to be made between Pirates, and thoſe who took ſomething at Sea out of neceſſity: As is to be ſeen in the Statute more largely.

Order alſo was taken upon penalty, That all they who had Parks, ſhould keep two or more Mares, according to the greatneſs of the Parks, of thirteen handfuls high, for breed of ſtrong Horſes; and that the Stallions ſhould be fourteen handfuls high at leaſt: and this was much to the increaſe of good Horſes.

The Courſe of ſuing forth Gifts and Grants made under the Kings Signet Manual, and the Clerks of the Signets Fees alſo was ſet down.

Alſo becauſe many men by Will made Feoffments of their Lands to ſecret uſes, whereby the King and the Lords loſt their Wards, *&c.* It was ordered, That the poſſeſſion of Lands ſhall be adjudged to be in him that hath the uſe thereof.

Order alſo was taken, That no Land ſhould paſs by bargain and ſale, unleſs it be by Writing indented, ſealed and inrolled. And this prevented many miſtakes, and took away much deceit.

And now becauſe ſome Statutes following give me occaſion to ſpeak of *Wales*, it will not be diſpleaſing to the Reader (I hope) to ſet down thoſe reaſons, which I conceive were the true motives of them.

Reg. 27. *Wales* and the Marches thereof now having been for a long time ſo diſtinguiſhed, as the Maritime parts thereof were held by the remnant of the antient *Britains*, or Natives of this Iſland, the other by thoſe who had got ground upon them, much diverſity of Government was uſed. For as the Kings of *England* heretofore had many times brought Armies to conquer that Countrey, defended both by Mountains and a ſtout People, without yet reducing them to a final and intire obedience; ſo they reſolved at laſt to give all that could be gained there to thoſe who would attempt it. Whereupon many valiant and able Nobles and Gentlemen won much Land from the *Welſh*: which, as gotten by force, was by permiſſion of the Kings then Reigning, held for divers Ages in that abſolute manner, as *Jura Regalia* were exerciſed in them by the Conquerors. Yet, in thoſe parts which were gotten at the Kings only charge, (being not a few) a more

more regular Law was obſerved. Howſoever, the general Government was not only ſevere, but various in many parts: Inſomuch, that in about ſome 141 Lordſhips Marchers which were now gotten, many ſtrange and diſcrepant Cuſtoms were practiſed (as will appear hereafter.) Howbeit, in the greater part, which was the Kings, and particularly thoſe in the Eaſt, Weſt, and North-*Wales*, being about this time adminiſtred by my great Grand-father Sir *Richard Herbert* (Son of Sir *Richard Herbert*, renowned for that alone he paſſed and returned twice through an hoſtile Army at the Battel in *Banbury*-Field, 8 *Edw.* IV.) ſuch Juſtice was uſed, as I find him in our Records highly commended to the Kings Council by *Rowland Lee*, now Preſident of *Wales*. So that they were governed in general according to the Laws of *England*; the Lords Marchers (who conquered at their own coſt) ruling yet by their own Laws and Cuſtoms, and ſubſtituting Officers at their pleaſure, who again committed ſuch rapines, as nothing almoſt was ſafe or quiet in thoſe parts: whereupon this Statute was made. 15[illegible]. Hall } 8. E. 4. Graft }

Whereas manifold Robberies, Murders, and other Male-facts be daily practiſed and committed in the County-Palatine of *Cheſter* and *Flintſhire* in *Wales*, and alſo in *Angleſea*, *Caernarvan*, *Merioneth*, *Cardigan*, *Carmarthen*, *Pembroke* and *Glamorgan*, becauſe Juſtice is not miniſtred there in ſuch form as in other places of this Realm. For remedy whereof, it is enacted, That the Lord Chancellor of *England*, or Keeper of the Great Seal ſhall nominate and appoint Juſtices of Peace, Juſtices of the *Quorum*, and Juſtices of the Goal-delivery in the ſaid Counties, and that they ſhall have like Power and Authority as thoſe in *England*, &c. And by this means one kind of Juſtice was eſtabliſhed in the ſaid County-Palatine of *Cheſter*, and the Shires aforeſaid: So that offenders now were kept in awe, being not able, as before, to eſcape and fly from one Lordſhip Marcher to another. Another Act alſo was made to this purpoſe.

Whereas in *Wales* and the Marches, there were divers and many Forreſts belonging either to the King or the Lords Marchers, wherein ſundry actions had been uſed a long time, contrary to the Law of God and Man; Inſomuch, that if any entered the ſaid Forreſts without a Token given (by ſome of the Forreſters or Walkers of it) to let him paſs, or unleſs he were a yearly Tributer or Chenſer, he was forced to pay a grievous Fine; but if he were found 24 foot out of the High-way, then to forfeit all the gold or money about him, and a joynt of one of his hands, unleſs he fined for it at the diſcretion of the Forreſter, or Farmer of the ſame. And whereas likewiſe, if any Cattel ſtrayed into the ſaid Forreſts, it was the cuſtom of the Forreſters to mark him for their own with the mark of the Forreſt; Order was now given, that people ſhould be ſuffered to paſs freely, as in other places, and eſtrayed Cattel within a year and a day to be reſtored again, the owners paying for the herbage. Regn. 27. Cap. 7.

1535. 36. Regn. 27. Cap. 24.

That whereas by the gifts of Kings of *England*, heretofore, divers of the moſt anient Prerogatives and Authorities of juſtice appertaining to the Imperial Crown of this Realm, have been ſever'd and taken from the ſame, it was now enacted that no perſon from the firſt of *July*, 1536. ſhould have power and authority to pardon or remit, Treaſons, Murthers, Man-ſlaughters, or any Felonies, or their acceſſaries in any part of *England*, *Wales*, or the Marches of the ſame. That likewiſe none ſhould make Juſtices of Oyer, Juſtices of Aſſize, Juſtices of Peace, or Juſtices of Goal-delivery, but they ſhould be made by the Kings Letters Patents: And that all original Writs, and judicial Writs, and all manner of Indictments of Treaſon, Felony, and Treſpaſs, and all manner of Proceſs ſhould be made in the Kings Name; and things done againſt the Kings Peace, ſhould be ſuppoſed as done againſt the Kings Peace, and not againſt the peace of any other perſon. Notwithſtanding which, divers Priviledges were permitted, as is to be ſeen in the Statutes. By all which, as the vaſt power inveſted antiently in thoſe who had Counties Palatine, and *Jura Regalia* in Lordſhips Marchers may appear; ſo we may obſerve how the reſtoring of them to the Crown, hath eſtabliſhed an uniform juſtice, and taken away the occaſions of many miſchiefs done within the Juriſdictions and Precincts of the ſaid Counties Palatine, and Lordſhips Marchers, as is before recited; which though a great benefit and eaſe to the *Weſh*, yet as they were under many conſtraints, they hoped his Highneſs would further extend his goodneſs to them: And thus ſome (as in their name) ſpake to this effect;

May it pleaſe your Highneſs,

WE, on the part of your Highneſs Subjects, inhabiting that portion of the Iſland which our Invaders firſt called *Wales*, moſt humbly proſtrate at your Highneſs feet, do crave to be received and adopted into the ſame Laws, and Priviledges which your other Subjects enjoy: Neither ſhall it hinder us (we hope) that we have lived ſo long under our own. For as they were both enacted by authority of our antient Law-givers, and obeyed for many ſucceſſions of Ages we truſt your Highneſs will pardon us, if we thought it neither eaſie nor ſafe ſo ſuddenly to relinquiſh them. We ſhall not preſume yet to compare them with theſe now uſed, and leſs ſhall we conteſt how good and equal in themſelves they are. Only if the defence of them and our liberty againſt the *Romans*, *Saxons*, and *Danes*, for ſo many hundred years, and laſtly, againſt the *Normans*, as long as they pretended no Title but the Sword, was thought juſt and honourable; we preſume it will not be infamous now; And that all the marks of rebellion and falſhood, which our revilers would faſten on us, will fall on any, ſooner than thoſe who fought for ſo many years, and with ſo different Nations for our juſt defence: Which alſo is ſo true, that our beſt Hiſtories affirm the Chriſtian Religion to have been preſerved

ſerved only by us for many years, that the *Saxons* (being Heathen) either attempted or poſſeſſed this Countrey. May your Highneſs then graciouſly interpret our actions, while we did but that duty which your Highneſs would have now done by all your Subjects on like occaſion; For when any ſhould invade this Countrey henceforth, we know your Highneſs would have us to behave our ſelves no otherwiſe. Beſides, had not the Aſſailers found ſome to reſiſt, they might have deſpiſed a Countrey, that brought none forth able enough to aſſert it: So that we crave pardon, Sir, if we ſay it was fit for the honour of your Dominions that ſome part of it ſhould never be conquered. We then in the Name of whatſoever in your Highneſs poſſeſſion hath in any age held out againſt all Invaders, do here voluntarily reſign, and humble our ſelves to that Sovereignty, which we acknowledge ſo well inveſted in your Highneſs. Nor is this the firſt time; we have always attended an occaſion to unite our ſelves to the greater and better parts of the Iſland. 15$\frac{1}{16}$. Regn. 27.

But as the Kings of this Realm weary of their attempts in perſon againſt us, did formerly give not only our Country to thoſe who could conquer it, but permitted them *Jura Regalia*, within their ſeveral Precincts; ſo it was impoſſible to come to an agreement, while ſo many that undertook this work, uſurped Martial and abſolute power and juriſdiction in all they acquired, without eſtabliſhing any equal juſtice. And that all Offenders, for the reſt, flying from one Lordſhip Marcher (for ſo they were termed) to another, did both avoid the puniſhment of the Law, and eaſily commit thoſe robberies, which have formerly tainted the honour of our parts. So that until the rigorous Laws not only of the ſeveral Conquerors of *England*, but the attempters on our parts, were brought to an equal moderation, no union, how much ſoever affected by us, could enſue.

Therefore, and not ſooner, we ſubmitted our ſelves to *Edward* the Firſt, a Prince who made both many and equaller Laws than any before him. Therefore we defended his Son *Edward* the Second, when not only the *Engliſh* forſook him, but our ſelves might have recovered our former liberty, had we deſired it. Therefore we got Victories for *Edward* the Third, and ſtood firm during all the diſſentions of this Realm to his Grand-child and ſucceſſor *Richard* the Second. Only if ſome amongſt us reſiſted *Henry* the Fourth, your Highneſs may better ſuppoſe the reaſon than we tell it, though divers Foreigners openly refuſing to treat with him as a Sovereign and lawful Prince, have ſufficiently publiſhed it. We did not yet decline a due obedience to *Henry* the Fifth, though in doubtful times, we cannot deny, but many refractory perſons have appear'd. Howſoever, we never joyned our ſelves with the *Engliſh* Rebels, or took occaſion thereby to recover our Liberty, though in *Richard* the Second's time, and during all the Civil Wars betwixt *Lancaſter* and *York*, much occaſion was given. For adhearing to the Houſe of *York*, which we conceived the better Title, we conſerved our devotion

1536. Regn. 27.

votion ſtill to the Crown, until your Highneſs Fathers time, who (bearing his name and blood from us) was the more chearfully aſſiſted by our Predeceſſors in his Title to the Crown, which your Highneſs doth preſently enjoy. And thus, Sir, if we gave antiently proof of a generous courage in defending our Laws and Countrey, we have given no leſs proof of a loyal fidelity ſince we firſt rendered our ſelves. Inſomuch, that we may truly affirm, That after our acceptance of the condition given us by *Edward* the Firſt, we have omitted no occaſion of performing the duty of loving Subjects. Neither is there any thing that comforts us more than that all thoſe Controverſies about Succeſſion (which ſo long waſted this Land) are determined in your Highneſs Perſon; in whom we acknowledge both Houſes to be happily united. To your Highneſs therefore we offer all obedience, deſiring only that we may be defended againſt the inſulting of our malignant Cenſurers: For we are not the offſpring of the *Run-away Britains* (as they term us;) but Natives of a Countrey, which, beſides defending it ſelf, received all thoſe who came to us for ſuccours. Give us then (Sir) permiſſion to ſay, That they wrong us much, who pretend our Countrey was not inhabited before then, or that it failed in a due Piety, when it was ſo hoſpital to all that fled thither for refuge: which alſo will be more credible, when it ſhall be remembred, that even our higheſt Mountains furniſh good Beef and Mutton, not only to all the Inhabitants, but ſupply *England* in great quantity. We humbly beſeech your Highneſs therefore, That this Note may be taken from us. As for our Language, though it ſeem harſh, it is that yet which was ſpoken antiently, not only in this Iſland, but in *France*: ſome Dialects whereof therefore remain ſtill amongſt the *Bas Bretons* there, and here in *Cornwal*. Neither will any man doubt it, when he ſhall find thoſe words of the antient *Gauliſh* Language repeated by the *Latine* Authors, to ſignifie the ſame thing amongſt us at this day: Nor ſhall it be a diſparagement (we hope) that it is ſpoken ſo much in the throat, ſince the *Florentine* and *Spaniard* affect this kind of pronunciation, as believing words that ſound ſo deep, proceed from the heart. So that if we have retained this Language longer than the more Northern Inhabitants of this Iſland (whoſe Speech appears manifeſtly to be a kind of *Engliſh*, and conſequently introduced by the *Saxons*) we hope it will be no imputation to us; your Highneſs will have but the more Tongues to ſerve you: It ſhall not hinder us to ſtudy *Engliſh*, when it were but to learn how we might the better ſerve and obey your Highneſs: To whoſe Laws we moſt humbly deſire again to be adopted, and doubt not, but if in all Countreys the Mountains have afforded as eminent Wits and Spirits as any other part, ours alſo by your Highneſs good favour and imployment may receive that eſteem.

The King now conſidering that it was but reaſonable to unite this part of the Kingdom to the reſt, and that their Loyalty beſides had deſerved

deſerved as much as they were Suters for, cauſed an Act to be paſt for executing juſtice in *Wales*, in manner as is in *England*, and reduced the Lordſhip Marchers to Shire-ground. The Statute is to this effect: 15 25 36.

That albeit the Dominion, Principality and Countrey of *Wales* be a member and part of the Temporal Crown of this Realm, whereof therefore the King is Head and Ruler; yet as it hath divers Rights, Uſages, Laws and Cuſtoms diſcrepant from the Laws and Cuſtoms of this Realm, and becauſe their Language is different from that which is ſpoken here, and that many rude people hereupon have made diſtinction and diverſity betwixt his Highneſs other Subjects, and them, to the cauſing of much diſcord and ſedition; His Highneſs therefore, out of his love and favour to his Subjects in *Wales*, and for reducing them to his Laws, doth by the advice and conſent of his Parliament ordain and enact, That *Wales* ſhould be unite and incorporate henceforth to and with his Realm of *England*; and that his Subjects ſhould enjoy and inherit all ſingular Freedoms, Liberties, Rights, Priviledges and Laws which his Highneſs Subjects elſewhere injoy and inherit. And therefore that Inheritances ſhould deſcend after the manner of *England*, without diviſion or partition, and not after any Tenure or form of *Welſh* Laws or Cuſtoms. And foraſmuch as there are divers Lordſhips Marchers within the ſaid Countrey or Dominion in *Wales*, being no parcel of any other Shires where the Laws and due correction is uſed and had, and that in them and the Countries adjoyning manifold Murders, Robberies, Felonies, and the like, have been done, contrary to all Law and Juſtice, becauſe the offenders, making their refuge from one Lordſhip Marcher to another, were continued without puniſhment and correction: Therefore it was enacted that the ſaid Lordſhips Marchers ſhould be united, annexed and joyned to divers Shires ſpecified in the ſaid Act. *Chap.* 26.

Whereupon 24 Lordſhips Marchers were united to *Monmouthſhire*, and the Laws of *England* enjoyned in them: 16 to *Brecknockſhire*; 16 to *Radnorſhire*, eleven to *Montgomeryſhire*; and ten to *Denbighſhire*; ſeven to *Shropſhire*, which were reduced again to certain hundreds as *Doun* to *Cherbury*, &c. ten to *Herefordſhire*, and they likewiſe reduced to hundreds three; and all the Lordſhips, *&c.* betwixt *Chepſtowbridge* and *Gloceſterſhire*, to *Gloceſterſhire*; and they again reduced to one hundred; ſeventeen to *Glamorganſhire*; eight to *Carmarthenſhire*; thirteen to *Pembrokeſhire*; four to *Cardiganſhire*; one to *Merionethſhire*: By which it appears how much of *Wales* is continued intire, and how much was gotten by the Lords Marchers. After this again, many Priviledges were given to the Lords Marchers, in regard of the ſervice their Anceſtors rendred the Crown heretofore, in conquering thoſe parts at their own coſt, concerning which Hiſtories, Records, *&c.* may be ſeen, to which I refer my ſelf. *Clun.*

Alſo

$15\frac{1}{3}\frac{5}{6}$. Reign. 27.

Alſo power was given to the King to alter any thing in this Act, within the ſpace of three years next enſuing, whereof we ſhall ſpeak again 34 *Hen.* viii. *c.* 26. More alſo is extant hereof 1 *Edw.* vi. 10. and 21 *Jacobi* 10. where through that Kings goodneſs all power for altering the Laws in *Wales* is repealed.

I will now come to certain Acts of Parliament concerning Eccleſiaſtical matters, of which kind there are four chiefly:

1534. The firſt, having relation to one formerly recited out of 26 *Henry* viii. whereby the Firſt-fruits and Tenths were given for more augmentation of maintenance of the Kings Royal Dignity, of the Supream Head of the Church of *England*, doth now declare, That no Tenth ſhall be exacted that year wherein Firſt-fruits are paid.

Secondly, whereas 25 *Henry* viii. it was enacted, That the Clergy in their Convocations ſhall make no Conſtitutions without the Kings aſſent, as alſo that the King ſhould have authority to nominate 16 Spiritual, and 16 Temporal perſons to examine the Canons and Conſtitutions aforeſaid, the ſaid Acts were now confirmed.

Thirdly, Order was given about Sanctuary-men, that they ſhould wear Badges to be known by, and no weapons; That they ſhould not go abroad but at due hours, and not reſiſt their Governours, *&c.*

Fourthly, A Court of augmentation was erected, whereby order was taken concerning the Religious houſes that were ſurrendred or ſuppreſſed; and how the Kings Revenue ſhould be increaſed thereby, and Officers for this purpoſe appointed.

Parl. Rolls. 27 *Hen.* 8. Theſe marks of the Kings Sovereignty being thus premiſed, I ſhall come to the Act of Suppreſſion of Religious Houſes under 200 *l.* yearly. Which though lamented by many, and no ways ſo excuſed, that I know, as by the Kings neceſſities, had yet thoſe motives. The vitious and incorrigible life of *Monaſtical* Perſons, confeſſed, by the whole Parliament: The Lands not imployed according to the intent of the Donors and Founders; divers Superſtitions and forgings of Miracles practiſed amongſt them: That when thoſe under 200 *l.* yearly were taken away, there remained yet many great and Religious Houſes: That they were the Seminary of thoſe that oppos'd the Regal Authority in Eccleſiſtical matters; to which ſome have thought the reaſon formerly touched might be added, that the Parliament was willing to lay the burthen of furniſhing the Kings neceſſities from themſelves. And the rather, that the King promis'd to imploy ſome of the Revenues to other Religious uſes: As founding of Biſhopricks, Deaneries, and Chapters, and the like. Which indeed followed, though not mentioned in the *Statute*. Howſoever, the *Statute* without any formal Preamble in the publiſhed Book, begins bluntly thus: His Majeſty ſhall have and enjoy to Him and his Heirs for ever, all *Monaſteries*, *Priories*, and other Religious Houſes of *Monks*, *Canons*, and *Nuns* of what Habit, Order, or Rule ſoever, which have not in Lands and Revenue above the clear yearly value of 200 *l.* as alſo all ſuch Religious Houſes which at any time within one

one years ſpace preceding, have been given up and granted by any *Abbot*, *Prior*, *Abbeſs*, or *Prioreſs* under their Covent Seal; (reſerving yet all Right to others by Leaſe and otherwiſe, and particularly the Right of the Heirs and Succeſſors of the Founders, Patrons, or Donors to any Poſſeſſion, Rent, Fee, or Office, according to the true intention:) As alſo all Ornaments, Jewels, Goods, Chattels, and Debts, belonging to the ſaid Religious Houſes: Nevertheleſs, that Hoſpitality and Husbandry ſhould be kept by the Farmers of the ſaid Religious Houſes, and the Lands belonging to them; upon the penalty of paying every moneth ſix pound thirteen ſhillings and four pence. The King alſo (as I find in the Parliament Rolls) allowed the Governors of theſe Houſes Penſions during their lives, and tranſlated ſome of the Religious Perſons into other greater Foundations. 1536. Reign. 27.

And thus were the leſſer *Monaſteries* diſſolv'd, with care yet that Hoſpitality ſhould be preſerved; for which reaſon alſo our King did paſs them away at ſuch eaſie rates. Nevertheleſs, as the Penalty being not ordinarily required, due Hoſpitality was for the moſt part neglected: ſo the forfeitures being great, were at the Supplication of the Parliament, 21 *Jacobi*, wholly aboliſhed, at length, by the indulgence of that King. Notwithſtanding, it is probable, that not on this occaſion only, the *Abbey*-lands were ſcattered and diſtributed into ſo many hands, ſince *Cromwel* forgot not to tell his King, that the more had intereſt in them, the more they would be irrevocable. But whatſoever the reaſons were, it is certain, that uſe was not made of them which might have been, while the Revenue of the Crown was ſo little improv'd thereby. Since it is clear, that if the profits of thoſe which were diſſolv'd, had been imployed for a ſetled entertaining and payment of a Royal Army at Land, and a great Fleet at Sea, (which as they were the third or fourth part of the Revenues of the Land, might have been eaſily done) our King without having recourſe to any other means, might (beſides ſecuring his Realm) have given the Law in great part to all his Neighbours. And now of theſe antient Monuments of devotion, 396 being diſſolved, a Revenue of about Thirty or Thirty-two thouſand pound yearly, fell into the Kings hand, beſides Goods and Chattels; which at low Rates were valued at one hundred thouſand pound. The people (eſpecially they that got nothing thereby) in the mean while being grieved to ſee the Monks and Nuns wandring abroad, and the Churches and Chappels perverted to ſecular and prophane uſes; ſo that they began to murmur; which being again fomented by ſome Religious Perſons turned to Rebellion, as ſhall be told hereafter. The reſpect alſo given to the Relicks there, and ſome pretended Miracles fell; Inſomuch as I find by our Records that a piece of St, *Andrews* finger, (cover'd only with an ounce of Silver) being laid to pledge by a Monaſtery for Forty pound, was left unredeem'd at the Diſſolution of the ſaid Houſe; the Kings Com- *Stow.*

1535. Regn. 27.

missioners (who upon surrender of any Foundation, undertook to pay the debts thereof) refusing to return the price again.

This fall of Abbeys yet did but set forwards the Kings Designs with the Confederate Princes and Towns in *Germany*; who understanding hereof, and believing now the King would wholly renounce all Papistry, and knowing besides that Queen *Anne* was disaffected to their Adverse Party, as her greatest Enemies, thought fit to make our Kings Orators (yet at *Smalcald*) these Propositions, as our Records shew.

Decemb. 25. 1535.

I. That he should approve and imbrace the *Augustan* Confession, unless some things shall be altered therein by common consent according to the Scripture.

II. And Secondly in a free Council, if any be, shall defend it with them.

III. That neither part should admit any Summons for a Council, or agree upon a place for the sitting of it without the others Consent; yet that if such a Council were offered as *Vergerius* the *Popes* Legate now proposed, that is to say, free and pious, that it should not be refused.

IV. That if the Pope proceeded otherwise, that they should oppose and protest publickly against him.

V. That the King should joyn himself, as to their Doctrine, so to their League; and thereupon accept the Title of Patron and Defender of it.

VI. That the vulgar opinion *de Primatu Pontificis* should be rejected for ever.

VII. That if either of the Contrahents be Invaded for Religion, the other shall give no Aid against him.

VIII. That the King shall pay 100000 Crowns towards the defence of the League, and if the War be long, 200000 Crowns, upon Condition, that what was remaining should be restored when the War was ended.

IX. That when the King hath declared his mind herein, they will send an Ambassage of Learned men to him.

Records.

These Propositions being Communicated by *Cromwell* to the Bishop of *Winchester* then in *France*; the Bishop returned this advice: That if the first Article were accorded, the King shall do nothing without their consent, though otherwise he be bound in Conscience to reform his Church. To the rest, that he conceives no good nor honourable League can be made with those Inferior Princes for Religion without the Emperor, whom the King must allow to be Supream Head of *Germany*, as his Majesty is of *England*. Again, that they could give King *Henry* no Reciproke, as lying at that distance: Finally, he admonished, that they be moved to approve the Kings Title, since he had understood in *France*, that they would not agree thereto, least they should thereby grant the Emperor the same Authority over their Persons. In sequence whereof, on the twelfth

of

of *March* following (1536.) the Biſhop of *Hereford*, and the other Orators now at *Wittemberg* returned the Proteſtants this anſwer: That the King their Sovereign liked their Propoſitions with ſome corrections; and that though all were quiet here, and no cauſe why he ſhould fear any Attempts, or when they were, that it was taken away by the death of the late Queen; yet for reſtoring as well as retaining the true Doctrine, he was content to diſburſe the ſum required, if once the League were made: Whereof therefore he would Treat at large with their Commiſſioners, whom they promis'd to ſend: as for the Honour they did him, in conſtituting him Patron and Defender of the League, that he render'd them due thanks, and acknowledg'd their good will. And though he underſtood well, to how much envy this Charge was expos'd, yet that for the publick good he would not refuſe it, when they could agree among themſelves concerning the Firſt and Second Article. For unleſs there were an Union and conſent in Doctrine, that he ſhould get no Honour by undertaking it. Therefore that he deſir'd their learned men and his ſhould concur; for until ſome places of their confeſſion and Apology were mollified by private Conference, that there was ſmall hope of an Agreement. Therefore, that he deſired much that they would ſend ſome Commiſſioners for this purpoſe, and among them, ſome one eminent for his learning, who might confer with his Divines of the Doctrine and Eſſential part of Religion, as well as Ceremonies of the Church. That ſince he was ſo liberal to them, he hoped they would not refuſe, if any made War againſt him, to furniſh for four Months, 500 Foot, or 10 Ships equipped at their coſt; and at his coſt 2000 Horſe, and 5000 Foot, or in lieu of theſe Foot 12 Ships equipped; which the King ſhall keep and maintain as long as his occaſions require. Laſtly, that they ſhould approve the Sentence given by the Divines of *Wittenberg* in favour of his Divorce, and ſecond Marriage, and if any Council General were holden, ſhould there defend it.

1535. *Reign.* 27. March 12. *Sleid.*

To all which the Duke of *Saxony* replying, that he would adviſe hereof with the other Confederates, this Anſwer finally at a meeting at *Francfort* on the 24 of *April*, 1536. was return'd, That although divers were entred newly into the League, and divers who were at a diſtance from home, had no Commiſſion for giving any definitive ſentence: Notwithſtanding, that in this meeting it ſhould be reſolv'd concerning an Ambaſſador to be ſent his Highneſs, and they who could not reſolve for the preſent, ſhould declare themſelves within the ſpace of one month. And that there was no queſtion but they would conform themſelves to the opinion of the major part. Whereupon Inſtructions were given for certain Orators to be ſent to *England*; in which yet it was (ſaith *Sleidan*) eſpecially provided, that nothing ſhould be treated of to the prejudice of the Emperor or Empire. And thus in the name of the Confederate Cities, *Jacobus Sturmius* was appointed; the Divines being *Melanthon*, *Bucerus*, and

April 24.

1536. Reg. 27. Sleidan.

and *Georgius Draco*. But as ſhortly after the death of Queen *Anne* followed; ſo all their proceeding (as *Sleidan* notes) was ſtopt, until upon occaſion given, it was revived. As for the approbation of the Divorce propoſed to the *German* Divines, *Luther*, *Jonas*, *Philip*, and others, the King was judiciouſly adviſed by his Agents from thence, not to require any thing of them which would be too hard to grant; The King having attained his principal intent concerning the Council and Pope, and the Princes being then in ſuch terms with the Emperor and *Ferdinand*, as they deſired not to offend them without an urgent neceſſity.

James King of *Scotland*, having the year before been inſtalled of the *Garter*, and in ſequence thereof inſtructed with the cauſes of thoſe changes which had followed in Religious Government, did not yet altogether incline to our King. For as he had an eye to the troubles that might enſue in *England* concerning Succeſſion, as long as the Iſſue of both Queens ſurvived; ſo he deſired to ſtrengthen himſelf by the advice and aſſiſtance of *Francis*: yet being deſirous withal to conſerve our Kings affection; and knowing alſo his deſigns on that part could not be long concealed, he thought fit to advertiſe our King thereof; diſcovering himſelf no farther yet, than that he intended to Match in that Countrey: who alſo approving this, rather than that he ſhould beſtow himſelf in the Emperors Family (which he ſtill ſuſpected) gave his conſent thereunto, as I find by our Records; yet ſo as he deſired the Match might be betwixt him and the Daughter of the Duke of *Vendoſme*, rather than of *Francis*; upon condition ſtill that the Enterview might precede. But King *James*, who had no diſpoſition thereunto (though I find in our Records, the Queen his Mother once perſuaded him,) reſolves to go ſecretly and in diſguiſed habit to *France*.

July 26. Whereupon alſo, commanding ſome Ships to be made ready, he ſet ſail from *Lieth*, not acquainting any yet with his journey; ſo that divers thought he purpoſed to Land in ſome part of our Kings Dominions. But contrary winds ariſing, he being demanded what courſe his Pilots ſhould hold, anſwer'd, to any place but *England*; wherewith falling aſleep, he was ere he wakened, by the advice of one of the *Hamiltons* (as *Buchanan* hath it) carried back. But at laſt, opening his eyes, and finding himſelf at home, he was much offended with the Author of this counſel, and the rather, that he was thought ſecretly to oppoſe the match: So that he commanded

Auguſt 31. to ſet Sail again. Coming thus at length to the Duke of *Vendoſm*'s, and his Daughter not pleaſing him (or rather, the Daughter of *Francis* liking him better) he arrives at *Paris*, and poſting thence to the *Lionnois*, where *Francis* was raiſing an Army againſt the Emperor (as ſhall be told hereafter) he obtained the conſent of *Francis* (though not without ſome reluctancy on his part, and wholly againſt our Kings will) for his Daughter *Magdalen*, whom he married *Jan.* 1. 1537. The news whereof being brought to our King, troubled

bled him ſo much, that he writ to *Francis*, (whom he perfectly loved at that time) That his late Enterview with the Pope, and Alliance with the *Scottiſh* King vexed him no leſs than it would do a perfect Lover, *De voir ſa Dame entretenir ſon mortel Enemi*: whereof more at large in its due place. But as *Francis* excuſe (alledging it was better he match'd there than with his Adverſaries) did in ſome part ſatisfie our King; ſo the new Married Lady falling to a Hectick Fever, and dying the year following, they both ſoon return'd to ſome part of their former correſpondence. 1536. Regn. 27. July 7. 1537.

Our King now, thought by ſome to be various in his appetite of Wives, by others to be only unfortunate in them, had, or found, occaſion to cut off Queen *Anne*; I ſhall not yet determine whether Princes ſecret actions be beyond any ſcrutiny. I will only lay down the particulars, as far as by Records, or otherwiſe I could gather them, remitting the reſt to the equal Reader.

Queen *Anne* being now without Competitrix for her Title, thought her ſelf ſecure. But Proſperity is a dangerous eſtate to thoſe that uſe it not reverently. Again, Beauty is not always the beſt keeper of it ſelf. It may be doubted yet whether either of thoſe did concern her; ſince ſhe was thought both moderate in her deſires, & of diſcretion enough to make her capable of being truſted with her own perfections, as having lived in the *French* Court firſt, and after in this, with the reputation of a vertuous Lady; inſomuch that the whiſperings of her Enemis could not divert the Kings good Opinion of her, though yet he was in his own nature more jealous than to be ſatisfied eaſily. I do reject all thoſe, therefore, that would ſpeak againſt her Honour in thoſe times they ſtaid in *France*; but I ſhall as little accuſe her in this particular of her affairs at this time; it is enough, that the Law hath Condemned her; and that whether She, or any elſe were in fault, is not now to be diſcuſſed. This is certain, that the King had caſt his Affection already on *Jane Seymor*, (daughter to Sir *John Seymor* Knight) then attending on the Queen. But whether this alone were enough to procure that Tragedy which followed, may be doubted in this Prince; for I do not find him bloody, but where Law, or at leaſt pretexts drawn from thence, did countenance his Actions. But ſuſpition in great and obnoxious minds, is other than in the Mild and Temperate; and therefore is to them like a Tempeſt, which though it ſcarce ſtir low and ſhallow waters, when it meets a Sea, both vexeth it, and makes it toſs all that comes thereon. So that I dare ſay nothing hath been Author of ſo much confuſion; ſince aggravating ſometimes that which is ill, ſometimes miſinterpreting that which is good, it perverts all, and finally leaves the mind without Remedy; how far yet ſuſpition wrought on our King, is not for me to define. Cap. 24.

To come then to the Narration, I find by our Authors, that on *May-day* there being a ſolemn Juſts at *Greenwich* (wherein *George Viſcount Rochford* the Queens Brother was chief Challenger, and *Henry* May 1. *Stow.*

1536. Regn. 27.

Henry Norreis Principal Defendant) the King ſuddenly departed. This much troubled the whole Company, eſpecially the Queen. No cauſe hereof is related yet, unleſs (as *Sanders* hath it) ſhe let fall a Hankerchief, wherewith ſome one (ſuppoſed her Favorite) did wipe his Face, and that this was perceived by the King. But our Hiſtories mention not this paſſage. The Queen finding the King thus gone, retires her ſelf. He again haſting to *Weſtminſter*, takes order to Commit the next morning *George* Lord *Rochford*, and *Henry Norreis* to the Tower: After which, her ſelf coming to *London* in her Barge, was apprehended by ſome of the Lords, and carried towards the *Tower*, who telling her offence, ſhe exclaimed that ſhe was wronged, and that ſhe deſired to ſee the King only before ſhe went; but in vain, they having no ſuch Commiſſion. When ſhe entred the *Tower*, ſhe is ſaid to have fal'n on her knees, beſeeching God ſo to help her, as ſhe was not guilty of that whereof ſhe was accuſed. This was about Five in the afternoon on the Second of *May*. After which, one *William Brereton* Eſquire, and Sir *Francis Weſton* of the Kings Privy Chamber, and one *Mark Smeton* a Muſician were Committed on the ſame occaſion. The Queen being thus in the Charge of Sir *William Kingſton*, Conſtable of the *Tower*, much ſpeech paſt betwixt them, as appears by an Original of his: Yet as her Language was broken and diſtracted betwixt Tears and Laughter, (for ſhe uſed both,) little can be inferred thence, only, ſhe ſeem'd to exclaim on *Norreis*, as if he had accus'd her; when yet ſhe ſaid, they both ſhould die together. She named others alſo, and thereupon confeſſed, though not enough to Condemn her, yet ſuch Paſſages as might argue ſhe took the utmoſt Liberty, that could be honeſtly allowed her: But whether ſhe extended it to any further Act, is not there declared. For amidſt all her Diſcourſes ſhe ſtill proteſted her ſelf Innocent. By other Originals alſo of *Kingſtons*, it appears that he had made ſome difficulty to carry a Letter from her to Mr. Secretary, and that ſhe wiſh'd her Biſhops were there: For they (ſhe ſaid) would go to the King for her; and that the moſt part of *England* would pray for her; and that if ſhe died, a puniſhment will fall on the Land; and in effect I find divers Biſhops and Learned men did much honour her, and particularly the Arch-biſhop of *Canterbury*, who in a Conſolatory Letter to the King, (which I have ſeen) wrote as much in her behalf as he durſt; yet ſo as he made no Apology for her, but rather confeſſeth that divers of the Lords had told him of ſuch Faults as he was ſorry to hear of, deſiring howſoever, that he would continue his Love to the Goſpel, leſt it ſhould be thought it was for her ſake only, he had ſo favoured it. After which another Letter in her Name, but no Original, coming to my hand, from more than one good part, I thought fit to Tranſcribe here, without other Credit yet than it is ſaid to be found among the Papers of *Cromwell* then Secretary, and for the reſt ſeems antient and conſonant to the matter in queſtion.

May 2. May 2. Records. May 6.

SIR,

1536.

SIR,

May 6.

YOur Graces diſpleaſure, and my Impriſonment are things ſo ſtrange unto me, as what to write, or what to excuſe, I am altogether ignorant. Whereas you ſend unto me, (willing me to confeſs a truth, and ſo obtain your favour,) by ſuch an one whom you know to be mine antient profeſſed Enemy, I no ſooner receiv'd this Meſſage by him, than I rightly conceiv'd your meaning; and as if as you ſay, Confeſſing a truth indeed, may procure my ſafety, I ſhall with all willingneſs and duty perform your command.

But let not your Grace ever imagine that your poor Wife will ever be brought to acknowledge a fault, where not ſo much as a thought thereof ever preceded. And to ſpeak a truth, never Prince had Wife more loyal in all duty, and in all true affection, than you have ever found in *Anne Bolen*, with which name and place I could willingly have contented my ſelf, if God and your Graces pleaſure, had ſo been pleaſed. Neither did I at any time ſo far forget my ſelf in my exaltation, or received Queenſhip, but that I always looked for ſuch an alteration as now I find; for the ground of my preferment being on no ſurer foundation than your Graces fancy, the leaſt alteration I know was fit and ſufficient to draw that fancy to ſome other ſubject. You have choſen me from a low eſtate to be your Queen and Companion, far beyond my deſert or deſire; if then you found me worthy of ſuch honour, Good your Grace, let not any light fancy, or bad Counſel of mine Enemies withdraw your Princely favour from me; neither let that ſtain, that unworthy ſtain of a diſloyal heart towards your good Grace, ever caſt ſo foul a blot on your moſt dutiful Wife, and the Infant Princeſs your Daughter: Try me good King, but let me have a lawful trial; and let not my ſworn Enemies ſit as my Accuſers and Judges; yea, let me receive an open trial, for my truth ſhall fear no open ſhames. Then ſhall you ſee either mine innocency cleared, your Suſpition and Conſcience ſatisfied, the ignominy and ſlander of the World ſtopped, or my guilt openly declared. So that whatſoever God or you may determine of me, your Grace may be freed from an open cenſure, and mine offence being ſo lawfully proved, your Grace is at liberty both before God and Man, not only to execute worthy puniſhment on me as an unfaithful Wife, but to follow your affection already ſetled on that party, for whoſe ſake I am now as I am, whoſe name I could ſome good while ſince have pointed unto, your Grace being not ignorant of my ſuſpition therein.

But if you have already determined of me, and that not only my death, but an infamous ſlander muſt bring you the enjoying of your deſired happineſs: then I deſire of God that he will pardon your great ſin therein, and likewiſe mine Enemies the Inſtruments thereof, and that he will not call you to a ſtrict account for your unprincely and cruel uſage of me at his general Judgment Seat, where both you

1536. you and my ſelf muſt ſhortly appear, and in whoſe judment I doubt not (whatſoever the world may think of me) mine innocence ſhall be openly known, and ſufficiently cleared.

My laſt and only requeſt ſhall be, that my ſelf may only bear the burthen of your Graces diſpleaſure; and that it may not touch the innocent ſouls of thoſe poor Gentlemen, who (as I underſtand) are likewiſe in ſtrait Impriſonment for my ſake. If ever I have found favour in your ſight, if ever the name of *Anne Bolen* hath been pleaſing in your ears, then let me obtain this requeſt; And I will ſo leave to trouble your Grace any further, with mine earneſt Prayers to the Trinity to have your Grace in his good keeping, and to direct you in all your actions. *From my doleful Priſon in the* Tower, *this* 6th. *of* May.

Your moſt Loyal
and ever Faithful Wife,

ANNE BOLEN.

But whether this Letter were elegantly written by her, or any elſe heretofore, I know as little, as what Anſwer might be made thereunto: Only I cannot omit to tell, that the King was ſo little ſatisfied with her Actions or Letters, that not content to have gotten proof enough to put her to death, he would further be divorced from her; which alſo by due Order and Proceſs of Law (as an Act of Parliament hath it, 28 *Hen.* VIII.) was performed by *Cranmer*. The cauſes being not yet ſet down otherwiſe than that they were declared juſt, true and lawful impediments of Marriage: I know not how to ſatisfie the Reader therein; eſpecially ſince the Lady *Elizabeth* their Daughter is thereby pronounced illegitimate. For as concerning Precontracts, I find by an Original Letter of the Earl of *Northumberland* (who it ſeems, might moſt be ſuſpected) that he diſavows it on his part. So that unleſs he retracted this Proteſtation, or that the contrary were proved, I cannot ſo much as imagine a reaſon. The Letter is thus to *Cromwel.*

May 13. Records. I Perceive that there is ſuppoſed a Precontract between the Queen and me. Whereupon I was not only heretofore examined upon mine Oath before the Archbiſhops of *Canterbury* and *York*; but alſo received the bleſſed Sacrament upon the ſame, before the Duke of *Norfolk*, and others the Kings Council learned in the Spiritual Law; Aſſuring you (Mr. Secretary) by the ſaid Oath and bleſſed Body, which afore I received, and hereafter intend to receive, that the ſame may be to my damnation, if ever there were any contract or promiſe of Marriage between her and me.

But

1536.

But if this were not ſufficient, I believe ſuch other cauſe was produced for the Divorce, as might ſatisfie the people, ſince the Act was publick. Neither is it much material which *Hall* ſaith, that the validity of this Marriage was queſtioned, becauſe the King Married this ſecond Wife before he was divorced from his firſt: for it ſeems contrary to the Act of Parliament, which ſaith, That the impediments were, till of late, unknown. Shortly after which ſhe was Arraigned the 15 of *May*, 1536. before the Duke of *Norfolk*, high Steward of *England* for the day, the Lord Chancellor, the Duke of *Suffolk*, and others of the Peers; And there, notwithſtanding her diſcreet Anſwers, (as our Hiſtorians term them) found guilty, and judgment pronounced accordingly. Immediately after which, the Lord *Rochfort* her Brother, was Arraigned and Condemned, as alſo *Henry Norreis* Eſquire, *Mark Smeton* Groom of the Kings Privy-Chamber, *William Brereton* Eſquire, and Sir *Francis Weſton* Knight, Gentlemen of it, (the Lord Mayor and divers Aldermen and Citizens being preſent) and the 17th. of *May* beheaded: The Queens death yet was reſpited till the 19 of the ſame. About which time order being taken that all Strangers in the *Tower* ſhould be removed, *Kingſton* in an Original to *Cromwel* writ theſe words: *viz.*

May 15.

May 17.

SIR,

IF we have not an hour certain, as it may be known in *London*, I think here will be but few: And I think a reaſonable number were beſt; for I ſuppoſe ſhe will declare her ſelf to be a good Woman for all Men, but for the King, at the hour of her death: for this Morning ſhe ſent for me, and proteſted her innocency: and now again, and ſaid unto me, Mr. *Kingſton*, I heard ſay, I ſhall not die afore Noon, and I am ſorry therefore; for I thought to be dead by this time, and paſt my pain. I told her it ſhould be no pain, it was ſo *ſotell*, (for ſo is his word.) And then ſhe ſaid, ſhe heard ſay the Executioner was very good, and I have a little Neck, and put her hand about it, laughing heartily: I have ſeen many Men and Women Executed, and they have been in great ſorrow; and to my knowledge, this Lady hath much joy and pleaſure in death.

May 19.

The 19th. of *May* being thus come, the Queen, according to the expreſs order given, was brought to a Scaffold erected upon the Green in the Tower of *London*, where our Hiſtorians ſay, ſhe ſpake before a great Company there aſſembled, to this effect:

Good Chriſtian People, I am come hither to die; for according to the Law, and by the Law I am judged to die, and therefore I will ſpeak nothing againſt it. I am come hither to accuſe no man, nor to ſpeak any thing of that whereof I am accuſed, and condemned to die. But I pray God ſave the King, and ſend him long to Reign over you; for a gentler nor a more merciful Prince was there never; and to me he was ever a good, a gentle, and a Sovereign Lord. And if any perſon will meddle of my cauſe, I require them to judge the beſt. And thus I take

1536. *my leave of the World, and of you all; And I heartily desire you all to pray for me.*

After which coming to her Devotions, her Head was stricken off with a Sword.

And thus ended the Queen, lamented by many, both as she was desirous to advance Learned men, in which number *Hugh Latimer* Bishop of *Worcester*, and *Nicholas Saxton* Bishop of *Salisbury* are recounted; and as she was a great Alms-giver; insomuch, as she is said in three quarters of a year to have bestowed fourteen or fifteen thousand pounds in this kind, besides moneys intended by her towards raising a Stock for poor Artificers in the Realm. *Sanders* saith her Father died shortly after for grief; but our Herolds affirm, it was not till about two years after, 1538. But that we may leave them both to their Grave and silence, I find by our Records, that the Princess *Mary* did about those times much endeavour to be restored to the King her Fathers good favour and opinion, as hoping now that the Princess *Elizabeth* was declared Illegitimate, she should be received as Heir to the Crown: Therefore by frequent and earnest Letters written with her own hand, she both acknowledgeth her fault of obstinacy heretofore, and craveth instantly from the King to write to her, or send some token as a sign of Reconciliation. Upon which submission, our King, by the Duke of *Norfolk* sent certain Articles for her to subscribe; which were,

Records. First, whether she doth Recognize the Kings Highness for her Sovereign Lord, and King, and will submit her self unto his Highness and all Laws of the Realm.

Secondly, whether she will with all her Power obey and maintain all the Statutes of the Realm.

Thirdly, whether she will Recognize the Kings Highness to be Supream Head in Earth of the Church of *England*, and utterly refuse the Bishop of *Romes* pretended Power, or any Interest he hath or may have thereby.

Fourthly, whether she doth freely Recognize and knowledge both by Gods Law and mans law the Marriage heretofore had between his Majesty and her Mother, to be unlawful.

Fifthly, for what causes, and by whose motion and means she hath remained in her obstinacy so long.

Sixthly, what is the cause she at this time above all others submitteth, and who moved her hereunto.

In satisfaction to which she returned a subscription, signing with her own name the four first Articles, but concerning the other two, she demurr'd; some Persons being Interested therein, whom she would not discover.

What effect followed hereupon appears not otherwise, than that notwithstanding this and other Submissions, the King proceeded to his intended Marriage; which also he so hastned, as some say the day following Queen *Anne*'s death, others not till three days after, he caus'd

caus'd it to be Solemniz'd; as not thinking it fit to mourn long, or much, for one the Law had declared Criminal; concerning the Ceremony whereof, as well as the opinion held in these times of the different perfections of the King, and his two Queens, I shall out of our Records produce the censure of Sir *John Russel* (afterwards Earl of *Bedford*) who having been at Church, observed the King to be the goodliest Person there; but of the Queens gave this note, that the Richer Queen *Jane* was in Cloaths, the fairer she appeared, but that the other, the Richer she was apparel'd, the worse she look'd; but this Queen certainly deserv'd all the Favour done her, as being reputed the Discreetest, Fairest, and Humblest of the Kings Wives; though both Queen *Katharine* in her younger days, and the late Queen, were not easily Parallel'd. But we will leave them a while, and come unto Foreign businesses now a long time intermitted. 1536.

Businesses betwixt our King and the *Roman* See were not so desperate, but that divers overtures on either side were made for an accommodation; for while the Pope feared, lest our King together with renouncing the *Roman* Churches Authority, would relinquish the Religion, he not only covered his inward and deep Displeasure, but secretly permitted Treaties in divers kinds with our King, and particularly invited him to a War against the *Turk*; who also gladly entertained the motion, as hoping the Pope would not so soon joyn Christian Princes against him. Insomuch that Sir *Gregory Casalis* now residing Agent at *Rome*, the Pope about *May* 20 sent for him, and told him that he heard of the Queens Imprisonment; and was glad that God having freed the King from this unequal Matrimony, had offered his Majesty occasion of gaining eternal Honour, by making Peace between the Emperor and *French* King; which might be now done by joyning with the *Roman* See. As for himself, that he never did him but good Offices, as having urged *Clement* VII. to right him in his Divorce, and at *Bononia*, (being then Cardinal) perswaded the Emperor to suffer it with Patience. As for *Rochester*, that he made him Cardinal only to use him in the ensuing Council; and when his death was related, being sollicited and compelled to revenge it, he could not but yield for the time to do those things *quæ tamen nunquam in animo habuit ad exitum perducere.* Wherefore that he purposed to send a Nuntio into *England* to Treat of a Peace in Christendom, when our King would hearken thereunto; whence shall follow a General Council, and a War against the *Turk*: And all this he wish'd Sir *Gregory* to write (as of himself) to our King; as appears by the Original, *May* 27. Shortly after which, I find that Cardinal *Campejus* sending hither his Brother *Marco Antonio* about other businesses, as regaining his Bishoprick of *Salisbury*, and the place of *English* Protector in the next Council, attempted to induce our King to a Reconciliation: But as the terms propos'd pleased not; so the Pope conceiving now all further May 27. June 6.

1536. Treaty, to be vain, laboured to unite all Christian Princes in a War against him, as a deserter of all Papal Authority, and an Heretick. Therefore he both gained *Charles* (who had long solicited a Council) by summoning one to begin at *Mantua* the year following, *May* 23. and to oblige *James* V. he sent him a rich Consecrated Sword. He found not yet in *France* that disposition he hoped for, the overtures of War being thought unseasonable, in a time when a general Reformation was expected on the *Roman* Churches part. Therefore I find by an Original dispatch of *Mount's*, how the Bishop of *Chaalons* in *Campagne* told him, (upon notice taken in *France* of the *Breve* of the Pope, whereby (as aforesaid) he Excommunicated our King, and deprived him of his Kingdom, and absolved his Subjects of their Oaths of Allegiance, unless he returned to that See, and abrogated those Laws were made against the Papal Authority,) that the Cardinal of *Lorain* would warn the Pope, and advise him not to be so bold with Princes, unless he would become a laughing-stock to the world, (for these are *Mount's* words;) yet did not *Francis* fully comply with our King, but held a middle way: For as he approved not the Popes harsh proceeding, so when our King by his Ambassador gave him account of his actions, expecting his Approbation, he returned this Answer: That notwithstanding all the Kings Realm should agree and condescend never so much to the Right and Title of Succession in the Issue of his second Marriage, yet when Foreign parts shall conceive any other, and contrary Opinion thereof, great troubles might ensue. Whereupon *Stephen Gardiner* Bishop of *Winchester* then resident in *France*, was commanded by our King to tell *Francis*, that he marvelled much the King his Brother, being a wise Prince, should so long insist upon these points, since it was ever the manner of lawful Kings to pursue their Right without demanding the Approbation of others. For proof whereof, he said he could give particular instances in *Francis* his Predecessors, who had done many things contrary to the advice of the Popes, (when they were beneficial to the Kingdom,) and that notwithstanding all opposition they had been happily atchieved. Our King was not ignorant, yet, how much it concern'd him to keep *Francis* in good Correspondency, as knowing the desire he had to recover *Milan* (for his second Son the Duke of *Orleans*) was so vehement, as it would incline him wholly to the Emperor, when it might be obtained. And in effect I find by *Bellay*, that the Treaty hereof begun the last year, as aforesaid, was still prosecuted; insomuch that *Charles* gave hope of restoring *Milan* now upon *Sforza's* death (who being thought the last of the Line of *Æneas* and *Mutius Scævola*, dyed about the end of *October* precedent) to the Duke of *Angoulesme* the third Son of *Francis*, when he would send the Duke of *Orleans* his second Son to assist him in an intended expedition against *Algier*, and help to reduce the Protestant Princes in *Germany*, and the King of *England* to an union with the Church;

June 2.

1535.

Fox. p. 358.

but

but *Francis* replyed, that to give *Milan* from his ſecond Son to his third, was to cauſe a perpetual War betwixt two Brothers. Therefore that he deſired it for the Duke of *Orleans*, in which caſe alſo the ſaid Duke ſhould renounce all claim to *Naples*, *Florence*, *Urbin*, &c. That to ſend him to the Emperor, upon what pretence ſoever, was in effect to do nothing but put an Hoſtage into his hand: As for the Reformation and Re-union of thoſe who had any way ſeparated themſelves from the Church, he ſhould be glad to ſecond him as well in *Germany* as in *England*. And that for *Henry* the Eighth in particular, he thought fit the Emperor ſhould ſummon all Chriſtian Princes and Potentates to aſſiſt him, and as *Bellay* hath it *Donner main fort* to conſtrain the ſaid King to obey the ſentence and determination of the Church. 1536. *Bellay.* Jan.

During theſe Treaties, the *French* Army under the *Comte de St. Paul*, advanced ſo far in *Savoy*, as they had taken all but *Montmelian*, which yet at laſt yielded: while thoſe of *Geneva*, thinking the occaſion fair, ſhook off their obedience to the Duke, and by the help of the Proteſtant *Swiſſe*, aſſerted themſelves into the liberty they now enjoy: expelling together their Biſhop, and changing the form of both their Civil and Eccleſiaſtical Policy. Of all which the Emperor being advertiſed, thought how to gain time, eſpecially till he had reinforced his Army, not yet fully made up ſince his late Voyage to *Tunis*, and aſſured himſelf of the Pope: Therefore he promiſed the Dutchy of *Milan*, to the Duke of *Orleans*, ſo that the Dutcheſs, being the Relict of *Sforza*, might be provided for, intending thereby (as my Author hath it) that ſhe might be given the *Scottiſh* King: yet in the manner of performing thereof, ſo much caution and delay was propoſed, as their former jealouſies did but increaſe. And indeed, neither was the overture of *Francis* his requiring the Emperor to preſs the Pope againſt our King, more than device to make our King more firm unto him: Nor the Propoſition of the Emperor for reſtoring *Milan*, other than an invention to gain time, he being reſolv'd to ſuccour *Savoy* at what price ſoever: and the rather, that (as is before ſaid) there was a project of giving all that Country to the Emperor for ſome other Lands in *Italy*, whereby alſo the Emperor ſhould have wholly invironed *France*: ſo that all was but diſſimulation on either part. For while theſe things were treating, the Emperor (though injoyning ſilence to the *French*, and promiſing it himſelf) yet both acquainted the Pope with divers paſſages, and together made him jealous of the intentions of *Francis* to invade *Italy*, and drew the *Venetians* to his ſide, and made ſundry Propoſitions of Alliance and Friendſhip with our King, (ſome whereof we have before ſhewed) and raiſed great forces by Sea and Land, upon pretence of imploying them againſt Infidels: While *Francis* on the other part, being well informed hereof, reſolv'd ſo to proceed in his War, as he neglected nothing which might ſtrengthen himſelf, or weaken his Enemies. Therefore, having *Bellay* l. 5. *Bellay.* Records.

1536. March. having with a choice Army of fifteen or sixteen thousand under the command of *Chabot* Admiral of *France*, taken the chief places in *Savoy*, he commanded it to advance over the *Alps* towards *Turin* in *Piedmont*, which was rendred to him, as also divers other places there. And thus it is probable they might have entered and taken *Milan*; for as the Duke was newly dead, and the Government unsetled; so there wanted all things which might serve to defend the Country. Nevertheless, out of I know not what scrupulosity or presumption, *Francis* commanded *Chabot* to stay until he had sent to demand again the investiture thereof from the Emperor in the name of his Son the Duke of *Orleans*. I am not ignorant yet, that some *French* Writers say, that *Francis* checkt this command by private Instructions: But *Chabot* thought it safer to follow those directions he had under the hand and seal of *Francis*, than to comply with an intimated and contradictory advice. Howbeit, the overtures of Peace continued still (at *Naples*, where the Emperor then was) betwixt both Princes, the *French* Ambassadour Mounsieur *de Velly* alledging, that the business of *Savoy* was but a particular difference betwixt their King and that Duke, and that it should not hinder the General Treaty. To which the Emperor seem'd to give ear also; not omitting yet to raise Forces daily, nor to march towards *Rome*, where the Pope attended him: having for the more enlarging his entry to that City, thrown down the Relicks of the April 5. Temple of Peace built by the *Romans*: And indeed, the Popes desire was he should never put up his sword, till he had reduced our King, and the Protestants to their former devotion, and afterwards invaded the *Turk*. Of which our King being well informed, (for April. no Prince had better intelligence) commanded *Richard Pace* his Ambassadour, to treat with the Emperor, though not with intention to joyn with him, so much as to discover his designs: For I find by *Bellay*, that our King had acquainted *Francis* (by means of his Ambassadour then resident here) with a Letter of the Emperors, about this time sent him, wherein the said Emperor advertised, that he meant to go to *Rome*, and what he would say and do there; Requesting our King further to interpose offices with *Francis* for restoring all he had taken in *Savoy*, and to divert him from attempting *Milan*. For the rest, desiring our King to forget not only what discontentment soever had past betwixt them by reason of the Divorce with Queen *Katharine* (since she being dead, all cause of offence was ceased) but to renew their antient Treaties of Confederation and Amity; and together to assist him against the *Turk*. So that by this free communication of the Emperors Letters, as well as by an Advertisement which I find *Francis* gave our King of certain following passages at *Rome*, one may perceive what strait correspondence was then held betwixt them. Howsoever, *Pace* in his Negotiation found that the Emperor took nothing so ill as the Illegitimation of the Princess *Mary*: for though our King had given Succours

Succours in *Denmark* againſt his Niece, and encouraged the Princes in *Germany* to take Arms againſt him; yet theſe affronts the Emperor ſaid might be paſſed over, but not the Princeſs *Mary*'s Illegitimation; whom therefore he deſired our King to reſtore, giving hope (as *Pace* writes from *Rome*) on that condition to procure a general Council which might give the King contentment in his deſires; or if he would refer all things to the Popes Authority, to make his peace with him, to validate his laſt Marriage, and together eſtabliſh his Succeſſion, Honour and Conſcience in all he could wiſh. Theſe were indeed thought great offers: But our King, conſidering that they were little more than ſollicitations and diſcourſes of *Granvele*, and that to legitimate the Princeſs *Mary*, was in effect no leſs than to declare her his Heir, what diſguiſe ſoever the Emperor would put on it, and deſiring, for the reſt, nothing ſo much, as to ſettle the ſucceſſion in his future Iſſue, (which he hoped would be maſculine) gave no good audience hereunto. 1536. Records. April 12.

The Emperor having now at *Rome* ſaluted the Pope and Cardinals, and communicated his reaſons in private, *Monſieur de Velly* was referred again to them for an Anſwer concerning his Demand of *Milan*. But the Pope gave him no hope thereof; adding, that the Emperor had no ſuch intention; and when he ſhould aſſent, the *Venetians* would not, who had entered a League defenſive for that Dutchy. Whereupon *Velly* goes to the Emperor, requiring performance from him: But the Emperor demanded whether he had Commiſſion to treat thereof: but *Velly* ſaying he had none, the Emperor would hear him no more. Nevertheleſs, to ſhew a deſire to come to a ſolid peace with *Francis*, and avoid effuſion of their Subjects blood: The Emperor in the preſence of the Pope, the Cardinals, and the Ambaſſadors of *France*, of *Venice*, and many great Prelates and Noble-men aſſembled, made a long Oration in *Spaniſh*, his hat in his hand; declaring firſt the cauſes of quarrel and unkindneſs betwixt *Maximilian* and *Lewis* VII. deducing them after to his times, with much particularity; and ſhewing ſtill the fault was on the *French* ſide: After which, in the preſence of this great Aſſembly, he made three offers to *Francis*, firſt, That if a ſure Peace might be concluded, he would give the Dutchy of *Milan* to one of the Kings Children (but not the Duke of *Orleans*, ſince he knew *Francis* did not demand it ſo much to fix there, as to ſerve himſelf thereof as a ſtep to paſs further to the State of *Florence*, and *Urbin*, in the right of the ſaid Dukes Wife: neither would he accept any diſclaim thereof, ſince he knew it would prevail no more, than that *Francis* had already made of the Dutchy of *Burgundy*.) Therefore that he would grant it to the Duke of *Angouleſme* his third Son, when *Francis* would declare in what manner he would aſſiſt him towards the celebration of a Council, a Reformation of *Chriſtendom*, and War againſt Hereticks and Infidels: Which becauſe it would not be done except all offences were removed, he required *Bellay*. April. 17.

1536. required first that his Army should be withdrawn out of *Piedmont*. Secondly, if within twenty days *Francis* did not approve this, he offered to end the business in a Duel betwixt their two Persons; not out of bravery yet, but for avoyding the effusion of blood betwixt their Subjects, too much whereof had been shed already. And that he thought there would be no more difficulty in assigning a fit place for this Combat, than for an Interview, and that it might be in some Isle, or on some Bridge or Boat on a River: And for Arms, he thought them all good, whether they were Sword, or Poignard, in their Shirts; only in this case, that whosoever overcame, should give his Forces to the Pope, for the more strengthening him to summon a Council, and reduce all disobedient persons to the Church, and resist the *Turk*: for which purposes he did there ingage himself to the Pope and Apostolick See; requiring besides, that the Dutchy of *Milan* and *Burgundy* should be deposited in some good hand, and the Victor have both. The third offer was War; to which yet he protested not to come without necessity; though he had sufficient cause, *Francis* having taken Arms against him while he talk'd of a Peace by the entremise of one who had no power to treat thereof: Only if he were constrain'd to this course, nothing should make him leave it, till one of them both remained the poorest Gentleman in their Country. Thus bowing his head to look upon a scroul lapt about his finger, he made a pause: after which the Pope began to speak; but the Emperor interrupting him, said he had not yet concluded, but would, when he had referred all to his Holiness, whom he desired to bestow his favour on him who had most reason and equity on his side. This being done, the Pope commended the Emperor's Propositions, as tending to a Peace, and hoped the *French* King would be no less inclined thereunto. After which, the Bishop of *Mascon* step'd forth, and said, the Protestation being in *Spanish*, he understood it not well: But for the point concerning Peace, he knew the King his Master would be inclinable to it; reserving the further declaration thereof to Monsieur *de Velly*, who drawing near, and desiring to be heard, the Emperor stopt him, and said he had already spoken to him too often of Peace, and that he desired deeds and not words; and that he would grant him no other Audience at that time, only what he had there publickly said, should be given in writing, and therewith arose. So that though *Velly* desired to answer for his Master, yet the Emperor still laid the fault on him; and thus went with the Pope to Mass. But that Evening the Pope, who knew of what consequence a War betwixt these Princes was, sent for the *French* Ambassadors, desiring them to do good offices in their dispatches to *Francis*, protesting that he was surpriz'd on his part: And that whatsoever he said, he would keep neutrality betwixt them. The Emperor being now ready to take his leave of the Pope, the *French* Ambassador desired Audience, and thereupon told the Emperor in the

the Popes preſence, That whereas he had ſpoken of a Combate with his King in caſe no peace were made, without declaring other cauſe than to ſpare effuſion of their Subjects blood; he deſired to know whether his Majeſty had made a Challenge to fight: and that if it were ſo, he durſt anſwer on the part of his King, that it ſhould not be refus'd. And that the Emperor might well remember that heretofore there was queſtion hereof, but not now that he knew; the King his Maſter deſiring to have *Milan* by Treaty, and having given expreſs command to his General in *Piedmont*, not to invade any thing in the Emperors poſſeſſion. As for the Treaty betwixt them, that it was ſet down in writing, and the Pope might judge of both; and therefore that he would ſay no more of it, but know only whether the Emperor would charge the King his Maſter, as having fail'd in his word or honour, and whether he had defied him. There were not many preſent when this paſſed; which the Emperor obſerving, call'd all thoſe in the *Sala* and Chamber of Audience, and ſaid, as he ſpake publickly before, ſo he would again. Many hereupon repairing to him, he ſaid in *Italian*, That he indeed did moſt deſire Peace; but if that could not be, he did then think beſt that they two in perſon ſhould end the buſineſs; which yet he ſpake by way of advice, and not as a Challenge; eſpecially ſince it was in the Pope's preſence, without whoſe permiſſion he would do nothing. And therefore that he propos'd it only to avoid a greater inconvenience, as thinking it better to do ſo, than ſuffer a War in Chriſtendom: which was the reaſon alſo why he appointed him twenty days time to retire his Army out of *Piedmont*. But theſe ſharp words (at the Pope's requeſt) were not openly advertis'd to *Francis*, nor ſome others, whereby he vilified the Commanders and *Soldareſque* of that Nation in compariſon of his, (as *Bellay* hath it;) who relates the buſineſs ſomewhat more in favour of his Nation, and Monſieur *de Velly*, than *Sandoval* doth, or indeed our Records; amongſt which I find divers of theſe paſſages certified by *Richard Pace*. But though the *French* Ambaſſadors (at the Pope's intreaty) were ſparing in their relation of the Emperors words, which (if we may believe *Sandoval*) were very high, yet order was given to his Ambaſſadors in *France* (as *Sandoval* hath it) to acquaint *Francis* with them; adding only four days more to the term of twenty formerly prefixed: Though *Bellay* doth not acknowledge this particular.

1536.

Bellay.

While theſe things paſt thus at *Rome*, the Cardinal of *Lorain* was imployed by *Francis* to the Emperor: Who in his way coming to the *French* Army, charged *Chabot* not to march further, or innovate any thing, (which troubled him, as being inform'd that the Emperor both rais'd great forces, and drew near him.) After which he went to *Antonio de Leyva*, and the *Spaniſh* Army, requiring the ſame of them, at leaſt till he had ſpoken with the Emperor; whom yet when he found ambiguous in his anſwers, and uncertain,

April. 18.

1536. he acquainted the Pope therewith, and afterwards the *French* King; who having in the mean while underſtood by the Emperors Ambaſſadors reſident with him; the effect of his Maſters Oration at *Rome* (though yet he would give no copy of it) ſent to the Pope a Juſtification, (ſet down at large in *Bellay*) in the concluſion whereof he returned this Anſwer to the Emperors offer of a Combat, That if ever they came near each other (as might well be if they led their Armies in Perſon) and the Emperor then ſent a Challange, he would fight with him. But the Pope, who had more uſe of their Swords than to imploy them one againſt the other, endeavoured ſtill to procure all good amity and correſpondence betwixt them: Therefore he ſent (upon the requeſt of the Cardinal of *Lorain*) the Cardinal *de Carpi*, and the Cardinal *Trivulcio* to mediate an end; for which purpoſe they were to go joyntly to the Emperor firſt, and then one of them to the *French* King, according to the occaſion.

But nothing now could hinder the Emperor from going into *France*, where in ſequence of a Proteſtation (as *Sandoval* hath it) to attend the *French* King thirty days to ſee whether he would come in perſon to fight, he reſolved to march. Having gotten together therefore an Army of about Sixty thouſand men, and an hundred pieces of Artillery, he came to *Aſti* the 22. of *June* 1536. while his Siſter *Mary* (Governeſs of the *Low-Countreys*) by his order had raiſed an Army of twenty thouſand Foot, and a thouſand Horſe under the Command of *Henry* Count of *Naſſaw*, to invade *France* on that part: It was yet adviſed whether in his way he ſhould take the places in *Savoy*, and *Piedmont*, which the *French* held, or go ſtrait to *France*. *Antonio de Leyva* ſaid, that wild Beaſts were to be ſought in their dens; And therefore wiſh'd the Emperor not to ſpend his men in Sieges, but march on; which counſel being followed (and the rather, becauſe the Emperor deſired perſonally to be in *France* to acquit himſelf of his promiſe,) the Army having firſt taken ſome Towns, came near *Marſeilles*: where *Andrea Doria* with his Gallies was appointed to meet him. But *Antonio de Leyva* (a valiant, but covetous and cruel Commander) dying there, and about Thirty thouſand more of ſickneſs and diſorder, the Emperor, who had now ſtayed 33 days (as *Sandoval* hath it) in the *French* Kings Dominions, returned to *Genoua*, and (not long after) to *Spain*, leaving order yet for War in *Savoy* and *Piedmont*. But whatſoever retarded *Francis*, it was not want of courage: though I find by *Bellay*, he was reſolv'd by his Council rather to weary and famiſh the Emperors Army, than to fight with him; though yet having rais'd a conſiderable Army in thoſe parts under the command of *Montmorency*, *Grand-Maiſtre* of *France*, he was not unprovided to reſiſt him; beſides which, he had another under his own command at *Valence*, not far off; which he yet left at laſt to come to his other Army. But the Emperor, as having (even by

June 22.

Aug. 15.
Sept. 15.

Octob.
Novemb.

by the confeſſion of *Bellay*) loſt half his Army, was now remov'd, leaving behind him ſo many dead Souldiers unburied, that they infected the air. Hereupon *Francis* took advice, whether it were better to follow the Emperor into *Italy*, or to return and raiſe the Siege from *Peronne*, being then in ſome danger; the later pleas'd him, his affairs in *Italy* at that time ſucceeding well, and Winter beſides drawing on: Only before he return'd, he thought good to viſit *Marſeilles*, commanding the *Seigneur de Langey* to repair the ruines of *Aix*, where the Emperor had lodg'd. This being done, and he now going homewards, the glad news was brought him, that the Siege of *Peronne* was raiſed; which (as *Sandoval* hath it) hap'ned the ſame day the Emperor diſlodg'd from *Aix* to return into *Italy*. And thus did thoſe vaſt Preparatives of the Emperor come to nothing; (great Armies as well as little ones having their inconveniences, eſpecially where Sickneſs and diſorder doth intervene.) 1536. Sept. 10.

Francis being yet upon his way home (as *Bellay* hath it) received Letters from his Ambaſſor in *England*, how our King was inform'd by his Agents in the *French* Court, that the Emperors retreat was out of ſtratagem, that the *French* might follow him, and ſo be taken at an Advantage: And that this Rumour of his mens death, was rais'd only to draw them on the ſooner; but that in effect he had not loſt 2000 men ſince his coming out of *Italy*. Upon which falſe advertiſements alſo, our King forbare to comply with *Francis* as he was wont; where he on the other ſide eſtranged himſelf a little from King *Henry*, inſomuch, as he began to cheriſh and love the King of *Scotland* more than before; who alſo had promiſed him aſſiſtance in his Wars (which our King had neglected, contrary to *Francis* his expectation) and was now in *France*; for which reaſons he gave him his Daughter *Magdalene* (as is before related:) Nevertheleſs, that he might proceed formally, he ſent *Gilles de Pommeray* hither, to tell our King: Firſt, the true cauſe of the Emperors retreat: Secondly, the cauſe of his accepting the *Scottiſh* King for his Son in law: Thirdly, to propoſe a Marriage betwixt the Duke of *Orleans* (his Son) and the Princeſs *Mary*. But when the Marriage with King *James*, and the excuſe for it was produced, our King was in that paſſion, that he would not hear him again for four days ſpace; though yet he forgot not by his Council to ſhew how ill he took it. So that *Pommeray*, without almoſt daring to ſpeak of the Marriage with the Princeſs *Mary*, return'd; and the rather, becauſe our King knew well that the Emperor had a good while ſince propos'd it to *Francis*, only to ſow diſſention betwixt both Princes. Our King finding this coldneſs on the *French* Kings part, began to think how he might fortifie himſelf by the Emperors friendſhip; for which purpoſe alſo, (as is aforeſaid) ſeveral overtures had been made; but the Declaration of the Princeſs *Mary* to be Illegitimate hindred all (which though much la- *Bellay.*

1536. bour'd by the Emperor, King *Henry* yet could not be perſuaded to revoke,) though he profeſſed himſelf much inclin'd to return to his antient friendſhip with *Charles*; ſo that till after the death of Queen *Jane*, being the year following, all things remained in ſuſpence. In which terms alſo, he thought fit they ſhould be continued till he ſaw the event of the War, renewed now betwixt the Emperor and *French* King with more ardor than ever (as ſhall be told hereafter;) of which occaſion therefore our King thought fit to prevail himſelf, for giving order to his buſineſſes at home: Which that he might do by the advice and conſent of his Parliament, he commanded it to ſit the 8th. of *June*, 1536.

Regn. 28. June 8. The Principal Act was touching the ſucceſſion of the Crown; in which after a rehearſal of the Statute 25 *Henry* 8. touching the Kings Marriages, and limitation of ſucceſſion to the Crown; And another of 26. *Henry* 8. It is declared, that whereas a Marriage heretofore was ſolemnized betwixt the Kings Highneſs and the Lady *Anne Bolen*, that ſithence that time, certain juſt, true and lawful Impediments of Marriage, unknown at the making of the ſaid Acts, were confeſſed by the ſaid Lady *Anne* before *Thomas* Lord Arch-Biſhop of *Canterbury*; by which it plainly appeareth, that the ſaid Marriage betwixt His Highneſs and the ſaid Lady *Anne* was never good nor conſonant to the Laws; And therefore his Highneſs was lawfully Divorced from the ſaid Lady *Anne*: Moreover, that ſhe and her Complices before-mentioned, were convict by due courſe of Law, and have ſuffer'd according to their merits.

And whereas it hath pleas'd his Highneſs, notwithſtanding the great perils ſufferd by occaſion of his firſt unlawful Marriage betwixt the Lady *Katharine*, and this unlawful Marriage betwixt the Lady *Anne*, at the moſt humble Petition of his Nobles in this Realm, and for Conſervation of the ſame, to enter into Marriage again with the Lady *Jane*, according to the Laws of the Church; and that there is hope ſhe may Conceive by his Highneſs; That it is the moſt humble Petition of his Nobles and Commons, that for extinguiſhment of all Ambiguities and doubts, it may be enacted in manner and form as followeth. And firſt, that the Marriage between the King and Queen *Katharine* ſhould be void and of no effect; as being grounded on a diſpenſation, in a caſe not diſpenſable by humane Authority; and ſo determined by the whole Clergy, and both Univerſities of this Realm; as alſo by the Univerſities of *Bononia*, *Padua*, *Paris*, *Orleans*, *Tholouſe*, *Anjou*, and divers others, in regard, ſhe being Wife to his elder Brother Prince *Arthur*, was carnally known by him, as was ſufficiently proved before *Thomas* Arch-Biſhop of *Canterbury*, and therefore, that any Diſpenſation to the contrary hereof ſhould be to all intents void, and of no effect; and the iſſue procreated under the ſame unlawful Marriage, betwixt his Highneſs, and the ſaid Lady *Katharine*, to be Illegitimate, and barr'd from claiming any inheritance from his Highneſs by Lineal deſcent; and

and that the Marriage alſo, betwixt his Highneſs and Queen *Anne* is of no value, no effect; and that the Divorce made between his Highneſs and her, is good and effectual, and the Iſſue illegitimate and not inheritable to his Highneſs, by Lineal deſcent; any former Act to the contrary notwithſtanding. 1536.

And furthermore, ſith many inconveniences have fallen by Marrying within degrees prohibited by Gods Law; which Marriages yet have been often diſpenced with by ſome uſurped Power; when yet no man hath Power to diſpenſe with Gods Law. Therefore it was enacted, that if any were Married within the ſaid degrees, or took to Wife the Siſter or Daughter, *&c.* of her whom he had before carnally known, he might and ſhould be ſeparated by the diffinetive ſentence of the Arch-Biſhops, and other Miniſters of the Church of *England*: And their ſaid ſentence to be good and effectual, without ſuing any appeal to or from the Court of *Rome*.

Further, it was enacted, that the Iſſue betwixt his Highneſs and Queen *Jane* ſhould be his lawful Children and Heirs, and inherit according to the courſe of Inheritance of the Laws of this Realm, the Imperial Crown of the ſame, with all Dignities, Honours, Preeminences, Prerogatives, Authorities, and Juriſdictions to the ſame annexed or belonging.

But if it ſhould happen that Queen *Jane* ſhould deceaſe without Iſſue-male of the Body of her Highneſs to be begotten, then the ſame Imperial Crown and all other the premiſſes to be to his Majeſty, and to his Heirs of Males by any other lawful Wife, and to the Heirs of the Body of the ſame Son and Heir Male lawfully begotten; and ſo from Son and Heir Male to Son and Heir Male, and to the Heirs of every ſuch Son and Heir Male lawfully begotten according to the courſe of Inheritance, as is aboveſaid. And for default of ſuch Iſſue Male, then the ſaid Imperial Crown and premiſſes ſhould be to the Iſſue Female, betwixt his Majeſty and Queen *Jane* begotten, and ſo again to the Iſſue Female by any other Wife in like manner; that is to ſay, to the eldeſt Iſſue of the Iſſue Female, and to the Heirs of her Body lawfully begotten; and ſo from Iſſue Female to Iſſue Female, and to their Heirs of their Bodies, one after another by courſe of inheritance, according to their ages, as the Crown of *England* hath been accuſtomed, and ought to ſucceed and go, in caſe when there is Heir Female inheritable to the ſame. And foraſmuch as it ſtands in the only will and pleaſure of Almighty God, whether his Highneſs ſhall have Heirs, and that if they fail, and no proviſion be made in his life, who ſhould Govern this Realm, that then this Realm after his tranſitory life ſhould be deſtitute of a lawful Governour, or incumbred with ſuch a Perſon that would covet to aſpire to the ſame, that in this caſe, his Highneſs might limit the Crown to any Perſon or Perſons in poſſeſſion and remainder by his Letters Patents under the Great Seal; or elſe by his laſt Will aſſigned with his hand, after ſuch manner as ſhould be

1536. be expreſſed in his ſaid Letters Patents; and that ſuch Perſon and Perſons ſhould have and enjoy the ſame after his deceaſe in as large and ample manner as the lawful Heirs of his Body ſhould have done.

After which, order was taken to prevent uſurpation of the Crown, and the Penalty of High Treaſon impos'd on Uſurpers, as on thoſe alſo who believed either the Marriage of his Highneſs with the Lady *Katharine*, or the Lady *Anne*, to be good; and did call the Lady *Mary*, or the Lady *Elizabeth* legitimate, and who uſed certain words and actions tending to this purpoſe: As is to be ſeen more largely in the ſaid Statute.

Furthermore, it was enacted that if his Majeſty ſhould deceaſe before any Heir Male of his Body inheritable to the Crown of this Realm ſhould be of the age of 18 years, or any Heir Female which ſhould be inheritable as aforeſaid, ſhould be Married, or be of the age of 16 years, that then they, or any of them, ſhall be and remain until they came unto the ſaid ſeveral ages, at and in the Governance of their natural Mother, and ſuch other his Counſellors and Nobles of his Realm, as his Highneſs ſhould name and appoint by his laſt Will in writing, ſigned with his hand, or otherwiſe to be at and in the Governance of ſuch his Counſellors and Nobles of his Realm, as his Highneſs ſhould name and appoint, by his laſt Will in writing, and ſigned with his hand (as is aforeſaid) and that an Oath ſhould be adminiſtred for performance of this Act, and the Penalty of High Treaſon inflicted on thoſe that ſhall refuſe it.

Furthermore, It was enacted, that the King ſhould have Power by his Letters Patents or laſt Will, as aforeſaid, to advance any Perſon or Perſons of his moſt Royal Blood to any Title, Stile, or name of any Eſtate, Dignity or Honour, and to give to them or any of them any Caſtles, Honours, Lands, *&c.* in Fee-ſimple, Fee-tail, or for term of lives, or the life of any of them, ſaving the Rights and Eſtates of all others, in and to the ſame.

Finally, it was enacted, that every Clauſe, Article and Sentence therein, ſhould be taken and accepted according to the plain words thereof. How yet this Act was altered, 35 *Hen.* 8. ſhall be declared by me, God willing, in this Hiſtory; referring the Reader to 1 *Mary* 1. when it was repeal'd.

Howſoever, I thought fit to ſet it down with much particularity, both as it is Relative to many precedent points touched in this Hiſtory, and as it leads the way to ſome that follow; by which alſo it may appear unto the Reader, with how high a hand the King did authorize his Actions, while each part juſtified the other, and all his Subjects voices being comprehended in his Parliament, no man could accuſe him, who did not in ſome ſort firſt condemn himſelf; ſo that if in thoſe two Divorces he had not reaſon, the chief of his Kingdom ſeem'd to err with him: Unleſs ill arts with the Nobility,

bility, and undue election of the Knights and Burgeſſes be ſuppos'd; which though poſſible in many, and (for that I have ſeen) there be cauſe to ſuſpect it in ſome; yet to believe a general corruption in the prime Perſons of a Kingdom, or to allow an Argument drawn from thence only, as concluſive, what is it elſe but to overthrow and ſubvert the Columns and Foundations of Laws? And then what Statute can ſtand? what Decree will be in force? I will not yet take on me every where to defend the actions of a Prince, whom ſo many have bitterly cenſur'd, as it may be doubtful whether he were more extoll'd at home in his firſt times, or depreſs'd afterwards abroad. But thus much I cannot but obſerve of him, that if where he did ill, he made or found many Complices; where he did well, he had almoſt the Glory alone; as being ſo active and knowing in all he undertook, that he was capable of both: Only towards his latter time, as he was thought to decline in his ſingular perfections of Nature, ſo all things almoſt fell to the worſe; while divers of thoſe ill accidents which befel him, were reveng'd ſometimes with ſo ſevere a juſtice, as might be called *Summum Jus*; ſometimes repaired with furniſhing his wants in that large manner and extent, both on the Spiritualty and Temporalty, as little elſe remained, either to be demanded or gotten. In procuring whereof, though he loſt much of his former love and eſteem, yet he kept himſelf ſtill upon the high ſteps of Authority, without ſtooping either to fear or neceſſity; ſo that his moſt irregular actions repreſented ſuch a Type of greatneſs, as crooked lines drawn every way, which though not ſo Compendious and direct as the ſtrait, ſeem yet to have in them ſomewhat more of the infinite; but as theſe things are ſet down by way of deſcription, and not of Apology; ſo I will leave them to come to my Hiſtory, which for being free and impartial, will ſpeak him better to the judicious Reader than my Annotations can. 1536.

This year *Thomas Howard*, youngeſt Son to *Thomas* late Duke of *Norfolk*, and Brother to the preſent Duke (but by another Mother,) had ſo obtain'd the favour of the Lady *Margaret Douglas*, Daughter to the Queen of *Scots* (then living in the Kings Court,) that ſome affiancing or privy Contract paſt betwixt them: whereof the King being informed, was much incenſed; as conceiving that one ſo joyned in blood to him and his Nephew the *Scottiſh* King, ſhould not be given nor taken without his conſent, eſpecially when ſhe lived ſo near him: Wherefore he was committed firſt to the *Tower*, and ſhe not long after. The buſineſs thus being in *July* brought to the Parliament, and certain ſuſpitions and accuſations alledged of aſpiring to the Crown, (ſome circumſtances being drawn thereunto) he was there attainted of High-Treaſon: and in ſequence thereof a Statute made, that none ſhould Marry in the next degrees of the Blood Royal, without the Kings licence firſt had, *&c.* Which yet being repealed 1 *Edw.* 6. 12. and 1 *Mary* 1. I mention

1536. mention no otherwiſe. The news hereof being brought with ſpeed to *Margaret* Queen of *Scots*, afflicted her much: ſo that it retarded her journey into *England*, whither ſhe was coming; being deſirous alſo to be reconciled to her former Husband *Archibald Douglas* Earl of *Angus*. Nevertheleſs, ſhe thought fit to write to the King, Aug. 12. That whereas ſhe heard he was diſpleaſed with her Daughter for promiſing Marriage to the Lord *Thomas Howard*, intending to puniſh her for the ſame, ſhe deſired his Majeſty to pardon her; and if he ſo pleaſed, to ſend her into *Scotland*, that ſhe come no more in his preſence; and not to be extream to his own Blood. Notwithſtanding which, both ſhe and the Lord *Thomas Howard*, were committed to the Tower, without ſuffering other puniſhment, where alſo ſhe remain'd till the death of the ſaid *Thomas Howard*: but then releaſed to be a Mother of that great Off-ſpring which after followed.

Beſides theſe two Statutes formerly mentioned, I find ſome others concerning State-Government enacted this Seſſion, which therefore I ſhall inſert here.

Whereas in the 19. *Hen.* 7. 7. a Law was made, That no Maſters, Wardens, and Fellowſhip of Crafts, or Rulers of Guilds and Fraternities, ſhould take upon them to make any Acts or Ordinances, ne to execute any heretofore made by them, or hereafter to be made, in diſheritance or diminution of the Kings Prerogative, nor of other, nor againſt the common profit of the People, except the ſame Act where examined or approved by the Chancellor of *England*, or chief Juſtice of either Bench, or three of them, or before the Juſtices of Aſſiſe in their Circuit or Progreſs, in the Shire where ſuch Acts or Ordinances are made, upon pain of forfeiture, *&c.* Sith which time, divers Acts and Ordinances contrary to the meaning of the ſaid Act have been made; it was now ordered that Apprentices ſhould pay but little Fees at their entry, and that no other ſhould be given to reſtrain them from keeping Shops when they were Freemen. And as this was much to the benefit of thoſe who would learn and ſet up Trades and Occupations, ſo it was thought by ſome it would be much more, when the myſteries of the ſaid Trades (as far as could be expreſſed by words) might be Commanded to be publiſhed in Print; to the end that all men (who would) might learn them, and an honeſt emulation (who ſhould do beſt) might quicken induſtry, and bring down the prizes of things: Or if this were not permitted, that at leaſt due order were taken, that the Maſters in all Trades might be reſtrained from packtogether to inhance Wares and Commodities, but by the approbation of the Lord Chancellor, Lord Treaſurer, *&c.* as being to that common profit of the Subject, (mentioned in the Statute) which is more to be eſteemed than any mans particular gain.

In ſequence whereof, alſo another Act was made concerning the prizes of Wine, to this effect; that no *French* Wine ſhould be ſold by

by retail above two pence a quart, and no *Malmeſies*, *Ramnies* (being Wines of *Romania* as I take it) *Sacks* or ſweet Wines, ſhould be above three pence the quart. Provided always that the Lord Chancellor, Lord Treaſurer, Lord Preſident of the Kings Council, Lord Privy-Seal, and the two chief Juſtices of either Bench, or five, four or three of them ſhould have Power and Authority by their directions to ſet the prizes of Wines; the ſaid prizes to be publiſhed in Chancery, in the Term time, or in ſuch Cities, Towns and places where Wines are ſold in groſs; the contents or quantity of Liquor alſo, to be held in every Veſſel, was expreſſed in the ſaid Statute; and Remedy given for loſs ſuſtain'd in thoſe which wanted meaſure: ℣ And though this prevented much couſenage, yet order being not taken to puniſh thoſe who falſified and corrupted Wines, much abuſe in this kind followed. 1536.

Order alſo was taken how Pirates at Sea ſhould be puniſhed.

All Bulls, Breves and Diſpenſations alſo from the Biſhop, or See of *Rome* were declared void; nevertheleſs, that all Marriages Solemniz'd before the third of *November*, 26. of the Kings Reign, and not contrary to Gods Laws, ſhould be good and effectual. And alſo that Arch-biſhops, Biſhops, and all Eccleſiaſtical Perſons and orders of this Realm, might keep and retain their Arch-biſhopricks, Biſhopricks, *&c.* and exerciſe all things pertaining to their Dignities, Offices, Orders, Cures, *&c.* And that the effect and contents of all Bulls, Breves, Faculties, *&c.* purchaſed of the See of *Rome*, which be allowable, and may be lawfully granted by the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, by the Authority of the Laws and Statutes of this Realm, ſhould be confirmed under the great Seal at the humble ſuit of the Petitioners for the ſame.

Alſo, for the more confirmation of the Kings Supremacy (enacted two years ſince) it was now ordained, that every Eccleſiaſtical and Lay-Officer, ſhall be ſworn to renounce the ſaid Biſhop and his Authority, and to reſiſt it to his Power; reputing any Oath (heretofore taken for the maintenance of the ſame) to be void. And the refuſal of this Oath ſhall be adjudged High Treaſon. 1534.

Some Eccleſiaſtical Conſtitutions alſo were made, during this ſhort Seſſions of Parliament, (beginning the eighth of *June*, and ending the eighteenth of *July* next following.) But to leave the leſs important to be ſeen in their places, I ſhall here briefly ſet down the Reſultance of certain Articles concluded in the Convocation concerning Religion. Theſe Articles (as I gather out of our Records) were deviſed by the King himſelf, and recommended afterwards to the Convocation-houſe by *Cromwell*, who being lately made Baron, and Lord Privy-Seal, and then Vicegerent General of the Kings authority in Eccleſiaſtical affairs, gave much Subject of diſcourſe. For though the King ſubſtituted him for due Adminiſtration of Juſtice in all Cauſes and Caſes concerning Eccleſiaſtical Juriſdiction, as well as for Godly Information, and redreſs of all July 9.

1536. errours, Hereſies and abuſes of the Church, as the Act of Parliament hath it, 31 *Henry* 8. 10. yet becauſe there was no example, either of King of *Iſrael*, they ſaid, (though lawfully in their own Perſon, enjoying this mixt Power of Spiritual and Temporal,) or of Popes, that derive their whole Eccleſiaſtical Power immediately on any elſe, eſpecially a ſecular Perſon, they thought it ſtrange: But that I may paſs by thoſe things whereof no Publick reaſon that I have ſeen, is extant, I ſhall in theſe Articles obſerve rather the chief variation they had from the former Doctrines, than repeat the Doctrines themſelves, as being ſufficiently known.

After eſtabliſhing (therefore) the Bible, and three received Creeds, with the Explication of the Fathers and the four firſt Councils, as the grounds of Religion: He made, according to his definition of Sacraments, three only. Firſt, Baptiſm for waſhing away of ſins. Secondly, Penance for ſatisfaction of faults afterwards committed both towards God and our Neighbour. Thirdly the Euchariſt: changing in any of them little yet of the ordinary, (as I conceive,) unleſs Auricular confeſſion ſeem not there altogether ſo ſtrictly commanded as before; nor otherwiſe much then in caſe of mortal ſin. And that Prayer, Faſting, Alms-deeds, as being *Fructus digni Pœnitentiæ*, are not to be held as means of our Salvation by way of merit, but of mercy only. For Juſtification, that it was attained by Contrition or true Repentance and Faith, which was to be accompanied with Hope, Charity, and other inward and Spiritual motions and Graces, and outward good works.

Concerning Images, That they had been uſed in the Old Teſtament, and ſometimes (for the abuſe of them) taken away; and allowed in the New (as good Authors declare,) Therefore that the true uſe of them ſhould be taught by Biſhops and Preachers every where, they being permitted to ſtand in Churches no otherwiſe than as Repreſentors of Vertue and ſtirrers of Devotion; And not that rude people ſhould take ſuperſtition thence, as in times paſt, or that Idolatry ſhould enſue; and that the cenſing of them, kneeling before them, and all other honours ſhould be done as in the honour of God only, although they be done before the Images of Chriſt, the Croſs, or of our Lady, or any Saint beſides.

Concerning honouring of Saints; That we ſhould not truſt to obtain at their hands that which is to be had only of God: yet that they were to be honour'd becauſe they reigned in glory, and were examples of vertue, as not fearing to die for Chriſt; and therefore to be taken (in that they may,) to be the advancers of our prayers and demands unto Chriſt, but not to be had in other reverence and honour.

Concerning praying to them; That it is very laudable to uſe theſe words, *All holy Angels and Saints in Heaven, pray for us, and with us, unto the Father, that for his dear Son Jeſu Chriſt's ſake we may have*

1536.

have grace of him, and remiſſion of ſins, with an earneſt purpoſe (not wanting Ghoſtly ſtrength) to obſerve and keep his holy Commandments, and never decline from the ſame again unto our lives end. And that in this manner we ſhould pray to our bleſſed Lady, Saint *John Baptiſt*, and other Apoſtles, ſo that it be done without any vain ſuperſtition, as to think that any Saint is more merciful, or will hear us ſooner than Chriſt, or that any Saint doth ſerve for one thing more than another, or is Patron of the ſame. And that we ſhould keep Holidays in memory of him, and his Saints, upon ſuch days as the Church hath ordain'd, except they be mitigated or moderated by the aſſent or commandment of the ſupream Head; in which caſe the Subjects ought to obey it.

Concerning the Rites and Ceremonies of the Church', as uſing certain Veſtments in Gods ſervice, ſprinkling of Holy-water, giving of Holy bread, bearing of Candles on *Candlemas-day*, giving of Aſhes on *Aſhwedneſday*, bearing of Palms on *Palm-Sunday*, creeping to the Croſs on *Good-Friday*, and offering there unto Chriſt before the ſame, and kiſſing of it, ſetting up of the Sepulchre of Chriſt, the hallowing of the Font, and other like Benedictions made by the Miniſters of Gods Church; as alſo all other laudable Cuſtoms, Rites and Ceremonies; that they were not to be contemn'd and caſt away, but to be uſed and continued, to put us in remembrance of thoſe ſpiritual things that they do ſignifie, not ſuffering them to be forgotten, but renewing them in our memory from time to time: but that none of thoſe Ceremonies have power to remit ſins; but only to ſtir and lift up our minds unto God, by whom only our ſins be forgiven.

Concerning Purgatory; Foraſmuch as according to due order of Charity, and the Book of *Macchabees*, and divers antient Writers, It is a very good and charitable deed to pray for ſouls departed: And foraſmuch as ſuch uſes have continued in the Church even from the beginning, That all Biſhops and Preachers ſhould inſtruct and teach the People not to be grieved with the continuance of the ſame: But foraſmuch as the place where they be, the name thereof, and the kind of pains there alſo, be to us uncertain by Scripture; That therefore this and all other ſuch things were to be remitted to God Almighty, unto whoſe mercy it is meet and convenient to commend them, truſting that God accepteth our prayers for them; referring the reſt wholly to God, to whom is known their ſtate and condition. And therefore that it was neceſſary that ſuch abuſes ſhould be clearly put away, which under the name of Purgatory have been advanced; as to make men believe, That through the Biſhop of *Romes* Pardons, Souls might be clearly delivered out of Purgatory and all the pains of it, or that Maſſes ſaid at *Scala Cœli*, or otherwhere in any place, or before any Image, might likewiſe deliver them from all their pain, and ſend them ſtrait to Heaven; and other like abuſes. This was ſubſcribed by

1536. *Thomas Cromwel*, *Thomas Cantuarienſis*, *Johannes London*, and ſixteen Biſhops more (*Rowland* Biſhop of *Coventry* and *Lichfield* being comprized by his Proxie) and *William* Abbat of *Weſtminſter*, with 39 Abbats and Priors; and by the Lower Houſe conſiſting of 50 Arch-deacons and Proctors of the Clergy; among whom, in the Original, I find two *Italians*, *Polydore Virgil* Arch-deacon of *Wells*, and *Peter Vannes* Arch-deacon of *Worceſter*, who not long before
May 8. was made co-adjutor to *Richard Pace* Dean of *Salisbury*, being then thought commonly diſtracted and out of his wits.

And thus the King having taken on him the title of *Supream Head* of the Church in his Dominions, would ſhew how capable he was of it: Though yet he publiſhed not theſe Articles without much conſultation with his Biſhops and Divines, who ſtood divided in opinion; ſome leaning to the *Lutheran*, as *Canterbury*, *Ely*, *Salisbury*, *Worceſter*, *Hereford*, *Rocheſter*, *S. David* and the reſt: others cleaving to the old Doctrine and Rites, as *York*, *London*, *Durham*, *Wincheſter*, *Chicheſter*, *Norwich* and *Carlile*; whoſe Arguments on either ſide, the King himſelf took pains to peruſe and moderate, adding Animadverſions with his own hand, which are
Records. to be ſeen in our Records: Yet was not his Doctrine approved by the *Romiſh* Party, becauſe it took away much of their Authority and Revenue: nor by the *Lutheran* and *Zuinglian*, (then beginning to appear in theſe parts) becauſe it differ'd from theirs. But whatſoever any of the Reformed might ſay for their only two Sacraments, it was thought by ſome, that according to the Kings Inſtauration, Penance might have been retained ſtill upon ſome terms as a third; both as there is no other general way than Averſion from ſin, and Converſion to God, known to all mankind for making their peace with him, and obtaining pardon. And as the other two Sacraments being particular Rites only of the Chriſtian Church, are in their explication ſubject to ſo much difficulty and diſputes, as no leſs than a mans whole age is required to ſtudy them; when as this other, being an uncontroverted ſign of the operation of Gods Spirit in our hearts, produceth ſuch holy effects, as it ought to be acknowledged not only as a particular Sacrament of grace, but an univerſal of the reaſonable Nature of mankind, whereſoever it be found; and therefore worthy its former Name and Authority, where abuſes in Abſolution were taken away: for performing whereof, they ſaid the Prieſt ſhould never pronounce it but in caſe of ſuch a ſerious repentance as might totally efface the fault, and make the ſinner a new man; without which therefore he ſhould be told, he was as much liable and obnoxious to ſin and puniſhment, as if no ſuch abſolution had ever been given. Whereas now the common Abſolution of Prieſts, extending (for the moſt part) no farther than to require Attrition, or ſorrow for their offences paſt, and to command, for the reſt, ſome formal Prayers, eaſie Faſts, or ordinary Pilgrimages, not only made men believe

they

they were quit of their ſins at ſo eaſie a rate, as they feared not much to return to them again, but uſurped on the power of God, while they brought the forgiveneſs of ſins within their own particular Juriſdiction, and together put off Heaven and everlaſting Happineſs at a cheaper price than either they could juſtly promiſe, or frail man expect. So that they concluded, that Prieſts ſhould be allowed indeed to abſolve, But ſo as men might not think their ſins paſt, as much pardoned as if they had not been committed, unleſs they never do the ſame offence again; leſt greater occaſion and liberty of ſin ſhould thereby be given. 1536.

And now, as the Reader hath formerly ſeen the Reformation *Francis* would have ſtood to, when it might have been imbraced in *Germany*; ſo here he may perceive what our King required in *England*: Neither of which yet could ever be accepted, as long as contentious Preachers and factious School-men on all ſides would have rather diſturb'd the peace of the whole World, than relinquiſhed or retracted one particle of thoſe opinions they had publickly taught their Auditors and Diſciples. For which obſtinacy alſo, as the Reformers, being the weaker, ſuffered moſt, they being uſually burnt in theſe times; and among them one *William Tindal*, who had tranſlated into *Engliſh* a great part of the Bible (a witty, but violent, and ſometimes railing Diſputant) at a Town near *Bruſſels*: ſo on the other ſide, theſe cruelties made the *Romiſh* party ſo odious, as their differences grew almoſt irreconcileable. Sept.

Our King having thus begun to rectifie the frame of Religion, endeavoured now to prevent foreign oppoſition: And becauſe he knew of what conſequence the General Council now appointed at *Mantua*, was, he obtain'd this Decree to be ſigned by the Biſhops while their Synod laſted. Records.

AS concerning General Councils, like as we (taught by long experience) do perfectly know that there never was, ne is any thing deviſed, invented, or inſtituted by our Fore-fathers more expedient, or more neceſſary for the eſtabliſhment of our Faith, for the extirpation of Hereſies, and the aboliſhing of Sects and Schiſms; and finally, for the reducing of Chriſts People unto one perfect unity and concord in his Religion, than by the having of General Councils, ſo that the ſame be lawfully had and congregated in *Spiritu Sancto*, and be alſo conform and agreeable, as well concerning the ſurety and indifferency of the places, as all other points requiſite and neceſſary for the ſame, unto that wholeſome and godly Inſtitution and uſage for the which they were at firſt deviſed and uſed in the Primitive Church. Even ſo on the other ſide, taught by like experience, we eſteem, repute and judge, That there is, ne can be any thing in the world more peſtilent and pernicious to the Common-weal of Chriſtendom, or whereby the truth of Gods Word

1536. Word hath in times paſt, or hereafter may be ſooner defaced and ſubverted, or whereof hath and may enſue more contention, more diſcord, and other deviliſh effects, than when ſuch General Councils have or ſhall be aſſembled not Chriſtenly, nor charitably; but for and upon private malice and ambition, or other worldly and carnal reſpects and conſiderations, according to the ſaying of *Gregory Nazianzenus*, in his Epiſtle to one *Procopius*, wherein he writeth this ſentence following: *Sic ſentio, ſi verum ſcribendum eſt, omnes Conventus Epiſcoporum fugiendos eſſe, quia nullius Synodi finem vidi bonum, neque habentem magis ſolutionem malorum, quam incrementum. Nam Cupiditates Contentionum, & gloriæ (ſed ne putes me odioſum iſta ſcribentem) vincunt rationem*: That is to ſay, 'I 'think this, if I ſhould write truly, that all general Councils be to 'eſchewed. For I never ſaw that they produced any good end or 'effect, nor that any proviſion or remedy, but rather increaſe of 'miſchiefs proceeded of them. For the deſire of maintenance of 'mens opinions and Ambition of Glory, (but reckon not that I 'write this of malice) hath always in them overcome reaſon. Wherefore we think that Chriſtian Princes eſpecially and above all things ought and muſt, with all their Wills, Power, and Diligence foreſee and provide, *Ne ſanctiſſima hac in parte Majorum inſtituta ad improbiſſimos Ambitionis aut Malitiæ effectus explendos diverſiſſimo ſuo fine & ſceleratiſſimo pervertantur. Neve ad alium prætextum poſſint valere & longe diverſum effectum Orbi producere, quam Sanctiſſima Rei facies præ ſe ferat.* That is to ſay: 'Leſt the moſt noble 'wholſome Inſtitutions of our Elders in this behalf be perverted to 'a moſt contrary and moſt wicked end and effect. That is to ſay, 'to fulfil and ſatisfie the wicked affections of mens Ambition and 'Malice; or leſt they might prevail for any other colour, or bring 'forth any other effect, than their moſt vertuous and laudable coun-'tenance doth outwardly to the world ſhew or pretend. And firſt of all, we think that they ought Principally to conſider who hath the Authority to call together a general Council. Secondly, whether the cauſes alledged be ſo weighty and ſo urgent, that neceſſarily they require a general Council, nor can otherwiſe be remedied. Thirdly, who ought to be Judges in the general Council. Fourthly, what order of proceeding is to be obſerved in the ſame, and how the opinions or Judgements of the Fathers are to be conſulted or asked. Fifthly, what Doctrines are to be allowed or defended: with divers other things which in general Councils ought of reaſon and equity to be obſerved. And as unto the firſt point, we think that neither the Biſhop of *Rome*, ne any one Prince of what Eſtate, Degree, or Preeminence ſoever he be, may by his own Authority call, indite, or ſummon any general Council without the expreſs Conſent, Aſſent, and Agreement of the reſidue of Chriſtian Princes; and eſpecially, ſuch as have within their own Realms and Seignories *Imperium merum*, that is to ſay, of ſuch as have the whole intire and Supream

Supream Government and Authority over all their Subjects, without knowledging or Recognizing of any other Supream Power or Authority. And this to be true, we be induced to think by many and ſundry, as well Examples, as great Reaſons and Authority. The which, foraſmuch as it ſhould be over-long, and tedious to expreſs here particularly, we have thought good to omit the ſame for this preſent. And in witneſs that this is our plain and determinate ſentence, opinion, and judgment touching the premiſſes, we the Prelates and Clergy under-written, being Congregate together in the Convocation of the Province of *Canterbury*, and repreſenting the whole Clergy of the ſame, have to theſe preſents ſubſcribed our Names the Twentieth of *July*, in the year of our Lord, 1536. 28. *Hen.* 8. 1536.

Thomas Cromwell.
Thomas Cantuarienſis.
Johannes London.

With 13 Biſhops: And of Abbots, Priors, Arch-deacons, Deans, Proctors, Clerks and other Miniſters, 49.

After which, he ſet forth an injunction to reſtrain the number of Holy-days, now grown to that exceſs, that there was ſcarce time to gather in Harveſt, or hold the ſeats of Juſtice in Term time; which as it was inconvenient, ſo again the abuſe of Holy-days in Drinking, and other Vices and Idleneſs was ſo great, as many Riots and Diſorders were committed; for which reaſon, though the number was limitted, yet Prieſts were ſuffered to do their duties in Churches on theſe days, and all who would to hear them. And now as the poorer ſort were at liberty to work for their living on thoſe days, ſo they approved well this Reformation. Whereby it came to paſs that the Reverence of ſuppoſed Saints (whereupon much of the *Roman* Religion was built) growing to an exceſs, became one of the firſt degrees to the Ruine thereof in this Kingdom. In ſequence of which, the ſame year he commanded (under the name of *Cromwel* his Vice-gerent) theſe Injunctions following to be obſerved of the Deans, Parſons, Vicars, Curates, and Stipendaries reſident, or having care of Souls each where. *Fox.* *Fox.*

1. And Firſt, that in all Pariſhes and places of Preaching, once every *Sunday* for a quarter of a year together, the Doctrine of Supremacy ſhould be taught, and the Laws to that purpoſe read, and that the Biſhop of *Rome*'s Authority having no eſtabliſhment by the Law of God was juſtly taken away.

2. That in the Kings Articles, lately ſet forth, the Real Doctrine of Salvation ſhould be diſtinguiſh'd from the Rites and Ceremonies of the Church, and ſo taught the People as they might know, what was neceſſary in Religion, and what was Inſtituted for the decent and

1536. and Politick order of the Church, according to such a Commandment given heretofore in that point.

3. That the late order concerning abrogating of certain Superstitious Holy-days, should be read to the people, and they persuaded to keep it.

4. That they should not extol or set forth Images, Reliques, or Miracles, or allure people to Pilgrimages otherwise than as permitted in the late Articles, but rather exhort them to keep Gods Commandments, and provide for their Families, and what they can give, to bestow it rather on the Poor, than upon the said Images, or Reliques.

5. That in their Sermons, they admonish Fathers to teach their Children the *Pater noster*, Articles of our Faith, and Commandments in their Mother-tongue; which also should be often repeated by the said Youth, and to bring them up in Learning, or some honest Occupation or Trade, whereby to avoid idleness, and get their living.

6. That Sacraments and Sacramentals be duly and Reverently administred by the Parsons, Vicars, and Curates; and if any be absent from their Benefices by Licence, that Learned Curates be left in their place.

7. That every Parson or Proprietary of a Church should provide a Bible in *Latine* and *English*, and lay the same in the Quire for every man to read, exhorting them thereunto, as being the Word of God, teaching them withall to avoid Controversie amongst themselves in the places they understood not, but to refer themselves therein to the better Learned.

8. That the said Deans, Parsons, Vicars, and Curates should not haunt Taverns nor Ale-houses, or use Tables, Cards, or any unlawful Games, but rather at their leisure that they should read the Holy Scripture, and be example to others in purity of life.

9. That because the goods of the Church are the goods of the Poor, and yet the needy in these days not sustained with the same, therefore all Parsons, Vicars, and Prebendaries, and other Beneficed men, which may dispend twenty pounds yearly, or above, should distribute amongst the poor Parishioners in the presence of the Church-wardens, the fortieth part of the Revenue of their Benefices, lest they should be noted of Ingratitude, as receiving thirty-nine parts, and yet not vouchsafing to bestow the fortieth.

10. That every Parson, Vicar, Clerk, or Beneficed man, being able to dispend in Benefices or Promotions of the Church 100 *l.* yearly, or more, shall for one, or every of the said 100 *l.* yearly, give a competent Exhibition to maintain one Scholar, or more, either in Grammar-Schools, or the Universities of *Oxford* and *Cambridge*, who when they have profited in Learning, may be Partners in their Patrons Cure and charge, in Preaching and otherwise, or else profit the Common-wealth with their Counsel and Wisdom.

11. That

11. That all Parſons, Vicars and Clerks having Churches, Chappels, or Manſions, ſhall beſtow yearly upon the ſaid Manſions or Chancels of their Churches (being in decay) the fifth part of their Benefices, till they had fully repaired the ſame. 1536.

That all theſe Injunctions ſhould be obſerved, under pain of ſuſpenſion and Sequeſtration of the Benefices until they were done.

Other Injunctions alſo at divers times were ſet out, which may be ſeen in *Fox*. But as the People were not generally ſatisfied with the Kings alterations, and proceedings in Religion and Laws: So certain fifteenth, granted by Act of Parliament, which were demanded of them (about theſe times) being more than for their Poverty and former Taxes they were well able to pay, made them not a little murmur; but if this were a Crime in them, *Cromwel* was not altogether free from error; ſince to charge the Purſe at the ſame time, that he would make a Reformation plauſible, could be no ſafe Counſel; and in effect, it proved ſo. For the People did riſe in many places; though as they agreed not alike in the cauſes of their diſcontentments, they neither took Arms at once, nor altogether for the ſame Pretexts. The *Lincolnſhire*-men ſet on by one Doctor *Mackrel* (Prior of *Barlings* in the ſaid County, but calling himſelf Captain Coblet) began firſt, though the moderateſt in their demands, as hoping, perchance, the ſooner to have them granted. But as thir was not the way, ſo neither could they long ſubſiſt, when no ſuch neceſſary motive united them.

The Grievances they ſent the King in the quality of moſt humble Suppliants, were, The ſuppreſſion of ſo many Religious houſes: The Act of Uſes, as reſtraining the Subjects liberty in the Declaration of their wills: The fifteenths, for which yet Poverty is only pleaded: That his Grace had ill Counſellors, and of mean Birth about him, (among which *Cromwel* was not forgotten;) That divers Biſhops had ſubverted the Faith, and that they feared the Jewels and Plate of their Pariſh Churches ſhould be taken from thence, as lately from the Religious Houſes. For Reformation of which, yet, they, as his poor and true Subjects, humbly deſired his Gracious Majeſty to call to him the Nobility of the Realm, and to ſee ſuch order and directions concerning the premiſſes given, as they might accept his Grace to be their Governour and Supream Head of the Church of *England*, which they did acknowledge to be his Graces true Inheritance and Right: And that his Grace ſhould have the Tenth, and Firſt-fruits of Spiritual Promotions of the value of twenty pounds and above, and of all other under the ſaid value, which do not keep Reſidence and Hoſpitality.

And now theſe Articles being publiſhed in the Neighbourhood, and thence voiced abroad, drew many to them; while yet for more colouring their Actions, they ſwore to be true to God,

1536. the King, and Common-weal. Nevertheleſs, as they reſerv'd the interpretation of the Oath to themſelves, they began a dangerous Rebellion. All which being advertiſed to our vigilant King, cauſed him immediately to diſpatch *Charles Brandon* Duke of *Suffolk*, againſt them, about the ſeventh of *October* (as I find by an Original) with Commiſſion to raiſe Forces: together with
Octob. 7. which he writ a Letter to them in ſuch a ſtile, as though he might promiſe Juſtice, he yet required many things, and particularly that two of the chief Rebels ſhould be delivered to him. Whereupon the Knights and Gentlemen, who were aſſociated with theſe Rebels, wrote to the Duke of *Suffolk*, how ill the People were ſatisfied with the Kings Reply; and that upon reading of it, they cryed they would march on, and make the Gentlemen go along, or elſe deſtroy them. And that for this cauſe they had taken on them to be their Heads and Captains; as alſo that by policy they might the better ſtay them: which yet they thought would be hard to do, in regard the People roſe in ſo many other parts. Adding further, that if they had not found means to keep them back, and perſuaded them to Petition the King, they had before then been at *Huntington*; and that there was no ways to appeaſe them but a general Pardon. This Letter made it ſelf conſiderable; for when it were a true Allegation, it had its pretext, though not ſufficient to excuſe the Gentlemen: and when not, it was cunningly remonſtrated; for it ſerved both ways. Howbeit, the Duke of *Suffolk* finding that the end thereof, at worſt, was to obtain a general Pardon; and that the Commotion might end thereby, ſollicited on their behalf: yet ſo as he offered withal to go againſt the Rebels with the Forces he had there aſſembled, if the King gave him leave. In the mean while, he ordered the buſineſs in that manner, that he obtain'd of them not to proceed till the Kings Anſwer were returned. But the King, who was informed already from divers parts (but chiefly from *Yorkſhire*) that the People began there alſo to take Arms; and knowing of what great conſequence it might be, if the great perſons in thoſe parts (though the Rumour were falſe) ſhould be ſaid to joyn with him, had commanded *George* Earl of *Shrewsbury*, *Thomas Mannors* Earl of *Rutland*, and *George Haſtings* Earl of *Huntingdon*, to make a Proclamation to the *Lincolnſhire*-men, ſummoning and commanding them under their Allegiance and peril of their lives to return: Which as it much diſheartned them, ſo many ſtole away, while the reſt (being aſſured from the Duke, that as long as they were in Arms, it was in vain for him to mediate their Pardon) ſcattered themſelves to divers parts; the more ſtubborn and poorer ſort yet retiring to the *Yorkſhire*-men. Beſides, they had heard, that (notwithſtanding the foul ways of this Country, and the Winter ſeaſon approaching) the great Ordnance was coming on, and the King in Perſon following: All which conſiderations, together with

with the danger that divers of the principal Ring-leaders found themſelves in, as being men of good Fortunes, and ſure to ſuffer moſt, cauſed them to perſuade thoſe who remained, to make their ſubmiſſion as the King required; which was, That they ſhould acknowledge their fault, deliver up their Armour, and approve and maintain all the Acts of Parliament made ſince the Kings Reign. 1536.

And ſo this buſineſs ended: though not that of *Yorkſhire*, which paſſed in this manner: While the *Lincolnſhire* commotion was on foot, the *Yorkſhire* men made an Inſurrection under the command of one *Robert Aske*; They would have it call'd yet only a Pilgrimage of Grace; while, for giving it reputation, certain Prieſts with Croſſes led the way, the Army following with Banners, wherein were painted the Crucifix, the five wounds, and the Chalice. And becauſe they deſired to draw in as many good Perſons as they could, they attempted firſt *William* Lord *Dacres* of *Gilleſland*, adviſing him (as being of late wrongfully accuſed, and in danger, had not his Peers acquitted him) to joyn with them, but he refuſed: Then they ſent to invite divers others, uſing threats, where perſuaſions ſerved not; inſomuch, that at laſt they made ſundry Perſons of quality ſwear to be faithful to them: for they pretended only the good of the King and Common-wealth, the Church and Religion, and the depreſſing of Hereticks. 1534. July.

They being now aſſembled in great number, the diſpoſſeſſed and diſcontented Monks every where made Petitions to *Aske* for remedy; who I find alſo re-eſtabliſhed them in divers places, wiſhing them to pray for the King, and to take up Victuals of the Farmers of the ſaid Monaſteries upon Bill, till their ſuit were granted. Which being advertiſed to the King on the one ſide, and (preſently after) that the Commons of *Richmont*, *Lancaſhire*, *Durham*, *Weſtmerland*, &c. were up in another place, and had fired the Beacons, made him think what he had to do: Yet was not his ſervice neglected by ſome of the Nobility there, eſpecially *George Talbot* Earl of *Shrewsbury*, who raiſing many men before he received the Kings Commiſſion for it, did by this dangerous diſcretion much advance his ſervice. For though his zeal for the welfare of the State were above ſcruples, and that ſome learned men in the Law beſides had told him, That his intention being good, his action could not be conſtrued ill: He yet ſaid, he knew his danger ſo well, as he had ſent to the King for a Pardon; while for deterring the Rebels, as well as the ſatisfying many, who otherwiſe might have ſuſpected him, he gave an Oath to his men to be true unto the King; proteſting further, that according to the ancient Loyalty of the *Talbots* to the Crown, when it had been upon a ſtake, he would have liv'd and dyed in defence of it. And now the firſt order the King gave was to command the Duke of *Suffolk*'s ſtay in *Lincolnſhire*, leſt they ſhould riſe again. Then he appointed *Holliſhead.*

1536. Octob. 17. the Earl of *Shrewsbury* as his Lieutenant, to march with a great Army and the Canon, againſt the Northern men: He writ alſo to *Edward Stanley* Earl of *Derby*, to raiſe what Forces he could, promiſing to repay his Charges. *Henry Courtney* alſo Marqueſs of *Exeter*, Couſin-german to the King, and the Earls of *Huntingdon* and *Rutland* offered themſelves to the Kings ſervice. And becauſe now divers Monks in thoſe parts were reſtored to their Monaſteries by the Rebels (as I find particularly thoſe of *Sally*, *Whally*, *Norton*, and *Hexam*) he commanded them to be taken out, and Martial Law to be uſed againſt them. Yet as the noiſe of this Inſurrection was by continual Courriers augmented, *Thomas Howard* Duke of *Norfolk* about the twentieth of *October*, was diſpatch'd with Forces to aſſiſt the Earl of *Shrewsbury*: who writ to the King, That the *Yorkſhire* men, as being uſed to Arms, were more conſiderable than thoſe of *Lancaſhire*, yet that they could not long continue together, but for lack of means to provide Victuals otherwiſe than by Rapine; and the ſeaſon of the year: And that the beſt way was to perſuade them to lay down their Arms, or ſow ſedition among them.

This while *Aske* and his Company advancing forward, forced *Edward Lee* Arch-Biſhop of *York*, and *Thomas* Lord *Darcy* to ſurrender to them *Pomfret* Caſtle, and take the Oath; which was, That they ſhould enter into this Pilgrimage of Grace for the love of God, the preſervation of the Kings Perſon and Iſſue, the purifying of the Nobility, and expulſing all Villan blood, and evil Counſellors; and for no particular profit for themſelves, nor to do diſpleaſure to any, nor to Slay nor Murder any for Envy; but to put away all fears, and take afore them the Croſs of Chriſt, his Faith, and the reſtitution of the Church, the ſuppreſſion of Hereticks and their opinions. But as this Caſtle was ſtrong, the Arch-Biſhop and Lord *Darcy* (though pretending want of furniture and proviſion to hold out) were ſuſpected to have render'd it in favour of the Rebels. They ſtayed not yet ſo, but took the City of *York* and *Hull*; and betwixt Force and Intreaty drew moſt of the great Perſons in thoſe parts unto them. While not content to have a pretext of Religion, they by falſe tales got many Partizans: therefore they gave out as before they had done in *Lincolnſhire*, that all the gold in *England* ſhould be brought to the Tower to be touch'd; and that the King claim'd all the Cattel unmark'd as his: as alſo all the Goods and Ornaments of Pariſh Churches; that they ſhould pay Fines for Chriſtenings, Weddings and Buryings, and for Licences to eat White bread, and the daintier ſorts of Meats, *&c.* And this again ſtirred rancor in the Peoples hearts.

Octob. 20. *Aske* and his Followers being now in *Pomfret*, *Lancaſter* the Herald came with a Proclamation from the Earl of *Shrewsbury*, requiring it to be read. But *Aske* ſitting in State, and having the Arch-Biſhop on the one hand, and the Lord *Darcy* on the other, deſired

desired first to know the contents; which being told, he said it should not be proclaimed. Nevertheless, he gave the Herald a safe conduct, as long as he ware his Coat. 1536.

But the Rebels not contented thus, required *Henry Clifford* Earl of *Cumberland* (being then in his Castle of *Skipton*) to joyn with them: But he by Letter assures the King, that though 500 Gentlemen (retain'd at his cost) had forsaken him, he would yet continue the Kings true Subject, and defend his Castle (in which he had great Ordnance) against them all. Sir *Ralph Evers* also kept *Scarborough* Castle with no less courage against the Rebels; he and his Company having no sustenance but Bread and Water for the space of twenty days that they Besieged him. Octob. 26.

The King being now in *Windsor*, intends in Person to go against the Rebels, commanding his Nobles for this purpose to meet him at *Northampton November 7*. And it was time to take some good order, for they were now grown to be thirty thousand men; in which number (being divided into three Battels) they presented themselves before *Doncaster*: near which, the Duke of *Norfolk*, Earl of *Shrewsbury*, and Marques of *Exceter* were Encamped with an Army, though little in number (as being but five thousand) yet better furnished. And two ways they had to pass the River *Don* to the Town; a Bridge, and a Foord: The Bridge the Duke took on him to defend; not neglecting yet to entertain them with a Treaty, as expecting daily more Forces: The Foord was undertaken by the rest of the Army. This alone yet could not have stayed the Rebels; but a great Rain falling that night, so increased the Water, that it was not passable the next day: Besides, by the coming of some shot, the Bridge was so fortified, that it was now defensible. This hindered not the Treaty; for the Duke of *Norfolk* and the rest knowing of what importance it was to gain time till all the Kings Forces were assembled, and having intelligence besides among the Rebels, got a Petition from them to be delivered to the King, which Sir *Ralph Elecker* and *Robert Bowes* should carry, (who though manfully defending *Hull* against the Rebels, were at last forced to joyn and take the Oath.) The Duke himself also promised to go with them, upon condition that there might be a Cessation from Hostility in the mean time; which was condescended to. Coming thus to Court, and the Duke being first heard (who acquainted the King with the state of all things) the aforesaid Commissioners presented the intrusted Petition with many excuses on their own part. But the King, who desir'd still to gain more time, would return no present answer; and the rather, because he was informed by the Duke that the Rebels began to Disband; for the Treaty disheartned and divided them, while Rumours were dispersed every where, that some of the Chiefs would Compound for themselves, and leave the rest to the Gallows. Insomuch that daily and nightly they ran away, especially Octob. 22. Octob. 26.

1536. especially the poorer sort, who had neither means to subsist, nor might have leave from their Captain to take any thing by force; which being advertis'd to the King, made him both give private order to discharge those Troops he had appointed to meet him at *Northampton*, and to detain *Elecker* and *Bowes*, upon pretext that some Innovation had been attempted by the *Yorkshire* men since their coming up; Nevertheless, at last for clearing all suspition (since the Commons took this detention of their Messengers so ill, that they encourag'd one another to be in Arms again at an hours warning) the King thought fit to send his answer; yet not by them, but by the Duke of *Norfolk*, together with a safe conduct (under the Great Seal) for three hundred Persons to meet in the Town of *Doncaster* for concluding all things; neither did the King doubt to admit this great number, as being confident they would not only less agree among themselves, but that some would be won to his Party. After which, the said *Elecker* and *Bowes* had their dispatch too, as being commanded to say, that his Majesty took it marvelous unkindly at their hands, that knowing his Benignity, they would rather rise in Arms than Petition his Majesty, and that they had left their Countrey open to the *Scots*, who prepared to invade them; Referring the rest to the Duke of *Norfolk*, who brought (as I gather out of those Originals I have seen) the offer of a Pardon to all, except six named, and four un-named, when the rest would submit. But as the four unnamed concern'd every body, so it was declined. Nevertheless, certain Books the King sent down, which were, as I take it, the Articles of Religion, devised by himself, being received by them, took away much misunderstanding and ill impression which their discontented Priests had given; while for accompanying hereof, express order was sent to the Bishops in their several Dioceses, not to neglect the usual Ceremonies of the Church. Hereupon the Clergy of those parts met at *Pomfret*, and agreed on certain Articles of Religion, to be propos'd in the following Treaty. The Arch-Bishop of *York* being present, and taking occasion to tell them, that though Pilgrimages were good, yet an Armed Pilgrimage could not be lawful. After this, a day of meeting at *Doncaster* was appointed, in which *John* Lord *Scroop*, Lord *Latimer*, *John* Lord *Lumley*, and *Thomas* Lord *Darcy*, Sir *Thomas Percy*, *Robert Aske*, and about 300 persons, were to Treat with the Duke of *Norfolk*, Sir *William Fitz-William* Admiral of *England*, and the rest: But concerning *Aske*, there was some difficulty, the Rebels demanding Hostages for his safe return. But the King inform'd hereof, answered, that he knew no Gentleman or other, whom he esteemed so little, as to put him in pledge for such a Villain; therefore he wished the Duke of *Norfolk* and the rest, to assure the passages over the River *Don*, and to secure *Doncaster*: And whereas the Rebels had demanded an abstinence from War for fourteen days, in case no agree-

Novemb.

Dated Nov. 14.

Dated Nov. 13.

Kings Letter, dated Novemb. 19

ment

ment ſhould be made; not to grant it, as being time given them to fortifie themſelves, whereas he ſhould rather win it from them by Policy for his own advantage. But the Duke of *Norfolk* ſuppoſing that a general Pardon and a Parliament in thoſe parts (which they required) might quiet all, had by Letter to our King, perſuaded him to accord it, or elſe to March towards the Rebels with an Army of Gentlemen and Houſhold Servants, and not to truſt the Commons; ſince the Rebels, though they had laid down Arms, had yet (upon firing of Beacons and other Signals) agreed among themſelves to reſume them again on all occaſions. And now on *December* the ſixth, the 300 on the part of the Commons came to *Doncaſter* to the Kings Lieutenants, where their firſt demand was a general Pardon, then a Parliament to be held in thoſe parts, and a Court of juſtice, that none beyond *Trent* might be cited to *London* in Law Suits. After which, they deſir'd a repeal of the Act of Parliament for the laſt Subſidy, for Uſes, for Miſpriſion of Treaſon for words, for Tenths and Firſt-fruits; then that the Lady *Mary* might be reſtored to her Legitimation, the Pope to his wonted Juriſdiction, and the late expulſed Monks to their Houſes; The *Lutherans* to be puniſhed, the Lord Privy-Seal and Lord Chancellor to be excluded from the next Parliament, and the Doctors *Leigh* and *Layton* to be Impriſon'd for Bribery and Extortion. But as theſe demands were more inſolent than thoſe of the *Lincolnſhire* men, and howſoever ſuch as the King would not accord, the Lords rejected them; whereupon the Rebels aſſembled in great numbers, divers others alſo, deſirous to know the ſucceſs, appearing among them. Which cauſed the Duke of *Norfolk* to write again to the King what a multitude was gotten together, and if no agreement followed, his Highneſs Army was in ill eſtate to reſiſt. Therefore, he and his Aſſociates deſired his Grace to ſend them inſtructions for divers degrees of proceeding with the Rebels, and that the laſt might be for gaining of time, in caſe they came to no agreement.

1536.

Nov. 26.

The King finding theſe difficulties, and ſuſpecting beſides that the Emperor had or would have a hand therein, and that the Rebels might have aſſiſtance from *Scotland*; and for the reſt, believing that all was but miſ-underſtanding in the ſimpler ſort, which yet he hoped his Book of Articles, and other good orders would in time Rectifie, ſent to the Duke of *Norfolk* a general Pordon for the Rebels, and promiſe of a Parliament, with directions yet to the Duke, that he ſhould not make uſe thereof, but in caſe of extremity. But the Duke and the other Lords finding ſo many gathered together, as their number was very great; and being not able to diſtinguiſh thoſe who came on the Rebels part, from ſuch as curioſity only brought thither; and conſidering that the firſt denial of their demands had ſo inflamed them, that they intended to have fallen upon the Town of *Doncaſter*, (had not the River this

ſecond

1536. second time ſwelling by Rain, the Night preceding, prevented their attempt) made uſe of the Kings general Pardon and promiſe of a Parliament, which they all gladly accepted, and returned home. The contents of this Pardon, dated *December* 9. at *Richmond*, and Sealed with the Great Seal, was, as our Records ſhew, that the King granted them all a general and free Pardon of all Rebellion, Treaſons, Felonies, and Treſpaſſes, unto the day of the date thereof; provided that they make their ſubmiſſion to the Duke of *Norfolk* and Earl of *Shrewsbury* (the Kings Lieutenant,) and that they Rebel no more. I find alſo by our Records, that to the Petition (formerly mentioned) ſent by *Ellecker* and *Bowes*, the King ſent a Reply pen'd by himſelf; which I doubt not gave much ſatisfaction (as another had before done to this effect ſent to the *Lincolnſhire* men.) It was this:

Records. Firſt, as touching the maintenance of the Faith, the terms be ſo general, that it would be very hard to make certain anſwer to the ſame; but if they mean the Faith of Chriſt, to the which all Chriſtian men be only bound, we declare and proteſt our ſelf to be that Prince that doth intend, and hath always minded to live and die in the maintenance, defence and obſervation of the purity of the ſame. And that no man can or dare ſet his foot by ours, in proving of the contrary. Marveling therefore much, that ignorant people would go about to take upon them to inſtruct and teach us (which hath been noted ſomething Learned) what the Faith ſhould be. And alſo, that they being ignorant People, be ſo preſumptuous (ſeeing that we and our whole Clergy in Convocation, hath in Articles declared it) as to take upon them to correct us all therein. Or that they would be ſo ingrate and unnatural towards their moſt Rightful King, and Natural Sovereign Lord, without any our deſert, upon falſe reports or ſurmiſes to ſuſpect us of the ſame, and give rather credence to forged light tales, than to the very truth by us theſe twenty-eight years uſed, and by our deeds approved.

The ſecond, which toucheth the maintenance of the Church, and the liberties of the ſame; we ſay it is ſo general a Propoſition, that without diſtinctions no man with troth can anſwer; neither by Gods Laws, nor by the Laws of the Realm. For firſt, the Church which they mean, muſt be known. Secondly, whether thoſe things which they call Liberties, and ſay they would maintain, be things lawful and beneficial to the Prince and Common-wealth, or otherwiſe. And theſe known, we doubt not but they ſhall be anſwered according to Gods Law, Equity, and Juſtice. Nevertheleſs, for all their generality this we dare affirm, that (meaning what Church they liſt) we have done nothing that may not be abiden by, both by Gods Laws and mans Laws, or that is prejudicial to our Common-wealth, if our proceedings may be indifferently conſidered. And in our Church of *England*, whereof we

we be the Supream Head on Earth, we have done nothing so onerous and chargable to them, as many of our Predeceſſors have done upon much leſſer grounds. Wherefore, ſithence this Article pertaineth nothing to any of our Commons, nor that they bear any thing therein, we cannot but reckon a great unkindneſs and unnaturalneſs in them, which had leaver a Churl or twain ſhould enjoy thoſe profits of their Monaſteries for the ſupportation and maintenance of abominable life, than that we their Prince ſhould receive the ſame, towards our extream Charges done, and daily ſuſtain'd for their defence againſt foreign Enemies. 1536.

The third Article toucheth three things, the Firſt is the Laws, the Second is the Common-wealth, the Third the directors of the Laws under us. Touching the Laws, as it becometh not blind men to judge of Colours, ne to take upon them to be Judges of the ſame; ſo we dare expreſly and boldly affirm, as a thing that may be eaſily and duly proved; that there were never in any one of our Predeceſſors days, ſo many wholſome, commodious and beneficial Acts made for the Common-wealth, as have been made in our time; and ſithence ſome of them had credit and doing in our affairs, that would now perchance pick them thank without deſert; for our Lord forbid that both we and our Council ſhould have loſt ſo much time, as not to know better now, than we did in the beginning of our Reign, what were a Common-wealth, and what were againſt the good and commodity of the ſame, ſeeing we have been a King theſe twenty-eight years, and by experience learned the perfectneſs thereof. And although the folly and unkindneſs of ſome will not perchance let them ſo knowledge it, yet we truſt and doubt not but the moſt part of our loving Subjects, eſpecially thoſe which be not ſeduced by falſe report, do both think it, accept it, and find it ſo. Now touching the Common-wealth, what King hath kept his ſo long in Wealth and Peace, ſo long without taking or doing wrong one to another, ſo indifferently miniſtred juſtice to all Eſtates both high and low, ſo defended them from all outward Enemies, ſo fortified the Frontier of his Realm to his no little, and in manner ineſtimable Charges, and all for their wealths and ſafeties? What King hath given among his Subjects more general and freer pardons? What King hath been loather to puniſh his Subjects, or ſhewed more mercy among them? Theſe things being ſo true as no true man can deny them; it is an unnatural and an unkind demeanour of you our Subjects, to believe or deem the contrary of it, by whoſe report ſoever it ſhould be ſet forth againſt us. And at the beginning of our Reign where it is ſaid, that ſo many Noble-men were Counſellors; we do not forget who were then Counſellors; for of the Temporalty, there were but two worthy to be called Noble, the one the Treaſurer of *England*, the other the High Steward of our Houſhold.

1536. Others, as the Lord *Marney* and *Darcy*, but mean born Gentlemen, nor yet of any great Lands, till they were promoted by us, and ſo made Knights and Lords; the reſt were Lawyers and Prieſts, ſaving the two Biſhops of *Canterbury* and *Wincheſter*. If theſe be then the great number of Noble-men that is ſpoken of, and that our Subjects ſeemed then contented withal, why then be they not much better contented with Us which have ſo many Nobles indeed, both of Birth and condition of our Council. For firſt of the Temporalty of our Privy Council, we have the Duke of *Norfolk*, the Duke of *Suffolk*, the Marqueſs of *Exceter*, the Lord Steward, (when he is preſent) the Earl of *Oxford*, the Earl of *Suſſex*, the Lord *Sands* our Chamberlain, the Lord Admiral Treaſurer of our Houſe, Sir *William Paulet*, Comptroller of our Houſe. And of the Spiritualty, the Biſhop of *Canterbury*, *Wincheſter*, *Hereford*, and *Chicheſter*: and for becauſe it is more than neceſſary to have ſome in our Privy Council Learned in our Laws and Pacts of the World; We by the advice of our whole Council, afore-named, did elect and chuſe into our Privy Council, and alſo in their Rooms, our Chancellor and Privy-Seal; thinking them men in all our opinion moſt meet for the ſame Rooms; and we with our whole Council think it right ſtrange, that ye which be but Brutes and inexpert folk, do take upon you to appoint us who be meet for our Council, and who be not. Mark therefore now, how theſe ſeditious perſons, which thus wrongfully have born you thus in hand, have falſly abuſed you; that reckon there were then more Noble-men in our Privy Council than be now: But yet though of our great clemency and Princely goodneſs we declare now the truth to pull our Subjects from that error and blindneſs they were led and trained to by falſe and untrue ſurmiſe and report; we would again that every of them knew, that it appertaineth not to any Subject to preſume to take upon him the appointment of his King and Sovereign Lord's Council, ne for our part will we take any ſuch thing at any of our Subjects hands. Wherefore, we would that from henceforth they ſhould better remember the duties of good ſubjects to their natural Liege Lord, and meddle no further with thoſe or ſuch like things as they have nothing to do withal.

To the fourth Article, where the Commons do name certain of our Council to be ſubverters both of Gods Law, and the Laws of this Realm, we do take and repute them as juſt and true Executors both of Gods Laws and ours, as far as their Commiſſion under us doth extend. And if any of our Subjects can duly prove the contrary, we ſhall proceed againſt them, and all other offendors therein according to Juſtice, as to our eſtate and dignity Royal doth appertain. And in caſe it be but a falſe and an untrue report, as we verily think it is, then it were as meet, and

ſtandeth

ſtandeth as well with juſtice, that they ſhould have the ſelf-ſame puniſhment which wrongfully have objected this to them, that they ſhould have had if they had deſerved it. And one thing among others cauſeth us to think that this ſlander ſhould be untrue, becauſe it proceedeth from that place which is both far diſtant from that where they inhabit, and alſo from thoſe People which never heard them Preach, nor yet know any part of their converſation. Wherefore we exhort all ye our Commons to be no more ſo light of credit in the believing of evil things ſpoke of us your natural Prince and Sovereign Lord, nor of any of our Prelates and Counſellors; but to think that your King, having ſo long reigned over you with the advice of his Council, hath as good diſcretion to elect and chuſe his Counſellors, as thoſe, whoſoever they be, that have put this in your heads, or ye either, being but ignorant People, and out of all experience of Princes Affairs. 1536.

Here in this final point, which ye our Commons of *Yorkſhire*, *Weſtmerland*, *Cumberland*, *Cumberland*, the Biſhoprick of *Durham*, *Richmond-ſhire*, *Craven*, *Dent*, *Sedbane*, and all other places that have been ſeduced to this Inſurrection do deſire, and alſo in the matter of the whole diſcourſe of your Petitions; we verily think that the reſt of all our whole Commons of many Countreys, to whom you be in manner but an handful, will greatly diſdain, and not bear it, that you take upon you to ſet order to Us and them, and eſpecially to Us, being Sovereign Lord to you both. And that (you being Rebels) you would make them as bearers and partakers of your miſchief, willing them to take pardon for Inſurrections, which verily we think and doubt not, they never minded; but like true Subjects, to the contrary, have both with heart and deed been ready at our call to defend both Us and themſelves. And now for our part, as to your demands, We let you wit, that pardon of ſuch things as you demand, lyeth only in the will and pleaſure of the Prince: But it ſeemeth by your lewd Proclamations and ſafe Conducts, that there be among you, which take upon them both the parts of Kings and Counſellors, which neither by Us, nor by the general conſent of our Realm hath been admitted to any ſuch room. What arrogance is then in thoſe wretches, being alſo of none experience, to preſume to raiſe you our Subjects without commiſſion or Authority; yea and againſt Us, under a cloaked colour of your wealth, and in our name, and as the ſucceſs and end would declare, if we ſhould not be more merciful unto you, than you have deſerved, to your own utter confuſions? Wherefore, we let all you our ſaid Subjects again wit, That were it not that our Princely heart cannot reckon this your ſhameful Inſurrection, and moſt ingrate and unnatural Rebellion to be done of malice or rancor, but rather by a lightneſs given in manner by a naughty Nature to a Commu-

1536. nalty, and a wondrous ſudden ſurreption of Gentlemen; We muſt needs have executed another manner of puniſhment, than if you will humbly knowledge your fault, and ſubmit your ſelves to our mercy, we intend to do (as by our Proclamations we doubt not ye be informed.)

And now this great Company being diſperſed, began to take Books of controverſies in hand, and inform themſelves concerning the Kings Articles of Religion. But the Clergy of the North in general wholly oppoſing the Kings Reformation, kept the Rebellion ſtill on foot, though outwardly ſmothered for a while (as will appear in his place.)

I ſhall come now to Foreign Hiſtory.

Sandov. *Barbaroſſa* being driven from *Tunis*, repairs to the *Turk*, newly return'd from the Expedition to *Perſia*; and perſuades him to take Arms againſt the Emperor; who wanted (he ſaid) only *Algier* to command intirely all that Coaſt of *Affrica*. The counſel pleas'd him; and the rather that *Monſieur de Forreſt* the *French* Ambaſſador concurred therein, and one *Pignaſelo* a Renegado of *Naples*. Aſſembling thus an Army of 200000 men, and 400 Gallies and Ships, (in which were 3000 Pieces of Ordnance) under the command of *Lutſi Baſſa*, He appointed them to be ready at *Velona*, being not above 15 Leagues diſtant from *Otranto* in *Italy*; From whence a ſmall part of the Fleet being ſent to enter that Continent, they choſe rather to fall on *Caſtro* than *Otranto*, or *Brindiſi*, being ſtronger than that they could be gotten eaſily. This great preparative yet, at laſt, came to nothing: for thoſe of *Apulia* not riſing in favour of the *French* (which was hoped) nor *Francis* having any Army near to ſecond him, and *Doria* (beſides that) having taken ſome of their Gallies from them, the *Baſſa* having gotten *Caſtro*, and taken ſtore of Captives, neglected the enterpriſe, and return'd; while *Forreſt* the *French* Ambaſſador died at *Verona*.

1537. June 6. *Sandov.* About this time *Alexandro de Medicis* firſt Duke of *Florence* was betray'd by his Kinſman *Lorenzo de Medicis*, who promiſing to help him to a Lady much deſired by the Duke, enticed him to his Houſe in the Night: but in ſtead of the Lady, *Lorenzo* with two Aſſaſins came in and kill'd him; which yet was revenged by *Coſmo de Medicis*, his Succeſſor.

Though the Emperor were now retir'd to *Spain*, (as is told before,) he yet continued his Wars againſt the *French* in the *Low Countrys* (and the rather, that our King had promiſed to be Neuter betwixt them,) giving order thereupon to beſiege *Theroüenne*; which being advertis'd to *Francis*, cauſed him to raiſe an Army of 25000 men under *Anne Montmorency* his Lieutenant, wherewith (the King being preſent) *Heſdin*, St. *Paul*, and divers other places were taken: while by a publick Act in *Paris* the Emperor

Emperor was declared a Rebel and Felon, and that he had forfeited all the Eſtate he held of the *French* Crown, being *Artois*, *Flanders*, *Charolois*, and ſome others. But ſome conſiderable Forces being raiſed on the Emperors part, and half the *French* Army being diminiſhed by reaſon of Garriſons put into the Towns won, and other occaſions, *Francis* with the reſt of his Army returned. The Imperial Army hereupon, commanded by the *Count de Bures*, took * back St. *Paul*, † ſurpriſed *Monſtreul*, and defeated *Claude de Annebault* Mareſchal of *France*, though bravely defending himſelf after his Victualling of *Theroüenne*. Things being brought to theſe extremities, *Mary* Queen of *Hungary*, Regent of the *Low-Countrys*, mediated and effected a Truce on thoſe parts between the two Princes for three months: while in *Savoy* ſome Towns revolting, the *Count de St. Paul* was ſent thither by *Francis*, who recovered all again, and freed *Turin* then beſieged by the Imperials. Yet *Alonſo de Avalos* Marqueſs of *Guaſto* won back the greateſt part of the Marqueſate of *Saluzzo* in the behalf of *Francois* Marqueſs thereof; who for falling away to the Emperor, was by the *French* King not long ſince deprived of his poſſeſſions. But the Marqueſs enjoyed not this Reſtitution; being kill'd ſoon after with a ſmall ſhot, while he play'd the part of a Canoneer at the Siege of the Caſtle of *Carmagnola*, *Francis* underſtanding now the progreſs of the *Spaniard* in thoſe parts, commands the *Seigneur de Humieres* with ſome *German* Foot to paſs to *Piedmont*, both to defend the places he had gotten there, and take others; who thereupon beſieged *Aſti*, but in vain, it being well defended; ſo that raiſing the Siege, he went to *Albe*, which was rendred him without reſiſtance.

Buſineſſes paſſing thus with various ſucceſs on both ſides, *Francis* thought fit to ſend *Henry* the new *Dauphin* (his Elder Brother *Francis* after four days ſickneſs, being the laſt year dead of a Surfit of drinking cold water after Tenris-play, rather than Poyſon by the Emperors procurement, though one ſuffer'd for it) and *Antoine de Bourbon* Duke of *Vendoſme*, and *Montmorency*, who made their way over the *Alps*, by force took divers Towns, and perform'd many brave exploits; which being advertis'd to the King, made him reſolve to go thither in Perſon, where adviſing with the *Dauphin*, and *Montmorency* what was further to be done, News was brought of a general abſtinence of War concluded by the mediation of the Queen of *Hungary*, from that time being 28. of *November* 1537. till the 22th. of *February* following; for as upon a Truce made a little before in *Picardie* for three months (as aboveſaid) Commiſſioners were ſent to the Emperor to Treat of a Peace, or at leaſt a general Truce, and that for a longer time, ſo this Ceſſation was accorded: And the rather, that the Pope had now a long while mediated it. And by this means, as the Siege was raiſed from *Theroüenne*, ſo the *French* remain'd

1537.
May.
* Jun. 15.
† Jun. 19.
July.
Sept. 5.
July 6.
Octob. 10.
1536.
Aug. 10.
Nov. 28.

1537. remain'd in Poſſeſſion of all they had in *Piedmont*. This Truce being publiſhed, the Marqueſs of *Guaſto* demanded leave to kiſs the hands of *Francis*; which being granted, he with many *Spaniards* in good equipage came towards the Army at *Carmagnola*, while *Francis* for more honouring of *Montmorency*, (as a man who for his rare merits, he thought deſerved that eſteem) took him in the middle, betwixt himſelf and the *Dauphin*, and ſo expected the Marqueſs, who having firſt done his due reſpects, and after Treated of an agreement concerning the *Soldateſque* in the places taken on either part, departed with much ſatisfaction of the reception which *Francis* had given.

The Emperor this while not unmindful of the Princeſs *Mary*, us'd all means for reſtoring her to her legitimation and poſſibility of inheritance. Therefore, deſiring of the Pope that *Reginald Pool* (who a little before had written his Books *de Unione Eccleſiaſtica*) ſhould be made Cardinal, the Pope both eaſily granted it, and in the beginning of 1537. imploy'd him as Legate to *Flanders*, that by this means he might confirm the *Roman Catholicks* in *England*, and advance his deſigns, being to ſtir up Enemies to our King. Though as *Pool* was of the Blood-Royal (his Mother *Margaret* Counteſs of *Salisbury*, being Daughter to *George* Duke of *Clarence*, Brother to *Edward* the IV.) many wanted not, who believed that his zeal was complicate with ſome Ambition to intitle his Line to the Crown, when our King might be depoſed, and his Poſterity, eſpecially by Queen *Anne*, declared Illegitimate. Being now on his way, our King who was inform'd hereof, writ to *Francis* to deny him paſſage through his Kingdom, or to deliver him up as a Rebel, or at leaſt not to treat with him as a Legate; who thereupon diſmiſs'd him. Coming thus to the *Low-Countrys*, his Servant *Michael Throgmorton* was very inquiſitive (as our Records tell us) whether the Queen (being now great) were thought by the Phyſicians to bear a Man-child or Female: which, as it made the intentions of the Cardinal more ſuſpected, ſo it gave occaſion to *John Hutton*, the Kings Agent in the *Low-Countrys*, to gain *Throgmorton*. He was alſo commanded by our King to charge the Queen-Regent there with breach of Treaty, if ſhe received the Cardinal, being (as he called him) a Traitor; which he ſeconded alſo in that manner, that though at firſt ſhe ſaid it was not fit for her to refuſe the Pope's Legate, yet being now urged again, at a time when ſhe was (as is before related) in War with *Francis*, ſhe forbad the Cardinal to enter; telling him, that ſince he was an *Engliſhman* of that quality, his negotiation could not be hidden, and that it might be to her prejudice. Howſoever, the Cardinal ſent a Letter to the Lord *Cromwel*, to clear himſelf of all deſign againſt our King, and diſpatch'd *John Matthei* Biſhop of *Velona* to the Regent, both to charge her with diſobedience to the Apoſtolick

Decemb. 10. 1536.

March.

Apoſtolick See, and to proteſt that Legate was never ſo uſed: adding, that his buſineſs was chiefly to diſpute the errours of our Kings Reformation. But the Lady Regent not liking diſputations of Religion in her Dominions, again refuſed him: So that he was forced to hold his correſpondence in *England* by more clandeſtine means: Whereof, as alſo his other proceedings, his Servant *Throgmorton*, and one Frier *Peto* certified ſome part, as I find by our Records; as alſo his return to *Rome* in *Novemb.* 1537. where he was received with much triumph (as the ſaid *Throgmorton* affirmed.) This proceeding of the Pope's on the other ſide made our King cheriſh the Princes of *Germany*: for which he took this Occaſion. 1537. Novemb.

The Proteſtants finding their late Pacification with the Emperor not obſerved in all points, met again at *Smalcald*, *Febr.* 7. 1537. to conſult what was to be done. Hither *Heldus* came on the Emperors part, who exhorted the Princes, Firſt, To accept the Council indicted: Secondly, To aid the Emperor with money againſt the *Turk*; or (if he ſtirr'd not) againſt the *French* (now uſurping *Savoy*) &c. Thirdly, He objected to them, that they had received into their League new Confederates ſince the Treaty at *Noremberg*. To this the Proteſtants anſwer'd, That for the Council, it was not propoſed in a due manner nor place (the Emperor and Princes having decreed that it ſhould be in *Germany*,) therefore they could not admit it. For the Treaty of Peace at *Noremberg*, it was not broken by them, but by the Emperors Officers, who in the *Camera Imperialis*, contrary to the conditions agreed on, had queſtioned men for cauſes touching Religion. And as for thoſe entred into their League ſince the Treaty of *Noremberg*, It was deſired that they alſo might be comprehended in that Peace; upon which condition they promiſed to furniſh the Emperor ſuch monies as he required. Howbeit, if he offered violence to them, they proteſted to defend them as their Confederates. Feb. 7. 1532.

Things ſtanding thus, King *Henry* privately diſpatched *William Paget* and *Chriſtopher Mount* to *Smalcald*, with Inſtructions to take *France* in their way, and acquaint *Stephen Gardiner* his *Engliſh* Ambaſſador, and the *French* King therewith, and by their directions to do all things, and that the Voyage was to be performed in diſguiſed habit. In concluſion, the ſum of their Inſtructions was, To dehort the *German* Princes from according either with the Emperor, or to the Council indicted; but rather to refer all their differences to him and the *French* King. And herein as the King pretended to ſhew his love to the ſaid Princes, (who, if the Emperor made a Peace with them, ſhould (he ſaid) be ſingly and ſeparately oppreſs'd) ſo he had his own ends, as knowing that if a Council were held, his Actions would receive no favourable cenſure; ſo that though not only the *French* King, but Feb.

1537. March 25. but the Emperor had promis'd (as I find in our Records) That in the Council his Affairs ſhould not be queſtioned; yet he gave them no intire credit. Therefore, after the Proteſtants had ſent him their Recuſation of the Council, He made a publick Proteſtation againſt it; ſhewing, That the Indiction belong'd not to the Biſhop of *Rome*, but to the Emperor, and the Princes who ſhould ſend or come thither. That the time was unfit, War being then betwixt the Emperor and *Francis*; the place inconvenient for the *Engliſh*, as being in *Mantua*, whether they could neither come ſafely, nor declare themſelves freely; That the manner of deciding controverſies in Religion was unjuſt, the Biſhop of *Rome* being Judge in his own cauſe; That therefore the Pope's intention was rather to eſtabliſh his Authority on this occaſion, than to yield to a Reformation, and after all to glory that a Council had damned the contrary opinion. That for his particular therefore, he would not ſome there, as having more reaſon to keep home, and provide againſt the Rebellions and Miſchiefs that the ſaid Biſhop had now for three years ſpace procured or raiſed in his Kingdom, than run new dangers. In concluſion, That nothing remain'd to be done, but that every Prince ſhould reform in his own Kingdom; all other ways being ſuſpect, perillous, and unequal: yet if any could ſhew a better Expedient, he would give ear to it. The *French* King would not declare himſelf yet ſo far; and indeed he had uſe of the Pope at this time. Nevertheleſs, he publickly proteſted again to the Princes, That he would never conſent to a Council which was not aſſembled in a ſafe place, and free manner: and that his Son-in-law, the King of *Scots* was of the ſame mind.

Concil. Trid. *May* now approaching, *Frederic* Duke of *Mantua* required money of the Pope to maintain a Guard for the ſecurity of his City during his Council. But the Pope denying this, or at leaſt requiring, that if he paid this Guard, it might be at his command, found the Duke averſe; ſo that he deferred the Council from *May* to *November*, and then to *May* next, and laſtly, transferred it to *Vicenza*, being in the *Venetian* Territory. And becauſe (by reaſon of theſe delays) many doubted whether the Pope really intended a redreſs to the enormities then generally complained of, he reſolved privately to proceed in a Reformation a year ſince propoſed. And this was a ſingular ingenuity: yet as he referred the buſineſſes to the Cardinals *Contarino*, *Theatino*, *Sadolet*, and *Reginald Pool*, and ſome others who were paſſionate on their own ſide, they produced, after many Conferences, no more than a Remonſtrance of divers abuſes in the Government and Adminiſtration of Eccleſiaſtical Perſons and Affairs; for in the Church Doctrine they would not admit an error. But there were few Princes then living who would not have been glad that ſomething more had been done; but as their Subjects were

Conc. Trid. Sleid. 1536. June.

were ſo much at the Pope's diſpoſe (when he would uſe his Authority,) and as no little ſums were drawn out of their Kingdoms; that I may ſay nothing of Theological points vexed on either ſide. Howbeit, this Reformation (being extant in *Sleidan lib.* 12.) is worth the ſeeing: for certainly it was the occaſion of rectifying divers abuſes in that Church; ſo that it hath been better, or at leaſt warier ever ſince: Whereby it appears, that controverſies in Religion, though they produce many pernicious effects, have yet this one good, that they make both ſides more careful not to offend; while fear leſt perſonal faults ſhould redound to the detriment of the Religion they profeſs, becomes a caution for vertue and good example; ſo can God draw good out of evil; and ſo can man pervert all again: For though indeed there was hope at this time that a further Reformation might have followed, (and certainly it had been the ſafeſt way to begin there) yet as *Luther*, *Stermius*, and others hearing what was done by the Delegates at *Rome*, both irrided it publickly, and rejected all Reformations but their own; ſo all hope of Reconciliation in this kind was precluded: while the Pope and Cardinals hearing thereof again, found now ſo little probability of an accord by endeavouring to come nearer the Proteſtants, that they thought it would rather derogate from the Authority of the Church (as if it might err) than eſtabliſh a general Peace. 1537. *Sleid. Com.* lib. 12.

It is time I return now to thoſe home Affairs which paſſed while thoſe foreign Buſineſſes formerly related were in action.

The Inſurrection of the North was not yet ſo quieted, but that the King thought fit to hold a hand over them: therefore he commanded the Duke of *Norfolk* to ſtay there, and together with the Earl of *Shrewsbury* to compoſe all things: Who thereupon took the ſubmiſſion of the Commons; which was, Firſt, To revoke all Oaths and Promiſes made in the former Inſurrection, asking the King forgiveneſs on their knees. Secondly, to be true to the King, his Heirs and Succeſſors. Thirdly, To obſerve and maintain all Acts of Parliament ſince the firſt year of the Kings Reign. Fourthly, Not to take Arms again, but by his Highneſs Authority. Fifthly, To apprehend all ſeditious perſons. And Sixthly, To remove all the Monks, Friers and Nuns they had reinplaced in the late diſſolved Monaſteries. Together with which theſe Lords had private Inſtructions to bring in the Lord *Thomas Darcy* and *Robert Aske*; and for *Aske*, I find by our Hiſtory and Records, that he came to our King, and that upon the ſubmiſſion aforeſaid, and oath not to depart for any long ſeaſon without the Kings leave, being well received for the preſent, he was diſmiſs'd again. But the Lord *Darcy*, ſuſpecting he ſhould be queſtioned, excuſed himſelf to *Cromwel*; ſaying, 1536. Feb.

1537. That all he did was only for retaining ſo much credit among the Commons, as might better enable him to dō his Highneſs ſervice: adding thereunto a note of the Services he had done the King and his Father for fifty years. But this did not avail; for he was ſent for to *London*, and Impriſoned, that ſo he might no more run ſuch hazards, the King fore-ſeeing the Rebellion would break out again, as indeed it happened: For *Nicolas Muſgrave*, *Thomas Tilby*, and others Beſieged *Carlile* with 8000 men, but were repulſed by the City; and in their return encountred by the Duke of *Norfolk*, who cauſed all the Captains (ſave *Muſgrave*, who eſcaped) and about ſeventy Perſons, by Law-Martial to be hanged on *Carlile* Walls.

Sir *Francis Bigrt*, and one *Halam* attempted alſo to ſurprize the Town of *Hull*; but were prevented, and they both taken and executed. For which Inſurrections, and ſome leſſer which followed, I find yet no reaſon delivered, but that the People were unſatisfied becauſe a Parliament was not held at *York*, according to their expectation; and that they imagin'd the Duke of *Norfolk* had order ſecretly (notwithſtanding the Pardon) to chaſtiſe the principal Offenders. But our King on the other ſide, alledged, that ſince they had not reſtored all the Religious Houſes, in which they had reinplaced the Monks, he was not bound ſtrictly to hold promiſe with them. Howſoever, theſe new Revolts ended quickly: And now the Duke having this occaſion, proceeded ſeverely; for having by the King's commandment ſpread his Royal Banner, he thereupon executed Martial-Law where he thought it needful. In concluſion, ſo many were found to be Complices in Treaſon, or the Conſpiracy of it, that the Lord *Darcy*, *Robert Aske*, Sir *Robert Conſtable*, Sir *John Bulmer* and his Wife (or Paramour), Sir *Thomas Percy*, Sir *Stephen Hamilton*, *Nicholas Tempeſt*, and *William Lumley*, were taken and brought Priſoners to *London*; and in *June* following, the Lord *Huſſy* for the *Lincolnſhire* buſineſs, and the Lord *Darcy* were Arraigned at *Weſtminſter* before the Marqueſs of *Exceter* then High Steward, and found guilty of High Treaſon. The Lord *Darcy* was Beheaded at Tower hill, and the Lord *Huſſy* at *Lincoln*: others were hang'd at *Hull*, and at *York*, ſome elſe-where, among whom were divers religious perſons: The news whereof being certified by the Duke of *Norfolk* to Court, the King by Letter to him, ſaid, he would cloſe this Tragedy: For he ſent now a general Pardon; which was received with great joy, many being terrified with the Dukes proceedings. All this great Service of the Duke of *Norfolk* yet could not exempt him from calumny: For the Lord *Darcy* during his Impriſonment, had accus'd him, as favouring the Rebels Articles when they firſt met at *Doncaſter*: But the Duke denied it, offering the Duel; ſaying, that *Aske* (who ſuffered at *York* before the ſaid Lord) told him

Feb.

him the ſaid Lords intentions; who (he ſaid) bare him ill will ever ſince the Duke had ſolicited the ſaid Lord to deliver *Aske* into his hands, when he was in chief credit with the Rebels; which *Darcy* denying, ſome expoſtulation had paſs'd betwixt them. Nevertheleſs, I find the King was ſo well ſatisfied of the Duke, that thoſe things were paſs'd over without further queſtioning. 1537. Nov. 14. 1536.

Of all which proceedings (from the beginning) though *James* the *Scottiſh* King (now in *France*) were advertis'd; yet he ſtir'd not. And it was happy for our State; for had he joyn'd, he might have endangered the Northern parts, as People ſtood then affected. Howſoever, our King who thought his abſence was not ſecurity enough, had employed Sir *Ralph Sadler* thither, with command to reſide till *James* return'd, (which was about *Whitſontide*, 1637.) and to inform him of all occurrents. Howbeit, I find that *James* in his way touching on the Coaſt of *England*, divers *Engliſh* caſt themſelves at his feet, and deſired him to aſſiſt them, ſaying, he ſhould have all: (for ſo the Original hath it.) But the King would not ſuddenly diſcover himſelf. Coming thus to *Edenburgh* with his new Married Queen, (who was brought up under the Queen of *Navarre*, and not diſaffected to the Reformation of Religion) he was received with much joy, which yet continued not long, ſhe dying ſhortly after of an Hectick Fever: (as hath been formerly related.) Whereupon Cardinal *Beton* and *Robert Maxwel* were ſent into *France* to treat of a Marriage betwixt him and *Mary* of the Houſe of *Guiſe*, and Widow of the Duke of *Longueville*, which alſo followed. Records.

The King having appeaſed all things in theſe parts, procures the eſtabliſhment of his Authority in *Ireland*; but as now the vigorous and many executions done upon all ſorts of Perſons had made him terrible; ſo that ſweet temper of love and fear, which ought to be equally mix'd in all Subjects hearts, was turn'd into that awe and dread as few thought themſelves ſafe; which though it might have cauſed ſome apprehenſion in him, had he been capable thereof, yet without being troubled for any thing, he reſolved to hold his way, and where occaſion was, to puniſh ſeverely: Therefore he gave order that *Thomas Fitz-Gerald*, Son to the Earl of *Kildare*, and five of his Uncles, after a long detention in Priſon, at this time ſhould ſuffer death at *Tyburn*; who yet had he not hoped of Pardon by the interceſſion of the Lord *Grey*, to whom he yielded himſelf, (as is formerly mentioned,) he would have died ſome other death. All the race yet ended not ſo; for *Gerald*, younger Brother to *Thomas Fitz-Gerald*, being ſought for, was packt up in a bundle of Clothes, and conveyed to his Friends in *Ireland*, and ſo to *France*, and from thence to the *Low-Countries*, in both which places being June 1538. Feb. 3. 1538.

1537. required of our King, he did at length fly to Cardinal *Pool* in *Italy*, who being his Kinſman, and finding him a fit Inſtrument for his purpoſes, kept, and cheriſhed him, until he obtained in after-times, that he might be reſtored to his Countrey and place.

This being done, our King deviſed certain Acts to paſs in the Parliament of *Ireland*; being for the avoiding of all Bulls, Breves, Diſpenſations, *&c.* granted by the Pope; and that the People ſhould uſe the *Engliſh* tongue. That Marchers ſhould dwell upon their March Lands: That certain Religious Houſes there ſhould be ſuppreſt: Againſt alliance with Rebels; For eſtabliſhing Succeſſion; For the Firſt-fruits and twentieth part of Spiritual promotions; That thoſe who took part with *Kildare* might be pardoned, when they fined for it, *&c.* of which more may be ſeen in the *Iriſh* Statutes.

Octob. 12. This year at *Hampton Court* Prince *Edward* was Born, *October* 12. 1537. who (to uſe *Polydore*'s words) was *Princeps natus ad Imperium*; yet was not the happineſs entire; for Queen *Jane*, Novemb. 8. two days after her delivery, died, and was buried in the Quire at *Windſor*; whoſe loſs much afflicted the King, as having found Her always Diſcreet, Humble, and Loyal; for which reaſon alſo, he was not ſo forward to match again. Inſomuch that notwithſtanding ſome good offers made him, he continued a Widower more than two years; which in his declining age and corpulence (for He grew now very unwieldy) was a long ſpace. The Prince yet not being above ſix days old, was made Prince of *Holinſhead.* *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwal*, and Earl of *Cheſter*: Sir *Edwar Seymor* Octob. 18. alſo, Brother to the Queen, lately made Lord *Beauchamp*, was 1536. created Earl of *Hertford*. And Sir *William Fitz-Williams* (made Aug. 16. Admiral of *England* lately) Earl of *Southampton*. And in 1536. *March* following Sir *William Paulet*, Treaſurer of the Kings Houſe, was made Lord *St. John*; and Sir *John Ruſſel* Comptroller, Lord *Ruſſel*.

And now (as I find by our Records) Queen *Margaret* hearing of this Princes Birth, congratulates it, and together complains of ſome unkindneſs in her Son, deſiring ſhe might end her days (being now about forty-nine) in quietneſs; but if our King could Octob. 31. give no remedy thereunto, it comforted her yet, that ſhe underſtood how (upon the death of the Lord *Thomas Howard*) her Daughter was at this time releaſed out of the Tower.

Sandov. I ſhall conclude this year with a prodigious effect of Mount *Ætna*, the flames whereof lifting up a huge maſs of burning Sulphur, by ſlow degrees, to a great height, ſuſtained it there, till at length it ſcattered over all the Country, and killed (as my Author *Sandoval* hath it) innumerable Men and Beaſts.

In

In *March* 1538. the Proteſtants meeting at *Brunſwick*, our King ſent thither *Chriſtopher Mount*, with Inſtructions, Firſt, to ſee who were the Confederates. Secondly, whether their League was for General defence, or limitted to matter of Religion only. Thirdly, to require a final Anſwer, whether they would ſend the great Legation with *Melanchon*, as they had promiſed. But they deſiring King *Henry* ſhould firſt declare what points he diſliked in their Confeſſion, leſt the Ambaſſador ſhould after ſo great expectation return without effect, excuſed themſelves in this laſt point, pretending that they had preſent uſe of their Learned men, *&c.* And as to the other two Articles, they declared, that their League was only in the Cauſe of Religion, and ſent the names of their Confederates, being (as the Record ſhews) XXVI Cities and XXIV Princes; among whom the King of *Denmark* was newly admitted. Nevertheleſs, to ripen matters for a further Treaty, they gave Commiſſion to their Agents now ſent, (being *Francis Burgrat*, and two other men not unlearned) to diſpute with the *Engliſh* Divines about Religion, which they did, till being recall'd home, they craved diſmiſſion of the King, leaving with them their Remonſtrance touching divers abuſes in *England:* as I. The Adminiſtrations of the Euchariſt in one kind only. II. Private Maſs. III. Celebrate of Prieſts: againſt which they urged Scripture, and the ancient Fathers; adding, that their Princes would never admit the ſame; and that it belongs to his Majeſty to reſtore the purity of Religion, as did the Kings, *David*, *Joſias*, *Jehoſhaphat*, *Ezekias*, &c. This, though commended to the King and *Cromwel* by Arch-Biſhop *Cranmer*, was yet oppoſed by divers others, and particularly by *Cuthbert* Biſhop of *Dureſme*, (who extracted the ſaid Declaration for the King, and give him Arguments againſt it.) So that the King for all Anſwer to the ſaid Orators, defended the points they would have reformed. Inſomuch, that they return'd unſatisfied and fruſtrate. King *Henry* the while proceeding in his own Reformation, as hoping the Proteſtants in *Germany* would be drawn to him. And becauſe he had been often importuned to authorize a Tranſlation of the Bible, He committed the care thereof to *Cromwel*, and the Printing to *Richard Grafton*; who pretending the want of good Paper here, got our Kings and *Francis* Licence to Print it at *Paris* both in *Latin* and *Engliſh* in a large Volume: which therefore by *Cromwel* the Vicegerent's Injunctions this year (1538) was to be ſet in every Church for the People to read: Yet ſo, as the King by Proclamation gave them to underſtand, that this was not his duty, but his goodneſs and liberality to them; who therefore ſhould uſe it moderately, for the increaſe of Vertue, not of Strife. And therefore no man ſhould read it aloud to diſturb the Prieſt while he ſang Maſs, nor preſume to expound doubtful places without advice from the Learned.

1537.
1538. March.
May 12.
Auguſt 5.
Septemb.
Fox.

The

1538. The King having Iſſue Male, proceeded more confidently in his deſigns: And becauſe he knew that the pretended and falſe Miracles of Prieſts had ſeduced many ignorant People to a ſuperſtitious obedience to the *Romiſh* See, and reverence of Monaſteries, he reſolv'd to detect them, at leaſt, as many as he could; for divers were ſo cunningly repreſented, as they had kept their credit for ſome Ages; the manner of theſe times being, if a man were reſtored to his health upon a Pilgrimage, or obtain'd any thing he deſired upon a Vow to ſome Saint, never to ſtudy other cauſe.

And here out of our Records I ſhall mention ſome of the Images and Relicks to which the Pilgrimages of theſe times brought Devotion and Offerings; as our Ladie's Girdle, ſhewed in eleven ſeveral places, and her Milk in eight: the Bell of St. *Guthlac*, and the Felt of St. *Thomas* of *Lancaſter*, both remedies for the Head-ach: the Pen-knife and Boots of St. *Thomas* of *Canterbury*, and a piece of his Shirt, much reverenced by great-bellied Women: the Coals that roaſted S. *Laurence*; two or three Heads of S. *Urſula*; *Malchus* his Ear; and the paring of S. *Edmond*'s Nails; the Image of an Angel with one wing, which brought hither the Spears head that pierced Chriſts ſide; an Image of our Lady with a Taper in her hand, which burnt nine years together without waſting, till one forſwearing himſelf thereon, it went out; and was now found to be but a piece of Wood: our Lady of *Worceſter*, from which certain Veils and Dreſſings being taken, there appeared the Statue of a Biſhop ten foot high. Theſe and others were now brought forth, and with great oſtentation ſhewed to the People: Among which were two notable Trumperies I cannot omit; One was the *Rood of Grace* at *Boxley* in *Kent*; which being made with divers Vices to turn
Feb. 24. the eyes and move the lips, was ſhewed publickly at *Pauls* Croſs by *John* Biſhop of *Rocheſter*, and there broken and pull'd in pieces. The other was at *Hales* in *Glouceſterſhire*, where the *Blood of Jeſus Chriſt* brought from *Jeruſalem*, being kept (as was affirmed) for divers Ages, had drawn many great offering to it from remote places: And it was ſaid to have this property, That if a man were in mortal ſin, and not abſolved, he could not ſee it; otherwiſe, very well: Therefore every man that came to behold this Miracle, confeſs'd himſelf firſt to a Prieſt there, and then offering ſomething to the Altar, was directed to a Chappel where the Relick was ſhewed; the Prieſt who confeſs'd him (in the mean while) retiring himſelf to the back part of the ſaid Chappel, and putting forth upon the Altar a Cabinet or Tabernacle of Cryſtal, which being thick on the one ſide, that nothing could be ſeen thorow it, but on the other ſide thin and tranſparent, they uſed diverſly: For if a rich and devout man entred, they would ſhew the thick ſide, till he had paid for as many Maſſes, and

Maſſes, and given as large Alms as they thought fit; after which (to his great joy) they permitted him to ſee the thin ſide, and the blood. Whether yet (as my Author, a Clerk of the Council to *Edward* VI. and living in thoſe times, affirms) was proved to be the blood of a Duck every week renewed by two Prieſts, who kept the ſecret betwixt them. Beſides which, the Images of our Lady of *Walſingham*, of *Ipſwich*, of *Penriſe*, of *Iſlington*, and S. *John* of *Oſulſton* (called otherwiſe Mr. *John Shorne*,) who was ſaid to ſhut up the Devil in a Boot; and divers others were publickly burnt: Inſomuch, that a huge Image called *Darvel Gadern* being fetch'd out of *Wales* ſerved to burn Frier *Forreſt*, (Condemn'd for counſelling People in Confeſſion not to believe the Kings Supremacy,) and to elude I know not what old blind Propheſie. 1538. *Will. Thomas.* Nov. 24. May 22.

And by this means the Monaſteries grew infamous where moſt of theſe Images were kept, and divers were undeceived, who before held a reverend opinion of theſe pretended Relicks and Miracles; yet, as this way, there was danger leſt the People ſhould not believe thoſe Miracles which the Church had delivered for true, the King held a hand over his Subjects, and found means to humble them; for they were taught, that howſoever the Miracles of thoſe later times proved counterfeit and falſe, yet that God hath done, and can again do Miracles, when it is for his glory and ſervice; And that it did not repugn to Faith, that for honouring the memory of his Saints, he permitted them ſometimes, where the people were not withdrawn thereby from his worſhip, to the worſhip of the creature.

Upon the Ceſſation of Arms betwixt the Emperor and *French* King formerly mentioned; the Pope endeavoured a further peace and good correſpondence, as thinking them capable both of making War with the *Turk*, and revenging his quarrel on our King, againſt whom he was much intentive to joyn them. But there are many difficulties in procuring two potent Princes to concur in the ſame enterpriſe, when it were for nothing elſe, but that they can never agree who ſhould have the advantage of it. Nevertheleſs, both of them were diſ-affected to our King at this time, not yet ſo much for their particular Intereſts, as that his overthrowing of Religious Houſes, and many rigorous Executions of his Subjects had given ill impreſſions of him; which our King underſtanding, procures to hold his Treaty with *Francis*. And therefore recalling from *Spain Edmond Bonner* elect Biſhop of *Hereford*, and his Ambaſſador then with the Emperor, he imployed him in *France* in the place of *Stephen Gardiner*, who had ſoured all things; ſince, being one who both diſliked the Kings late proceedings, and ſecretly favour'd the Emperor, he did his Maſter little ſervice in that Court. *Bonner* being now come, was roughly received by *Gardiner*, and coldly by the *French* King July 7. 1537. Aug. 1537. *Fox.*

1538. King (as I find by an Original;) yet he obtained at first that the Old and New Testament in *English* might be Printed at *Paris* in the largest Volume, whereof yet complaint being made by the Clergy there, the Press was stayed, and as much as was already Printed, publickly burnt, save some few Copies, that being
Decemb. 17. gotten for waste-paper, were recovered and sent into *England*, whither also the Printers themselves following shortly after,
Fox. finished their work. Howbeit as *Bonner* had in his other affairs here but little satisfaction, he was repeal'd at last on this occasion; being commanded by our King to deliver a high message, concerning his Pension, now four years detained, as also touching a Fugitive and Traitor, who was received and favoured by *Francis*; He uttered it in so haughty a manner (as was thought) that *Francis* return'd both to our King and him some harsh language; nevertheless, as he feared lest it should cause War, He sent to *England* an expres Messenger both to Interpret and excuse himself, and to desire *Bonner* might be recalled; which the King did, (as thinking him henceforth an unuseful Servant in that place) yet so as he forgot not to bestow the Bishoprick of *London* on him for his reward, and to employ him to the Em-
Octob. 20. peror afterwards. But as *Francis* (having about this time made
1534. a ten years Truce with the Emperor, as shall be told hereafter; and a Treaty with *Scotland*,) talked louder than before; so the Lady Regent in the *Low-Countries*, permitting dives Exactions on our Merchants, shewed disaffection to our State, without that our King in his present condition knew well how to repair himself, since being resolved to take order about his home businesses not yet fully setled, He thought of Forein Affairs no otherwise, than to attend the occasion, and confederate himself where it might be for his best advantage. For which at last divers Overtures were made. The first it seems came from the Emperor, whose Ambassador here signified to *Cromwel* Lord Privy Seal his Masters desire, that a Match might be had betwixt our King and *Christiana* the Dutchess of *Milan*, being a beautiful Lady, and at that present lately come into the *Low-Countries*. *Cromwel* answered, that he would first see her picture, and then speak to the
March. King; Which being granted, one *Hans Holin* (or *Holbin* I believe) being the Kings Servant was sent over, and in three hours space (as *John Hutton* our Agent there hath it) shewed what a Master he was in his Science. Our King hereupon seemed inclinable, giving charge to *Hutton* to treat of the business. But the Lady Regent (though said to have sufficient power) referred all to the Emperor, who having appointed an interview with *Francis*, was so slow in returning an Answer, that our King understood it as a delay, and therefore neglected the business a while; and he had reason; for a Treaty was now formed betwixt *Francis* and the Emperor, for his Son the Duke of *Orleans* and her,

her, and the place nominated at *Comptean*, where *Francis* (now returned from the Interview, whereof hereafter) met Queen *Mary* Regent of *Flanders*: Whereof our King being advertis'd, sent some privately thither, to inform him of that which passed; but *Milan* being refused as dowry to the Duke, the Treaty was suspended. This made our King proceed again, imploying *Thomas Wriothesly*, and some others, to the Lady Regent for this purpose; but this Treaty produced others, so that a Match was proposed betwixt *Don Lewis* of *Portugal* and our Princess *Mary*, in the terms she then was, excluded by Act of Parliament from all claim to the succession, except such as the King shall give her: As also a strict confederation and amity. The conditions our King required with the Dutchess of *Milan* were great; for though she was but the second Daughter of *Denmark*, *Dorothea* the Elder being Married to *Frederick*, Count *Palatine* of the *Rhine*, and Duke of *Bavier*, yet he demanded with her the whole Kingdom of *Denmark*, (there being no Issue Male now alive of *Christiern* the II.) desiring for this purpose the Emperors assistance, which also the Emperor seemed to promise, as offering to treat with Duke *Frederick* about renouncing his Title to it; and the rather, that he was more suspected at this time in the *German* affairs, than that the Emperor desired to greaten Him, by such an Accession. And with *Don Loüis*, the Emperor offered *Milan*, when the King would shew how to defend it, and give only a Dowry of three hundred thousand, or two hundred thousand Crowns; Promising further, If the *French* King, upon this occasion, denyed the Pension usually paid our King, to take no Peace with him till he had paid it; He offered also to endeavour a reconciliation with the Pope, if our King so pleased. Nevertheless, divers jealousies and cavils arising, (especially after the Interview) betwixt the Emperor and *Francis*, (whereof presently) the Treaty, though continuing, went on but coldly; the Lady Regent objecting sometimes that our King treated of a Match in *France* with the Daughter of *Guise*; another while saying, that in regard of the Dutchess nearness of blood to the late Queen *Katharine*, there needed a Dispensation from the Pope, which she knew the King would hardly accept; but these Answers being taken as illusory, the Treaty at last not only broke off, but a cruel War was intimated betwixt the Emperour and our King; especially after he heard of the Treaty betwixt him and the Lady *Anne* of *Cleves*, which followed. But *Francis* omitted not likewise to make his Propositions, offering our King what Lady he pleased in his Country, which yet came to nothing, as will appear hereafter; neither ought their motions of alliance to seem strange, both as there were ever causes of jealousie betwixt these great Princes, and as they knew well, our King had setled his affairs at home.

1538. Octob.

Records.

1538. While things paſt thus, the Truce expiring in *February* betwixt the *French* King and Emperor, the Pope obtain'd yet that it ſhould be continued for ſix months; hoping in the interim to conclude a Peace; whereuuto as his good intentions might concur; ſo his particular Intereſts wanted not; he imploying the Cardinal *Carpi* to the Emperor, and Cardinal *Jacobaccio* to the *French* King for concluding two Matches for his Family; one betwixt his Grand-child *Ottavio Farneſe* and *Margarita* Relict of the Duke *Florence*, natural Daughter of the Emperor: The other betwixt *Victoria Farneſe* and *Antoine de Bourbon* Duke of *Vendoſme*; and for bringing them to an Interview, at which himſelf would be preſent. All which was accorded, and the time and place of meeting appointed at *Nizza* about the beginning of *June*, 1538. where they all came; but ſo as the Emperor being lodg'd in *Villa-Franca*, and the *French* King in *Villa-Nova*, they neither ſaw one another in their ſeveral Courts, nor at the Pope's at *Nizza*: Inſomuch, that notwithſtanding the Pope's ſolicitation, their mutual jealouſies of the Pope's affection, the number of their Attendants not to be regulated as long as third perſons intervened, their late Defies, and greatneſs of buſineſſes to be determined betwixt them, permitted no ſafe terms of meeting. Nevertheleſs, the Pope (after he had in vain deſired them to ſend ſome Biſhops to the Council now at *Vicenza*) concluded a Truce betwixt them for ten years, and ſo the meeting diſſolv'd. The Pope preſently recalling his Legates from *Vicenza*, and deferring the Council till *Eaſter* the next year.

Feb. 22. 15$\frac{38}{39}$.

Sandov. l. 24.

June.

June. 18.

July 28. And now the Emperor and *Francis* being near each other, and, for the reſt, Princes of ſo great courage, as they heard with ſome indignation the difficulties their Counſellors had repreſented about an Interview, reſolved betwixt themſelves to meet. *Francis* ſent an Invitation to him to repoſe at *Aiqueſmortes* and *Marſeilles*, in his way to *Spain*; and *Charles* accepted it; who coming thereupon near the Shore, *Francis*, attended with *Montmorency* (now *Conſtable*) and few others, without all difficulty paſſed in a Shallop to the Emperors Galley; and after an hours ſtay, and ſome complements in *French* (which Language both ſpake) *Francis* return'd to Land. And now the Emperor was penſative and doubtful whether he ſhould go on ſhore; many of his Council oppos'd it; but the Duke of *Alva* ſaid generouſly, He ſhould go; which counſel the Emperor followed: and thereupon Landing, the *French* King and his Queen, the *Dauphine*, and a huge Train received him with demonſtration of joy: and two meals they did eat together, at which the Dutcheſs of *Eſtampes* (much regarded by *Francis*) was preſent. But the next day after (being the 16. of *July*) rich gifts having paſſed on both ſides, the Emperor departed for *Spain*.

July 15.

July 16.

And

1538.

And now it was diſputed at *Rome* whether theſe two Princes ſhould joyn in a War againſt the *Turk*, or bring our King to reaſon: The former took place; the *Turk*, as being much animated againſt the *Chriſtians*, having made great Preparatives: and when he had not, our King being a Perſon with whom they would not eaſily have fought in the Popes quarrel: which alſo is the more probable, for that *Francis* would not ſo much as concur with him in a War againſt the *Turk*, though ſolicited by the Pope, Emperor and *Venetians*, no more than our King: though (as I find by our Records) intreated by the ſaid *Venetians*, as having a particular War with the *Turk* at this time in *Morea* and *Sclavonia*; ſo that they above-named only joyned, according to a League made at *Rome Feb.* 8. the Pope furniſhing thirty ſix Galleys, the Emperor eighty-two, and the *Venetians* as many; who yet being led by *Andrea Doria*, and coming to fight with the *Turkiſh* Fleet of 130 Veſſels under *Barbaroſſa*, were on the Coaſt of *Epiro* towards Night, *Septemb.* 24. defeated; when ſuch a huge Tempeſt of Thunder and Lightning aroſe, as ſcattered them every way: yet few days after they took from the *Turk Caſtel Novo*, a Fort in the Gulf of *Cataro*, and leaving a Gariſon there, return'd.

All which engagements of War, though in effect they were ſo many diverſions of it from us, could not ſecure our King from ſuſpicion either of Treachery at home, or Invaſion from abroad. Therefore he took eſpecial care of the Sea-Coaſts, and particularly had an eye to the actions of thoſe who might ſtir in favour of Cardinal *Pool*; who being encouraged by the Pope, had no little intelligence from our Kingdom. Notwithſtanding all which attention, divers Meſſages paſſed betwixt the ſaid Cardinal and his Friends and Kindred; which coſt ſome of them their lives not long after.

And now the King knowing that while any ſuperſtitious worſhip reigned here, the Friers and Prieſts would oppoſe his Reformation, eſpecially as long as ſuch were accounted Saints who had reſiſted their Prince, Reſolved, after he had burned ſo many Images, to burn the bones of *Thomas Becket*, Arch-Biſhop of *Canterbury*, in the time of *Henry* II. (though others mention not the burning; And one living in thoſe times, Affirms only, that his bones were ſcattered amongſt ſo many dead mens, that they could not be found again without ſome great Miracle.) Together with which, our King ſeiſed on that immenſe Treaſure and Jewels which were offered to his Shrine; there being few ſince *Henry* the Second's time which paſſed to *Canterbury*, that did not both viſit his Tomb, and bring rich Preſents to it. Among which, there being one ſtone eminent, which it was ſaid, *Loüis* the Seventh coming hither on Pilgrimage from *France*, *Anno Dom.* 1179. beſtowed; our King wore it in a Ring afterwards.

Will. Thomas Il. Pel. Ingl.

Aug. 23. 1179.

1538. *Sand. Sch. Angl.*

For which reaſons, as alſo for being ſo great an example of contumacy againg his King, he was (as *Sanders* hath it) conſtrain'd *Cauſam iterum ad Tribunal dicere*; That is to ſay, his life and actions being examin'd, it was declar'd by our King that he deſerved no Canonization: and proved beſides, that the Scull which the People did ſo much venerate (and which was now burnt as an Impoſture) was not his own, (it, together with his bones, being found in his Tombe, and ſcattered, as aforeſaid,) and that there was forgery in divers Miracles there exhibited; with which yet our King being not content, caus'd his name to be ras'd out of the Kalender, and forbad the keeping of his Holiday. But that it may appear what a kind of Saint this man was, I will repeat ſome part of his life; not out of his Legend, or indeed *Polydore Virgil*, who moſt fabulouſly affirms, that certain men in *Kent* for cutting off *Becket*'s Horſe tail, their Progeny ever after, as long as any of them remained, had tails like Beaſts: But out of a Book of the ſaid Clerk of the Council, formerly mentioned, leaving to every man yet the choice of believing what relation he pleaſeth.

Will. Thomas Il. Pel. Ingl.

This man (as my Author hath it) being born of an *Engliſh* Merchant, and a Woman of *Barbary*, having been brought up in Learning, and promoted to the Arch-biſhoprick of *Canterbury*, conteſted with King *Henry* the Second for the Popes Authority: Inſomuch, that in his *Pontificalibus*, with his Mitre upon his Head, and gilt Croſs born before him, he publickly Excommunicated all thoſe who oppoſed the Church; wherewith the King being offended, *Becket* fled to the Pope, who cheriſhed him ſo much, as in contemplation of him, he Excommunicated the King and Kingdom; ſo that for about four years ſpace, neither Maſs, nor other publick Service was uſed in the Church. But by the Interceſſion of the *French* King, *Becket* and the Maſs being reſtored, and our King and Kingdom abſolved, all things ſeemed quiet, till he began new quarrels: At which the King being diſpleaſed, ſaid, If he had faithful Servants, he ſhould not be ſo wronged; Which ſome Gentlemen that ſerved him hearing, went to *Canterbury*, and taking their time, upon ſome ill Language given, killed him in the Cloiſter of his Cathedral Church, and ſo fled. Whereupon the Monks ſhut their gates, and perſuaded the People that the Bells rung of themſelves; nor content herewith, they caſt a certain compoſition into a Well adjoyning, and made the People believe that it appeared bloody by Miracle, for that Holy Martyr, which at laſt obtained ſuch credit, that *Henry* II. came in Perſon, together with *Loüis* of *France* to viſit the Holy place, and give many rich poſſeſſions to the Monaſtery; for further teſtimony of his favour to them, refuſing ever to receive again, or pardon the Murtherers; yet theſe Wonders ended at laſt, for our King on ſome occaſion coming to *Canterbury*,

1165.

1170.

1179. Aug. 23.

Canterbury, diſcovered the fraud of the Well, and aboliſhed the Miracles. 1538.

But what pretext ſoever our King had to proceed thus with *Becket*, nothing was taken to be a greater cruelty and rapine: Inſomuch, that upon news hereof, the Pope deferred no longer to publiſh his Bull of Excommunication (formerly decreed 1535) againſt our King; wherein he alſo mentions this fact with much horrour and deteſtation; ſending alſo his Agents abroad with the ſaid Bull, who ſet it up in divers places of *Flanders*, *France* and *Scotland*; being ſuch a Bull (ſaith the Writer of the *Council of Trent*) as neither his Predeceſſors left him example for, or his Succeſſors ever imitated. But the Pope gained little hereby; for all his rigours were but ſo many Incentives to King *Henry* to oppoſe him; therefore as he had ſent publick proteſtations every where againſt the Council to be aſſembled at *Vicenza*, affirming the ſame difficulties would be about holding of it there, which muſt have been at *Mantua*; ſo having made way by the diſcovery of the former Impoſtures, he ſuppreſſed more Monaſteries, and every day more and more deveſted the Clergy of their former Authority. Howbeit, on the other ſide, he oppoſed all Reformation but his own; as appears both by burning two *Dutch* Anabaptiſts, and by a Diſpute he publickly held in *Weſtminſter*-Hall, with one *John Nicholſon*, *Alias Lambert* a Prieſt; againſt whom he maintained the preſence of Chriſt in the Sacrament after the manner he ſet down in his Articles; concluding, that he ſhould have mercy if he recanted; otherwiſe, that he ſhould be burnt. But *Lambert* deſpiſing mercy on thoſe terms, the ſentence was executed: ſo deep a tincture doth Religion give to the Soul, as being once throughly entred, nothing afterward can either change or efface it.

Decemb. 17.

April. 8. May.

Nov. 19.

Nov. 22.

The King having thus made it appear, that howſoever he rejected the Papal Authority, he concurred not every where with the Reformers, thought he might with more reaſon now confront the report wihch Cardinal *Pool* and his Friends had raiſed, that he had wholly altered his Religion. In which number, becauſe *Henry Courtney* Marqueſs of *Exceter* (the King's Couſin-german, as being Son of *Katharine*, Daughter to *Edward* the Fourth) and *Henry Pool* Lord *Montacute*, and Sir *Edward Nevel* Brother to the Lord *Abergavenny*, and Sir *Jeffery Pool* Knight, were eminent; he took occaſion (upon ſecret information given by Sir *Jeffery*) to cauſe them to be indicted, for deviſing to maintain, promote and advance one *Reginald Pool* late Dean of *Exceter*, Enemy to the King beyond the Seas, and to deprive the King; upon which the two Lords, before *Thomas* Lord *Audley* (for the preſent ſitting as his High Steward of *England*) were found guilty: not long after which, Sir *Edward Nevel*, Sir *Jeffery Pool*, two Prieſts and a Mariner were arraign'd, and found

Decemb. 31. Jan. 3. 15$\frac{1}{3}\frac{8}{9}$.

1538. Jan. 9. found guilty alſo, and judgment given accordingly. The two Lords and *Nevil* were beheaded, the two Prieſts and Mariner hang'd and quarter'd at *Tyburn*, and Sir *Jeffery* pardoned; Sir *Nicholas Carew* alſo (Knight of the Garter, and Maſter of the Horſe to the King) for being of Council with the ſaid Marqueſs, was Beheaded. The particular offences yet of theſe great Perſons are not ſo fully made known to me, that I can ſay much. Only I find among our Records that *Thomas Wriotheſly* Secretary (then at *Bruxels*) writing of their apprehenſion to Sir *Thomas Wyat* (his Highneſs Ambaſſador in *Spain*) ſaid, that the Accuſations were great, and duly proved. And in another place I read that they ſent the Cardinal Money.

March 3.

Novemb.

Vine. Herald.

I find little more of this year for our parts, ſave that notwithſtanding all theſe ſeverities, neither was one *Conesby* Groom of the Kings Chamber deterr'd from counterfeiting the Kings Seal Manuel; nor one *Clifford* from counterfeiting his Privy Signet: both which therefore ſuffered death.

Sand. l. 24. Nov. 1. The Emperor now in *Spain*, among his home-buſineſſes thought none more requiſite, than to take order for money: Therefore he aſſembled at *Toledo* a *Cortes* or Parliament of both States; ſo that the Grandees of *Caſtilla* and *Leon* on the one ſide, and Cardinal of *Toledo* and Clergy on the other, did enter into it: where the Emperors neceſſities being repreſented by occaſion of his late Wars, It was declared, that neither his ordinary Revenues, nor the *Indies*, nor the *Cruzades*, Tenths and other helps granted by the Pope, did ſuffice to keep him out of debt. Wherefore the Emperor deſired that at their charge all his Eſtate and Dominions every where might be preſerv'd and ſecur'd both by Sea and Land; ſo as he might have the ordinary Rent of *Caſtilla* and the *India's* for paying his debts and ſpending money. The Clergy hereupon agreed, That their moſt ready and equal way for ſupplying the Emperors wants, was to grant a *Siſa* or Tax for a certain time, with a limitation to what it ſhould extend; ſince leſs corruption and extortion would follow this way than any other: Only they deſired the Emperor, That he ſhould procure a Licenſe and Commandment from his Holineſs to this purpoſe. But the Grandees and Nobles who had immediate power in their hands to conſent unto the Emperors Demand, would yet reſolve nothing ſuddenly in their own name or the Peoples, nor before they had committed the buſineſs to twelve elect perſons among them; among which the *Condeſtable* being chief, ſpake much againſt Impoſitions; deſiring rather to ſupply the Emperor ſome other way: And that they might confer with the Burgeſſes or *Procuradors* of the chief Cities hereof; beſeeching his Majeſty withal, that he would ſtay at home and ſtudy peace, as having made eighteen years of continual War both by Sea and Land: Which Anſwer being brought the Emperor,

It

It was replyed on his part, that he demanded Money, and not Advice. Hereupon, certain amongſt them propoſed to lay Impoſition upon Commodities exported: but the reſt agreed not. Whereupon the Cardinal of *Toledo* came and told them in his Majeſties name, That he aſſembled them to the intent he might communicate his own and his Kingdoms neceſſities; it ſeeming reaſonable, that as they were general, ſo ſhould the Remedy be: But by as much as is done, he conceiveth there is no cauſe to detain you any longer, and therefore gives you leave to depart. 1539. Feb. 1.

The *Cortes* being thus diſſolved, the Emperor upon occaſion, told the *Condeſtable* he had done ill, and deſerved to be thrown out of a *Corredor* or open Gallery, where they were: To which he anſwered, Your Majeſty will pleaſe to adviſe; for though I am little, I weigh much. But it ſeems, the Emperor ſpake neither in earneſt, nor the *Condeſtable* as one that reſented; ſo that nothing followed. Howſoever, the Grandees and Nobles of *Spain* behaved themſelves inſolently at this time, to the Emperor; who having commanded a Juſt or Tourney, wherein all the principal Perſons were, to meet: it happened as they rode in their equipage and order to the place, an *Alguazil* ſtrook the Duke of *Infantados* Horſe, on ſome occaſion; whereupon the Duke turning about, demanded, Do you know me? and the *Alguazil* ſaying, yea: He with his Sword cut him on his head; who with blood about his ears, coming to the Emperor (then on Horſe-back,) incenſed him ſo much, as he ſent preſently, to apprehend the Duke; But the Condeſtable being preſent, ſaid to the Officer, You have no Authority, as long as I am in place; and ſo forced him thence. The Emperor now much offended, that all theſe *Atrevemientos* were done in his preſence, ſends another officer to apprehend the Duke; at which the Grandees and others were ſo diſpleaſed, that they all rode away in Troop; ſo that the Emperor having few or none to attend him in this great Solemnity, was forced to deſiſt and return; both to his own great ſcandal, and thoſe who came to be ſpectators. But the Emperor found means afterwards, to let them know how ſenſible he was of this contempt.

The *German* Proteſtants, this while, being ſollicited for Aid againſt the *Turk*, and denying it, unleſs the Emperor firſt granted them ſuch a ſolid and intire Peace in the Cauſe of Religion, as might comprehend both the preſent and future Confederates; the adverſe party entered a Counter-league to that of *Smalcald*, calling it Holy, and ſtipulating mutual defence, if they were moleſted for the *Roman* Religion. The Emperor notwithſtanding, giving Commiſſion to *Heldus* and others, to Treat with the ſaid Proteſtants of an Accommodation; which yet took no effect, though there were a meeting held at *Francfort*, to this purpoſe. How- Nov. 25. 1538. Feb. 12.

1539. Records. Howſoever, our King omitted not to ſend His Agents (*Chriſtopher Mcunt* and *Thomas Paynel*) thither, ſhewing, He took it ill, that they Treated of a Pacification without his knowledge, deſiring to underſtand the Conditions thereof, and whether they intended to be conſtant to their profeſſed Doctrine: To which, April 23. *Burgart* and others in their Name, *April* 23. coming to *England*, brought Inſtructions to this effect, That their manifold Troubles, Records. ſuffered them not hitherto, to ſignifie the ſaid Pacification, which yet was not likely to take effect, no Conditions being ſo much as propoſed. Neither would they accept any contrary to the *Auguſtane* Confeſſion; ſo that there needed be no doubt of their Conſtancy: But they are informed, that His Majeſty had ſet forth a Proclamation, injoyning rigidly and under heavy Cenſures, thoſe Points which the laſt year their Ambaſſadors deſired as Abuſes might be Reformed; which unleſs His Majeſty pleaſed to mitigate, they could determine nothing of the Legation of learned Men, which he expected. For we have, ſay they, diſputed enough already, and the King is not ignorant of our Opinions touching Private Maſs, Communion in one kind, and Celibate of Prieſts. And unleſs we underſtood that our Doctrine herein were preſcribed by God, we would not undergo the dangers we do for maintenance thereof: Neither let the King imagine, that we will now either deny the ſaid Doctrines, or ſend any of our Divines into *England*, to give Approbation to the April 1. contrary. Together with which, *Philip Melanchthon* ſent a Letter to the King (ſuperſcrib'd *Ser^mo. &c. Capiti Anglicæ Eccleſiæ, poſt Chriſtum Supremo*,) exhorting him to perfect the Reformation begun, and not hearken to thoſe who would hinder it, by exacting too ſeverely Ceremonies and things indifferent; wherefore, he deſires His Majeſty to mitigate the late Proclamation. What Anſwer our King gave to this, doth not appear to me: But the King was ſo far from condeſcending thereunto, that he obtained a Confirmation of the ſaid Articles in the next Parliament, under greater Penalties, as ſhall appear in its place. In the mean time he conſulted to ſtrengthen himſelf at home, by in- 1136. riching his Treaſury. Therefore, having formerly gotten the conſent of his Parliament, for diſſolving all Religious Houſes under 200 *l.* yearly, he did now attempt the reſt; ſo that though divers of the Viſitors had heretofore Petitioned, that ſome might be ſpared, both for the vertue of the Perſons in them, and the benefit of the Country, (the Poor receiving thence relief, and the Richer ſort good education for their Children;) And though Records. *Latimer* mentioned, that ſome two or three might be left in every Shire for pious uſes, *Cromwell* yet (by the Kings Permiſſion) invaded all; while betwixt threats, gifts, perſuaſions, promiſes, and whatſoever might make man obnoxious, he obtained of the Abbats, Priors, Abbeſſes, *&c.* that their Houſes might

might be given up. Among which, those that offered their Monasteries freely, got best Conditions of the King; for if they stood upon their Right, the Oath of Supremacy, and some other Statutes and Injunctions brought them in danger, or their Crimes at least made them guilty of the Law; which also was quickly executed. And particularly on the Abbots of *Glassenbury*, *Glocheſter*, and *Reading*, who more than any else resisted. 1539.

In conclusion, the Title made to these, seems not to be grounded upon a grant by Statute, or claim of Right, but was some voluntary surrender, Purchase, or Forfeiture. Howbeit, the King thought fit to have this proceeding presently confirmed by Act of Parliament: Therefore by his Writs he summoned it to begin *April* 28. 1539. In the mean while, rumors were every where dispersed, that Cardinal *Pool* laboured with divers Princes, to procure Forces against the Kingdom, and that an Invasion was threatned. And this again seemed more credible, in that the Truce concluded between the Emperor and *French* King was generally known, and that neither of them wanted pretext to bring an Army hither. This also was seconded by a sudden journey of the King unto the Sea-coast; unto divers parts whereof, he had formerly sent sundry Nobles and expert persons to visit the Ports, and places of danger, who failed not for their discharge upon all event, to affirm the peril in each place so great, as one would have thought every place had needed fortification; besides he caused his Navy forthwith to be in a readiness, and Musters to be taken over all the Kingdom. All which preparatives being made against a danger which was believed imminent, seemed so to excuse the King suppressing of Abbies, as the People (willing to spare their own Purses) began to suffer it easily; especially when they saw order taken for building divers Forts and Bulwarks upon the Sea-coast; many, if not most of these we have at this day, being though not so exact as the modern, yet of his raising. And that they suspected the discontented Religious Orders (sooner than any else) would assist an Enemy. But if the reasons of these proceedings were held by some as current, by others they were taken to be no more than Palliation, and by the Clergy but rapine, who divulged beyond Seas the miserable ruines of themselves, and houses, in such terms, as the Christian world was astonished; for though their excessive number excused the King in some part for the first suppression, this latter (they said) had no such precious pretext, when yet surrender, purchase, or the like were urg'd; so that notwithstanding the Kings necessities, no little occasion of scandal and obloquy was given.

The number of Monasteries first and last suppressed in *England* and *Wales* were (as *Cambden* accounts them) six hundred forty five *Cambd. Brit.*

1539. five; whereof theſe had voices among the Peers: The Abbat of *S. Albans* (being as I take it) declared the firſt Abbey of *England* (whether in favour of Pope *Adrian* the IV. his Father, called *Breakſpear*, who upon his Wives death rendred himſelf a Monk there, or S. *Alban* himſelf Protomartyr of *England*) S. *Peters* in *Weſtminſter*, S. *Edmondsbury*, S. *Bennets* of *Holm*, *Berdſey*, *Shrewsbury*, *Crowland*, *Abingdon*, *Eveſham*, *Gloceſter*, *Ramſey*, S. *Maries* in *York*, *Tewxbury*, *Reading*, *Battail*, *Winchcombe*, *Hide* by *Wincheſter*, *Cirenceſter*, *Waltham*, *Malmesbury*, *Thorney*, S. *Auguſtine* in *Canterbury*, *Selby*, *Peterborough*, S. *Johns* in *Colcheſter*, *Coventry*, *Taveſtock*. Of Colledges were demoliſhed in *Speed.* divers Shires, ninety. Of Chantries, and fire-Chappels, 2374. And Hoſpitals 110. The yearly value of all which were, as I find it caſt up, 161100 *l.* being above a third part of all our ſpiritual Revenues; beſides the money made of the preſent ſtock of Cattel and Corn, of the Timber, Lead, Bells, *&c.* and laſtly, but chiefly, of the Plate and Church-Ornaments; which I find not valued, but may be conjectured by that one Monaſtery of S. *Edmondsbury*, whence was taken (as our Records ſhew) five thouſand Marks of Gold and Silver, beſides divers ſtones of great value. All which being by ſome openly call'd Rapine, and Sacriledge, I will no way excuſe: though I may ſay truely, that notwithſtanding ſo many Religious Houſes were deſtroyed, there are yet in every kind (the ſuppreſt Abbies and Chantries only excepted) left ſtanding ſo many, as give no little increaſe to Learning, ſplendor to Religion, and teſtimony of Charity to the Poor. So that although I cannot but pity the ruine of ſo many pious Foundations, as affording a ſingular conveniency to thoſe who deſired to retire to a holy, private, and contemplative life, when abuſes were taken away; yet I have thought fit to mention theſe particulars, that it may appear to foreign Nations, we are not deſtitute of many Monuments of Devotion: Of which alſo our King had ſuch regard, that he did not imploy all the profits ariſing from the aforeſaid Diſſolutions, on Fortifications or the like; for he not only augmented the number of the Colledges and Profeſſors in his Univerſities, but erected (as he had promiſed) out of the Revenues gotten hereby, divers new Biſhopricks; whereof one at *Weſtminſter*, one at *Oxford*, one at *Peterborough*, one at *Briſtol*, one at *Cheſter*, and one at *Gloceſter*; all remaining at this day, ſave that of *Weſtminſter*, which being revok'd to its firſt Inſtitution by Queen *Mary*, and *Benedictines* placed in it, was by Queen *Elizabeth* afterwards converted to a Collegiate Church, and a School for the teaching and maintenance of young Scholars: Beſides, many of the ancient Cathedral Churches formerly poſſeſſed by Monks only, were now ſupplied with Canons, and ſome new ones erected and endowed; the Revenues allotted by the King to thoſe new

Biſhop-

Bishopricks and Cathedrals amounting to about 8000 *l. per annum*. So that Religion seem'd not so much to suffer hereby, as some of the Clergy of those times and ours would have it believed: our Kingdom in the mean while having (as *Cromwell* projected it) instead of divers supernumerary and idle persons, men fit for imployment, either in War or Peace, maintained at the cost of the foresaid Abbies and Chantries: So that the Desolations (appearing in their stately Foundations at this day) are by our Politicks thought amply recompenced. Besides, the King in the demolishing of them, had so tender a care of Learning, that he not only preferred divers able Persons which he found there, but took special care to preserve the choicest Books of their well-furnished Libraries: wherein I find *John Leland* (a curious Searcher of Antiquities) was imployed. But hereof enough, since I do not intend to exceed the Terms of an Historian, and therefore shall come now to the Parliament, which being composed of Persons well-affected to the Kings Service, (as his manner was always with great industry to procure such,) These Statutes among others were enacted: 1539. April. 28.

That Religious Persons being put at liberty, might purchase, sue, and be sued; but not claim any Inheritance, as descending on them: And that if they had made a Vow of Chastity after one and twenty, they should not Marry. But this enabling them not to buy, they thought no sufficient amends for the loss of their present maintenance.

That the King by the advice of his Council, or the more part of them, might set forth Proclamations under such penalties and peins as to him or them shall seem necessary, which should be observed as though they were made by Act of Parliament: But that this should not be prejudicial to any Persons Inheritances, Offices, Liberties, Goods, Chattels or Life, *&c.* But this was repealed 1 *Edw.* 6. 12.

That the King might nominate such number of Bishops, Sees for Bishops, Cathedral Churches, and endow them with such possessions, as he will. [Which, though Repeal'd 1 & 2 *Phil. & Mar.* yet order was taken therein again 8 *Eliz.* 1.]

It was declared also how Lords in the Parliament should be placed.

That Leases made of Manors belonging to Monasteries dissolv'd, or to be dissolv'd, and assured to the King, should take effect: wherein is expressed, that the King should hold, possess, and enjoy, to Him, his Heirs and Successors for ever, All Monasteries, Abbacies, Priories, Nunneries, Colledges, Hospitals, Houses of Friers, or other Religious and Ecclesiastical Houses and Places, which since the fourth of *February* 27. *Hen.* 8. have been dissolv'd, suppress'd, renounced, relinquished, forfeited, given up, or by any other means come to his Highness; or

1539. which shall be dissolved, &c. As also all Mannors, Lordships, Lands, Tenements, Rights, Liberties, &c. belonging to them. All which (except such as came by Attainder of Treason) should be under survey and governance of the Kings Court of Augmentation of the Revenues of the Crown. Other mens Titles yet saved.

It was also particularly enacted, That whereas *Thomas* Duke of *Norfolk* by the Kings assent had purchased of one *William Flatbury* late Abbat of the Monastery of *Sipton* in *Suffolk*, the said Monastery, with all, &c. And whereas *George* Lord *Cobham* had likewise purchased the Colledge or Chantry of *Cobham* in *Kent*, It was enacted, that the Act above-written should not be prejudicial to the said Duke, or Lord *Cobham*. Whereby it appears, the Kings intention was to unite all the Abby Lands, &c. to the Crown, save these so specified.

The Six Articles, called by some the Bloody Statute, were also enacted this Parliament: being,

I. If any Person by Word, Writing, Printing, Cyphering, or any otherwise, do Preach, Teach, Dispute, or hold Opinion, that in the blessed Sacrament of the Altar, under form of Bread and Wine (after the Consecration thereof) there is not present really the natural Body and Blood of our Saviour Jesus Christ, conceived of the Virgin *Mary*; Or that after the said Consecration there remaineth any substance of Bread and Wine, or any other substance but the substance of Christ, God and Man; Or that in the Flesh under form of Bread, is not the very Blood of Christ; Or that with the Blood, under the form of Wine, is not the very Flesh of Christ, as well apart, as though they were both together; Or affirm the said Sacrament to be of other substance than is aforesaid, or deprave the said blessed Sacrament: Then he shall be adjudged an Heretick, and suffer death by burning, and shall forfeit to the King all Lands, Tenements, Hereditaments, Goods, and Chattels, as in case of High-Treason.

II. And if any Person Preach in any Sermon, or Collation openly made, or Teach in any common School or Congregation, or obstinately affirm or defend; that the Communion of the blessed Sacrament in both kinds is necessary for the health of mans Soul, or ought or should be ministred in both kinds, or that it is necessary to be received by any person, other than Priest, being at Mass, and Consecrating the same.

III. Or that any man, after the order of Priesthood received, may Marry, or contract Matrimony.

IV. Or that any Man or Woman which advisedly hath Vowed or Professed, or should Vow or Profess Chastity or Widowhood, may Marry or contract Marriage.

V. Or

V. Or that private Maſſes be not lawful, or not laudable, or ſhould not be uſed, or be not agreeable to the Laws of God. 1539.

VI. Or that Auricular Confeſſion is not expedient and neceſſary to be uſed in the Church of God: He ſhall be adjudged to ſuffer death, or forfeit Lands and Goods as a Felon.

If any Prieſt, or other Man or Woman which adviſedly hath Vowed Chaſtity or Widow-hood, do actually Marry or contract Matrimony with another; or any man which is, or hath been a Prieſt, do carnally uſe any Woman to whom he is or hath been Married, or with whom he hath contracted Matrimony; or openly be converſant or familiar with any ſuch Woman, both the Man and the Woman ſhall be adjudged Felons. Commiſſions alſo ſhall be awarded to the Biſhop of the Dioceſs, his Chancellor, Commiſſary, and others, to enquire of the Hereſies, Felonies, and offences aforeſaid. And alſo Juſtices of Peace in their Seſſions, and every Steward, under-Steward, and Deputy of Steward in their Leet or Law-day, by the Oaths of twelve men, have Authority to enquire of all the Hereſies, Felonies, and offences aforeſaid.

In this Parliament alſo, *Margaret* Counteſs of *Salisbury* (being Grand-Child of *George* Duke of *Clarence*, Brother of *Edward* the Fourth, and Mother of Cardinal *Pool*,) as alſo the Cardinal himſelf, and *Gertrude* Wife to the late Marqueſs of *Exceter*, Sir *Adrian Forteſcue*, and *Thomas Dingley* Knight of *S. Johns*, were attainted of Treaſon. Againſt *Margaret* and *Gertrude* it was alledged, that they were complices with the Marqueſs of *Exceter*, and other Traitors: Our Records alſo tell us, that certain Bulls granted by the Biſhop of *Rome* were found at *Cowdrey*, being then (as I take it) the Counteſs of *Salisbury*'s Houſe; and that the Parſon of *Warblington* convey'd Letters for her to her Son the Cardinal; and that ſhe forbad all her Tenants to have the New Teſtament in *Engliſh*, or any other new book the King had priviledged. But whatſoever the cauſe was (for our Parliament Records are ſhort in the particulars) I find by a Letter from the Earl of *Southampton*, and Biſhop of *Ely* to *Cromwell*, That (though ſhe were ſeventy years old) her behaviour yet was maſculine and vehement, and that ſhe would confeſs nothing. Howſoever, the teſtimonies brought convincing her, ſhe was condemn'd.

Againſt Cardinal *Pool* it was alledg'd, that he had conſpired againſt the King with the Biſhop of *Rome*, and taken preferment of him.

Againſt the reſt, I find no more, but in general, that they were complices. Howſoever, *Forteſcue* and *Dingley* ſuffer'd firſt; for *Margarets* execution was deferred for two years, as ſhall be told hereafter; and *Gertrude* died a natural death: And for the Cardinal, he could not be taken, though I find our King required July 10. 1557.

1539. quired him earneſtly of all thoſe Princes that received him in their Dominions.

The ſix Articles being now publiſhed, gave no little occaſion of murmur, ſince to revoke the Conſcience not only from its own Court, but from the ordinary ways of reſolving Controverſies, to ſuch an abrupt deciſion of the common Law (as is there ſet down) was thought to be a diverting of Religion from its right and uſual courſe; ſince the Conſcience muſt be taught, not forced; without that it ſhould at any time be handled roughly, as being of ſo delicate a temper, as though it ſuffer an edge to be put on, who doth more, diminiſheth or breaks it. Beſides, to make the contravening of Doctrines to be Capital, before they be fully proved, is prejudicial to that liberty, without which no man can juſtifie himſelf before God or Man. For if it be death to believe otherwiſe than we are commanded, how unſafe will it be to make exact enquiry? and without it who can ſay his Religion is beſt? Beſides, the example is dangerous; for if Infidels and Heathens (to retain their People in obedience) ſhould do the like, who would ever turn Chriſtian? Therefore *Cranmer* for three days together in the open Aſſembly oppos'd theſe Articles boldly; though yet it appears not what Arguments he uſed. Only I find the King ſent to him for a Copy of them, and miſliked not his freedom, as knowing all he ſpake was out of a ſincere intention; though ſome thought he had a private Intereſt, as being himſelf a Married man, though fearing of this Law, he ſent away his Wife for the preſent into *Germany*, ſhe being Kinſwoman to *Hoſiander* the Divine of *Noremberg*, whom he Married during his Ambaſſade with the Emperor about *Anno* 1532. *Fox.*

But that it may ſeem leſs ſtrange why the King, who before was much diſpoſed to favour the Reformers, did on a ſudden ſo much vary from them, I have thought fit to ſet down ſome of the Motives, as I conceive them. In which number certainly, the objections of *Stephen Gardiner* formerly mentioned may have place, while ſpeaking againſt the Treaty with the Proteſtants in *Germany*, he alledged that they would not allow the Kings Supremacy, leſt they ſhould infer an inveſting of the ſame Authority in the Emperor, whoſe abſolute power they ſeemed to fear more than that of the Pope himſelf: And as this ſuſpition alienated ſecretly the mind of our King, who ſaw that if he embraced their Reformation, they would abridge his power; So they not only denyed to approve his Divorce, but lately (as is ſhewed) in a peremptory manner refuſed all accommodation, unleſs our King yielded wholly to the *Auguſtan* Confeſſion. Again, the Duke of *Saxony* about this time particularly ſhewed ſome diſaffection to him in the overture of his Match with *Anne* of *Cleve*.

Laſtly,

Laſtly, as Affairs then ſtood, the King was both in that danger of Rebellion at home, and invaſion from abroad, as he thought it not ſafe to reform any further in Religion; for which reaſon alſo as he was ſevere againſt all new Sectaries, eſpecially *Anabaptiſts*; ſo when occaſion was given, he ſtill teſtified his deſire as far as was poſſible to keep an unity with the *Roman* Church, affirming that the Pope had ſlanderouſly called him Heretick. Inſomuch that the ſame time he publickly diſputed with *Lambert* in *Weſtminſter-Hall*, He declared his Reſolution to continue in the Religion he had openly profeſſed. For theſe Reaſons therefore (for I ſhall not here intermeddle with thoſe of Conſcience) it ſeems our King was the more diſpoſed to keep him to the ancient forms of the Church. And now the Proteſtants in *Germany*, deſpairing of accord with the Emperor, aſſembled at *Arnſtet* in *Thuringia*, *Nov.* 9. to conſult about mutual defence. To which purpoſe, they ſent Ambaſſadors to our King; who told them, (as I find in our Records) that he would make a league with them in honeſt cauſes, as he had done with the Duke of *Juliers*, and after that he would treat of an accord and league in Religion. Though *Sleidan* (a little differing herein) writes that King *Henry* told them plainly, he thought their Doctrine touching Communion in both kinds, Private Maſs, and Prieſts Marriage erroneous, and that his Learned men ſhould diſpute herein. And that *Cromwell* thereupon told them the beſt way was to ſend an honourable Ambaſſade, and *Melanchthon*; aſſuring them that if they came to any reaſonable agreement of Doctrine with our King, he would not only furniſh them with a vaſt ſum of money for their occaſions, but enter into a ſtrict league with them for defence in general. But they ſtanding firm to the *Auguſtan* Confeſſion, and intending no League but in caſe of Religion, the buſineſs ended for the preſent, in a reſolution to anſwer the Kings Arguments concerning the Six Articles in writing, and ſend it in a Book to him, and to deſire an abolition of them.

1539.

1540.

Sleid. l. 12.

1540 April 13.

And now the Six Articles cauſed no little apprehenſion in all the Reformers; yet I do not find the Law was uſed with much rigour till *Cromwel's* death. Nevertheleſs, the terror of it made *Latimer* Biſhop of *Worceſter*, and *Shaxton* Biſhop of *Salisbury* (being committed to Priſon) to reſign their Biſhopricks to the King, they being unwilling it ſeems to have a hand in the approbation or execution of them. So that if Sir *Thomas More* and the Biſhop of *Rocheſter* had their ſcruples about the Supremacy; Theſe men were as Conſcientious about the Six Articles.

July 1.

This year the Emperor glad to repoſe himſelf a while from War, attended his pleaſure in *Spain*, while *Barbaroſſa* with a ſtrong Fleet keeping the Seas, and Landing his men, did miſchief in many place. Recovering ſo after a brave reſiſtance by *Sermiento*

Auguſt 7.

1539. *miento* a *Spaniard*, the place of *Caſtel-novo* in the Gulf of *Cataro*; which though it excited the Emperor to proceed in War againſt the *Turk*, yet a Mutiny ariſing in *Gaunt* (his native Town) made him reſolve in Perſon to go and appeaſe it. And the rather, that having now loſt his Empreſs, and check'd a little the greatneſs of ſome principal perſons in *Spain*; he thought himſelf more free and diſengaged. All the difficulty was what way to take; for if the Sea were full of hazard, there was no ready Land-way, but by *France*; which though beſt, when it could be handſomly procured, yet (the buſineſs being brought to his Council) was judg'd impoſſible; nevertheleſs, an overture thereof being ſecretly given to *Francis*, and a promiſe of *Milan* to one of his Sons (as the *French* write) he both gladly embraced the occaſion, and offered his two Sons for Hoſtages of his ſafe paſſage. This was thankfully received by the Emperor, but as the Age was full of ancient honour, (which I never found intermitted but in barbarous times) the Emperor would have no ſecurity, but only a ſafe conduct under the hand and Seal of *Francis*; taking that pledge only for his life and the Empire, while *Francis* that he might exempt his magnanimous Gueſt from jealouſie, ſent his two Sons and *Anne de Montmorency* the Condeſtable to receive him at *Bayonne*, whither in his mourning weeds, he came with twenty-ſix Perſons only, (as our Records have it) in the end of *November*, 1539. And ſo like Knight Errant following his journey, he every where (as *Francis* had permitted) delivered all Priſoners.

May 21.

Bellay.

1540. January. *Dupleix.* Coming thus to *Caſtel le Herand*, the King (though troubled with an Ulcer in his ſecret parts) and the Queen and Dutcheſs of *Eſtampes* his Favorite, and a great train of Noble Perſons Welcom'd the Emperor with all demonſtration of love. This confident Paſſage having (it ſeemed) aboliſhed all memory of their former rancour; holding their way thus to *Amboiſe*; the Emperor was there almoſt ſtifled by a thick and ſudden ſmoak, which (though the *French* report it to have been the caſual burning of ſome Hangings near his Chamber, and alſo might be true, yet one *Style*, imployed there by our King to write him the ſucceſs of this Journey, ſaid) came thus. They who had charge from *Francis* to make the Emperors reception, had hung a long Iron chain from the top of the Caſtle to the bottom, covered all over with Pitch, Tar, and Roſin in very great quantity, which being lighted at the Emperors coming (ſomewhat in Night) did afterwards upon ſome accident, go out in that ſnuff and ill ſavour, as the Emperor ſuſpected it was done on purpoſe to choak him; but theſe jealouſies were ſoon cleared, ſuccours not only coming in quickly, but *Francis* commanding the Authors of this diſturbance to be hanged, had not the Emperor interceded for them. And here, during ſome ſtay, both Princes (who formerly would have uſed their Arms againſt each other) ending their emulation

Records.

in

in ſhooting a Stag, which they both hit at the ſame time with their Hand-guns, (as *Style* relates) departing hence to *Paris*, the Court of Parliament in their Robes, the Chancellor and Officers of the City met him, with a brave Equipage, which yet the Emperor ſeemed not much to affect; his black cloath Suit, and private train being not proper, as he thought, for ſuch ſhews; ſo that he wiſhed they had been ſpared. Nevertheleſs *Francis* would not omit any thing which might ſerve either for oſtentation or magnificence, ſo that in the ſplendor thereof, all note of their former diſſenſion ſeem'd hidden or effaced. Howbeit, there wanted not ſome who perſuaded *Francis* to cancel the Treaty of *Madrid*, and make a new one at *Paris*, and that *Milan* ſhould be reſtored into the bargain. But as the Condeſtable *Montmorency* (a perſon of great worth) oppos'd this advice, ſo *Francis* abhorred it. Beſides, the Dutcheſs of *Eſtampes* (who at firſt ſeemed averſe) being gain'd by a Diamond, which the Emperor having purpoſely let fall, had after given, (upon her taking it up) changed her language, and now began to ſerve the Emperor. Seven days thus being paſt, either in Masks, Tilts, Turneys, and other Royal diſports and triumphs, or in friendly and private communication, the Emperor thought fit to depart, giving by way of ſatisfaction for his good entertainment, many aſſurances of his love to *Francis*, who alſo for making it more entire to him, as well as withdrawing it from our King, had diſcovered ſome ſecrets (formerly paſt betwixt them) which diverted the Emperor much from making any new Alliance in our Parts. But as this, at laſt, was diſcloſed again to our King, the unkind uſage he received herein, made him attend an occaſion to reſent it. And now the Emperor and *Francis* leaving *Paris*, the Condeſtable entertained them both at his goodly Palace of *Chantilly*: The admirable ſituation whereof, and variety of Countrey pleaſures about it, was ſuch, as it made the Emperor wiſh that he had ſuch another place, when it had coſt him one of his Provinces. Both Princes going hence to St. *Quintin*, bid adieu to each other, leaving nothing to be admir'd, in all the Paſſages betwixt them, than that they never ſpake of any particular difference, but by way of gentle diſcourſe, or urg'd it further, than either of them pleas'd to give ear, ſo much did civility prevail with them over all other conſiderations: and thus at length, in *February* the Emperor came to *Valenciennes*; whither *Francis* his Children having accompanied him, and received both from him, and his Siſter *Mary*, Lady Regent there, all kind and Regal uſage (excepting an abſolute promiſe to reſtore *Milan*) they departed and left the Emperor to attend his great occaſions in thoſe Countreys. Where being happy in nothing more than that his adventure of paſſing through *France*, (which nothing could juſtifie but the Event) had ſucceeded ſo well, he compoſed the Stirs there ſhortly after.

1540.

February.

1540. The paſſages of this Interview being advertiſed to our King, made him attempt betimes to break off their new Alliance: or when that could not be done, to prevent the conſequences. Therefore, immediately upon the departure of the Emperor from *Paris*, he ſent the Duke of *Norfolk* to treat with *Francis* to this effect: To offer him aſſiſtance for recovery of *Milan*. And for this purpoſe, that the arrearages of the Penſions due to our King, and Salt-money ſhould be remitted: Furthermore, that with all induſtry he ſhould make him jealous of the Emperors ambition. And laſtly, to propoſe a ſtrict League with him, even to the excluſion of the Pope from their Dominions, as he ſaid: he ſaid he had already contracted with the Duke of *Cleves*, and in a manner with the Duke of *Saxe*, the Count Palatine of the *Rhine*, the Dukes of *Bavaria*, *John* Marqueſs of *Brandenburgh*, the Lantgrave of *Heſſe*, and the Marqueſs *Joachim* Elector, and other Princes of *Germany*. The Duke coming thus to *Paris*, had audience of *Francis*; but finding him reſolute not to break with the Emperor, if he performed his part, re return'd before the end of *February*.

Records.

Having thus delivered together the whole buſineſs of the Interview, and ſucceſs thereof, leſt the Reader ſhould be interrupted with broken and imperfect Narrations, I ſhall look back on ſome other Affairs which paſſed this while.

1539. Our King having found that neither the Marriage propos'd betwixt himſelf and the Dutcheſs of *Milan*, was like to take effect, nor any other in *France*, conſidered now where he might beſtow himſelf with moſt advantage: whereupon *Cromwel* adviſed him to a Treaty with *Cleves*; and the rather, that he might oppoſe the Emperor, who did ſtill retain ſuch a grudge againſt him for diſ-inheriting the Princeſs *Mary*, as it was thought he would endeavour to execute the Popes Sentence: ſo that hereunto certain conſiderations of State, rather than beauty or riches, did conduce. For as *John* Duke of *Cleves* was next Neighbour to the Emperors Dominions in the *Low-Countreys*, and Father-in-law to the Duke of *Saxony*, he ſeem'd moſt proper to joyn with in League to this purpoſe. But the old Duke *John* dying ſhortly after, the Treaty was renewed with Duke *William* his Son, to whom alſo the Princeſs *Mary* was propos'd, when he demanded her upon fitting terms. But difficulties appear'd in either of theſe Affairs; for the Lady *Anne* having been demanded by the Duke of *Lorain*'s Son, the old Duke of *Cleves* had in great part accorded it: And for the other Match, it was much croſs'd by the Emperor, who offered Duke *William* the Dutcheſs of *Milan*, not without ſome hope that he would releaſe *Guelders*, which the ſaid Duke claim'd by the gift of *Charles* of *Egmond*, late Duke thereof. Howbeit, the Treaties with our King went on; but

April 1539.

May 1539.

1538.

ſo

ſo as they were by the *Clevois* cunningly delayed, till a meeting with the Emperors Deputies at *Bruxels* had paſt; and advice was taken with the Duke of *Saxony*: Yet were not theſe the only impediments; for the Lady *Anne* underſtood no Language but *Dutch*; ſo that all communication of ſpeech betwixt our King and her was intercluded. Yet, as our Ambaſſador, *Nicholas Wotton* Doctor of Law, employed in this buſineſs, hath it, ſhe could both write and read in her own Language, and ſew very well; only for Muſick, he ſaid, it was not the manner of the Countrey to learn it. But for her better deſcription, *Hans Holbin* the Kings Servant took her Picture, and her younger Siſter *Amelies*, and ſent them hither; upon whoſe excellent repreſentation of the Lady *Anne*, the Match being reſolved on, was fully concluded at the coming over of *Frederic* Duke of *Bavaria* Count Palatine of the *Rhine*, and the ſeveral Ambaſſadors of the Dukes of *Saxony* and *Cleves*; and ſhortly after the Lady with a brave Equipage was ſent into *England*. The other Treaty yet ſucceeded not; for the young Duke of *Cleves* finding no diſpoſition in the Emperor to releaſe *Guelders*, concluded a Marriage with the only Daughter of *Henry* King of *Navarre*, and *Margarita* the *French* Kings Siſter, the year following; which yet took no effect. This Lady being on her way now as far as *Rocheſter*, the King came diſguiſed to her on New-years day: but the ſight ſo diſliked him, that he was glad (as his own words were afterwards) that he had kept himſelf from making any pact of Bond with her, and that he was woe that ever ſhe came into *England*; and that he thereupon deliberated with himſelf how to break it off; though, as he conſidered it would make a ruffle in the world, and drive the Duke her Brother into the Emperor or *French* King's hands, he ſaid, It was too far gone. The truth of all which is ſo declared by our Records, that I make no queſtion but if her coming had hapned at any other time than when the Emperor and *French* King were together in *France*, as is before related, He would have ſent her back. Howſoever, he thought fit to diſcover himſelf at laſt to her; who thereupon fell on her knees, but he taking her up lovingly, kiſs'd her, without making ſhew of any inward diſcontent, which alſo he had ſo at length digeſted, that he reſolved to marry her, when the enſurance made by her to the Duke of *Lorain*'s Son were cleared; which buſineſs being committed to *Cromwels* care, who was a ſpecial Counſellor of the Match, he ſaid (as the King afterwards charged him under his hand) that a ſufficient Inſtrument for this purpoſe was brought: But whether *Cromwel* did forget himſelf herein, or his Maſter, it is hard out of our Records to determine; for I find in an Original written by *Cromwel*, 25 of *June*, to the King, out of the Tower, that *Oleſleger* and *Hobſteden* (the Duke of *Cleve*'s Commiſſioners for bringing over the Lady) had

1540.

Aug. 1539

Decemb.

1539.
Decemb 31.
Jan. 1.

June.

1540. with them indeed no ſuch Inſtrument, nor any diſcharge or Declaration touching the Covenants of Marriage betwixt the Duke of *Lorain*'s Son; nevertheleſs, that *Oleſteger* offered to remain here as Priſoner, till a revocation of all the aforeſaid Covenants
Jan. 4. and Contracts of Marriage were brought; and that this being told the King, made him ſay, he was not well handled in this buſineſs. Howſoever, all was remitted to the Council-Table, where the Arch-biſhop of *Canterbury*, and Biſhop of *Dureſme* ſaid, If nothing but Sponſals had paſt betwixt them, ſuch a Renunciation as was offered would ſerve; and that then ſhe making a Proteſtation in an Honourable Preſence before certain Notaries, ſhould be a ſufficient diſcharge in Law: And now the procuring of the ſaid Inſtrument in writing being undertook by the aforeſaid Commiſſioners, the King required the Lady to make a Proteſtation before the Lords to this effect: which being done, he
Jan. 5. ſaid to *Cromwel*, that there was no remedy now, and therefore he muſt put his neck in the yoak (as the words under his hands
Jan. 6. are): Whereupon, the next day after he ſolemnly Married her at *Greenwich*, reſolving to confederate himſelf with the Princes of *Germany*, if they would come to ſome moderate accord in Doctrine. But in the morning *Cromwel* coming to him, and demanding whether he lik'd her better than before, He anſwered, Nay, much worſe; for that he having found by ſome ſigns that ſhe was no Maid, he had no diſpoſition to meddle with her: Nevertheleſs, he outwardly cheriſhed her; without making any publick demonſtration of diſ-favour towards her, or neglect of any Solemnity for her reception at *London* and elſe-where. All
Dec. 1539 which made the greater ſhew, that the King remembring what Enemies he had abroad, and diſcontented perſons at home, had renewed his Guard of Fifty Penſioners, intermitted ſince the firſt year of his Reign.

It is formerly related, how not only *James* King of *Scotland* deſired in Marriage *Mary* the Daughter of the Duke of *Guiſe*, and Relict of the Duke of *Longueville*; but a touch given that our King had ſome inclination to her: Howbeit, *Francis* choſe rather to give her to *James*, as knowing that leſs States united to greater, depend on them; whereas the equal for the moſt part live in jealouſie with their Neighbours: Therefore the
Jan. 10. Match being concluded, ſhe was brought to *Scotland*, and ſoon
1538. after with Child, which being a Son, the Grand-mother *Mar-*
Leſl. *garet*, Queen of *Scots*, and Siſter to our King, having Chriſtned, ſhortly after died, aged about Fifty years, and was buried in the *Carthuſians* Church in *Perth*. But neither that child, nor a-
1540. nother born the year following, lived long; they (though in ſeveral places) ending their lives within ſix hours one after the other, the ſame day (as the *Scottiſh* Hiſtory hath it.) I find lit-
Leſl. Buch. tle elſe by our Records, of *Scotland*, for this year; ſave that ſome

Libels

Libels and Propheſies being divulged in *Scotland* againſt our King, the Authors were puniſhed by *James*. The year following Sir *Ralph Sadler* Secretary was diſpatched thither; about the time that the Emperor and *French* King were together: For our King knew well how much it concern'd him now on every part to prevent danger. The Inſtructions given to *Sadler* were (after preſenting the Kings love, and ſome Horſes) Firſt, To bring *David Beton* Cardinal and Arch-Biſhop of St. *Andrews* into ſuſpicion with that King, as having written to *Rome* in other terms than he ſhould; which Letters being intercepted in *England*, were now to be ſhewn. But King *James* did not much weigh this. 1540. Feb. 24. 1540.

Secondly, To perſuade him, for augmenting his Eſtate, to take into his hands the Abbeys; which *James* likewiſe refuſed, ſaying, what need I take them into my hands, when I may have any thing I can require of them? And if there be abuſes in them, I will reform them; for there be a great many good.

Thirdly, To diſcover his affection, by telling him how rumours were diſperſed (which the aforeſaid Interview made probable) that the Emperor, *French* King, and Biſhop of *Rome* would invade *England*; and that it was ſaid, King *James* would do the ſame: But he proteſted with many Oaths againſt it. Whereupon *Sadler* told him how near he was to the *Engliſh* Crown; and that he ſhould eſteem his Uncles friendſhip above any others, deſiring again there might be an Interview; which *James* approved, when the *French* King might be preſent; but afterward by a particular Meſſage excuſed it: ſo that ſome jealouſies paſs'd betwixt them; which alſo appear'd by certain Fortifications raiſed about this time upon the Borders by our King, and a Navy of fifteen Ships, and 2000 men made in readineſs by *James*: who wanted not money, his Clergy giving great ſums only that their Houſes might not be diſſolv'd. What the occaſion of theſe preparations yet was, I cannot tell; but I gather out of our Records, That about this time certain *Iriſh* Gentlemen came to invite him to their Countrey, promiſing to acknowledge him their King, and that divers Nobles and Gentlemen of *Ireland* ſhould come over to do him Homage. How this offer was accepted, appears not; but the Preparatives came to nothing, by the good order which our King gave; who both by frequent and kind Meſſages, and ſecuring his Borders, kept his Nephew in good intelligence. One doubt yet remained undecided, as I gather out of our Records, which was, That our King took it ill, that *James* aſſum'd to himſelf his Title of *Defender of the Faith*, only adding the word *Chriſtian* unto it, as if (ſaid he) there were any other Faith.

That Beauty and attractive which ſhould take the Kings eye in *Anne* of *Cleve*, not appearing, nor that converſation which ſhould April. 11.

pleaſe

1540. pleaſe his ear; and her Brother beſides excuſing himſelf in the performance of ſome Articles of the Treaty, he did more willingly think of a Divorce; for which purpoſe, the Pre-contract with the Duke of *Lorain's* Son was chiefly pretended. For though *Oliſleger*, Chancellor of *Cleves*, had according to his promiſe, 26. *Feb.* 1540. procured an Inſtrument in writing out of the Records of *Duſſeldorp*, dated *Feb.* 15. 1535. teſtifying the *Sponſalia* heretofore made by the Parents betwixt the Duke of *Lorain's* Son, and the Lady *Anne* ſhould not take effect. Yet this it ſeems either was not ſhewed, or did not ſatisfie our King. Howſoever it was not depoſited *in Archivis Regiis*, but found among *Cromwel's* Papers after his apprehenſion. And now although all ſcruples ſeem'd the more conſiderable, in that ſo many doubts had been already caſt concerning the Kings former Marriages, yet the King determined at what price ſoever to ſeparate himſelf from *Anne* of *Cleve*, and together to ruine *Cromwel*. For though He had not long before made him Knight of the Aug. 26. Garter, Earl of *Eſſex*, and High Chamberlain of *England*, yet as 1537. he was odious by reaſon of his low birth to all the Nobility, and April 18. hated particularly by *Stephen Gardiner*, and the Roman Catholicks, for having operated ſo much in the diſſolution of Abbies; and that the Reformers themſelves found he could not protect them from burning; and laſtly, that beſides a Subſidy that the April. 12. Clergy gave of four ſhillings in the pound, he had gotten in the preſent Parliament, not without much reluctation, one tenth, and four fifteen parts of all Lay-mens goods; he was univerſally hated: which our King conſidering, and having beſides divers Regn. $\frac{31}{32}$. Articles brought againſt him, he now judged him no longer neceſſary: therefore he gave way to all his Enemies Accuſations; which could not but be material; it being impoſſible that any man, who medled ſo much in great and publick affairs, ſhould not in divers kinds ſo miſtake, forget, and err, as to incurr the note of a Criminal, when ſevere inquiſition were made againſt him. And now the King having gotten ſufficient proof againſt *Cromwel*, cauſed him to be Arreſted at the Council-Table by the June 13. Duke of *Norfolk*, when he leaſt ſuſpected it: To which *Cromwel* obeyed, though judging his Perdition more certain, that the Duke was Uncle to the Lady *Katherine Howard*, whom the King began now to affect. The News whereof, and his commitment to the Tower being divulg'd, the People with many acclamations wit[illegible] their joy; So impatient are they uſually of the good fortune of Favorites ariſing from mean place, and inſolent over the ill: whereof the King being informed, proceeded more overtly, both in his Parliament buſineſs, and the Divorce; and the rather, that all former faults being now imputed to *Cromwel*, every body began to hope of a better age. But *Cromwel* (if we Fox p. 514. may believe ſome of our Authors) foreſaw his fall two years before,

fore, and therefore provided for his Family; neither did the late honours give him much comfort or ſecurity, when he thought they were conferr'd only to make him the greater Sacrifice. It cannot be denyed yet, but the crimes whereof he was attainted in Parliament, are in the general terms great and enormous, and ſuch as deſerv'd the moſt Capital puniſhment; though as ſome of the accuſations were conceal'd two years after they were alledged, and the particulars of ſome others not ſpecified; and and laſtly, as he was not permitted to anſwer for himſelf, the proceedings againſt him were thought rigorous; but ſo few pittied him, that all was eaſily paſſed over: Nevertheleſs, I find by an Original, that *Cranmer* writ to the King in his behalf boldly, conſidering the times; for though (as is in his Letter) he heard yeſterday in his Graces Council, that he is a Traitor; yet, he ſaith, who cannot be ſorrowful, and amaz'd that he ſhould be a Traitor againſt your Majeſty? He that was ſo advanced by your Majeſty, he whoſe ſurety was only by your Majeſty, he who loved your Majeſty (as I ever thought) no leſs than God; He who ſtudied always to ſet forward, whatſoever was your Majeſties will and pleaſure; He that car'd for no mans diſpleaſure to ſerve your Majeſty; He that was ſuch a Servant, in my judgment, in Wiſdom, Diligence, Faithfulneſs, and Experience, as no Prince in this Realm ever had; He that was ſo vigilant to preſerve your Majeſty from all Treaſons, that few could be ſo ſecretly conceived, but he detected the ſame in the beginning? If the Noble Princes of memory, King *John*, *Henry* the Second, and *Richard* the Second, had had ſuch a Counſellor about them, I ſuppoſe they ſhould never have been ſo Traiterouſly abandoned, and over-thrown as thoſe good Princes were: After which, he ſays again, I loved him as my Friend, for ſo I took him to be, but I chiefly loved him for the love which I thought I ſaw him bear ever towards your Grace ſingularly above all others: But now, if he be a Traitor, I am ſorry that ever I loved him, or truſted him, and I am very glad that his Treaſon is diſcovered in time; but yet again I am very ſorrowful; for who ſhall your Grace truſt hereafter, if you might not truſt him? Alas! I bewail and lament your Graces chance herein, I wot not whom your Grace may truſt. But I pray God continually night and day to ſend ſuch a Counſellor in his place, whom your Grace may truſt, and who for all his qualities can and will ſerve your Grace like to him, and that will have ſo much ſollicitude and care to preſerve your Grace from all dangers, as I ever thought he had. All which, as being a Character of *Cromwel* in *Cranmer*'s opinion, I have faithfully Copied out of the Original. Not yet that I will pretend excuſes for him, whom the Laws have condemned; (though *Fox* doubts not to ſay, That as General Councils have ſometimes been obſerved to err, ſo Princes and

1540.

June 14. Records.

1540. and Parliaments may be ſometimes informed by ſiniſter Heads;) but that his puniſhment may ſerve as a Caution for thoſe that ſerve ſevere Princes, to procure ſufficient warrant for all that they do. The Crimes objected to *Cromwel* ſeeming to be chiefly an uſurpation of power, to ſet at liberty certain Perſons not capable of it, and granting certain Licences, and making certain Commiſſions in high Affairs, without the Kings knowledge: For which, though *Cromwel* in his diſcretion might have found due motives; yet as he proceeded not warily therein, he fell into the danger of the Law. Furthermore, he was accuſed for being an Heretick, and favouring them: (But then, that the Head of the Churches Vicegerent in Spiritual Affairs, ſhould be an Heretick and favourer of them, to ſome ſeemed ſtrange, to others gave occaſion of merriment.) As for his ſpeaking certain high preſumptuous words concerning the King, and ſundry of the Nobility; many thought it proceeded rather out of miſtaking and raſhneſs, than any ill intention. *Cromwel* thus unheard, and almoſt unpitied, being condemned while he was in the Tower, omitted not yet to write unto the King, whereof hereafter. The context of my Hiſtory requiring, that I come to the proceedings of the Kings Divorce.

Sanders. Schiſm. Angl.

June. Records. I find by an original, that *John Clark* Biſhop of *Bath*, was ſent to the Duke of *Cleve* at the end of *June*, to tell him, That the King never conſented heartily to the Matrimony with his Siſter; and that he never did, nor intended to conſummate the ſame; eſpecially ſince he could not but take notice of the precontract with *Lorain*: Beſides which, that there were ſecret cauſes, which the King without great neceſſity would not have diſcloſed, becauſe they touch'd the Honor of the Lady; yet that all her Jewels ſhould be reſtored with an honourable Augmentation in Revenue, *&c.* And ſo that ſhe ſhould be tranſported into her Country. Beſides, that aſſurance ſhould be given the Duke of the Kings lone, in all his occaſions with the Emperor. After which, if the Duke ſhould remain perverſe, to tell him, That the Matter is already ſo debated by his Majeſty, and the whole Realm, (as the Reader will ſee hereafter) the Parliament now ſitting, that they be utterly reſolv'd to proceed to juſtice. But theſe Inſtructions again were checked by others of *July 3.* and he commanded to perſiſt only in the point of precontract with *Lorain*, which was upon Remonſtrance of the Lords in the upper Houſe, to be debated in Parliament, ſince they found the Inſtrument for Revocation thereof was of no value: And that certain perſons were appointed of both Houſes, who ſhould repair to the King, to beſeech Him by way of humble Petition, That it would pleaſe Him, both to grant, that the Biſhops and the Clergy of the Realm, might examine the Matter, and thereupon declare their Judgment, and Sentence; and alſo to abſtain from her

July 3.

her company, till the caſe were decided: Whereunto his Majeſty condeſcending and agreeing, upon *Thurſday* next it ſhould be opened to the Parliament, and brought to the King, and from thence, remitted to the Biſhops and Clergy; and alſo notified to her. All which tending only to an Examination, His Majeſty could not deny, not doubting but the ſaid Duke conſidering that it is the general motion of the whole Realm, and remembring the effuſion of blood which hath been in the ſame, by uncertainty of Titles, will think it reaſonable, That this laſt Matrimony, for their more certainty, and the Kings diſcharge, ſhould be examined. Theſe ſecond Inſtructions (ſigned by the King as the former were,) yet did not pleaſe: He being finally commanded to urge for his beſt Argument *Authoritatem rei judicatæ*: All which Inſtructions were ſent the Biſhop in his way, and before he came to *Bruges*, where the Emperor was; whom he was commanded to ſalute on His Majeſties part, and to deliver him certain Letters. The particulars whereof, though not extant in our Records, yet (as I gather by ſome Circumſtances) tended to a Reconciliation with the Emperor, whom the King in this Match had diſobliged. Of the delivery whereof alſo, the Biſhop (being not yet come to the Duke of *Cleves*) advertiſed our King, who this whle commanded the Duke of *Suffolk*, the Earl of *Southampton*, and Sir *Thomas Wriotheſly* to acquaint the ſaid Lady therewith; (who, upon pretence of better Air, was lately removed to *Richmond*.) But the news ſtruck her into a ſudden weakneſs and fainting, till at laſt recovering her ſelf, ſhe was by little and little perſuaded, Firſt, to refer the Matter to the Clergy: Secondly, to relinquiſh her Title of Queen; inſtead whereof, the King had deviſed another which He thought might content her: And this was (as I find by our Records) that ſhe ſhould have the name and dignity thenceforth of His Adopted Siſter; which ſtile yet, afterwards gave ſome ſubject of diſcourſe: Howſoever, ſhe accepted it, and ſubſcribed (in theſe terms) a Letter to the King. Beſides, ſhe ſent another to her Brother the Duke of *Cleves*, acknowledging the Juſtice of the proceeding; and that ſhe was untouched by the King, and that ſhe was well intreated in *England*, and therefore deſired to ſtay: Laſtly, ſhe promiſed to ſhew the King all Letters received from her Brother, Mother, or any elſe. Whereupon, the Officers which before attended her as Queen, were diſcharged, and others appointed to wait on her in the quality of the Kings Adopted Siſter.

And now the Duke underſtanding by the Biſhop of *Bath*, and *Nicolas Wotton* Reſident there, That our Clergy aſſiſted by the Court of Arches, had declared (upon her Teſtimony, that ſhe was untouched by our King) that the Marriage was void, and that either part might Marry freely; and that the whole Parlia-

1540.
July 6.
July 6.
June 25.
July 11.
July 20.
July 10.
July 12.

1540. ment had confirmed the Sentence, and ſhe accepted it, remained much perplext, as with tears he witneſſed; yet finding it a buſineſs publickly reſolved, he ſaid little; eſpecially, after he heard that *Richmond* Houſe, and other fair Lands, were allotted her for maintenance; and that ſhe ſhould have precedence before all, ſave the Queen, and the Kings Children. Howbeit, he would never conſent to the diſannulling of the Match; ſo that the Biſhop returned, leaving the Duke no otherwiſe ſatisfied, than that his Siſter had ſped no worſe. Thus at length a Law
July 12. paſſed, declaring the Marriage void, both by the Judgment of the Clergy of *England*, and alſo by her own conſent, and that it was High Treaſon to judge or believe otherwiſe.

Another Act alſo was made, ſhewing, what Marriages were Lawful, and what not. Wherein is ordained, that all Marriages (without the degrees prohibited by Gods Law) made and conſummate by carnal knowledge, ſhall be firm and good: Notwithſtanding any precontract, which hath not been ſo conſummate. But this Law was repealed 1. and 2. *Phil.* and *Mar.* and 1. *Eliz.* 1.

Other Acts alſo paſſed this Seſſion of Parliament, which began
April 12. *April* 12. Among which I thought fit to remember theſe:
Pag. $\frac{11}{32}$. An Act declaring in what Caſes a man may diſpoſe all his Lands by his laſt Will in Writing; and in what, but part thereof. And in what Caſes the King, and other Lords ſhall have their Wardſhips.

That no Perſon ſhould ſell or buy any Right or Title, or maintain it, or procure maintenance in any ſuit.

The pnniſhment alſo by death of Prieſts married, or unmarried; and of Women offending with them by Incontinency, was repealed. For as the Clergy of theſe times thought it (though one of the Six Articles) too ſevere; the puniſhment (upon their Remonſtrance) was laid on their Goods, Chattels, and Spiritual Promotions; and this alſo better pleaſed the King.

Sanctuaries alſo, and priviledged places were reduced to a few, and certain Rules preſcribed to them.

That Horſes feeding on Commons, not being of a lawful height, (that is to ſay, not being fifteen handfuls high, at two years old) ſhould be ſeiſed on by any man for his own uſe.

That Foreſts, Healths, Commons, *&c.* ſhould be driven once in the year, and unlikely Tits in them to be killed. Nevertheleſs, that Horſes of ſmall height might be put where Mares were not kept.

The Statutes alſo of 5 *Rich.* 2. 3. 6. *Rich.* 2. 8. 4. 4 *Hen.* 7. 10. and 23. *Hen.* 8. 7. touching fraighting in *Engliſh* Ships, were only rehearſed and confirmed, and a rate ſet down what ſhould be paid for the fraight, or portage of the ſeveral ſorts of Merchandizes

chandizes from the Port of *London* to other places, and from thence to *London*. 1540.

That no Alien nor Denizon ſhall ſet up any Trade in the Kings Dominions, and they who are Denizons ſhould be bound by and unto all the Laws and Statutes of this Realm, particularly thoſe of 14 *Hen.* 8. and 21. *Hen.* 8. above mentioned.

That *Trinity* Term, in regard of impediment of Harveſt, and danger of Infection, ſhould be abbreviated. Certain Priviledges alſo were granted to Phyſicians in *London*; as that they ſhould not keep Watch and Ward, nor be Conſtables; and that they might practiſe Chirurgery: Barbers, and Chirurgions were alſo made one Company, and certain Priviledges given them; as not to bear Armour, or to be put in any Watches or Inqueſts.

A Court alſo of the firſt Fruits, and Tenths, granted to the King, was erected.

The Court of the Kings Ward alſo, and the names and ſeveral Duties and Offices thereof was erected.

It was enacted alſo, That the Lands and Goods of St. *Johns* in *Jeruſalem*, ſhould be in the Kings diſpoſition; for which, theſe Reaſons chiefly were pretended: Becauſe the Knights of *Rhodes* or Saint *John*, otherwiſe called Fryers of the Religion of Saint *John*, drew yearly geart ſums of Money out of the Kingdom; That they maintained the uſurped power of the Biſhop of *Rome*; that they defamed and ſlandered the King and his Subjects; that the Iſle of *Rhodes*, whence the ſaid Religion took its name, was ſurpriſed by the *Turks*; that the Revenues might be better imployed for defence of the Realm; nevertheleſs, certain Penſions were allowed unto the Prior, and others of the ſaid Order, that were dutiful Subjects. But all their Lands, as well in *England* as in *Ireland*, were granted to the Kings Majeſty, to be in the Survey, Rule, and Governance of the Chancellor, and others, Officers of the Court of Augmentations. And thus fell that ancient and pious Order, not without much ſcandal abroad, both to the King and Government. Though yet, the envious diſreſpect ſhewed unto the *Engliſh* being ſuch, as they never attained higher dignity than the *Turcoplier* or Captains place of the Light-Horſe in the Iſle of *Rhodes* did (in the opinion of ſome) extenuate this proceeding: The King, yet grew not much the richer hereby, as giving great Portions of the ſaid Lands to divers of our Noblemen and Cavaliers, who lately had held a ſolemn Juſts, Tourney and Barriers in *Weſtminſter*, and feaſted ſumptuouſly, both the King and Court. May 1. *Hall.*

Laſtly, a general and free Pardon was granted of all Hereſies, Treaſons, Felonies, and Offences, (ſome particular Perſons and Matters only excepted;) In which number *Cromwel* was not yet included. For, though divers Letters and Meſſages paſſed from June 25.

1540. him to the King; and one particularly written after his Condemnation, and extant in our Records, wherein he much excuſed himſelf, ſaying, That if his medlings under His Majeſty were great, ſo His Majeſties Authority was great; and that he proteſted, beſides, under many execrations, That he was innocent in his intentions; And laſtly, utterly denyed all Treaſon and Hereſie, as that he was no Sacramentary, *&c.* yet he could not prevail. July 28. And thus the 28th. of *July*, (being four days after the Diſſolution of the Parliament,) he was brought to the *Tower-Hill*, where, after Profeſſion that he would die in the Catholick Faith, his head was cut off.

And to this end came *Cromwel*, who from being but a Blackſmiths Son, found means to travel into divers foreign Countries, to learn their Languages, and to ſee the Wars (being a Souldier of *Bourbon* at the Sacking of *Rome*;) whence returning, he was received into the Cardinal *Woolſey*'s ſervice: To whom, he ſo approved himſelf, by his fidelity and diligence, that the King after his fall, voluntarily took him for his Servant; in which place, he became a ſpecial inſtrument for diſſolving the Abbies, and other Religious Houſes, and keeping down the Clergy; whom in regard of their Oath to the Pope, he uſually termed the Kings half Subjects: And for expelling the Monks, he ſaid it was no more than a reſtoring them to the firſt Inſtitution of being lay, and labouring Perſons: Neither did it move him, That ſo much ſtrictneſs and auſterity of life was injoyn'd them in their ſeveral Orders, ſince he ſaid they might keep it in any condition: But as theſe Reaſons again were not admitted by divers Learned and able Perſons, ſo he got him many Enemies, who at laſt procured his fall; but not before he had obtained ſucceſſively the Dignities of Maſter of the Rolls, *a* Baron, *b* Lord Privy Seal, *c* Vicegerent to the King in Spiritualities, *d* Knight of the Garter, *e* Earl of *Eſſex*, Great Chamberlain of *England*, &c. He was noted in the exerciſe of his places of Judicature, to have uſed much moderation; and in his greateſt pomp, to have taken notice, and been thankful to mean perſons of his old acquaintance, and therein had a vertue which his Maſter the Cardinal wanted: As for his other deſcriptions, I leave them to be taken out of *Cranmer*'s Letter formerly mentioned, with ſome deduction; For it ſeems written to the King, in more than ordinary favour of his ancient ſervice.

a July 9, *b* *c* July 18. 1536. *d* Aug. 26. 1537. *e* April 14. 1540.

At the ſame time with *Cromwel*, *Walter* Lord *Hungerford* ſuffered. The Crimes objected to him, were, For taking into his Houſe as Chaplain one *William Bird*, who had called the King Heretick, *&c.* That he had procured certain perſons to Conjure, to know how long the King ſhould live; alſo, That he had uſed the ſin of Buggery.

Shortly

1540.

Shortly after which, divers great perſons from *Italy*, and other places, came to ſee the King, whom he very courteouſly received, and being richly rewarded, diſmiſſed them.

July 22. *Hollins.*

The King continued yet his rigor to thoſe that diſputed either his Authority, or Articles; inſomuch, that both the Reformers and Maintainers of the Popes Authority ſuffered ſo frequently, That his Enemies ſaid, while he admitted neither ſide, he ſeemed to be of no Religion. Howbeit this was but calumny, for he ſtood firmly to his own Reformation. *Sanders.*

And now the Lady *Anne* of *Cleves* contenting her ſelf with the ſtile of the Kings Adopted Siſter, the Lady *Katherine Howard*, Daughter to *Edmond* the third Son of *Thomas*, firſt Duke of *Norfolk*, and Brother to the preſent Duke, was Married to the King, and preſently after ſhewed publickly as Queen.

Auguſt 8. Auguſt.

Our Hiſtorians ſay, That in *Auguſt*, this year, there was ſo great a drought, that the Springs failing, the Salt water flowed above *London*-Bridge. I find alſo, that *Frederic* Count *Palatine* of *Bavaria* was in *England*, to obtain Aid of the King, for the reſtitution of his Father in Law the King of *Denmark*. But as our Records do not ſet down the time exactly, ſo I know not whether to place him in this year, or the year preceding. Howſoever, he found ſome difficulty in his buſineſs, and the rather, that he asked ſo great a ſum as ſix hundred thouſand Ducats, when the King had ſo much uſe of money, for the fortifying of His Kingdom.

Let us look a while upon foreign buſineſs: The memory of thoſe courteſies which were done the Emperor, being yet freſh, *Francis* thought fit to ſend the Cardinal of *Lorain* and Condeſtable *Montmorency*, to Treat concerning the Reſtitution of *Milan*: But the Emperor, reſolute at what price ſoever not to quit it, made them at length this Anſwer:

There is nothing I deſire ſo much, as the peace and quiet of the World, which that it may be firm and true, I am content to give unto the King, more than ever he meant to ask, or I to grant. Of two Daughters which I have, I am willing to beſtow the Elder in Marriage to the Duke of *Orleans*, and with her for Dowry, the State of *Flanders*, with the Stile and Title of a King; ſo ſhall *Francis* have two Sons, both Kings and Neighbors: Beſides, if his Eldeſt Son and mine die, he and my Daughter ſhall be the greateſt Princes in the World; for they ſhall have *Spain* and all my other Dominions. As for *Milan*, let them not think I will ever part with it, ſince it were nothing elſe then to disjoynt (the *Spaniſh* is more elegant *Deſcabecar*) all my Eſtates. And let it not grieve the King; for I had it by good and lawful Succeſſion, and poſſeſs it as belonging to the Empire. Take *Milan* from me, and you take away my paſſage between *Flanders* and *Spain*, *Italy*, *Sicily*, and *Germany*. This is that I had to ſay to you *Sandov.*

1540. you. And if it pleaſe you not, there is no occaſion to ſpeak more of the buſineſs.

The Cardinal and *Montmorency* hereupon advertiſed this good offer; but *Francis*, as a man paſſionate, and affronted, returned this Anſwer:

That ſince he might not have his Inheritance, he would have nothing elſe; neither, would he care to ſpeak any more of Peace.

And thus the Treaty brake off; yet ſo, as it was thought that *Francis* herein ſhewed ſome wilfulneſs; he being not further off from *Milan* for having *Flanders*, nor to be bound ſo by any confederation, as he might not eaſily find occaſion to diſſolve it, the cauſes both of War and Peace betwixt great Princes being perpetual. And now the Emperor glad of this refuſal, proſecutes his buſineſs in *Germany*, without care of giving *Francis* any further ſatisfaction.

In *France*, where all was now quiet, little paſt this year, ſave that *Francis* being deſirous to enlarge his Borders, built a Fortreſs at *Ardres*, and made a Bridge over to the *Engliſh* Pale; which our Garriſon hearing, beat down. The *French* yet re-edified it: but our Garriſons overthrew it again. Whereupon the *French* raiſing ſome Forces under *Monſieur de Biez*; our King commanded *Henry Arundel* Lord *Matrevers* (lately made Deputy of *Calais* in the place of *Arthur Plantagenet*) to put the Town into defence by Fortifying and Victualling it; and ſhortly after ſent over the Earl of *Hertford* and Sir *Edward Kerne*, who diſputed the right of the Borders with *Monſieur de Biez*, and other Commiſſioners from *Francis*. But as no effect followed hereon, and *Francis* beſides took occaſion to complain, that our King in the late Parliament had made the *French* liable to Subſidies, and other new Impoſitions, contrary to the ancient Treaties: our King on the other ſide, remonſtrating that thoſe Acts were neither new, nor derogatory to the ſaid Treaties; both Princes remained unſatisfied of the others actions. Therefore on the *French* party *Monſieur de Vendoſme* was commanded to raiſe Forces in *Picardy*; and from *England* were ſent *William* Earl of *Southampton* lately made Lord Privy Seal, and *John* Lord *Ruſſel* newly conſtitute high Admiral, with a few Troops of *Northern* Horſe: without yet that any thing was attempted on either ſide for the preſent.

Septemb. 7.
Octob. 13.
June.
Nov. 14.
Jan. 1541.
Records.
Octob.
Records.
Hall. 1541.
April.
Octob. 27.
July 28.

I will conclude this year with a Narration of the firſt beginning which the *Jeſuitical Order* took from *Inigo de Loyola* of *Guipuſcoa* in *Spain*. This *Inigo* or *Ignatius* being born 1492. (that is to ſay, in the year that the *Indies* were diſcovered, and *Granada* taken in by *Ferdinand*) ſeems the third great effect of that unparallel'd aſcendent which *Spain* had at that time: He lived yet obſcurely till he came to twenty-nine years of age, but then turn'd

Soldier

Soldier in the Wars of *Navarre* 1521. where being hurt in the knee, the pain thereof ſeems to have wakened devotion in him to a Religious life; for aſſoon as he recovered, he went to our Lady of *Montſerrat*, to whom he offer'd his Sword and Dagger, which being done, he gave his Clothes away to a poor man, and took upon him a Shirt and miſerable habit, which he girt about him with a rope of Ruſhes: And in theſe Arms (for ſo are *Sandoval's* words) he watch'd one whole night before our Lady, and ſo went to an Hoſpital three Leagues off, and there attended the ſick perſons, whence he travell'd after to the *Holy Land*; being returned thence, and now in his age of thirty three, he began to learn Grammar at *Barcelona*, which in two years he attain'd. And being deſirous to make further progreſs, he went to the Univerſity of *Alcala*, and ſo to *Salamanca*, where being oppos'd and perſecuted, he left all and came to *Paris*, and there ſtudied till he had found at laſt divers others with whom he agreed to return in Pilgrimage to the *Holy Land*, and *Jeruſalem*. Thus about 1536. going firſt to *Venice*; he ſtaid till his Companions ovrtook him, and went from thence to *Rome*, whither he followed them; and obtain'd of *Paul* the Third the Foundation of the *Jeſuitical Order*, 27. *Sept.* 1540. The decay of Religious Houſes in *England*, and the progreſs of the *Lutherans* in *Germany*, Authoriſing (it ſeems) their Inſtitution, who ſithence have ſo dilated themſelves, as their Diſciples fear not to ſay; that for advancement of their Doctrine, they have gone to further Countries than the Apoſtles ever reach'd; and that God reſerv'd the intire diſcoveries both of *Eaſt* and *Weſt-Indies* until the latter times, only that thoſe Holy Fathers might have the honour of their converſion. Of the devotion and miracles with this *Ignatius* is ſaid to have exhibited in his Journeys, I affirm nothing, as contenting my ſelf to have taken the more Hiſtorical part out of *Sandoval*, (who ſeems to be a great extoller of him.) Sundry Reformers on the other ſide, inſtead of confeſſing him to be a good man, or a Miracle-worker, ſaid, he was an Incendiary, and haunted with evil ſpirits. Which latter part not only *Sandoval*, but *Turrianus* and *Bobadilla* (both of them *Jeſuites*) confirm; moreover *Turrianus* related (as *Hoſpinian* hath it) that he died in much fear and trembling, and that his face was ſtrangely black; *Haſenmullerus* beſides (once a *Jeſuite*) adds that no bones were found in his body, and that all the *Jeſuites* at his Burial were witneſſes thereof. Concerning which therefore no little diſpute is on both ſides, whether good or bad Angels took them away, while divers ſober men think neither: but that we may pretermit the contentions of men paſſionate on the one or the other ſide, as unfit to eſtabliſh that Peace in which God is beſt ſerv'd, there is little occaſion to ſay more of the *Jeſuites* in this place, than that they are generally held ſuch Miniſters of the King of *Spain*, that they

1540. *Sandov.*

Sept. 27.

1540. they have more advanc'd (by the ſecret operations of their Confeſſions, and Intelligence which is admirable) the deſigns of the Houſe of *Auſtria*, than either the Continent of *Spain*, made entire by the union of *Granada*, (as is formerly touched) or the *Indies* themſelves. By which means, as alſo that their Doctrine and Learning is ſo exact in all things, ſave where they overmuch ſtudy the Pope, and *Spaniards* ends, they have made themſelves the moſt conſiderable among all the Religious Orders.

1541. And now a cruel time did paſs in *England*; for as few durſt protect thoſe who refus'd to ſubſcribe to the Six Articles, ſo they ſuffered daily, whereof *Fox* hath many examples: neither was it eaſie for any man to eſcape (Commiſſioners being appointed in every Shire to ſearch out and examine thoſe who were refractory;) nevertheleſs, theſe Puniſhments did but advance their Religion; for as they were notified abroad, and together their conſtancy preſented, who were burnt, It was thought they had ſome aſſiſtance from above, it being impoſſible otherwiſe that they ſhould ſo rejoyce in the midſt of their torments, and triumph over the moſt cruel death. Therefore not only the Learned, and better affected ſort, but even all Chriſtian Princes endeavoured ſome conſent of opinion: The Pope himſelf not omitting to concur therein, as thinking it better to allow ſome degrees of latitude in Religion, only when their ſeveral Authorities might be conſerv'd, than to hazard a general Schiſm, and diſtraction. Hereunto alſo it conduced not a little, that the *Turk* taking notice of

Octob. 28. 1540. Jan. 1. theſe diviſions, prepared to invade *Germany*. Therefore the Emperor appointed a meeting at *Worms*, where divers learned and able men on both ſides ſhould diſpute, hoping ſo an end would follow. Howbeit, as the Divines could not agree a-

April 5. *Sleid.* mong themſelves, the buſineſs was referred to a Diet, ſhortly to be held at *Ratisbonne*, whether the Pope ſent Cardinal *Gaſper Contareni*. And here the Emperor being preſent, requires both ſides to permit the choice of the Delegates to him, which they granted, wheupon he appointed on the one ſide, *Julius Pflug*, *John Eccius*, *John Groper*; on the other *Philip Melanchon*, *Martin Bucer*, and *John Piſtorius*, gravely adviſing them to handle

April. 22. the buſineſs ſincerely; theſe men, after a modeſt excuſe, accept the charge, deſiring only certain Aſſeſſors who might teſtifie their proceedings; whereupon the Emperor gave them *Frederick* Count Palatine, and *Nicholas Perenot* Seigneur *de Granvile*, and ſome others; offering them further a Book to conſider,

April. 27. ſome Paſſages whereof they all admitted, others they corrected, and of ſome others the Proteſtants writ their opinion apart; ſo the Book was re-exhibited to the Emperor, and he (it ſeem'd) well contented therewith; nevertheleſs, becauſe the Pope interven'd not herein, this way was oppos'd, *Contareni* alledging, that

that all agreement in this kind would be vain, unless the Holy See confirmed it; whereupon the Emperor referring the Protestants Confession to him, he again refers it to the Pope: But as this requir'd time; so the Emperor desirous his endeavours should take some effect, demands whether those Articles whereof the Delegates were agreed might be received, until a Council were had. The protestants desired it; but the Legate and Catholick Princes oppos'd it, saying, They were not the most material, and therefore to be pretermitted till the rest were determined, *&c.* Concluding with a desire, that all might be deferred to the General Council now intended. 1540. July 7. July 12.

The Emperor finding all Reconciliation at this time to be hopeless, and that the *Turk* still approach'd, took this way, promising himself to go to *Rome*, and sollicite the Pope herein; advising the Protestants in the mean time, First, to insist in the reconciled Points: Secondly, The *Roman*-Catholick Bishops to reform their own particular Churches, and so make way for a general Reformation; taking order withal, that Religious Houses should not be thrown down, nor People drawn from one Country to another upon pretence of converting them: yet that they who came willingly might be receiv'd; promising further, if a general Council could not be obtain'd, to procure a Provincial; or if neither, that within eighteen months another Diet should be called, whither he would intreat a Legate from the Pope to come: suspending; in the mean time, that rigid Decree at *Augsburg* against the Protestants; whereupon, they also promised him their Assistance against the *Turk*. And thus ended the Diet; to which our King sent *Stephen Gardiner* Bishop of *Winthester*, and Sir *Henry Knevet*, by whom (if we may believe *Sanders*) he held a doubtful part; sometimes excusing himself to the Protestants, sometimes offering a Reconciliation with the Pope by the Emperors means, when Penance and Restitution should not be required. But as neither our Histories nor Records, nor the diligent *Sleidan* make mention hereof, that I can find; so I leave the credit thereof to the Readers discretion. July 28. 1530. July 28. *Sanders. Schism. Angl.*

Francis not satisfied with the Answer formerly mentioned, nor the Negotiation of *Montmorency*, did resent both. Against the Emperor he took offence for not restoring *Milan* according to his promise (as he alledged) to *Montmorency:* against him again, he shewed do little displeasure (as some affirm) for dissuading him to seise on the Emperor at that time: Though I rather believe it was on occasion of some private quarrel betwixt the Admiral *Brion* and him; in which, ill offices were done him by the Dutchess of *Estampes*, lately allied to *Brions* Kindred: However, *Montmorency* was confined to a private life; neither would the King ever after see him. And now *Francis*, resolv'd when occasion was offered to break with the Emperor, sends

1540. June. *Anthony Rincon* a revolted *Spaniard* in Ambaſſage to the *Turk*, and one *Cæſar Fregoſo* a *Genoueſe* to the *Venetians*: both theſe meeting in *Peidmont* with Seignieur *du Bellay* the Kings Lieutenant there, were advertis'd that the Marqueſs of *Guaſto* the Emperors Lieutenant in *Milan* laid wait for them: Howbeit, whether truſting to their Quality, or Addreſs, they agreed to paſs by water along the *Po*; ſending yet their Commiſſion and Diſpatches by another way into *Venice*; for the reſt, hoping betwixt changing their habit, and diligence, to eſcape: But (as it falls out very often, that they who hide not themſelves cunningly, give but the more occaſion to diſcover themſelves; ſo) they were prevented, and by certain perſons with Viſors aſſaſin'd upon the water. July 3. *Francis* hearing hereof, ſaid it was done by the Emperor or the Marqueſs of *Guaſto*'s procurement, and that the Law of Nations was violated therein: But they, on the other ſide, diſclaimed the fact, offering to put the ſuſpected perſons into the Pope's hands, to be there examined; proteſting neverthelcſs, that the killing of *Rincon* was onely a chaſtiſement due to a treacherous Subject. *Francis* hearing this, ſurpriſeth *George* of *Auſtria* (natural Son to *Maximilian* late Emperor) in his Journey from *Spain* to *Flanders* through *France*, and commits him to Priſon. Some other paſſages alſo happened about this time, which increaſed the jealouſie betwixt them: for as *Francis* had given in Marriage *Jone* Daughter of *Navarre* to the Duke of *Cleves*, and therein ſtrengthened himſelf againſt the Emperor: ſo he again by giving the Dutcheſs of *Milan* to the Son of the Duke of *Lorain*, got the ſame advantage of Alliance againſt *Francis*.

April. A little Rebellion now appearing in *York-ſhire*, in which Sir *John Nevil* was a Complice, the King took order to ſuppreſs it betimes; commanding the ſaid Sir *John Nevil* to be put to death at *York*. May 27. Shortly after which followed the Counteſs of *Salisbury*'s Excution; which, whether occaſioned by the late Rebellion (as being thought of Cardinal *Pool*'s inſtigation) or that ſhe gave ſome new offence, is uncertain: The old Lady being brought to the Scaffold (ſet up in the Tower) was commanded to lay her head on the Block; but ſhe (as a perſon of great Quality aſſured me) refuſed, ſaying, So ſhould Traitors do, and I am none: neither did it ſerve that the Executioner told her it was the faſhion; ſo turning her gray head every way, ſhe bid him, if he would have her head, to get it as he could: So that he was conſtrained to fetch it off ſlovenly. And thus ended (as our Authors ſay) the laſt of the right Line of the *Plantagenets*.

And now the King reſolved to go in Progreſs to *York-ſhire*; Not yet ſo much to extinguiſh the relicks of the laſt Commotion, as thoſe of Superſtition, Miracles and Pilgrimages: Beſides, he

was

was in hope to meet his Nephew of *Scotland*, who being ſolicited again for Interview, had (it ſeems) promis'd it. Yet before he went, he cauſed two Lords and divers others to be put to death: One was the Lord *Leonard Gray*, who having been (the year precedent) recall'd from his Deputies place in *Ireland*, was then committed upon ſuggeſtions miniſtred by the Council there, with whom (I find by our Records) he often wrangled; who furniſh'd therefore divers Articles of High Treaſon againſt him: So that though he had (the year 1539.) repulſed *O Donel* and *O Neal* (who invaded the *Engliſh* Pale) and rendred the King divers good Services heretofore in *France*, *Ireland*, and other places, he could not eſcape: The chief points objected againſt him (extant in our Records) were, his readineſs to joyn with Cardinal *Pool*, and other the Kings Enemies, he having for that purpoſe (as was alledg'd) left the Kings Ordnance in *Galloway*; and that he conſented to the eſcape of his Nephew *Gerald*, formerly mentioned; which, with divers others, to the number of twenty (if *Hall* ſay true) being brought to a Jury of Knights, (for being no Parliament Lord, he could not be judged by his Peers) he ſaved them the labour of condemning him, and without more ado Confeſſed all; Which, whether this Lord (who was of great courage) did out of Deſperation or Guilt, ſome circumſtances make doubtful: and the rather, that the Articles being ſo many, he neither denyed, nor extenuated any of them; though his continual fighting with the Kings Enemies (where occaſion was) pleaded much on his part: Howſoever, he had his head cut off. The other was a young Lord, *Thomas Fines*, Lord *Dacres* of the South, who ſuffered for committing a murther in company of ſome light perſons (who were with him a Deer-ſtealing.) All things being now ready for the intended Journey, the King, accompanied with his Queen, paſſed through *Lincoln-ſhire*, where the People (thankfully acknowledging their late Pardon) preſented him with divers ſums of money; which the *York-ſhire* men alſo imitated. And now being come to *York*, he cauſed Proclamation to be made (as I find in our Records) that if any man in thoſe parts found himſelf wronged for lack of Juſtice, or otherwiſe, by any whom his Majeſty hath put in truſt, or other, he ſhall have free acceſs to the King and his Council for Redreſs. After this, News was brought him that his Nephew King *James* would not meet: ſo that although our King had made great Preparations to receive him, all was fruſtrated. This fill'd the King with indignation; yet he conceal'd it for the preſent; though reſolving in himſelf to reſent it in the higheſt degree. Therefore departing from *York*, *September* 26. towards *London*, He was on the way encountred by the Ambaſſador of *Portugal*, deſiring a Licenſe for the Tranſportation of Wheat into that Countrey, being in great need there-

1541.

Hall. June 25.

June 28.

June 29.

Auguſt.

Septemb. 16
Septemb. 20
Council Book.

Buch. Leſl.

Octob. 14.

1541. thereof. To which was anſwered, That if that King would admit in his next Navigation to *Calicut*, ſome *Engliſhmen* of our Kings appointment to adventure there for providing this Realm with Spices, he ſhould have his requeſt. But of this although the ſaid Ambaſſador undertook to write to his Maſter, I find no further mention. Our King being now return'd, prepared for Decemb. War. Which *James* hearing, ſent Ambaſſadors hither to excuſe himſelf, and renew their former correſpondence, which King *Henry* refuſing, *James* alſo levies men, (as ſhall be told the year following.)

But our King encountred after this Journey a greater vexNovemb. 2. ation; For the Queen was ſuppos'd to offend in Incontinency; ſome particulars whereof being extant in our Records, I have thought fit to tranſcribe, rather than to make other Narration; the Family of which ſhe came being ſo noble and illuſtrious, and the honour of her Sex (which is tender) being concerned therein.

Nov. 12. The Letter ſent from divers of the Council to *William Paget*, our Ambaſſador then in *France*, was this:

After our hearty commendations, by theſe our Letters, we be commanded to ſignifie unto you, a moſt miſerable caſe, which came lately to Revelation, to the intent that if you ſhall hear the ſame ſpoken of, you may declare the truth as followeth.

Where the Kings Majeſty upon the Sentence given of the invalidity of the pretended Matrimony between his Highneſs and the Lady *Anne* of *Cleve*, was earneſtly and humbly ſollicited by his Council, and the Nobles of this Realm, to frame his moſt noble heart to the love and favour of ſome noble Perſonage to be joyned with him in lawful Matrimony, by whom his Majeſty might have ſome more ſtore of fruit, and Succeſſion, to the comfort of this Realm; It pleaſed his Highneſs upon a notable apparence of Honour, cleanneſs and maidenly behaviour to bend his affection towards Miſtris *Katherine Howard*, Daughter to the late Lord *Edmond Howard*, Brother to me the Duke of *Norfolk*, inſomuch as his Highneſs was finally contented to honour her with his Marriage, thinking now in his old days, after ſundry troubles of mind, which have hapned unto him by Marriages, to have obtained ſuch a Jewel for Womanhood, and very perfect love towards him, as ſhould not only have been to his quietneſs, but alſo brought forth the deſired fruit of Marriage, like as the whole Realm thought the ſemblable, and in reſpect of the vertue and good behaviour which ſhe ſhewed outwardly, did her all honour accordingly. But this joy is turned into extream ſorrow; for when the Kings Majeſty receiving his Maker, on *Alhollows* day laſt paſt, then gave him moſt humble and hearty thanks for the good life he led and truſted to lead with her, and alſo

1541.

alſo deſired the Biſhop of *Lincoln* his ghoſtly Father, to make like Prayer, and give like thanks with him; on All-Souls day being at Maſs, the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury* having a little before heard that the ſame Miſtris *Katherine Howard* was not indeed a Woman of that pureneſs, and cleanneſs that ſhe was eſteemed; but a Woman, who before ſhe was joyned with the Kings Majeſty, had lived moſt corruptly and ſenſually; for the diſcharge of his duty opened the ſame moſt ſorrowfully to his Majeſty, and how it was brought to his knowledge, which was in this form following.

Whiles the Kings Majeſty was in his Progreſs, one *John Loſſells* came to the ſaid Arch-Biſhop of *Canterbury*, and declar'd unto him, that he had been with a Siſter of his Married in *Suſſex*, which ſometimes had been Servant with the old Dutcheſs of *Norfolk*, who did alſo bring up the ſaid Miſtris *Katherine*, and being with his ſaid Siſter, chanced to fall in communication with her of the Queen, wherein he adviſed her (becauſe ſhe was of the Queens old acquaintance) to ſue to be her Woman; whereunto his Siſter anſwered, that ſhe would not ſo do; but ſhe was very ſorry for the Queen; why quoth *Loſſells?* Marry quoth ſhe, for ſhe is light both in living and condition; how ſo quoth *Loſſells?* Marry quoth ſhe, there is one *Francis Derham*, who was Servant alſo in my Lady of *Norfolks* Houſe, which hath lien in Bed with her in his Doublet and Hoſe between the Sheets an hundred nights. And there hath been ſuch puffing and blowing between them, that once in the Houſe a Maid which lay in the Houſe with her, ſaid to me; ſhe would lie no longer with her, becauſe ſhe knew not what Matrimony meant. And further ſhe ſaid unto him, that one *Mannock* ſometimes alſo Servant to the ſaid Dutcheſs, knew a privy mark of her Body. When the ſaid *Loſſels* had declared this to the ſaid Arch-Biſhop of *Canterbury*, he conſidering the weight and importance of the matter, being marvellouſly perplex'd therewith, conſulted in the ſame with the Lord Chancellor of *England*, and the Earl of *Hertford*, whom the Kings Majeſty going in his Progreſs left to reſide at *London*, to order his Affairs in thoſe parts; who having weighed the matter, and deeply ponder'd the gravity thereof, wherewith they were greatly troubled, and unquieted, reſolved finally, that the ſaid Arch-Biſhop ſhould reveal the ſame to the Kings Majeſty; which becauſe the matter was ſuch, as he hath ſorrowfully lamented, and alſo could not find in his heart to expreſs the ſame to the Kings Majeſty by word of mouth, he declar'd the information thereof to his Highneſs in writing. When the Kings Majeſty had read this Information thus delivered unto him, His Grace being much perplexed therewith, yet nevertheleſs ſo tenderly loved the Woman, and had conceived ſuch a conſtant opinion of her honeſty, that he ſuppoſed it rather to be a forged matter,

1541. matter, than of truth. Whereupon it pleaſed him ſecretly to call unto him the Lord Privy Seal, the Lord Admiral, Sir *Anthony Brown*, and Sir *Thomas Wriotheſly*, to whom he opened the caſe, ſaying, He could not believe it to be true. And yet ſeeing the Information was made, he could not be ſatisfied till the certainty thereof was known; but he would not in any wiſe that in the Inquiſition any ſpark of ſcandal ſhould riſe towards her. Whereupon it was by his Majeſty reſolv'd that the Lord Privy Seal ſhould go ſtrait to *London*, where the ſaid *Loſſels* that gave the Information was ſecretly kept, and with all dexterity to examine and try whether he would ſtand to his ſaying: who being ſo examin'd, anſwer'd, that his Siſter ſo told him, and that he had declared it for the diſcharge of his duty, and for none other reſpect; adding that he knew what danger was in it; nevertheleſs, he had rather die in declaration of the truth, as it came to him, ſeeing it touch'd the Kings Majeſty ſo nearly, than live with the concealment of the ſame: Which Aſſeveration being thus made by the ſaid *Loſſels*, the Kings Majeſty being informed thereof, ſent the Lord Privy Seal into *Suſſex*, to examine the Woman, making a pretence to the Womans Husband of Hunting, and to her for receiving of Hunters; and ſent the ſaid Sir *Thomas Wriotheſly* to *London* at the ſame inſtant, both to examine *Mannock*, and alſo to take the ſaid *Derrham* upon a pretence of Piracy, becauſe he had been before in *Ireland*, and hath been noted before with that offence; making theſe pretences to the intent no ſpark of ſuſpition ſhould riſe of theſe Examinations. The ſaid Lord Privy Seal found the Woman in her Examination conſtant in her former ſayings: And Sir *Thomas Wriotheſly* found by the confeſſion of *Mannock*, that he had commonly uſed to feel the ſecrets and other parts of her body, ere ever *Derrham* was ſo familiar with her; and *Derrham* confeſſed that he had known her carnally many times, both in his Doublet and his Hoſe between the Sheets, and in naked Bed, alledging ſuch Witneſſes of three ſundry Women one after another, that had lien in the ſame Bed with them when he did the Acts, that the matter ſeem'd moſt apparent. But what inward ſorrow the Kings Majeſty took when he perceived the Information true, as it was the moſt woful thing that ever came to our hearts, to ſee it; ſo it were too tedious to write it unto you. But his heart was ſo pierced with penſiveneſs, that long it was before his Majeſty could ſpeak, and utter the ſorrow of his heart unto us: And finally with plenty Tears (which was ſtrange in his courage) opened the ſame. Which done, ſhe was ſpoken withal in it by the Arch-Biſhop of *Canterbury*, the Lord Chancellor, the Duke of *Norfolk*, the Lord Great Chamberlain of *England*, and the Biſhop of *Wincheſter*; to whom at the firſt ſhe conſtantly denyed it, but the matter being ſo declared unto her, that ſhe perceived it

it to be wholly diſcloſed, the ſame night ſhe diſcloſed the whole to the Arch-Biſhop of *Canterbury*, who took the confeſſion of the ſame in writing ſubſcribed with her hand: then were the reſt of the number, being eight or nine Men and Women which knew of their doings, examined, who all agreed in one tale. 1541.

Now may you ſee what was done before the Marriage; God knoweth what hath been done ſithence: But ſhe had already gotten this *Derrham* into her Service, and trained him upon occaſions, as ſending of Errands, and writing of Letters when her Secretary was out of the way, to come often into her Privy Chamber. And ſhe had gotten alſo into her Privy Chamber to be one of her Chamberers, one of the Women which had before lien in the Bed with her and *Derrham*: What this pretended is eaſie to be conjectured. Thus much we know for the beginning; whereof we thought meet to advertiſe you, to the intent afore ſpecified: And what ſhall further ſucceed and follow of this matter, we ſhall not fail to advertiſe you thereof accordingly.

You ſhall alſo receive herein incloſed a Packet of Letters, directed unto Sir *Henry Knevet* his Graces Ambaſſador with the Emperor, which his Highneſs pleaſure is you ſhall ſee convey'd unto him by the next Poſt that paſſeth from thence into the Emperors Court. Thus fare you right heartily well. *From the Kings Palace at* Weſtminſter *the* 12th. *of* November.

Your loving Friends,

Thomas Audeley Chancellor.
..... *E. Hertford.*
..... *William Southampton.*
Robert Suſſex.
Stephen Winton.
Anthony Wingfield.

Here were other Names, which are now defaced in the Original; but D. *Norfolk* may by the contents of the Letter be ſuppoſed one.

Beſides the perſons ſpecified in this Letter, one *Thomas Culpeper* (being of the ſame Name with the Queen's Mother) was indicted for the ſame fault (as our Hiſtories have it) which he and *Derrham* at their Arraignment confeſſing, *Culpeper* had his head cut off, and *Derrham* was hang'd and quarter'd. But it reſted not here; for the Lord *William Howard* (the Queens Uncle, newly return'd from an Ambaſſage in *France*) and his Wife, and the old Dutcheſs of *Norfolk*, and divers of the Queens and the ſaid Dutcheſs Kindred and Servants, and a Butter-wife were indicted of miſpriſion of Treaſon (as concealing this Fact,) and condemn'd to perpetual Priſon; though yet by the King's favour ſome of them at length were releaſed. The King yet not ſatisfied thus, for more Authoriſing his Proceeding, referred the Buſineſs to the

Nov. 31.
Decemb. 10.
Decemb. 7.
Decemb. 10.
Decemb. 22.

1541. Jan. 16. Regn. 33. the Parliament ſitting the 16th. of *January*, 1541. Where upon Petition of both Houſes, that he would not vex himſelf, but give his Royal aſſent to what they ſhould do; they had leave to proceed, and together thanks given them that they took his ſorrow to be theirs. Hereupon they attainted the Queen and the Lady *Jane Rochfort*, as alſo *Culpeper*, *Derrham*, &c. And ſo the Queen and Lady *Jane Rochfort* (Wife to the late Lord *Rochfort*, and noted to be a particular inſtrument in the death of Queen *Anne*) were brought to the Tower, and after confeſſion of their faults, had their heads cut off.

Feb. 13. *Hall.* An Act alſo paſt, declaring that it ſhall be lawful for any of the Kings Subjects, if themſelves do perfectly know, or by vehement preſumption do perceive any will, act or condition of lightneſs of Body in her which ſhall be the Queen of this Realm, to diſcloſe the ſame to the King, or ſome of his Council; but they ſhall not openly blow it abroad, or whiſper it, until it be divulg'd by the King or his Council. If the King, or any of his Succeſſors ſhall Marry a Woman which was before incontinent, if ſhe conceal the ſame, it ſhall be High Treaſon, *&c.* But this Act was repealed, 1 *Edward* 6. 12 and 1 *Mary* 1.

Divers other Acts alſo paſt, whereof I have thought fit to ſet down theſe: That they who under colour of a falſe token or counterfeit Letter got other mens money into their hands, ſhould be puniſhed at the diſcretion of thoſe before whom they were convicted, any way but death.

It was declared alſo, how many Ston'd Horſes every man ſhould keep according to his degree. But this was afterwards repealed; though yet of ſpecial uſe in defence of the Kingdom, when due regard of the Perſons were had.

Further it was declared, who might alſo ſhoot in Guns and Croſs-bows.

Moreover, That ſhooting with Bow and Arrows ſhould be uſed, and unlawful Games debarred.

The Order alſo for puniſhment of Murder and Blood-ſhed in the Kings Court, with all the ceremonies thereof, was ſet down; the occaſion, it ſeems, being given by Sir *Edmond Knevet*, who being lately condemn'd to loſe his hand for this fault, was pet pardoned.

June 10. 1541.

The Authority of the Officers of the Court of Wards and Liveries, was ſet down.

That in certain Caſes there ſhould be trial of Treaſon in any Country where the King by Commiſſion will appoint; And this ſaved much trouble and charges: For as divers things were made Treaſon in this Kings name, which yet were repealed afterwards; ſo the Lords of the Council were not only continually vexed with theſe buſineſſes, but the King at great charges in remanding the Priſoners.

That

That none ſhould be Juſtice of Aſſize in his own Countrey. 1541.

The Court of Surveyors of the Kings Lands, the names of the Officers there, and their Authority was ſet down.

All practice of Conjuration, Witchcraft and falſe Propheſie, was made Felony.

The Kings of *England* for a long time ruled *Ireland* by no other Name than Lords thereof, our King now thought fit to change the Stile, and honour a populous and warlike Kingdom with the Title of a King. Therefore in a Parliament held at this time in that Countrey, he gave order to be declared King of *Ireland*; which was proclaimed here during this Parliament, and finally enacted 35. *Hen.* 8. 3. This being notified to *James*, much offended him; though whether out of emulation for his aſſuming the Title, or that himſelf had any deſign on this Country (as by his laying claim to divers parts thereof, and by former paſſages may be ſuſpected) is uncertain. Howbeit, underſtanding that *Mac-Connel* and ſome *Scots*, who held part thereof (as *Leſleus* hath it) were not diſturb'd in their poſſeſſion, he more patiently ſuffered it. Our King on the other ſide, finding none conteſted with him for the Sovereignty of the Iſland, did not ſo much regard their particular right: though yet, as there were divers Commotions about this time, he had occaſion to hold a hand over the diſaffected perſons: But by the diligence of Sir *Anthony Sentleger*, whom the King had lately made Deputy there, all was quickly compoſed. Jan. 29. *Leſl. de Reb. geſt. Scotorum.* July 7. 1540

During this Seſſion of Parliament ſome wrong was offered (as our Hiſtories ſay) to their ancient Priviledges; a Burgeſs of theirs being arreſted: Whereof the King underſtanding, not only gave way to their releaſing him, but puniſhment of the offenders: Inſomuch, that the Sheriffs of *London* were committed to the Tower, and one delinquent to a place call'd *Little-eaſe*, others to Newgate. By which means the King (whoſe Maſterpiece it was to make uſe of his Parliaments) not only let Foreign Princes ſee the good intelligence betwixt him and his Subjects, but kept them all at his devotion: which alſo he ſo induſtriouſly procured, that rather than he would ſeem to require more at this time than they had lately given, he borrowed divers ſums of money of men, above 50 *l.* yearly in his Books (which he looked on often) giving them in lieu thereof Privy Seals as ſecurity for their repayment in two years; by this means ſuffering his Parliament rather to take notice of his wants, than to ſupply them; which yet ſerved to prepare them for his next occaſion. The *Iriſh* Nobility alſo being well informed of theſe proceedings, and collecting thereby the abſoluteneſs of the Kings power every where, the chief of them this year ſubmitted themſelves, and acknowledged him now their King; among whom *Euſtace* March 28. *Hall. Stow.*

1541. the great *O Neal* preſented himſelf, and was made Earl of *Tirone.*

Octob. July 28. The Diet of *Ratisbonne* being ended, the Emperor from thence ſent to the Pope, deſiring him to permit an Interview at *Lucca*, which the Pope accorded; whereupon the Emperor paſſing thorow *Milan*, came by Land to *Genoüa*, and thence taking water, to *Lucca*, where the Pope now was. And here many things were to be determined: For firſt, the Emperor (as he had engaged himſelf to the Proteſtants of the laſt Diet) urged a Council, which the Pope thought fit to hold at *Vicenza*, where it was laſt indicted: But the *Venetians* oppos'd it, as fearing leſt the *Turk*, with whom they had lately made a Peace, ſhould think it was call'd to Confederate all Chriſtian Princes againſt him. Thus was the Council again fruſtrated: other Affairs being alſo interrupted by the Ambaſſador of *Francis*, who made divers Inſtances, that at leaſt the bodies of *Rincon* and *Fergoſe* might be reſtored; hoping that together with the Law of Nations, they would not yet violate that of Nature, and deny them the Rights of Burial. But the Emperor ſtill proteſting himſelf to be no way conſcious of this fact, omitted Anſwer to the reſt. This while the *Turk* having gotten ſome places of importance in *Hungary*, and overthrown the Army of *Ferdinand* (led by *Roccandolph*,) the Pope endeavoured a Reconciliation of all the preſent differences; deſiring the Emperor to give to *Francis* the Eſtate of *Milan*, and him to reſtore all he had in *Piedmont* to the Duke of *Savoy*. But the Emperor reſolute not to leave *Milan*, broke off the Treaty; for the reſt, preparing for an Expedition to *Algier:* His Fleet conſiſting of 64 Galleys, 200 Ships, 100 Frigots, 20000 Foot, and 2000 Horſe, beſides Voluntiers and Sea-men. Setting Sail with theſe from *Majorca*, and other places where his Fleet attended him, he came in two days to the Coaſt of *Algier*, defended by *Azan-Aga*, and about 800 *Turks* (being Cavallery for the moſt part) and about 5000 *Moors*, Renegadoes. It was now *October* 23. 1541. when his Men Landed without much reſiſtance. The firſt thing done was to require *Azan-Aga* to yield the place, and turn Chriſtian, as being the Son of Chriſtian Parents, and born in *Spain*: But he anſwered, that he deſired no more honour than to comply with his Loyalty, and die by the hands of ſo excellent an Emperor. But as the ſeaſon of the year was far advanced, foul weather began; ſo that they fought neither often, nor with much advantage on either ſide. At laſt, a huge tempeſt aroſe, which finally deſtroyed 150 Ships, little and great, with all that was in them, ſave ſome Horſes and a few Men: And now the Tempeſt ſtill increaſing, the Emperor, who between noiſe and danger could not ſleep, demanded of ſome Sea-men then with him, how long long the reſt of the Fleet might live, if the Tempeſt continued? they

Sand. l. 25. Auguſt.

Conc. Trid. lib. 1.

Octob.

they answered, at most, two hours: he demanded then what a Clock it was? they told him half an hour past Eleven; Whereupon he said to them, Comfort your selves; at Twelve the Friers and Nuns rise, and will pray for us: But the Tempest continued till far in the next day, when the miserable carcasses of Ships and Men swimming in some places, and drowning in others, made an hideous spectacle; while if any got to Land, the *Arabs* and *Moors* without mercy kill'd them. And now, besides the above-mentioned Ships, fourteen or fifteen Galleys were cast away; by which means not only the Artillery and Victual fail'd, but even the desire to continue the Siege: for one such another Tempest would have destroyed all. Yet there was much difficulty in the embarking of the Souldiers, for the Ships did not suffice to carry them: Therefore they were fain to cast overboard their most generous Horses, who swimming from one Ship to another, were drowned at last, not without much compassion of all, and especially their Masters. The rest of the Navigation homewards yet was not prosperous, many Ships perishing. At last, the Emperor came to *Calari* in *Sardigna*, where through contrary winds, he was constrained to pass his Christmas; at length fair weather appearing, he arrived in *Spain*: And this was the third unfortunate Voyage to *Algier*, it having been twice before attempted in vain. 1541.

A Rupture with *Scotland* being now secretly resolv'd, our King thought fit to assure *Francis*, sending for this purpose to Sir *William Paget* his Ambassador there, Instructions, which were chiefly to hold *Francis* to his Treaties of perpetual Peace. But *Francis* saying it was made upon certain conditions, which were broken by our King, it was answer'd the Treaty was *sans* Condition, and when it were not, that he had broken none. But *Francis* requiring then assistance for *Milan*, as was promised; it was replyed, that both by the Treaty last offered by the Duke of *Norfolk*, and another formerly by *Pommeray*, this was spoken of indeed, but that there was complicated with it another condition, that he should forsake the Bishop of *Rome*, which he refused to do; But as this was interrupted with some wrangling, so there was no little debate about Ships detained on either side, our Officers having with-held some, under pretence they were Pirats, and they again seizing on ours by way of repriſal; so that matters were breaking forth to an open War. Which being advertiz'd to our King, gave him little hope of amity on that part, and consequently made him not only desist from a Treaty of Marriage betwixt the Duke of *Orleans*, and the Princess *Mary*, propos'd formerly by *Pommeray* and now renewed, but seek friends elsewhere (as will appear hereafter.) Our King refusing in the mean time to enter into League with him against the Emperor. 1542. Feb. 1540. 1536. 1536.

154. March. Though the right line of the *Plantagenets* were extinct in the Counteſs of *Saliſbury*, and conſequently no fear of pretence to Succeſſion, on that part, there remained yet a natural Son of *Edward* the Fourth, called Sir *Arthur Plantagenet* (created by King *Henry* the Eight, Viſcount *Liſle*) who came to his end on this occaſion: This Lord, during his Lieutenancy in *Calais*, being ſuſpected, as conſenting to a practice of ſome of his Servants, (whereby they conſpired to deliver that Town to the *French*,) was thereupon ſent for, and committed to the Tower; but upon due Examination his Innocency appearing, the King at this time, not only gave order to releaſe him, but for his more comfort ſent him a Diamond Ring, and a Gracious Meſſage; which ſo overjoyed and dilated his ſpirits, that the night following he dyed.

April 26. 1523.

April. 17. 1540.

March. 3.

Feb. The Emperor being now in *Spain*, *Ferdinand* holds a Diet at *Spire*, where he requires Aid againſt the *Turk*; whereof *Francis* being advertiſed, ſends *Francis Oliver* thither with charge to repreſent, Firſt the Aſſaſſinate of *Rincon* and *Fregoſe*, pretending it to be the more heinous, in that *Rincons* Imployment was to hinder the *Turk* from invading *Hungary*. Secondly, to diſſuade them from taking Arms againſt the *Turks*, till their own differences were compoſed. Laſtly, to repreſent both the levity of the *Hungarians*, and their diſaffection to the *German* Nation: And therefore, that they ſhould fortifie their ſtrong places betwixt *Auſtria* and *Hungary*, and the other Confines, without taking much regard to the reſt. As for Pacification in Religion, that they ſhould conform themſelves on all ſides to the Confeſſion of our Faith, left us by the *Nicene* Council. And for other points, if they could not agree in them, they ſhould not yet be occaſion of hate or diviſion. But the wiſer ſort, who believed that *Rincon*'s diſpatches (when they were to be ſeen) would have told another tale, did not much believe the firſt part of his Speech: As for the ſecond, ſince it tended only to give *Hungary* into the *Turks* hands, they rejected it wholly: And for the laſt, they regarded it little (though a wiſe and charitable advice) as being reſolved already of their Religion. After him, the Biſhop of *Modena*, the Popes Legate, tells them that the Pope deſired Peace in Chriſtendom, and proviſion for Wars againſt the *Turk*. As for the Council which had been ſuſpended hitherto by the Emperors conſent to try if a Concord might, the while, be wrought in *Germany*, that it was reaſon to call it. Only that *Germany* could be no fit place for holding thereof, ſince his Holineſs reſolving to be preſent, could not indure ſo long a Journey, or ſuch a change of Air. Beſides, he feared it would be turbulent. Nevertheleſs, for ſatisfying them, he was content the ſame ſhould be aſſembled at *Trent*, (that is to ſay) in the Borders of *Germany*. *Ferdinand* and the Catholicks accept this place with

March 23.

with thanks, (when it might not be held at *Ratisbonne* or *Colen.*) But the Proteſtants wholly diſliked it. And now the *French* Ambaſſadors finding themſelves but ſlighted, go thence diſcon-ted. And ſo the Diet brake up (after War had been decreed againſt the *Turk*, and Peace eſtabliſhed in the Empire.) And *May* 22. the Council was indicted to begin in *November* following. 1541. April. 11. May 22.

Francis being now informed by his Ambaſſadors that the *Germans* were ſo far from receiving his advice, that they thought him to be a perturber of the Peace of Chriſtendom, is not yet diſcouraged. Therefore, after a Proceſſion made in *Paris* for ſucceſs in his War, and a Preſent ſent to the *Turk* of Six hundred Marks of Silver curiouſly wrought, and Five hundred Veſtments for thoſe that attended him, together with a requeſt that he would ſend his Fleet againſt the Emperor, and a publick Defiance ſent to *Charles*, He Invades his Territories in five ſeveral places; Againſt them in *Brabant* he imploys the Duke of *Longueville*, who was to joyn with *Martin Roſſen*, General for the Duke of *Cleves*, to invade that part: Againſt *Artois* the Duke of *Vendoſme*: Againſt *Luxemburgh* the Duke of *Orleans*: In *Piedmont* Monſieur *du Bellay* his Lieutenant there: And againſt *Perpignan* (the chief Town of *Rouſſillon*, and the Barrier of *Spain* to the Southward) the *Daulphin*, promiſing to ſecond him in Perſon. July.

He began firſt in *Piedmont*, as being the immediate way to his deſired *Milan*: In which he held theſe places, *Turino*, *Montcalier*, *Savillan*, *Montdevis*, *Pignarola*, &c. For the Emperor ſtood, *Aſti*, *Vercelli*, *Ulpian*, *Foſſan*, *Quieraſco*, and *Alba*; among which *Quieraſco* was firſt attempted and yielded: *Vendoſme* in *Artois* taking and razing *Tourneham*: The Duke of *Orleans* (aſſiſted with Five hundred Horſe from *Chriſtiern* the Third King of *Denmark*) took *Luxemburgh* and other places; which yet *René* Prince of *Orange* and Count of *Naſſaw* recovered ſhortly after. Nevertheleſs, *Roſſen* deceiv'd him with a plain trick: For commanding his Infantry to lie flat in a Champian field behind his Cavalry, the Prince of *Orange*, who did not imagine he was ſo ſtrong, charged him; but the Foot riſing, they and their Horſe together defeated him. Whereupon *Roſſen* and *Longueville* being about Thirty-five thouſand men, Beſieged *Antwerp*; But it was ſtoutly defended not only by the Natives, but by foreign Merchants, and particularly the *Engliſh*; Whereupon, *Roſſen* raiſing Siege, and going to *Lovain*, demands of them Money, Victuals, Artillery and Ammunition; which they of *Lovain* accorded in part, commanding thereupon ſome Wine to be carried in Carts to the Gate. But the Scholars, unwilling both to let it go, and ſuſpecting beſides that when the gates were ſo embarraſed, the Enemy behind the Hogſhead might get into the Town,

1541. Town, cut off the Harneſs from the Horſes, and went to the Artillery planted upon the Wall, and diſcharged it upon the Enemy: whereupom *Roſſen* departing, ſpoil'd the Country round about. This while, the *Daulphin* brought an Army of Forty thouſand men, whereof Fourteen thouſand *Switz*, and Four thouſand Horſe to *Perpignan*, which he beſieged, hoping *Barbaroſſa* and the *Turkiſh* Fleet would ſecond him, according to his requeſt by *Polin*, whom *Francis* employ'd in thoſe parts. But the Town being bravely defended, and the Emperor beſides preparing to relieve it, he rais'd the Siege, and the rather that Winter was now coming on. This while, the Emperor omitted not to complain to the Pope of *Francis*, proteſting, that he both diſturb'd the Peace of Chriſtendom and the Council, and hindred him from oppoſing the *Turk*. Whereupon, the Pope deſiring to reconcile them, the Emperor anſwered, It was in vain to make Treaties with thoſe who did hold none; deſiring him therefore rather to take Arms againſt him, as a Confederate with the common Enemy of Chriſtendom.

Decemb. 1541. The excuſe from *James*, formerly mentioned, being not held ſatisfactory, our King prepares for War; nevertheleſs, he thought not fit to diſcover himſelf, but as late as he could. Therefore upon *James* his requeſt, he appoints Commiſſioners to examine buſineſſes betwixt them, not omitting yet to Levy men; of which *James* being advertiz'd, raiſed forces likewiſe (as is before ſet down.) During this Treaty, ſome Inrodes being made into *Scotland*, and Ports attempted, I find by *Leſleus* Twenty-eight *Scotiſh* Ships were taken. Whereupon, the *Scots* entring the *Engliſh* Marches, Sir *Robert Bowes* (who reſiſted them) with Auguſt 24. divers others were taken Priſoners; without being permitted yet to ranſom themſelves. Hereupon the Duke of *Norfolk* with the Kings Army marched forward, but upon a ſecond motion of Peace ſtays at *York*: And together with the Earl of *Southampton*, Biſhop of *Durham*, and Sir *Anthony Brown*, Treats with certain *Scotiſh* Commiſſioners, who having variety of Inſtructions, (which they ſhewed one after another) and finally propoſing an Interview, were thought to be ſent thither only to gain time, Winter now coming on, and the *French* King having ſo much to do at home, as is before related. So that the King Octob. 21. commanded the Duke of *Norfolk* to proceed, and together publiſhed a Declaration of the cauſes of this War. Which being extant in our Records, and ſet forth at large by *Hall*, I ſhall not need to inſert here, though yet for ſatisfaction of the Reader, I ſhall extract ſome particularities from thence. *Hall.*

The chief cauſes I conceive, were, that *James* entertain'd ſome of the chief Rebels of the North. That he denied ſome grounds, (though of very ſmall value) for which good evidences were produced. That he fruſtrated our King, after a promiſe of an Interview.

Interview. That his Subjects made an Inrode while the Treaty was on foot. Beſides all which, King *Henry* claimed Homage and Fealty, as due to him out of an ancient Title to that Crown; the demand whereof he ſaid he had neglected a great while, becauſe of his Nephews minority, and other kind reaſons, his Title being by lineal Succeſſion, and recognized for many Ages by the Kings of *Scotland*, to the Reign of *Henry* the Sixth: which he proved Firſt, by Hiſtory: Secondly, by Inſtruments of Homage, by the ſeveral Kings, and divers great Perſons, ſealed with their Seals, and remaining in his Treaſury. Thirdly, by Regiſters and Records, judicially and authentically made. The Hiſtorical part, he began chiefly (that I may omit the relation of *Brutus* and his three Sons) at *Anno Dom.* 900. (being 642 years paſt) ſhewing that *Edward* Son of *Allured* had it under his Dominion. *Athelſtane* made one *Conſtantine* King thereof. *Eldred* took Homage of *Iriſe* [or *Ericus*] King of *Scots*, and *Edgar* of *Kinald* (or *Kenneth.*) That this was interrupted yet in *Edward King* and *Martyr* his time. But *Malcolm* did Homage to *Knute*, and *Edward* the Confeſſor making War againſt *Malcolm*, overthrew him, and gave his Kingdom to *Malcolm* his Son, who made him Homage and Fealty; That *Malcolm* did Homage to *William* the Conqueror, and after him to *William Rufus*, but failing in his duty, was depoſed; and *Edgar* Brother to the laſt *Malcolm*, and Son to the firſt, ordain'd in that eſtate, who did his Homage and Fealty accordingly. This *Edgar* did Homage to *Henry* the Firſt, *David* did Homage to *Matild* the Empreſs, but refus'd it to *Stephen*, as having done it to *Matild*; but after his death, *David's* Son made his Homage to *Stephen*. *William* King of *Scots*, and *David* his Brother, with all the chief Nobles of *Scotland*, made Homage to *Henry* the Second, his Son, with reſervation of their duty to his Father. This *William* after much Rebellion and reſiſtance, during the abſence of *Henry* the Second, made his Peace and Compoſition with his Homage and Fealty; he alſo came to *Canterbury*, and there did Homage to *Richard* the Firſt. *William* did Homage to *John*, on a Hill beſide *Lincoln*, and made his Oath upon the Croſs of *Hubert*, then Arch-Biſhop of *Canterbury*. *Alexander* King of *Scots* Married the Daughter of *Henry* the Third, and did his Homage at *York*. *Alexander* came to the Coronation of *Edward* the Firſt, and did his duty: *John Baliol* made Homage and Fealty to *Edward* the Firſt. *Robert Bruce* made War againſt the *Baliols* which interrupted the buſineſs of fourty four years. But afterwards *Edward Baliol* prevailing, made Homage to *Edward* the Third. After this, *David Bruce*, though on the contrary Faction, made Homage to *Edward* the Third. *Edward Baliol*, who had the clear Title, ſurrendred the Crown to *Edward* the Third, at *Roxenburgh*, who thereupon cauſed himſelf to be Crown'd, and for a time

1542. I.

1542. time entertain'd and enjoyed it as Proprietary and owner of the Crown, both by confiscation and voluntary surrender. In *Richard* the Second, and *Henry* the Fourth their times, some interruption happened by reason of inward dissentions in this Kingdom; yet *Henry* the Fifth commanded the *Scots* to attend him in his Journey to *France*. And in this time the Realm of *Scotland* being descended on the *Stuarts*, *James Stuart* King of *Scots*, made Homage to King *Henry* the Sixth at *Windsor*. All which Homages (though interrupted sometimes for more than

II. Sixty years) were yet within the memory of man. Of which therefore, Instruments made and sealed with the Seals of the Kings of *Scotland* remain; so that it was not for the Earldom of *Huntingdon* (as the *Scots* pretend) but for the Kingdom of *Scot-*

III. *land*. As for Records and Registers, that he had divers which were authentical, and among others that of *Edward* the First, in discussion of the Title of *Scotland*, then challenged by twelve Competitors. And that sentence was given for *Baliol*, who accordingly injoyed the Realm. That in a Parliament following, they did agree to the Superiority of the King of *England*, and ensuing their determination, did particularly, and severally make Homage and Fealty with Proclamation, that whosoever withdrew himself from doing his duty therein, should be reputed as a Rebel; and so all made Homage and Fealty to *Edward* the First. That during this discussion, the Realm was ruled by Guardians deputed by him, and all Castles and Holds surrendred to him as to the Superior Lord. And in the time of Vacation, Benefices, Offices, Fees, Promotions, passed as in the right of this Crown of *England*; Sheriffs also named and appointed, Writs and Precepts made, obeyed and executed. And that at this time, the Bishops of St. *Andrews* and *Glasco* were not Arch-Bishops, but recogniz'd the Arch-Bishop of *York*, whose Authority extended over all their Country. That sithence the time of *Henry* the Sixth, this Kingdom was lacerated and torn by diversity of Titles, till his time. So that though *Edward* the Fourth, after great travels, having attain'd quietness in this Realm, finally made preparation of War against *Scotland*, yet he was prevented by death. As for *Richard* the Third, that he usurped the Kingdom till *Henry* the Seventh his Father overthrew him, (which *Henry* the Seventh, by reason of his Estate not fully setled at home, forbare to compel the *Scots* to do their duty.) And for his own time, that Twenty-one years past of it in his Nephews minority, when he had more care to bring him out of danger to the place of a King, than to receive of him Homage when he had full possession of the same.

The conclusion of this Declaration yet seemed to be ambiguous; as not pretending directly to insist upon the Claim, though he saith, that such be the works of God Superiour over all, to

suffer

ſuffer occaſions to be miniſtred, whereby due Superiority may be known, demanded, and required. 1542.

The *Scotiſh* Writers tell the buſineſs otherwiſe: not denying yet but *Athelſtane* was King of the whole Iſland by the Teſtimony of divers of our *Britain* Writers. Nevertheleſs, that their words were ſo to be underſtood, as the further parts of *Scotland* were not comprehended therein. As for the Homage done, That it was for the Earldom of *Huntingdon* (though as there was no Inveſture thereof in the King of *Scots*, till the time of our *Henry* the Firſt, when *David* Married the Daughter and Heir of the Earl of *Huntingdon* and *Northumberland*, it reaches not to Homages formerly made.) Again, whom thoſe who did Homage, ſome were reputed Kings of *Northumberland*, rather than *Scotland*. And for *Baliol*'s reſigning the Crown, they ſay, the Nobles did not conſent to it: And many other things, which for avoiding prolixity, I omit; deſiring the Reader to believe, that I am ſo far from undertaking to define the point, as (in an Hiſtorical way) I have only produced ſuch Notes as my leiſure would ſuffer me to gather at this time: profeſſing, for the reſt, That I ſhould not in any wiſe have intermedled therewith, but that *Hall* by ſetting forth the Declaration, gave the occaſion.

Theſe proceedings from time to time being advertiſed to *Francis*, cauſed him to ſend Monſieur *de Morvilliers* to congratulate the conſtancy of *James* in refuſing an Interview, which he attributed to his reſolution not to forſake the *Roman* Church: Adviſing him for the reſt, to ſtand upon his Guard; and for that purpoſe, ſending him money and Artillery. *Leſleus.* Auguſt. *Sleid.*

And now the Army being ready to march on, *William Fitz-Williams*, Earl of *Southampton*, Captain of the Fore-ward, died at *New-Caſtle*; A brave Lord, and ſo much eſteem'd, that for the honour of his Memory, his Standard was born in the Foreward in all this Expedition. *Hall.* The year thus being far ſpent, the Duke of *Norfolk* Lieutenant General, accompanied with the Earls of *Shrewsbury*, *Darby*, *Cumberland*, *Surrey*, *Hertford*, *Rutland*, and other Lords of the Northern parts; Sir *Anthony Brown*, Maſter of the Kings Horſe, and Sir *John Gage* Comptroller of his Houſe, and above Twenty thouſand men (the Earl of *Anguis* alſo being there preſent) enter *Scotland* 21 of *October*, and finding no reſiſtance, burnt in eight days above Twenty Villages and Towns: Whereupon the Biſhop of *Orkney*, and *James Leirmouth* came on their Kings part to require Peace; but the conditions not pleaſing, the Treaty was diſſolv'd. Nevertheleſs, our Army retreated preſently to *Berwick*, as being betwixt the rigour of the ſeaſon and want of Victuals, conſtrain'd thereunto. So that though *Leſleus* ſaith, the *Engliſh* retired Octob. 21.

1542. upon hearing that the *Scottiſh* Army approached; this yet by others is thought improbable, becauſe they invaded not *England* till three weeks after the Duke of *Norfolk* was at *Berwick*, and had licenſed many of his Souldiers. About which time therefore the *Scottiſh* Army being aſſembled, they entred *England* on the Weſt Marches with an Army of Fifteen thouſand, or (as ſome ſay) a greater number. But *Thomas* the Baſtard *Dacres* and *Muſgrave*, having firſt ſent to Sir *Thomas Wharton*, Warden of the Marches, to come to their Aid, and then leaving a Stale or Ambuſh on a Hill ſide, came forwards with an Hundred light Horſe, which being charged by ſome of the *Scots*, retired towards their Stale, and to *Wharton* now appearing, who had not yet above Three hundred men (as our Writers ſay.) But whatſoever the Stratagem was, the *Scots* believing (it ſeems) the Duke of *Norfolk* was there with all his power, ſuddenly, as men amazed, fled. The *Engliſh* men purſued, and took the Earls of *Caſſelles* and *Glencarne* the Lord *Maxwel* Admiral of *Scotland*, the Lord *Fleming*, the Lord *Somerwel*, the Lord *Oliphant*, Lord *Gray*, and Sir *Oliver Sinclere*, the Kings Minion (as our Hiſtorians term him,) and divers others of note, to the number of Two hundred and above, and Eight hundred of the meaner ſort (ſo that ſome had two or three Priſoners,) and Twenty-four Pieces of Ordnance, with much Arms and Baggage.

Nov. 24.

Hall.

Leſleus. The *Scottiſh* Writers tell the buſineſs a little otherwiſe; confeſſing yet the foreſaid Priſoners to be taken, and that their men ran away, and were defeated. But ſome ſay, the reaſon of it, was, that Sir *Oliver Sinclere* being ſuddenly declared their General, when the *Engliſh* appeared, the Nobles took it ſo ill, that they cared not to fight. They ſay alſo, that the King was at *Solway* (where this encounter hap'ned) a little before, and no further off than *Carlawroch*, when the blow was given; which, perhaps, made ſome think that he was preſent at the Fight, and received a wound, of which preſently after he died, and not of ſorrow.

Hall.

Decemb. 7. *James* being now return'd, had in recompence of his misfortunes, a Daughter Born, afterward called *Mary*; which yet, together with the many divertiſements his Servants gave, could not keep him from a deep Melancholy, which was augmented alſo (as the *Scottiſh* and our Writers ſay) by the ſudden Murder of an *Engliſh* Herald, whom our King ſent thither to ranſom Priſoners (though yet none of his Subjects, but *Leech* a *Lincolnſhire* Rebel kill'd him:) All which made that impreſſion in him, that he died within few days after, and was Buried near his firſt Wife *Magdalene*, in the Abby of *Holy-Rood*. He was of a middle ſtature, yet well compact and ſtrong, given much in his youth to the love of Women, to which his Governours gave way, thinking thereby to rule him the longer. This hindered him

Leſl. Stow. Hall.

Decemb. 14.

Buch.

him not yet to be active in all State affairs, and frugal in his own; Qualities rarely found in Princes ſo much addicted to their pleaſure. No man endured Labour, Cold, Hunger better (as his many Expeditions in Perſon againſt Rebels, ſhewed.) Under pretence of favouring the poorer ſort, he was noted to be ſevere to his Nobility, which made them leſs ready when he had occaſion to uſe them. Inſomuch, that (as *Buchanan* hath it) he could not perſuade them to come to Battel with the Duke of *Norfolk*. 1542.

The Murder of our *Engliſh* Herald being related to our King, mightily incenſed him: and therefore he not only required *Leech*, (who yet was not demanded till after the death of King *James*, nor executed till *May* following;) but ſent to his Ambaſſador *Paget* in *France*, both to acquaint *Francis* therewith, (whom he lately knew had ſuffered in the like kind,) and to deſire him not to aſſiſt *James*. But the Anſwer hereunto was cold, as will appear hereafter. Decemb. 4.

The news of the Kings death, and the Princeſs Birth being brought to our King, awakened in him new Counſels: ſo that inſtead of purſuing War againſt *Scotland*, he began to think how he might recover the young Daughter thence, and match his Son *Edward* to her. To which alſo he was ſo intentive, that he ſent a Diſpatch to his Ambaſſador *Paget*, commanding him carefully to obſerve what paſt betwixt *France* and *Scotland*, as being jealous leſt *Francis* ſhould get or detain her from him. And there was reaſon to fear it, *Francis* having by the intervention of the Queen and Cardinal *Beton*, a great party there. Nevertheleſs, as our King knew how much it concern'd either Nation, that all cauſes of Hoſtility ſhould be taken away, and both Kingdoms united: So he doubted not but many, eſpecially the wiſer ſort, would concur with him. Decemb. 22. Decemb. 26.

And now in *Scotland* two Factions were eminent: One that of the Queen, ſeconded by Cardinal *Beton*, who (as the *Scottiſh* Writers ſay) forged a Will, by which himſelf, aſſiſted with three of the moſt powerful Nobility, ſhould govern the State, and with him all the *French* Faction joyn'd. *James Hamilton* Earl of *Arrain* chief of the other ſide (though obſerv'd to be a lover of quiet) was yet encouraged by his followers to aſſume that Dignity; as being ſo near of Blood, and the Princeſs ſo young, that many occaſions might happen, whereof he might prevail himſelf: which reaſons alſo inclin'd him to depend on our King.

While theſe things paſt in *Scotland*, the Priſoners taken in the laſt Battle, were by Sir *Henry Savil* and Sir *Thomas Wentworth* conducted from *York* to *London*, whither they came *Decemb.* 19. wearing every one (as our King had appointed) for a cognizance, a Red St. *Andrews* Croſs, and were preſently ſent to the Tower, Decemb. 19. *Stow.* Records.

1542. Decemb. 21. Tower, whence ſhortly after King *Henry* for more oſtentation commanded Sir *John Gage* Comptroller of his Houſhold, to bring them by two and two together in new Gowns of black Damask, and other apparel ſuitable (all at his coſt) from the Tower to the Star-Chamber, where *Thomas* Lord *Audeley*, the Lord Chancellor was to tell them, what cauſe King *Henry* had of War againſt them, both for denying their Homage, and invading his Realm without Defiance, and keeping his Subjects without ſuffering them to make Ranſom, contrary to the Laws of the Marches. Nevertheleſs, that ſuch was his benignity, that he would ſhew them kindneſs for unkindneſs, and right for wrong: Records. And thereupon (after their promiſe to remain true Priſoners) commanded that they ſhould be no more returned to Priſon, but brought to divers Noble Houſes, there to be regaled and made much of. Thus the Arch-Biſhop of *Canterbury* had the Earl of *Caſſells* commended to him; the Duke of *Norfolk*, the Earl of *Glencarne*; Sir *Anthony Brown* the Lord *Maxwell*; the Lord Chancellor; the Lord *Somerwell*; Sir *Thomas Lee*, the Lord *Oliphant*; Dec. 1540. the Duke of *Suffolk*, Sir *Oliver Sinclere*; *Thomas Thurliby* (lately made firſt Biſhop of *Weſtminſter*) *Robert Erskin*; and many others, were with divers of our chief Nobility, where having paſt ſome time with as much contentment as the news of their Kings death (now brought) permitted, they forgot not to expreſs how glad they would be that a Match might ſucceed betwixt our Prince and their Princeſs, promiſing alſo their furtherance therein; which being related to our King, was taken Decemb. 26. ſo well, as they were not only diſmiſs'd upon Hoſtages to be given for their return (when they were not able to effect this Match,) but richly rewarded. After which, again, being feaſted, they kept their Journey towards *Scotland*, till they came to the Duke of *Suffolk* (the Kings Lieutenant in the Northern parts) being then at *New-Caſtle*, where their Hoſtages being received, they had Licence to go home; and with them alſo went the Earl of *Anguis*, and his Brother Sir *George Dowglaſſe* (now fifteen years abſent from their Country) who, during their long ſtay in theſe parts, had a liberal Penſion beſtowed on them by our King; for which alſo they promiſed their beſt aſſiſtance on all occaſions. Cardinal *Beton*, who this while (by pretext of his counterfeit Will) had made himſelf Viceroy, was now (upon detection of the forgery) depos'd, and *James Hamilton*, *Buchan.* Earl of *Arrain* choſen in his place: A Noble-man followed by many, both for his nearneſs of Blood to the Crown, and that the Cardinals cruelty and ambition had made him ſo hated. Beſides, there was found after the Kings death certain Papers, in which the names of above Three hundred of the Principal Nobility and Gentry (and among them *James Hamilton*) were accuſed as Criminals: and this again made them more confident of his Protection.

Protection. Moreover, he was noted willing to inform himself in the Controverſies of Religion, and gave hope of a mild and temperate diſpoſition. His firſt publick Action was the convoking of a Parliament in *March* following; whereof our King being advertiſed, ſent Sir *Ralph Sadler* (his Secretary) thither, to procure the Marriage formerly mentioned, and a perpetual Peace: *Scottiſh* Ambaſſadors being alſo deputed to Treat thereof with our King. What Sir *Ralph Sadler's* firſt Inſtructions were, appears not by our Records, more than is formerly related out of the *Scottiſh* Writers: But by a ſubſequent diſpatch, dated *May 6.* I find that our King, in reward of ſome buſineſs that the Viceroy ſhould effect, had promis'd his Daughter the Lady *Elizabeth* in Marriage to his Son: And becauſe our King paſſionately deſired to have the young Princeſs into his hands, both that he intended to Marry her to his Son Prince *Edward*, and that he feared the *French* would prevent him, I nothing doubt but this was the Affair intimated betwixt them. Our Records alſo tell us, that *George Dowglaſſe*, and the other Lords who were ſent home, excus'd themſelves at firſt, as neither knowing what they did, nor able to perform their promiſes; ſo that though they had undertaken to procure the Marriage, and to get ſome Holds into their hands, where they might with more advantage ſet forth our Kings purpoſes, they declined it; alledging, among other difficulties, a certain ficklenes in the Viceroys diſpoſition, and that the *French* party was ſo great. Howbeit, upon further debate of the buſineſs, certain *Scottiſh* Ambaſſadors were ſent hither, being Sir *William Hamilton* and Sir *James Lermouth*; but their Negotiation not pleaſing, as being unwilling to admit other Governour than the Earl of *Arrain*, during the Queens minority, or to deliver the Holds of *Scotland*, till ſhe had Iſſue by Prince *Edward*, or to put her into our Kings cuſtody, with ſome other Demands which were diſtaſted by them, it was thought fit to ſend the Earl of *Glencarne* and Sir *George Dowglaſſe*; who, I find, ſeconded the overture of the Contract of Marriage and perpetual Peace (which the firſt made) in more plauſible terms: yet not ſo, but that Sir *George Dowglaſſe* was diſpatched Poſt to *Scotland* to bring a more ſatisfactory Anſwer; which was obtain'd: Inſomuch, that a Treaty for Marriage ſign'd and ſeal'd, was brought back by thoſe *Scottiſh* Ambaſſadors in *Auguſt*, 1543. (as *Leſleus* hath it.) And becauſe I find among our Records this following Treaty of *June* 29. I ſhall enquire for no other.

1543.

March. *Buchan.*

May 6.

April.

April. 14.

May.

Auguſt. *Leſleus.*

June 29. [*Lib. Concil.*]

Firſt, That the Lords of *Scotland* ſhall have the Education of the Princeſs for a time: yet ſo as it might be lawful for our King to ſend thither a Noble-man and his Wife with a Family, under Twenty Perſons to wait on her.

That

1543. That at Ten years of Age ſhe ſhould be brought into *England*, the Contract being firſt finiſhed by a Proxy in *Scotland*.

That within two Months after the Date hereof, ſix Noble *Scots* ſhould be given as Hoſtages for the performance of the foreſaid conditions on their Part: And that if any of them died, the number of them ſhould be ſupplied.

Furthermore, it was agreed that the Realm of *Scotland* (by that name) ſhould preſerve its Laws and Rights: And that Peace ſhould be made for as long time as was deſired, the *French* being excluded.

Buchanan. Nevertheleſs, The Queen, Cardinal, and all the Clergy oppos'd this Treaty, and the Cardinal ſo particularly, that he was removed to a Chamber apart, or (as other have it) into a Priſon, till the main queſtion of the Marriage was voted and agreed, and Hoſtages promiſed for performance thereof. But as the Cardinal found means to corrupt his Keeper, ſo he eſcaped; and then began again to trouble all, uſing for this purpoſe the help of the Queen-Mother, and the pretext, it was unfit that the *Dowglaſſes*, being wholly devoted to the *Engliſh*, ſhould from a long Baniſhment be admitted to the Supream Council concerning publick Affairs. Beſides, he got huge ſums of mony from the Clergy, upon colour that there was no other way to redeem themſelves from imminent ruine. Furthermore, he perſuaded that the Hoſtages ſhould not be ſent into *England*; he procured alſo that our Ambaſſador ſhould be contumelioufly uſed; whereof he complaining to the Viceroy, had no other Anſwer, but that the Cardinal had ſo diſcompoſed all things, that he could give no remedy for the preſent. The Queſtion was then, What courſe they ſhould take about the Hoſtages left in *England*, upon condition that the late Nobles who were Priſoners ſhould return, in caſe the Marriage and Peace took no effect. But the Cardinal anſwered, That Kindred, Friends, Children, and all ſhould be ſacrificed for the good of their Country. Howbeit, *Gilbert Kenneth* Earl of *Caſſelles* could not be perſuaded to ſtay; for having left two Brothers his pledges, he ſaid he would redeem their lives with his own: And thereupon, though many dehorted him, he went into *England*. Which generous Counſel ſucceeded ſo well, that after a large commendation given him by our King, he was diſmiſs'd with his Brothers freely, and richly rewarded. On the other ſide, he was ſo offended with the reſt, that he detain'd all the *Scottiſh* Shipping in his Ports, and reſolved to denounce War againſt them. Whereupon, the Cardinal and Queen-Mother inform'd the *French* King thereof, and that the Factions were ſuch, as there was danger both Kingdoms ſhould be united; deſiring him further, to ſend over *Matthew Stuart* Earl of *Lenox*, as being of great power in that Country, and noted then to be adverſe to the *Hamiltons*: Beſides, it added to his

his reputation, that it was thought the laſt King, if he had died without Iſſue Male, would have deſign'd him his Heir and Succeſſor, and gotten it confirmed by Parliament. And to invite him the more, there was ſome ſecret hope given, he might Marry the Queen Mother, and divers other things ſet down by *Buchanan*. Theſe motives together with the *French* Kings approbation and promiſe of aſſiſtance made this young Lord to reſolve to repair to *Scotland*; whereof the Viceroy being informed, indeavors to get the young Princeſs out of her Mothers hands; hoping thereby not only to govern all, but to draw the *Engliſh* on his ſide; but the deſign being vented to the Cardinal, a guard was given to the young Queen. 1543. *Buchanan.*

In the mean while the Earl of *Lenox* arrives out of *France*, without diſcovering yet any thing of his Intentions; only he tells his Friends in private the Promiſes made him, and what help he might expect from the *French* King. Whereupon they exhorting him to try his ſtrength, he gathered Four thouſand men and advances; whereof *Hamilton* being advertiz'd, and finding himſelf inferior in Power, ſent to Treat of Peace, which followed, and an agreement for the preſent that the Queen ſhould be brought to *Sterling*, and four principal Perſons ſhould have care of her Education: And the rather, that it was ſuſpected that the Earl of *Arrain* would have delivered her to the *Engliſh*. Whereupon ſhe was conducted by *Lenox* unto the place appointed, and committed unto the Tuition of *Grames*, *Erskin*, *Lindſey*, and *Leviſton*, and ſhortly after Crown'd. The Viceroy being thus fruſtrate, and for the reſt, not much favoured by the People, ſuffer'd himſelf to be gain'd by the Cardinal; to whom he ſhewed himſelf ſo obſequious, as he ſeem'd to hold the name rather than the power of a Viceroy. Inſomuch, that the Cardinal, who a little before was in danger of ſuffering for a notable Forgery, now abſolutely govern'd all. Whereof our King being advertiſed, did no longer hope to recover the Queen by the help of the Viceroy, but reſolv'd openly to demand her, upon pretext that there was fear of her being conveyed into *France*; and in caſe of refuſal, to denounce War. The Meſſage hereupon being brought, the *Scots* utterly denied him, ſo that proviſion for War was made by our King. All things yet paſſed not ſo quietly in *Scotland* as was deſired by that State; for as the Cardinal being of immoderate Ambition, could not indure the Earl of *Lenox*'s power, ſo he endeavour'd to ſuppreſs him; which he did alſo with much cunning. For whereas hope had been given him of a Marriage with the Queen, he advertiſed her to entertain him fairly till he had received an Anſwer of the *French* King of a Letter, wherein, though he made Honourable mention of him, he thought it convenient yet the ſaid Earl ſhould be recall'd. It being not likely otherwiſe that the Kingdom would April. Aug. 20.

1543. would long continue in Peace. In the mean while, as *Lenox* was young, handſome, and gentile, and brought up in all exerciſes of a Cavalier, he paſt his time in Tiltings, Masks, and other noble diſports; In which, though he had the Earl of *Bothwell* for Rival, this Lord yet appear'd ſo inferiour to him, as he retired home: Nevertheleſs, *Lenox* finding himſelf at laſt deluded, and that all this was done only by the Queen and Cardinal, to have the more leiſure to ruine him, he proteſted he would be revenged; neither wanted there an opportunity: For Thirty thouſand Crowns being ſent by the *French* King to him, in the diſpoſing whereof, yet he was wiſhed to uſe the advice of the Queen and Cardinal, he diſtributed the money amongſt his Friends; but the Cardinal alledging that the money was ſent to himſelf, and to be employed in Wars againſt the *Engliſh*, and that *Lenox* had intercepted it againſt all right, raiſed an Army to ſeize on him and the money together. But as *Lenox* was not ignorant of theſe Preparatives, he gathered in a ſhort ſpace an Army of Ten thouſand men, ſaying, he would prevent the Cardinal; who being now deſirous to gain time, as knowing *Lenox* was not long able to maintain this expence, entertain'd him with frequent Pollicitations and Meſſages; *Lenox* alſo doubting leaſt ſome of his followers might forſake him, agrees with the Viceroy and him, and comes to *Edenburgh*, where (after a while) being advertiz'd, that ſome Treachery was intended, he conveys himſelf by night to *Glaſco*, and from thence to *Dunbritton*; after which, hearing both, that the *Douglaſſes* and the *Hamiltons* were agreed, and that through the calumnies of his Adverſaries, the *French* King was alienated from him, he ſeem'd much troubled, and the rather, that ſome noble Perſons who deſired to end theſe controverſies, were ſuddenly committed. But as our King prepared now to invade *Scotland*, this buſineſs had another end than he could eaſily imagine.

Buchan.

And now if juſt cauſes of competition to the young Queen of *Scotland* hapned, no leſs juſt cauſes for War againſt *Francis* were given, of which I find the chief, or at leaſt the moſt recent, were theſe:

That he with-held divers of our Ships, and ſeiz'd upon our Merchants Goods.

That he detain'd the Penſion due yearly to King *Henry*.

That he had fortified *Ardres* to the prejudice of our *Engliſh* pale, on which alſo he had incroached. Moreover divers ancient unkindneſſes not ſufficiently concocted remain'd in our Kings breaſt: As that he had given his Daughter *Magdalen* to *James*, and afterward the Daughter of *Guiſe*, contrary to his promiſe and Treaty.

That he had not deſerted the Biſhop of *Rome*, and conſented to a Reformation, as he once promiſed.

That

That whereas with much freedom and confidence he had revealed divers ſecrets to him, they had been diſcloſed again unto the Emperor, while he was at *Aignes Mortes*, and after at *Paris*. Beſides which, there was a common quarrel taken betwixt the Emperor and our King, for having confederated himſelf with the *Turk*, &c. as is in the following Treaty. But to theſe *Francis* anſwered, That our King had failed alſo in not aſſiſting him againſt the Emperor. Our King replied, That *Francis* had violated the Treaty firſt. Beſides, he could not be ignorant of the Wars againſt his Rebels at that time; howſoever theſe buſineſſes were ſo roughly conteſted, that the Ambaſſadors were ſtaied on both ſides, though at length diſmiſſed, and an open Rupture reſolved. The conſequence whereof having a good while ſince been preſaged by our King, made him determine to enter into League with the Emperor, and to call a Parliament. 1543. March.

The League with the Emperor was to this effect (as appears by our Records.)

I. That there ſhould be Abolition of former Injuries.

II. A free Intercourſe.

III. A perpetual Peace.

IV. That they ſhould Aid or countenance no Enemies of each other.

V. That Rebels or Fugitives ſhould not be harbour'd, but upon warning given to be gone, if they obeyed not, to be baniſhed and proſcrib'd.

VI. He ſhall be taken for a Common Enemy who ſhall invade *England*, *Guiſnes*, *Calais*, *Berwick*, *Wight*, *Jerſey*, *Garnſey*, *Man*, *Spain*, *Brabant*, *Flanders*, *Holland*, *Zeland*, *Hainault*, *Artois*, *Limburgh*, *Luxenburgh*, *Namours*, *Friſe*, *Overyſſell*, *Utrecht*, *Mechlin*,

VII. And if he invade with Ten thouſand men, the Prince invaded ſhall require Aid of the other, who ſhall ſend him within Forty days, at his own charges, in this proportion, *viz.*

That if the Enemy fall on *Calais*, or the Caſtle and County of *Guiſnes*, the Emperor ſhall ſend at leaſt as many Souldiers, Horſe and Foot, as may be paid for Seven hundred Crowns the day, each Crown valued at Fourty five Sol' *Tournois*.

If on *Wight*, *Jerſey*, *Garnſey*, *Man*, or *England*, the Emperor ſhall ſend for Aid, ſuch a number of Foot as can be paid for Seven hundred Crowns a day.

But if the Emperor be invaded in any of his Countries above mentioned, the King of *England* ſhall ſend him for Aid, ſuch a number of Foot at leaſt, whoſe pay, conſidering their Cloaths, Diet, and Weapons, comes to Seven hundred Crowns a day, each Crown worth Fourty Sol' *Tournois*.

And it is in the choice of him who demandeth Aid, whether he will have Men or Money, which Money ſhall be paid by the Month, conſiſting of Twenty-eight days.

1543. And whether Men or Money be required, the Prince of whom it is demanded, is not bound to be at this charge above Four Months in one Year. But if the Prince in whoſe Aid they are ſent, will retain them longer, he may, at his own charge.

Neither Prince is bound to Aid the other in divers places at once: And if both ſhall be invaded at the ſame time by the King of *France*, the one ſhall not be bound to Aid the other.

If this Aid be demanded upon a falſe rumour, and the Enemy ſhall neither beſiege any City or Fort, nor make ſpoil, nor encamp in the Country of the Demandant, then the ſaid Demandant is to repay the money.

Concerning the Kingdom of *Spain* and *Ireland*, it is agreed, they ſhall Aid one another by ſending Horſe and Foot, or Ships at the coſt of the Demandant: and concerning theſe two Kingdoms, the Number and Coſts of the Aid ſhall be as the time, and occaſion, and ſtrength of the Prince, of whom it was demanded will ſuffer: which thing ſhall be referred to the conſcience of the Prince ſo call'd upon.

And for the Pay of the Souldiers, it ſhall be rated according to the Market of the Country wherein they are.

VIII. If any Article of this Treaty be violated by any of the Subjects, they ſhall be puniſh'd, and it remain.

IX. That no Letters of Merque ſhall be given without due warning, to the end the loſſes and wrongs may be otherwiſe repaired by the Prince.

X. That becauſe many ſcandalous and heretical Books are ſpread abroad by Tranſlations, It is agreed that no Book written in *Engliſh* ſhall be Printed or Sold in *Germany*, or the Emperors Dominions: Nor any Book written in *Dutch*, in *England*, under pain of Impriſonment to the Sellers and Printers, and burning of the ſaid Books.

XI. That there ſhall be Intercourſe of Traffick according to the Treaty made 1520. and confirm'd and ordered in the Treaty of *Cambray*, 5 *Auguſt* 1529.

XII. That if there be any Damnification of the Subjects on either ſide, the wronged party upon requiſition may have the cauſe heard, and due reparation made.

XIII. That when upon Invaſion (as aforeſaid) War is denounced, no Truce ſhall be made by either Prince without the conſent of the other, except there be danger of Siege from the Enemy: In which caſe there may be Truce made (apart) for Two months, within which time he is to give notice to the other.

XIV. That no Peace ſhall be made, nor any Treaty ſeverally with the *French* King, or any other to the prejudice of this, but this to continue firm.

XV. That

XV. That none are to be comprehended in this Treaty, but by common conſent; as alſo no Enemy to either, nor in whoſe Dominions the other hath any pretence. 15$\frac{42}{43}$.

XVI. This Treaty to be ratified by the two Princes, under their Princely Word and Oath, & under pain to be infamous, and hated both by God and man, and under pledge of their Goods, ſo that it ſhall be lawful to invade the Realm and Dominions of the Infractor, to take Perſons and Goods and carry them away, till ſatisfaction be made: Provided, that they come not to this extremity, till a Diet or Meeting hath been required, and Juſtice denyed or delayed.

XVII. This Treaty to be underſtood according to the ſimple and plain Tenor of the words, and no Interpretation admitted otherwiſe.

XVIII. It is alſo covenanted and agreed, that, as ſoon as may be, the two Princes ſhall by their Ambaſſadors declare to the King of *France* (requiring his Anſwer thereto,) *viz.*

1. They ſhall complain, that the *Turk* (Enemy to Chriſtian Faith) hath taken boldneſs by his friendſhip to invade Chriſtendom.

2. That he renounce his correſpondence with the ſaid *Turk*, recalling his Orators that are now reſident with him.

3. That he ſatisfie for the loſs and prejudice done by the *Turk*, through his occaſion and procurement, to Chriſtendom, *viz.* Firſt, That he reſtore the Town of *Maram* to the King of the *Romans*. And Secondly, That he content the Emperor for the Coſts and Dammages ſuſtain'd in the loſs of *Caſtle-Nuovo*, which the *Turk*, with the Aid of twelve Galleys of the King of *France*, took. *Maramic. Orig.* Aug. 1539.

4. That he ceaſe from War with the Emperor, that he may more commodiouſly and ſafely take upon him the Defence of the Chriſtian Common-wealth.

5. That he repay to the *Germans* the loſs by them ſuſtain'd, in defending themſelves againſt the *Turk*.

6. That he pay the King of *England* all Arrearages, and that he give him ſome Lands and Poſſeſſions to ſecure the ſatisfaction of the perpetual Penſion. And if there be any thing elſe which each of theſe two Princes will require from the *French* King, it ſhall be lawful for him to do it, ſo that he declare his intent therein in open and plain terms, before the Ratification of the preſent Treaty.

XIX. If the *French* King either for Terrour of Conſcience, or Fear of Revenge, ſhall deſire to come to agreement for Peace; neither of theſe two Princes may Treat with him apart, until the King of *France* hath given them ſatisfaction: (*viz.*) Till he hath paid the King of *England* all that is in Arrear due to him by Bargain. Alſo, for ſecurity for the payment of the Annual Penſion

1543.

due for ever, he ſhall ſurrender into the poſſeſſion of the King of *England* the whole Country of *Ponthieu*, with the Town of *Bologne*, and Territories of *Monſtrueil*, *Theronenne*, and *Arde*, with the Lands, Villages, and Towns adjoyning, as far as the Borders of the ſaid County of *Ponthieu*, &c. On condition, that the King of *England* and his Succeſſors ſhall hold them all for them and theirs, free from all Feod. On this condition yet, that they hold themſelves fully ſatisfied with the profits ariſing out of theſe Lands for the annual and perpetual Penſion. To the Emperor he ſhall reſtore the Dutchy of *Burgundy*.

XX. If the King of *France* will not accept Peace on theſe Conditions, or delay it Forty days after propoſition, the two Princes ſhall denounce War againſt him. Wherein

The King of *England* ſhall challenge to himſelf the Kingdom of *France*, Dutchy of *Normandy*, *Aquitain*, and *Guyenne*. The Emperor, the Dutchy of *Burgundy*, the Cities and Towns of *Abbeville*, *Amiens*, *Corby*, *Bray*, *Peronne*, *Hannere*, and St. *Quintin*, with their Territories. Before recovering of all which, neither of the Princes ſhall deſiſt from Hoſtility, but by conſent of the other, and for the good of Chriſtendom.

XXI. They ſhall have each a Fleet at Sea to ſecure Traffick: which Ships bearing two thouſand, or (if need be) three thouſand Souldiers, ſhall be ſet to Sea within a month after War denounced to the *French* King, and ſhall remain there on the Coaſts of *France*, infeſting his Country, and defending their Friends. Nor ſhall they licenſe their Souldiers, or diminiſh the number of Ships or men, but by conſent. And if there be any loſs by Tempeſt or Fight, they ſhall ſupply it. For the Deſigns, they ſhall be ruled by the Admirals and the Council of the two Princes.

XXII. After War, as aforeſaid, denounced by common conſent, in time and place agreed on, (ſo it exceed not the ſpace of two years) the two Princes ſhall either in Perſon, or by Lieutenant, invade the Realm of *France* with a compleat Army; that is to ſay, Twenty thouſand Foot, and Five thouſand Horſe, or leſs; nor ſhall deſiſt within four months, unleſs he be beaten, or receive ſome diſaſter (except by mutual conſent.)

XXIII. When King *Henry* ſhall with Twenty thouſand Foot, and Five thouſand Horſe invade the Dominions of the *French* King, the Emperor ſhall at his own coſts lend him 2000 Lansquenets, and 2000 of able Horſmen, to ſerve under him, till he licenſe his Troops.

XXIV. When the King of *England* ſhall paſs the Sea to invade *France*, and paſs thorow any of the Dominions of *Charles*, the ſaid Emperor ſhall give him free paſſage, and let him have Ships, Carriage, Victuals, and Ammunition, ſo he pay for them at a fair and reaſonable price.

XXV. This

XXV. This Treaty to be ratified and ſworn by both Princes within Fifteen days after Requiſition. 1543.

Commiſſioners for our King were *Stephen* Biſhop of *Wincheſter*, *Thomas* Biſhop of *Weſtminſter*, Sir *Thomas Wriotheſly* principal Secretary: For the Emperor, *Euſtachius Chappuis*, Doctor of both Laws, Counſellor and Maſter of Requeſts to the Emperor, and his Lieger Ambaſſador here in *England*.

This League minuted and agreed in *February* 1543. was ſworn to by *Charles*, *April* 8. at *Molin del Rey* near *Barcelona*, in the preſence of *Edmond Bonner* Biſhop of *London*, our Kings Ambaſſador, and publiſhed in *June* following: Our King in the mean while providing for War, and his Parliament largely contributing to the expences thereof. Feb. 11.

In this Parliament, a Book intituled *A neceſſary Doctrine and Erudition for any Chriſtian Man*, receiving its approbation, was in *May* following Printed and Publiſhed in *Engliſh* by the Kings command; wherein he departs not from his Articles ſet forth *Anno* 1536. except in admitting Seven Sacraments, and handling the Points in a more copious manner: for here at large out of the Scriptures and Fathers, he explains the Creed, the Sacraments and the Decalogue, the Lords Prayer, with the *Ave*; then the Doctrine of Free-will, and Good works: Laſtly, adds Prayer for the Dead; all with much moderation, as chuſing rather to reſolve high and obſcure Queſtions in general terms, than by any peremptory and particular determination to make his People obnoxious; a fault noted by ſome Authors in *Charles* and *Francis*, both which about theſe times commanding their Divines to collect their Doctrine into certain brief Heads, propos'd it barely without explication or proof, under the greateſt penalties. But King *Henry* having laboured firſt to make Tenants underſtood, took order in the next place to have them obſerved on theſe conditions. Therefore among other Laws enacted in this Seſſion, beginning the Twenty ſecond of *January*, 1543. and laſting till the Twelfth of *May* follhwing, this is the firſt: *Sleid. l.* 16.

Recourſe muſt be had to the Catholick and Apoſtolick Church for the deciſion of Controverſies: And therefore all Books of the Old and New Teſtament in *Engliſh*, being of *Tindal's* falſe Tranſlation, or compriſing any matter of Chriſtian Religion, Articles of the Faith, or holy Scripture, contrary to the Doctrine ſet forth, *Anno Domini* 1540. or to be ſet forth by the King, ſhall be aboliſhed. No Printer or Bookſeller ſhall utter any of the aforeſaid Books: No perſons ſhall play in Enterludes, ſing or rime contrary to the ſaid Doctrine: No perſon ſhall retain any *Engliſh* Books, or Writings concerning matter againſt the Holy and Bleſſed Sacrament of the Altar, or for the maintenance of Anabaptiſts, or other Books aboliſhed by the Kings Pro- Jan. 22. Regn. 34.

1543.

Proclamation. There ſhall be no Annotations or Preambles in Bibles or New Teſtaments in *Engliſh*. The Bible ſhall not be read in *Engliſh* in any Church. No Women or Artificers, Prentices, Journey-men, Serving-men, of the degrees of Yeomen, or under Husbandmen, nor Labourers, ſhall read the New Teſtament in *Engliſh*. Nothing ſhall be Taught or maintained contrary to the Kings Inſtructions. And if any ſpiritual perſon Preach, Teach, or maintain any thing contrary to the Kings Inſtructions or Determinations made or to be made, and ſhall be thereof convict, he ſhall for his firſt Offence recant; for his ſecond, abjure, and bear a Fagot; and for his third, ſhall be adjudged an Heretick, and be burned, and loſe all his Goods and Chattels. And this Statute, though rigorous, was yet a qualification of the Six Articles, which impoſed death upon the firſt Offence in this kind: And as the King was now in good Terms with the Emperor, he might the better moderate them.

That the Lords Authorized by the Statute of 28 *Hen.* 8. 14. to ſet the prices of Wine in groſſe, may mitigate or enhance the prices of Wine by retail, as time and occaſion ſhall require. Which Act, though expired before our times, had yet this uſe, that Vintners then were very much reſtrained from couſening; and the extraordinary number of them diminiſhed.

That any perſon being no common Chyrurgeon, may miniſter outward Medicines.

That Biſhops new erected, ſhall pay their Tenths into the Courts of the Firſt-Fruits.

That Penſions, *&c.* granted out of Abbeys, *&c.* ſhould be paid ſtill as they were before.

That Laws eſpecially ſhould be made in *Wales* by the Officers there. Whereupon the Council in the Principality of *Wales* and Marches was confirmed; and divers other Orders eſtabliſhed, too long to be recited here. Only I muſt not omit how *Gavelkind* (which being heretofore uſed in *Wales*, did ſo divide and ſubdivide the Lands of the Ancient Nobles and Gentry there, that at laſt every mans part came to very little; and ſo diſabled them to keep the dignity of their Houſes) was here taken away and extinguiſhed.

Holinſhead. Stow.

In this Parliament, alſo, a Suſidy was granted to the King, to be paid in three years, after this rate; They who were in Goods worth Twenty Shillings and upwards to Five Pound, paid four pence of every Pound; from Five Pound to Ten Pound, Eight pence; from Ten Pound to Twenty Pound, Sixteen pence; from Twenty and upwards, two Shillings. All Strangers, as well Denizens, as others, Inhabiting here, doubled the Sum; Strangers not Inhabitants, that were Sixteen years old and upwards, paid four pence for every Head or Poll. As for Lands, Fees and Annuities, every Native paid eight pence in the pound from twenty ſhillings

ſhillings to Five pounds; from Five pounds to Ten pounds, ſixteen pence; from Ten pounds to Twenty pounds, two ſhillings; from Twenty pounds and upwards, three ſhillings. Strangers ſtill after all theſe rates doubling the ſum. As for the Clergy, they granted a Subſidy of ſix ſhillings in the pound, to be paid of their Benefices in perpetuity, in three years following: And every Prieſt having no perpetuity, but an annual Stipend, paid yearly during the ſaid three years ſix ſhillings eight pence. Beſides which, I find, upon occaſion of a dearth of Victuals, a Sumptuary Law was made, whereby the Mayor and Sheriffs of *London*, as alſo the Serjeants and Yeomen of their Houſes were limitted to a certain number of diſhes: They were forbidden alſo to buy certain kinds of Fowl. Nevertheleſs, in regard of the great confluence of People in this Parliament time, and the ſcarcity of Fiſh, the King by Proclamation, diſpenſed eating of White-meats in Lent, forbidding yet the eating of Fleſh ſo ſtrictly, as *Henry* Earl of *Surrey*, with divers Lords, Knights, and Gentlemen were impriſoned for offending herein. 1543. Feb. 9.

And now the *Iriſh* finding by *O-Neale*, that the uſe our King made of this Stile of King of *Ireland*, was to confer Nobility more amply on them, according to their ſeveral merits and Services; *O-Brian*, *Mac-William-a-Burgh*, and *Mac-Gil-Patrick*, came hither, and upon notice taken of their deſert, *O-Brian* was created Earl of *Thomond*, and *Mac-William* Earl of *Clanriccard*; ſome others alſo had Honours given them, and received therein an obligation to continue firm to the *Engliſh* Crown: Of which likewiſe the Succeſſors of the aforeſaid Lords have given ample teſtimony. June 3. July 1.

The ſeparation or Divorce betwixt our King and the Lady *Anne* of *Cleve* now ſtanding uncontroverted, and Queen *Katharine* beheaded, our King bethought himſelf of another Match. In the concluding whereof yet he found ſome difficulty: For as by a Statute formerly mentioned, it was declared death for any whom the King ſhould Marry, to conceal her Incontinency in former time, So few durſt hazard to venture into thoſe Bonds with a King, who had (as they thought) ſo much facility in diſſolving them: therefore they ſtood off, as knowing in what a ſlippery eſtate they were, if the King, after his receiving them to Bed, ſhould, through any miſtake, declare them no Maids: So that now he fix'd upon the Lady *Katharine Parr*, Widow to the Lord *Latimer*; who, as ſhe was eſteemed ever a Lady of much integrity and worth, and ſome maturity of years, ſo the King after Marriage lived apparently well with her for the moſt part. The publiſhing of this Marriage was accompanied with a Declaration of his League with the Emperor, and denouncing War to *Francis*: For which purpoſe, two Kings of Arms on the Emperor and our Kings part, were diſpatched to Him; while for July 12.

1543. June. for more Authoriſing their Meſſage, they were to require performance of certain Conditions before mentioned. But *Francis* not ſuffering them to come at all within his Dominions, they return'd; and both Princes, without more ceremony, prepar'd for War: The beginning and progreſs whereof, that it may be the better underſtood, I ſhall look a while upon Foreign Hiſtory.

Guillaume de Bellay Seigneur *de Langey*, one of the compleateſt Gentlemen of his time, to whom the charge of all Affairs in *Piedmont* was chiefly committed, finding himſelf declining in health, deſires leave to return home, but too late; for being in-
Jan. 9. tercepted by death in his way, he deſired the King his Maſter to accept thereof as a Teſtimony that he had ſerved his Majeſty to the uttermoſt of his force: whoſe loſs, I find, happened the more unſeaſonably, in that *Francis* had now need of his beſt ſtrength againſt two ſo puiſſant Princes as reſolved to invade his Dominions in Perſon. The Emperor ſet out firſt, as having divers Buſineſſes to determine by the way; leaving for Governour of *Spain* his Son *Philip*, aſſiſted by *Fernando de Toledo Duc de Alva* as Captain General, and *Franceſco de les Covos* for other Diſpatches during his abſence. His chief deſign was to draw the Pope from the *French* King: To which, though the Pope was
Sand. 2. Tom. l. 25. ſufficiently diſpos'd, yet he durſt not (ſaith *Sandoval*) leſt *Francis* ſhould renounce his Authority, as our King had done, and give ear to the *Lutherans*. Which being certified to the Emperor by his Ambaſſadors at *Rome*, made him withdraw ſome Revenues which he had given with *Margaret* his natural Daughter to *Ottavio Farneſe* the Popes Grand-child. And now the Emperor having all things ready for his Voyage, arrives from *Bar-*
May 25. *celona* and *Genoüa* about the end of *May*, 1543. as our Records ſay, or *June*, according to *Sandoval*. His neceſſities yet were great; inſomuch, that as he was forced before his leaving *Spain* to pawn the *Moluccas* to *Juan* King of *Portugal*, (and the rather, becauſe ſome revolt happening in the *Weſt-Indies* about this time, he was diſfurniſh'd of the Revenues uſually received from thence:) ſo in *Italy* he was conſtrain'd to ſell the Fortreſſes of *Florence* and *Ligorno* to *Coſmo de Medices* Duke of *Florence* for an Hundred and Fifty thouſand Ducats; though yet he wanted not ſo many reaſons to retain theſe places, as (unleſs a moſt urgent neceſſity did excuſe him) it cannot but ſeem moſt ſtrange, both as he loſt ſo principal an Acceſs to *Italy* by Sea, and ſuch a puiſſant means of conſerving the *Florentines* at his Devotion: Nevertheleſs, I find he would not part with *Siena*, though as being an Inland-Town, and without means to be eaſily relieved, it could not ſo aptly ſerve for to make good his Authority in thoſe parts. To which yet I find *Diego de Mendoza* Governour
Sandov. l. 25. thereof ſo incouraged him, as he ſeemed rather to invite an attempt

tempt againſt *Rome*. The Emperor repoſing a while at *Genoua*, was deſired by the Pope to permit an Interview; which at laſt was accorded at *Buſſetto*, between *Parma* and *Cremona*, where the Pope and Emperor did meet, *June* 21. Their different ends yet did not permit them to ſpeak principally of a Council, nor at all, till their other buſineſſes were determined: for the Emperor, deſirous to incite him againſt the *French* King, and (howſoever) to get money of him, bent his chief diſcourſes that way. The Pope, on the other ſide, ambitious to get *Milan* for his Grand-child *Ottavio Farneſe*, who had Married *Margaret*, natural Daughter to the Emperor, as is before recited) intended little elſe; offering for this purpoſe, to make what Cardinals the Emperor deſired, to give an Hundred and Fifty thouſand Crowns for ſome years towards his War againſt *France*, and yet to leave the Caſtle of *Milan* and *Cremona* in his hands. Others ſay, the Pope would neatly have bought *Milan* for his Grand-child, when the Emperor could give him good aſſurance for his purchaſe, and that the Emperor would not part with the Fortreſs of *Milan* and *Cremona*. But to leave theſe things to the ſeveral Authors, I find, that the Emperor requiring more money, the buſineſs was ſuſpended, and the concluſion referred to Commiſſioners, who ſhould treat thereof as the Emperor proceeded in his journey through *Germany*: who, for all advantage and ſatisfaction in this Interview, had no account to give at his coming thither, but that he could proteſt, he had made ſome Overture of a Council. The Pope finding thus no certain reſolution given to his requeſt, inclined to *Francis*; and the rather, that the League betwixt our King and the Emperor being publiſhed, he was highly incenſed againſt him, as having joyned himſelf in League with one who was ſo lately excommunicated, anathematized, curſed, deprived, and made incapable of all Confederation: Which yet ſo little moved the Emperor; as when it was repreſented that the Popes proceeding here was paſſionate, and for his proper intereſt only, and that Religion ſtood upon firmer Principles, than that it could be perſonated in any one man, he did not relinquiſh his former intention: for more confirmation whereof alſo, he fail'd not to reproach unto the Pope his aſſiſting of *Francis*; ſaying, He might with much more reaſon prevail himſelf of our Kings aſſiſtance, than *Francis* could do of the *Turks*.

1543.
Sandov. l. 25.
June 21.

The Emperor being now come into the *Low-Countries*, reſolves to chaſtiſe the Duke of *Cleve*; the chief places of whoſe Country he took in Fifteen days. Nevertheleſs, upon his ſubmiſſion, he reſtored all but *Gueldre* and *Zutphen*; of which yet he gave him ſome hope, when he would hold it in Fee from the Empire.

Auguſt.

Septemb. 7.

1543. 1546. This being advertiſed to *Francis*, made him detain *Jone* of *Navarre*; but for her the Emperor afterwards gave the Duke in Marriage (the Pope diſpenſing with the former Contract) *Mary* Daughter of *Ferdinand*. This proſperous Exploit yet was checked by the ſucceſs of *Francis*, who this while had taken *Landrecy*, *Bapaumes*, and *Maubege*, (where there is a fair and magnificent Convent of Gentlewomen of Noble Houſes, which yet are not ſo bound to any vow of Religion, but that they may Marry, and was in effect an Academy for their Sex.) Afterwards he took almoſt all *Luxemburg*: therefore the Emperor prepared Forces to withſtand him, and recover the ſaid places. To which purpoſe Sir *John Wallop*, with Six thouſand men being ſent by our King (who failed not to aſſiſt the Emperor) Landed at *Calais*, and from thence keeping along betwixt the Frontiers of *France* and the *Low-Countries*, did much ſpoil upon the *French*, till he joyned with the Emperors Forces before *Landrecy*, which the Emperor beſieged: Whereof *Francis* being advertiſed, reſolves to relieve it: Hereupon the two great Armies being near each other, it was thought a blow would follow. The Emperor, who deſired much to fight, puts his men in order; which being done, he exhorted them to do bravely, ſhewing with a the Imperial Standard, which one *Quixada* carried, ſaying, If this ſhould fall, and my ſelf too, I charge you to take it up before me. *Francis* alſo drew out into the Field, not omitting in the mean time to ſend Men, Victuals and Ammunition into the Town: The two Armies thus confronting one another, night came on, through the benefit whereof *Francis*, diſlodging ſecretly, retires with his Army. The Imperialiſts finding this, follow; But as *Francis* had laid an Ambuſcado, he took divers of the more forward, among whom, it was the fortune of Sir *George Carew*, Sir *Thomas Palmer*, and other *Engliſh* to be taken Priſoners. The Emperor yet continued his Siege for ſome four or five days: But as it was now towards the midſt of *November*, he went with his Army to *Cambray*; where, perſuading the Inhabitants that the *French* had a deſign upon them, he counſelled them to build a Cittadel; which they approving, he found means to poſſeſs himſelf thereof. He alſo ſent *Hernando Gonzago* and *Juan Baptiſta Gaſtaldo* to our King, to Treat further of a War againſt *France* the next year; he omitted not alſo to call a Diet at *Spire*; whither he went with deſire (as much as ſafely he might) to oblige the Proteſtants to him; And the rather, that the *Turks* had at this time not only taken *Strigonium* and other places in *Hungary*, but the Town of *Nizza* in the Confines of *France* and *Italy*, in this manner: *Antoine Polin* (afterwards Baron *de la Garde*) had now made two Voyages from *Francis* to *Solyman* the *Turk*, to ſolicite him to ſend his Sea-forces againſt the Emperor. Whereupon *Barbaroſſa* was diſpatched

Novemb.

patched with Commiſſion to joyn with him: He taking freſh water at *Oſtia*, within five Leagues of *Rome*, gave that Alarm, that the Inhabitants began to fly; but *Polin* aſſured them by his Letters: From thence coming to *Marſeilles*, *Francois de Bourbon* Duke of *Anguien* encountred them, having charge to command the Naval Army of the King, which was Two and twenty Galleys, and Eighteen other Ships: whereupon they Beſieged and took the Town of *Nizza*, but not the Caſtle, which being ſtronger than that it could be won eaſily, they carrying ſome of the Inhabitants with them, retired to their Shipping; and the rather, that they heard the Marqueſs *de Guaſto* was coming out of *Piedmont* towards them; who (I find) recovered it ſhortly after. And thus ended the two years Negotiation of *Polin* with the *Turk*, with ſmall preſent effect, and no conſequence but the carrying away of a few Slaves by *Barbaroſſa*, who Wintred at *Thoulon*, betwixt *Nizza* and *Marſeilles*. Howſoever, I find by *Sandoval*, that it was ſo heinouſly taken in *Rome*, that ſome Cardinals in a publick Conſiſtory, mov'd to deprive *Francis* from the Title of *Chriſtianiſſimo*.

1543.

Aug. 20.

I ſhall draw this year to a concluſion, with a beginning given to the Council of *Trent*, now appearing in ſome Rudiments. Many years had paſt without any manifeſt neceſſity of calling a Council. Thoſe few Separatiſts which remained of the *Waldeſians*, *Picards* and *Huſſites*, being diſarmed, illiterate, and obſcure; and theſe later not much differing from the *Roman* Church, but in the uſe of the Cup in the Euchariſt: But *Luther*, *Zuinglius*, and divers others of late appearing, though not ſufficiently united among themſelves, gave yet the *Roman* Catholicks ſo little cauſe to Glory therein, that their greateſt diſſention ſeemed to be who ſhould be furtheſt off from them: every Reformer in his turn pretended both to diſcover new Errors, and to ſhew himſelf more averſe. This made the Pope reſolve at laſt on a Council; and the rather, that all Chriſtian Princes deſired upon any reaſonable terms a Peace of Religion, as knowing how much it concerned them to ſettle that Affair: neither did they think there would be much difficulty, when all ſides came prepared thereunto, moſt of the points in difference being to be reconciled in middle and indifferent terms, or to be rejected as doubtful (upon the grounds taken on either ſide) or at leaſt not tending to much edification. The Meeting was (as is above ſhewed) deſigned at *Mantua* firſt, by Pope *Clement* the Seventh, 1533. then by *Paulus* the Third, 1537. but being thence brought to *Vicenza*, and there ſuſpended during his pleaſure, at laſt it was removed to *Trent*, in the Confines of *Germany*; which alſo was haſtened by the Pope, as fearing the conſequence of a National Council in *Germany*, whereof the Emperor had lately given hope; ſo that he was (at what price ſoever) determined

1517.

1533.
1537.
1538.
1542.

1541.

1543. mined to prevent it; as knowing well what prejudice it might bring to his Authority. Neither did he any longer apprehend the defection of *Francis*; who knowing he ſhould loſe the Pope in his Buſineſſes of *Milan* and elſe-where, if he trifled any longer with the Proteſtants, had made ſevere Edicts againſt them. May 22. 1542. Whereupon Bulls alſo were diſpatched every where abroad, notifying the ſaid Convention to begin *November* the firſt following: which yet was in ſuch terms as ſcandalized the Emperor, ſuppoſing that *Francis* was uſed therein with more reſpect than he deſerved; ſince, in the late Diet at *Spire*, having ſecretly offered his aſſiſtance both to the Proteſtant and *Roman* Catholick Party in *Germany*, he had declared his intentions were only to foment diviſion; and beſides, had colleagued himſelf with the *Turk*. 1542. But for compoſing theſe differences, the Pope having appointed Cardinal *Contareni* to go to the Emperor, and *Sandolet* to *Francis*; *Contareni* dying in the way, he imployed Cardinal *Viſeo* in his place, one ſo openly diſaffected by the Emperor, that it was thought no good effect would follow. Howſoever, to make it appear that this univerſally-deſired Council was not retarded by him, he ſent at the ſame time unto *Trent* the Cardinals *Pietro Paulo Pariſio*, a good Canoniſt, *Giovanni Morone* an expert Stateſman, and *Reginald Pool*, oppoſite to our King, and ſo eminent as might give more Authority to all Proceedings againſt him. Their ſecret Inſtructions were yet rather to entertain the Ambaſſadors and Prelates which ſhould be there aſſembled, than to Treat of any thing material without further direction. The Emperor ſent hither *Diego de Mendoza* his Ambaſſador reſident at *Venice*, and *Nicolas Perenot* Seigneur *de Granville*, together with *Antonio* Biſhop of *Arras* (his Son) and ſome few Biſhops of the Kingdom of *Naples*; who together with ſome few Prelates (of the moſt affected to the Pope) being commanded to be preſent, were all that could give name and reputation to this General Council: ſo far was it from having other Kingdom or Religion concurrent therein. Howſoever, the Imperial Mandate being exhibited by the Agents of *Charles*, inſtance was made that the Council ſhould open, and a beginning be given, at leaſt, to a Reformation in Diſcipline. But the Papal Legates interpoſed a delay, ſaying, It was not convenient to begin an Univerſal Council with ſo little a number: whereupon the buſineſs came to Proteſts on both ſides; and ſo the Legates referring all to the Pope, nothing was concluded. Whereupon, the Imperialiſts departed, whom alſo the *Neopolitan* Biſhops followed, and finally the Legates themſelves, after having been there Seven months without more than this oſtentation of a Council.

Auguſt 1542. Aug 26. 1542. Nov. 1. 1542.

Little elſe happened this year of Foreign Affairs, that I thought worthy my Relation, but that *Philip* Prince of *Spain* (though very young) had given him in Marriage *Donna Maria*, Infanta

fanta of *Portugal*, by *John* the Third, and *Donna Catalina* Sister to the Emperor. 1543.

Information being made to our King, that divers this year were burnt for Religion at *Windsor*, it appears by our Histories, that he was nothing pleased; which yet, whether it proceeded from some better impression he might have taken of the Protestant Reformation; or that he grew weary of the too many severe Executions, which had made his Government thought in Foreign Countries to be rigorous, cannot easily be determined. Howsoever, he made it known now that he could forgive. And therefore, though some of his Courtiers, as Sir *Thomas Cardine*, Sir *Philip Hobby*, and others of his Subjects were fallen into the danger of the Six Articles, he voluntarily gave them his pardon; and together, withdrew much of his favour from the Bishop of *Wincheſter*, who was reported more than any to persecute them, and suspected to dislike secretly the Kings proceedings: which was made more probable, when not long after his Secretary *German Gardiner* was Executed for denying the Kings Supremacy. And perchance, as King *Henry* intended shortly to go in Person to the Wars in *France*, the many punishments he had inflicted on others might have begot some apprehensions in him: yet not such as could deter him from the Journey; for he made great preparations of Souldiers and Habiliments of War, and particularly of Iron Pieces and Granades, which I find this year were first cast in *England*: While for the more contenting the Queen in his absence, He conferr'd certain Honours on *William* Lord *Parr*, her Brother, who was made Earl of *Essex*: and her Uncle Sir *William Parr*, who was made Lord *Parr* of *Horton*, and Chamberlain to the Queen. All which yet seemed nothing to him, unless he parted in good terms with his Parliament: For he accounted it his most Loyal Spouse: and not without reason, since there was nothing I know desired by him, which they performed not. This Session (being the third) began the 14 of *January*, in the Thirty-fifth year of his Reign, and continued till the 29 of *March*, 1544.

July 28.

March. 7. 1544.

Decemb. 23.

The first Act was concerning the Succession: And herein, as I find, he endeavoured to close with the Emperor, in giving the Princess *Mary* a possibility of Succession; so he setled that Business among his Children in such sort, that all cause of competition was taken away (as far as by our Laws he might.)

15^{43}_{44}.

The beginning of the Act is a Recital of a former, 28 *Hen.* 8. touching the Succession; to which reference must be had. Whereupon it follows thus, or to this effect, (as I conceive it.)

Reg. 25. Jan. 14.

Forasmuch as his Majesty sithence the death of Queen *Jane*, hath taken to Wife the Lady *Katharine*, late Wife of *John Nevil*

1544. *Nevil* Knight, Lord *Latimer*, deceaſed, by whom as yet his Majeſty hath none Iſſue, but may have full well, when it ſhall pleaſe God: And foraſmuch as our ſaid moſt dread Sovereign intendeth, by Gods Grace, to make a Voyage Royal in his moſt Royal Perſon into the Realm of *France*, againſt the *French* King; his Highneſs moſt prudently conſidering how this Realm ſtandeth at this time in the caſe of Succeſſion: And albeit, for default of ſuch Heirs as be inheritable by the ſaid Act, he might by the Authority of the ſaid Act, give and diſpoſe the ſaid Imperial Crown, and other the Premiſſes by his Letters Patents under his Great Seal, or by his laſt Will in writing, ſigned with his Hand, to any Perſon or Perſons of ſuch Eſtate therein as ſhould pleaſe his Highneſs to limit and appoint: Yet, to the intent his Majeſties diſpoſition and mind ſhould be openly declared to the Lords Spiritual and Temporal, and other his Subjects of this Realm, to the intent that their aſſent and conſent might appear to concur with thus far as followeth of his Majeſties Declaration in this behalf; His Majeſty therefore thinketh convenient, afore his departure beyond Seas, That it be enacted by his Highneſs and Parliament: And therefore be it enacted, That in caſe the Kings Majeſty and his only Son Prince *Edward* ſhould deceaſe without Heirs of either of their Bodies lawfully begotten, ſo that there be no ſuch Heir male or female of any of their two Bodies, to have and inherit the ſaid Imperial Crown, and other his Dominions, according and in ſuch manner and form as in the aforeſaid Act, and now in this is declared, That then the ſaid Imperial Crown, and all other the Premiſſes ſhall be to the Lady *Mary*, the Kings Highneſs Daughter, and to the Heirs of her Body lawfully begotten, with ſuch conditions as by his Highneſs ſhall be limited by his Letters Patents under his Great Seal, or by his Majeſties laſt Will in writing, ſigned with his Hand. And for default of ſuch Iſſue, the ſaid Imperial Crown and other the Premiſſes ſhall be to the Lady *Elizabeth* the Kings ſecond Daughter, and her Heirs lawfully begotten, with ſuch conditions as is aforeſaid. Any thing in the Act made 28 *Hen.* 8. to the contrary notwithſtanding.

Provided nevertheleſs, That if the ſaid Lady *Mary* do not keep and perform ſuch conditions as the King ſhall declare and limit in manner aforeſaid; That then, and from thenceforth, for lack of Heirs of the ſeveral Bodies of the Kings Majeſty and Prince *Edward*, the ſaid Imperial Crown, and other the Premiſſes ſhall be and come to the Lady *Elizabeth*, and the Heirs of her Body lawfully begotten, in ſuch like manner and form, as though the ſaid Lady *Mary* were then dead, without any Heir of her Body begotten.

And be it further enacted, That if the ſaid Lady *Mary* do keep and perform ſuch conditions which the Kings Majeſty ſhall hereafter

1544.

after declare and limit, in form aforeſaid; and that the ſaid Lady *Elizabeth* for her part do not keep and perform ſuch conditions which the Kings Majeſty ſhall declare and limit, in form aforeſaid, That then, and from thenceforth, for lack of Heirs of the ſeveral Bodies of the Kings Majeſty, and the ſaid Lord Prince, and the ſaid Lady *Mary* lawfully begotten, the ſaid Imperial Crown, and other the Premiſſes ſhall be and come to ſuch Perſon and Perſons, and of ſuch Eſtate and Eſtates as the Kings Highneſs, in form aforeſaid, ſhall limit and appoint.

Provided, That if the Lady *Mary* do not keep and perform ſuch conditions which ſhall be limited and appointed as aforeſaid, and the ſaid *Elizabeth* being then dead without any Heir of her Body lawfully begotten; That then, and from thenceforth, for lack of Heirs of the ſeveral Bodies of the Kings Majeſty, and the ſaid Lord Prince lawfully begotten, the ſaid Imperial Crown and other the Premiſſes ſhall be, come, and remain to ſuch Perſon and Perſons, and of ſuch Eſtate and Eſtates as the Kings Highneſs by his Letters Patents Sealed under his Great Seal, or by his laſt Will in writing, ſigned with his Hand, ſhall limit and appoint.

Provided always, and be it enacted by the Authority aforeſaid, That in caſe the Kings Majeſty do not declare and limit by his Letters Patents, or by his laſt Will, in form as is aforeſaid, any conditions to the Eſtates and Intereſts afore-limited to the ſaid Lady *Mary*, and Lady *Elizabeth*, nor to the Eſtate or Intereſt of any of them; That then every ſuch of the ſaid Lady *Mary*, and Lady *Elizabeth*, to whoſe Eſtate or Intereſt no condition ſhall be limitted by the Kings Majeſty in form aforeſaid, ſhall have and enjoy ſuch Intereſt, Eſtate, and Remainder in the ſaid Imperial Crown and other the Premiſſes, as is before limitted by this Act, without any manner of condition. Any thing in this preſent Act to the contrary thereof notwithſtanding.

And foraſmuch as it ſtandeth in the only pleaſure and will of Almighty God, whether the Kings Majeſty ſhall have any Heirs begotten and procreated between his Highneſs and his moſt entirely beloved Wife Queen *Katharine*, or by any other his lawful Wife; or whether the ſaid Prince *Edward*, the Lady *Mary*, or Lady *Elizabeth*, or any other, ſhall have any Iſſue of their Bodies lawfully begotten; and that if ſuch Heirs ſhould fail, and no proviſion made, this Realm after the Kings tranſitory life ſhould be deſtitute of a lawful Governour to order and rule the ſame: Be it therefore enacted by the Authority of this preſent Parliament, That the Kings Highneſs ſhall have full power and authority to give, diſpoſe, appoint, aſſign, declare, and limit by his gracious Letters Patents under his Great Seal, or elſe by his Highneſs laſt Will made in writing, and ſigned with his moſt gracious hand, at his only pleaſure, from time to time hereafter, the

1544. the Imperial Crown of this Realm, and all other the Premiſſes, to be, remain, ſucceed and come after his deceaſe, and for lack of lawful Heirs of either of the Bodies of the Kings Highneſs and Prince *Edward* begotten, and alſo for lack of lawful Heirs of the Bodies of the ſaid Lady *Mary* and Lady *Elizabeth*, to be procreated and begotten (as is before limitted in this Act) to ſuch perſon and perſons in Remainder or Reverſion, as ſhall pleaſe his Highneſs, and according to ſuch eſtate, and after ſuch manner and form, faſhion or condition as ſhall be expreſſed, declared, named and limited in his Highneſs Letters Patents, or by his laſt Will in writing, ſigned with his moſt gracious hand (as is aforeſaid.) Any thing contained in this preſent Act, or in the ſaid former Act to the contrary thereof, in any wiſe notwithſtanding.

There followeth alſo in the ſaid Act a new form of Oath againſt the Authority of the Biſhop of *Rome*, and the penalty on thoſe who refuſed to take the Oath, or did interrupt this Act, or any eſtate limited thereby.

In another Act it was declared where, and before whom, Treaſons committed out of the Realm ſhould be tryed. That the Kings Stile alſo, of King of *England, France, and Ireland, Defender of the Faith, and of the Church of England, and alſo of Ireland, in Earth the ſupreme Head*, ſhall be united and annexed for ever unto the Imperial Crown of this Realm of *England*.

That no perſon ſhould be put to his trial upon an Accuſation concerning any of the offences compriſed in the Statute of the Six Articles 31 *Hen.* 8. but only upon ſuch as ſhall be made by the Oath of twelve men before Commiſſioners authoriſed: and the Preſentment ſhall be made within one year after the offence committed. That no perſon ſhould be Arreſted or committed to Ward for any ſuch offence before he be indicted. That if any Preacher or Reader ſhall ſpeak any thing in his Sermon or Reading contrary to any matter contained in the Six Articles, he ſhall be accuſed or indicted thereof within forty days, or elſe ſhall be diſcharged of the ſaid offence. And this alſo qualified a little the puniſhment of the Six Articles.

That the Lords and Commons ſhall remit unto the King all ſuch ſums of money as he had borrowed of them ſince the firſt of *January, Anno* 33 of his Reign.

That certain Tenures ſhall be reſerved (at the Kings pleaſure) upon Houſes and Lands, being ſometimes Abbey Lands, under forty ſhillings a year.

That all Perſons which have any Houſes, Lands, Gardens and other grounds in the Town of *Cambridge*, adjoyning upon every High-way, Street, or Lane, in his own Right, or the Right of his Wife, or, *&c.* ſhall cauſe the ſame to be paved with paving ſtone

ſtone unto the middle of the ſame ways, and in length as their grounds do extend, and ſo ſhall from time to time maintain them, upon pain to forfeit ſix pence for every yard ſquare not ſufficiently paved, to the King and Informer. And had this Statute extended to the other Cities and great Towns of *England*, it would have been much to the beauty of them, and the commodity of Paſſengers. 1544.

That the King ſhall have Authority during his life to name two and thirty perſons, *viz.* ſixteen Spiritual and ſixteen Temporal, to examine all Canons, Conſtitutions, and Ordinances Provincial and Synodal, and to eſtabliſh all ſuch Laws Eccleſiaſtical as ſhall be thought by the King and them convenient to be uſed in all Spiritual Courts. But this (it ſeems) expired with the Kings life.

An Ordinance alſo (never ſufficiently commended) was made for preſervation of Woods, which being too long and particular to rehearſe, I ſhall deſire the Reader to peruſe in his place: There being no Law either more uſeful to this Kingdom (in regard of our Navy and otherwiſe,) or whereof the Infraction can with more difficulty be repaired; ſo many years, if not ages, being required before they can come to that growth, which any raſh hand may cut down in a very ſhort ſpace.

Some other Acts alſo paſſed, which the Reader may ſee in their place.

And now the Parliament ending *March* 29. 1544, That War which was denounced by our King againſt *Scotland* for the Treaty broken in ſome particulars, and the Law of Nations in others, appear'd in his Preparatives; and the Lord *Edward Seymor* Earl of *Hertford* was ſhortly after conſtituted by our King, Lieutenant General of the North, and ſent thither with a well-furniſh'd Army: for as it was only a Quarrel of unkindneſs with the *Scots* for their not admitting readily the loving offer he made of Marrying his Son Prince *Edward* with their young Queen, none was thought more fit to determine, or if need were, to compoſe the Buſineſs, than the Princes Uncle. Beſides, the Duke of *Norfolk* (whoſe ſervice he had heretofore uſed in thoſe parts) was appointed to attend him in his journey to *France*. And now conſultation being had which way to invade *Scotland*, it was reſolved, by Sea; yet ſo, as the Kings Land-Army might make a diverſion on the Borders, and (if need were) joyn with the other Forces. The Fleet being ready (which was of two hundred Sail,) Sir *John Dudley* Lord *Liſle* (newly made Admiral of *England*) was appointed to conduct it; who ſetting Sail, ſhortly afterwards came to *New-Caſtle*, where the Earl of *Hertford*, *Francis Talbot* Earl of *Shrewsbury*, and other Principal perſons with the Kings Army attend him. Theſe being ſpeedily ſhipped, came to *Grantham-Crag* near *Lieth*, the fourth of *May*, where ſpend- March 29. *Buchan.* May 4.

1543. ſpending ſome three or four days in diſembarking their men, and taking out their Ordnance and Victuals, the Cardinal of Saint *Andrews* made proviſion to receive them: Our Army marched in three Battels, whereof the Lord Admiral had the Van, the Earl of *Hertford* the middle, the Earl of *Shrewsbury* the Rear; who from thence going to the Town, encountred ſix thouſand Horſe, beſides many Foot, led (as our Hiſtories have it) by the Cardinal and divers Noble Perſons: But as they judg'd themſelves too weak, and conſequently offered not much reſiſtance, they were quickly diſcomfited, and their Ordnance taken. Whereupon our men entring *Lieth*, found more riches there (they ſaid) than they could have eaſily imagined. Marching thence to *Edenburgh*. The Towns-men offered to yield themſelves, when they might depart with Bag and Baggage; but this not being accepted, they prepared for defence. Nevertheleſs, our men both forc'd the Town, and burnt it for three days together: At which time *William* Lord *Ever* Warden of the Eaſt-Marches, and Governour of *Berwick*, making his way by Land, did (notwithſtanding all oppoſition) joyn his Forces with the reſt. The Army thus greatned, burnt and ſpoiled all places about *Edenburgh* in a crueller manner than became ſuch as would obtain the favour either of that Queen or Country for their young Prince. Nevertheleſs, as they could not take the Caſtle of *Edenburgh*, they retired to *Lieth*, where the Lord General having made divers Knights, they Shipped their great Artillery, and among them ſome fair Pieces gotten in the Voyage; divers Ships alſo were taken by them. And now being ready to depart, they burnt the Town of *Lieth*, and the Peer of the Haven; and ſo
May 15. on the fifteenth of *May* the Fleet ſet Sail, while the Land-Army, deſirous to commit further ſpoil, marched to *Seton*, and ſo to *Hadington*, and *Dunbar*, which Towns they burnt. After which, coming to a Strait (which our Hiſtorians call the *Peaſe*) and a great miſt happening, they made a Halt, being advertiſed that the *Scottiſh* Army would fall on them: But the Miſt breaking up, they marched on without reſiſtance, and ſo came to *Ranton*, within eight miles of the *Engliſh* Borders, which having ruined
May 18. and burnt, they upon the 18. of *May* entered *Berwick*, without having loſt in all this Journey above 40. perſons. Our Navy in the mean while, taking out of every Creek and Haven on the *Scottiſh* Coaſts all the Ships and Boats they found there.

The Expedition thus gloriouſly ended, the King found his Buſineſs nothing advanced; he had done more than became a Suitor for Alliance, too little for one pretending to Conqueſt. Neither had this Invaſion other event than a general deteſtation of a Marriage ſought for in ſuch rough and unuſual terms: But our King, who underſtood the buſineſs otherwiſe, ſaid, That ſince he could not obtain, he would ſtrive to chaſtiſe. Howbeit, he omitted

omitted not to adviſe how he might raiſe a Faction in that Kingdom, whereof he might prevail himſelf. And becauſe the Earl of *Lenox*, now deſerted by the *French*, ſeem'd moſt proper for this purpoſe, he reſolv'd to admit a Treaty with him: which Affair alſo upon his misfortune, and the Retreat formerly mentioned, had been negotiated by the Earl of *Glencarne* and his Brother at *Carlile*, *May* 17. 1544. (as I find in our Records:) which again was ſeconded in that manner, that our Army now returning, he came by Sea to *Weſtcheſter*, and ſo to the Court, where he was well received by our King: And at laſt this Treaty concluded betwixt them, by the name of *Matthew* Earl of *Lenox*, and *Thomas Wriotheſly* (lately made * Baron and * Chancellor upon *Audley*'s death,) the Duke of *Suffolk*, and Sir *William Paget*, by way of Indenture, *June* 26. 1544. It is to this effect.

1544.

May 17.

* Jan. 1.
* May 14.
June 26.

That for the ſecurity of the ſaid Earl of *Lenox* againſt the power of the Cardinal, and the Earl of *Arrain*, and the ſafety of the Realm of *Scotland*, It is agreed, That the ſaid Earl will obſerve the Articles agreed on his behalf by the Earl of *Glencarne* and others at *Carlile*, *May* 17. 1544.

That he will be the Kings Servant and Subject, and ſerve him againſt all that ſhall impugn his Graces Title and Authority in *Scotland*, or elſewhere.

That he will ſurrender into his Majeſties hand the Caſtle of *Dumbritton*, as alſo the Iſle of *Bute*, and help him to win the Caſtle of *Roſs* therein.

That when the King, having the Direction of the Realm, ſhall have made him Governour, the ſaid Earl ſhall never call Parliament, nor do any matter of great moment without the Kings Advice.

That he ſhall fore-ſee that the Kings Pronept be not conveyed out of *Scotland*, but ſtrive to get her Perſon into his cuſtody, and to deliver her into the Kings hands.

That becauſe the King hath upon his earneſt ſuit given him leave to Marry his Graces Niece the Lady *Margaret Dowglas*, the ſaid Earl bindeth himſelf to endow her with the yearly value of 500 Marks Sterling.

That the King, in conſideration of the loſs which the ſaid Earl ſhall ſuſtain in *France* by this Agreement, will give unto him and his Heirs, Poſſeſſions in *England* of 1700 Marks Sterling.

That the King will aid the ſaid Earl in *Scotland* for two or three months with 500 men; beſides ſuch men as his Grace will ſend to take and keep *Dumbritton*.

That the King having obtain'd direction of that Kingdom, will conſtitute the ſaid Earl Governour.

1544. In which Treaty, though our King beſtowed the Lady *Margaret Dowglas* upon him, and that there wanted not ſome, who thought it beſt ſhe ſhould be reſerved upon all events, when the young Queen through any accident ſhould die, He choſe rather yet to gratifie this gentle Lord. And therein both put a perpetual obligation upon him, and enabled him to be an Anceſtor of that happy Off-ſpring which hath followed ſince.

Auguſt. The Earl now poſſeſs'd of his Lady, was ſent ſhortly after into *Scotland* with Twelve or Fourteen Ships, and about Six hundred men, under the command of certain *Engliſh* Knights:

Leſleus. theſe coming to the Caſtle of *Dumbritton*, were received with great joy, and feaſted by *Striveling*, Concierge or Captain thereof: But when *Lenox* had privately told him that the Caſtle was promiſed our King, he ſeem'd ſuſpended betwixt Affection and Duty. Though at laſt, conſidering that it neither ſtood with his honour, nor the ſafety of the Country, to ſurrender into any foreign hands, he took Arms, and forced *Lenox*, and a few of the *Engliſh* who were with him, to their Ships, whence

Holinſhead. they ſet Sail for the Iſle of *Arrain*, and burnt all the Houſes there; and after to the Iſle of *Bute*. Some ſay yet that *Striveling* would have ſeiz'd on the Perſon of *Lenox*, had he not fore-ſeen the danger, and eſcaped; and that he Landed in the Earl of *Argiles* Country, near the Caſtle of *Dunvin*, and afterwards burnt it; and took *Caintyr* and ſpoyled it; and all this with the help only of one hundred and forty men more he had out of his own Country: concerning which exploits, he advertiſed our King then at *Boulogne*, himſelf returning in the mean time to *Briſtol* (whence he had his Ships) and ſtaying there till the Kings arrival in *England*, who ſoon after commanded him, with ſome Ships, to ſcour the *Scottiſh* Coaſt.

Among the Kings Preparatives for War, that of Money was the moſt difficult: For though he had much enrich'd himſelf with the Revenues of the ſuppreſt Abbies; and beſides, received great Subſidies and Loans from his Subjects; yet Fortifications, Shipping and other Proviſions had exhauſted his Treaſure. Beſides, he found the money of his Kingdom much drained away by his crafty Neighbours, while they cryed it up in their Country. For remedy of which inconveniences, he both enhaunced our Gold from forty-five ſhillings to forty-eight ſhillings the ounce; and Silver from three ſhillings and nine pence to four ſhillings: and and together cauſed certain baſe moneys newly coyned to be made currant; though not without much murmuring: Which afterwards yet was cryed down in *Edward* the VI his time, and call'd in by Queen *Elizabeth*. Howſoever, it ſerv'd for the preſent to exchange both for commodities at home and abroad. Though about two years after our Records mention, that the *Low-Countrey* men finding the Allays (it ſeems) rejected it.

Men

Men and Money being now provided, there remained yet not a few difficulties concerning the Government of the Kingdom in the Kings abſence. Among which, becauſe the greateſt was difference in Religion, he endeavoured to quiet all parts, as finding it impoſſible to unite them. That of the *Roman* Catholicks he had already ſo curb'd, as they could hardly make head again: and for the Reformers, he thought a little would give them contentment, as being at this time ſcarce more than pretenders. Therefore he cauſed a Litany or Proceſſion to be ſet forth in *Engliſh*, which much ſatisfied them, as hoping the reſt of Divine Service might follow in the ſame Tongue. And indeed, our Records tell us, that another *Engliſh* Proceſſion for Feſtival days was afterwards added. As for the Civil Adminiſtration of his Kingdom, it was ordered thus: The Queen was conſtituted General Regent of the Realm: Not yet ſo much, that her ſoft Sex was thought leſs capable of Ambition, as that the *Roman*-Catholicks (whom he thought only could ſtir) would take no dependance from her; ſhe being obſerved to incline a little to the Reformed. To direct her Counſels yet, the King appointed the Arch-Biſhop of *Canterbury*, the Earl of *Hertford*, the Lord Chancellor, *Thomas Thurleby* Biſhop of *Weſtminſter*, and Sir *William Peter* Doctor of Law, one of the principal Secretaries, to be joyned in Commiſſion for thoſe Affairs, and on ſome occaſions *William* Lord *Parre* of *Horton* to be called to them. It being provided further, if occaſion were given, that the Earl of *Hertford* ſhould be the Kings Lieutenant or principal Captain. Beſides which general order for Affairs in his abſence, he particularly appointed certain Noble-men and Gentlemen in every Shire, who ſhould ſtay there and obſerve all motions: And for this purpoſe, the Biſhop of the Dioceſs in every County (for the moſt part) and ſix or ſeven other Noble-men, or Juſtices of the Peace were nominated; *Francis Talbot* alſo Earl of *Shrewsbury*, was made Lieutenant of the North. And now aſſurance being given that the Imperial Forces were in readineſs, he commanded his Army (which conſiſting of Thirty thouſand men, was divided into three Battails) to paſs the Seas. The Van-gard apparrelled in blue Coats garded with red, with Caps and Hoſe party-coloured and ſuitable (their Caps fitted to their Head-piece or Skull) were led by the Duke of *Norfolk*. The Rear in the like habit, by the Lord *Ruſſel*, lately made Lord Privy-Seal, with whom went *Henry* Earl of *Surrey* Marſhal of the Field, *John Vere* Earl of *Oxford*, the Lord *Gray* of *Wilton*, Lord *Ferrers* of *Chartley*, Lort *Mountjoy*, Sir *Francis Bryan*, and divers brave Lords, Knights, Gentlemen, and others, not a few Welſh and Iriſh filling up the numbers. Theſe Landing at *Calais* about *Whitſontide*, marched directly to *Montreuil*, where the Count *de Bures* Admiral of *Flanders* with ten thouſand Foot, and about three

1544.

July 9.

Dec. 6. 1542

June.

or

1544. or four thouſand Horſe joyning with them, they laid Siege to the Town which Monſieur *de Biez* Mareſchal of *France* defended; while, at the ſame time, the Battel, apparelled in the like Bizarre faſhion, (the Colours yet being red and yellow) paſſing over under the Conduct of *Charles* Duke of *Suffolk* the Kings Lieutenant, accompanied by *Henry Fitz-Alan* Earl of *Arundel*, Marſhal of the Field, *William Pawlet* Lord *St. John*, *Stephen* Biſhop of *Wincheſter*, Sir *Anthony Brown* Maſter of the Kings Horſe, and others, expected the Kings coming; a ſpeedy advertiſement whereof being given, he tarried not. But we will leave him a while, and ſee what the Emperor did.

Feb. 20. The Emperors Ambaſſadors formerly mentioned, being returned from our King with good ſatisfaction and great Rewards, the Diet at *Spire* began, where the Emperor, *Ferdinand*, and all the Electors in perſon did meet: the Emperors chief buſineſs was, to require Aid againſt the *Turk* and *French* their Confederate: which *Francis* alſo ſuſpecting, ſent an Herald to require a ſafe Conduct for his Ambaſſadors to come thither: but he was rejected with ill words. And now the Emperor endeavouring to divide the Proteſtants, propoſed ſo fair and advantagious a Treaty to the Duke of *Saxe*, that he obtain'd of him to acknowledge *Ferdinand* King of the Romans. Which Accord, though it were not communicated to, nor approved by the reſt of the Confederates, yet they all at laſt condeſcended to a Contribution by Poll throughout all *Germany*, for a War againſt the *Turk*, and half a years pay for four thouſand Horſe, and four and twenty thouſand Foot againſt the *French*. In regard whereof, the Emperor promiſed to commit the Buſineſs of Religion to certain good Learned men, who ſhould write ſome pious Reformation; wiſhing the Princes alſo to do the ſame: to the end, that upon compariſon of them on all ſides, ſome agreement might be made by common conſent, which ſhould be obſerved till a General Councel were held in *Germany*, or at leaſt a National: And that peace ſhould be kept in the mean while on all parts, and the rigorous Edict of *Augsburg* ſuſpended, and the Anabaptiſts puniſhed. There was an agreement alſo to meet again (which followed at *Wormbs*) and ſo the Diet ended *June* 10.

June 10. 1545. The Pope being advertiſed of theſe paſſages at *Spire*, was mightily offended, as being reſolved to tolerate no Reformation whereof himſelf was not Author. Therefore he writ a ſharp Letter to the Emperor, *Dat.* 25. *Aug.* wherein he remonſtrateth the inconveniences would follow, if any thing were eſtabliſht in Religion without his intervention: excluding further the Proteſtants wholly from having any voice therein.

April. 11. *die Paſch. Sandov.* This while the *French*, under the conduct of *Francois de Bourbon Duc d' Anguien*, obtain'd at *Seriſoles* in *Piedmont*, a great Victory againſt the *Spaniard*, commanded by the Marqueſs of *Guaſto*;

Guaſto; wherein, as the *Spaniards* conceived, was ſome fatality; their Writers obſerving, that the Battel of *Ravenna* and *Gelves* were loſt upon the ſame day. Howſoever, the *French* were not a little glorious; yet, as *Francis* knew the League betwixt our King and the Emperor, was directed chiefly againſt him, he prepared for defence: And the rather, that he had heard of a ſecond Treaty, (which was at *Gonzaga*'s coming over into *England*, as I take it) wherein both Princes had agreed to march ſtraight on to *Paris* without Beſieging any Town, or ſtaying by the way. Beſides, the Emperor had now recovered *Luxemburg*. This made *Francis* reſort to the extream Remedy in caſe of Invaſion, called the *Ban* and *Arrereban*, by which all men holding under certain Tenures, are bound for a certain time, at their own coſt and charges, to ſerve in Perſon, or at leaſt to provide (according to their degree) Horſe and Foot againſt the Enemy: which *Francis* yet converted to a Foot only, and thus he got together an Army of about Forty thouſand Foot, and Six thouſand Horſe. As this yet could not ſecure him againſt two ſuch puiſſant Adverſaries, he diſpatched ſeveral Ambaſſadors to both Princes, with power to offer great and advantageous Conditions of Peace, when either of them might be taken off. This while the Emperor (who promiſed our King to march directly to *Paris* with a great Army) had taken divers Towns in *Champagne*, as the way unto it, though loſing unfortunately *René* Prince of *Orange* at S. *Diſier*, who was the ſecond of that Family that had died in his quarrel, his Mothers Brother *Philibert de Chaalon* having been Slain at the Siege of *Florence*. And now both Armies marching ſo, as the Imperialiſts held the one ſide, and the *French* the other ſide of the River of *Marne*, news was brought to either Camp, that our Army was Landed in *France*, and had Beſieged *Boulogne*. The particularities whereof, out of a Diary extant in our Records, I thought fit to extract, and chiefly follow in this Narration.

1544. July. 1530.

Our King, who paſs'd the Seas in a Ship with Sails of Cloth of Gold, arrived at *Calais* the 14 of *July* with a Royal Train. The next day the Emperors High-Admiral attended him, and gave account in what eſtate and forwardneſs his Maſters Army and Affairs were about that time: he adviſed our King alſo to proceed to *Paris* without amuſing himſelf about any thing by the way. But he who knew well what Towns the Emperor had taken in his way, would not be diſſuaded from the ſame liberty: Therefore he ſent the Duke of *Suffolk* with Forces to inveſt *Boulogne*, in which Monſieur *de Verven* a young Gentleman, but aſſiſted by *Philip Corſe*, a brave and old Souldier, commanded. His forces conſiſted of a Gariſon of about Two thouſand five hundred paid, and as many more able Townſmen. The Duke in a ſhort ſpace took (notwithſtanding reſiſtance) the lower Town

July 14. July 15. July 21.

1544. Town, lying on the River of *Pont-de-bricq*, and the Watch-Tower before *Boulogne*, (call'd the *Old-Man*, or the *Tour d'ordre*, thought to be built by *Julius Cæsar*;) This haſtened the
July 22. Kings coming; ſo that diſpatching the Emperors Admiral, he
July 25. marched forward in this equipage, *July* 25. Firſt, the Drums, Vifleurs, Trumpeters and Officers at Arms, then the Barons, and after them Garter-Herald next before the King's Banner, after which followed *Don Bertran de la Cueva* Duke of *Alburquerque* (Commander of the Emperors Auxiliary Forces;) next whom came the Kings Majeſty armed at all pieces, upon a great Courſer; then the Lord *Herbert* bearing the Kings Head-piece and Spear, followed by the Henchmen bravely Hors'd and appointed. Marching thus out of *Calais* with a Princely Train, an hundred Horſe of *Alberquerques* Company (whereof ſix were barded with Cloth of Gold) met him: Alſo the Earl of *Eſſex* (chief Captain of the Men at Arms,) and Sir *Thomas Darcy* with many other Horſemen (who ſet themſelves in parade) ſo that the Light-Horſe and Demy-Lance went firſt, then the Guard on Foot, after them the Pike-men, amongſt whom the King rode before the men at Arms; for the Wings, fifty Archers on Horſeback, and as many Harquebuſiers were appointed, and ſo they came
July 26. to *Marquiſe*, where the Army then encamped that night. The next day (being the 26.) marching towards *Boulogne*, the Duke of *Suffolk* met the King, who took his Quarter on the North-ſide of the Town, near the Sea; divers Skirmiſhes paſſing in the mean time.

July 28. The 28. *John* Viſcount *Liſle* Lord Admiral, the Lord *Clinton*, and about 900 men, who had ſcowred the Seas towards *Scotland*, Landed in the Haven at *Boulogne*.

July 29. The 29. Sir *Thomas Poynings* came to give the King account of all that paſs'd at *Monſtreul*, and in his return took *Hardelot* Caſtle.

Auguſt 3. The third of *Auguſt* our Battery began on the Eaſt-ſide of the Town, two Batteries more being afterwards planted againſt it.

Auguſt 6. The ſixth of *Auguſt*, Monſieur *de Bures* came from *Monſtreul*; to whom our King gave a brave Courſer richly furniſh'd.

Aug. 13. The 13th. of *Auguſt* the Earl of *Hertford* came to the Camp; and divers Companies of *Almaines* and *Flemings* joyned with our men: Many Sallies and Skirmiſhes (in the which the *French*
Aug. 19. ſtill had the worſe) paſſing in the mean while. Certain *French* Troops alſo endeavouring early in the morning to get into the Town, were defeated and kill'd; ſome nevertheleſs eſcaping into it. Certain Troops of *German* Horſe came now alſo to the Camp, who were muſtered before the King the next day.

Aug. 24. The 24th. of *Auguſt*, the Duke of *Norfolk* from before *Monſtreul* came and advertiſed the King how the Affairs paſs'd there.

The

1544.

The 27th. Alarm was given upon diſcovering of ſome *French* Troops. August 27.

The 29. and 30. our men approaching ſtill to the Walls, ſhort Skirmiſhes paſt. Aug. 29.30.

Septemb. 1. our men got the Bray, not yet without loſs of brave men on both ſides. Septemb. 1.

The ſecond of *September*, ſome of our men giving a falſe Alarm to the Caſtle, at the breach which our Canon had made, other of our men brake up certain doors into the Caſtle; but they being barricado'd within, and well defended, we retired with loſs. Septemb. 2.

The third, Sir *Chriſtopher Morris* Maſter of the Ordnance, and chief director of the Batteries, was hurt with a ſhot from the Caſtle. While things paſs'd thus afore the Town, a Convoy of Victuals (being ſent from S. *Omer* to the Camp) was taken by the Enemy, and divers Imperialiſts kill'd. Nevertheleſs, our *Engliſh* ſaved and reſcued ſome part. Septemb. 3.

The 4th. of *Septemb.* the Pioneers having brought their Work to the Counter-mure of the Caſtle, two Mines were ſprung, which ſhivered the Wall; but made no great overture. Septemb. 4.

The 5th. our men ſapping the Walls, the *French* kill'd certain Pioneers. Septemb. 5.

The 6th. another Salley was made, and ſome Workmen were kill'd. Septemb. 6.

The 9th. the Town being brought almoſt to terms of yielding, certain Ambaſſadors from *Francis*, being *John* Cardinal *du Bellay*, *Pietre Raymond premier* Preſident of *Roüen*, and others, demanded Audience, their Buſineſs being to treat of a general Accord; concerning which the Earl of *Hertford*, the Biſhop of *Wincheſter*, Sir *William Paget*, and Sir *Richard Rich*, were appointed to negotiate with them at *Hardelot* Caſtle: our King not doubting in the mean time to carry the Town. Septemb. 9.

September 11. fire was given to the Mine under the Caſtle, the effect whereof the King went to ſee, not without ſome danger, the ſtones flying very far off: whereupon, our men preſently giving on, many were ſlain on both parts. Septemb. 11

The 13th. Monſieur *de* S. *Blimont*, and Monſieur *de Aix* came out of the Town, and treated of ſurrendring it. Septemb. 13

The fourteenth, it was yielded upon condition to depart with Bag and Baggage; but to leave the Victuals and Artillery behind them. It was thought yet the place might have held out longer, but that *Philip Corſe* was kill'd, with whom (it ſeemed) both their courage and good fortune ended. And ſo, about two thouſand Souldiers, and as many others going out of the Town, paſſed towards *Monſtreul* in our Kings ſight, beſides divers that eſcaped another way. And thus *Boulogne* was taken, without any mention in our Diary of Cannon of Wood coloured Sept. 14.

1544. like braſs, which ſhould be planted againſt the Caſtle, as Tradition hath it. And now an horrible Tempeſt ariſing, threw
Septem. 14. down Tents and Pavilions, and ſhiprack'd ſome part of our Navy in the Haven. Nevertheleſs, the *French* Ambaſſadors came to the Camp that night; but as their Tents were blown down likewiſe over their heads, the King courteouſly permitted them to lodge in the Town.

Septem. 18. *September* 18. the King (attended by *Alburquerque*) entred *Boulogne* triumphantly, The Duke of *Suffolk* (the Great Maſter, who was ſent before to take poſſeſſion thereof,) meeting him at the Gate, and preſenting the Keys of the Town, where, after he had viewed the places that needed fortification, he gave Audience to the *French* Ambaſſadors: But they hearing the Emperor had condeſcended to a Peace (which was publiſhed about this time) did leſs inſiſt upon a Treaty with us, and ſo
Septem. 25. returned by the way of *Heſdin Septemb.* 25. Some of the *Spaniſh* Writers yet uſe much art to palliate this abrupt Treaty: Therefore they ſay, that our King failed in his not going directly to *Paris* (as was agreed.) Never conſidering in the mean while, that the Emperor (though having a much clearer way) had taken divers Towns in his paſſage: Beſides, they alledged, that our King would keep *Boulogne* for himſelf, not regarding the common Intereſt. All yet were but pretexts: whereas the real cauſes were,

Firſt, That *Charles* had by this means taken off *Francis* from his League with the *Turk*.

Secondly, That he had engaged our King in a War againſt *France*, and thereby made himſelf the freer to purſue his own Deſigns in *Germany*, where he knew the Proteſtants would grow more refractory, as long as he was in War elſe-where.

Thirdly, That in the Wars of *Germany*, which he now intended, he thought the *French* King could more hurt him, than our King do him good.

The Articles of Peace concluded by theſe two Princes, were;

Septem. 19.

I. That betwixt the Emperor *Charles* the Fifth, and *Francis* the *French* King, and the reſt that will enter into this League, there be a firm and perpetual Peace.

II. That the Subjects of both Princes pay Tributes, Rites, and Cuſtoms of Merchandize that they were wont to pay.

III. That all places which have been taken on one part or other ſince the Truce of *Nizza*, ſhall be reſtored: and that neither part may take thence more than their Victuals or Ordnance.

IV. That the Duke of *Areſchot* ſhall enjoy his Right in the County of *Ligny*, &c.

V. That

1544.

V. That all Places and Fortreſſes that have been taken from the Duke of *Savoy* by either of the Parties, or from the Marqueſs of *Montferat*, or the Duke of *Mantua*, Duke of *Lorain*, Duke of *Stenay* in *Luxemburg*, ſhall be reſtored.

VI. That the King of *France* ſhall leave and reſtore the Abbey and Lands of *Garagana* in the Emperors hands; as alſo certain Hoſtages for performance thereof, and that he ſhall give unto the Emperor the County of *Charlois* to him and his Heirs for ever.

VII. That the Emperor and *French* King joyn together in a War againſt the *Turk*; and that the King ſhall furniſh for this purpoſe ſix hundred Lances, and ten thouſand Foot.

VIII. That *Francis* ſhall renounce all the Right he pretends to hold in the Kingdom of *Naples*, *Sicily*, *Milan*, the Contado of *Aſti*, as alſo the Right of Soveraignty he had in *Flanders*, *Artois*, *Liſle*, *Doway*, *Orchies*, *Tournay*, *Mortaigne*, and S. *Amand*. Moreover, That the King leave unto the Emperor and his Succeſſors all the right that he can pretend in the Dutchy of *Gueldres*, and County of *Zutphen*.

IX. That the Emperor likewiſe ſhall yield and paſs over all Action and Right that he may pretend unto in any State or Seigniory of the King, except the Dutchy of *Burgundy*, the Vicounty of *Aſſuone*, the Soveraignty of S. *Lawrence*, the County of *Maſcon*, *Auxerre* and *Bar* upon the River *Seine*. That he ſhould renounce alſo that Right he held in the Cities upon the Border of *Some*, *Peronne*, *Mondidier*, and *Roye*; as alſo the Counties of *Boulogne*, *Guyenne*, *Ponthen*; excepting *Therouenne*, *Han*, and other places mentioned in *Sandoual*, and whatſoever in the Eſtate and Limits of *Arras*.

X. That the Vaſſals of either Prince ſhall be fully reſtored unto all that they had, although they had ſerved on the contrary ſide.

XI. That the *Flemings* may enjoy the Heritage that their Fathers leave them, though themſelves have not been born in *France*: And that the cuſtome call'd *Droit D'aubene* ſhall not concern them.

XII. That the ancient and modern Priviledges on both parts ſhall remain in their force and vigour. To which purpoſe, the Emperor ſhall renounce (in favour of the King) the Dutchy of *Burgundy*, the Vicounty of *Auſſone*, Soveraignty of S. *Lawrence*, the County of *Auxerre*, *Maſcon*, and *Bar ſur Seine*; and within four months after the publication of this Peace, he ſhall procure that his Son *Philip*, Prince of *Spain*, ſhall confirm the ſame.

XIII. That the Emperor in favour and confirmation of the Peace, ſhall give his Daughter the Infanta *Donna Maria*, or (in caſe he do not give her) the ſecond Daughter of *Ferdinand* King of the *Romans*, that ſhe may match with *Charles* Duke of

1544. *Orleans* ſecond Son to the King: And that he declare his mind therein within the term of four months after the publiſhing of this Peace. And that if the Emperor will Marry his Daughter with Duke *Charles*, then he ſhall give them the Eſtate of *Flanders*, which at this preſent is under his Obedience, and moreover, the Dutchy of *Burgundy* and *Charolois* in Dowry; and that they ſhall enter into the poſſeſſion of theſe Eſtates after the Emperors death, to deſcend upon Duke *Charles* and his Heirs Males; and that the Emperor yet living, theſe States ſhall ſwear to the ſaid *Charles*; and that *Philip* Prince of *Spain* ſhall ſwear, confirm, and approve it.

XIV. That the Marriage being made, the Emperor ſhall conſtitute Duke *Charles* in the Government of *Flanders*.

XV. That *Francis* and his Son the Daulphin ſhall renounce for ever, and depart from any right that they held, or may pretend to hold to the Dutchy of *Milan*, or the County of *Aſti*; and that they ſhall procure within eight days after the publication hereof, the Daulphin's Brother *Charles*, and Madame *Marguerite* to confirm and approve it.

XVI. That if *Mary* Daughter to the Emperor ſhall dye without Iſſue Male, the Eſtate of *Flanders* ſhall revert to *Philip* Prince of *Spain*, and to his Heirs: And that the Duke of *Orleans* in this caſe may revive his right to the Dutchy of *Milan*, and Contado of *Aſti*: And that in this caſe the Emperor likewiſe may revive his right to the Dutchy of *Burgundy*, and the reſt formerly mentioned.

XVII. That if Duke *Charles* ſhall Marry with the ſecond Daughter of King *Ferdinando*, he ſhall give with her the Dutchy of *Milan*, with the Contado of *Aſti*, and all belonging unto them; the Emperor in the mean while retaining in his power the Fortreſſes of *Milan* and *Cremona*: and that the Emperor ſhall give to them and their Heirs Males the Title and Imperial Collation of the State thereof. And that if the Duke of *Orleans* ſhall have no Heirs Males by this Marriage, nevertheleſs, that the ſaid Title and Eſtate ſhall remain to Duke *Charles*, and to his Heirs Males by a ſecond Marriage. Provided, that the ſecond Marriage be made with the good will and conſent of the Emperor and his Brother *Ferdinand*.

XVIII. That the Marriage with the Duke of *Orleans* ſhall not be deferred more than one year after the day of publication of theſe Preſents.

XIX. That *Francis* ſhall give unto his Son the Duke in Dote the Dutchy of *Orleans* and *Bourbon*, *Chaſtellerand*, and the County of *Angouleſme*; And that if theſe Eſtates mount not to the yearly Revenue of 100000c. *livers Tournois*, that they ſhall be made up out of the Dutchy of *Alanzon*.

XX. That

1544.

XX. That if the Duke of *Orleans* ſhall have only Heirs Females, each of them ſhall have for their Portion in Marriage 100000. *livres Tournois*: And if there ſhall be but one only Daughter Heir, they ſhall give her 100000 *livres* in ready pay; And that if the Duke ſhall dye firſt, the Emperors Daughter ſhall have for her life 50000 *livres Tournois* yearly; but if it be *Ferdinand* the King of *Romans* Daughter, 30000 only.

XXI. That the King of *France* ſhall reſtore to *Charles* Duke of *Savoy* all the Lands that he hath taken from him (except *Montmelian* and *Piquerole*) in which the King may hold Gariſon all the time that the Emperor ſhall retain the Caſtles of *Cremona* and *Milan*.

XXII. That the Duke of *Vendoſme* ſhall hold the County of St. *Paul* with the ſame Right that he poſſeſs'd it before the War.

XXIII. That the King of *France* ſhall hold *Heſdin* till it be determined whoſe Right it is.

XXIIII. That in the Cauſe of *Henry de la Britt*, pretended King of *Navarre*, *Francis* ſhall not interpoſe himſelf otherwiſe than a Pacifier; nor in the War that ſhall be for this Cauſe betwixt them; nor that he ſhall take any part.

XXV. That the King ſhall give unto the Emperor a Writing in due form, in which ſhall be declared, That Madame *Jone*, Daughter to *Henry de la Britt*, doth ſwear that ſhe will not conſent unto the Marriage agreed with *William* Duke of *Cleve*; and that ſhe never conſented to it.

XXVI. That the King of *Romans* (that was the principal Perſon in compoſing this Peace) ſhall enter into, and be comprehended in it; as likewiſe all other Chriſtian Princes and Republicks that will, keeping the obedience and ſubmiſſion that of Right they owe unto the Emperor. This being ſigned and ſealed by the Emperor and *French* King, and the other above-named, theſe following Articles were added:

XXVII. That *Francis* ſhould reſtore to the Heir of *René* Prince of *Orange* the Principality thereof, in that manner that *Philibert Chaalon* enjoy'd it.

XXVIII. That to *Philip Croy* Duke of *Areſchot*, entire ſatisfaction ſhould be made for all his pretenſions, according to the laſt Treaty of *Cambray*.

XXIX. That the King ſhall reſtore to the Duke all the Goods that on his Fathers and Mothers ſide belong'd to him in *France*.

XXX. That if *Maximilian* of *Burgundy* gain his ſuit in Law, the Places belonging to him ſhall be reſtor'd.

XXXI. That the Ranſom which *George* of *Auſtria* promiſed, ſhall be annulled and made void.

And

1544. Sept. 19. And this was the Substance of the League concluded at *Crespie*, 19. of *September*, 1544. Besides which Articles, I find by some, That it was agreed, they should defend the ancient Religion, and reform the Court at *Rome*: Whereof the Pope being advertised, was not yet much troubled; as knowing their Interests so diverse, that they could not long concur. Nevertheless, he hastened the intended Council at *Trent*, both as the Emperor desired it, and as he thought it safer to reform himself, than to be reformed. Therefore, having understood that both the Emperor had commanded the Divines of *Lovain* to reduce Religion into some Method and Articles; and *Francis* also had enjoyn'd the like to the *Sorbonists*; he without more delay appointed the Council to begin *March* 15. 1545. and his Legates there to be *Giovanni Maria di Monte*, Bishop-Cardinal *di Palestina*, *Marcello Cervino* Priest-Cardinal *di Santa Croce*, *Reginald Poole* Deacon-Cardinal *di Santa Maria*, (all faithful to him, but *Marcello* most vers'd in Affairs,) with Instructions at first, only to observe the Emperors motions, and govern themselves accordingly. For as he knew the Diet at *Worms* would shortly follow, he thought it concern'd him to be attentive; and the rather, that he was jealous lest the Emperor, *French* King, and Protestants should agree upon some form of setling Religion among themselves, and not a little fearful also lest our King should intervene: Besides, it troubled him much how to comport himself with the Assembly at *Worms*, as doubting, that if he sent a Legate thither, he might be neglected: wherefore he commanded the Cardinal *Alexander Parnese* (his Grand-child) to take that place as in his way to the Emperor, and his Nuncio resident with *Ferdinand*, to go along with him to the Diet. And now to shew he proceeded really in calling a Council, he gives his Legates order to repair to *Trent*, with Authority (according to a Bull framed for that purpose) to propose, determine, and conclude all that was necessary for extirpation of Heresie, to reform the Church, to settle Peace among Christian Princes, *&c.* by the consent of the Council. Besides which, he gave them a particular *Breve* to prolong, transferre, or dissolve it, being the *Arcanum* of keeping all in his Arbitrement: Nor made he difficulty to begin with a few *Italian* Bishops only of his Party, as thinking they would be the better prepared when the rest came in.

But to return now to the Emperor: The Treaty betwixt him and *Francis* being concluded, he sent to *Spain* to be resolv'd by the Prince and his Council, which of the two Marriages were most convenient. But all came to nothing by the death of the Duke of *Orleans*, within eight months following: Howbeit, some places taken on either side were restored, and the Emperors Auxiliary Forces before *Monstreul* commanded to retire. Which being done, he went shortly after to *Bruxels*, whither his Sister the

Sept. 1545.

Queen

Queen of *France*, *Charles* Duke of *Orleans*, and the two Sons of *Ferdinand* came to him. And now our King expoſtulating the matter with the Emperor; he, for excuſing himſelf, as well as ſatisfying our King, pretended to make ſome overture concerning the receiving him into the League, as will appear hereafter; yet ſo, as it is probable he did not much labour to effect it. The Count of *Bures* and the *Germans* being now departed (but not the Duke of *Alburquerque* and ſome *Spaniards*, who (againſt the Emperors will) remained in our Camp) the King commanded the Duke of *Norfolk* (who had made Inrodes into the Country with good ſucceſs) to raiſe the Siege from before *Monſtreul*, and retire to him. And now finding the ſeaſon to be far advanced, and little elſe to be done, our King (after he had Knighted certain perſons of worth) prepared to be gone, leaving the Lord *Liſle* to command *Boulogne* with ſufficient Forces, and directions what to do upon all occaſions. And thus the 30 of *September*, he took Shipping at *Boulogne*, and returned: The news whereof, being brought the *Daulphin* (who a good while ſince had raiſed a puiſſant Army) made him to advance. But the Vant-Coureurs were no ſooner deſcried near the Town, but the two Dukes and Lord Privy Seal (who were left behind with the Army) made ready to fight, ſending firſt yet ſome to offer skirmiſh; but the *French*-men fled. Our Army hereupon marching in good order to *Calais* (where Shipping attended them) the *Daulphin* ſix days after attempted between force and ſtratagem to ſurpriſe *Boulogne*. For, being advertiſed by a Spy that our Approaches were not yet ſlighted or levelled, nor any of the three Breaches in the upper Town repair'd, and that the lower Town in many places lay open, He doubted not but to take it, and in it a great part of the Ordnance and Munition which our King left there. Thus coming near with all his Forces abought midnight, he commanded *Fonqueſolles*, *Tais*, *Monluc*, *d' Andelot*, *Noailles*, and certain *French* and *Italian* Troops under *P. de Maria* and others, in ſufficient number, to give on. Theſe with their ſhirts over their Armour, coming ſuddenly near the lower Town, ſent ſome before, who (as if in favour of us they would have given the Alarm) cryed *Bowes*, *Bowes*; hoping thus, that our men, ſuſpecting nothing, would open the gates, and thereby give them means to ſeiſe on it till the reſt did enter. The Invention was good, and had it been handſomly purſued, might have endangered us. But *Tais* and the *Italians* entering the lower Town in greater number than that they could be ſuppoſed people in their ſhirts, that roſe to give their Fellows warning, Alarm was given. Nevertheleſs, they ſo ſurpriſed our Sentinels, as they killed all they met, and rifled the Houſes without much oppoſition, becauſe the Pioneers (chiefly) and Victuallers of the Camp (who had no Arms to defend themſelves) were quartered

1544.
Sept. 25.
Sept. 30.
Octob. 1.
Octob. 3.
Octob. 9.
Octob. 9.

1544. tered there; our Souldiers ſcarce ſufficing to defend the Breaches and Gaps of the upper Town. Howbeit, divers of our men eſcaping, ran to the gate of the upper Town, and there demanded Arms wherewith to defend themſelves; which therefore were caſt to them over the Walls in ſuch quantity, as now taking courage, they fell on the *French* and *Italians* with that fury, as they kill'd Monſieur *de Fouqueſolles*, and divers others who reſiſted, and chaſed the reſt, wounding Monſieur *de Tais*, and taking divers Priſoners: And this was the ſucceſs of the attempt on the upper parts of low *Boulogne*. As for that towards the Sea, which *Monluc* undertook, not without hope (it ſeems) to fire ſome of our Ships, the *French* proſper'd as little, as being kill'd and taken in great number: Only for *Monluc* himſelf, it may be doubted where he was in either of theſe Fights, ſince he makes no particular mention of them, nor gives any good account of his Perſon. For though he ſaith, he came to the *Italians*, that made a ſtand near the Church, it muſt be before our men fell on them. As for his Allegation, that ſome of the *Engliſh* ran away, they were no other than ſome part of the *Corps de Gard*, which went to advertiſe the reſt; and for his telling the Colours of our Pioneers Clothes (for teſtimony that he ſaw them in the dark) it makes little for him, ſince with more honour he might have told the colours of our Souldiers Liveries, which were far different, had he ſeen them. Howſoever, he might ſtay ſafely in the lower Town after the ſlaughter committed by *Tais* and the *Italians*, till our men (as is before-mentioned) returning with Arms from the upper Town, gave them the chaſe; who yet could not have defeated them entirely, had not thoſe of the upper Town ſallied forth of their Breaches at laſt, to ſecond them. A little before which time, *Monluc*, ſuſpecting (it ſeems) that the *Engliſh* (upon the Alarm given) would fall on him, deſired (as he confeſſed himſelf) the *Italians* to make good their ſtand, while he kept one of the Breaches from being poſſeſſed by the *Engliſh*. But our *Engliſh* now charging *Monluc*, went further than it or the Town. Howbeit, to ſhew his care, he ſaith that he ſent an Horſeman back, to know what was become of the *Italians*. But he returning anſwer, that they were in the Church, or dead, *Monluc* and ſome other *French* provided for themſelves. For now Sir *Thomas Poynings* with a freſh Troop of *Engliſh* out of the upper Town had charged them. *D' Andelot*, *Noailles*, and divers others hereupon were adviſed by *Monluc* to ſave themſelves; as alſo certain Enſigns, who following his counſel, got up the Hill towards their Army, while himſelf and a few with him, paſſed a ſhallow water, and ſo eſcaped by a longer, but a ſafer way. And thus the *Daulphin*, who prepared to ſend ſuccours, meeting the Run-aways, deſiſted, and the Town was ſaved. But *Monluc*,

Comment. de Menluc.

to

to defend himſelf, ſaith, That for all the fear, he kept his wits ſtill about him, or elſe he had been in danger never to have been Mareſchal of *France*. And to commend (it ſeems) his direction in running away, he ſhews how neceſſary it is for a man in danger not to be afraid; and ſays, that all the Enſigns had been loſt, had he not adviſed them to be gone; and that his counſel preſerved all: And ſuch Rodomontades as theſe did this Gaſcon uſe, who (it ſeems) was a braver man by day, than by night. All which I have more particularly obſerved out of our Hiſtories and Records, becauſe, notwithſtanding his ſhameful flight, he ſtrives ſo much to vilifie our Nation. But how he behaved himſelf in this Action, may appear by the *Daulphin*'s jearing him at his return, as himſelf confeſſeth; it being certain, that though he came in later than his Fellows, it was not becauſe he ſtayed longer there, but that he went a further way about. But *Monluc* to excuſe himſelf, ſaid, It was the *Daulphin*'s fault, that he came not in with his whole Army: and therein he ſpoke rationally; for had the firſt Attempt been well ſeconded, he muſt have carryed the Town in all likelihood, our breaches being open, and men ſurpriſed. Nor had he better fortune at *Guiſnes*, and other places which the *French* hoped to take in; for being beaten thence, he was conſtrained with his Army to retire, without doing more for this year. Nevertheleſs, *Francis* had recourſe to thoſe wonted Arts, by which as much as by Arms, he always advantaged himſelf: Therefore he deſired that his Ambaſſadors and the Emperors might meet with our King's at *Calais*, to Treat of a general Accord. Which offer being accepted, the Earl of *Hertford*, and Sir *William Paget* were ſent thither: But their deſire being, that *Boulogne* might be firſt reſtored, the Earl of *Hertford* replyed, he had no ſuch Commiſſion, and ſo broke off the Treaty: The Imperialiſts ſeeming nothing ſcandalized, that it had no better effect.

1544.

Octob. 12.

While Affairs paſſed thus in *France*, *Barbaroſſa* did much ſpoil on the Coaſts of *Italy*; taking Towns, and carrying Captives of both Sexes to the Grand Seigneur at *Conſtantinople*, where he ſhortly after died of a Calenture, being above Eighty years old: a great Age for ſuch a Pirate as ſpent almoſt all his time in fighting either with men, or the fierceſt Elements. There happened alſo in *July*, this year, upon the Coaſts of *Gallicia*, a Sea-fight between the *Spaniſh* and *French*, in which the *Spaniard*, under the command of Don *Alvaro Bazan* (Father of the famous Marqueſs *de Santa Cruz*) was ſuperiour, three thouſand *French* (as *Sandoval* hath it) being kill'd.

July 25.

The Emperor now in his wonted neceſſity for mony, was adviſed by his Council to ſeiſe on the Revenues of the Church: For which alſo he obtain'd a *Breve* from the Pope. Yet, as he would hear what the Religious Perſons of that Kingdom could

Sandov. l. 26.
Sand. l. 26.

1544. object, he admitted their Deputies, who ſaid, the right of the Church-Goods was rather divine than humane; That the Church was Chriſts Spouſe, and ſhould be decked glorioufly; That ancient *Rome* was Miſtris of the World heretofore, by S. *Auguſtine's* confeſſion, becauſe the People were ſo devout to their gods, and ſo much honour'd Religion: Which reaſons yet (it was thought) would not have prevail'd, had he not found other ways to have ſupplyed his wants. Nevertheleſs, his Son *Philip* the Second ſeiſed on them, though in his Will he commanded them to be reſtored.

L.5.de Civit. Dei.

The Glorious return of our King from *Boulogne* gave much ſatisfaction to his Subjects: yet, as he had drawn a puiſſant Enemy againſt him, he took order to fortifie his Kingdom. And becauſe the River of *Thames* was chiefly to be ſecured, he caus'd ſome Fortifications to be raiſed at *Graveſend*, as alſo at *Tilbury*, and afterwards at *Dover*, *Portſmouth*, and many other places: he took alſo an exact account of all his Ordnance, which he diſtributed in the moſt neceſſary places, leſt upon an Invaſion, his Magazine being in the Tower of *London* only, the remedy ſhould come too late. I find alſo by our Records, that there were certain ſmall Pieces of Artillery, not unlike our Drakes, for defence of his Waggons, of his own Invention, as alſo cettain forms of Bulwarks; for he was a great Souldier, and beſides, of a ſingular capacity in apprehending all the new devices which in theſe kinds now daily appeared: the Piſtol, among others, coming this year firſt in requeſt among the *French* Horſe; but not the *Spaniſh*, whoſe manner is, not to leave their ancient forms eaſily, when yet it were for their advantage.

Let us look a while on *Scotland*.

June. About the time that *Lenox*, on our Kings part, invaded the Weſt of *Scotland*, as is formerly related, our men on the other ſide entred the Country, and took *Jedburgh*, *Kelſo*, and other places, and then *Coldingham*: which being advertiſed to the Governour and Cardinal, they brought an Army of about Eight thouſand, and ſome Artillery, to recover the Town. But the Governour ſuſpecting (as it was thought) ſome treachery among his men, poſted away ſuddenly: which cauſed ſuch a conſternation in the *Scots*, that they likewiſe were ready to Disband, and leave the Artillery then planted in Battery againſt the Steeple, had not the Earl of *Anguis* ſtaid ſome, and with their help conducted it ſafe to *Dunbar*. This news was brought to our King at his return from *Boulogne*; at what time alſo the Earl of *Lenox* came to Court, and acquainted him with his late Actions, and the Affairs of *Scotland*: whereupon, the ſaid Earl, the Lord *Dacres*, and Sir *Thomas Wharton* were diſpatched thither with competent Forces. For, though at the requeſt of the

the *Scots* by Sir *George Meldre* (ſent to him when he was before *Boulogne*) King *Henry* had granted Truce for a time; yet being newly provoked, he reſolved a War. Theſe entring *Scotland* on the Weſt Border, took *Dunfriſe*, and brought home great ſpoyls; conſtraining alſo the People of thoſe parts to condeſcend to a Treaty, and give Hoſtages for the obſerving thereof. Our men puffed up with this good ſucceſs, reſolve upon another Expedition. Whereupon, Sir *Ralph Evers* (now Lord *Evers*, and Warden of the Eaſt-Marches) and Sir *Bryan Layton*, this Winter ſpoyling *Tiviot-dale*, and other places, and afterward returning to *London*, required a reward for their Service: which, by the Duke of *Norfolk*'s advice, being as much ground as they could win from the *Scots*, they entred the next Spring (1545.) but were defeated, and ſlain in great number at *Ancram*; and among them *Evers* himſelf, a brave Lord: Divers alſo were taken Priſoners, and particularly, one *Read*, Alderman of *London*; which, that it may not ſeem ſtrange, I have thought fit to tell the occaſion: Our King, for ſupply of his wants, having appointed certain Commiſſioners to receive a Benevolence from his Subjects, they began at *London* with the Lord Mayor and Aldermen; among whom, *Read* refuſing to pay his ſhare, was ſent in this Expedition, with ſo ill ſucceſs to it and himſelf, as at laſt, he paid more than the money impoſed on him, in a Ranſom. As for others, they excuſed themſelves by their penury, in regard the King had taken up ſo much Corn from them for his uſe this year, without repaying the price as yet; ſo that in effect this Benevolence paſſed with much grudging.

1544.

Mar. 1545.

January.

The *Daulphin* and *French* Army being retired, as is formerly related, Monſieur *de Biez* Mareſchal of *France*, having gathered ſome Fourteen thouſand men together, encamped the 26th. of *January*, 1544. near *Portet*, a little Creek of the Sea, about half a mile from *Boulogne*; yet as he had the River of *Pont-de-Brique* betwixt him and the Town, it was not eaſie to diſlodge him. His deſign was to build a Fort there, for holding the Haven of *Boulogne* in ſubjection: which the Earl of *Hertford* underſtanding, aſſembled Four thouſand Foot, and Seven hundred Horſe out of the Gariſons adjoyning, and with theſe conſtrained *Biez* to retire to *Hardelot*; by the way charging him often with that fury, as he kill'd many, took two Braſs Pieces, and five Iron, and much Bagge, and with it ſome of Monſieur *de Biez* his Armour. And now *Francis* finding that theſe enterpriſes ſucceeded not, makes huge preparations to recover the Town; hoping together to win *Calais*, and wholly to expulſe the *Engliſh* from thoſe Parts. Therefore he ſent to *Scotland* Monſieur *de la Broſſe*, and afterwards the Seigneur *de Lorges*, with an Army to joyn with the *Scots* for invading our Northern parts. On

Jan. 26.

Holinſhead.

1544. the other ſide, that he might ſhew how ſtrong he was by Sea, he commanded a great Fleet to be equipped; for which purpoſe *Paulin* (his old Negotiator in *Turkey*) brought with him five and twenty Gallies from the *Levant*: The Pope not omitting alſo to furniſh his part: So that he had in all an Hundred and Fifty great Ships, and Sixty of the leſſer ſort, beſides Gallies; his deſign being to keep *Boulogne* from being relieved by Sea, while his Land-Forces beſieged it. He thought fit to begin yet with erecting the Fort before *Boulogne*, which being to be finiſhed (as was promiſed him) by Monſieur *de Biez*, before mid-*Auguſt*, he meant with a puiſſant Army to entrench himſelf before the Town: having for this purpoſe ſent to leavy Twelve thouſand Lanskeneets, and Six thouſand *Italians*; with which, and his own Forces, he doubted not to recover all the Places we held in *France*. Laſtly, for the more encouraging his men, he reſolved in Perſon to be in, or at leaſt, not far from his Army. Coming thus to *Havre de Grace*, and commanding his Fleet to ſet Sail, his faireſt Ship (being of eight hundred Tun) taking fire, ſuddenly was burnt; yet the reſt went on, under the command of Monſieur *d' Annebault* Admiral of *France*. Coming thus to S. *Hellens* Point, on our Coaſt, *Paulin*, with four Gallies was ſent to diſcover the Iſle of *Wight*, and the countenance of our men: Whereupon, Sixty of our Ships coming out of the Haven of *Portſmouth* in good order, exchanged ſome
July 18. ſhot with the *French*, till night parted them. The next day, the Ship which carried their Money, ſank, the Money being hardly ſaved. But one of our Ships through accident was loſt. Our King this while being come to *Portſmouth*, as knowing of what conſequence the place was, Aſſembles men from all parts under the command of his Lieutenant the Duke of *Suffolk*: The *French* yet Landed in three ſeveral places in the Iſle of *Wight*; but were as ſoon repuls'd: Whereupon, *d' Annebault* having the wind fair, adviſed concerning fighting with us in the Haven at *Portſmouth*: But the channel being thought too narrow for them to enter in any great number, they conſulted of taking the Iſle of *Wight*: but as it was requiſite again to build many Forts for keeping thereof, they found that both men and time would be wanting. Howſoever, they reſolved to take in freſh water; which the Chevalier *d' Auxe* with ſome men attempting, was kill'd, and they routed; as alſo ſome others who Landed afterwards in *Suſſex*. Theſe bad ſucceſſes made the *French* croſs over to *Portet* near *Boulogne*, where they Landed Four thouſand Souldiers, and all the Pioneers which they brought with them to fortifie thoſe places they ſhould have taken in *England*. And now the wind blowing from the Land, they ſet Sail again for our Coaſt; which our King underſtanding, commanded his Fleet (being an hundred Sail) to offer Fight to them;

them; which the *French* alſo had charge to accept; their King not fearing to loſe his hired Ships, as long as he had money to procure others: The only difficulty was, in regard of the currents, how to uſe both Ships and Gallies together; for in calms, when the Gallies made way, the Ships could not ſtir; and without them they durſt not encounter us. And now the *French* Fleet having gotten a ſmall wind, and their Gallies coming on, made towards us: but the wind ſlackning again, their Gallies fell off; wherewith the wind coming about, and our Fleet inveſting them, an hot Fight of two hours paſſed betwixt them: but the Night parting them, the *French* retired ſuddenly to *Havre de Grace*, and appear'd no more. Our Admiral yet went to *Treport* in *Normandy*, where Landing, he burnt the Suburbs, took divers Barks out of the Haven, and ſo return'd. *D' Annebault*, as ſoon as he came on Shore, went to the King at *Arques* the ſixteenth of *Auguſt*, expecting the Fort ſhould be finiſhed before *Boulogne*; but it was begun eight days only before, and in another place, call'd *Outreau*, near low *Boulogne*, whence they might indeed annoy the Town, but not command the entry into the Haven. But Monſieur *de Biez* aſſuring the King yet it would be put in defence within eight days more, the *French* Army marched on, being Four and Thirty thouſand Foot, and Two thouſand Horſe, who ſhortly after encamped upon Mount *Lambert*, being ſo near *Boulogne*, as they could ſhoot into it with their great Ordnance. The King yet was not in the Army, nor nearer than the Abby of *Forreſt Monſtier*, which was Eleven Leagues off, whither his Son *Charles* Duke of *Orleans* coming, died (as is before touched) of a Peſtilent Fever. This made him ſend ſhortly after *Claude d' Annebault*, and others, to the Emperor, to renew his Alliance ſome other way. But the Emperor, who had now engaged our King and *Francis* to a War, and therein reveng'd himſelf on both, though it ſafer to be Neuter, than to declare himſelf either way: Howbeit, he told the *French* Ambaſſadors, that he would not begin with their Maſter. In the mean while, the *Engliſh* Gariſon in *Calais* and *Guiſnes*, making continual Inrodes, kill'd Monſieur *Dampierre*, and defeated his men; which, together with the dry anſwer received from the Emperor, made *Francis* to retire to an Abbey near *Amiens*; his Army yet continuing before *Boulogne*, without adventuring to lay cloſe Siege unto it. Only, as all the young Nobles and Gallants of the *French* Court came thither, divers skirmiſhes paſſed; in one of which, *Francis* Duke *d' Aumale*, eldeſt Son to the Duke of *Guiſe*, received a blow with a Lance between the Eye and the Noſe, which entered (as the *French* Writers have it) half a foot into his head, and there broke: Nevertheleſs, he coming off, endured the taking it out, and was recovered; divers others of their principal Perſons yet

1544.
Auguſt.
Sept. 9.
Aug. 16.
Septemb. 9.
Novemb. 1.
Octob.

1544. yet being killed. And now our King reſolving to diſlodge them, ſent into *Germany* to levy Ten thouſand Lanskneets, and Four thouſand Horſe: who thereupon coming to *Fleurines* in the Country of *Leige*, required their pay, as was promiſed; but it not coming at the time appointed, they ſeiſed on our Commiſſioners, and returned, without permitting them to depart till they were ſatisfied. This while Monſieur *de Biez*, being commanded to enter *Terre d' Oye*, took a little piece of fortified ground; which our men coming to recover, were encountred by his Horſe, and defeated: yet ſo, as (though far leſs in number) they killed many of their Enemies.

The Gariſon of *Boulogne* finding the *French* Army thus departed, enterpriſed the taking of the Fort; but it was well defended, and they with ſome loſs conſtrained to retire. The *French* Army alſo, through the much Rain that fell, was forced to leave *Terre d' Oyre*, being a marſh ground, and full of deep ditches: Beſides, our men gathered towards them. And now this puiſſant Army returning toward *Boulogne*, did not think fit to Beſiege it: which may ſeem the ſtranger, in that we neither had Forces in a readineſs to Fight with them, nor ſo ſtrong a place to defend, but that half their Army (according to reaſon of War) might have carryed it in a ſhort ſpace: Therefore they encamped themſelves only afore *Portet*, until the Fortification were finiſhed. This ſlackneſs made our men ſo adventrous, that an Enterpriſe of theirs ſucceeded ill, as ſhall be told the year following.

July 2. Monſieur *de Lorges* (formerly mentioned) having brought his Auxiliary Forces (being Five thouſand men) *July* 2. 1545. into *Scotland*, many Incurſions were made. Their Army yet incamped no nearer on the *Engliſh* ſide than *Twede*; yet as they

Auguſt paſſed it often, much harm was done. Whereupon the King ſent the Earl of *Hertford* with Twelve thouſand men to *Scotland*; who deſtroying all the Towns on the middle Marches, paſſed thence to the Weſt, and committed great ſpoils: In re-

September. quital whereof, the *Scots* ſhortly after attempted to enter *England* on the Eaſt Borders; but were defeated, and many made Priſoners, and among them the Lord *Humes* his Son, and a *French* Commander; and not long after the Lord *Maxwel's* Son: But they had their revenge, for Five hundred *Engliſh* attempting the Weſt Borders of *Scotland*, for the moſt part were taken or ſlain.

While our King was thus in War with *France* and *Scotland*, he and the Emperor were not in very good terms; Ships being arreſted on either ſide; upon occaſion (as I gather) that a *Spaniſh* Ship, coming from St. *Domingo* in the Weſt-Indies, was taken by the *Engliſh*. But we had likewiſe our complaints. Concerning which therefore a Meeting was appointed at *Borborch*

in *Flanders*; alſo about taking certain Impoſts raiſed by the Emperor, contrary to the old Treaty of Commerce; which yet was little regarded, the Emperor endeavouring now nothing more than to get money. Which the Proteſtants underſtanding, and fearing he would make uſe thereof to invade them, did eaſily accept an intimate requeſt from *Francis*, for mediating a Peace betwixt our King and him: Whereupon, they ſent to *France*, *Veninger*, *Bruno*, and *John Sturmius*; and to *England*, *Bambach* and *John Sleidan* the Hiſtorian, who at length obtaining that Commiſſioners on both ſides ſhould meet near *Ardres*, two months were ſpent in unuſeful Propoſitions; ſo that they returned without effecting any thing. Our King, beſides that he would have *Ardres* for quitting the Arrears of his Penſion, being neither willing to reſtore *Boulogne*, nor to ſuffer the *Scots* to be comprehended in the Treaty. 1545. July 1495. Novemb. Jan. 1546.

And now the Emperor fearing leſt a Peace ſhould be made without him, thought fit to mediate (at leaſt in appearance) an Accord, on this occaſion; King *Henry* having ſent the Biſhops of *Wincheſter* and *Weſtminſter*, and Sir *Edward Carne* to clear ſome Articles of the Treaty of 1543. with *Charles*, *Francis* about the ſame time had ſent the Admiral *d' Annebault* thither, as is before related. Whereupon therefore he propoſed a General Treaty, though faintly, and in ſuch terms that it took no effect. Novemb. Feb. 11. 154$\frac{2}{3}$.

This while, Arch-Biſhop *Cranmer* making his advantage of *Wincheſters* abſence, endeavoured a further Reformation; which alſo our King once condeſcended to, and gave order for in great part: but before it was brought into Act, the King received Letters from him, That the League mediated by the Emperor would not proceed, if he ſuffered any Innovation; and ſo nothing was done. Little more happened this year worth relation (for whoe events) beſides the Parliament buſineſs (whereof hereafter) but the Death of *Charles Brandon* Duke of *Suffolk*, Great Maſter of the Kings Houſhold, a right hardy Gentleman (as our Hiſtorians term him;) yet withal ſo diſcreet and affable, as he was beloved of all ſorts, and his Death much lamented. Our King, for his more honour, cauſing him (at his own charge) to be honourably buryed at *Windſor*. *Fox.* Auguſt.

I ſhall return now to declare the Proceedings in matter of Religion among the Germans, *and in the Councel of* Trent.

The Emperor with much induſtry and cunning having procured a War between our King and *Francis*, did now leave them to decide their own Affairs, while himſelf attended wholly his occaſions in *Germany*; his deſigns there being much facilitated by the receſſion of the *Turk*, who leaving the

1545. the purſuit of his Conqueſts in theſe Northern Parts, meant to dilate himſelf in the warmer Climes of *Aſia*: So that the Emperor having no more buſineſs, accounted this year the moſt quiet of many that had preceded: though yet he were not exempt from ſundry Cares, ſome Wars, and the Gout. And now, as he pretended principally to compoſe the differences of Religion, many Offices were paſſed with the Pope for advancing the Council; which had its beginning and progreſs after this manner:

The thirteenth of *March*, 1545. the Cardinal *del Monte* and Cardinal *Santa Croce* being received by the Cardinal of *Trent*, made their publick entry into the City: But no Prelate being yet come, they ſent to *Rome*, to deſire that their reſtriction in the Bull (to the conſent of the Council) might be taken away, and abſolute power given to propoſe, determine, *&c.* as is before recited: which the Pope granted. The place choſen was the Cathedral Church, capable of about 400 Perſons. Ten days after, *Diego de Mendoza* the Emperors Ambaſſador in *Venice* * came, and * ſhewed his Inſtructions; being, Firſt, to promiſe that the *Spaniſh* Biſhops ſhould ſhortly be preſent: Secondly, to procure, that Reformation in Diſcipline and manners ſhould be handled before Points of Doctrine. The Legates hereupon ſent to the Pope to have publick Diſpatches (when occaſion were) to ſhew *Mendoza*, and other private Letters to follow. The eighth of *April*, *Ferdinand*'s Ambaſſadors came, the number of Biſhops yet being very few. The firſt Controverſie was concerning the *Spaniſh* Ambaſſadors pretence to precede the Cardinal of *Trent*: but the buſineſs was ordered ſo as no advantage appear'd. This preparative for a Council being divulged, produced divers and contrary effects; ſome reſolving to believe all they ſaid, others little or nothing, others again intending to diſtinguiſh thoſe parts that pleaſed them, from the reſt. Howſoever, the Proteſtants in the Diet of *Worms* proteſted againſt it, as partial and factious: while *Francis*, for the more endearing it, proceeded with Arms againſt the few *Waldenſes* that remained in his Kingdom, in that violent manner, as without other warning or inſtruction, he permitted his Souldiers (having firſt committed all inſolence in the mountain parts where they dwelt, toward *Provence* and *Languedoc*) to deſtroy more than four thouſand Perſons which made no reſiſtance. In the mean time, the Cardinal of *Trent*, for the more ſecurity of his City, defired a Gariſon from the Pope: but was anſwered, That the Council could not then ſeem free; which more imported him, than the ſafety of the City did the Cardinal. Matters being thus advanced, Cardinal *Pool* came, and ſpeech was had of opening the Council. But as the Popes deſigns tended another way, he ſent the Cardinal *Aleſſandro*

* March 23.
* March 27.
April 8.
March 24.
Soave.

Aleſſandro Farneſe, his Grand-child, to the Emperor now at *Worms*, to offer a large Contribution of Men and Money for ſuppreſſing of Hereticks; promiſing alſo to procure help from other *Italian* Princes; and to proceed with Spiritual and Temporal Arms. He repreſented alſo how ill the Pope took the late ſpeech of a National Council, and that the Emperor in this Diet had promiſed another for the ſetling of Religion, in caſe the Council of *Trent* took no order therein; in the mean while proteſting, that he would ſooner yield up his Keys to Saint *Peter*, than ſuffer ſuch an affront. Beſides which, he had private Inſtructions to procure that the right of Inheritance of *Parma* and *Piacenza* might be inveſted in his Brother *Ottavio*, Son to *Pietro Aloyſio Farneſe* (natural Son to the Pope) now Duke thereof, in regard the ſaid *Ottavio* had Married *Marguerite* natural Daughter to the Emperor: which at laſt alſo, upon the exchange of *Camerino*, was granted. And now towards the end of *May*, there were twenty Biſhops, five Generals of Orders, and one Auditor *de la Ruota* aſſembled; yet as the Council began not, the Pope being deſirous firſt to ſee the ſucceſs of the Diet at *Worms*, the Biſhops deſired to be gone, but were not permitted. Nevertheleſs, *Mendoza* returned to his former Ambaſſage at *Venice*, deſiring nothing might be done in his abſence. The Biſhops alſo weary of their ſtay, or expence, reſolved at laſt to depart: which the Pope taking notice of, diſtributed ſome money among them. This while *Herman* Arch-Biſhop of *Cologne*, having made a private Reformation of Religion in his Dominions, by the means of *Martin Bucer* and *Philip Melanchthon*, his Clergy oppugning it, complained to the Emperor, who cited the Arch-biſhop: with which, though the Pope was offended, yet he did not ſo much expoſtulate the matter with the Emperor, as deſire to conſerve his own Authority: Therefore he cited the Arch-biſhop too.

1545

May.

1543.

1544. June.

July 18.

And now in the Diet at *Worms* the Emperor required aid againſt the *Turk*; which the Proteſtants refuſed (as fearing it would be imployed againſt them) unleſs firſt good ſecurity were given for Peace in the Empire, and that this Council at *Trent* ſhould be no prejudice to them. But to this the Emperor anſwered, That he could not exempt them from the authority of the Council (eſpecially, being call'd for their ſakes;) yet if they had any juſt objections againſt it, that they ſhould come and produce them openly in the Council, and they ſhould have an equal hearing. But the Princes and confederate Cities continuing to except againſt it, proteſted thoſe were not to judge of their Cauſe, who had already condemned it: Therefore, if a Council were had, they ſhould make one part, and Pope and Roman Catholicks the other: And as for the manner and order, that the Emperor and Princes ſhould be Judges; but for the

Sleid.

1544. merit of the Cauſe, that it ſhould be determined only by the word of God. The Emperor finding thus no likelihood of Peace, diſſembled his diſpleaſure till he had made peace with the *Turk*, (which he did by the means of *Francis*, this year, in *October*.) And ſo the Diet ended the fourth of *Auguſt*, with a Decree to hold another at *Ratisbonne* in *January* following. For which purpoſe there ſhould be a Conference of four Doctors and two Judges on either part, in *December*, to prepare Matters of Religion againſt that time. And now the Proteſtants put forth a Book, in which they again rejected the Council, ſaying, it was not aſſembled in *Germany* (as was promiſed,) but in *Trent*, and by the Popes power and command, without other pretext that it could be thought to be in *Germany*, than becauſe the Biſhop of *Trent* was a Prince of the Empire: Beſides, that the Pope (being a party) ſhould not preſide in it. Therefore, that the form and manner of holding a Council ſhould be firſt diſcuſſed, and whence it had its Authority. But this reference of the Emperor to a future Diet, as it diſpleaſed the Pope and his Legates, ſince the Council was imminent, and appointed for deciding Controverſies; ſo it made the Biſhops again take leave to be gone: and in effect, by the end of *September* few remained. The Pope finding theſe difficulties, knew not well what to reſolve; yet when motion was made for holding it in *Germany*, he refuſed, but ſent to the Emperor to adviſe with him concerning the opening the Council, or ſuſpending it, or transferring it to *Italy*. The Emperor (as Affairs then ſtood) not much approving any of theſe Propoſitions, at laſt (in *October*) gave conſent the Council ſhould open: Yet ſo, as they ſhould treat of matter of Reformation, and not of Doctrine, for fear of provoking the Proteſtants. This, again, gave the Pope no little jealouſie, leſt the Emperor would make his Eccleſiaſtical Authority obnoxious to the Diet and Conference. Howbeit, he commanded the Council ſhould begin the thirteenth of *December*: The *French* Prelates, being but three, having written to their King moſt of theſe paſſages, were ſent for home; yet, at the interceſſion of the other Biſhops, two remained. The thirteenth of *December* being come, the Legates (after a ſolemn Faſt and Proceſſion) meeting in the Cathedral, opened the Council, declaring, that it was aſſembled for three cauſes: 1. Deſtroying Hereſie. 2. Reforming Diſcipline. 3. Setling Peace: exhorting the Biſhops to labour ſeriouſly herein. After which, the Emperors Inſtructions to *Mendoza* (formerly mentioned) being again exhibited, the Legates ſaid, they would adviſe thereof: and ſo appointing the next Seſſion to be held *January* ſeventh following, they aroſe, and preſently ſent to the Pope, declaring what was done, and deſiring to know how they ſhould begin; whether with Hereſies, and if ſo, whether they ſhould

Sleid. Concil. Trid.

Auguſt 4.

September.

Octob. 31.

Decemb. 13.

1545.

ſhould touch the Hereſies, or Perſons, or both? whether they ſhould ſend forth a Declaration that the Council was begun, and invite the Princes and Nations that would, to come? whether they ſhould haſten or delay their Proceedings? in what manner the Suffrages were to be collected? *&c.* The eighteenth of *December* they met in Congregation, and began to treat of a Reformation of Manners, Habits, *&c.* The Pope hearing thus the Council was opened, writes, That concerning the matters to be handled, he is not yet reſolved; in the mean time, that they ſhould inſiſt on the uſual Preambles: That they ſhould follow in their manner of Suffrages, the laſt *Lateran* Council: That they ſhould invite no Prince or Prelate, ſince the Indiction of the Council was ſufficient: As for the charges of the Biſhops, ſome Exemption from payment of Tenths was granted, and ſome other Benefits, and money given to the poorer ſort: All which I have ſet down with more particularity, that it may appear, both what a ſlow and uncertain beginning this great Council had, and what a different end it took, from that it now ſeem'd to promiſe. Decemb. 18.

I will conclude this year with the buſineſs of our Parliament; which began the 23 of *November*, 1545. Which, as it was the laſt the King call'd; ſo, ſupply of money being the principal Affair, it ſeem'd to comprehend all that could be given, at leaſt of other mens; neither was there other excuſe than the Kings neceſſities, which every man muſt think violent, when they trenched upon the reverend Foundations of Colledges, Free-Chappels, Chantries, Hoſpitals, Fraternities, Brotherhoods, Guilds, and ſtipendiary Prieſts which had continuance in perpetuity, together with all their Manors, Lands, and Hereditaments, which now the Parliament committed to the Kings diſpoſe, and that they ſhould be in the order and ſurvey of the Court of Augmentation; the Right of others being yet ſaved, and divers Proviſions made. For motive whereof, the Kings great charges in his Wars with *France* and *Scotland* were alledged; as alſo the abuſes of the Rulers and Governours of the ſaid Colledge, *&c.* Upon which therefore, and his ſolemn promiſe to the Parliament, that all ſhould be done to the glory of God, and common profit of the Realm, the Act paſſed. November.

In another Act it was declared, how offenders in Uſury ſhould be puniſhed; and a certain proportion of Ten in the Hundred was limited. Which yet, had it been lower, would have made Lands more valuable, Merchandize and Victuals cheaper, and adventuring by Sea more frequent: That lazy way of thriving being more oppoſite than any thing elſe to that Induſtry by which all Kingdoms ſubſiſt and flouriſh.

That Doctors of the Civil Law, although Lay-men, whether Married or Unmarried, might exerciſe all man-

1545. ner of Eccleſiaſtical Juriſdiction, to which they ſhall be deputed.

That two Churches, being not above a mile diſtant, and one of them not above the yearly value of ſix pound, may be united into one.

That where a full Jury did not appear, a *Tales* might be granted *de Circumſtantibus*: And this was much for the expedition of Juſtice.

That whereas the Lord Chancellor of *England*, Lord Treaſurer, Lord Preſident of the Kings Council, Lord Privy Seal, and the two chief Juſtices, or five, or four, or three of them ſhould have power by their diſcretions to ſet the priſes of all kind of Wines, as by the Act 28 *Hen.* 8. 14. appeareth: the time was now ſpecified to be betwixt the twentieth of *November* and laſt of *December*: And that if any Wine-ſeller ſhould ſell his Wine in groſs at any other price, That the Mayor, Bailiffs, Aldermen, *&c.* may enter into his houſe, and ſell it according to the rate ſet down.

A Subſidy alſo was granted by the Spiritualty of ſix ſhillings the Pound, and by the Temporalty of two ſhillings eight pence the Pound in Goods, and four ſhillings the Pound in Lands, to be paid all within two years. And ſo the twenty-fourth of *December* the Parliament was prorogued: At which time, the Speaker of the Lower Houſe making an eloquent Oration, the King in Perſon made this enſuing Anſwer; being the more memorable, for that it was both full of good intention and advice, and the laſt he ever ſpake in that place.

Decemb. 24.

ALthough my Chancellor for the time being hath before this time uſed very eloquently and ſubſtantially to make Anſwer to ſuch Orations as have been ſet forth in this High Court of Parliament; yet is he not ſo able to open and ſet forth my mind and meaning, and the ſecrets of my heart, in ſo plain and ample manner, as I my ſelf am, and can do. Wherefore, I taking upon me to anſwer your eloquent Oration (Mr Speaker) ſay, That where you, in the name of our wel-beloved Commons, have both praiſed and extolled me for the notable qualities that you have conceived to be in me, I moſt heartily thank you all, that you have put me in remembrance of my duty, which is to endeavour my ſelf to obtain and get ſuch excellent qualities, and neceſſary vertues, as a Prince or Governour ſhould or ought to have; of which Gifts I recognize my ſelf both bare and barren: but of ſuch ſmall qualities as God hath indued me withal, I render to his Goodneſs my moſt humble thanks, intending with all my wit and diligence to get and acquire to me ſuch notable Vertues and Princely Qualities, as you have alledged to be incorporated in my Perſon. Theſe thanks for your loving

loving admonition and good counſel firſt remembred; I eftſoons thank you again, becauſe that you conſidering our great charge, (not for our pleaſure, but for your defence; not for our gain, but to our great coſt which we have lately ſuſtained, as well in defence againſt our and your Enemies, as for the conqueſt of that Fortreſs which was to this Realm moſt diſpleaſant and noyſome, and ſhall be (by Gods grace) hereafter to our Nation moſt profitable and pleaſant,) have freely of your own minds granted to us a certain Subſidie, here in an Act ſpecified, which verily we take in good part, regarding more your kindneſs, than the profit thereof, as He that ſetteth more by your loving hearts, than by your ſubſtance. Beſides this hearty kindneſs, I cannot a little rejoyce, when I conſider the perfect truſt and confidence which you have put in me, as men having undoubted hope, and unfeigned belief in my good doing and juſt proceedings for you, without my deſire or requeſt, have committed to mine order and diſpoſition all Chantries, Colledges, Hoſpitals, and other Places ſpecified in a certain Act, firmly truſting that I will order them to the glory of God, and to the profit of the Common-wealth. Surely, if I (contrary to your expectation) ſhould ſuffer the Miniſters of the Church to decay, or Learning (which is ſo great a Jewel) to be miniſhed, or poor and miſerable People to be unrelieved, you might ſay, that I being put into ſo ſpecial a truſt as I am, in this caſe, were no truſty friend to you, nor charitable to mine, even as a Chriſtian, neither a lover to the Publick-wealth, nor yet one that feared God, to whom account muſt be rendered of all our doings. Doubt not, I pray you, but your expectation ſhall be ſerved more godly and goodly, than you will wiſh or deſire, as hereafter you ſhall plainly perceive. Now, ſith I find ſuch kindneſs in your part towards me, I cannot chuſe but love and favour you; affirming, that no Prince in the world more favoureth his Subjects, than I do you; nor no Subjects or Commons more love and obey their Sovereign Lord, than I perceive you do; for whoſe defence my Treaſure ſhall not be hidden, nor (if neceſſity require) my Perſon ſhall not be unadventured. Yet although I wiſh you, and you wiſh me to be in this perfect love and concord; this friendly amity cannot continue, except both you my Lords Temporal, and my Lords Spiritual, and you my loving Subjects ſtudy and take pains to amend one thing, which ſurely is amiſs, and far out of order; to the which I moſt heartily require you: which is, that Charity and Concord is not amongſt you, but Diſcord and Diſſenbeareth rule in every place; Saint *Paul* ſaith to the *Corinthians*, the thirteenth Chapter, *Charity is gentle*, *Charity is not envious*, *Charity is not proud*, and ſo forth in the ſaid Chapter. Behold then, What love and charity is amongſt you, when one calleth another Heretick and Anabaptiſt; & he calleth him again Papiſt, Hypocrite

1545.

1545. Hypocrite and Phariſee? Be theſe tokens of charity amongſt you? Are theſe ſigns of fraternal love betwixt you? No, no, I aſſure you, that this lack of charity among your ſelves, will be the hinderance and aſſwaging of the fervent love betwixt us (as I ſaid before) except this wound be ſalved and clearly made whole. I muſt needs judge the fault and occaſion of this diſcord to be partly by the negligence of you the Fathers and Preachers of this Spiritualty: For if I know a man which liveth in Adultery, I muſt judge him a Lecherous and Carnal perſon: If I ſee a man boaſt and brag himſelf, I cannot but deem him a proud man. I hear daily, that you of the Clergy Preach one againſt another, without charity or diſcretion; ſome be too ſtiff in their old *Mumpſimus*, others be too buſie and curious in their new *Sumpſimus*: Thus all men, almoſt, be in variety and diſcord, and few or none Preach truly and ſincerely the Word of God, according as they ought to do. Shall I judge you charitable Perſons doing this? No, no, I cannot ſo do: Alas, how can the poor ſouls live in concord, when you Preachers ſow amongſt them, in your Sermons, debate and diſcord? Of you they look light, and you bring them to darkneſs. Amend theſe crimes, I exhort you, & ſet forth Gods Word both by true Preaching, and good example-giving: or elſe I, whom God hath appointed his Vicar and high Miniſter here, will ſee theſe Diviſions extinct, and theſe enormities corrected according to my very duty, or elſe I am an unprofitable Servant, and untrue Officer. Although, I ſay, the Spiritual men be in ſome fault that charity is not kept amonſt them: yet the Temporalty be not clear and unſpotted of Malice and Envy. For you rail on Biſhops, ſpeak ſlanderouſly of Prieſts, and rebuke and taunt Preachers; both contrary to good order and Chriſtian Fraternity. If you know ſurely that a Biſhop or Preacher erreth, or teacheth perverſe Doctrine, come and declare it to ſome of our Council, or to us, to whom is committed by God the high Authority to reform and order ſuch cauſes and behaviours: And be not Judges of your ſelves, of your phantaſtical opinions and vain Expoſitions. In ſuch high Cauſes you may lightly erre; and although you be permitted to read holy Scriptures, and to have the Word of God in your Mother-Tongue, you muſt underſtand, that it is licenſed you ſo to do, only to inform your own Conſciences, and to inſtruct your Children and Families; and not to diſpute, and make Scripture a railing and taunting ſtock againſt Prieſts and Preachers, as many light Perſons do. I am very ſorry to know and hear, how unreverently that moſt precious Jewel, the Word of God, is diſputed, rimed, ſung, and jangled in every Alehouſe and Tavern, contrary to the true meaning and doctrine of the ſame: And yet I am even as much ſorry, that the Readers of the ſame follow it in doing ſo faintly, and ſo coldly. For of this

this I am ſure, that charity was never ſo faint amongſt you, and vertuous and godly living was never leſs uſed, nor God himſelf among Chriſtians was never leſs reverenced, honoured or ſerved. Therefore, as I ſaid before, Be in charity one with another, like Brother and Brother; love, dread, and ſerve God, to the which, I, as your Supream Head and Sovereign Lord, exhort and require you: and then I doubt not but that love and league that I ſpake of in the beginning, ſhall never be diſſolved or broken betwixt us. 1545.

To the making of Laws, which you have now made and concluded, I exhort you the Makers, to be diligent in the putting them in execution, as you were in the making and furthering of the ſame; or elſe your labour ſhall be in vain, and your Common-wealth nothing relieved. And now to your Petition concerning our Royal Aſſent to be given to ſuch Acts as have paſſed both Houſes, they ſhall be read openly, that you may hear them. And ſo they being read, the King aſſented, and roſe.

The Parliament thus ended, and notice given to both Univerſities that the Colledges were at the Kings diſpoſe, that of *Cambridge* firſt implored his favour, beſeeching him to defend their Poſſeſſions from the covetous and greedy minds of thoſe who knew not Learning. That of *Oxford* alſo Petitioned to this purpoſe; and Doctor *Richard Cox* Dean of *Oxford*, the Prince's Tutor, writ to Secretary *Paget*, to repreſent the lack of Schools, Preachers, Houſes and Livings for Orphans. And ſince the diſpoſition of Chantries, *&c.* was in the Kings hands, to obtain that the Clergy might be provided for honeſtly, leſt Beggary ſhould drive them to Flattery, Superſtition and old Idolatry: which (ſaith he) I ſpeak not, as if I diſtruſted the Kings goodneſs, but becauſe there are ſuch a number of importune Wolves as are able to devour Chantries, Cathedral Churches, Univerſities, and a thouſand times as much: adding in concluſion, that Poſterity will wonder at us. Which particulars being in an Original from *Cox*, I have the rather inſerted, that it may be gathered what he was, to whom the tuition of the young Prince was committed by the King. But much intreaty needed not for the Univerſities; for in our Records, a Letter mentions, that the Univerſities did humbly thank his Highneſs for the continuance of their Houſes with their Lands; which though, I believe, the King never meant to take away, yet I find two of the Profeſſions were in danger of being remov'd, the King having adviſed once of placing all the Civilians in *Oxford* in one Colledge, and the Phyſicians and Chyrurgions in another. Howſoever, nothing was ſtirr'd or altered, that I can find; the King being ſo far from diminiſhing thoſe famous

1545. Feb. 14. Records. Feb. 19. Octo. 1546.

Octo. 1546.

51 mous Nurſeries of Learning and Piety, that he rather help'd to increaſe and augment them. Though yet foreign Parts were aſtoniſh'd not a little, why our Parliament ſhould put them in this hazard, they being uſeful on any part, and their Endowments not to be alienated without ſingular prejudice to their Founders; who having ſeparated them for the Service of God, and publick Education, laid heavy imprecations on any which ſhould divert them from that uſe; as appears in the ancient Charters.

The Earl of *Surrey* (who now commanded in *Boulogne*) hearing that a Convoy of Victuals was coming to the Fort at *Oultreau*, reſolves to intercept it: But as the *Rhingrave* with four thouſand Lanskeneets, together with many *French* under the Mareſchal de *Biez*, ſtood firm, our men, not able to break them, were diſcomfited, and Sir *Edward Poynings*, with divers brave Gentlemen ſlain; the Earl himſelf alſo being conſtrained to ſave himſelf as he could. Nevertheleſs, by a Letter of his to
Jan. 8. the King, *Jan.* 8. 1546. it appears there were many kill'd on the other ſide; which yet did ſo little ſatisfie our King (who lov'd no noiſe but of Victory) that he ever after diſaffected him: for
Feb. which cauſe alſo he was ſhortly removed, and the Earl of *Hertford* appointed to ſucceed. Whereupon Sir *William Paget* omitted not by Letter to admoniſh him to ſeek ſome eminent place in the Army, under the ſaid Earls command, leſt (as he ſaid) he ſhould be unprovided in the Town and Field. But the Earl deſirous in the mean time to regain his former favour with the King, skirmiſhes with the *French*, and puts them to the
Records. worſt: But when together he certified that the *French* had made Canon of a greater Calivre than had been yet ſeen, wherewith they hoped to beat the Town to powder, and that it was worthy conſideration, whether low *Boulogne* ſhould ſtand, as being
March. not defenſible, the Kings Council wiſh'd him to repair home, that he might be further heard concerning theſe points. Whereupon the Earl of *Hertford* and Lord Admiral were ſent over with an Army of nine thouſand and three hundred men; whereof one thouſand five hundred were *Spaniards*, two hundred were *Italians*, three hundred *Clevois*, and three thouſand Lanskeneets, under *Conrad Pfenning*; a greater number of foreign Souldiers certainly than ſtood with exact reaſon of War, where there is no aſſured ground of a vertuous emulation. With theſe the Earl encamped at *Hambleteuſe*, betwixt *Calais* and *Boulogne*: for as the *French* intended to intercept all intercourſe betwixt both places, they would have fortified there; But our men got it two days only before they came, and built two Forts on that Coaſt. Some Fights paſs'd at Sea this while, whereof one is memorable, of ſeven or eight *Engliſh* in a ſmall Veſſel, who being maſter'd by a far greater number of *French*, entred their Ship,

Ship, as pretending to ſave themſelves out of their own Barque, which now began to ſink; but finding certain Lime-pots there, they by caſting water on them, raiſed ſuch a ſmoak, as, through their continual throwing of them, blinded the *French*, and at laſt made them run under Hatches, where at length being ſhut up, their Ship was brought away. Much Fighting alſo paſs'd betwixt our Ships and the *French* Galleys, in Calms, while through the benefit of their Oars they took and left as they pleaſed. And now, as the Strangers in our Army began to take head, the Lanskeneets mutined, not without ſhew of falling on the *Engliſh*; but the *Spaniards* ſtanding firm to our ſide, all was compoſed. 1546.

The 21 of *May* the *French* Army came and encamped beyond *Boulogne*, near the Church on the Hill, their Fleet being in the Road under them: This made the Earl of *Hertford* come up and ſkirmiſh with them. The 23 he fought again, and took divers Priſoners of note. And now each ſide attending his advantage to fight, a Surſeance of War for five or ſix days was concluded, and after it a Peace: Which, that it may ſeem leſs ſtrange, I ſhall not ſo much alledge (for reaſon) that our Kings Treaſure was exhauſted (which the *French* pretend,) as that the conſideration of the imminent Council gave all Chriſtian Princes occaſion to deſire good intelligence among themſelves, and our King particularly; who was advertiſed, that Cardinal *Poole* and others would labour to procure a Decree againſt him and his Poſterity: which, though our King regarded not otherwiſe than became a Prince of his courage; yet he thought it more conſiderable than the Popes ſingle Bull; therefore he endeavoured to get him Friends: And becauſe he was in good terms already with the Emperor, who for the ſetling of Religion eachwhere mediated a General Peace, he thought fit alſo to take in *Francis*; and the rather, that among certain private Conventions in the following Treaty, *Francis* had promiſed his aſſiſtance on all occaſions: and thus the Peace took effect. Which I find was ſo politickly handled by our King, that had his Predeceſſors obſerv'd the rule he now held, the *French* Writers could never have ſo much gloried in their Treaties. For as he capitulated to hold the Town for eight years next enſuing, he got the preſent advantage; which as the eternal Maxime in matter of Treaties, to frame Counſels by, I recommend to the Genius of our Country; ſince by the practice thereof only, I dare ſay, the *French* have uſurped and won ſo much upon us; as knowing it impoſſible, but that betwixt Neighbouring Princes, in a little ſpace, thoſe occaſions may be found or urged, which will help them to come off whenſoever they are diſpoſed. There will be no danger therefore to retort this Maxime: not yet that I approve a facility in diſſolving Leagues, which ſhould

May 21.

May 23.

May 24.

1546. be inviolably kept, especially while the causes remain; but that they being dissolved, we may prevail our selves of the present occasion; not omitting yet any circumstance, to which in point of Oath and Honour we are obliged. This present Treaty (concluded the seventh of *June*, 1546. at *Campe*, a place betwixt *Ardres* and *Guisnes*) was of this Tenor:

I. That all Injuries and Affronts since the beginning of the last War, should be forgotten, and Peace and Friendship re-established.

II. That neither should invade, nor procure nor permit to be invaded any of the Dominions, or Lands, or Cities which are now in the hands of the other.

III. That the Subjects of one shall have free commerce through the Dominions of the other, and free passage without safe conduct, so they exceed not the number of an hundred Armed persons.

IV. That during this Peace all Impositions which either Prince hath laid on the Subjects of the other, within twenty years last past, shall be released, and no new ones imposed.

V. VI. That Rebels and Traitors shall not be entertain'd or protected: but delivered to their Sovereign within 20 days after requisition.

VI. That no Letters of Reprisals or Merque, or counter-Merque should be granted but upon and against the principal Delinquents and their Goods, and that, in case of open denyal of Justice; which shall be made plain by Letters of Summonition and Requisition. And if any thing during this Peace shall be done contrary to it by any Subject of either Prince, the offendors to be punished, and the Peace to remain.

VIII. That the Christian King shall pay the King of *England* all Pensions due to him during his life, and also to his Successors for ever, according to the Treaty at *More*, 30 *August*, 1525. As also that Pension of Salt agreed on the 30th. of *April*, 1527. and afterwards reduced to a certain Sum of Mony, (*viz.*) 10000 Crowns, which is to be paid yearly at two payments, during the natural life of *Henry* VIII. If the said payment appear not to be perpetual: but if it be found to be perpetual, then the *French* King and his Heirs and Successors shall continue the said Pension for ever.

IX. The *French* King shall pay to the King of *England* on the Feast of Saint *Michael* (or within ten days after that day) which shall be *Anno Domini* 1554. for Arrerages, as well of Pensions not paid, as for his charges in Fortifications within the Town and County of *Boulogne*, since the beginning of the last War, either already rais'd, or to be built betwixt this time and the said 1554. the sum of two Millions of Crowns *de Soleil*; upon the payment

payment whereof the ſaid moſt Chriſtian King ſhall be free from all former Arrerages whatſoever. 1546.

X. Becauſe the King of *England*, by vertue of certain Letters of the *French* King, Dated 29 *Jan.* 1529. claims as due unto him, the ſum of 50002 Crowns *de Soleil*, 22 Sols and 6 Deniers: it is agreed that there ſhall be Commiſſioners appointed on both ſides (within three months hence) to hear and end that cauſe; which ſum the King of *France* (if it be ſo adjudg'd) ſhall pay when he pays the two Millions aforeſaid. But if the Commiſſioners conclude nothing, the matter ſhall be devolved to four Lawyers that are Subjects to neither Princes, to be choſen by them, and that ſhall ſtand which three of them determine.

XI. That the King of *France* ſhall ſuffer the King of *England* quietly to enjoy the Town of *Boulogne*, and the Caſtles and Territories thereof, within the Bounds following: *viz.* the Haven of *Boulogne*, with the farther Shore, as far as the higheſt water comes; and the Land in length as far as *Pont de Bricque*, which ſhall be the limit on that part, the River there remaining common to both Princes: All within theſe bounds the King of *England* ſhall quietly poſſeſs, until the King of *France* hath fully paid the aforeſaid two Millions (as alſo the Sums expreſſed Article X) in the time, place and manner limited.

XII. That when the ſaid Sums are paid, at the ſame time the King of *England* ſhall ſurrender *Boulogne*, with all the Territories taken by him in the late War, and all Fortifications built there by him ſince the taking thereof, ſo that no Fortification ſhall be impair'd. Neither ſhall the King of *England* be bound hereby in the reſtoring of the ſaid places, to leave behind him any moveables.

XIII. That from the date hereof, to the day of St. *Michael*, 1554. neither of the two Princes ſhall raiſe any new Fortification within the County of *Boulogne* (but thoſe that have been begun already they may perfect.)

XIV. The Emperor is comprehended by both the Princes, by force of the perpetual Confederation.

XV. The *Scots* are comprehended in this Treaty, againſt whom the King of *England* ſhall not wage War, unleſs new occaſion be given; in which caſe, this preſent comprehenſion of the *Scots* ſhall receive that interpretation which is contained in the Treaty of the Date of *April* the fifth, 1515. with this alteration, that although by the ſaid Treaty of 1515. fifteen days only were preſcribed to the *French* King to intimate the ſaid Comprehenſion to the *Scots*, yet now, by reaſon of the diſtance of place, there is allowed the ſpace of thirty days, next following the concluſion hereof.

1546. XVI. This Treaty ſhall be ratified within forty days after the Date hereof.

Commiſſioners for our King were,

John Viſcount *Liſle*, Admiral;
Sir *William Paget*, Secretary; and
Doctor *Nicholas Wotton*, Dean of *Canterbury*.

And on *Francis* his part,

Clade d' Annebault Mareſchal and Admiral of *France*;
Pierre Raymond, *premier Preſident de Rouen*; and
Guillaume Bouchecel, Secretary.

This Peace being Proclaimed in *London* upon the thirteenth of *June*, a general Proceſſion was there made, and all the richeſt ſilver Croſſes out of the ſeveral Pariſh-Churches carried, and the braveſt Copes worn, for the greater ſolemnity: But our Hiſtorians note it as fatal, it being the laſt time they were publickly uſed, ſince our King called them in ſhortly after, together with the Church-Plate, into his Treaſury and Wardrobe, without that other cauſe appeared thereof, then that he ſuſpected the War would break out again, betwixt him and *Francis*, of which alſo this overture was given.

May 25. The Earl of *Hertford* being certified (during the Treaty) that the clauſe of not making any new fortification, would be prejudicial, was commanded by our King immediately to raiſe a Fort according to a plot given; but ſuch was the prevention of this diligent Earl, that he had already begun it about the thirteenth of *May*. Our King in the mean while proteſting that he liked not the Article. But the *French* as little liking our Fort, (as collecting thence we meant not to reſtore *Boulogne*) ſome difficulty was interpoſed. Though as our King anſwered, he could not ſo much as hope to keep the Town, for the term agreed, unleſs he had means to ſecure it, the Treaty held in the manner abovementioned, and both Armies were diſſolved; the *French* yet firſt, as our King required, retiring. And ſo he remained in quiet poſſeſſion thereof, after the expence (as I find in our Records) of 586718 li. 12 s. 3 d. $\frac{11}{24}$. in the winning thereof. The charges in keeping thereof being 755833 li. 11 s. 3 d. $\frac{11}{24}$. In all 1342552 li. 3 s. 7 d. $\frac{1}{2}$. An exceſſive ſum, eſpecially to reap no benefit thence, but a Landing place in *France*, which *Calais* formerly afforded. This peace was ſeconded by a kind Invitation of *Francis* to our King to Chriſten the *Dauphins* Daughter, which being as lovingly accepted, Sir *Thomas Cheney* was ſent over, and the Child called *Elizabeth*. The two Admirals alſo were

July. Auguſt.

were ſent by their ſeveral Kings, to receive the Oaths required for obſervance of this Treaty; and, being richly rewarded, returned. Howbeit this Peace was not intire; for if our King conceived it lawful to finiſh the Fort he had begun before the Treaty, the *French* wanted not pretexts for the like; Therefore, when upon their erecting a Fort at *Portet*, near the entry to the Haven (which they called *Chaſtillons Garden*) our men took exceptions thereat, the *French* for their beſt Title alledged that Monſieur *de Biez* had formerly begun it by entrenching his men there; yet as this did not ſatisfie our King, who knew well the difference betwixt a *Trench* and *Fortification*, He commanded Sir *William Paget* to write thus to *William* Lord *Grey* of *Wilton*, who now commanded in *Boulogne*. 1546. Septemb. 5.

AFter our moſt hearty Commendations to your good Lordſhip, this ſhall be to ſignifie unto the ſame, That the Kings Majeſty being informed that the Frenchmen *begin to fortifie at* Portet, *which by their Treaty with his Majeſty they ought not to do, requireth your Lordſhip to ſpeak with the doers of the ſaid Works, and to tell them it ſhall be beſt for them to ſtay working any further, until they ſhall hear from their Maſter; which without doubt, is like to be very ſhortly; for that his Majeſties Ambaſſador hath charge to ſpeak with him in the ſame immediately. And in caſe they ſhall anſwer again, that either they will not, or dare not leave working without the knowledge of Monſieur* de Biez, *or (peradventure) of ſuch other whom they ſhall name to have the charge of the Works; and ſo go forwards ſtill in their Works: Then his Majeſty pleaſeth, that if you ſhall find your ſelves able enough for the feat, you ſhall in the night overthrow that which they have wrought. And in caſe you ſhall find your ſelves not able enough for the ſame Enterpriſe; then to forbear the doing if it until ſuch time as a ſtronger Force come to you from hence, which ſhall be ſent over with all diligence poſſible.*

This 5th. of *Septemb.* 1546.

This alſo was ſigned by the King. Nevertheleſs, upon better advice, the King thought fit to ſend Sir *Thomas Palmer* with a Meſſage to the Lord *Grey*, commanding him immediately to demoliſh the Fort; who thereupon made that haſte, as before the Letters came, he arrived at *Boulogne*, being the very day of his diſpatch; and preſently, by the aſſiſtance of the Lord *Grey*, Mr. *Poynings*, and ſome others, the *French*-mens Work was levelled: and ſo *Palmer* return'd to certifie what was done. And now the Kings Letters being delivered, the Lord *Grey* writes, that before the receit of his Letters, he had (upon ſuch relation of his Majeſties pleaſure, as was made by Sir *Thomas Palmer*) overthrown the Work at *Portet*, and therefore deſires his Majeſties Septemb. 5. Septemb. 6. Septemb. 7.

1546.

jesties Pardon. Which passage I have related more particularly out of our Records, that I might correct the error of some of our Historians, who would have our King deliver *Palmer* a Message and Letter that were contradictory: whereas it appears by our Records, that the Message was first delivered, and the business done before the Letters came. Though I will not deny, but the Lords of the Council, knowing the Letter was sent, but not (perchance) any thing of the Message, might have occasion to think the Lord *Grey* more forward, than that he could well justifie it. Howsoever, Monsieur *de Biez* complains hereof to the Lord *Grey*, and desires to know whether it were done by his Majesties command. What he answered, I find not: But it appears by the Instructions given to *Nicholas Wotton* the Kings Ambassador with *Francis*, that he had charge to palliate the business as handsomly as he could; which also so prevailed, that no new Fortification was erected by the *French*, during our Kings time. Besides, our Records tell us, hope was now given, that *Francis* would renounce the Popes Authority in his Kingdom: which, though much entertained at first by our King, and judged the more probable, that the Emperor and Pope did wholly govern the Council, was not yet so throughly embraced, lest (perchance) by Confiscations, Suppressions, *&c.* *Francis* might grow greater than stood with the interest of State or Neighborhood: And for *Paget*, he said openly, it was but a trick to get *Boulogne* again; *Francis* being not able to give any security for performance of this offer, which might countervail the immediate surrendring of that Place. Howbeit, Arguments wanted not, that he was in earnest, both as he treated of a Confederation with the Protestants at this time; who yet (as I find by our Records) rejected it, unless he relinquished the Papal Authority: And as he lived in such jealousie of State with the Emperor; which together with the apprehension of the Assembly at *Trent*, now daily encreasing, might for more than one reason dispose him to seek Friends else-where, as well for defending himself against his Enemies, as establishing an absolute Power and Jurisdiction at home. And with this concurrs that which *Fox* relates: That during the stay of *d' Annebault* in this Court, Treaty was had betwixt both Princes of changing the Mass in their Realms unto a Communion: and that both were so throughly and firmly resolved therein, that they meant to exhort the Emperor to do the like in *Flanders*, and other his Dominions, or else to break with him; and that our King particularly had willed the Arch-Bishop *Cranmer* (as himself confessed) to pen a form to be sent to the *French* King to consider of. But through the death of both Princes successively not long after, these and all other their Designs ended: Though yet for the time which remained, their former love and correspondence was

Records.

Fox. August.

so

ſo reviv'd, as *Francis* is ſaid (by the *French* Writers) never to have rejoyced heartily after the news of our Kings death was brought him. But I leave the cenſure of theſe paſſages free to the Readers judgment, without delivering any opinion, otherwiſe than as the Collections out of our Records ſeem to infer. 1546. *Thuanus Hiſt.*

Let us ſee now what was done by the Emperor and the Council of Trent.

THE Emperor in the latter end of 1545. being in *Flanders*, the Biſhops of *Wincheſter* and *Weſtminſter* (formerly mentioned) reſided with him on our Kings part: And becauſe one of the Buſineſſes of the *French* about this time was to offer a Match betwixt the Prince of *Spain* and the Daughter of *Francis*, our King commanded *Wincheſter* to hinder it, and propoſe the Lady *Elizabeth*. Alſo ſpeech was had of a Marriage betwixt our Prince and one of *Ferdinand*'s Daughters: But becauſe neither of theſe took effect, I ſhall mention them no otherwiſe. Yet the Biſhop of *Weſtminſter* return'd not home, as being imployed by our King into *Germany*, to give intelligence of that which paſs'd. For now in *January*, 1546. the Proteſtants met at *Franckfort*: And as they knew the Emperor intended a Voyage into *Germany*, they conſulted concerning their mutual defence, knowing that both the Spiritual and Temporal Sword ſhould be drawn againſt them. January.

This while the Aſſembly at *Trent* holding, the *Breve* for exempting the Biſhops from payment of their Tenths came: Yet as this did rather accommodate than ſecure them, 300 Foot and ſome Horſe, being gathered out of the County of *Trent*, were appointed to make a Guard as they paſs'd to Church, being now, beſides the Legates and the Cardinal of *Trent*, four Arch-Biſhops, twenty-eight Biſhops, three Abbats, and four Generals (in all forty-three;) among which was *Richard Pace*, heretofore Ambaſſador to the Emperor for our King, but now fallen to the Pope, and by him ſtiled Biſhop of *Worceſter*; and *Robert Venant* titular Arch-Biſhop of *Armagh*; together with *Olaus Magnus* Arch-Biſhop of *Upſaile*; all which had been ſome years entertain'd with Penſions from the Pope: Beſides, there were about twenty Divines, which though they had no ſeat in the Council, were admitted to ſtand there; as alſo ten Gentlemen of the Neighbourhood, of the Cardinal of *Trent*'s election: And moreover a ſeat was particularly appointed for the Ambaſſadors which ſhould aſſiſt there. Jan. 5.

And now queſtion being of the Style of the Council, the few *French* which were there, required, that to *Sancto-ſancta Synodus* ſhould be added *Univerſalem Eccleſiam repreſentans*: But this was rejected; both to exclude the Proteſtants Jan. 5.

1546. testants admittance under this Title, as also all Laicks; and as it might be thought in some sort prejudicial to the Popes supream Authority. And so, *Jan.* 7. (being the second Session) they decreed an Exhortation to the Priests and People to serve God in Prayer, Alms, Sobriety, *&c.* The Thirteenth of *January* it was moved that they would come to the Points contained in the Bull, being the Extirpation of Heresie, Reformation of Discipline, and Establishing of Peace. And concerning this, there were four opinions.

* Jan. 7.

Jan. 13.

Jan. 18.

The Imperialists said, before they touched matter of Doctrine, it was necessary to take away those transgressions whence Heresies have sprung.

The second opinion was, To begin with Doctrine, since Faith being the Basis of Religion, it was a greater sin to erre therein, than in Manners: and therefore that the Pope had placed it first in his Bull.

The third was, That the two Points of Reformation and Faith should not be dis-joyned, there being no Doctrine which hath not its abuse, nor abuse that draws not after it an ill Interpretation of some Doctrine. And that this was the best way to give a speedy and happy conclusion to the Council, which they should chiefly endeavour; there being no advantage likely to ensue to the Pope or Court of *Rome* by the protracting thereof.

The fourth sort (and among them the *French* particularly) would have had the Point of Peace first treated of, and that other Princes might be required to send their Ambassadors and Prelates thither; And that the *Lutherans* might be invited to come and unite themselves to the rest of Christendom. The Legates having heard their opinions, and commended their wisdom, said, that because the hour was late, the deliberation important, and the opinions various, they would think upon it. Order also was taken to hold their Congregations weekly on *Mundays* and *Fridays*. The Legates hereupon advertised the Pope of that which passed, desiring his advice, and that he would take order for supporting of the poorer Bishops; it being better they should not be there, than ill satisfied. Howbeit, the Pope delayed his Reply, as having his mind wholly bent to War, according to the Treaty which Cardinal *Farnese* had with the Emperor the year preceding. This much perplex'd the Legates, as not knowing how to proceed: Nevertheless, upon private conference among themselves, they agreed to treat of Matter of Faith and Reformation together: but withal, entertain'd the time, upon pretence that many Prelates were on their way. Cardinal *Poole* proposed, that since in all ancient Councils some Symbol of Faith was published, they should do the like in this: But concerning this Symbol of Faith there was some difficulty; since

Jan. 22.

since to recite the old, would not convince the *Lutherans*, who believ'd it as well as the Catholicks: Besides, that it were to confess, that they durst not handle the controverted Points, of treat of a Reformation. But upon further dispute hereof, it was resolved by the major part for the Affirmative; and in the third Session (*Feb.* 4.) the Creed was barely recited: the Cardinal *de Monte* dissuading that any Point should be added afterwards, lest some inconvenience should follow. The next Session was adjourn'd to *April* the 8th, upon the aforesaid pretence, that many Prelates were on their journey. 1546. Feb. 4. *Sess.* III.

The Court of *Rome*, who now understood of that which pass'd (though heretofore much startled at the name of a Reformation, as knowing not how far it might extend) yet generally liked this late Decree, as being worthy the proceeding of a General Council: Others yet approving it only as it was dilatory, while there wanted not some, who took occasion to pasquil it. *Concil. Trid. lib.* 2.

This while the Emperor being in *Flanders*, prepares for *Germany*, both as the Diet and Conference of Divines was appointed at *Ratisbonne*, and as the Council of *Trent* did hold: Yet, lest he should alarm the Protestants, he took with him only his ordinary Guard, being 500 Horse. And now the Conference holding, and divers Propositions being made on the Emperors part, the Affair insisted on was matter of Religion; where the Point of Justification being brought in question, took up much time, without having other conclusion, yet, then perplex'd and abrupt: Insomuch, that the Duke of *Saxe* recall'd his Divines, and *Martin Bucer* return'd to the Landtgrave of *Hesse*; which, whether it were that the Protestants fore-saw the Emperors intention was to amuse them with Conferences, while himself prepar'd for War; or that otherwise they found no hope of coming to an agreement, is uncertain: Howsoever, the Emperor, when he came to the Diet, seemed much offended at their departure; though, as during these Conferences *Martin Luther* died in the LXIII year of his Age, he doubted not more easily to appease Controversies, as believing *Luther* to be of so violent a spirit, as he would interrupt any moderate Accord. Howbeit, for declining an affront, in case the Protestants should come to no Agreement at the future Diet, he made Preparations for War; which yet he could not keep so secret, but the Protestants understood it, and fortified themselves. Whereupon also *Philip* Count Palatine, Nephew to *Frederic* the Elector, was dispatched into *England* to intreat for Succours: He had besides, his private business; which (as our Records tells us) was to obtain the Princess *Mary*, our King's Daughter. Neither did our King seem averse, when *Frederic* the Elector would perform certain Conditions required of him: but all this took no effect, I shall Jan. 27. March 20. April. March.

1546. come to the particular of his publick buſineſs, treated chiefly by *John Bryne*; which was a Confederation projected betwixt our King and the Proteſtants. The Conditions propoſed by our King were to this effect:

Records. That if the ſaid Princes would ſend ſome wiſe and diſcreet Agents fully inſtructed, and with them the names of the Members of the League, and what Aids every one is bound to give, and in what caſes, and whether they will ſtand to the old Rates or to new, now to be made when his Majeſty ſhall enter the League; his Majeſty would be pleaſed to enter a League with them defenſive againſt all men, and for all cauſes, and will be bound to ſuch a rate of Aid as may beſt his Honour and Quality: So that he may have the firſt place in the League, which for more honour, ſhould be called *The League Chriſtian*: with ſuch conditions likewiſe, That no other ſhould be admitted to this League, but ſuch as are already enter'd into the ſame, without his Majeſties conſent. And becauſe they would look for a greater Aid at his Majeſties hands than of any other Prince or City in this League, his Majeſty would look by Covenant to have in all Meetings concerning the Confederacy, three Voices to two of any other Prince. Concerning the union of the ſaid Princes together, and of his Majeſty with them all in Doctrine of Religion, his Majeſty thanketh them that they are content to follow the advice of his Majeſty upon ſuch conſiderations and Conferences as their Learned Men and his ſhall have together in his Majeſties preſence, following the holy Scripture, or the determination of the Primitive Church, or General Councils had before five or ſix hundred years: For which purpoſe his Majeſty promiſeth to take pains to be preſent himſelf, and truſteth (ſuch men being ſent from them as be Learned, and men of upright judgments, without affection, and of good conformity) to be the Cauſer of ſuch a conjunction in Religion in all Chriſtendom, as ſhall tend to the glory of God. For the which purpoſe his Majeſty requireth them now when they ſhall ſend Commiſſioners to conclude the League Defenſive, to ſend alſo the names of ten or twelve men, to the intent his Majeſty may chuſe four, five, or ſix out of the ſame; which his Majeſty requireth to have ſent hither according to the promiſe already made, as ſoon as may be. To which the Proteſtants finally anſwered, That if our King would depoſitate an hundred thouſand Crowns in ſome part of *Germany*, where they might take it when they were invaded for Religion, then they would prefer his friendſhip before the *French*, who now treated with them. But this again was rejected by our King, ſince for a bold demand they offered nothing equivalent; yet he continued his Treaty with the Palatine, ſo far forth as he might detain the Proteſtants from ſuffering the *French* to gather men in *Germany* for the recovering of *Boulogne*, and from ſubmitting

April. March 27. April 10.

them-

themſelves to the Council of *Trent*, and encourage them to frame their Religion according to the Word of God, which, he ſaid, was the true Rule. But the *Germans*, who knew at what diſtance our King lived, did not much regard any advices which were not ſeconded with mony: therefore they truſted to themſelves, and our King (as aboveſaid) made Peace with the *French*. 1546.

On the other ſide, as the Emperors preſence operated much in *Germany*, ſo the Match which *Ferdinand* had made of his Daughter *Anne* to the Son of the Duke of *Bavaria*, and *Mary* to the Duke of *Cleves*, did not a little ſtrengthen his Party. Beſide, the Pope offered him Twelve thouſand Foot, Eight hundred Horſe, and 300000 Ducats in money (as *Sandoval* hath it) and to procure him aſſiſtance from others, without omitting particularly to promiſe his beſt aſſiſtance in a Spiritual way; while, to make the Proteſtants more culpable of drawing this War upon them, he ſent to his Legates in the Council of *Trent* to proceed calmly (without beginning any new difficulties) in matter of Faith: and to make no haſte in point of Reformation, though urged by the Emperor. Hereupon the Legates commanded certain Fryars and Divines to extract thoſe Articles out of the *Lutherans* Books, which ſeemed contrary to their Faith. Where (among others) the Authority of the holy Scriptures and Traditions was firſt examined. And here their Divines differed; ſome affirming they were all one, the Scripture it ſelf being derived unto us but by Tradition: Moreover, St. *Auguſtines* words were urged, *That he ſhould not believe the Scriptures, but for the authority of the Church.* Which thefore ſhould firſt be ſetled, and then uſed for deciding of Controverſies, and convincing the *Lutherans*. But then the queſtion was, Which, and what was the Church? and whether the Hierarchy, and more properly the Council whereof the Pope was the Head? But it was not thought ſafe to call theſe things into doubt. Then they fell again to treat of the Scripture and Traditions; and whether it hath accidentally come to paſs, that it being all taught, ſome part was not put in writing: Some holding, that the Church had its perfection before any of the Apoſtles writ, and would have continued ſo, if nothing had been ſet down in Writing. But that this queſtion and the like being not formerly propoſed by the *Lutherans*, might well be omitted for Peace ſake; which clauſe was check'd by Cardinal *Pool*, who ſaid, It was fitter for a Conference in *Germany*, than a Council: Adding, that one of two things was to be done, that is, either the *Lutherans* brought to receive all the Roman Doctrine; or when they would not, that all their Errors ſhould be diſcovered, to ſhew the World how impoſſible it was to come to an Agreement. *Sleid. l.17.* Feb. 22. I.

Then it was reſolved, that a Catalogue of the Canonical Books of the Scripture ſhould be made as they are accepted by II.

1546. the Roman Church, without regarding whether the *Jews* received them or not. But here ſome difficulties were urged; ſome of thoſe Scriptures having been always received, others (though doubtful) having by uſe yet obtained Canonical Authority: that is to ſay, the Epiſtle to the *Hebrews*, that of St. *James*, the Second of St. *Peter*, the Second and Third of St. *John*, that of St. *Jude*, and the *Apocalypſe*, and ſome particles of the Evangeliſts. Beſides which, there were in the Old Teſtament Seven Books never averred, and ſome Chapters of *Daniel* and *Heſter*, and eſpecially the Book of *Baruch*, as wanting his beginning; though ſome eſteemed it a part of *Jeremiah*. At March 8. length, all the Books uſually put in the Latin Bible were judged Canonical, and Traditions to be of equal Authority with the Scripture: Nevertheleſs, doubts were raiſed concerning putting the Books of the Scripture into order. This while *Petrus Paulus Vergerius*, Biſhop of *Juſtinopolis* in *Iſtria*, coming to the Council, was repulſed: For, as he had been imployed in *Germany* againſt the *Lutherans* with ſo little advantage to the Pope, as while he laboured to confute the Proteſtants, himſelf became one; ſo they would not admit him, though he pretended his buſineſs was only to purge himſelf, but remanded him to the Pope, who ſhortly after deprived him of his Biſhoprick.

III. And now that being declared without more ado to be holy Scripture, which the Roman Church had received, a queſtion aroſe concerning the Tranſlation of it. Some ſaying, that to underſtand only the Latin Text, was not to receive the infallible Word of God, but that of the Tranſlator; and therefore that the Originals ſhould be viewed, and a Tranſlation made which the Council ſhould declare Authentick. But if this ſhould ſeem a long work, it were good (at leaſt) to verifie their Latin Tranſlation with the Original Text: Howbeit, the greater part ſaid, it was neceſſary to hold the Latin Tranſlation to be Divine and Authentick, ſince otherwiſe they would be obnoxious to the *Lutherans*, and a gate opened to innumerable Hereſies: For if men might examine Tranſlations, all would be reduced to Pedantiſm, and new Grammarians would give the law. Beſides that, Inquiſitors could not convince Hereticks without knowledge of the Original Tongues. Many other Points coincident hereunto, were likewiſe handled, too long to be here rehearſed.

IV. Then they came to the Expoſition of Scriptures, and the ancient Fathers were declared as the Rule thereof.

V. In concluſion, it was required, whether all theſe determinations were to be enacted under the *Anathema*: In which, after much doubt, a middle courſe was held. So that the eighth of *April*, Seſſion IV. two Decrees were read; one to Authoriſe the Scriptures read in the Roman Church, and the Traditions

Seſſ. IV. April 8.

received

received there, both concerning Faith and Manners: The ſecond to declare the vulgar Tranſlation to be Authentick, and that it ſhould not be expounded contrary to the ſenſe delivered by the Church, and unanimous conſent of the Fathers: The Penalty in the firſt Decree being *Anathema*, in the ſecond ſuch as pleaſed the Ordinary. And ſo the next Seſſion was deferred till the ſeventeenth of *June*, and theſe Decrees Printed; which at length, being publiſhed in *Germany*, it was thought ſtrange, that five Cardinals, and XLVIII Biſhops only, ſhould ſo eaſily determine theſe great Points, without hearing what could be objected to the contrary. 1546.

About this time our King was certified by *Edmund Harvel*, his Ambaſſador at *Venice*, that the *French* laboured to procure a Cenſure againſt him in the Council. But as the Peace formerly mentioned between King *Henry* and *Francis*, was ſhortly after concluded, ſo this took no effect.

And now the Pope thought fit to add divers to the number of thoſe Cardinals and Prelates at *Rome* he uſed to adviſe with concerning the Council; admoniſhing the Legates together at *Trent*, Firſt, Not to publiſh any Decree henceforth, without approbation from *Rome*. Secondly, Not to ſpend time in Points not controverted. Thirdly, Above all things to take heed of diſputing the Papal Authority. Which being done, he required April 11. the Biſhops and Abbats of the *Swiſs* to come to the Council: he alſo proceeded againſt the Arch-Biſhop of *Cologne*, condemning, April 16. excommunicating and depriving him for adhering to the *Lutherans*: Furthermore, he intreated the Emperor to execute the Sentence. But he conceiving the Arch-Biſhop was at his devotion; and beſides, knowing that ſuch a rigorous proceeding would but Alarm the Proteſtants, and force the Arch-Biſhop to colleague with them, neglected to perform this requeſt: and the rather, that the Duke of *Saxe* had ſignified unto him, that he ſaw clearly the Popes intentions were wholly bent to eſtabliſh his own Authority: And therefore, that it was time to aſſemble a National Council in *Germany*, or to treat ſeeiouſly of matter of Religion in the Diet.

And now the Council in Congregation propoſed the Point of *Council. Trid.* Original Sin: But the *Spaniſh* Prelates deſired rather a Reformation of the abuſes in Preaching and Lectures: Adding, that they had expreſs Letters from the Emperor, not to enter yet into matters of Doctrine: which alſo the intelligence found in our Records doth particularly affirm. The Legates (on the other ſide) urged the Popes Bull. In concluſion, both Points were reſolved, and the Theologians enjoyned to handle matter of Faith among themſelves, and with the aſſiſtance of ſome Canoniſts to treat of a Reformation. According to which order, Lectures and Preaching being firſt ſpoken of, ſome diſſention May. appeared:

1546. appeared: The Biſhops deſiring the ordering of theſe things ſhould immediately depend on them: But the Legates contending to maintain the Pontifical Authority, by which theſe duties were committed to Fryars Mendicants, *&c.* This Controverſie finding no iſſue, the Pope writ unto the Council, that they ſhould begin with Original Sin; obſerving yet a due reſpect unto the Emperor. Notwithſtanding, the Legates thought fit the buſineſs of Reading and Preaching ſhould firſt be diſpatched, which was not without ſome contention: For as it hath been an ancient *Arcanum Imperii* among the Popes for conſerving their Juriſdiction, to exempt Biſhops from their Arch-Biſhops, and Abbats and Fryars again from Biſhops, *&c.* ſo ſome wrangling paſſed; while each part ſtrove to maintain its Authority: The Biſhops complaining of the vanity and covetouſneſs of the Preaching Fryars; and theſe again objecting the negligence of Biſhops, and idleneſs of Pariſh-Prieſts. But all at laſt, was (in a ſort) reconciled, the Biſhops being allowed Authority over the Regulars, only when they would hold it as from the Pope. After which, the Point of Original Sin being brought into Examination, Cardinal *Paceco* a *Spaniard*, ſaid, it was not yet time, nor until the buſineſs of *Germany* were riper. Nevertheleſs, the queſtion was argued; yet ſo as it was protracted, both by the many difficulties of it, and the Diet at *Ratiſbonne*; which, beginning towards the end of *May*, made the Prelates intentive to its Proceedings. Our King not omitting alſo to inform himſelf of what ſhould paſs by the Biſhops of *Weſtminſter*'s means, whom he had imployed thither. But little good followed of this Diet: For while the Roman Catholicks would not allow that Controverſies of Religion ſhould be decided in a National Council (as the Proteſtants deſired;) nor they again ſubmit to the Council of *Trent*, being, in their opinion, a moſt partial and factious Aſſembly, the Emperor knew not what well to reſolve: he would have been glad of ſuch a Peace as might have conſerved his Authority, without caring much to hear of Errors diſcovered in either of the oppoſite Parts; or that they had found out ſome witty and new diſtinction. But there is not any thing more hard than to deviſe how a free and equal Council may be held, or who ſhould be a competent Judge of the emergent differences; ſince, as any of thoſe who are Parties in the buſineſs, cannot properly exerciſe that Function; ſo, to appeal to any other that were of a different Religion, ſhould be not only to call the parts, but the whole into queſtion. Nevertheleſs, it may be demonſtrated, that a more even courſe may be kept herein than hath been hitherto practiſed, and a more indifferent for all mankind: Which as it is deeply concern'd in all the rigid Decrees of Religion, ſo in ſome ſort or other ſhould intervene; In which caſe, certainly the Spirit of God would preſide.

May.

The

The Emperor this while having made many ſecret Proviſions for War, certain notice thereof came to the Proteſtants at the Diet, who becauſe he had made Peace with *France*, and Truce for one year with the *Turk*, did eaſily conjecture it was intended againſt them; eſpecially it being related that the Pope and *Ferdinand* did arm; ſo that every thing was in confuſion. The Emperor uſed much induſtry to draw all thoſe Proteſtants who were not Colleagued with the reſt at *Smalcald*, unto his party, telling them this War was only againſt Rebels, and promiſing them the Exerciſe of their Religion. 1546. June.

The Proteſtants, on the other ſide, declared in a publick Remonſtrance, That the Emperors intentions were far other than he pretended; exhorting therefore both them and one another to ſtand firm.

This while the Council held the Fifth Seſſion, and two Decrees paſſed: 1. Concerning *Original Sin*, and the *Benefit of Baptiſm*, &c. 2. Concerning *Lectures and Preaching*; wherein the Biſhops and Clergy were commanded to be diligent and careful. This being done, the *French* Ambaſſador *Petrus Daneſius* made a long and eloquent Oration, ſhewing the affection their Kings had ever born to the Chriſtian Religion: and how that *Gregory* the Firſt had for this cauſe given the Title of *Catholique* to *Childebert*; And that his King had therefore ſent him Ambaſſador thither, deſiring firſt, that ſome determination might be made in Religion; then, that thoſe Priviledges ſhould be conſerved, of which *Lodovicus Pius* was in Poſſeſſion, and all the ſequent Kings; and that the Priviledges and Immunities of the Church of *France* might be confirmed. To whom no Anſwer was given but a Complement. *Seſſ.* V.

The Decrees being now Printed and Publiſhed in *Germany*, gave much occaſion of diſcourſe and unſatisfaction. The Emperor himſelf not liking that in the buſineſs of Reformation, the ſmaller Points had been handled, and the greater pretermitted; and that the Controverſies in matter of Faith had been thus ſtirred, and eſpecially that of Original Sin, as being almoſt reconciled in ſome former Conferences in *Germany*. And now the Cardinal of *Trent* having abſolutely concluded that League betwixt the Pope and the Emperor againſt the Proteſtants, and thoſe which refuſed the Council of *Trent*, (which by the Cardinal *Farneſe* his means, was formerly treated of) all ſides prepar'd for War: The Pope alſo ſending men and money in that proportion which is above-mentioned, or (as ſome will have it) beſides the twelve thouſand Foot, only five hundred Horſe, to be maintained for ſix months at his charge, and 200000 Crowns in money. Moreover, he granted the Emperor (for the preſent year) the half of all the Revenues of the Churches of *Spain*, and that he might alienate of the Rents of the Monaſteries of theſe King- July 26. *Sleid. l.* 17. *Sleid. Council. Trid.*

1546. Kingdoms, to the value of five hundred thouſand Crowns, upon condition that during the ſaid ſix months, the Emperor might make no Accord with the Proteſtants without him; and that of all which was gotten, he ſhould have a certain portion: And that when the time was expired, if the War did continue, they ſhould treat of new Conditions. It being free for the Emperor (in the mean while) to try all fair means for reducing the Proteſtants to ſubmit to this Council: for which end alſo he treated with them, profeſſing that he did not undertake this War for cauſe of Religion, but reſpects of State, and becauſe ſome denyed to obey his Laws, and had confederated themſelves mutually, with Strangers againſt him, and uſurped other mens Poſſeſſions, and chiefly Eccleſiaſtical, procuring to make Biſhopricks and Abbeys hereditary to their Families; and that having divers ways endeavoured to reduce them, they were ſtill more inſolent. The Proteſtants, on the other ſide, did ſtrive to clear themſelves unto the World from imputation of Rebellion, ſhewing, that Religion only was cauſe of this War, which the Pope and Council of *Trent* had kindled againſt them: Requiring from the Emperor performance of the Oath he took upon receiving his dignity in *Francfort*, which they pretended he had broken in this abrupt making of War. They ſent alſo to *England* and *France* (being now newly reconciled) to borrow mony. But our King anſwered, That the courſe of things being now altered, he could not reſolve on any thing without better information. Nevertheleſs, that upon their ſtanding firm together, he might furniſh ſome mony upon fitting conditions. This cauſed the Proteſtants to make new Levies at home: And the rather, that the Pope had about this time by Bull publiſhed, that the War was for Religion.

Sleid. l. 17.

July 4.

July.

July 11. July 20. And now *Philip* Landtgrave of *Heſſe* having his Forces ready, comes into the Field, and the Duke of *Saxe* after; whereupon they both were proſcrib'd by the Emperor (then being at *Ratisbonne*) who breaking up the Diet, commanded another to be held the firſt of *Febr.* 1547.

June 18. This while the Council of *Trent* ſitting, the Secretary declared (in the name of the Legates) that the next point to be examined, was that of *Divine Grace*; and they ſhould the rather follow this Order, becauſe it was uſed in the *Auguſtan* Confeſſion, which they intended to condemn. Nevertheleſs, the Imperialiſts urged ſtill a Reformation: But being over-ruled, certain Theologians were appointed to gather the *Lutherans* opinions.

That of Juſtification, Faith and Works was propoſed in XXV Articles. But when the point of Juſtification by Faith was urged, the word FAITH was found ambiguous; yet at laſt all agreeing,

agreeing, that Juſtifying Faith was an Aſſent to all things revealed by God, and propoſed by the Church as neceſſary. It was further diſtinguiſhed into a ſolitary, dead, meerly Hiſtorical Faith, and a lively one working by Charity. Then was diſputed which of theſe did juſtifie; and ſome affirmed both: the firſt whereof was to be underſtood yet as the Baſis and Ground of the later: And here many School ſubtilties ariſing, were hotly purſued by the Dominicans on the one ſide, and Franciſans on the other; the former holding (with *Luther*) that all our Works without Faith are ſin; the Franciſcans oppoſing, that man by his natural free-will may obſerve the Law, and do good, and thereby prepare himſelf, *ex congruo*, for Grace, ſince God fails not him who doth what he can. After this they fell to examine the nature of Grace, of Juſtification, of Imputation, *&c.* Concerning which the Reader may find more *in Concilio Tridentino.* Only I ſhall obſerve (as conducing to my Hiſtory) that theſe Diſputes were thus purpoſely ſpun out, partly by the procurement of the Emperor, who ſtill deſired that nothing ſhould yet be decreed in matter of Faith; and partly by the induſtry of the Court of *Rome*, who ſtudied to hinder the Reformation in diſcipline. 1546.

The Emperor now, that he might divide the Proteſtants, encourageth *Maurice* Duke of *Saxe*, Coſen-German to the Elector, and Son in law to the Landtgrave, to invade the States of theſe proſcribed Princes: to which alſo he was ſufficiently diſpoſed. This while the Pope did a little temporize: For though he knew the Emperor would be obnoxious to him, as long as there was ſo manifeſt an uſe of his Aſſiſtance; yet withal, he did not deſire *Charles* ſhould be too abſolute in *Germany*, leſt afterwards he ſhould turn his Arms upon *Italy*, and give the Law to his Country and Religion, upon pretence that there was no other way to conſerve Peace. Neither were the Catholicks themſelves in *Germany* over-forward to take his part, leſt under colour of reducing Religion to its former ſtate by Arms, he would overthrow their Liberty. For preventing whereof, as well as divers other ſuſpicions among the Proteſtants (that the Council of *Trent* was aſſembled only to condemn them) he ſent again to the Pope, to deſire that the Council might continue, and the Legates might treat only of a Reformation. To which, becauſe he knew ſome were averſe, he directed a particular Meſſage unto the Cardinal *Santa Croce*, telling him, that if he offered to diſſolve the Council, he would cauſe him to be thrown into the River *Adice.* The Pope finding the Emperor thus in earneſt, continues the Council; writing yet to the Legates, that they ſhould entertain the time: And for this purpoſe Faſtings, Prayers, and a Jubile (now publiſhed for the good ſucceſs of this War) did ſerve. Neither was it without cauſe; the Proteſtants Army be-

1546. ing now drawn near *Tiroll*, to hinder the *Italians* from joyning with the Imperialiſts. The danger whereof being magnified by
July 10. the more timorous ſort of Biſhops, many were deſirous to retire, while ſome fled from the Council. But the Cardinal of *Trent* newly returned from *Rome*, comforted thoſe which remained. And now the Popes and other the *Italian* Auxiliary Forces paſſing by *Trent* into *Germany*, another way than the Proteſtants
Auguſt 15. expected, they at laſt at *Landſhut* in *Bavaria* joyned with the Emperor; who beſtowed upon *Ottavio Farneſe* (their General) the Order of the *Toiſon*, and took a muſter of his men: The Proteſtant Army being at *Donawert*, which they had newly taken, and in that readineſs, that they attended only their advantage to fight.

Auguſt 7. But we will leave them in this poſture a while, to tell a notable accident which happened at *Malines* in *Brabant*, 7 *Auguſt*, 1546. Certain barrels of Powder, to the number of ſeven hundred, being ſtowed in the bottom of a great Tower, Lightning falling thereon, and kindling it, the Tower was raiſed from his foundations on high, and ſcattered in the air; the ſtones whereof flying every way, threw down two hundred Houſes in the City, and as many in the Suburbs, kill'd five hundred men, and hurt two thouſand; the wind whereof broke glaſs-windows every where, and opened many locks. Beſides which, it had this prodigious effect, that it dryed up all the water in a ditch adjoyning, being a Pike deep, and levelled the earth, rooting up together many trees; of which kind, it was obſerved, that thoſe which loſt only their leaves and fruit, budded again, and bore in Autumn.

Stow. But it ſeems more ſtrange which *Stow* relates, that in *England* this year a Potter falling aſleep, *April* 27. could not be wakened in fourteen days and nights, finding himſelf yet afterwards as if he had taken but one nights reſt.

The Duke of *Saxe* and Landtgrave of *Heſſe*, who commanded the Proteſtant Army, being compoſed of ſeventy or eighty thouſand Foot, and ten thouſand Horſe, and an hundred Canon, thought it unjuſt to begin the War till they had ſent the Emperor a Defie: Stiling him yet therein not by that name; but as a Pretender to be Emperor. He on the other ſide, little regarding the Language, endeavoured one while to overthrow, and another while to divide them. The whole paſſage whereof may be ſeen in *Luys d' Avila*, to whom I refer the Reader. And the rather, that his Excellence Prince *Maurice de Naſſau*, did recommend the Book to me, more than once, as a Maſter-piece in its kind.

While theſe Armies coaſt each other, the Legates in *Trent* (now free from the Soldateſque) adviſed how to delay the time, admitting new matters, which alſo their intemperate diſputes did

did furniſh. The Cardinal *Santa Croce* projecting alſo, That the former Controverſie ſhould be renew'd of Preparatory Works, Obſervance of the Law, *&c.* Whereupon the point of Free-will was brought into queſtion, and certain Opinions of the Reformers, therein odiouſly propoſed. From whence aroſe a queſtion, whether believing and not believing were in our power? and many things were ſaid thereupon, (it ſeeming at laſt equally abſurd to believe all things to be in our Power, and nothing.) Theſe Points again begot diſtinctions, and at laſt brought in the Article of Predeſtination, which with the conſequences was ſo hard, as being diſputed by the Prelates and Divines in a hundred Congregations, and afterward reduced into a form of Decree by the Cardinal *Santa Croce*: yet he had ſo much ado to content all ſides, that from the beginning of *September* to the end of *November*, each day ſome words therein were altered; yet ſo, as at length it paſt, and was ſent to the Pope, who remitted it to the Learned men at *Rome*, by whom it was approved, as being conceived in ſuch terms, that all parts might fit and apply it to their own Opinions. In the point of Reformation, the qualities required for the Promotion of Prelates was handled, and many good things ſaid, but the means how to obſerve them were as little found, as how to bind their ſuperiours to do always that which was fitting. So that after divers diſcourſes, it was thought fit to leave off this Point. Much was ſaid alſo, concerning Matters of Reſidency: The particulars whereof produced that Controverſie, as in the year 1562. and 1563. came to a great height. The preſent contention was between the *Spaniſh* Prelates; who for the magnifying of the Epiſcopal dignity, held that Reſidence was *Ex jure Divino*; and the *Italian* Biſhops, who for ſuſtaining the Popes Authority, ſaid, It was Commanded by him only, and therefore might be diſpenſed with, *&c.* But this diſpute being put off by the Legates, the Ancient Canons for Reſidency were Revived, and ſome new ones enacted, which were the more willingly accepted, in that the abuſe of Exemptions of Regular and Secular Prieſts from the Juriſdiction of their Ordinary, was moderated. 1546. Aug. 20.

The Emperor now having heard that our King treated with the Proteſtants, expoſtulated the matter with him. But the King denyed, He intended any Aid to the Proteſtants; ſaying yet, that if he ſought Friendſhip abroad he was not to be blamed; ſince the Emperor in his new Treaty with the Biſhop of *Rome*, had agreed to fall on thoſe that refuſed the Biſhops Authority, and the Council of *Trent*; wherein, though the King were not particularly named, yet that He was taken for a *Lutheran*. Nevertheleſs, that He Treated not with the Proteſtants, and therefore wiſh'd the Emperor to have a better opinion of him, ſince if He would have given credit to his advice, He needed not to have September. Records.

1546. Octob. have entred thoſe dangers He was in. And now the Pope hearing how things paſs'd, commanded the Cardinal *Farneſe* to return. For though the Emperor by ſecret fomenting the emulation for Command which paſſed between the Duke of *Saxe* and *Landtgrave*, was in a good way to compaſs his ends; yet becauſe He made not an overt War of Religion, the Pope both recall'd the Cardinal, and permitted ſome of the *Italian* Gentry to come Octob. 13. with him. Nevertheleſs, about the midſt of *October*, the two Armies met ſo near together about *Giengen* in *Suabe*, that only a little River parted them. Where alſo the Proteſtants omitted a notable Opportunity of falling on the Imperialiſts; ſome blows yet paſt, and *Donawert* was regain'd by *Ottavio Farneſe*: Shortly after which, the Duke of *Saxe* was conſtrain'd to retire to his own Country, for the defence thereof, againſt *Ferdinand* and Nov. 23. *Maurice* who invaded it; and the *Landtgrave*, to his. Of which our King was particularly advertiſed by *Somerſet* his Herald, who accompanying *Bruno*, (now returning from *England* to the Proteſtant Army) obſerv'd all Occurrences. The Proteſtant Forces now being withdrawn, divers Princes and Cities of that League treated of an Accommodation with the Emperor, when they might have ſome honeſt Caution for the exerciſing of their Religion. But the Emperor would give none by writing, though otherwiſe promiſe was made by the Imperial Miniſters, that they ſhould not be moleſted. And thus the Emperor recovered much great Ordnance, and huge ſums of Money from ſome Cities by way of Reparation for their faults, and reſted abſolute Soveraign of the upper and greater part of *Germany*; whereby he was enabled to give Law to the reſt, and to conſtrain *Herman* Novemb. 4. Arch-biſhop of *Cologne* (which had lately appeal'd from the Pope to a lawful Council in *Germany*) to ſurrender his Archbiſhoprick. Which ſtate of things being advertiſed hither, Our Jan. 25. 1547. King thought fit to comply with the Emperor, for this purpoſe October. alſo acquainting him with ſome Paſſages, which might give him juſt occaſion to be Jealous of *Francis*. For though (by the advice of the Cardinal of *Tournon*) to make his Authority at home more entire, He had lately Condemned to the fire certain Citizens of *Meaulx*, who Combin'd for a private Reformation in Religion, yet He treated with the Proteſtants at this *Sleidan.* time.

The Pope alſo hearing of that which paſs'd, began to think of his own Affairs, before all *Germany* were reduc'd to the Emperors obedience: Inſomuch, that though His Forces were much diminiſhed, (between thoſe that return'd with the Cardinal, and others that ran away) He yet recall'd the reſt about December. the middle of *December*, upon pretence that they had ſtayed the ſix Months which he had promiſed; Alledging for further excuſe, That he was not able to ſuſtain the Charge. But this being

ing ill taken by the Emperor, ſince the heads of the Rebellion (as he termed them) were not yet taken in; the Pope for his further Juſtification, replyed, That he was not made partaker of the Accord betwixt the Emperor and the Cities and Princes: And that it was much to the prejudice of the Catholick Faith, in tolerating Hereſie, which might have been exterminated. Beſides, that according to the Articles of their Treaty, he ſhould have participated of the Profits and ſpoils of the War. And not content herewith, he denyed the Emperor the further Revenues of the *Spaniſh* Clergy. So that though the Imperial Miniſters at *Rome* told him, He had done nothing unleſs he perfected his Work, they could not prevail. For further teſtimony alſo of his diſpleaſure to the Emperor, raiſing a Faction in *Genoüa* againſt the *Dorcaes*, being the Emperors friends. 1546.

Neither did he (as ſome have it) fear, that the Emperor (having ſo much to do in *Germany*) could haſtily invade him, or trouble him, otherwiſe than by according with the Proteſtants, and cauſing them to repair to the Council of *Trent*, which yet he thought not fit to diſſolve, though Seven months had paſt, without publiſhing any thing treated therein. So that, notwithſtanding he knew that the Emperor would be diſcontented at his rigid proceedings in matters of Doctrine, he uſed the Florentine Motto, *Coſa fatta capo ha:* And thereupon writ to the Legates, that they ſhould hold a Seſſion, and publiſh the Decrees already made; which alſo was done, the Proteſtants yet queſtioning the Authority of them. Among the Cities of *Germany* that ſubmitted, *Ulms* was one; where alſo the Emperor wintered, with intention to continue War the next Spring; which the Proteſtants underſtanding, thought fit (though once ſuing for Peace) to ſend ſeveral Ambaſſadors into *England* and *France* to demand ſuccours (though in vain) both Kings dying ſhortly after. Jan. 13.

While buſineſs of Religion was thus treated of abroad, our King by Proclamation did ſeverely forbid the Tranſlation of the New Teſtament, by *Tindal* and *Coverdale*, or any other than is permitted by Parliament: As alſo the *Engliſh* Books of *Frith*, *Wickliff*, *Tindal*, &c. which our King moſt ſtudiouſly ſuppreſt; both becauſe he would have his Subjects decline the bitter language and Doctrine to be found in ſome of them, and that he would introduce his own, or at leaſt a more ſober Reformation. Whereof alſo he was the more ſenſible, in that Women began now ordinarily to diſpute controverſies, and urge the Text: Inſomuch, that *Anne Askew*, a Gentlewoman, defended her ſelf therewith againſt her Perſecuters; though not ſo, but that ſhe was burnt for it. Beſides, the Queen her ſelf did this year run no little danger: for as ſhe began about this time July 8. Regn. 34. July 16.

1546. time to give ear unto thoſe who declaimed againſt the abuſes of the *Roman* Church, ſhe thought her ſelf ſo well inſtructed in Religion, that ſhe would debate with the King thereof: which yet the King did but impatiently hear; both as the anguiſh of a ſore leg he had at this time made him very froward, and as he loved not to be contradicted in his opinions, eſpecially, as he ſaid, in his old age, and by his Wife. This again was exaggerated by *Stephen Gardiner* Biſhop of *Wincheſter* ſo far, that by repreſenting the hazard ſhe incurr'd by contravening the Six Articles, and the late Proclamation, in reading of forbidden Books, and teaching openly her doctrine, the King gave *Wincheſter*, and *Wriotheſley* the Chancellor, and others leave to conſult about the drawing of Articles againſt her, which they failed not to preſent unto the King, who ſubſcribed them: Inſomuch, that her Enemies expected only a Warrant for carrying her by night to the Tower. Which the Queen accidentally having notice of, fell into that paſſion and bitter bewailing her misfortune, that the King hearing the perplexity ſhe was in, ſent his Phyſicians, and after came himſelf to her Chamber, where compaſſionating her eſtate, he uſed ſuch kind words as did help to recover her. Inſomuch, that the next night, being attended by the Lady *Anne* her Siſter, Wife to Sir *William Herbert* after Earl of *Pembroke*, ſhe went unto the Kings Bed-chamber, where he courteouſly welcomed her, and began to talk of Religion.

But ſhe wittily excuſing her ſelf by the weakneſs of her Sex and Judgement, ſaid, ſhe would refer her ſelf in this and all other cauſes, to his Majeſties wiſdom. Not ſo (by Saint *Mary*) quoth the King, you are become a Doctor, *Kate*, to inſtruct us (as we take it) and not to be inſtructed or directed by us. But the Queen replying, that what ſhe ſaid was rather to paſs away the time and pain of his infirmity, than to hold argument; and that ſhe hoped by hearing his Majeſties learned diſcourſe, to receive ſome profit thereby. The King anſwered, And is it even ſo (Sweet-heart?) then are we perfect friends again: which alſo he confirmed by divers teſtimonies. But as her Maligners knew nothing of this reconcilement, they prepared the next day to carry her to the Tower, at a time limitted by the Kings Warrant. This being come, and ſhe happening to be merrily talking with him in his Garden, the Lord *Wriotheſley* with forty of the Guard comes in; whom the King ſternly beholding, and after calling to him (at ſome diſtance from the Queen) ſo expoſtulated the matter, as at laſt he reviled, and commanded him out of his ſight and preſence. Nevertheleſs, at the Kings return, ſhe was an humble ſuter for his Pardon. But the King anſwered no otherwiſe, than that ſhe (poor ſoul) did not know how evil he deſerved this grace at her hands. And thus, by her opportune ſubmiſſion ſhe eſcaped: Though yet ſome believe, it was not

ſo

ſo much the Kings intention herein to uſe the rigour of the Law, as to deter her from reading forbidden Books. Howſoever, if he were not in earneſt, it was thought a terrible jeſt, eſpecially to a Queen, that had the reputation of a vertuous, humble, and obſervant Wife. But *Wincheſter*, who (it was thought) chiefly endeavoured her ruine, did himſelf not long after fall into the Kings diſfavour, as by his ſubmiſſion extant in our Records doth appear: though whether on this occaſion, or that he was a ſpecial Friend to the Duke of *Norfolk*, who was now alſo in diſgrace with the King (as ſhall be told hereafter,) or any other cauſe, is not there determined. Howſoever, the King excluded him out of the number of thoſe whom he appointed his Executors, and Counſellors to his Son and Succeſſor, *Edward* VI. 1546. Decemb. 2.

Concerning *Scotiſh* Buſineſs this year, little paſs'd worth the writing, that I can find, ſave only that King *Henry* ſent the Earl of *Lenox* into *Ireland* with Command, that he together with the Earl of *Ormond*, and a certain Lord out of the *Scotiſh* Iſles (as he termed himſelf) who had adhered to our King, ſhould fall upon *Scotland:* But as the Enterpriſe was diſcovered, they were forced to retire to *Dublin*, where the ſaid *Scotiſh* Lord, who brought three Galleys with him for this Enterpriſe, died.

This while Cardinal *Beton* perſecuting thoſe of the Reformed Religion in that Countrey, was himſelf ſlain at St. *Andrews* in his Caſtle, by certain Gentlemen who ſurprized the place; and after defended it, until the Governour beſieged, and (at laſt) took it by the help of ſome ſuccour which the *French* ſent them in their Galleys. That kind of Shipping being ſo built in thoſe days, that they brook'd our Seas with no little advantage, when the times were fair. May 19.

I ſhall conclude this year with the diſaſter of the renowned Lord the Duke of *Norfolk*, and the execution of his Son *Henry* the Earl of *Surrey*, which paſs'd in this manner, as our Records tell us.

The Dutcheſs *Elizabeth*, Daughter to *Edward Stafford* Duke of *Buckingham*, having for many years entertained ſo violent jealouſies of the Duke her Husbands matrimonial affection and loyalty, as it broke out at laſt to open rancor, divers occaſions of ſcandal were given: Inſomuch, that not being content with having ſurmized a long while ſince two Articles againſt him, ſhe again in ſundry Letters to the Lord Privy-Seal, both averr'd the Articles, and manifeſtly accuſed ſome of his Minions, repeated divers hard uſages ſhe pretended to receive from them, and briefly diſcovered all the ordinary paſſions of her offended ſex. This again being urged in a time when the King was in his declining age,

1546. age, and for the reſt, diſquieted with ſcruples, that the Dukes Greatneſs or Intereſts in ſequent times might interrupt the order he intended to give, was not unwillingly heard. So that notwithſtanding his many important and faithful Services, both in War and Peace, at home and abroad, he and his Son *Henry* Earl of *Surrey* were expoſed to the malignity and detraction of their accuſers. This again fell out in an unfortunate time: For beſides that the Lady his Dutcheſs had now for above four years been ſeparated from him; his Son the Earl of *Surrey* was but newly, and perchance, ſcarce reconciled with him; his Daughter *Mary* Dutcheſs of *Richmond* not only inclined to the Proteſtant party, (which loved not the Duke) but grown an extream Enemy of her Brother: ſo that there was not only a kind of inteſtine diviſion in his Family, but this again many ſecret ways fomented.

Among which, the induſtry of one Mrs. *Holland*, thought to be the Duke's Favourite, appeared not a little, as deſirous (at what price ſoever) to conſerve her ſelf. Beſides, divers at the Kings Council diſaffected him, and particularly the Earl of *Holland*, as knowing that after the Kings death (now thought to be imminent) none was ſo capable to oppoſe him in the place he aſpired to of Protector. All which circumſtances concurring, and being voyced abroad, incouraged divers of his Adverſaries to declare themſelves: And the rather: becauſe it was notorious, how the King had not only withdrawn much of his wonted favour, but promiſed impunity to ſuch as could diſcover any thing concerning him.

Decemb. 2. The firſt that manifeſted himſelf was Sir *Richard Southwel*, who ſaid that he knew certain things of the Earl, that touched his fidelity to the King: The Earl, before the Lord Chancellour *Wriotheſley*, the Lord *St. John*, the Earl of *Hertford*, and others, vehemently affirmed himſelf a true man, deſiring to be tryed by Decemb. 2. juſtice, or elſe offering himſelf to fight in his ſhirt with *Southwel*: But the Lords for the preſent only committed them. The Duke this while, hearing his Son was in trouble, ſends to divers of his Friends to know the cauſe, and particularly to the Biſhop of Decem. 3. 4. *Wincheſter*: Thoſe Letters yet (it is probable) fell into the King's Councils hands; but could not preſerve him from being involved in his Sons fortune: ſo that he was ſent for, and the Decemb. 12. ſame day, not long after his Son, committed to the Tower. Divers perſons alſo were examined concerning his Affairs. Mrs. *Elizabeth Holland* being diſpoſed, confeſs'd, that the Duke had told her, that none of the Kings Council loved him, becauſe they were no Noble-men born themſelves; as alſo becauſe he believed too truly in the Sacrament of the Altar. Moreover, that the King loved him not, becauſe he was too much lov'd in his Country; But that he would follow his Fathers leſſon, which was,

was, That the leſs others ſet by him, the more he would ſet by himſelf. As alſo, that the Duke complained that he was not of the moſt ſecret (or, as it is there term'd, the Privy privy) Council. And that the King was much grown of his body, and that he could not go up and down the ſtairs, but was let up and down by a device. And that his Majeſty was ſickly, and could not long endure; and the Realm like to be in an ill caſe through diverſity of opinions. And that if he were a young man, and the Realm in quiet, he would ask leave to ſee the *Vernacle*; which he ſaid, was the picture of Chriſt given to Women by himſelf as he went to death. As touching his Arms, that ſhe had not heard the Duke ſpeak of his own, but of his Son's, that he liked them not, and that he had gathered them himſelf knew not from whence; And that he placed the *Norfolk*'s Arms wrong, and had found fault with him: And therefore that ſhe ſhould take no pattern of his Sons Arms to work them with her needle in his Houſe, but as he gave them. Furthermore, ſhe confeſſed that the Earl of *Surrey* lov'd her not, nor the Dutcheſs of *Richmond* him; and that ſhe addicted her ſelf much to the ſaid Dutcheſs. 1547.

Mary Dutcheſs of *Richmond* being examined, confeſs'd, That the Duke her Father would have had her Marry Sir *Thomas Seymor*, Brother to the Earl of *Hertford*, which her Brother alſo deſired, wiſhing her withal to endear her ſelf ſo into the King's favour, as ſhe might the better rule here here as others had done; and that ſhe refuſed: And that her Father would have had the Earl of *Surrey* to have matched with the Earl of *Hertford*'s Daughter, which her Brother likewiſe heard of (and that this was the cauſe of his Fathers diſpleaſure) as taking *Hertford* to be his Enemy. And that her Brother was ſo much incenſed againſt the ſaid Earl, as the Duke his Father ſaid thereupon, His Son would loſe as much as he had gathered together.

Moreover, That the Earl her Brother ſhould ſay, Theſe new men loved no Nobility; and if God call'd away the King, they ſhould ſmart for it. And that her Brother hated them all ſince his being in Cuſtody in *Windſor* Caſtle; but that her Father ſeemed not to care for their ill will, ſaying, His truth ſhould bear him out. Concerning Arms ſhe ſaid, that ſhe thought that her Brother had more than ſeven Rolls; and that ſome, that he had added more of *Anjou*, and of *Lancelott Du-lac*. And that her Father ſince the Attainder of the Duke of *Buckingham*, (who bare the King's Arms) where the Arms of her Mother (Daughter to the ſaid Duke) were rayned in his Coat, had put a blank-quarter in the place, but that her Brother had reaſſum'd them. Alſo that inſtead of the Dukes Coronet, was put to his Arms a Cap of maintenance Purple, with powdred Furr, and with a Crown, to her judgment, much like to a cloſe Crown; and

1547. underneath the Arms was a Cipher, which ſhe took to be the Kings Cipher, *HR*. As alſo that her Father never ſaid that the King hated him, but his Counſellors; but that her Brother ſaid, the King was diſpleaſed with him (as he thought) for the loſs of the great journey. Which diſpleaſure, he conceived, was ſet forward by them who hated him, for ſetting up an Altar in the Church at *Boulogne*. And that her Brother ſhould ſay, God long ſave my Fathers life; for if he were dead, they would ſhortly have my head. And that he reviled ſome of the preſent Council, not forgetting the old Cardinal. Alſo that he diſſuaded her from going too far in reading the Scripture. Some paſſionate words of her Brother ſhe likewiſe repeated, as alſo ſome circumſtantial ſpeeches, little for his advantage; yet ſo, as they ſeemed much to clear her Father.

Sir *Edmund Knevet* being examined, ſaid, he knew no untruth directly by the Earl of *Surrey*, but ſuſpected him of diſſimulation and vanity: And that a Servant of his had been in *Italy* with Cardinal *Poole*, and was received again at his return. Moreover, that he kept one *Paſquil* an *Italian* as a Jeſter, but more likely a Spy, and ſo reputed. He mentioned alſo one *Peregrine* an *Italian* entertain'd by the ſaid Earl; adding that he lov'd to converſe with Strangers, and to conform his behaviour to them. And that he thought he had therein ſome great ill device.

One *Thomas Pope* alſo informed the Council, that *John Freeman* told him, that the Duke (at *Nottingham*, in the time of the Commotion of the North) ſhould ſay in the preſence of an hundred perſons, that the Act of Uſes was the worſt Act that ever was made, and that *Freeman* affirmed thoſe words before the Lord *Audeley*, late Lord Chancellor. Theſe depoſitions, together with others (as it ſeems) being brought to the Kings Judges at *Norwich*, they ſignified by their Letter unto the Lords of the Council, dated *Jan.* 7. that the Kings Solicitour and Mr. *Stamford* had brought the Indictments, and that they were found true, and the Duke and his Son indicted thereupon of High Treaſon; and that they made haſte to bring the ſaid Indictment to *London*; deſiring further to know whether Sir *Thomas Paſton*, Sir *Edmund Knevet*, Sir *John Peer* and others ſhould be of the ſame Jury. Upon the 13th. (the King being now dangerouſly ſick) the Earl of *Surrey* was Arraigned in *Guild-Hall* in *London*, before the Lord Chancellor, the Lord Mayor, and other Commiſſioners. Where the Earl, as he was of a deep underſtanding, ſharp wit, and deep courage, defended himſelf many ways: ſometimes denying their accuſations as falſe, and together weakning the credit of his Adverſaries; ſometimes interpreting the words he ſaid, in a far other ſence than that in which they were repreſented. For the point of bearing his Arms (among which thoſe of *Edmund*

mund the Confeſſor are related) alledging that he had the opinion of Heralds therein. And finally, when a Witneſs was brought againſt him *vivâ voce*, who pretended to repeat ſome high words of the Earls by way of diſcourſe, which concern'd him nearly, and that thereupon the ſaid Witneſs ſhould return a braving Anſwer: the Earl replyed no otherwiſe to the Jury, than that he left it to them to judge, whether it were probable that this man ſhould ſpeak thus to the Earl of *Surrey*, and he not ſtrike him again. In Concluſion, he pleaded not guilty; but the Jury (which was a common Inqueſt, not of the Peers, becauſe the Earl was not a Parliament Lord) condemn'd him. Whereupon alſo judgement of Death was given, and he Beheaded at Tower-Hill. And thus ended the Earl; a man Learned, and of an excellent wit, as his compoſitions ſhew. 1547.

This while the King (though his ſickneſs encreaſed) omitted not to give order to ſeize on the Duke's Goods, and together to inform himſelf of all which might be material againſt him. Not forgetting alſo to cauſe *Wriotheſley* to advertiſe the Kings Ambaſſadors in foreign Parts, that the Duke of *Norfolk* and his Son had conſpired to take upon them the Government of the King, during his Majeſties life, as alſo after his death to get into their hands the Lord Prince; but that their devices were revealed, and they committed to the Tower. And that for preventing uncertain bruits, they were willed to communicate the premiſſes. But the Duke, who had now as much merit of ancient Service to plead for him, as any Subject of his time could pretend to, thought fit from the Tower to write unto the King in this manner.

Jan. 19.

Moſt gracious and merciful Sovereign Lord, I your moſt humble Subject proſtitute at your foot, do moſt humbly beſeech your Highneſs to be my good and gracious Lord. I am ſure ſome great Enemy of mine hath informed your Majeſty of ſome untrue matter againſt me. Sir, God doth know, in all my life I never thought one untrue thought againſt you, or your Succeſſion, nor can no more judge or caſt in my mind what ſhould be laid to my charge, than the Child that was born this night. And certainly, if I knew that I had offended your Majeſty in any point of untruth, I would declare the ſame to your Highneſs. But (as God help me) I cannot accuſe my ſelf ſo much as in thought. Moſt noble and merciful Sovereign Lord, For all the old ſervice I have done you in my life, be ſo good and gracious a Lord unto me, that either my Accuſers and I together may be brought before your Royal Majeſty; or if your pleaſure ſhall not be to take that pains, then before your Council: Then if I ſhall not make it apparent that I am wrongfully accuſed, let me, without more reſpite, have puniſhment according to my de-

1547.

ſerts: Alas, moſt merciful Prince, I have no refuge but only at your hands, and therefore at the reverence of Chriſt's Paſſion have pity of me, and let me not be caſt away by falſe Enemies Informations. Undoubtedly, I know not that I have offended any man, or that any man was offended with me, unleſs it were ſuch as are angry with me for being quick againſt ſuch as have been accuſed for Sacramentaries. And as for all cauſes of Religion, I ſay now, and have ſaid to your Majeſty and many others, I do know you to be a Prince of ſuch vertue and knowledge, that whatſoever Laws you have in times paſt made, or hereafter ſhall make, I ſhall to the extremity of my power ſtick unto them as long as my life ſhall laſt. So that if any men be angry with me for theſe cauſes, they do me wrong. Other cauſe I know not why any man ſhould bear me any ill will: and for this cauſe I know divers have done, as doth appear by caſting Libels abroad againſt me. Finally, (moſt gracious Sovereign Lord) I moſt humbly beſeech your Majeſty to have pity of me, and let me recover your gracious favour, with taking of me all the Lands and Goods I have, or as much thereof as pleaſeth your Highneſs to take, leaving me what it ſhall pleaſe you to appoint; and that according as is before written, I may know what is laid to my charge, and that I may hear ſome comfortable word from your Majeſty. And I ſhall during my life pray for your proſperous eſtate long to endure.

Your moſt ſorrowful Subject,

THO. NORFOLK.

To the Lords he wrote thus:

Item, Moſt humbly to beſeech, my Lords, That I might have ſome of the Books that are at *Lambeth*; for unleſs I may have Books to read ere I fall on ſleep, and after I awake again I cannot ſleep, nor did not this dozen years.

Alſo to deſire that I might have a Ghoſtly Father ſent to me, and that I might receive my Maker.

Alſo that I might have Maſs, and to be bound upon my life to ſpeak no word to him that ſhall ſay Maſs, which he may do in the other Chamber, and I to remain within.

Item, To have licence in the day time, to walk in the Chamber without, and in the night to be lock'd in, as I am now. At my firſt coming I had a Chamber without adays. I would gladly have licence to ſend to *London* to buy one Book of St. *Auguſtins*, *de Civitate*

1547.

de Civitate Dei; and of *Josephus*, *de Antiquitatibus*; and another of *Sabellicus*; who doth declare most of any Book that I have read, how the Bishop of *Rome* from time to time hath usurped his power against all Princes, by their unwise sufferance.

Item, For Sheets.

Nevertheless, the Duke remained as condemn'd to perpetual Prison, without that his great Services formerly rendered, or his submission on this occasion could restore him; which was in these words, as I find by our Records in an Original.

I THOMAS Duke of *Norfolk*, do confess and acknowledge my self most untruly, and contrary to my Oath and Allegiance, to have offended the King's most excellent Majesty, in the disclosing and opening of his privy and secret Counsel at divers and sundry times, to divers and sundry persons, to the great peril of his Highness, and disappointing of his most prudent and Regal Affairs.

T. N.

Also, I likewise confess, That I have concealed High Treason, in keeping secret the false and traiterous Act, most presumptuously committed by my Son *Henry Howard* Earl of *Surrey*, against the King's Majesty and his Laws, in the putting and using the Arms of St. *Edward* the Confessor, King of the Realm of *England* before the Conquest, in his Scutchion or Arms: which said Arms of St. *Edward* appertain only to the King of this Realm, and to none other person or persons; whereunto the said Earl by no means or way could make any claim or title, by me, or any of mine or his Ancestors.

T. N.

Also, I likewise confess, That to the peril, slander, and disinherison of the King's Majesty, and his noble Son Prince *Edward*, his Son and Heir apparent, I have against all right, unjustly, and without authority, born in the first quarter of mine Arms, ever since the death of

1547. of my Father, the Arms of *England*, with a difference of the *Labels* of Silver, which are the proper Arms of my ſaid Prince, to be born for this Realm of *England* only; whereby I have not only done prejudice to the King's Majeſty, and the ſaid Lord the Prince, but alſo given occaſion that his Highneſs might be diſturbed or interrupted of the Crown of this Realm, and my ſaid Lord Prince might be deſtroyed, diſturbed and interrupted in fame, body, and title, of the inheritance to the Crown of this Realm. Which I know and confeſs by the Laws of the Realm to be High Treaſon.

T. N.

For the which my ſaid hainous offences, I have worthily deſerved by the Laws of the Realm to be attainted of High Treaſon, and to ſuffer the puniſhment, loſſes and forfeitures that appertain thereunto. And although I be not worthy to have or enjoy any part of the King's Majeſties clemency and mercy to be extended to me, conſidering the great and manifold benefits that I and mine have received of his Highneſs: yet I moſt humbly, and with a moſt ſorrowful and repentant heart, do beſeech his Highneſs to have mercy, pity, and compaſſion on me. And I ſhall moſt devoutly and heartily make my daily prayer to God for the preſervation of his moſt noble Succeſſion, as long as life and breath ſhall continue in me.

T. N.

Written the 12th. day of the Month of *January*, in the year of our Lord God, 1546. after the computation of the Church of *England*, and in the 38 year of our Sovereign Lord *Henry* the VIII. by the grace of God King of *England*, *France*, and *Ireland*, Defender of the Faith; and of the Church of *England*, and alſo of *Ireland* the ſupream Head. In witneſs of all the premiſſes, I the ſaid Duke have ſubſcribed my name with my own hand, in the preſence of the Lord *Wriotheſley* Lord Chan-

Chancellor, the Lord St. *John* Lord Preſident of the Council, the Earl of *Hertford* Lord great Chamberlain, the Viſcount *Liſle* Lord high Admiral, Sir *Anthony Brown* Maſter of the Horſe, Sir *William Paget* Secretary, Sir *Richard Rich*, Sir *John Baker* of our ſaid Sovereign Lords privy Council, Sir *Richard Liſter*, Sir *Edward Montague* the two chief Juſtices. 1547.

Without compulſion, without force, without advice or counſel, I have and do ſubſcribe the premiſſes, ſubmitting me only to the King's moſt gracious pity and mercy, moſt humbly beſeeching his Highneſs to extend the ſame unto me his moſt ſorrowful Subject.

By me THO. NORFOLK.

Thomas Wriotheſley Chancellor,
William St. John, *Anth. Browne*,
John Liſle, *Richard Rich*,
William Paget, *Rich. Liſter*,
John Baker. *Edward Montague*.
E. Hertford,

Notwithſtanding all which ſubmiſſion, joyned with the merits of his Services, it was thought that the Duke would hardly eſcape, had not the King's death, following ſhortly after, reſerved him to more merciful times. For our King having long laboured under the burden of an extream fat and unwieldy body, and together being afflicted with a ſore leg, took (at the Palace of *Weſtminſter*, in *January*, this year) his death bed; being for the reſt not without ſenſe of his preſent condition. For he both cauſed a Church of the Franciſcans in *London* (lately ſuppreſt) to be opened again, and made a Pariſh Church, endowing it with 500 Marks *per annum*; and beſtowed both the ground and buildings of the ſaid *Covent*, as alſo the adjoyning Hoſpital of St. *Bartholomew*, on the City, for the relief of the Poor: where now is the fair Hoſpital called Chriſt-Church: ſuppreſs'd the Stews on the Bank-ſide, and made his laſt Will and Teſtament, the Original whereof yet having not ſeen, I ſhall mention no otherwiſe. March. 1546.

As

1547.

As for *Sanders* affirmation, that he was not desirous to be reconciled to the *Roman* Church; and that his Courtiers (especially those who had profited themselves of Abbies) did divert him; and that the Bishops rested doubtful what to answer, lest they should be entrapped; and how *Winchester* did cunningly evade the danger, I leave to his credit. Others affirming, that he desired to speak with *Cranmer*, who yet not coming sooner than that the King was speechless (though in good memory) the King extended his hand to him; and that thereupon *Cranmer* besought him to give some sign of his trust in God by Christ, and that the King should strain his hand. Howsoever, it may be collected, that he died religiously and penitently, when he had Reigned seven and thirty years, nine months and six days; and after he had lived five and fifty years and seven months; and was carryed to *Windsor*, where he had begun a fair Monument, and founded a Colledge for thirteen poor Knights, and two Priests to pray for his soul.

Jan. 28. 1547.

And now if the Reader (according to my manner in other great Personages) do expect some Character of this Prince, I must affirm, (as in the beginning) that the course of his life being commonly held various and diverse from it self, he will hardly suffer any, and that his History will be his best Character and description. Howbeit, since others have so much defamed him, as will appear by the following Objections, I shall strive to rectifie their understandings who are impartial lovers of truth; without either presuming audaciously to condemn a Prince, heretofore Sovereign of our Kingdom, or omitting the just freedom of an Historian.

And because his most bitter censurers agree, that he had all manner of perfection either of nature or education; and that he was (besides) of a most deep judgment in all Affairs to which he applyed himself; a Prince not only liberal and indulgent to his Family, and Court, but even to Strangers, whom he willingly saw; and one that made choice both of able and good men for the Clergy, and of wise and grave Counsellors for his State-Affairs; and above all, a Prince of a Royal courage: I shall not controvert these points, but come to my particular observations. According to which, I find him to have been ever most zealous of his Honour and Dignity; insomuch, that his most questioned passages were countenanced either with home or foreign Authority: so many Universities of *Italy* and *France* maintaining his repudiating of Queen *Katharine* of *Spain*; and his Parliament (for the rest) authorizing the Divorces and decapitations of his following

lowing Wives, the diſſolutions of the Monaſteries, and divers others of his moſt branded Actions: So that by his Parliaments in publick, and Juries in private Affairs, he at leaſt wanted not colour and pretext to make them ſpecious to the World; which alſo he had reaſon to affect: Outward eſteem and reputation being the ſame to great Perſons which the skin is to the fruit, which though it be but a ſlight and delicate cover, yet without it the fruit will preſently diſcolour and rot. 1547.

As for matter of State, I dare ſay, never Prince went upon a truer Maxime for this Kingdom; which was, to make himſelf Arbiter of Chriſtendom: And had it not coſt him ſo much, none had ever proceeded more wiſely. But as he would be an Actor (for the moſt part) where he needed only be a Spectator, he both engaged himſelf beyond what was requiſite, and by calling in the mony he lent his Confederates and Allies, did often diſoblige them when he had moſt need of their friendſhip. Yet thus he was the moſt Active Prince of his time. The examples whereof are ſo frequent in this Hiſtory, that there was no Treaty, or almoſt Conventicle in Chriſtendom, wherein he had not his particular Agent and intereſt; which, together with his intelligence in all Countries, and concerning all affairs, and the penſions given for that purpoſe, was one of his vaſt ways for ſpending of mony.

Again, I obſerve, that there never was Prince more delighted in Interviews, or (generally) came off better from them. To which alſo, as his goodly perſonage and excellent qualities did much diſpoſe him, ſo they gave him a particular advantage and luſtre. Howbeit, as theſe Voyages were extreme coſtly, ſo when he made uſe thereof to conclude a Treaty, it did not always ſucceed; eſpecially where credit was yielded to any ſingle and private word. Inſomuch, that at his laſt being with *Francis* (where he intended, upon his bare promiſe, *lier la partie* for the moſt important Affairs of Chriſtendom) he found himſelf ſo much fruſtrated and deceived.

At home it was his manner to treat much with his Parliaments; where, if gentle means ſerved not, he came to ſome degrees of the rough: though the more ſparingly, in that he knew his people did but too much fear him. Beſides, he underſtood well, that foul ways are not always paſſable, nor to be uſed (eſpecially in ſuſpected and dangerous times) but where others fail. However, it may be noted, That none of his Predeceſſours underſtood the temper of Parliaments better than himſelf, or that prevailed himſelf more dexterouſly of them. Therefore, without being much troubled at the tumultuous beginnings of the raſher ſort, he would give them that leave, which all new things muſt have, to ſettle. Which being done, his next care was to diſcover and pre-

1547. vent thoſe privy combinations that were not for his ſevice. After which, coming to the point of Contribution, he generally took ſtrict order, (by his Commiſſioners) that Gentlemen in the Country ſhould not ſpare each other; but that the true or (at leaſt) near approaching value of every mans Goods and Lands ſhould be certified. And this he did the rather, becauſe he knew the cuſtom of his people was to reckon with him about their Subſidies, and indeed, rather to number, than to weigh their Gifts.

As for his faults, I find that of opinionate and wilful much objected: Inſomuch, that the impreſſions privately given him by any Court-whiſperer, were hardly or never to be effaced. And herein the perſons near him had a ſingular ability; while beginning with the commendations of thoſe they would diſgrace, their manner was to inſinuate ſuch exceptions, as they would diſcommend a man more in few words, than commend him in many: Doing therein like cunning wreſtlers, who to throw one down, firſt take him up. Beſides, this wilfulneſs had a moſt dangerous quality annexed to it eſpecially towards his later end) being an intenſe jealouſie almoſt of all perſons and affairs, which diſpoſed him eaſily to think the worſt. Whereas it is a greater part of wiſdom to prevent, than to ſuſpect. Theſe conditions again being armed with power, produced ſuch terrible effects, as ſtiled him both at home and abroad by the name of *Cruel*; which alſo hardly can be avoyded; eſpecially, if that Attribute be due, not only to thoſe Princes who inflict capital puniſhments frequently, and for ſmall crimes, but to thoſe who pardon not all that are capable of mercy. And for teſtimonies in this kind, ſome urge two Queens, one Cardinal (*in procinctu*, at leaſt) or two (for *Poole* was condemned, though abſent;) Dukes, Marqueſſes, Earls, and Earls Sons, twelve; Barons and Knights eighteen; Abbats, Priors, Monks and Prieſts ſeventy ſeven; of the more common ſort, between one Religion and another, huge multitudes. He gave ſome proofs yet that he could forgive; though, as they were few and late, they ſerved not to recover him the name of a Clement Prince. As for Covetouſneſs, or Rapine, another main fault obſerved by *Sanders*, as extending not only to a promiſcuous overthrow of Religious Houſes, but a notable derogation of Title of Supreme Head of the Church in his Dominions (and the rather, that he ſtill retained the ſubſtance of the Roman Catholick Religion) nothing, that I know, can on thoſe terms palliate it, unleſs it might be collected, that the Religious Orders in his Kingdom would have aſſiſted thoſe who threatned Invaſion from abroad, and that he had no other extraordinary means than their Revenues then left to defend himſelf. For certainly, the publick pretext, taken from their exceſſive numbers in proportion to a well compoſed State, or the inordinate and vitious life of the general ſort, cannot ſufficiently excuſe

excuſe him; ſince, together with the ſupernumerary and debauched Abbeys, Priories and Nunneries, he ſubverted and extinguiſhed the good and opportune; without leaving any Receptacle for ſuch as through age or infirmity being unapt for ſecular buſineſs, would end their days in a devout and a retired life. Nevertheleſs, as he erected divers new Biſhopricks, increaſed the number of Colledges, and the ſtipend of Readers in the Univerſities, and did many other pious works, it is probable he intended ſome reparation. Though (as the *Roman* Catholick party conceives it) they were neither ſatisfactory for, nor equivalent to the deſolations and ruins he procured, when yet he ſhould pretend that the Revenues and number of the Gentry and Soldateſque of the Kingdom were augmented thereby. Howbeit, as in this act of overthrowing Monaſteries, his Parliaments were deeply engaged, it will be dangerous to queſtion the authority thereof, ſince things done by publick Vote, where they find not reaſon, make it; neither have many Laws other ground then the conſtitution of the times; which yet afterwards changing, leave their interpretation doubtful: inſomuch, that Poſterity might juſtly abrogate them when the cauſes thereof ceaſed, had they the power to do it. For which regard alſo I ſhall not interpoſe my opinion otherwiſe, then that this King had met with no occaſion to do that which hath cauſed ſo much ſcandal to him and his Parliaments. 1547.

But whereas *Sanders* hath remarked Covetouſneſs as a great vice in this King, I could wiſh it had been with more limitation, and ſo as he noted the other extreme (being Prodigality) for the greater fault: The examples of both being ſo pregnant in the Kings Father and himſelf. The firſt, by an exact inquiry into the corruptions and abuſes of his Officers and Subjects, and the prevailing himſelf thereof to bring all into good order; and the getting of mony together, whether by ordinary or extraordinary means (only when they were not manifeſtly unjuſt) and laſtly, by frugality, acquiring to himſelf the name of *prudent* at home, and *puiſſant* abroad; as being known to have in his coffers always as much as would pay an Army Royal. Whereas this King, ſo often exhauſting his Treaſury, that he was conſtrained at leſt to have recourſe to unuſual and grievous ways for relieving his wants, did not only diſaffect his Subjects in great part (as appeared in the Rebellion of the Northern men and others, though to their confuſion) but expoſed his Kingdom to the Invaſion of his Neighbours: who knowing (as all Princes do) to about how much their Neighbours Revenues amount, and that there remained no longer any ready way to improve them, did collect thence what forces he could furniſh; and conſequently, would have aſſailed him at home, but that their mutual diviſions did hinder them. Whereby it appears, that what in *Henry* VII. is call'd

1547. by ſome Covetouſneſs, was a royal Vertue: whereas the exceſſive and needleſs expences of *Henry* VIII: drew after them thoſe miſerable conſequences which the World hath ſo much reproached. Howbeit, there may be occaſion to doubt, whether the immenſe Treaſure which *Henry* the VII. left behind, were not (accidentally) the cauſe of thoſe ills that followed; while the young Prince his Son, finding ſuch a maſs of mony, did firſt careleſly ſpend, and after ſtrive to ſupply as he could.

As for the third Vice, wherewith he was juſtly charged, being Luſt and Wantonneſs; there is little to anſwer, more then that it was rather a perſonal fault, then damageable to the Publick: Howbeit, they who reprove it, ought not only to examine circumſtances (which much aggravate or extenuate the fact) but even the complexions of men. That concupiſcence which in ſome is a vice, being in others a diſeaſe of Repletion, in others a neceſſity of nature. It doth not yet appear that this fault did haſten the death of his Queens; he being noted more for practiſing of private pleaſures, then ſecret miſchiefs: ſo that if any undue motive did co-operate herein, it may be thought an inordinate deſire to have Poſterity (eſpecially maſculine) which might be the undoubted Heirs of him and the Kingdom, rather then any thing elſe.

With all his crimes yet, he was one of the moſt glorious Princes of his time: Inſomuch, that not only the chief Potentates of Chriſtendom did court him, but his Subjects in general did highly reverence him, as the many tryals he put them to, ſufficiently teſtifie: which yet expired ſo quickly, that it may be truly ſaid, All his Pomp died with him; his Memory being now expoſed to that obloquy, as his Accuſers will neither admit Reaſon of State to cover any where, or Neceſſity to excuſe his Actions. For, as they were either diſcontented Clergy-men (for his relinquiſhing the Papal Authority, and overthrowing the Monaſteries;) or offended Women (for divers ſevere examples againſt their Sex) that firſt oppos'd and cry'd him down, the clamour hath been the greater: So that although one *William Thomas* a Clerk to the Council to *Edward* the Sixth, and living about the later times of *Henry* the Eighth's Reign, did in great part defend him in an *Italian* Book, printed *Anno* 1552, it hath not availed.

But what this Prince was, and whether, and how far forth excuſable in point of State, Conſcience, or Honour, a diligent obſervation of his Actions, together with a conjuncture of the times, will (I conceive) better declare to the judicious Reader, then any factious relation on what ſide whatſoever. To conclude; I wiſh I could leave him in his Grave.

FINIS.

AN INDEX OF THE Main Matters Couch'd in this ROYAL STORY.

A.

A Remarkable Accident *at* Malines *in* Brabant, *of certain Barrels of Powder Fired by Lightning* Page 620

An Act *forbidding Appeals to* Rome 372

An Act *for Eſtabliſhing the Kings Supremacy* 408

An Act *for the Suppreſſion of all Religious Houſes under two hundred pounds* per annum 440

An Act *whereby the King might bequeath the Crown to whom he pleaſed, in caſe his own Children died* 462

An Act *that till* 18. *in caſe the Father died, the young King ſhould be under the Mother* 462

An Act *whereby Civilians are made capable of Church-Preferments* 598

An Act *that no French Wines ſhould be above two pence the Quart, no Malmſies or Sacks above three pence* 465

A memorable Adventure *of Seven or Eight Engliſh-men, by which after their own Veſſel was ſunk, they became Maſters of a French Ship* 603

St. Al-

St. Albans *the first Abbey of* England, *because Pope* Adrian *the Fourth's Father was a Monk there, called* Breakspear 507
Algier *unfortunately attempted by the Emperour* 541
An Alienation *of Ecclesiastical Goods and Possessions, to the value of* 60000 *Crowns in the Kingdom of* Naples, *by Pope* Clement *the Seventh* 214
Duke d' Alva *General of the Spanish Forces in the* Holy War *against* France, 20. *He demands an Oath of Simple Obedience to the King his Master, from the Inhabitants of* Navarre 23
Ambassadours *sent to* Louis *the Twelfth, to demand* Anjou *and* Guyenne *for* England 19
The Ambassadours *of* Francis *acknowledge publickly, that it was King* Henry's *meer goodness that made him abstain from invading* France, *while the King was a Prisoner in* Spain 194
A pretended Ambassadour *from the King of the* Ethiopians *to the Pope* 370
Ambassadours *sent by* Francis *to the* Turk *and* Venetians, *kill'd in the way* 532
The Anabaptists *hold* Munster *in* Westphalia 405
Annates *prohibited in* England *by Act of Parliament* 358
Anne *of* Cleve *Married to King* Henry, 518. *She relinquishes the Title of Queen, and accepteth that of the Kings Adopted Sister* 523
An Apology *published by* Francis *concerning his breach of the Concord of* Madrid 192
Thomas Aquinas *much read by King* Henry 33
Arguments *in favour of King* Henry's *Divorce from Queen* Katharine 353
Articles *at the Surrendry of* Tournay *to the French for a pecuniary Ransom of* 600000 *Crowns*, &c. 77
Articles *between King* Henry *and* Louise *Queen Regent of* France 169
Articles *of the Treaty, called the Concord of* Madrid, *touching the Release of* Francis 174
Articles *of a Treaty between King* Henry *and the* Emperour 555
Articles *of Peace between the Emperour and* Francis 580
Articles *of Religion published by King* Henry 467
Robert Aske *the head of an Insurrection in the North*, 476. *He is Executed at* York 492
Doctor Augustine *Physician to Cardinal* Woolsey, *dispatched to* London *with his legs tied to his Horse* 341

B.

Archbishop Bambridge *sent to reside at* Rome, 14. *He is made a Cardinal*, 17. *His Death at* Rome *not without suspicion of poyson* 56
Barbarossa *the famous Pirate obtains the Kingdom of* Algier 325
Thomas Becket's *bones burnt* 501
Cardinal Beton *made Viceroy of* Scotland *by pretext of a counterfeit Will, is deposed, and the Earl of* Arrain *chosen in his place* 550
The Holy Bible *first Translated into English by Mr.* Tindal 351

The Holy Bible *in Latin and Engliſh appointed to be ſet in Churches for the People to read* 493
Birth *of Queen* Mary 63
Birth *of Queen* Elizabeth 388
Birth *of King* Edward *the Sixth* 491
Divers new Biſhopricks *erected by King* Henry 506
Anne Bolen *her Deſcent, Education, and Character*, 285. *Is vindicated from the foul Calumnies of* Sanders, 286. *She is made Marchioneſs of* Pembroke, 367. *She is married to King* Henry *before the Sentence of Divorce from Queen* Katharine, 368. *She is committed to the* Tower, 445. *Her Letter from thence to the King*, 446. *She is Divorced from King* Henry, 448. *Her Speech upon the Scaffold* 449
Edmund Bonner *upon what occaſion made Biſhop of* London 495
Boulogne *taken by the Engliſh*, 577. *The* Daulphine *and* Monluc *beaten from before it* 583
Duke of Bourbon *makes a defection from* Francis, 242. *He gives Oath to accknowledg* Henry *the Eighth King of* France, 149. *He is killed by a ſhot at the ſcaling of* Rome 201
Charles Brandon *an eſpecial Favourite to King* Henry, 35. *Is created Viſcount* Liſle, 37. *Is made Duke of* Suffolk, 49. *He is married to* Mary *Queen Dowager of* France, *King* Henry's *Siſter* 54
Braſs *Ordnance firſt caſt in* England 431
Breton *the Scotch Pirate being taken by the Earl of* Surrey's *two Sons, the ground of a War between* England *and* Scotland 16
A pretended Breve *from Pope* Julius *the Second, diſpenſing with the Marriage of King* Henry *and Queen* Katharine, 266. *The Objections of Sir* Francis Bryan *and* Peter Vannes, *our Kings Ambaſſadours at* Rome, *againſt it* 254
Duke of Buckingham *diſaffected by* Woolſey, 98. *Articles againſt him*, 99. *He is beheaded* 101
A Bull *ſent from* Leo *the Tenth, conferring the Title of* Defender of the Faith, *upon King* Henry *for writing againſt* Luther 95
Another Bull *ſealed with Gold, ſent by Pope* Clement *the Seventh, together with a Roſe of Gold, to confirm that Title* 149
A Bull *from Pope* Julius *the Second, for King* Henry *the Eighth to Marry his Brothers Wife* 264
Bulls *bear date from the twenty fifth of* March, Breves *from the twenty ſixth of* December 270
Burgundy *the Herald ſent by* Charles *the Emperour, to tell* Francis *the French King that he had done* Laſchement *and* Meſchamment 230

C

Cardinal Campejus *ſent Legate into* England, *is preſented by* Woolſey *with red Cloth to apparel his Train*, 79. *He endeavours to perſuade Queen* Katharine *to enter into ſome Religious Life*, 253. *At his leaving*

ving England, *his Coffers, Bags, and Papers, are ranſack'd* 288
The Canonization *of King* Henry *the Sixth propoſed to Pope* Clement 252
The Cartel *of* Francis *to the Emperour, with* Charles *his Reply* 227, 229
The Earl of Caſſelles *his generous behaviour in returning a Priſoner to King* Henry, *for the redemption of two Brothers his Hoſtages* 550
Lord Carow *kill'd by a Bullet in the Lord* Herbert's *Tent, at the Siege of* Therouene 36
The Centum Gravamina *offered to Pope* Adrian *by the Germans* 125
Ceſſatio à Divinis *four Months in* Spain, *upon occaſion of an exaction of a Tenth againſt the Turk* 83
The Charge of Building King Henry *the Seventh's* Chappel *and Tomb* 4
Charles *the Fifth Emperor, comes in Perſon into* England, 87. *Is inſtalled perſonally of the Order of the Garter, at* Windſor, 114. *Treats a Marriage with the Princeſs* Mary *Daughter to King* Henry, *with whom he was to have a Million of Crowns for Dowry, and ſhe fifty thouſand Crowns Joynture,* 115, *His Wiſe Demeanour at the great News of* Francis *being his Priſoner,* 156. *He bitterly inveighs againſt Pope* Clement, *and ſollicits the Cardinals to call a Council without him,* 195. *He accepts the Challenge ſent by* Francis, *who by his Herald gave him the Lye,* 230. *Paſſing from* Barcelona *to* Genoua, *he cuts his hair by a Vow; at which time ſhort hair came firſt in Faſhion,* 316. *He ſuppreſſeth the Pirate* Barbaroſſa, *and reſtores the King of* Tunis 413
Chriſt-Church *in* Oxford *deſigned by Cardinal* Woolſey 146
Chriſtiern *having loſt his Kingdoms of* Denmark *and* Sweden, *flees with his Queen and three Children into* England, 104. *He is in vain interceded for by King* Henry 166
Cinnamon *taken in a Prize by the* Scots, *was burnt for fuel out of ignorance* 236
Clarenceaux *ſent by King* Henry *into* Scotland, *to command the Duke of* Albany *to avoid the Realm, and upon refuſal to defie him* 123
Doctor Clark *Dean of* Windſor, *ſent to* Rome *to preſent King* Henry's *Book againſt* Luther 94
The Clementine *League, between the Pope,* Francis, *the Venetians,* Sforza, *and the Florentines; whereof King* Henry *was Protector* 185
Lord Clinton *and Lord* Grey *die of the Sweating Sickneſs* 69
The Colledge *of Phyſicians erected* 137
The Colledges *of both Univerſities committed to the Kings diſpoſe by the Parliament* 595
The Commiſſion *granted by the Pope to* Woolſey *and* Campejus *for hearing and determining the Cauſe of the Divorce* 261
A Commotion *in* London *by the Appprentices, upon what occaſion*

casion 45
A List and Character of King Henry's *first* Council 3
A Council *summoned at* Pisa *by* Louis *the Twelfth, and* Maximilian *the Emperour, commanding the Pope to appear there* 14
A Council *summoned to be held at the* Lateran *in* Rome, *by Pope* Julius *the Second, which Excommunicated the Authors of the Council of* Pisa 16
The Council *of* Trent 564
Thomas Cranmer *made Archbishop of* Canterbury, 375. *He Marrieth* Hosiander's *Kinswoman of* Noremberg, 510. *His moving Letter to King* Henry *in behalf of* Cromwel 519
Thomas Cromwel *notably defends his Master Cardinal* Woolsey *in the House of Commons*, 302. *He is made a Baron, Lord Privy Seal, and the Kings Vicegerent in Ecclesiastical Affairs*, 465. *He is odious to the Nobility for his mean Birth, being but a Black-Smiths Son*, 518. *He is Arrested by the Duke of* Norfolk *at the Council Table*, ibid. *He is accused for an Heretick*, 520. *He is beheaded, and dies a Roman Catholick, notwithstanding he had been such a Destroyer of Religious Houses*, 524. *His Character* ibid.
Cross-Bows *forbidden, and long commanded.* 19

D

Lord Dacres *Arraigned of High Treason, but Acquitted by his Peers* 407
Lord Darcy *sent into* Spain *with Fifteen Hundred Archers, to assist* Ferdinand *against the* Moors, *richly rewarded* 15
A Declaration *of the Parliament of* England *to the Pope, when his yoke began first to be shaken off* 331
A rigorous Decree *again the Protestants by the Emperour* 346
A Decree *of the Clergy of* England *concerning General Councils* 470
A Defiance *sent by King* Henry *and* Francis, *to* Charles *the Emperour, by their Heralds* Clarenceaux *and* Guyenne, *with the Emperours Reply* 217
Depositions *touching the Marriage of Prince* Arthur *and Queen* Katharine 270
Depositions *against the Duke of* Norfolk, *and his Son the Earl of* Surrey 626
The Determinations *of Foreign Universities in favour of the Divorce, Printed and Published* 353
The Diet *of* Worms, *whither* Luther *repairing, but refusing to recant his Opinions, is proscribed* 94
The Diet *of* Spire 338
The Diet *of* Augsburgh, *wherein the* Augustane Confession *was presented to the Emperour* 344
A Disputation *held publickly in* Westminster-Hall *by King* Henry, *with one* Lambert *a Priest* 501
The first Overture of the Divorce *between King* Henry *and Queen* Katharine, *which continued in agitation 7 years* 243
Marques of Dorset *made General in the Holy War against* France, 20. *He excuses the ill succes*

of his Army in that Expedition 25
A great Drought, *in which the Springs failing, Salt-water flowed above* London-Bridge 572
Dublin *Beſieged by* Kildare 415
A Duel *offered to* Francis *by the Emperour, to prevent the effuſion of Blood betwixt their Subjects* 456

E

Edenburgh *taken by the Engliſh* 572
Edward *the Confeſſour's Arms Uſurped by the Earl of* Surrey 629
The Emperours *by ancient Cuſtom bound firſt to put on the habit of a Deacon, before they can be compleatly inveſted in the Imperial Dignity* 319
Empſon *and* Dudley *call'd before the Council,* 5. Empſon's *notable Speech there,* ibid. *They are both committed to the* Tower, 6. *Condemned of Treaſon,* 10. *Their heads are ſtruck off* 14
An Enhancement *of the value of Gold and Silver by King* Henry 191
The ſingular Equipage *of* Soliman *and his Train in his Expedition againſt* Hungary 365
A prodigious Eruption *of Mount* Ætna 494
The Exchange *betwixt* Francis *and his two Sons, with its notable circumſtances* 183

F

Ferdinand *gets* Navarre *by the help of the Engliſh,* 22. *His Death,* 62. *His Character* 63.
A Fight *at Sea upon the Coaſt of* Britain, *between the Engliſh and French* 31
John Fiſher *Biſhop of* Rocheſter, *although declared a Cardinal during his Impriſonment, is* Beheaded *for denying the Kings Supremacy* 420
Henry Fitz-Roy *Natural Son to King* Henry *by Mrs.* Blunt 165
Flodden Field *Battel, and the great Victory the Engliſh obtained over the Scots there* 42
Flanders *with the Title of King, offered by* Charles *the Emperour, for a Dowry with his Daughter to the Duke of* Orleans 527
Florence *beſieged, and rendred to the Emperour,* 326. Alexandro de Medicis, *the firſt Duke thereof, treacherouſly aſſaſined by his Kinſman* 486
Friar Forreſt, *for denying the Kings Supremacy, burnt with the Wood of an huge Image* 496
Francis *the French King, in his Letters to Cardinal* Woolſey, *calls him* Dominus & Pater, 74. *He recovers* Tournay *by the aſſiſtance of the Cardinal,* 78. *He and King* Henry *agreed not to cut their Beards till they ſaw each other,* 84. *He is taken Priſoner at the Siege of* Pavia, 154. *During his Impriſonment he is viſited by the Emperour,* 167. *He deſigns his eſcape by diſguiſe, but the Plot is diſcovered by one of the Confidents,* ibid. *His two Sons being Hoſtages he is releaſed,* 184. *He acknowledgeth himſelf chiefly*

chiefly beholden to King Henry *for his Liberty*, 187. *His two Sons were so long Prisoners in* Spain, *that they had forgotten their French*, 305. *He was to pay two Millions of Crowns* de Soleil *for the Release of his Sons*, 306. *He sollicits the Turk to send a Fleet against the Emperour* 543

G

Gavelkind *taken away in* Wales 560

The Citizens of Geneva *shake off their Obedience to the Duke of* Savoy, *and change the form of both their Civil and Ecclesiastical Polity* 453

Genoua *sack'd by* Charles *the Fifth* 112

German Gardiner, *Secretary to* Richard Fox *Bishop of* Winchester, *executed for denying the Kings Supremacy* 567

Gouffier *Admiral of* France, *comes Ambassadour into* England *with a numerous Train* 75

Granada *Conquered by* Ferdinand 15

H

The Halbard *used with the Bow, an advantageous way of Arms* 55

Hampton-Court *built by* Woolsey, *and given to the King* 165

A Cardinals Hat *sent to Bishop* Fisher *after his head was off* 420

King Henry *the Eighth his Birth, Education, and Access to the Crown*, 2. *He goes personally in an Expedition against* France, 37. *He hath both his Sister-Queens at his Court at once*, 66. *Is in probability of Election into the Empire*, 82. *He writes a Book*, de Septem Sacramentis, *against* Luther, *which is yet kept in the* Vatican, 94. *He commands to be certified the Names of all in his Kingdom above sixteen years old*, 121. *He is acknowledged* Liberator Urbis Romæ *by the Pope and People of* Rome, 253. *He writes a Book against the Popes Authority*, 385. *He forsakes Obedience to* Rome, *but not the Roman Religion*, 397. *He resolves to treat with the Pope no otherwise than with an ordinary Bishop*, 410. *He passes to* Calais *in a Ship with Sails of Cloth of Gold*, 577. *The notable Speech he made in his last Parliament, wherein he complained of the Clergy, that some were too stiff in their old* Mumpsimus, *others in their new* Sumpsimus, 598. *His Sickness*, 629. *His Death*, 633. *His Character* 634

Hieronymo Buonviso *the Popes Agent in* England, *proves a Spy for the French* 19

The number of Holidays *abridged* 472

Divers Hollanders, *for their singularity of Opinion in certain Articles of Religion, burnt in* Smithfield 419

A Holy War *undertaken in the Popes Cause against* France 20

Homage *and* Fealty *for the Kingdom of* Scotland *claimed by King* Henry *of* James *the Fourth* 545

Sir Edward Howard, *the English Admiral*,

Admiral, Landing in Bretaigne, *marches seven Miles into the Country, and brings away great Spoils*, 25. *He is unfortunately lost in an Ingagement at Sea with one* Pregent 31
Alexander Humes *a Scottish Lord, with his Brother* William, *Beheaded by the Vicroy* 66

I

James *the Fourth of* Scotland, *takes advantage to denounce War against King* Henry, *when he was in* France, 37. *He is kill'd at* Flodden Field 44
James *the Fifth, first invested in the exercise of his Regal Power*, 152. *He Marrieth the Daughter of* Francis, 444. *He excuses an interview with his Uncle of* England, 517. *He takes upon him the Title of* Defender of the Christian Faith, *and is offered to be King of* Ireland, 517. *His Death and Character* 546
St. James's *Palace built by King* Henry 371
Jane Seymor *Married to King* Henry, 450. *Her Death within two days after the Birth of Prince* Edward 492
The odd Jests *of Sir* Thomas More *at his resigning the place of Lord Chancellour* 371
The Jesuitical *Order first Founded by* Ignatius Loyola 526
Arich Jewel, *wherein was a piece of the Wood of the true Cross, pawn'd to King* Henry *the Seventh* 315
The Indies *discovered by* Columbus 15
Indulgences *sent into* England *and* Germany, 70. *Their intolerable abuses*, 72, 73
Injunctions *to be observed by all Ecclesiastical Persons in* England 471
An Insurrection *in* Lincolnshire, *headed by one Doctor* Muckrell *a Prior, calling himself* Captain Cobler 473
An Insurrection *in* London *by the Apprentices against Strangers, and their notable punishment* 68
An Interview *of King* Henry *and* Maximilian *the Emperour* 37
An Interview *between King* Henry, Francis, *and their Queens; with the brave Comportment of the English at that Solemnity* 89, 90
An Interview *of the Pope and Emperour at* Bononia, *where they are both lodged in one House* 318
Two great Inundations *preceding the Death of the two great Ladies who made the Treaty of* Cambray 347
John *King of* Navarre *in a short time dispossessed of all his Estate* 20
Ireland *made a Kingdom* 537
Iron *Pieces and Granadoes first cast in* England 565

K

Katharine *of* Spain *Married to King* Henry, 8. *She is Divorced from him*, 375. *Her Letter to the King when she lay on her Death-Bed* 432
Lady Katharine Howard *Married to King* Henry, 525. *She is Beheaded for Incontinency with*

with Derham *and* Culpepper 538
Lady Katharine Parr, *Widow to the Lord* Latimer, *Married to King* Henry, 559. *Offering to diſpute with the King about Religion, ſhe is in danger of being committed to the* Tower 622
The Holy Maid of Kent *executed* 404
Kildare's *eldeſt Son, and five of his Uncles, executed at* Tyburn; *his younger Brother pack'd up in a bundle of Cloths, and convey'd into* Flanders, *eſcaping* 491
Sir William Kingſton *overthrown at a Juſts by King* Henry 67

L

Two Ladies, *in behalf of the Emperour and French King, conclude a Treaty at* Cambray 306
A League *between* Louis *of* France, *and* James *the Fourth of* Scotland 27
A League *'twixt the Pope, Emperour, Kings of* England *and* Arragon, *againſt* Louis *the Twelfth* 29
A League *between King* Henry *and* Louis 47
A League *between* Maximilian *the Emperour and King* Henry 64
The famous League *'twixt King* Henry *and* Francis *the French King* 76
A Letter *all of King* Henry's *own writing to Cardinal* Woolſey 164
A Letter from Pope Clement *to King* Henry, *wherein he exhorts him to take again his Wife* Katharine 360
A Letter *from the Archbiſhop of* York *and Biſhop of* Durham, *after their conference with Queen* Katharine 402
A Litany *firſt publiſhed in Engliſh* 573
Louis *the Twelfth and his Heirs bound to pay King* Henry *a Million of Crowns* 48
Martin Luther *a ſtiff Oppoſer of Indulgences*, 71. *He is favoured by* Frederick *Duke of* Saxony, *and divers other great Perſonages*, 72. *He is cited to* Rome, 91. *He appeals to a General Council*, 92. *Writes to the Pope*, 93. *His Books are condemned to the fire*, 94. *He aboliſhes the old Maſs, and compoſes a new Liturgy*, 134. *He writes an Apology to King* Henry *for the diſreſpectful Anſwer made to his Book*, 337. *His Death* 611

M

Margaret *Queen of* Scotland *Marrieth* Archibald Douglaſs *Earl of* Anguis, 49. *She comes to* London, 67. *Returns to* Scotland, 79. *Is Divorced from the Earl, and Married to* Henry Stuart, 235. *Her Death* 516
Margaret *Counteſs of* Richmond *and* Derby, *and Grandmother to King* Henry *the Eighth, a great Benefactour to both the Univerſities* 8
The Princeſs Mary *Married to* Louis *the Twelfth, an old man, at* Abbeville, *and the gallant behaviour of the Engliſh there*, 51. Le Miroir de Naples,

a great Diamond, brought by her to England, *her Joynture* 60000 *Crowns* per annum, 55. *Her Death, and Burial at St.* Edmundsbury 386
Maſs *interdicted 4 years in King* Henry *the Second his time* 500
Two Maſſes *compoſed by King* Henry *the Eighth himſelf, and ſung in his Chappel* 2
The firſt Treaty of, and Motives to a Match *between King* Henry *and* Katharine *Daughter to* Ferdinand *King of* Arragon, 7. *Their Marriage, a Licence being firſt obtained from Pope* Julius *the Second* 8
A Match *propoſed between the* Daulphin *and Princeſs* Mary *Daughter to King* Henry 77
A Match *propoſed between King* Henry *and* Chriſtiana *Dutcheſs of* Milan 496
A Match *propoſed and concluded 'twixt* Edward *the Sixth, and* Mary *of* Scotland, *but broken off by the Scots* 549
Maximilian *the Emperour enters into the Holy League againſt* France, 26. *He ſerves under King* Henry *in quality of his Souldier, and receives for his pay an hundred Crowns* per diem, 38. *He promiſes to reſign the Empire to King* Henry, 62. *His double-dealing in that Affair,* 70. *His Death,* 82. *His Character* 83
Philip Melancthon *an Aſſertor of* Luther, 92. *He is brought by the Elector of* Saxony *to the Diet of* Spire 238
Mexico *diſcovered, and its Conqueſt begun by* Hernando Cortez 83
A ſhrewd Miracle *detected* 494
The Molucca *Iſlands pawned to the King of* Portugal *by* Charles *the Emperour, for* 35000 *Crowns* 303
Monaſteries *ſuppreſſed by King* Henry *to the number of ſix hundred forty five* 505
Mony *forbidden to be exchanged to other Countries* 355
Baſe Monies *made current* 572
Sir Thomas More *made Lord Chancellour,* 320. *He is committed to the* Tower, 401. *He, together with* Fiſher *Biſhop of* Rocheſter, *is accuſed by the Holy Maid of* Kent, *but pardoned,* 404. *He is Beheaded for denying the Kings Supremacy* 422
Muncer *firſt publiſheth his new Doctrine* 165
The Invention of Muskets 110

N

A National *Council deſired of the Emperour by the Princes* 238
Duke of Norfolk *his Letter to King* Henry, 627. *His Confeſſion* 629
Earl of Northumberland's *eldeſt Son an Attendant to Cardinal* Woolſey 285

O

Oxford *made a Biſhoprick* 506

P

A Parliament *in* Blackfryars, *wherein* 800000 *pounds were demanded for a War againſt* France 134
The Patent *by which* Charles *the Emperour Conſtituted the Earl of* Surrey *his Admiral* 119
Pavia *Beſieged by the French* 150

Peru

Peru *discovered*, 171. *The Spaniards inhumane cruelties to the Inhabitants* 173
Peterborough *erected into a Bishoprick for the sake of Queen* Katharine, *who lies buried there* 432
Philibert, *Prince of* Aurange *killed at the Siege of* Florence 326
The Pilgrimage of Grace, *an Insurrection in the North so called* 475
The Pistol *first in request among the French Horse* 586
A great Plague *at* Calais 9
A great Plague *in the French Army, of which many persons of Quality died* 242
Sir Arthur Plantagenet *dies of excess of Joy* 540
Plurality *of Livings, and Non-residency forbidden but in some cases* 325
Edmund de la Pole *beheaded for prevention* 36
Poll-money *given by the Parliament to King* Henry 28
Cardinal Pool *writes a Book* de Unione Ecclesiastica 418
Pope Eugenius *had design'd a red Hat for King* Henry 2
Pope Julius *the Second besieged in* Bononia *by the French*, 14. *He invites King* Henry *and* Ferdinand *to make War with* France, 16. *He had an intent to take away the Stile of* Christianissimus *from* Louis *the Twelfth, and confer it on King* Henry, 18. *His Death*, 28
Pope Leo *the Tenth invites King* Henry *to send Astronomers to the* Lateran *Council, for reforming the Calendar*, 67. *He promises to do as much for approbation of King* Henry's *Book against* Luther, *as ever was done for St.* Augustine's *or St.* Hieron's *Works*, 94. *His Death* 110
Pope Adrian *gave Instructions to* Cheregat, *his* Nuncio *into* Germany, *to confess*, In hâc Sanctâ Sede aliquot jam annis multa abominanda fuisse, 125. *His Death* 144
Pope Clement *the Seventh is made a Prisoner to the Emperor*, 202. *He escapes in the habit of a Merchant*, 214. *His Pollicitation in the matter of the Divorce*, 249. *He would have dispenced with King* Henry *to have two Wives*, 330. *His Reply to a Declaration made to him by the Parliament of* England, 335. *His Death and Character* 406
Pope Paul *the Third, suspected to have used some Art to make himself thought sickly*, 407. *He publisheth a Bull of Excommunication against King* Henry 500
A Porter *falling asleep could not be wakened in fourteen days and nights* 618
Sir Edward Poynings *sent General to assist* Margaret *Regent of the* Low-Countries *against the Duke of* Gueldres 15
Predictions *of* Hopkins *the Monk* 100
The Priests *of* London *break into the Chapter-House of St.* Pauls, *and beat the Bishops Servants* 355
Divers Privy-Councellours *to King* Henry, *being offended with Cardinal* Woolsey, *retire themselves* 58
The Project *of a disguised Crew*

in ſtrange Vizards, at the Diſſolution of the Monaſtery of Beggam *in* Suſſex 163
The Name of Proteſtant *whence it took its Original* 240

R

Ravenna *taken by the French* 26
Read *an Alderman of* London, *becauſe he would give no money, was ſet to fight in Perſon againſt the Scots, and taken Priſoner* 587
A Rebellion *in the North ſuppreſs'd by the Duke of* Norfolk, *and the Leaders of it, with about ſeventy perſons more hang'd on the Walls of* Carliſle 489
The Regal *Authority in Eccleſiaſtical Affairs firſt Eſtabliſhed by Act of Parliament* 352
A Relation *of matters touching the Divorce of King* Henry *from Queen* Katharine 243
The Releaſe *of* Francis, *who was the Emperours Priſoner, propoſed and mediated* 159
The Releaſe *of* Francis's *two ſons, their Fathers Hoſtages, and the Articles agreed on touching that Solemnity* 328
376 Religious Houſes *diſſolved* 441
The price of Relicks *ſo much fallen in* England, *that a piece of St.* Andrew's *Finger being pawn'd to a Monaſtery for forty pound, was left unredeemed at the diſſolution of that Houſe* ibid.
Rome *taken and ſack'd by* Moncada, *and the Pope's flight to the Caſtle of St.* Angelo, 195. *Is taken again and pillaged by the Souldiers of* Bourbon, *the Caſtle delivered, and the Pope made a Priſoner* 202
The Romiſh *Yoke firſt ſhaken off by King* Henry 331
The Rood *of Grace broken in pieces publickly at* Paul's *Croſs by the Biſhop of* Rocheſter 494
Rouge-Croix *the Herald ſent by the Earl of* Surrey *to bid Battel to* James *the Fourth King of* Scotland 42
Rhodes *taken by the Turk on St.* John *Baptiſt's day, the Knights of that place afterwards obtaining* Maltha 125

S

Three Sacraments *Eſtabliſhed by Authority of King* Henry 465
Counteſs of Salisbury, *the laſt of the right Line of the* Plantagenets, *beheaded* 530
Scottiſh *Lords brought Priſoners from the* Tower *to the* Star-Chamber, *two by two in new Damask Gowns diſmiſſed and rewarded* 548
The Sentence *of Divorce between King* Henry *and Queen* Katharine, *by Archbiſhop* Cranmer 375
John Sepuſe *Crowned King of* Hungary, *at* Buda, *by the Turk with his own hand* 317
Maximilian Sforza *is inveſted in the Dutchy of* Milan 26
A French Ship *purſued by a Fleming as far as the* Tower-Wharfe 225
Simony *evaded by a Wager* 235
The Six Articles, *called by ſome the Bloudy Statute, Enacted by Parliament* 508
Sleidan *the Hiſtorian, Ambaſſador from the German Proteſtants to* England 491

The Speech *of Cardinal* Woolsey *to King* Henry *concerning a Favourite* 33
A remarkable Speech *concerning Religion* 321
A Speech *in favour of the Papal Authority, with its Reply* 390
Speeches *in a Parliament at* Blackfryars *concerning the levying of Monies* 134
Speeches pro *and* con *touching the dissolution of Monasteries* 424
Henry Standish *Bishop of St.* Asaph *sent to persuade the* Danes *to recal their expulsed King* Christiern 166
Sir John Stile *Resident in* Spain 21
A notable Stratagem *of the French coming to* Boulogne *with their Shirts over their Armour* 583
John Stuart *Duke of* Albany *declared Viceroy of* Scotland, 64. *He marches with a strong Army towards* England 139
A Sumptuary *Law against Luxury in Apparel* 12
A Sumptuary *Law whereby the Lord Maior and Sheriffs of* London *were limited to a certain number of Dishes* 559
A Survey *of all Revenues and Dignities Ecclesiastical in* England, *return'd to King* Henry, *in a Book to be kept in the Exchequer* 428
The Sweating Sickness *in* England 69
The Swedes, *under* Gustavus Erixon, *separate themselves wholly from the Crown of* Denmark, *and make him their King* 140

T

George Talbot *Earl of* Shrewsbury *is in danger for levying men to suppress a Rebellion, without the Kings Commission* 475
Tindal's *Translation of the Holy Bible prohibited* 557
Therouene *Besieged by the English*, 36. *Is taken and given to* Maximilian *the Emperour, who rases it* 39
Tournay *Besieged*, 39. *Is yielded to King* Henry *by the Name of* Roy tres Christien, 40 *Is rendred again to the French by the procurement of Cardinal* Woolsey, 78. *But taken from them by* Charles *the Emperor* 109
The vast Treasure *left by King* Henry *the Seventh, amounting to near two Millions of* li. *Sterling* 9
A Treaty *concluded by King* Henry *with the Pope and Emperor against the French* 107
A Triple Treaty *between King* Henry *and* Francis, *by one Article of which* Francis *bound himself and Successors to give King* Henry 15000 *Crowns worth of* Brouage *Salt yearly* 197, 200
The Treaty *of* Cambray *concluded by two Ladies* 306
Trent *Council first opened* 566
Tunis *taken by the Emperor from the Pirate* Barbarossa 413

U

Vergerius *Bishop of* Justinopolis *labouring to confute the Protestants, became one himself* 612
Vienna *Besieged by the* Turk 317
Polydore Virgil *an Author full of Malignity* 9
Ludovicus Vives *sent to be Professour of Eloquence in* Oxford 147

The Universities *of* England *more scrupulous of the Divorce than Foreign* 353
Urbieta, *a* Guipuscoan, *first seises on* Francis *the French King as a Prisoner, at the siege of* Pavia 155

W

Wales *United and Incorporated unto* England 438
Sir John Wallop *with no more than eight hundred men, burns one and twenty Villages in* Normandy 51
The first War *denounced against* France *by King* Henry 19
A War *begun between* Charles *the Emperour and* Francis, *that lasted thirty eight years, and cost the lives of above five hundred thousand men* 103
William Warham *Archbishop of* Canterbury *resigning voluntarily the place of Lord Chancellor, retires to a private Life* 57
The Welshmens *notable Declaration* 436
Westminster *Erected into a Bishoprick by King* Henry 506
White-Hall *built by* Woolsey, *and at first called* York-House, *resigned to King* Henry 303
White-meats *permitted to be eaten in* Lent *without sin or punishment* 113
Sir Robert Wingfield *sent Ambassadour to* Maximilian *the Emperour* 26
Woolsey's *first entrance into Action*, 32. *His Arts of insinuating himself into the Kings favour*, 37. *He was the first Clergy-man that wore Silk for his upper Garment*, 35. *Being a Butchers Son, the care of Victualling the Army for* France *was, not without a Sarcasm, recommended to him*, ibid. *Is made Bishop of* Tournay, 40. *Of* Lincol, 49. *Is made Archbishop of* York, *and Cardinal* S. Cæciliæ trans Tiberim *by the help of* Francis, 56. *He holds in Farm the Bishopricks of* Bath, Worcester *and* Hereford; *gets successively the Bishopricks of* Bath, Durham *and* Winchester, *and is made Lord Chancellor by the voluntary resignation of Archbishop* Warham, 57. *He was used to have his red Hat placed upon the Altar at the Kings Chappel*, ibid. *He is made Legate à* Latere, *hath Bishops and Abbats serving him, Dukes and Earls giving Water and the Towel, and two Crosses carried before him*, 80. *Is Arbiter of the Differences 'twixt the Emperor and French King*, 105. *He takes the Great Seal with him to* Calais, 109. *His Motives to the Emperor that he might be chosen Pope*, 110. *He obtains leave of King* Henry *and the Pope to demolish divers small Monasteries*, 148. *He goes Ambassador into* France *with near a thousand Horse, and carries a vast sum of Mony with him*, 205. *He is made his Masters Judge*, 248. *His declension*, 298. *His rich Houshold-stuff and Plate*, 290. *The Great Seal is taken from him*, ibid. *He is put over to the* Star-Chamber, *thence to the Parliament*, 293. *Forty four Articles against him, one of which was*, That he was wont to breathe upon the King, though

though knowing himself to have the Pox, 294. *He is Arrested of High Treason by the Earl of* Northumberland, 340. *His last Speech to Sir* William Kingston, 341. *His Death and Character* 342

X

Cardinal Ximenes *appointed Governour of* Castile *by* Ferdinand, 63. *His Death, not without probability of poyson* 81

Y

York *and* Hull *taken by* Aske *and his Complices* 476

Z

Ulricus Zuinglius, *begings a Reformation at* Zurich, *somewhat varying from that of* Luther 165

FINIS.